





Digitized by the Internet Archive  
in 2024

226.307 S975 1927  
Bible.

The Gospel according to St.  
Mark.

DEMCO







THE GOSPEL  
ACCORDING TO ST MARK



MACMILLAN AND CO., LIMITED  
LONDON . BOMBAY . CALCUTTA . MADRAS  
MELBOURNE

THE MACMILLAN COMPANY  
NEW YORK . BOSTON . CHICAGO  
DALLAS . SAN FRANCISCO

THE MACMILLAN CO. OF CANADA, LTD.  
TORONTO

# THE GOSPEL ACCORDING TO ST MARK

THE GREEK TEXT

WITH

INTRODUCTION NOTES AND INDICES

BY

HENRY BARCLAY SWETE, D.D., D.LITT., F.B.A.

REGIUS PROFESSOR OF DIVINITY

AND FELLOW OF GONVILLE AND CAIUS COLLEGE, CAMBRIDGE  
HON. CANON OF ELY; HON. CHAPLAIN TO THE KING

*THIRD EDITION*

1158150

MACMILLAN AND CO., LIMITED  
ST. MARTIN'S STREET, LONDON

1927

DEUS QUI NOBIS PER MINISTERIUM BEATI MARCI EVANGELISTAE TUI VERITATEM EVANGELII PATEFIERI VOLUISTI: CONCEDE, QUAESUMUS, UT QUOD AB ILLIUS ORE DIDICIMUS GRATIA TUA ADIUTI OPERARI VALEAMUS. PER IESUM CHRISTUM DOMINUM NOSTRUM. AMEN.

COPYRIGHT.

*First Edition, 1898. Second Edition, 1902; reprinted, with slight changes, 1905, 1908. Third Edition, 1909; reprinted, with slight changes, 1913.  
Reprinted 1920, 1927*

R  
226.3  
35 S  
C.3.

## PREFACE TO THE THIRD EDITION.

THE present edition is little more than a reprint of the second. A few corrections and additions have been made, chiefly in the footnotes; the most important of these being the insertion at p. 404 of the Greek fragment which follows 'Mark' xvi. 14 in the Freer MS. of the Four Gospels.

Of one important source of new knowledge I have been unable to make as much use as I could have wished. Professor Deissmann and Dr A. Thumb in Germany, and Professor J. H. Moulton and Dr G. Milligan in Great Britain, have taught us how much the papyri and the inscriptions have to contribute to the study of New Testament Lexicography. Most of their researches have appeared since the publication of the first edition of this book, and it would be impossible to avail myself of them without a serious interference with the plates. I can only refer the reader to the published papers and books of the above-mentioned scholars, and in particular to the Lexical Notes contributed by Dr Moulton and Dr Milligan to the *Expositor*, and to the work which, it is understood, will be based upon them.

The conclusions with regard to New Testament Grammar which have been drawn from the non-literary papyri are not as yet, in my opinion, established beyond doubt, and I am therefore content still to rely upon the authority of Winer-Moulton, Winer-Schmiedel, and Blass. But the subject is one upon which I desire to keep an open mind, and the time may come when this commentary will call for a more extensive revision in this respect than I am at present prepared to undertake.

H. B. S.

CAMBRIDGE,  
*F. of St Michael and All Angels, 1909.*

46 47

## PREFACE TO THE SECOND EDITION.

THE years which have gone by since the first issue of this Commentary have been singularly fruitful in publications bearing upon the study of the Gospels. In the work of preparing a second edition for the press these new helps have not been left out of sight; and from several of them—more particularly from Dr Chase's and Dr Salmond's articles in the third volume of Dr Hastings' *Dictionary of the Bible*, the second volume of Professor Theodore Zahn's *Einleitung in das Neue Testament*, Sir J. C. Hawkins' *Horae Synopticae*, and Mr P. M. Barnard's *Biblical Text of Clement of Alexandria*—much assistance has been derived. If my conclusions have not often been modified, it is not because I have failed to reconsider them in the light of these and other recent contributions to Biblical knowledge.

I am glad also to acknowledge my debts to the kindness of reviewers, and of not a few private friends and some unknown correspondents, who have pointed out errors or deficiencies in the first edition of my book. These corrections have all, as I trust, received respectful attention, although in some cases the plan of the work has refused to lend itself to the proposed changes, or after full consideration I have found myself unable to accept them.

In the preface to the first edition I expressed a desire to discuss more fully at a future time some of the larger questions raised by the Gospel of St Mark. This purpose has not been fulfilled. The book has been revised throughout; the critical apparatus has been enlarged by the use of the fresh evidence printed in Mr Lake's *Texts from Mount Athos*, of which advanced sheets were sent to me through the kindness of the author; the foot-notes have been here and there expanded or re-written. But the pressure of other work and the call of fresh studies have precluded me from attempting the dissertations which I had intended to write. My book therefore goes forth under its original limitations. But I am confident that younger students will be found to fulfil the task which I am constrained to leave. The growing interest manifested in all problems connected with the Gospels, and more especially the earliest of the Gospels,

justifies the expectation that the next generation of New Testament scholars will carry our knowledge more than one step nearer to the fulness and certainty which all must desire to attain.

H. B. S.

CAMBRIDGE,  
*F. of St Peter, 1902.*

## PREFACE TO THE FIRST EDITION.

THE earliest of extant commentators on St Mark urges as his apology for undertaking so serious a task the neglect which that Evangelist appeared to have suffered at the hands of the great teachers of the Church. While each of the other Gospels had received separate treatment, the Gospel according to St Mark, so far as he could discover, had been passed by, as if it needed no elucidation or none which could not be gathered from expositions of St Matthew and St Luke.

If this plea can no longer be used, it is still true that St Mark has gained far less attention than he deserves. The importance of his work as an independent history, and the beauty of its bright and unartificial picture of our Lord's life in Galilee, are at length generally recognised; but no monograph has yet appeared which makes full use of the materials at the disposal of the expositor.

I cannot claim to have supplied this deficiency in the present volume, nor has it been my aim to do so. I am content to offer help to those who desire to enter upon the serious study of the Gospels. Such study should begin, as it appears to me, with the Gospel which I believe to be the earliest of the four and, throughout a large part of the narrative, the nearest to the common source.

My chief aids have been the concordances of Bruder and Moulton-Geden, the grammatical works of Winer-Moulton, Winer-Schmiedel, Burton, and Blass, and the Greek text, introduction, and notes of Westcott and Hort. Next to these, I have learnt most from the concordance to the LXX. compiled by Hatch and Redpath, the text and indices of Niese's Josephus, and the illustrations from the later Greek literature which are to be found

in the pages of Field, Grinfield, Grotius, Kuinoel, Kypke, and Wetstein, together with those which Deissmann has collected from the papyri. For Aramaic forms I have consulted Kautzsch and Dalman, and for Jewish thought and customs the well-known works of the elder Lightfoot, Schöttgen, Schürer, Streane, Taylor, Weber, and Wünsche. Of ancient expositors Origen, Jerome, Victor of Antioch, Bede, and Theophylact have supplied valuable help; among those of recent times I have consulted with advantage Schanz and Knabenbauer, Meyer-Weiss and Holtzmann. But no effort has been made to collect and tabulate the views of the commentators upon disputed points; it has been thought that a mere list of authorities, apart from a detailed statement of the grounds on which their opinions are based, could render little assistance to the student and might discourage individual effort. Nor have I appealed to any expositor, ancient or modern, until an effort had been made to gain light from a careful study of the Gospel itself. A prolonged examination of the text, and a diligent use of the lexical and grammatical helps to which reference has already been made, will almost invariably guide the student to a true interpretation of St Mark's rugged yet simple sentences. It is chiefly in the attempt to penetrate the profound sayings of our Lord, which this Evangelist reports in their most compact form, that valuable assistance may be gained from the suggestiveness of Origen and the devout insight of Bede and Bengel.

The text of Westcott and Hort has been generally followed; the few changes which I have permitted myself to make consist chiefly of the introduction within square brackets of words which the *New Testament in Greek* either omits or relegates to the margin. Even if we regard as proved the contention of Dr Salmon that "what Westcott and Hort have restored is the text which had the highest authority at Alexandria in the third century"—i.e. that it is "early Alexandrian," rather than strictly "neutral"—we may still reasonably prefer this text on the whole to any other as a basis for the interpretation of the Gospels. At the same time it is desirable that the student should have before him materials for forming a judgement upon all important variants, or at least discriminating between the principal types of text,

and explaining to himself the grounds upon which any particular reading is to be preferred. With the view of enabling him to do this, I have printed above the commentary an apparatus of various readings, largely derived from the apparatus of Tischendorf's eighth critical edition, which has been simplified and to some extent revised and enriched.

It had been part of my original plan to discuss in additional notes and dissertations some of the points raised by this Gospel which seemed to require fuller investigation. But as the work grew under my hands, it became apparent that this purpose could not be carried into effect without unduly increasing the size of the volume and at the same time delaying, perhaps for some years, the publication of the text and notes. If strength is given to me, I hope to return to my task at a future time; meanwhile I have thrown into the form of an Introduction a portion of the materials which had been collected, and I trust that the present work may be regarded as complete in itself within the narrower limits which circumstances have prescribed.

It would be difficult to overestimate what I owe to the kindness of friends. While in each case I am responsible for the final form assumed by the text, apparatus, and notes, I desire to acknowledge with sincere gratitude the generous assistance which has enabled me to make them what they are. To the Bishop of Durham I am indebted for permission to use the WH. text of St Mark as far as I might find it convenient to do so. My colleague, Professor J. Armitage Robinson, has supplied me with copious notes upon the readings of the Armenian version, and has also frequently verified and corrected my references to the Sinaitic Syriac and the other Syriac versions. Mr F. C. Conybeare has contributed a photograph of the page of an Armenian ms. in which the last twelve verses of the Gospel are ascribed to the "presbyter Ariston." From Mr F. C. Burkitt I have received much valuable help, especially in the earlier chapters of St Mark, in reference to the readings of the Old Latin and the treatment of various points connected with Syriac and Aramaic words. Mr H. S. Cronin has given me access to his yet unpublished collation of the new fragments of cod. N, and to the results of a fresh examination of cod. 2<sup>pe</sup>; and through

the kindness of Mr A. M. Knight I have been permitted to use the proof-sheets of a new edition of Field's *Otium Norvicense* (pt. iii.). Not less important service of another kind has been rendered by Mr J. H. Strawley, who has revised the proofs and supplied materials for the index of subject-matter, and by Dr W. E. Barnes, to whom I owe many corrections which have been embodied in the sheets or appear in the list of *corrigenda*. Lastly, it is due to the workmen and readers of the University Press to acknowledge their unvarying attention to a work which has necessarily made large demands upon their patience and skill.

Few readers of this book will be more conscious of its shortcomings than the writer is. The briefest of the Gospels is in some respects the fullest and the most exacting; the simplest of the books of the New Testament brings us nearest to the feet of the Master. The interpreter of St Mark fulfils his office so far as he assists the student to understand, and in turn to interpret to others, this primitive picture of the Incarnate Life. To do this in any high degree demands such a preparation of mind and spirit as can rarely be attained; to do it in some measure has been my hope and aim.

*Domine Deus...quaecumque dixi in hoc libro de tuo, agnoscant et tui; si qua de meo, et Tu ignosce et tui.*

H. B. S.

CAMBRIDGE,  
*F. of the Name of JESUS, 1898.*

## CONTENTS.

	PAGE
<b>INTRODUCTION :</b>	
I. Personal History of St Mark . . . . .	xiii
II. History of the Gospel in the Early Church . . . . .	xxix
III. Place and Time of writing, and Original Language . . . . .	xxxix
IV. Vocabulary, Grammar, and Style . . . . .	xliv
V. Contents, plan, and sources . . . . .	li
VI. Comparison of St Mark with the other Synoptists . . . . .	lxvi
VII. Use of the Old Testament by St Mark . . . . .	lxxvi
VIII. External conditions of the Life of Christ as depicted by St Mark . . . . .	lxxxii
IX. St Mark's conception of the Person and Office of our Lord . . . . .	xc
X. Authorities for the text . . . . .	xcvi
XI. Alternative endings of the Gospel . . . . .	ciii
XII. Commentaries . . . . .	cxiv
<b>TEXT AND NOTES</b> . . . . .	<b>I</b>
<b>INDEX OF THE GREEK WORDS USED IN THE GOSPEL</b> . . . . .	<b>409</b>
<b>INDEX TO THE INTRODUCTION AND NOTES</b> . . . . .	<b>425</b>
<b>FACSIMILE</b> , facing . . . . .	<b>cxi</b>
<b>MAPS OF NORTHERN PALESTINE AND THE SEA OF GALILEE</b> . . . . .	facing <b>408</b>

Μᾶρκον ἀναλαβὼν ἀγέ μετὰ σεαυτοῦ ἔστιν γάρ μοι  
εὐχριστος εἰς διακονίαν.

ἀσπάζεται γάμας .. Μᾶρκος ὁ γιός μου.

Μᾶρκος μέν, ἐρμηνεύτης Πέτρου γενόμενος,  
ὅσα ἐμνημόνευσεν ἀκριβῶς ἔγραψεν.

# I.

## PERSONAL HISTORY OF ST MARK<sup>1</sup>.

1. The Roman praenomen *Marcus* was in common use among Greek-speaking peoples from the Augustan age onwards. The inscriptions offer abundant examples from every part of the Empire, and from every rank in society.

The following are examples of the widespread use of the Greek name. Attica: *CIG* 191 γραμματεὺς βουλῆς καὶ δήμου Μ. Εὐκαρπίδον Ἀξηνιέύς. 192 Σφήγτιοι...Ἐπίγονος Μάρκου, Ἰπποκράτης Μάρκου. 254 Μ. Ἀναφλύστιος. Lydia: 3162 Μ. ταμίας. 3440 Μηίονες Μ. καὶ Νεῖκος. Mysia: 3664 Μ. Ρούφου μύστης. Nubia: 5109 Μ. στρατιώτης. Cyrene: 5218 Μ. Μάρκου. Sicily: 5644 Μαάρκον νιὸς Μαάρκελλος. Italy: 6155 Μάρκος Κοσσούτιος Μαάρκου ἀπελεύθερος. The last two inscriptions justify the accentuation *Mârkos*, which has been adopted in this edition after Blass: see his comm. on Acts xii. 25, and his *Gramm. d. NTlichen Griechisch*, § 4. 2.

In all these instances the name stands by itself in accordance with Greek practice. The same is true of its later Christian use; thus we have a Marcus who was the first Gentile Bishop of Jerusalem (Aelia), a Marcus who was a Valentinian leader contemporary with Irenaeus, and another who was eighth Bishop of Alexandria; even at Rome the *praenomen* occurs as a single name in the case of Pope Marcus († 336). Christian inscriptions of the fourth century collected by Prof. Ramsay in the neighbourhood of Laodiceia combusta supply several examples of the same kind.

<sup>1</sup> The first two sections of this Introduction have been reproduced in part

from articles published in the *Expositor* (v. vi. pp. 80 ff., 268 ff.).

*Mitth. d. k. d. arch. Instituts* (Athen. Abth.) 1888, p. 233 ff.: 55 τῷ ποθενοτάτῳ μον νίῳ Μάρκῳ πρεσβυτέρῳ. 56 Μάρκῳ καὶ Παύλῳ. 61 Μάρκῳ διακόνῳ.

In the N.T. the name occurs eight times (Acts xii. 12, 25, xv. 37, 39, Col. iv. 10, Philem. 24, 2 Tim. iv. 11, 1 Pet. v. 13). In the Acts it is the surname of a Jew of Jerusalem whose name was John (xii. 12 Ἰωάνου τοῦ ἐπικαλούμενον Μάρκου, 25 Ἰωάνην τὸν ἐπικληθέντα Μᾶρκον, xv. 37 Ἰωάνην τὸν καλούμενον [ἐπικ. Ν<sup>e</sup>CD min<sup>nominis</sup>] Μᾶρκον, 39 τὸν Μᾶρκον): the Epistles use Μᾶρκος by itself and without the article, as if it were the only or at least the familiar name by which the person to whom they refer was known<sup>1</sup>.

The N. T. bears witness to the readiness of the Palestinian Jew to adopt or accept a secondary name, whether of Aramaic or foreign origin<sup>2</sup>. Latin names were frequently used in this way, whether epithets such as Justus (Acts i. 23), Niger (*ib.* xiii. 1), Secundus, xx. 4, *cognomina* like Paulus, Lucanus, Silvanus, or *praenomina*, of which Caius (*Γάιος* Acts xix. 29, Rom. xvi. 23, 1 Cor. i. 14, 3 Jo. 1) and Lucius (Acts xiii. 1) are examples. Marcus is an exact parallel to Caius and Lucius, except that in the Acts, where St Mark appears in Jewish surroundings, his Jewish name precedes, and the Roman *praenomen* which he had assumed occupies the place of the *cognomen*.

For other examples of the use of Marcus as a secondary name see Dittenberger *inscr. Att. aet. Rom.* 1137 Δεύκιος ὁ καὶ Μ., Μαραθώνιος παρατρίβης, 1142 Ἀλιος ὁ καὶ Μ. Χολλείδης ἔφηβος (time of L. Verus and Commodus); Ramsay *ap. op. cit.* 92 Αὐρ. Μάρκῳ.

2. The mother of John Mark was a Mary who was a member of the Church at Jerusalem (Acts xii. 12). She was clearly a woman of some means and a conspicuous person in the Christian community. Her house (*τὴν οἰκίαν Μαρίας*)<sup>3</sup> is approached by a porch (*πυλών*): a slave girl (*παιδίσκη*), probably the portress (*ἡ θυρωρός*, Jo. xviii. 16, 17), opens the door; there is an upper room or

<sup>1</sup> It seems to have been rarely borne by Jews; cf. Chase, in Hastings *D. B.* iii., p. 245.

<sup>2</sup> On the witness of Josephus to the

same fact see Deissmann, *Bibl. Studia* (E. T.), p. 314.

<sup>3</sup> See foot-notes to Mc. xiv. 14, 52.

guestchamber large enough to receive a concourse of the brethren (*ἥσαν ίκανοὶ συνηθροισμένοι*). It is to Mary's house that Peter naturally turns his steps, when released from prison; he is content to leave in the hands of the party who are assembled there the duty of communicating the tidings of his escape to the rest of the Church (*Ιακώβῳ καὶ τοῖς ἀδελφοῖς*)<sup>1</sup>. John is not mentioned in this narrative, except for the purpose of distinguishing his mother Mary from others of the same name; but it is reasonable to suppose that he was present, and that he was already a believer, and intimate with St Peter and the heads of the Church at Jerusalem.

Conjecture has connected the name of John Mark with certain incidents in the Gospel history. In the Dialogue of Adamantius *de recta fide* (Lommatzsch, xvi. 259) we read: Μᾶρκος οὖν καὶ Δούκᾶς ἐκ τῶν ἑβδομήκοντα καὶ δυοῖν ὄντες Παῦλω τῷ ἀποστόλῳ εὐηγγελίσαντο. Epiphanius (*haer.* 21. 6) adds: εἰς ἐτύγχανεν ἐκ τῶν ἑβδομήκοντα δύο τῶν διασκορπισθέντων ἐπὶ τῷ ρήματι φὲντεν ὁ κύριος Ἐὰν μὴ τις μου φάγῃ τὴν σάρκα κτλ. The statement is probably as baseless as many others which are due to that writer; it may be that the reference to Jo. vi. 66 has arisen from what is said of John Mark in Acts xiii. 13, xv. 38. That he was the *νεανίσκος* of Mc. xiv. 51 f. is not unlikely: see note *ad loc.* Bede's supposition that he was a Priest or Levite, which is probably borrowed from the comm. of Ps.-Jerome, or from the preface to Mark in mss. of the Vulgate (cf. Wordsworth-White, p. 171 "Marcus evangelista...sacerdotium in Israhel agens, secundum carnem levita"), rests ultimately upon Mark's connexion with the Levite Barnabas.

John was at Jerusalem during the famine of 45–6, when Barnabas and Saul visited the city for the purpose of conveying to the Church the alms of the brethren at Antioch; and on their return they took him back with them to Syria (Acts xii. 25). He may have attracted them as the son of a leading member of the Church at Jerusalem, and possibly also by services rendered during the distribution of the relief fund which revealed in him a capacity for systematic work. If we assume his identity with the Mark of St Paul's Epistles, there was doubtless another reason. Barnabas was still leader of the Christian body at Antioch; he

<sup>1</sup> On the interesting traditions connected with the house of John Mark see Zahn, *Einleitung* ii. 212 f., and the note in this commentary on Mc. xiv. 13 ff., 51 f.

had been sent there by the mother Church (Acts xi. 22), and Saul's position in the Antiochian brotherhood was as yet evidently subordinate (*ib.* 25, 30, xii. 25, xiii. 1 f.). It was for Barnabas to seek fresh associates in the work, and John was a near relative of Barnabas (Col. iv. 10 ὁ ἀνεψιὸς Βαρνάβᾳ<sup>1</sup>). Whether the father of John had been uncle to Joseph of Cyprus (Acts iv. 36), or the mother his aunt, is unknown; but the relationship accounts for the persistent favour which Barnabas extended to Mark.

Mark's association with the Antiochian leaders was doubtless for the purpose of rendering assistance to them in their growing work. As Saul had been brought from Tarsus (Acts xi. 25 f.), so Mark was now taken from Jerusalem; the same verb *συνπαραλαβεῖν* is used again in xv. 37, 38, and seems distinctly to indicate the position which Mark was called to fill—that of a coopted colleague of inferior rank (cf. Gal. ii. 1 ἀνέβην...μετὰ Βαρνάβᾳ συνπαραλαβὼν καὶ Τίτον)<sup>2</sup>. It was natural that when the Holy Spirit designated Barnabas and Saul for a new field of work, Mark should accompany them. The general character of his duties is now expressly stated; it was personal service, not evangelistic, to which he was called (*εἰχον δὲ καὶ Ἰωάννην ὑπηρέτην*)<sup>3</sup>. Blass defines this service too strictly when he comments “velut ad baptizandum<sup>4</sup>”; Mark may have been required to baptize converts (cf. Acts x. 48, 1 Cor. i. 14), but his work would include all those minor details which could safely be delegated to a younger man, such as arrangements for travel, the provision of food and lodging, conveying messages, negotiating interviews, and the like.

An examination of the passages where *ὑπηρέτης* is used in Biblical Greek will shew that the word covers a wide range of offices: cf. e.g. Prov. xiv. 35 δεκτὸς βασιλεῖ ὁ νοήμων (a courtier; similarly Sap. vi. 4, Dan. iii. 46); Mt. v. 25 μῆποτε σε παραδῷ ὁ κριτὴς τῷ ὑπηρέτῃ (the officer of a court); Mc. xiv. 54 συνκαθήμενος μετὰ τῶν ὑπηρετῶν (temple police); Lc. i. 2 ὑπηρέται γενόμενοι τοῦ λόγου, Acts

<sup>1</sup> On *ἀνεψιός* see Bp Lightfoot *ad loc.*

<sup>2</sup> Cf. Ramsay, *St Paul the Traveller*, p. 71: “he was not essential to the expedition; he had not been selected by the Spirit; he had not been formally delegated by the Church of Antioch; he

was an extra hand, taken by Barnabas and Saul on their own responsibility.”

<sup>3</sup> Acts xiii. 5. For *ὑπηρέτην* D reads *ὑπηρετοῦντι αὐτοῖς*: E substitutes *ἔχοντες μεθ' ἑαυτῶν καὶ Ι. εἰς διακονίαν*.

<sup>4</sup> *Acta App.*, p. 146.

xxvi. 16 ἵπηρέτην καὶ μάρτυρα (a person employed in the service of the Gospel); Lc. iv. 20 ἀπόδοὺς τῷ ἵπηρέτῃ (the synagogue minister or ὑπήρχοντας<sup>1</sup>). Official service, not of a menial kind, is the prevalent idea of the word which distinguishes it from δοῦλος on the one hand, and to some extent from διάκονος on the other: see Trench, *syn. 9.* Θεράπων is similarly used in reference to Joshua (Exod. xxxiii. 11, LXX.).

For such forms of ministry John possessed perhaps a natural aptitude (2 Tim. iv. 11 εὔχρηστος εἰς διακονίαν), and his assistance would be invaluable to the two Apostles, whose time was fully occupied with the spiritual work of their mission. But it was rendered only for a short time. At Perga in Pamphylia he left his colleagues, and returned to Jerusalem (Acts xiii. 13 ἀποχωρήσας ἀπ' αὐτῶν ὑπέστρεψεν εἰς Ἱεροσόλυμα). If St Luke records the fact in words which are nearly colourless, the censure which he represents St Paul as having subsequently passed upon Mark's conduct at this juncture is severe and almost passionate (xv. 38 ἡξίου τὸν ἀποστάντα ἀπ' αὐτῶν ἀπὸ Παμφυλίας καὶ μὴ συνελθόντα αὐτοῖς εἰς τὸ ἔργον, μὴ συνπαραλαμβάνειν τοῦτον). Nevertheless, as Professor Ramsay has pointed out<sup>2</sup>, there is something to be said on Mark's behalf. He was not sent to the work by the Spirit or by the Church, as Barnabas and Saul had been. The sphere of the mission, moreover, had not been revealed at the first; and when the Apostles determined to leave the seacoast and strike across the Taurus into the interior, he may have considered himself free to abandon the undertaking. He had left Jerusalem for work at Antioch, and had not engaged himself to face the dangers of a campaign in central Asia Minor (2 Cor. xi. 26); and he may have felt that duty to his mother and his home required him to break off at this point from so perilous a development of the mission.

To Barnabas, at any rate, Mark's withdrawal did not appear in the light of a desertion, nor was St Paul unwilling to be associated with him again in the work at Antioch; for from Acts xv. 37 it

<sup>1</sup> Dr Chase (in Hastings, *D. B.* iii. p. 245 f.) suggests that the word may be used in this sense of John Mark, translating, "and they had with them also

John, the synagogue minister."

<sup>2</sup> *The Church in the Roman Empire*, p. 61; *St Paul the Traveller*, p. 90.

would seem that he was with the Apostles there till the eve of the second missionary journey. St Paul, however, declined to accept the cousin of Barnabas as a companion in another voyage to Asia Minor, and Mark consequently set out with Barnabas alone. Whilst Paul went by land through the Cilician Gates, Barnabas sailed with Mark to Cyprus. In the first soreness of the separation each turned to the home of his family. Barnabas was Κύπριος τῷ γένει, for Levite though he was, he belonged to a Hellenistic family which had settled in the island (Acts iv. 36), and Mark was also probably a Cypriot Jew on one side<sup>1</sup>. Unfortunately the author of the Acts leaves the two men at this point, and there is no early or even moderately trustworthy tradition to carry on the thread of Mark's story. The Acts of Barnabas (*περίοδοι Βαρνάβα*), a work ascribed to St Mark, but of the fourth, or, in its present form, the fifth century, represents the Apostle as suffering martyrdom in Cyprus, and adds that after his death Mark set sail for Egypt, and evangelised Alexandria. The book as a whole is quite unworthy of credit, but it is not improbable that Mark proceeded from Cyprus to Egypt, whether in company with Barnabas or after his death.

Barnabas was still alive and at work when St Paul wrote 1 Cor. ix. 5 (ἢ μόνος ἐγὼ καὶ Βαρνάβας οὐκ ἔχομεν ἔξουσίαν μὴ ἐργάζεσθαι;), i.e. in A.D. 57, or according to Harnack 52-3. In the Clementine Homilies Barnabas is represented as doing evangelistic work in Egypt (i. 9 &c.). McGiffert conjectures, but without probability, that B. was the author of 1 Peter, which with Ramsay he places in the reign of Domitian (*Hist. of Christianity in the Apostolic age*, p. 597 ff.).

A widespread series of traditions connects St Mark with the foundation of the Alexandrian Church<sup>2</sup>. According to Eusebius, whose statement is possibly based on Julius Africanus or an older authority<sup>3</sup>, his first successor in the care of that Church was appointed in Nero's eighth year, i.e. A.D. 61-2. If the date

<sup>1</sup> On Jewish settlements in Cyprus see Schürer II. ii. pp. 222, 232 (E. T.), or ed. 3 (1898) iii. p. 27 n.; and cf. Acts xi. 19, 20, xxi. 16.

<sup>2</sup> Against this must be placed the fact to which Chase (Hastings, D. B. ii. 248) calls attention, that "the great Alex-

andrian Fathers, Clement and Origen, make no reference to any sojourn or work of Mark in that city."

<sup>3</sup> Cf. Lipsius, *Die Apocryphen Apostelgeschichten*, ii. 2, p. 323; Harnack, *Chronologie*, p. 123 f.

is approximately correct, it may be that of the departure of Mark from Alexandria after the completion of his mission there. Such a hypothesis helps to account for part at least of the long interval between Mark's separation from St Paul and his reappearance in St Paul's company at Rome.

The following are the chief early authorities: Eus. *H.E.* ii. 16 φασὶν ἐπὶ τῆς Αἰγύπτου στειλάμενον τὸ εὐαγγέλιον ὃ δὴ καὶ συνεγράψατο κηρύξαι, ἐκκλησίας τε πρώτον ἐπ' αὐτῆς Ἀλεξανδρείας συστήσασθαι. *Ib.* 24 Νέρων δὲ ὄγδοον ἀγοντος τῆς βασιλείας ἔτος πρώτος μετὰ Μᾶρκον τὸν εὐαγγελιστὴν τῆς ἐν Ἀλεξανδρείᾳ παροικίας Ἀννιανὸς τὴν λειτουργίαν διαδέχεται. Cf. Hieron. *de virr.* ill. 8 “adsumpto itaque evangelio quod ipse confecerat<sup>1</sup> perrexit Aegyptum...mortuus est autem octavo Neronis anno et sepultus Alexandriae succedente sibi Anniano.” *Const. Ap.* vii. 46 τῆς δὲ Ἀλεξανδρέων Ἀννιανὸς πρώτος ὑπὸ Μᾶρκου τὸν εὐαγγελιστὸν κεχειροτόνηται. *Epiph. haer.* li. 6 ὁ Μᾶρκος...γράψας τὸ εὐαγγέλιον ἀποστέλλεται ὑπὸ τοῦ ἀγίου Πέτρου εἰς τὴν τῶν Αἴγυπτίων χώραν. Cf. *Mart. Rom.* (Apr. 25) “Alexandriae natalis b. Marci evangelistae...Alexandriae S. Aniani episcopi qui b. Marci discipulus eiusque in episcopatu successor...quievit in Domino.”

We have assumed the identity of John Mark of the Acts with Mark of the Pauline Epistles. It is placed beyond reasonable doubt by Col. iv. 10, where St Paul refers in one sentence to the relationship which existed between Mark and Barnabas, and the hesitation which the Colossians would naturally feel as to receiving the man who had forsaken the Apostles on occasion of their first visit to Asia Minor (Μᾶρκος ὁ ἀνεψιὸς Βαρνάβα, περὶ οὗ ἐλάβετε ἐντολάς Ἐὰν ἔλθῃ πρὸς ὑμᾶς, δέξασθε αὐτόν<sup>2</sup>). Mark, it appears, had thought of visiting the Churches of the Lycus valley some time before the writing of the Colossian letter, perhaps when he was on the point of leaving Cyprus; and St Paul had on that occasion sent orders to Colossae that he was to be received. There is nothing to shew that the visit took place; if our hypothesis is correct, it was abandoned for the mission to Egypt. The latter was now at an end, and Mark had proceeded to Rome.

<sup>1</sup> An inference from the ambiguous phrase of Eusebius. Bishop J. Wordsworth (*Ministry of Grace*, p. 603 f.) suggests that “the close connection of Alexandria with Rome” was “due probably at first to the mission of St Mark

from the imperial city.” But it is explained as easily by the constant communication between the two cities.

<sup>2</sup> See Lightfoot *ad loc.*; for δέξασθε comp. *Mc.* vi. 10, ix. 37, and *Didache* c. II.

There, perhaps to his surprise, he found St Paul a prisoner. A complete reconciliation took place, and the *ὑπηρέτης* of the first missionary journey became the *συνεργός* of the Roman imprisonment (Col. iv. 11, Philem. 24). The fact is the more remarkable, because of all the Jewish Christians in Rome at this time only three were loyal to St Paul, Aristarchus, Jesus Justus, and Mark; his other colleagues, Epaphras, Demas, Luke, were Gentiles. The Apostle's grief was alleviated by the ministry of his Jewish friends (*έγενήθησάν μοι παρηγορία*), and especially no doubt by the revival of his old association with Mark. After this Mark seems to have returned to the East, for in 2 Tim. iv. 11, Timothy, who is apparently at Ephesus (cf. v. 19), is directed to "pick up Mark" on his way to Rome (*Μᾶρκον ἀναλαβὼν ἔγε μετὰ σεαυτοῦ*<sup>1</sup>). The reason which is given assigns to Mark his precise place in the history of the Apostolic age; he was *εὐχρηστός εἰς διακονίαν*. Not endowed with gifts of leadership, neither prophet nor teacher, he knew how to be invaluable to those who filled the first rank in the service of the Church, and proved himself a true *servus servorum Dei*.

Mark's early history had connected him with St Peter, and it is therefore no surprise to find him described by St Peter (1 Pet. v. 13) as his 'son<sup>2</sup>'. The Apostle who had been most prominent in the beginnings of the Church of Jerusalem must have known Mary and her son John from the time of their baptism, and may have been the instrument of their conversion. Yet *ὁ νιός μου* does not involve spiritual relationship of this kind, which is more naturally expressed, as in the Pauline Epistles, by *τέκνον* (cf. 1 Cor. iv. 17, Phil. ii. 22, Philem. 10, 1 Tim. i. 2, 18, 2 Tim. i. 2, ii. 1, Tit. i. 4). Rather it is the affectionate designation

<sup>1</sup> Lightfoot, *Biblical Essays*, p. 407.

<sup>2</sup> The Petrine authorship of 1 Peter may be assumed, notwithstanding the recent attempt of Professor McGiffert to assign that epistle to Barnabas (*History of Christianity in the Apostolic Age*, p. 598 ff.). It is difficult to follow him when he writes (p. 599 f.): "that Barnabas should speak of him (Mark) as his son was very natural, but it is not

likely that any one else would do it save Paul himself"; the epithet is surely at least as appropriate on the lips of St Peter. As to the 'Paulinism' of 1 Peter see Hort, *Romans and Ephesians*, p. 169: "St Peter makes them [the thoughts derived from St Paul] fully his own by the form into which he casts them, a form for the most part unlike what we find in any epistle of St Paul."

of a former pupil, who as a young disciple must often have sat at his feet to be catechised and taught the way of the Lord, and who had come to look upon his mother's old friend and teacher as a second father, and to render to him the offices of filial piety.

But the Mark of 1 Peter is not merely described as St Peter's son; he is represented as being with that Apostle at Rome<sup>1</sup>.

The words are: ἀσπάζεται ὑμᾶς η̄ ἐν Βαβυλῶνι συνεκλεκτὴ καὶ Μᾶρκος ὁ νίος μου. ‘Babylon’ has been identified with (1) the city on the Euphrates, (2) a fortress in Egypt now Old Cairo<sup>2</sup>, (3) Rome. The evidence in favour of the last is summarised by Lightfoot, *Clement*, ii. p. 492, Salmon, *Introduction to the N.T.*<sup>3</sup>, p. 439 ff., and Hort, *First Epistle of St Peter*, p. 5 f.; the first and second identifications are without ancient authority, and beset with difficulties. Blass (*Philology of the Gospels*, p. 27 ff.) regards St Peter as having proceeded to Babylon from Antioch (Gal. ii. 11) shortly after A.D. 46. But apart from Strabo's statement that Babylon was at this time a desert, which Blass seeks to minimise, the facts which Josephus (*ant.* xviii. 9 sqq.) relates as to the condition of the Jews in Babylonia render this hypothesis highly improbable.

According to the constant and probably true tradition which brings St Peter to Rome, that Apostle suffered martyrdom there in the time of Nero and at the same time as St Paul (Dionysius of Corinth ap. Eus. ii. 25 ἐμαρτύρησαν κατὰ τὸν αὐτὸν χρόνον). “The expression (as Lightfoot urges, *Clement*, ii. p. 499) must not be too rigorously pressed, even if the testimony of a Corinthian could be accepted as regards the belief in Rome,” or, we may add, the testimony of a bishop who lived in the latter half of the second century as regards matters of fact which belong to the history of the first. Lightfoot himself placed the martyrdom of St Peter in A.D. 64, and that of St Paul in A.D. 67; but if the two martyrdoms may be dissociated, it is open to consideration whether St Paul's was not the earlier.

Harnack<sup>3</sup>, who holds that the two Apostles suffered together in A.D. 64, refers to Clem. 1 Cor. 6 τούτοις τοῖς ἀνδράσιν (sc. Πέτρῳ καὶ

<sup>1</sup> Cf. Jerome *de virr.* ill. 8 “meminit huius Marci et Petrus in prima epistula, sub nomine Babylonis figuralter Romanum significans.”

<sup>2</sup> See Pearson's *Minor Th. Works* (ed.

Churton), ii. p. 353 ff.; and cf. A. J. Butler, *Ancient Coptic Churches*, i. p. 155 ff.

<sup>3</sup> *Chronologie*, p. 708 ff.; cf. C. H. Turner, *Chronology of the N. T.* (in Hastings, *Dictionary of the Bible*). That the

Παῖλω)...συνηθροίσθη πολὺ πλῆθος ἐκλεκτῶν οἵτινες πολλαῖς αἰκίαις καὶ βασάνοις...ὑπόδειγμα κάλλιστον ἔγένοντο. But the words of Clement do not necessarily imply that the Apostles and the πολὺ πλῆθος suffered at the same time, or that the martyrdom of the Apostles took place at the first outbreak of the persecution. Nor does the fact that St Peter was believed to have been buried in the Vatican amount to a proof that he was among the first sufferers. Early as the tradition is (cf. Eus. *H.E.* ii. 25), it may rest upon inference only.

An examination of 1 Peter supplies more than one reason for believing the Epistle to have been written subsequently to St Paul's death. (1) It is addressed to the Christian communities of Pontus, Galatia, Cappadocia, Asia, and Bithynia, some of which were distinctly Pauline Churches and had received letters from St Paul during his imprisonment. It was transmitted to them by the hands of Silvanus, a well-known colleague of St Paul. It contains reminiscences of two of St Paul's writings, the Epistle to the Romans and the Epistle to the Ephesians<sup>1</sup>. The conclusion can scarcely be avoided that at the time when it was written St Paul had finished his course. The care of the Churches had fallen on St Peter; the two oldest associates of St Paul had transferred their services to the surviving Apostle; both had originally been members of the Church of Jerusalem, and, when the attraction of the stronger personality had been withdrawn, both had returned to their early leader. St Peter on his part is careful to shew by the character of his letter and by his selection of colleagues that he has no other end than to take up and carry on the work of St Paul. (2) Further, it has been pointed out by Professor Ramsay that 1 Peter contemplates a state of things in Asia Minor which did not exist before A.D. 64, and was hardly realised before the middle of the eighth decade of the century<sup>2</sup>. Reasons have been advanced for hesitating to push the year of St Peter's death so far forwards as 75, or beyond 70<sup>3</sup>; but even 68, the last year

martyrdom of St Peter took place in A.D. 64 is also maintained by Chase (Hastings, *D. B.* iii. 777 f.); cf. Zahn, *Einleitung*, ii. p. 19.

<sup>1</sup> Sanday and Headlam, *Romans*, p. lxxiv. ff.; Hort, *Romans and Ephesians*,

p. 168; Salmon, *Intr. to the N. T.*<sup>7</sup>, p. 442 ff.

<sup>2</sup> *The Church and the Empire*, p. 279 ff. Cf. *Exp.* iv. viii. 285 ff.

<sup>3</sup> Dr Sanday in the *Expositor*, iv. vii. p. 411 f.

of Nero's reign, will leave time for a considerable interval during which Mark may have ministered to St Peter at Rome.

Of the services rendered by Mark to Barnabas or to St Paul the tradition of the Church preserves but the faintest traces; in post-canonical Christian writings his name is persistently associated with St Peter.

An exception occurs in *Const. Ap.* ii. 57 τὰ εὐαγγέλια ἀ...οὶ συνεργοὶ Παύλου παρειληφότες κατέλειψαν ὑμῖν Λουκᾶς καὶ Μᾶρκος, and another in Hipp. *haer.* vii. 30 τούτους [sc. τοὺς λόγους] οὗτε Παῦλος ὁ ἀπόστολος οὗτε Μᾶρκος...ἀνήγγειλαν. But the former writer has perhaps been influenced by the order of the Gospels with which he was familiar; and the latter seems in this passage to have strangely confused St Mark with St Luke (see Duncker's note *ad loc.*).

3. One of the oldest and most trustworthy of Christian traditions represents Mark as St Peter's interpreter, and as the author of a collection of memoirs which gave the substance of St Peter's teaching.

The chief authorities are as follows: (1) *Asiatic and Western.* Papias ap. Eus. *H.E.* iii. 39 καὶ τοῦθ' ὁ πρεσβύτερος ἔλεγε· Μᾶρκος μέν, ἐρμηνευτὴς Πέτρου γενόμενος, δσα ἐμνημόνευστεν ἀκριβῶς ἔγραψεν, οὐδὲ μέντοι τάξει, τὰ ὑπὸ τοῦ χριστοῦ ἡ λεχθέντα ἡ πραχθέντα. οὗτε γάρ ηκουσε τοῦ κυρίου οὗτε παρηκολούθησεν αὐτῷ. ὕστερον δέ, ὡς ἔφην, Πέτρῳ, ὃς πρὸς τὰς χρείας ἐποιεῖτο τὰς διδασκαλίας, ἀλλ' οὐχ ὥσπερ σύνταξιν τῶν κυριακῶν ποιούμενος λόγων. ὥστε οὐδὲν ἡμαρτε Μᾶρκος, οὕτως ἔνια γράψας ὡς ἀπεμνημόνευσεν· ἐνὸς γάρ ἐποίήσατο πρόνοιαν, τοῦ μηδὲν ὧν ηκουσε παραλιπεῖν ἡ ψεύσασθαι τι ἐν αὐτοῖς<sup>1</sup>. Iren. iii. 1. Ι μετὰ δὲ τὴν τούτων [sc. τοῦ Πέτρου καὶ τοῦ Παύλου] ἔξοδον Μᾶρκος, ὁ μαθητὴς καὶ ἐρμηνευτὴς Πέτρου, καὶ αὐτὸς τὰ ὑπὸ Πέτρου κηρυσσόμενα ἐγγράφως ἡμῖν παραδέδωκε. Ib. 10. 6 “Marcus interpres et sectator Petri initium evangelicae conscriptionis fecit sic.” Fragm. Murat. *ad init.* “[Marcus...?] ali]quibus tamen interfuit et ita posuit<sup>2</sup>.” Tertullian *adv. Marc.* iv. 5 “licet et Marcus quod edidit Petri affirmetur, cuius interpres Marcus.” (2) *Alexandrian.* Clement, *hypotyp.* ap. Eus. *H.E.* vi. 14 τὸ δὲ κατὰ Μᾶρκον ταύτην ἐσχηκέναι τὴν οἰκονομίαν· τοῦ Πέτρου δημοσίᾳ ἐν Ῥώμῃ κηρύζαντος τὸν λόγον καὶ πνεύματι τὸ εὐαγγέλιον ἐξεπόντος τοὺς παρόντας πολλοὺς ὅντας παρακαλέσαι τὸν Μᾶρκον ὡς ἀν ἀκολουθήσαντα αὐτῷ πόρρωθεν καὶ μεμνημένον τῶν λεχθέντων ἀναγράψαι τὰ εἰρημένα, ποιήσαντα δὲ τὸ εὐαγγέλιον μεταδοῦναι τοῖς δεομένοις αὐτοῦ. ὅπερ ἐπιγνόντα τὸν Πέτρον προτρεπτικῶς μῆτε κωλῦσαι μῆτε προτρέψασθαι. (Cf. Eus. ii. 15 γνόντα

<sup>1</sup> For the interpretation of this passage see Westcott, *Canon of the N. T.*<sup>6</sup>, p. 74 f.; Lightfoot, *Supernatural Religion*, p. 163 ff.; Zahn, *Gesch. d. NT*—

chen Kanons, i. p. 871 ff.; Link, in *Studien u. Kritiken*, 1896, 3.

<sup>2</sup> Comp. Lightfoot, *S. R.*, p. 205 ff.; Zahn, *op. cit.*, ii. p. 14 ff.

δὲ τὸ πραχθέν φασι τὸν ἀπόστολον, ἀποκαλύψαντος αὐτῷ τοῦ πνεύματος, ησθῆναι τῇ τῶν ἀνδρῶν προθυμίᾳ, κυρώσαί τε τὴν γραφὴν εἰς ἔντευξιν ταῖς ἐκκλησίαις. Κλήμης ἐν ἑκτῷ τῶν ὑποτυπώσεων παρατέθειται τὴν ἱστορίαν.) *Adumbr.* in *i Petr.* v. 13: “Marcus Petri sectator palam praedicante Petro evangelium Romae coram quibusdam Caesareanis equitibus et multa Christi testimonia preferente, petitus ab eis ut possent quae dicebantur memoriae commendare, scripsit ex his quae Petro dicta sunt evangelium quod secundum Marcum vocitatur.” Origen ap. Eus. vi. 25 δεύτερον δὲ [τῶν τεσσάρων εὐαγγελίων] τὸ κατὰ Μᾶρκον ὡς Πέτρος ὑφηγήσατο αὐτῷ ποιήσαντα. Jerome gathers up the substance of the traditions recorded by Papias and Clement (*de virr. ill.* 8); but elsewhere he follows Origen (see p. xxi).

It will be observed that while the two lines of tradition have much in common, they are by no means identical, and probably depend on sources partly or wholly distinct. The Asiatic tradition goes behind St Mark's work as an Evangelist, and describes the nature of his services to St Peter. He had been the Apostle's interpreter. According to its usual meaning in later Greek, the ἐρμηνευτής is the secretary or dragoman who translates his master's words into a foreign tongue<sup>1</sup>.

Thus when Joseph as an Egyptian prince communicates with his brethren from Palestine he uses the services of an interpreter (Gen. xlii. 23 ὁ γὰρ ἐρμηνευτὴς ἀνὰ μέσον αὐτῶν ἦν). St Paul directs that the gift of tongues shall not be exercised in Christian assemblies unless there be an interpreter at hand (1 Cor. xiv. 28 ἐὰν δὲ μὴ ἦ διερμηνευτής (v.l. ἐρμηνευτής), σιγάτω ἐν τῇ ἐκκλησίᾳ).

Now John Mark had enjoyed opportunities of becoming a serviceable interpreter to an Aramaic-speaking Jew. As a resident in Jerusalem he was familiar with Aramaic; as a Jew who on one side at least was of Hellenistic descent, he could doubtless make himself understood in Greek. His Graeco-Latin surname implies something more than this; he had probably acquired in Jerusalem the power of reading and writing the Greek which passed current in Judæa and among Hellenistic Jews. Simon Peter on the other hand, if he could express himself in Greek at all, could scarcely have possessed sufficient knowledge of the language to address a Roman congregation with success. In the phrase ἐρμηνευτής

<sup>1</sup> For a different view see Zahn, *Einleitung*, ii. pp. 209, 218 ff.

Πέτρου γενόμενος we catch a glimpse of St Mark's work at Rome during St Peter's residence in the city<sup>1</sup>.

The traditions differ also as to some important points connected with the origin of the Gospel. Papias suggests and Irenaeus expressly says that it was written after St Peter's death; Clement of Alexandria on the other hand states that the Apostle knew and permitted or even approved the enterprise. He adds that Mark wrote at the request of the Roman hearers of St Peter; but this feature in the story bears a suspicious resemblance to the account which the Muratorian fragment gives and Clement repeats in reference to the Gospel of St John. On the whole, notwithstanding St Mark's Alexandrian connexion, the Alexandrian tradition appears to be less worthy of credit than the Asiatic. Clement indeed attributes it to "the elders of olden time" (*παράδοσιν τῶν ἀνέκαθεν πρεσβυτέρων τέθειται*), meaning probably Pantaenus and others before him. But it must have passed through several hands before it reached Clement, whereas the statement of Papias came from a contemporary of St Mark<sup>2</sup>.

John the presbyter, on whose witness Papias relies, describes the character of St Mark's work with much precision. It was not an orderly or a complete account of the Lord's words or works. Mark had no opportunity of collecting materials for such a history, for he had not been a personal follower of Christ, and depended upon his recollections of St Peter's teaching; and that teaching was not systematic, but intended to meet the practical requirements of the Church. On the other hand there was no lack of industry or of accuracy on the part of the Evangelist; he was careful to omit nothing that he had heard and could recall, and in what he recorded he kept strictly to the facts. It will be observed that John does not describe St Mark's work as a 'Gospel.'

<sup>1</sup> Jerome *ad Hedib.* 11 suggests that St Peter may have employed more than one interpreter, basing his belief on the differences of style which distinguish 1 and 2 Peter ("ex quo intellegimus pro necessitate rerum diversis eum usum interpretibus"). The argument applies with greater force to 1 Peter as compared with St Mark; the evangelist was

assuredly not the interpreter who supplied the Epistle with its Greek dress.

<sup>2</sup> The Alexandrian elders were so imperfectly informed as to the relative age of the Gospels that according to Eusebius (*H. E.* vi. 14) they held *προγράφθαι τῶν εὐαγγελίων τὰ περιέχοντα τὰς γενεαλογίας*.

It was a record of St Peter's teaching or preaching ( $\tauῆς διδασκαλίας$ , cf. Iren. *l.c.*  $\tauὰ ὑπὸ Πέτρου κηρυσσόμενα$ ). Yet it was certainly limited to the Apostle's reminiscences of the ministry of Christ ( $\tauὰ ὑπὸ τοῦ χριστοῦ ἡ λεχθέντα ἡ πραχθέντα$ ), and thus in its general scope answered precisely to the book which was afterwards known as *εὐαγγέλιον κατὰ Μᾶρκον*. Later forms of the story exaggerate St Peter's part in the production. Even Origen seems to represent the Apostle as having personally controlled the work ( $ὡς Πέτρος ὑφηγήσατο αὐτῷ$ ), whilst Jerome (*ad Hesib.*) says that the Gospel of St Mark was written “Petro narrante et illo scribente.”

The subscriptions which are appended to St Mark's Gospel in certain cursive mss. enter into further details, e.g. 293 subscr. ἐγράφη ἴδιοχείρως αὐτοῦ τοῦ ἀγίου Μάρκου...καὶ ἐξεδόθη παρὰ Πέτρου...τοῖς ἐν Ῥώμῃ οὖσι πιστοῖς ἀδελφοῖς. Others add ὑπηγορεύθη (or διηγορεύθη) ὑπὸ Πέτρου, or ἐπεδόθη Μάρκῳ τῷ εὐαγγελίστῃ. On the other hand the subscriptions to the versions recognise Mark's authorship without mention of St Peter: e.g. “explicit evangelium secundum Marcum” (Latin Vulgate); επαπτελίοις ζωής κατὰ μαρκον (Memph.); (Sin. and Cur. Syriac); (Peshitta; similarly Harclean). The last of these seems to be an attempt to combine the Papias tradition with the ordinary attribution to Mark; the Gospel is a record of preaching at Rome, but the preaching is Mark's and not St Peter's.

4. One personal reminiscence of St Mark survives in a few authorities of Western origin. According to Hippolytus (*Philos.* vii. 30) he was known as ὁ κολοβοδάκτυλος, and the epithet is repeated and explained in the Latin prefaces to the Gospel. A Spanish ms. of the Vulgate, *cod. Toletanus* (saec. VIII), says: “*colobodactilus* est nominatus ideo quod a cetera corporis proceritatem (*sic*) digitos minores habuisse<sup>1</sup>”; whilst the ordinary Vulgate preface states that the Evangelist after his conversion amputated one of his fingers in order to disqualify himself for the duties of the Jewish priesthood (“amputasse sibi post fidem pollicem dicitur ut sacerdotio reprobus haberetur”). The explanation is ingenious,

<sup>1</sup> Wordsworth and White, p. 171.

but it is evidently based upon the conjecture that Mark, like Barnabas, belonged to the tribe of Levi. An attempt was made by Dr Tregelles<sup>1</sup> to shew that the word is used by Hippolytus as an equivalent for ‘deserter,’ in reference to Mark’s departure from Perga. But this account of the matter can hardly be regarded as satisfactory; it is far-fetched at the best; and so offensive a nickname is not likely to have attached itself to the Evangelist in Roman circles, where he was known as St Paul’s faithful colleague. The word itself determines nothing as to the cause of the defect, or its extent; it may have been congenital, or due to accident; it may have affected both hands or all the fingers of one hand or one finger only<sup>2</sup>. The preface in *cod. Toletanus* seems to ascribe it to a natural cause. No authority can be allowed to a document of this kind, but the statement is not in itself improbable; at all events there seems to be no reason for setting aside the literal meaning of the word, or for doubting that it describes a personal peculiarity which had impressed itself on the memory of the Roman Church. Such a defect, to whatever cause it was due, may have helped to mould the course of John Mark’s life; by closing against him a more ambitious career, it may have turned his thoughts to those secondary ministries by which he has rendered enduring service to the Church.

*Κολοβός* is either (1) of stunted growth, or (2) mutilated. Both senses occur when the word is used as part of a compound; the former appears in *κολοβανθής*, *κολοβοκέρατος*, *κολοβοτράχηλος*, the latter in *κολοβόκερκος* (Lev. xxii. 23 LXX., where it is coupled with *ώτότμητος*), *κολοβόριν* (Lev. xxi. 18); cf. 2 Regn. iv. 12 *κολοβούστιν τὰς χείρας αὐτῶν καὶ τὸν πόδας αὐτῶν*.

As to the time and manner of St Mark’s death we have no trustworthy information. Jerome, as we have seen, fixes his death in the eighth year of Nero, at Alexandria; but the statement seems to be merely an unsound inference from the Eusebian date for the succession of Annianus. The Paschal Chronicle assigns to Mark the crown of martyrdom<sup>3</sup>, but the story cannot be

<sup>1</sup> *Journal of Classical and Sacred Philology*, 1855, p. 224 f.

<sup>2</sup> Dr Chase (in Hastings, *D. B.* iii. p. 247) suggests that “the word may refer

to some mutilation or malformation of the toes, resulting in lameness.”

<sup>3</sup> *Chron. Pasch.* : ἐπὶ τούτου τοῦ Τραϊανοῦ καὶ Μᾶρκος ὁ εὐαγγελιστῆς καὶ ἐπί-

traced back further than the fourth or fifth century, when it is found in the *Acts of Mark*, an *apocryphon* of Alexandrian origin<sup>1</sup>; the particulars as they were elaborated at a later time may be seen in Nicephorus, or in the Sarum lections for his festival<sup>2</sup>. No reference is made to the fact in the prefaces to the Vulgate, or by Jerome, though he relates that Mark was buried at Alexandria<sup>3</sup>.

*σκοπος Ἀλεξανδρείας γενόμενος...έμαρτυρησεν.*

<sup>1</sup> See Lipsius, *Apostelgesch.* ii. 2, p. 321 ff.

<sup>2</sup> Niceph. Call. *H. E.* ii. 43 εἰς τὴν Ἀλεξάνδρειαν πάλιν ἐπάνεισιν, ὅπου δὴ τὰς διατριβὰς ποιούμενος ἦν ἐν τοῖς Βουκέλου δύναμισμένοις μετά τινων ἀδελφῶν παρρησίᾳ τὸν χριστὸν κηρύσσων. οἱ τοινυν τῶν εἰδώλων θεραπευταὶ αἱρήσαντες ἐπιθέμενοι σχοινίους τοὺς πόδας διαλαβόντες ἀπηνέστερον εἶλον...οὕτω δὴ συρριμένος τὸ πνεῦμα παρατίθησι τῷ θεῷ. Procter and Wordsworth, *Sanctorale*, col. 262 f. The day of his martyrdom was Pharmouthi 30 in the Egyptian Kalendar, and viii Kal. Mai=Apr. 28 in the Roman (Lipsius, *op. cit.*, p. 335).

<sup>3</sup> For the traditional connexion of St

Mark with the Church of Aquileia and the translation of his body to Venice see the *Acta Sanctorum* (Apr. 25), and as to the latter point cf. Tillemont, *Mémoires*, ii. pp. 98 f., 513; Lipsius, *op. cit.*, p. 346 ff. On the mission to Aquileia Ado of Vienne († 874) writes (*Chron. vi.*, Migne *P. L.* cxxiii. col. 78): “Marcus evangelista evangelium quod Romae scriperat Petro mittente primum Aquileiae praedicavit, itaque...ad Aegyptum pervenit.” The extension of the older story (*Eus. H. E.* ii. 16) in this passage is instructive. The mosaic at St Mark’s, Venice, which represents the removal of the Evangelist’s body is described by Ruskin, *St Mark’s Rest*, p. 109 ff.; for his account of St Mark’s see *Stones of Venice*, ii. p. 56 ff.

## II.

## HISTORY OF THE GOSPEL IN THE EARLY CHURCH.

I. A work which was ascribed by contemporaries to a disciple and interpreter of St Peter, and believed to consist of carefully registered reminiscences of the Apostle's teaching, might have been expected to find a prompt and wide circulation in Christian communities, especially at Rome and in the West, where it is said to have been written. Yet the letter addressed to the Corinthian Church by Clement of Rome, c. A.D. 95, contains no certain reference to the Gospel according to St Mark, although it quotes sayings which bear a close affinity to the Synoptic record.

Clem. R. 1 *Cor.* 23, πρῶτον μὲν φυλλορροεῖ, εἴτα βλαστὸς γίνεται, εἴτα φύλλου...εἴτα σταφυλὴ παρεστηκνά, reminds the reader of Mc. iv. 28, 29; but the passage in Clement is part of a quotation (cf. γραφῆ...ὅπου λέγει) which occurs again in Ps.-Clem. 2 *Cor.* 11 and appears to be derived from some Christian apocryphon (cf. Lightfoot *ad loc.*), so that the reference, if there be any, is indirect. In Clem. 1 *Cor.* 15, οὗτος δὲ λαὸς τοῖς χείλεσιν με τιμᾷ, ηδὲ καρδίᾳ αὐτῶν πόρρω ἀπεστιν ἀπ' ἐμοῦ, Isa. xxix. 13 is cited in words which are nearer to Mc. vii. 6 than to the LXX., but the quotation is given by Mt. in an almost identical form, and Clement (cod. A) differs from both Evangelists and from the LXX., writing ἀπεστιν for ἀπέχει. The passage had probably (Hatch, *Essays*, p. 177 f.) been detached from its context and abbreviated by some compiler of *testimonia* before the middle of the first century, and, if so, no argument can be built upon the general coincidence of the form used by Clem. with that which appears in Mc. Ib. 1 *Cor.* 46, οὐαὶ τῷ ἀνθρώπῳ ἐκείνῳ· καλὸν δὲ αὐτῷ εἰ οὐκ ἐγεννήθη, agrees fairly well with Mc. xiv. 21, but still more exactly with Mt. xxvi. 24, and may have been cited from a pre-evangelical tradition.

The same may be said of the writings of Ignatius, Polycarp, and Barnabas. Bishop Westcott, after a careful examination, arrives at the conclusion that "no Evangelic reference in the

Apostolic Fathers can be referred certainly to a written record<sup>1</sup>. Yet these writers with Clement represent the chief centres of both East and West—Rome, Antioch, Smyrna, and perhaps Alexandria. If we add other documents of the same period—the *Didache*, the so-called second Epistle of Clement, the Epistle to Diognetus, the martyrdom of Polycarp, the fragments of Papias and the Elders—the general result will not be different<sup>2</sup>. On the other hand the *Shepherd*, which is the next document emanating from the Roman Church, and cannot be placed later than A.D. 156, while it may possibly belong to the first years of the second century, seems clearly to shew the influence of the second Gospel.

Herm. sim. ix. 20 οἱ τοιοῦτοι οὖν δυσκόλως εἰσελεύσονται εἰς τὴν βασιλείαν τοῦ θεοῦ...τοῖς τοιούτοις δύσκολόν ἐστιν εἰς τ. β. τ. θ. εἰσελθεῖν (cf. Mc. x. 23, 24; Mt. has merely πλούσιος εἰσελεύσεται εἰς τ. β. τῶν οὐρανῶν, and Lc. drifts further away from the Marcan form of the saying). Ib. mand. ii. 2 ἔνοχος ἐσγῇ τῆς ἀμαρτίας (cf. Mc. iii. 29). On the general question as to the use of our four Gospels by Hermas see Dr C. Taylor, *Witness of Hermas*, p. 5 ff.

In Justin, again, we have an echo of Christian opinion at Rome, and though the point is open to dispute, there is ground for believing that he not only refers to the second Gospel, but identifies it with the “memoirs of Peter.”

Dial. 106 τὸ εἰπεῖν μετωνομακέναι αὐτὸν Πέτρον ἔνα τῶν ἀποστόλων καὶ γεγράφθαι ἐν τοῖς ἀπομνημονεύμασιν αὐτοῦ γεγενημένον καὶ τοῦτο μετὰ τοῦ καὶ ἄλλους δύο ἀδελφοὺς νιὸν Ζεβεδαίου ὅντας μετωνομακέναι ὀνόματι τοῦ Βοανεργές, ὃ ἐστιν νιὸι βροντῆς, σημαντικὸν ἦν τὸν αὐτὸν ἐκεῖνον δὲ οὐ καὶ τὸ ἐπώνυμον Ἰακὼβ τῷ Ἰσραὴλ ἐπικληθέντι ἐδόθη. It is clear from this that Justin knew certain Ἀπομνημονεύματα Πέτρου which contained the words ὄνομα Βοανεργές, ὃ ἐστιν νιὸι βροντῆς, or their substance. But the actual words occur in Mc. iii. 17, and in no other evangelical record<sup>3</sup>. The assumption that they were borrowed not from our second Gospel but from Pseudo-Peter appears to be arbitrary, notwithstanding the support of some great names (Harnack, *Brückstücke d. Ev. d. Petrus*, p. 37 ff., and Sanday, *Inspiration*, p. 310). A second reference to Mc. has been found in Dial. 88 τέκτονος νομιζομένου

<sup>1</sup> *Canon of the N. T.*<sup>6</sup>, p. 63.

<sup>2</sup> Ignatius has (*Eph.* 16) the Marcan phrase τὸ πῦρ τὸ ἀσβεστον, but cf. Mt. iii. 12=Lc. iii. 17; all the passages rest on Isa. lxvi. 24. In Polyc. *Philipp.* 5 (*τοῦ κυρίου δὲ ἐγένετο διάκονος πάντων*) there is

possibly a reminiscence of the saying in Mc. ix. 35, ἔσται...πάντων διάκονος, but it is too uncertain to establish direct indebtedness.

<sup>3</sup> See the writer's *Akhmím Fragment*, p. xxxiii. ff.; *J. Th. St.* ii. p. 6 ff.

(Mc. vi. 3); other passages might be quoted, but they relate to contexts which are common to Mc. and Mt. or Lc., or to the non-Markan verses xvi. 9—20 (see Intr. § xi.).

Meanwhile the Gospel was known and used by more than one of the earlier Gnostic sects, and in other heretical circles both in East and West.

Thus Heracleon (ap. Clem. Al. *strom.* iv. 72) in a catena of extracts from the Synoptic Gospels cites Mc. viii. 38; cf. Zahn, *Gesch. d. NTlichen Kanons*, i. p. 741 f. Irenaeus (i. 3. 3) refers to the use of Mc. v. 31 by a Valentinian school, and Mc. i. 13 is distinctly quoted by the Eastern Valentinians, Clem. *exc.* 85 (*αὐτίκα ὁ κύριος μετὰ τὸ βάπτισμα γίνεται πρῶτον μετὰ θηρίων ἐν τῇ ἐρήμῳ*). A Docetic sect mentioned by Irenaeus manifested a preference for the Second Gospel (iii. 11. 7 “qui autem Iesum separant a Christo et impassibilem perseverasse Christum passum autem Iesum dicunt, id quod secundum Marcum est praeferentes evangelium”). But a mistake may perhaps lurk in this statement. Basilides, we know (Clem. *strom.* vii. 17), professed to have received instruction from one Glaucias, who is styled an interpreter of Peter. If this Gnostic rival of St Mark wrote a Gospel, it is possible that the words of Irenaeus refer to the Gnostic Gospel, and not to the true St Mark. In Pseudo-Peter there are distinct indications of the use of St Mark (*Akhmîm Fragment*, p. xl.). The Ebionite Clementine Homilies also shew an acquaintance with it, e.g. xix. 20 *τοῖς αὐτοῦ μαθηταῖς κατ’ ἴδιαν ἐπέλυε τῆς τῶν οὐρανῶν βασιλείας μυστήρια* (Mc. iv. 34); a reference to Mc. xii. 29 in *hom.* iii. 51 is less certain, but probable (cf. Sanday, *Gospels in the second century*, p. 177 f.). Hippolytus (*phil.* vii. 30) strangely represents St Mark’s Gospel as forming part of the canon of Marcion<sup>1</sup>. But apart from Marcion the Second Gospel seems to have found no opponents in early Christian communities, heretical or catholic.

The early circulation of St Mark’s Gospel is further attested by its place among the primary Gospels, which were regarded, perhaps before the middle of the second century, as a sacred quaternion.

This idea is first expounded by Irenaeus iii. 11. 8 ἐπειδὴ τέσσαρα κλύματα τοῦ κόσμου ἐν ᾧ ἐσμεν εἰσὶ καὶ τέσσαρα καθολικὰ πνεύματα, κατέσπαρται δὲ ἡ ἐκκλησίᾳ ἐπὶ πάσῃς τῆς γῆς...εἰκότως (*consequens est*) τέσσαρας ἔχειν αὐτὴν στύλους...ξεῖ ὅν φανερὸν ὅτι ὁ τῶν ἀπάντων τεχνίτης Δόγος, ὁ καθήμενος ἐπὶ τῶν χερουβίμι καὶ συνέχων τὰ πάντα, φανερώθεις τοῖς ἀνθρώποις ἔδωκεν ἡμῖν τετράμορφον τὸ εὐαγγέλιον (*quadriforme evangelium*), ἐνὶ δὲ πνεύματι συνεχόμενον. But the conception of a *τετράμορφον εὐαγγέλιον* does not seem to have

<sup>1</sup> Marcion was probably acquainted with St Mark (cf. Westcott, *Canon*<sup>6</sup>, p. 316 n.; Zahn, *Geschichte*, p. 675).

originated with the Bp of Lyons. Dr C. Taylor (*Witness of Hermas*, i. *passim*) with much probability traces it to Hermas, i.e. to the generation before Irenaeus. Between Hermas and Irenaeus we have the witness of Tatian, whose *Diatessaron* reveals the fact that the four Gospels which had received general recognition were none other than those of the present canon. Moreover there is reason to believe (J. R. Harris, *Diatessaron*, p. 56) that Tatian's Harmony was not the first attempt of its kind; certainly the harmonising of portions of the Synoptic narrative appears to have begun before his time.

If it be asked why St Mark's Gospel took its place among the four, the answer must be that in the belief of the post-Apostolic Church it was identified with the teaching of St Peter. It did not appeal in any special manner to the interests of the Ancient Church, or, like the first and fourth of our Gospels, bear an Apostolic name. It was saved from exclusion, and perhaps from oblivion, by the connexion of its writer with St Peter. Thus its position in the primitive canon bears witness to a general and early conviction that it was the genuine work of the *interpres Petri*.

In Irenaeus the identification of the work of St Mark with the Second Gospel is formal and complete. The great Bishop of Lyons is "the first extant writer in whom, from the nature of his work, we have a right to expect explicit information on the subject of the Canon<sup>1</sup>," and he does not disappoint our expectations here. He quotes our Gospel repeatedly, he quotes it as St Mark's, and he declares the author to have been St Peter's disciple and interpreter.

Iren. iii. 10. 6 "Marcus *interpres et sectator Petri initium evangelicae conscriptionis fecit sic: initium evangelii Iesu Christi filii Dei*," etc. (Mc. i. 1—3). Elsewhere Irenaeus quotes verbatim Mc. i. 24 (iv. 6. 6), v. 31 (i. 3. 3), 41, 43 (v. 13. 1), viii. 31 (iii. 16. 5), 38 (iii. 18. 6), ix. 23 (iv. 37. 5), 44 (ii. 32. 1), x. 38 (i. 21. 3), xiii. 32 (ii. 28. 6), xvi. 19 (iii. 10. 6). The last of these passages shews that the Gospel as he possessed it included the supplementary verses, and that he attributed the whole to Mark: "in fine autem evangelii ait Marcus *Et quidem Dominus Iesus, postquam locutus est eis, receptus est in caelum, et sedet ad dexteram Dei.*"

<sup>1</sup> Lightfoot, *Supernatural Religion*, p. 271.

The century ends with the witness of an anonymous Roman writer, the author of the so-called Muratorian fragment, and that of Tertullian, who represents the belief of the daughter Church of Carthage.

The Muratorian writer recognised four Gospels ("tertio secundum Lucam...quarti evangeliorum Iohannis"), and the single line which is all that remains of his account of St Matthew and St Mark doubtless refers to St Mark. The words are *quibus tamen interfuit et ita posuit*. *Quibus* may be regarded as the second half of *aliquibus*, the first two syllables having perished with the preceding leaf of the ms., or *quibus tamen* may represent *οἷς δὲ* in the Greek original<sup>1</sup>. The sentence cannot mean that St Mark was on certain occasions a personal attendant on our Lord, as the next sentence ("Lucas...Dominum...nec ipse vidit in carne")<sup>2</sup> clearly shews, and must therefore refer to St Peter's teaching<sup>3</sup>, which Mark reported carefully so far as he had opportunity. This may be either a reminiscence of the words of Papias (*οὐδὲν ἡμαρτεὶ Μᾶρκος, οὕτως ἔντια γράψας ως ἀπεμνημόνευσεν*), or part of an independent Roman tradition. In either case it is important as evidence of Roman opinion at the end of the second century.

Tertullian's belief is clearly shewn in *adv. Marc.* iv. 2, 5 "nobis fidem ex apostolis Ioannes et Mattheus insinuant, ex apostolicis Lucas et Marcus instaurant...licet et Marcus quod edidit Petri affirmetur, cuius interpres Marcus." His references to Mark are few, but some of them at least admit of no doubt; they will be found in Rönsch, *d. N. T. Tertullians*, p. 148 ff.

From the end of the second century the literary history of St Mark is merged in that of the canon of the Four Gospels. The Gospel according to Mark holds its place in all ancient versions of the New Testament and in all early lists of the canon. No voice was raised against its acceptance; East and West, Catholics and heretics, tacitly recognised its authority. The evidence comes from all the great centres of Christian life; from Edessa and Antioch, from Jerusalem and Asia Minor, from Alexandria and the banks of the Nile, as well as from Rome, Carthage, and Gaul.

The Gospel according to St Mark was contained in the Old Syriac version (it appears in both the Curetonian and Sinaitic

<sup>1</sup> So Chase in Hastings, *D. B.* iii. p. 247. <sup>2</sup> So Lightfoot, *S. R.* p. 271. <sup>3</sup> See on the other hand Zahn, *Einlei-*

*tung*, ii. pp. 200, 201. A later tradition represented St Mark as one of the Seventy (Adamant. *Dial.* p. 10 (ed. Bakhuizen), Epiph. *haer.* 51 § 6).

texts), in the Egyptian versions, both Bohairic and Sahidic, and in the oldest forms of the Old Latin. It finds a place in all the catalogues which enumerate the Gospels, both Eastern and Western (see Westcott, *Canon*, app. D; Preuschen, *Analecta*, p. 138 ff.).

2. But while no doubts are expressed by any early writer as to the genuineness of St Mark, it cannot be denied that the Gospel received comparatively little attention from the theologians of the ancient Church. This relative neglect is noticeable from the very first. It has been pointed out that with the exception of Hermas the Apostolic fathers contain no clear reference to St Mark, and that their quotations as a whole are in closer agreement with the first Gospel than with the second<sup>1</sup>. But it is doubtful whether the earliest post-apostolic writers of the Church made use of written Gospels at all. Papias expresses the general feeling of the age which succeeded the Apostles when he records his preference for "the living voice," i.e. the oral testimony of the elders who yet survived from the first generation; even the Memoirs of St Peter would not be widely used so long as the stream of oral tradition continued to flow. This consideration may serve to account for the absence of quotations from St Mark in such writers as Clement of Rome and Ignatius of Antioch. It is less easy to explain the apparent neglect of this Gospel long after it had taken its place in every Greek codex of the Gospels and in every version of the New Testament. The commentator known as Victor of Antioch, a compiler whose date is certainly not earlier than the fifth century, complains that, while St Matthew and St John had received the attention of a number of expositors, and St Luke also had attracted a few, his utmost efforts had failed to detect a single commentary upon St Mark.

Victor, *hypoth.*: πολλῶν εἰς τὸ κατὰ Ματθαῖον καὶ εἰς τὸ κατὰ Ἰωάννην...συνταξάντων ὑπομνήματα, δλίγων δὲ εἰς τὸ κατὰ Λουκᾶν, οὐδενὸς δὲ ὄλως, ὡς οἶμαι, εἰς τὸ κατὰ Μᾶρκον ἐξηγησαμένου, ἐπεὶ μηδὲ μέχρι τῆμερον ἀκήκοα καὶ τοῦτο πολυπραγμονήσας παρὰ τῶν σπουδὴν ποιουμένων τὰ τῶν ἀρχαιοτέρων συνάγειν πονήματα κτλ.

<sup>1</sup> Sir J. C. Hawkins (*Hor. Syn.* p. 179) finds a correspondence between "the degree of familiarity with the language of the three Gospels which appears to have existed among Christians" and the relative adaptation of the Gospels "for

the purposes of catechetical or other teaching." Traces of such adaptation are fewest in St Mark, and this fact suggests a reason for the comparative neglect of St Mark in the sub-apostolic age. .

The cause is doubtless partly to be sought in the *prestige* attaching to the first Gospel, which was regarded as the immediate work of an Apostle, and the greater fulness of both St Matthew and St Luke. St Mark offered, after all, merely a disciple's recollections of his master's teaching. There was little in St Mark which was not to be found in St Matthew or St Luke, or in both. Moreover, St Mark was believed even by Irenaeus to have been written after St Matthew; and from this view men passed by easy steps to the conclusion that the second Gospel was a mere abridgement of the first.

Iren. iii. 1. ι ὁ μὲν δὴ Ματθαῖος...γραφὴν ἐξήνεγκεν εὐαγγελίου τοῦ Πέτρου καὶ τοῦ Παύλου ἐν Ῥώμῃ εὐαγγελιζομένων...μετὰ δὲ τὴν τούτων ἔξοδον Μᾶρκος κτλ. Victor, *hypoth.* ἵστεον ὅτι μετὰ Ματθαῖον Μᾶρκος ὁ εὐαγγελιστὴς συγγραφὴν ποιεῖται. Aug. *de cons. evv.* i. 3, 4 “isti quatuor evangelistae...hoc ordine scripsisse perhibentur: primum Matthaeus, deinde Marcus...Marcus eum subsecutus tanquam pedissequus et breviator eius videtur. cum solo quippe Ioanne nihil dixit, solus ipse per pauca, cum solo Luca pauciora, cum Mattheo vero plurima et multa paene totidem atque ipsis verbis sive cum solo sive cum ceteris consonante.”

Such an estimate of St Mark was sufficient to counterbalance the weight which was attached to this Gospel as the work of St Peter's interpreter.

Something may be learnt as to the relative importance of the Gospels in the judgement of the Ancient Church from the order in which they are placed in catalogues and mss. The two principal groupings are as follows:

- (1) Mt. Mc. Lc. Jo. (or Mt. Mc. Jo. Lc.);
- (2) Mt. Jo. Lc. Mc. (or Jo. Mt. Lc. Mc., or Jo. Mt. Mc. Lc., or Mt. Jo. Mc. Lc.<sup>1</sup>).

The first is that of nearly all the Greek mss. and of the great majority of the catalogues and ecclesiastical writers, and in its secondary form it appears in the Curetonian ms. of the Old Syriac, and in the Cheltenham list. The second is the order of

<sup>1</sup> Gregory, *Prolegomena*, p. 137 f.; Sanday, *Studia Biblica*, iii. p. 259 f.; Nestle, *Textual Criticism of the N.T.* (E. T.), p. 161 f. The O. L. ms. *k* has the order Jo. Lc. Mc. Mt., whilst Ambro-

siaster and the list of ‘the Sixty Books’ have Mt. Lc. Mc. Jo., where the Apostolic Gospels are placed first and last, but Mc. retains its usual Western position.

the Gospels in Codex Bezae and one Greek cursive, in certain Old Latin MSS. (a b e f ff q r), the Gothic version and the Apostolical Constitutions, in the Latin stichometry of Codex Claromontanus, in Tertullian, and in the vocabularies of the Egyptian versions. Each of these groupings rests upon an intelligible principle. The second, which embodies the original order of the West (cf. Tert. *adv. Marc. l.c.*), places in the first pair the Gospels which were ascribed to Apostles, and after them those which were the work of followers of the Apostles. The first, which ultimately prevailed in the West as well as in the East, arranges the four according to the supposed *ordo scribendi*<sup>1</sup>. In both the relative inferiority of St Mark is apparent; in (1) he follows Mt. as his *pedissequus*; in (2) he is preceded not only by the two Apostles, but usually also by St Luke. The two exceptions are probably due to a mixture of (2) with (1); the scribe began with the Western order, but when he reached the *apostolici*, he reverted to the customary arrangement, in which Mark precedes Luke according to the order of time<sup>2</sup>.

Another indication of the attitude of the ancient Church towards the Gospel of St Mark is to be found in the distribution of the evangelical symbols among the Four Evangelists. From the time of Irenaeus the four Gospels were associated in Christian thought with the four Cherubim of Ezekiel, and the corresponding ξφα of the Apocalypse. Irenaeus (iii. 11. 8) quotes the Apocalypse only, but he calls the living creatures Cherubim, and refers to Ps. lxxix. (lxxx.) 2 LXX. (ο καθήμενος ἐπὶ τῶν χερουβείμ, ἐμφάνηθι). It is the Eternal Word, he says, Who sits upon the Cherubim, and their four aspects represent His fourfold manner of operation (*πραγματεία, dispositio*); the lion answers to His royal office and sovereign authority and executive power (*τὸ ἔμπρακτον αὐτοῦ καὶ ἡγεμονικὸν καὶ βασιλικόν*); the

<sup>1</sup> Cf. Clem. Al. in Eus. *H. E.* vi. 14.

<sup>2</sup> The Rev. H. T. Tilley informs me that in the tower of Wolston Church near Rugby there is a fifteenth century bell which bears the inscription + MARCVS · MATHEVS · LVCAS · IOHES, and that some tiles at Malvern Priory Church, dated

1456, give the same order. It may have come from the Commentary on the Apocalypse which is printed under the name of Victorinus of Pettau, where the Evangelists are mentioned in this order (Migne, *P. L.* v., col. 324).

calf symbolises His sacrificial and priestly character; the human face, His coming in human nature; the flying eagle, the gift of the Spirit descending on His Church. The Gospels accordingly, which reflect the likeness of Christ, possess the same characteristics; St John sets forth the Lord's princely and glorious generation from the Father, St Luke emphasises His priestly work, St Matthew His human descent, St Mark His prophetic office:

Iren. *l.c.* Μᾶρκος δὲ ἀπὸ τοῦ προφητικοῦ πνεύματος τοῦ ἐξ ὑψίους ἐπιόντος τοῖς ἀνθρώποις τὴν ὄρχην ἐποιήσατο λέγων Ἀρχὴ τοῦ εὐαγγελίου Ἰησοῦ Χριστοῦ, ὡς γέγραπται ἐν Ἡσαΐᾳ τῷ προφήτῃ, τὴν πτερωτικὴν εἰκόνα τοῦ εὐαγγελίου δεικνύων διὰ τοῦτο δὲ καὶ σύντομον καὶ παρατρέχουσαν τὴν καταγγελίαν πεποίηται προφητικὸς γὰρ ὁ χαρακτήρος.

Thus Irenaeus, it is clear, regards the Eagle as the symbol of St Mark, whilst St Matthew, St Luke and St John are represented by the Man, the Calf, and the Lion respectively. This interpretation of the symbols is followed in the lines prefixed to the Gospel-paraphrase of Juvencus, according to which

“Marcus amat terras inter caelumque volare,  
Et vehemens aquila stricto secat omnia lapsu.”

But the method by which it was reached is so arbitrary that later writers did not hesitate to rearrange them at discretion. Thus in the notes on the Apocalypse attributed to Victorinus of Pettau the Eagle is assigned to St John and the Lion to St Mark. Through the influence of Jerome this became the popular view, and impressed itself on mediaeval art, although it was based on grounds not more reasonable than those which led Irenaeus to the opposite conclusion.

Hieron. *in Marcum tract. ad init.* “in Marco leonem in heremo personat...qui in heremo personat utique leo est.” Cf. Victorin. *in Apoc. c. iv.* (Migne, *P.L. v. l.c.*) “simile leoni animal Marcum designat in quo vox leonis in heremo rugientis auditur...Marcus itaque Evangelista sic incipiens...leonis habet effigiem.”

Other arrangements were freely proposed. Thus in the Pseudo-Athanasiian *Synopsis*<sup>1</sup> Matthew is the man, Mark the calf, Luke

<sup>1</sup> Migne, *P. G. xxviii.*, col. 431: τὸ κατὰ Μᾶρκον εὐαγγελίον. The second symbol is attributed to the second Evangelist.

the lion, John the eagle. Augustine finds the lion in Matthew, the man in Mark, the calf in Luke, the eagle in John. He complains with justice of the puerility of deciding the character of a book from the opening sentences, and not from the general purpose and aim of the writer; and he justifies his assignment of the man to St Mark on the ground that the second Gospel sets forth the human life of Christ rather than His royal descent, or His priestly office.

*De cons. evv. i. 9* “de principiis enim librorum quandam coniecturam capere voluerunt, non de tota intentione Evangelistarum... Marcus ergo, qui neque stirpem regiam neque sacerdotalem vel cognitionem vel consecrationem narrare voluit et tamen in eis versatus ostenditur quae homo Christus operatus est, tantum hominis figura in illis quatuor animalibus significatus videtur.”

A table will shew the extent of these variations<sup>1</sup>.

	Irenaeus.	Victorinus.	Augustine.	P&-Athanasius.
Mt.	Man	Man	Lion	Man
Mc.	Eagle	Lion	Man	Calf
Lc.	Calf	Calf	Calf	Lion
Jo.	Lion	Eagle	Eagle	Eagle.

It will be seen at a glance that while in three out of the four distributions St Matthew is the Man, St Luke the Calf, and St John the Eagle, to St Mark each of the symbols is assigned in turn. This fact illustrates with curious precision the difficulty which the ancient Church experienced in forming a definite judgement as to the place and office of his Gospel<sup>2</sup>. Irenaeus indeed has rightly seized upon the rapid movement of the narrative as one of its features, and Augustine calls attention to another and deeper characteristic, the interest which the writer shews in the humanity of the Lord. But it remained for a later age to realise and appreciate to the full the freshness and exactness of the first-hand report which has descended to us from the senior Apostle through the ministry of John Mark.

<sup>1</sup> A fuller treatment will be found in Zahn, *Forschungen*, ii. p. 257 ff.

<sup>2</sup> See Professor Lawlor's *Chapters on the Book of Mulling* (p. 17 ff.) for an interesting discussion of the evangelical

symbols in connexion with certain Irish mss. “in which, while the text followed the Vulgate order, the symbols adhered to that of the older versions.”

### III.

#### PLACE AND TIME OF WRITING, AND ORIGINAL LANGUAGE.

1. According to the prevalent belief of the ancient Church St Mark wrote his Gospel in Rome and for the Roman Church. Chrysostom transfers the place of composition to Egypt, but he is sufficiently refuted by the testimony of Clement of Alexandria and Origen.

For the Alexandrian evidence see p. xxii f. Chrysostom's words (*prooem. in Mt.*) are as follows: *καὶ Μᾶρκος δὲ ἐν Αἰγύπτῳ τῶν μαθητῶν παρακαλεσάντων αὐτὸν τοῦτο ποιῆσαι* (sc. συνθεῖναι τὸ εὐαγγέλιον, as the context shews). The error has possibly arisen from the statement of Eusebius (*H. E.* ii. 16), *Μᾶρκον πρῶτόν φασιν ἐπὶ τῆς Αἰγύπτου στειλάμενον τὸ εὐαγγέλιον δὲ δὴ συνεγράψατο κηρύξαι*: cf. Jerome, *de virr. ill.* 8 “adsumpto itaque evangelio quod ipse confecrat perrexit Aegyptum.” Epiphanius for once expresses himself with greater care (*haer. li.* 6 ἐν Ῥώμῃ ἐπιτρέπεται τὸ εὐαγγέλιον ἐκθέσθαι, *καὶ γράφεις ἀποστέλλεται ὑπὸ τοῦ ἀγίου Πέτρου εἰς τὴν τῶν Αἰγυπτίων χώραν*). The subscriptions to the Gospels vary; while the majority of those which fix upon a locality are in favour of Rome, others refer only to the preaching of the Gospel at Alexandria, e.g. a codex quoted by Mill has ἐπεδόθη Μάρκως τῷ εὐαγγελίστῃ καὶ ἐκηρύχθη ἐν Ἀλεξανδρείᾳ καὶ πάσῃ τῇ περιχώρᾳ αὐτῆς (cf. Ps. Ath. *synops.* 76). Tischendorf mentions the subscription ἐγράφη...ἐν Αἰγύπτῳ as found in certain mss. which he does not specify.

2. But if the Gospel was written at Rome or for the Church of Rome, at what time was it written? ‘After the departure (ἔξοδον<sup>1</sup>)

<sup>1</sup> For *ἔξοδος* in this sense cf. Lc. ix. 31, 2 Pet. i. 15, Jos. *ant.* iv. 8. 2 (ἐπ' ἔξοδον τοῦ ἡγγύ). The citation from Ireneaeus which follows Victor's argument (Possin. *cat.* p. 5, Cramer, p. 264) begins *μετὰ τὴν κατὰ Ματθαῖον εὐαγ-*

*γελίου ἔκδοσιν*, and Grotius (*Annot.* p. 523) quotes *μετὰ τούτου ἔκδοσιν* from “an old ms.”; but the Latin of Ireneaeus *post vero horum excessum* supports the printed Greek text.

of St Peter and St Paul,' says Irenaeus; 'while St Peter was yet alive,' is the answer of the Alexandrians. The former is the more credible witness, whether we consider his relative nearness to the age of St Mark, or his opportunities of making himself acquainted with the traditions of Rome and Asia Minor.

According to the subscriptions of many of the later uncials and cursive MSS. of Mc., the Gospel was written in the tenth or twelfth year after the Ascension<sup>1</sup>. This computation is doubtless based on the tradition which represents Peter as taking up his abode in Rome in the second year of Claudius (Eus. *H. E.* ii. 14, Hieron. *de virr. ill.* 1). If we dismiss this story, we are left free to adopt the *terminus a quo* fixed by Irenaeus and at least implied in the statement of Papias. It is more difficult to settle the *terminus ad quem*. As we have seen, Jerome's date for the death of St Mark (the 8th year of Nero) rests upon a mistake<sup>2</sup>. The Paschal Chronicle with greater probability places it in the reign of Trajan; the young man who was the ὑπηρέτης of Saul and Barnabas in A.D. 47–8 might have lived to see the last decade of the first century<sup>3</sup>. On the other hand an earlier date is suggested by the circumstances under which, if we accept the Alexandrian tradition, the Gospel was composed. The request for a written record of St Peter's teaching would naturally be made soon after the Apostle's death, while the Church was still keenly conscious of its loss. Thus we are led to think of A.D. 70<sup>4</sup> as a probable limit of time, and this conclusion is to some extent confirmed by the internal evidence of the Gospel. The freshness of its colouring, the simplicity of its teaching, the absence of any indication that Jerusalem had already fallen when it was written, seem to point to a date earlier than the summer of A.D. 70.

3. It may be assumed that a Gospel written for Roman believers in the first century was composed in Greek. Even if Greek was not the predominant language of the capital, it certainly pre-

<sup>1</sup> The form is usually ἐξεδόθη μετὰ χρόνους ι' (or ιβ') τῆς τοῦ χριστοῦ ἀναλήψεως (so codd. G<sup>2</sup>KS and many cursives); cf. Thlpt. *prooem. in Mc.* τὸ κατὰ Μᾶρκον εὐαγγέλιον μετὰ δέκα ἥτη τῆς τοῦ

χριστοῦ ἀναλήψεως συνεγράφη ἐν 'Ρώμῃ.  
Cf. Harnack, *Chronologie*, pp. 70, 124.

<sup>2</sup> See pp. xviii. f., xxvii.

<sup>3</sup> Comp. Harnack, *op. cit.*, p. 652.

<sup>4</sup> See p. xxii. f.

vailed among the Roman Jews and the servile class from which the early Roman Church was largely recruited<sup>1</sup>. The Gospel of St Peter's interpreter, if of Roman origin, was doubtless written in the language which was employed by St Paul when he addressed the Christians of Rome, and by Clement when he wrote in the name of the Christians of Rome to the Church at Corinth. A Latin Gospel would have appealed to comparatively few of St Peter's Roman friends. Moreover it can scarcely be doubted that Greek and not Latin was the tongue into which St Mark had been accustomed to render St Peter's Aramaic discourses, whether at Jerusalem or at Rome. Bishop Lightfoot indeed maintains the opposite<sup>2</sup>, on the ground that the Apostle knew Greek enough to address a Greek-speaking people without the aid of an interpreter. But the scanty knowledge of colloquial Greek which sufficed the fisherman of Bethsaida Julias in his intercourse with Galileans, may well have proved inadequate for sustained discourses delivered at Rome. The occasions would have been few when the Apostle would have needed to use the Latin tongue, and it is at least uncertain whether Mark, a Jew probably born and brought up in Jerusalem, could have rendered him assistance here.

A few mss. (e.g. codd. 160, 161) in their subscriptions to St Mark support the view that the Gospel was originally composed in Latin, and the form of words which they adopt (*Ἐγράψῃ Πωμαῖστὶ ἐν Πώμην*) suggests the origin of the mistake. The same error appears in the subscriptions to the Peshitta and Harclean Syriac (see p. xxvi.); on the other hand the preface to the Latin Vulgate is content to say, “evangelium in Italia (or “in Italiae partibus”) scripsit.” Yet it was once believed that the autograph of St Mark existed in a ms. of the Latin Vulgate at Venice (Simon, *hist. critique* ii. p. 114, and Dobrowsky, *Fragm. Pragense Ev. S. Marci vulgo autographi* (Prague, 1778); cf. Gregory, *prolegg.* p. 185, Scrivener-Miller, ii. pp. 84, 259).

Professor Blass<sup>3</sup> maintains that St Mark's Gospel was originally written in Aramaic, and that Papias, who knew the Gospel only in

<sup>1</sup> The evidence is stated most fully by Caspari, *Quellen zur Geschichte des Tauf-symbols*, iii. p. 267 ff.; a useful summary may be seen in Sanday and Headlam's

Commentary on Romans, p. lii. ff.

<sup>2</sup> Clement, ii. p. 494.

<sup>3</sup> *Philology of the Gospels* (1898), p. 196 ff.

a Greek form, mistook a translation for the original. Blass supports his theory by two arguments: (1) "Luke in the first part of his Acts followed an author who had written in Aramaic. Mark is very likely to be the author who first published these stories; he seems therefore to be Luke's Aramaic authority. If Mark's Acts were written in Aramaic, his Gospel originally was written in Aramaic also." (2) "Secondly, the textual condition of St Mark's Gospel suggests the idea that there existed a plurality of versions of a common Aramaic original." It is difficult to take the first of these arguments very seriously. Granting that St Mark wrote a book of Acts in Aramaic, it is manifestly unsafe to infer that Aramaic was also the original language of his Gospel; for Mark was *ex hypothesi* bilingual, and he would use either Aramaic or Greek according to circumstances. The second argument is supported by examples which open an interesting field of enquiry, but cannot be regarded as supplying a secure basis for so large an inference. When he adds that the Aramaic words in St Mark are "relics of the original, preserved by the translation," Blass seems to overlook the fact that they are followed in almost every case by a rendering into Greek. A translator might have either translated the Aramaic or transliterated it; but transliteration followed by interpretation savours of an original writer.

But the theory of an Aramaic original has to meet a stronger objection. A translator may shew a partiality for certain words and constructions by employing them as often as the author gives him the opportunity. But an examination of St Mark's vocabulary and style reveals peculiarities of diction and colouring which cannot reasonably be explained in this way. Doubtless there is a sense in which the book is based upon Aramaic originals; it is in the main a reproduction of Aramaic teaching, behind which there probably lay oral or written sources, also Aramaic. But the Greek Gospel is manifestly not a mere translation of an Aramaic work. It bears on every page marks of the individuality of the author. If he wrote in Aramaic, he translated his book into Greek, and the translation which we possess is his

own. But such a conjecture is unnecessary, as well as at variance with the witness of Papias.

Blass's supposition that "Papias's presbyter knew of different Greek forms of Matthew besides the Hebrew (or Aramaic) original, but in the case of Mark, the interpreter of Peter, he knew only one Greek form of that Gospel, and nothing at all of an Aramaic original," imputes to this contemporary witness something worse than ignorance. It is evident that 'the presbyter' means to contrast the original work of St Mark with the many attempts which had been made to translate the *λόγια* of St Matthew.

## IV.

### VOCABULARY, GRAMMAR, AND STYLE.

i. A complete vocabulary of St Mark<sup>1</sup> will be found at the end of this volume. It contains some 1330 distinct words, of which 60 are proper names. This is not the place to attempt a full analysis of the Greek of St Mark, but it may be useful to the student to have access to a few tables which will enable him to form some estimate of the relation in which St Mark's vocabulary stands to that of other writers in the New Testament.

i. Words in St Mark (excepting proper names) which occur in no other N.T. writing :

\* ἀγρεύειν, \* ἄλαλος, ἀλεκτοροφωνία, ἀλλαχοῦ, \* ἀμφιβάλλειν, \* ἀμφοδον, ἀνακυλίειν, ἄναλος, \* ἀναπηδᾶν, \* ἀναστενάζειν, ἀπόδημος, ἀποστεγάζειν, ἀφρίζειν, † βοανηργές, \* γυαφεύς, \* δισχίλιοι, \* δύσκολος, εἴτεν, \* ἐκθαμβεῖσθαι, \* ἐκθαυμάζειν, † ἐκπερισσώς, \* ἐναγκαλίζεσθαι, \* ἐνειλεῖν, † ἔννυχα, \* ἔξαπτινα, \* ἔξουδενεῖν, † ἐπιράπτειν, † ἐπισυντρέχειν, ἐσχάτως, † ἐφφαθά, \* θαμβεῖσθαι, \* θυγάτριον, \* καταβαρύνειν, \* καταδιώκειν, \* κατακόπτειν, \* κατευλογεῖν, \* κατοίκησις, κεντυρίων, † κεφαλοῦν, † κορβάν, † κούμ, \* κυλίειν, κωμόπολις, \* μηκύνειν, \* μογιλάλος, μυρίζειν, νουνεχῶς, ξέστης, οὐά, \* παιδιόθεν, παρόμοιος, \* περιτρέχειν, \* πρασιά, προσαύλιον, † προμεριμνᾶν, \* προσάββατον, \* προσκεφάλαιον, προσορμίζεσθαι, \* προσπορεύεσθαι, † πυγμῆ, \* σκώληξ, σμυρνίζειν, † σπεκούλατωρ, στασιαστής, στιβάς, \* στιλβεῖν, \* συμπόσιον, \* συνθλίβειν, \* συνλυπεῖσθαι, \* σύστημαν, † ταλειθά, † τηλανγάνως, τρίζειν, \* τρυμαλιά, \* ὑπεργηφανία, † ὑπερπερισσώς, \* ὑπολίγινοιν, Φοινίκισσα, \* χαλκίον.

(Words in this list marked by an asterisk occur in the LXX. Thick type denotes that Mt. or Lc. uses another word in the same place. Transliterations peculiar to Mc. are distinguished by †, and other words which appear to be ἀπαξ λεγόμενα, by †.)

<sup>1</sup> 'Mc.' xvi. 9 ff. is not included in this examination of the Marcan vocabulary. Its words will be found, however,

in the Index of Greek Words at the end of the volume,

ii. Words peculiar to St Mark and one or both of the other Synoptists:

ἀγανακτεῖν, ἀγγαρεύειν (Mt.), ἀγέλη, ἀγναφος (Mt.), ἀγορά, ἀγρός, ἀλάβαστρος, ἀλεύς, ἀλίζειν (Mt.), ἀνάγαιον (Lc.), ἀναθεματίζειν (Lc.), ἀνακράζειν (Lc.), ἀναστέίν (Lc.), ἀνπτος (Mt.), ἀντάλλαγμα (Mt.), ἀπαίρειν, ἀπαλός (Mt.), ἀπαρνεῖνθαι, ἀποδημεῖν, ἀποκεφαλίζειν, ἀποκυλίειν, ἀποστάσιον (Mt.), ἀρχισυνάγωγος (Lc.), ἀσβεστος, ἀσκός, ἀσφαλῶς (Lc.), αὐτόματος (Lc.), ἀφεδρών (Mt.), βαπτιστής, βάτος (Lc.), βλάπτειν (Lc.), βουλευτής (Lc.), γαλήνη, γενέσια (Mt.), γονυπετεῖν (Mt.), δερμάτινος (Mt.), διαβλέπειν, διαγίνεσθαι (Lc.), διαλογίζεσθαι, διανοίγειν (Lc.), διαπερᾶι, διαρήσσειν, διαρπάζειν (Mt.), διασπᾶν, διαφημίζειν (Mt.), δίνειν (Lc.), δυσκόλως, εἰσπορεύεσθαι, ἔκαtonτα πλασίων, ἔκδιδοσθαι, ἔκτλήσσεσθαι, ἔκπνεῦν (Lc.), ἔκστασις (Lc.), ἔκτινάσσειν, ἔκφύειν (Mt.), Ἐλληνίς (Lc.), ἐλώι (Mt.), ἐμπαίζειν, ἐμπτύειν, ἐνδιδύσκειν (Lc.), ἔξαίφνης (Lc.), ἔξανατέλλειν (Mt.), ἔξανισταναι (Lc.), ἐπανιστάναι (Mt.), ἐπίβλημα, ἐπιγραφή, ἐπιλύειν (Lc.), ἐπισκιάζειν, ἐπισυνάγειν, ἐρήμωσις (LXX.), εὔκοπος, Ἡρῳδιανός, θέρος, θηλάζειν, θορυβεῖσθαι (Lc.), θόρυβος, ἰματίζειν (Lc.), ἰχθύδιον (Mt.), καθέδρα (Mt.), κακολογεῖν, κάμηλος, Καναναῖος (Mt.), καταγελᾶν, κατακλῆν (Lc.), κατάλυμα (Lc.), καταμαρτυρεῖν (Mt.), κατασκηνοῦν, καταστρέφειν, καταφιλεῖν, καταχεῖν (Mt.), κατεξουσιάζειν (Mt.), κεράμιον (Lc.), κῆνος (Mt.), κλοπή (Mt.), κοδράντης (Mt.), κολοβοῦν (Mt.), κοπάζειν (Mt.), κοράσιον (Mt.), κράσπεδον, κρημνός, κτῆμα, κυλλός (Mt.), κυνάριον (Mt.), κωφός, λαμά (Mt.), λατομεῖν (Mt.), λεγών, λέπρα, λεπρός, λεπτόν (Lc.), λύτρον (Mt.), μακρός (Lc.), μάτην (LXX., Mt.), μεσονύκτιον (Lc.), μνημόσυνον, μόδιος, μοιχάσθαι (Mt.), μονόφθαλμος, Ναζαρηνός (Lc.), νῆστις (Mt.), γόστος, νυμφών, οἰκοδεσπότης, ὅμμα, ὄνικός (Mt.), ὄρθως (Lc.), ὄριον, ὄρκιζειν, ὄρμāν, ὄρύσσειν, ὄρχεῖσθαι, ὄψé (Mt.), παρακούειν (Mt.), παραλυτικός, παραπορεύεσθαι (Mt.), παραφέρειν (Lc.), πέδη (Lc.), πεξῆ (Mt.), πενθερά, περιβλέπεσθαι (Lc.), περίλυπτος, περισσώς, περίχωρος, πετρώδης (Mt.), πήρα, πίναξ, πνίγειν (Mt.), πόρρω (LXX.), προβαίνειν, προσκυλίειν (Mt.), προσπίπτειν, προστάσσειν, προστρέχειν (Lc.), πρύμνα (Lc.), πρωτοκαθεδρία, πρωτοκλισία, πύργος, πυρέσσειν (Mt.), ράκος (Mt.), ράφις (Mt.), ρύσις (Lc.), σαβαχθανεί (Mt.), Σαδδονκαῖος, σανδάλιον (Lc.), σέβεσθαι (LXX.), σίναπι, σινδών, σιωπᾶν, σκληροκαρδία (Mt.), σκύλλειν, σπᾶν (Lc.), σπαράσσειν (Lc.), σπλαγχνίζεσθαι, σπόριμον, στάχυς, στέγη, στρωννύιαι, στυγνάζειν (Mt.), συμβούλιον, συνακολούθεῖν (Lc.), συνανακεῖσθαι, συνζευγιώνειν (Mt.), συνζητεῖν (Lc.), συνκαθῆσθαι (Lc.), συνκαλεῖν (Lc.), συνλαλεῖν, συνπνίγειν, συνπορεύεσθαι (Lc.), συνισπαράσσειν (Lc.), συνιτηρεῖν, Σύρος, σφυρίς, τέκτων (Mt.), τελώνης, τελώνιον, τίλλειν, τετρακισχίλιοι, τρίβος (LXX.), τρύβλιον (Mt.), ὑποκριτής, φάντασμα (Mt.), φέγγος, φραγέλλον (Mt.), χοῖρος, χρῆμα (Lc.), ψευδόμαρτυρεῖν, ψευδόχριστος (Mt.), ψιχίον (Mt.).

iii. Words peculiar to St Mark and St John's Gospel:

ἀκάνθινος, ἐνταφιασμός, θυρωρός, Ἱεροσολυμέίτης, κύπτειν, μισθωτός, νάρδος πιστικός, πλοιάριον, προσαίτης, πτύνειν, ράββουνεί, ράπισμα, τριακόσιοι, ωτάριον.

iv. Words peculiar to St Mark, one of the other Synoptists, and St John :

ἀρωμα (Lc.), γαζοφυλάκιον (Lc.), ἐμβριμᾶσθαι (Mt.), ιμάς (Lc.), κράβαττος (Lc.), μοιχεία (Mt.), ὄψιος (Mt.), πλέκειν (Mt.), ραββεῖ (Mt.), σπόγγος (Mt.), φανερῶς (Lc.), ωσαννά (Mt.).

v. Words peculiar to St Mark and the Pauline Epistles (including Hebrews) :

ἀββά, ἀλαλάζειν, ἀμάρτημα, ἀναμιμήσκειν, ἀποβάλλειν, ἀποπλανᾶν, ἀποστερεῖν (LXX.), ἀφροστόνη, ἀχειροποίητος, βαπτισμός, εἰρηνεύειν, ἔκφοβος, ἐξορύσσειν, εὐκαίρος, εὐκαίρως, ὥδεως, δλοκαύτωμα, περιφέρειν, πορνεύειν, προλαμβάνειν, συναποθήσκειν, τρόμος, ὑστέρησις.

vi. Words peculiar to St Mark, one of the other Synoptists, and the Pauline writings :

ἀγρυπνεῖν (Lc.), ἀδημονεῖν (Mt.), ἀκυροῦν (Mt.), ἀπιστία (Mt.), ἀπόκρυφος (Lc.), ἀποτάσσεσθαι (Lc.), ἄρρωστος (Mt.), ἀρτύειν (Lc.), ἀσύνετος (Mt.), ἄτιμος (Mt.), γόνυ (Lc.), διαπορεύεσθαι (Lc.), διδασκαλία (Mt.), διηγεῖσθαι (Lc.), ἐκλύεσθαι (Mt.), ἐκφέρειν (Lc.), ἐνέχειν (Lc.), ἔνταλμα (Mt.), ἐξαντῆς (Lc.), ἐπαισχύνεσθαι (Lc.), ἐπιτάσσειν (Lc.), ἐρημία (Mt.), εὐκαρεῖν (Lc.), θῆλυς (Mt.), θλίβειν (Mt.), θροεῖσθαι (Mt.), καθαιρεῖν (Lc.), μάστιξ (Lc.), μεταμορφοῦσθαι (Mt.), μωρός (Mt.), νεότης (Lc.), οἰκοδομή (Mt.), πανταχοῦ (Lc.), πάντοθεν (Lc.), παράδοσις (Mt.), παραιτεῖσθαι (Lc.), παράπτωμα (Mt.), παρατηρεῖν (Lc.), περικαλύπτειν (Lc.), περικεῖσθαι (Lc.), πλεῖστος (Mt.), πρόσκαιρος (Mt.), προσκαρτερεῖν (Lc.), σβεννύναι (Mt.), σπόρος (Lc.), σύνεσις (Lc.), σχολάζειν (Lc.), ὑποδεῖσθαι (Lc.), χαλᾶν (Lc.), χειροποίητος (Lc.).

vii. Words peculiar to St Mark and the Catholic Epistles :

δαμάζειν (Jas.), δωρεῖσθαι (2 Pet.).

viii. Words peculiar to St Mark, one other N.T. writer, and the Catholic Epistles :

ἀγαθοποιεῖν (Lc., 1 Pet., 3 Jo.), ἀγνοεῖν (Paul, 2 Pet.), ἄγριος (Mt., Jude), ἀσέλγεια (Paul, 1 Pet., 3 Jo.), θερμαίνεσθαι (Jo., Jas.), λαίλαψ (Lc., 2 Pet.), πολυτελής (Paul, 1 Pet.), στενάζειν (Paul, Jas.), συντρέχειν (Lc., 1 Pet.), τρέμειν (Lc., 2 Pet.).

ix. Words peculiar to St Mark and the Apocalypse, or to St Mark, the Apocalypse, and one other N.T. writer :

δρέπανον, κανματίζειν (Mt.), λευκαίνειν, μεγιστάν, μέλι (Mt.), μύλος (Mt.), πορνεύειν (Paul), πορφύρα (Lc.), πτώμα (Mt.), στολή (Lc.), φύλλον (Mt.), χλωρός, χοῦς.

Such tables may easily be multiplied<sup>1</sup> with the help of the index at the end of this volume and a good concordance. But

<sup>1</sup> For a good comparative table of the ‘characteristic’ words in Mc., see Hawkins, *Hor. Syn.*, p. 10 f.

those which are given above suffice to bring out certain features in St Mark's vocabulary. Of the 1270 distinct words (excluding proper names) which it contains, 80 are peculiar to St Mark, about 150 are shared only by St Matthew and St Luke, and 100 more are among the less widely distributed words of the New Testament. This is not a large proportion of peculiar or unusual words. St Luke's Gospel has more than 250 ἄπαξ λεγόμενα, besides a large number of words common only to itself and the Pauline writings<sup>1</sup>. On the other hand the ἄπαξ λεγόμενα of St Mark, if not relatively numerous, are often striking; while he has comparatively few of the compounds in which the later Greek delighted, we meet in his pages with such survivals as εἰτεν, παιδιόθεν, such colloquialisms as κεντυρίων, ξέστης, πιστικός, σπεκούλάτωρ, and such transliterations as κορβάν, ταλειθά κούμ, ἐφφαθά, ραββουνέι. If we might generalise from these features of St Mark's Greek as compared with the Greek of St Luke, we should be led to conclude that the writer was a foreigner who spoke Greek with some freedom, but had not been accustomed to employ it for literary purposes<sup>2</sup>. He is not at a loss for an unusual word when it is wanted to convey his meaning or give point to his narrative, but under ordinary circumstances he is comparatively limited in his choice, and he displays no familiarity with the habits of the Hellenistic writers of his age.

2. The Greek of St Mark's Gospel is characterised by peculiarities of construction and style which force themselves upon the attention of every student. A few of these may be particularly mentioned.

(a) Frequent use of εἰναι and ἐλθεῖν with a participle: i. 6 ἦν... ἐνδεδυμένος...καὶ ἔσθων, 33 ἦν...ἐπισυνηγμένη, 39 ἦλθεν κηρύσσων, 40 ἔρχεται...προσκαλῶν, ii. 3 ἔρχονται φέροντες, 5 ἥσαν καθήμενοι καὶ διαλογιζόμενοι, v. 5 ἦν κράζων καὶ κατακόπτων ἑαυτόν, ix. 4 ἥσαν συνλαλοῦντες, x. 32 ἥσαν...ἀναβαίνοντες...καὶ ἦν προάγων, xiii. 13 ἔσεσθε μισούμενοι, 23 ἔσονται πίπτοντες, xv. 43 ἦν προσδεχόμενος.

<sup>1</sup> See Plummer, *St Luke*, p. lii. ff.

<sup>2</sup> Sir J. C. Hawkins (*Hor. Syn.*, p. 106) has collected a list of 26 "rude, harsh, obscure or unusual words or expressions in St Mark," and points out (p. 171) that

"the non-classical words...occur with considerably more frequency in the special vocabulary of St Mark than in those of the other Synoptists." Comp. *Encycl. Bibl.* ii. 176 f.

(b) Multiplication of participles: i. 21 προσελθὼν ἥγειρεν... κρατήσας, 41 σπλαγχνισθεὶς ἐκτείνας... ἥψατο, v. 25 ff. οὖσα... καὶ παθούσα... καὶ δαπανήσασα... καὶ μηδὲν ὠφεληθεῖσα ἀλλὰ... ἐλθοῦσα, ἀκούσασα... ἐλθοῦσα ἥψατο, xiv. 67 ιδοῦσα... ἐμβλέψασα λέγει, xv. 43 ἐλθὼν... τολμήσας εἰσῆλθεν.

(c) Use of article with infinitives and sentences: i. 14 μετὰ τὸ παραδοθῆναι τὸν Ἰωάννην, iv. 6 διὰ τὸ μὴ ἔχειν βίζαν, v. 4 διὰ τὸ αὐτὸν... δεόσθαι καὶ διεσπάσθαι ὑπ' αὐτοῦ κτλ., ix. 23 τὸ εἰ δύνη, xiv. 28 μετὰ τὸ ἔγερθῆναι μέ.

(d) Frequent use of εὐθύς, which occurs 34 times in Mc. i.—ix. and 7 times in x.—xvi.

(e) Use of ἀν in such sentences as iii. 11 ὅταν αὐτὸν ἔθεώρουν, vi. 56 ὅπου ἀν εἰσεπορεύετο... ὅστις ἀν ἥψαντο, xi. 19 ὅταν ἐγένοντο.

(f) Use of broken or imperfect constructions, in cases of parenthesis (ii. 22, iii. 16—18, vii. 19), or mixture (ii. 1, iv. 15, 26, 30—31, vi. 8, 11, viii. 2, xiii. 34), or extreme compression (v. 30, vi. 43, viii. 8), or ellipse (x. 40).

(g) *Constructio ad sensum*: ix. 20 ιδῶν αὐτὸν τὸ πνεῦμα, xiii. 14 τὸ βδέλυγμα... ἐστηκότα.

(h) Repetition of negative: i. 44 μηδενὶ μηδὲν εἴπης, v. 3 οὐδὲ... οὐκέτι οὐδεὶς ἐδύνατο, xvi. 8 οὐδενὶ οὐδὲν εἴπαν.

(i) Frequent use and careful discrimination of prepositions: e.g. i. 39, ii. 1, 2, 10, 13, iii. 8, iv. 7, 19, 21, vi. 5, 6, vii. 3, 31, ix. 42, x. 11, 22, 24, xi. 4, xii. 1, 17, xiii. 51; cf. ἀποκυλίειν, ἀνακυλίειν, xvi. 3 f.<sup>1</sup>

3. Such examples, however, give no just conception of St Mark's general style. The body of the work consists of a series of sentences connected by the simplest of Greek copulas, each contributing a fresh fact to the reader's knowledge, and each by its vivid and distinct presentation of the fact claiming his close attention. St Mark knows how to compress his matter, where a multitude of words would only weaken the effect, or where the scheme of his work forbids greater fulness; on the other hand, when words can heighten the colouring or give life to the picture, they are used without regard to brevity and with little attention to elegance.

<sup>1</sup> To these stylistic peculiarities may be added (j) a frequent use of the 'historic present'—151 instances are quoted as against 78 in Mt. and 4 or 6 in Lc.; (k) preference of καὶ to δέ; (l) use of

asyndeton (Hawkins, *Hor. Syn.*, pp. 108 ff., 113 ff., 120 ff.); and (m) disposition to employ pleonastic forms (Salmond, in Hastings, *D.B.* iii. p. 251).

For instances of compression see especially Mark's summaries of our Lord's teaching or of the comments of the hearers, e.g. i. 27, ii. 7, viii. 29, xii. 38—40 (comp. Mt.). For his habit of adding word to word where one might have sufficed see i. 32 ὁψίας...ότε ἔδυσεν ὁ ἥλιος, 35 πρωὶ ἔννυχα λίαν, v. 26 (see above 2 § b), vi. 25 εἰδὺς μετὰ σπουδῆς, vii. 13 τῇ παραδόσει ἢ παρεδώκατε, viii. 25 διέβλεψεν καὶ ἀπεκατέστη καὶ ἐνέβλεπεν, 37 ὑπερπερισσώς ἐξεπλήσσοντο, xii. 14 ἐξεστιν δῶναι...δῶμεν ἢ μὴ δῶμεν; 44 πάντα δσα εἶχεν ἔβαλεν, ὅλον τὸν βίον αὐτῆς, xiv. 3 ἀλάβαστρον νάρδου πιστικῆς πολυτελοῦς, 68 οὔτε οἴδα οὔτε ἐπίσταμαι, xv. 1 εὐθὺς πρωὶ, xvi. 8 τρόμος καὶ ἔκστασις. Under the same head may be placed the frequent instances in which a statement is made first in a positive and then in a negative form or the reverse (e.g. i. 22, ii. 27, iii. 29, v. 19, x. 45).

Two other points, which the tables do not shew, deserve to be emphasised here: (1) the relatively frequent use of certain characteristic words; (2) the use of certain ordinary words in an uncommon and sometimes enigmatic sense.

Examples of (1) are: ἀκάθαρτος<sup>11</sup> (in the term πνεῦμα ἀκάθαρτον), ἀναβλέπειν<sup>6</sup>, διαλογίζεσθαι<sup>7</sup>, ἐκθαμβεῖσθαι<sup>4</sup>, εἰσπορεύεσθαι<sup>8</sup>, ἐκπορεύεσθαι<sup>10</sup>, ἐμβλέπειν<sup>4</sup>, ἐμβριμᾶσθαι<sup>3</sup>, ἐναγκαλίζεσθαι<sup>2</sup>, ἐξουσία<sup>10</sup>, ἐπερωτᾶν<sup>25</sup>, ἐπιτάσσειν<sup>5</sup>, ἐπιτιμᾶν<sup>9</sup>, ἐναγγέλιον<sup>7</sup>, θαυμβεῖσθαι<sup>3</sup>, μεθερμηνέσθαι<sup>3</sup>, παραλαμβάνειν<sup>4</sup>, παραπορεύεσθαι<sup>4</sup>, περιβλέπεσθαι<sup>6</sup>, πλήρωμα<sup>3</sup>, προάγειν<sup>6</sup>, προσκαλεῖσθαι<sup>9</sup>, πωροῦσθαι (πύρωσις)<sup>2</sup>, συνζητεῖν<sup>6</sup>, ὑπάγειν<sup>15</sup>, φιμοῦσθαι<sup>2</sup>. Under the second head we may place ἐνέίχεν (vi. 19), πνυμῆ (vii. 3), ἀπέχει (xiv. 41), ἐπιβαλών (xiv. 72).

Further, St Mark gives movement to his history by the remarkable freedom with which he handles his tenses.

Changes of tense occur (1) with a corresponding difference of meaning: v. 15 ff. τὸν δαιμονιζόμενον...δ δαιμονισθείς, vi. 14 ff. ἐγήγερται...ἡγέρθη, vii. 35 ἐλύθη...ἐλάλει...διεστείλατο...διεστέλλετο, ix. 15 ἐξεθαμβήθησαν.....ἡσπάζοντο, xv. 44 τέθηκεν.....ἀπέθανεν: (2) apparently for the purpose of giving life to a dialogue: ix. 34 ff. ἐπηρώτα...λέγει...εἶπεν, xi. 27 ἔρχονται...καὶ ἔλεγον...εἶπεν...λέγουσιν...λέγει.

Thus present, perfect, imperfect, aorist, are interchanged, not through ignorance of the laws of the Greek language, or with conscious artificiality, but from a keen sense of the reality and living interest of the facts. Sometimes the historical tenses are used almost exclusively throughout a paragraph (e.g. ii. 3—10, xv. 20—24); more frequently they alternate with the imperfect and aorist (e.g. iv. 35—41, vi. 30—51). Even in indirect

narration the present and perfect are freely used (ii. 1, xv. 44, 47, xvi. 4), when the writer desires to place the reader for the moment in the speaker's point of view. On the other hand St Mark frequently uses the imperfect in a sense which is scarcely distinguishable from the aorist, except that it conveys the impression of an eye-witness describing events which passed under his own eye (cf. e.g. v. 18, vii. 17, x. 17, xii. 41, xiv. 55).

Much has been written as to a supposed tendency on the part of this writer to adopt Latin words and forms of speech. The occurrence of such words as *δηνάριον*, *κεντυρίων*, *κοδράντης*, *κράβαττος*, *λεγιών*, *ξέστης*, *σπεκουλάτωρ*, and such a phrase as *ἰκανὸν ποιεῖν*, lends a *prima facie* support to this view. But some of these Latinisms occur in other Gospels as well as in St Mark, and it may be doubted whether they prove more than a familiarity with the vulgar Greek of the Empire, which freely adopted Latin words and some Latin phraseology<sup>1</sup>. Nevertheless their relatively frequent occurrence in St Mark is one indication amongst others of his larger acquaintance with the Greek which was spoken in the Roman world, and it accords well with the tradition which represents the writer of this Gospel as a professional 'interpreter,' and as having resided for some years in Rome.

<sup>1</sup> Blass, *Philology of the Gospels*, p. 211 f.

## V.

### CONTENTS, PLAN, AND SOURCES.

I. Attempts were made at an early time to break up the Gospels into sections corresponding more or less nearly to the nature of the contents. Besides the stichometry which measured the text by lines<sup>1</sup>, and the ‘Ammonian’ sections which divided it in such a manner as to shew its relation to that of the other Gospels, there were systems of capitulation under which it was arranged in paragraphs for reading. Two such systems survive in cod. B and cod. A respectively. In the former, which is the more ancient<sup>2</sup>, St Mark is broken up into 62 sections as against 170 in St Matthew and 152 in St Luke; in the system represented by cod. A<sup>3</sup> (the so-called *κεφάλαια maiora* or *τίτλοι*) St Mark has 48 sections, St Matthew 68, and St Luke 83<sup>4</sup>.

The following table will enable the student to compare the capitulation of codd. BA with the paragraphing adopted in the text of Westcott and Hort. Italics are used where two of the three systems coincide; where the three agree the verse-numbers are printed in thick type.

Cod. B		Cod. A		WH.
I.	I			I.
				I
9				9
12				12

<sup>1</sup> For the variations of the stichometry in St Mark see *Studia Biblica*, p. 268 f.; J. R. Harris, *Stichometry*, p. 49; *J. Th. St.* i. p. 444 f., ii. p. 250; the majority of the subscriptions in mss. give 1600. The Ammonian sections fluctuate between 232 and 242 (Gregory, *Prolegg.*, i. p. 152 f.; cf. Burdon, *Last twelve verses*, p. 310 f.). On the Church lessons in

St Mark see Gregory, p. 162, Scrivener-Miller, p. 80 ff.

<sup>2</sup> Found also in cod. E.

<sup>3</sup> Found also in codd. CNRZ<sub>1</sub> and possibly of Alexandrian origin; cf. *J. Th. St.*, i. p. 419.

<sup>4</sup> Cod. D has a system peculiar to itself, in which Mc. is divided into 148 sections (Scrivener, *Codex Bezae*, p. xx.).

## CONTENTS, PLAN, AND SOURCES.

Cod. B	Cod. A	WH.
14		14
21		16
	L. 23	21
29	29	29
35	32	32
38		35
	40	
II. 1	II. 3	II. 40
13	13	13
15		15
18		18
23		23
III. 1	III. 1	III. 1
7	13	7
14		13
		20
IV. 1		31
10	IV. 2	IV. 1
		10
		21
		24
		26
		30
		33
V. 35	35	35
1	1	1
21		21
	22	
	25	
VI. 1 b		VI. 1
6 b		6 b
14	VI. 7	14
30	14	30
	34	
45		45
	47	
VII. 53	VII. 1	VII. 53
1		1
17		
24		24
	25	

Cod. B	Cod. A	WH.
VIII. 31 1 10 13	VIII. 31 1 15 22 27	VIII. 31 1 11 14
IX. 2	IX. 2	IX. 34 2 14
28	17	31
30		30
33	33	33
X. 1	X. 2	X. 1 13
17	17	17
		23
		28
		32
XI. 46 1 12	XI. 46 1 12	XI. 35 46 12
20		15 20
	25	35
	27	46
XII. 13	XII. 1 13 18 28 35 40	XII. 1 13 18 28 35
XIII. 41 1	XIII. 3	XIII. 41 1 28
32	32	
XIV. 3 10	XIV. 3 12 17	XIV. 1 3 10 12 17 22

Cod. B	Cod. A	WH.
		26
27		27
		32
43		43
53	66	53
XV. <i>I</i>		66
16		XV. <i>I</i>
		16
		20 <i>b</i>
24		33
38		
42	XV.    42	42
XVI. <i>I</i>		XVI. <i>I</i>
		[9]

The *τίτλοι* which precede the Gospel in cod. A give the contents of the successive chapters as follows<sup>1</sup>:

*Τοῦ κατὰ Μᾶρκον εὐαγγελίου αἱ περιοχαὶ.*

α'. περὶ τοῦ δαιμονιζομένου.    β'. περὶ τῆς πενθερᾶς Πέτρου.  
 γ'. περὶ τῶν ιαθέντων ἀπὸ ποικίλων νόσων.    δ'. περὶ τοῦ λεπροῦ.  
 ε'. περὶ τοῦ παραλυτικοῦ.    σ'. περὶ Λευὶ τοῦ τελώνου.    ζ'. περὶ τοῦ ἔηρὰν ἔχοντος χείρα.    η'. περὶ τῆς τῶν ἀποστόλων ἐκλογῆς.  
 θ'. περὶ τῆς παραβολῆς τοῦ σπόρου.    ι'. περὶ τῆς ἐπιτιμήσεως τοῦ ἀνέμου καὶ τῆς θαλάσσης.    ια'. περὶ τοῦ λεγεωνός.    ιβ'. περὶ τῆς θυγατρὸς τοῦ ἀρχισυναγώγου.    ιγ'. περὶ τῆς αἰμορροούσης.    ιδ'. περὶ τῆς διαταγῆς τῶν ἀποστόλων.    ιε'. περὶ Ἰωάννου καὶ Ἡρῷδου.  
 ιζ'. περὶ τῶν πέντε ἄρτων.    ιζ'. περὶ τοῦ ἐν θαλάσσῃ περιπάτου.  
 ιη'. περὶ τῆς παραβάσεως τῆς ἐντολῆς τοῦ θεοῦ.    ιθ'. περὶ τῆς Φουνκίστης.    κ'. περὶ τοῦ μογιλάλου.    κα'. περὶ τῶν ἑπτὰ ἄρτων.  
 κβ'. περὶ τῆς ζύμης τῶν Φαρισαίων.    κγ'. περὶ τοῦ τυφλοῦ.    κδ'. περὶ τῆς ἐν Καισαρίᾳ ἐπερωτήσεως.    κε'. περὶ τῆς μεταμορφώσεως τοῦ Ἰησοῦ.    κς'. περὶ τοῦ σεληνιαζομένου.    κζ'. περὶ τῶν διαλογιζομένων τίς μείζων.    κη'. περὶ τῶν ἐπερωτησάντων Φαρισαίων.    κθ'. περὶ τοῦ ἐπερωτήσαντος αὐτὸν πλούσιον.    λ'. περὶ τῶν νιῶν Ζεβεδαίου.  
 λα'. περὶ Βαρτιμαίου.    λβ'. περὶ τοῦ πώλου.    λγ'. περὶ τῆς ἔηρανθείσης συκῆς.    λδ'. περὶ ἀμνησικακίας.    λε'. περὶ τῶν ἐπερωτησάντων τὸν κύριον ἀρχιερέων καὶ γραμματέων Ἐν ποιά ἔξουσίᾳ ταῦτα ποιεῖς;    λς'. περὶ τοῦ ἀμπελῶνος.    λζ'. περὶ τῶν ἐγκαθέτων διὰ τὸν κῆνσον.    λη'. περὶ τῶν Σαδδουκαίων.    λθ'. περὶ τῶν γραμματέων.    μ'. περὶ τῆς τοῦ κυρίου ἐπερωτήσεως.    μα'. περὶ τῆς τὰ δύο λεπτά.  
 μβ'. περὶ τῆς συντελείας.    μγ'. περὶ τῆς ἡμέρας καὶ ὥρας.    μδ'. περὶ τῆς ἀλειψάσης τὸν κύριον μύρῳ.    μέ'. περὶ τοῦ πάσχα.    μς'. περὶ

<sup>1</sup> For the variants of codd. ΙΔ see Tregelles, p. 486 f.; for the capitulation of cod. Amiatinus and other mss. of

the Latin Vulgate, cf. Wordsworth and White, p. 174; and for tables of Latin *tituli*, Thomasius, *opera*, i. p. 303 sqq.

παραδόσεως προφητεία. μζ. ἀρνησις Πέτρου. μη. περὶ τῆς αἰτήσεως τοῦ κυριακοῦ σώματος.

The following conspectus shews the contents as they are arranged in the present edition.

I.	1.	Superscription.
	2—8.	Preparatory ministry of John the Baptist.
	9—11.	The Baptism.
	12—13.	The Temptation.
	14—15.	First preaching in Galilee.
	16—20.	Call of the first four disciples.
	21—28.	Casting out of an unclean spirit in the synagogue at Capernaum.
	29—31.	Healing of Simon's wife's mother.
	32—34.	Miracles after sunset.
	35—39.	Withdrawal from Capernaum and first circuit of Galilee.
	40—45.	Cleansing of a leper.
II.	1—12.	Healing of a paralytic in a house at Capernaum. The forgiveness of sins.
	13—14.	Call of Levi.
	15—17.	Feast in Levi's house.
	18—22.	Question of fasting. The Old and the New.
	23—28.	Cornfield incident. Question of the Sabbath.
III.	1—6.	Healing of a withered hand on the Sabbath.
	7—12.	Second great concourse by the Sea.
	13—19 <sup>a</sup> .	Second withdrawal from Capernaum, and choice of the Twelve.
	19 <sup>b</sup> —30.	Question of the source of the Lord's power to expel unclean spirits.
	31—35.	Errand of the brothers and the mother of Jesus, and teaching based upon it.
IV.	1—9.	Teaching by parables. The parable of the Sower.
	10—12.	Reasons for the use of parables.
	13—20.	Interpretation of the parable of the Sower.
	21—25.	Parabolic warnings as to the responsibility of hearing the word.
	26—29.	Parable of the automatic action of the soil.
	30—32.	Parable of the mustard seed.
	33—34.	General law of parabolic teaching.
	35—41.	Stilling of the wind and sea.
V.	1—13.	Casting out of the 'legion' at Gerasa.
	14—17.	The Gerasenes alarmed and hostile.
	18—20.	The restored demoniac sent to evangelise.
	21—34.	Petition of Jairus. Healing of the <i>aiμορροούσα</i> .
	35—43.	Raising of the child of Jairus.
VI.	1—6 <sup>a</sup> .	Departure from Capernaum. Preaching at Nazareth.
	6 <sup>b</sup> —13.	Another circuit of Galilee. Mission of the Twelve.

- 14—16. The fame of Jesus reaches the Tetrarch.  
 17—29. Episode of John's imprisonment and death.  
 30—44. Return to the sea. Feeding of the five thousand.  
 45—52. Walking on the sea.  
 53—56. Ministry in the Plain of Gennesaret.  
**VII.** 1—13. Question of ceremonial washings.  
 14—23. Teaching based upon the question.  
 24—30. In the region of Tyre and Sidon. The daughter of a Syrophenician delivered from an evil spirit.  
 31—37. Return to Decapolis. Healing of a deaf man who spoke with difficulty.  
**VIII.** 1—9. Feeding of the four thousand.  
 10—13. Fresh encounter with the Pharisees near Dalmanutha.  
 14—21. The leaven of the Pharisees and the leaven of Herod.  
 22—26. Arrival at Bethsaida. A blind man recovers sight.  
 27—30. Journey to the neighbourhood of Caesarea Philippi.  
     Question as to the Lord's Person.  
 31—33. The Passion foretold. Peter reproved.  
 34—**IX. 1.** Public teaching on self-sacrifice.  
**IX.** 2—8. The Transfiguration.  
 9—13. Conversation about Elijah, during the descent from the mountain.  
 14—29. A demoniac boy set free, and the sequel.  
 30—32. The Passion again foretold.  
 33—37. Return to Capernaum. Question of precedence.  
 38—40. On the use of the Name by a non-disciple.  
 41—50. The teaching resumed. On the consequences of conduct towards brethren in Christ.  
**X. 1.** Departure from Galilee; journeys in Judaea and Peraea.  
 2—12. Question of divorce.  
 13—16. Blessing of children.  
 17—22. The rich man who wanted but one thing.  
 23—27. The rich and the Kingdom of God.  
 28—31. The reward of those who leave all for Christ's sake.  
 32—34. The Passion foretold for the third and last time.  
 35—45. Petition of the sons of Zebedee. Teaching based on the incident.  
 46—52. Passage through Jericho: Bartimaeus restored to sight.  
**XI. 1—11.** Solemn entry into the precinct of the Temple.  
 12—14. Fig-tree in leaf but without fruit.  
 15—19. Second day in the Precinct. Breaking up of the Temple-market.  
 20—25. Conversation on the withering of the fig-tree.  
 27—33. Third day in the Precinct. Authority of Jesus challenged by the Sanhedrists.  
**XII. 1—12.** Parable of the Husbandmen and the Heir.  
 13—17. The Pharisees' question.

18—27.	The Sadducees' question.
28—34.	The scribe's question.
35—37 <sup>a</sup> .	The Lord's question.
37 <sup>b</sup> —40.	Denunciation of the Scribes.
41—44.	The widow's two mites.
XIII. 1—2.	Destruction of the Temple foretold.
3—13.	Question of the Four: first part of the Lord's answer.
14—23.	Troubles connected chiefly with the Fall of Jerusalem.
24—27.	End of the Dispensation foretold.
28—29.	Parable of the budding fig-tree.
30—32.	The time known to the Father only.
33—37.	Final warning.
XIV. 1—2.	The day before the Passover.
3—9.	Episode of the Anointing at Bethany.
10—11.	Interview of Judas with the Priests.
12—16.	Preparations for the Paschal meal.
17—21.	Paschal Supper: the Traitor pointed out.
22—25.	Institution of the Eucharist.
26—31.	Departure to the Mount of Olives. The desertion and denial foretold.
32—42.	The Agony in Gethsemane.
43—50.	Arrival of the Traitor: arrest of Jesus: flight of the Eleven.
51—52.	Story of the young man who followed.
53—65.	The Trial before the High Priest.
66—72.	Peter denies the Master thrice.
XV. 1—15.	The Trial before the Procurator.
16—20 <sup>a</sup> .	The Lord mocked by the Procurator's soldiers.
20 <sup>b</sup> —22.	The way to the Cross.
23—32.	The Crucifixion, and the first three hours on the Cross.
33—37.	The last three hours on the Cross: the Lord's Death.
38—41.	Events which immediately followed.
42—47.	The Burial of the Lord.
XVI. 1—8.	Visit of the women to the tomb on the third day.
[9—11.	Appearance to Mary of Magdala.
12—13.	Appearances to two disciples.
14—18.	Appearances to the Eleven.
19—20.	The Ascension, and its sequel.]

2. We are now in a position to consider how far the contents group themselves into larger sections<sup>1</sup>, revealing the existence of a

<sup>1</sup> Zahn (*Einleitung*, ii. p. 224 ff.) divides the Gospel, apart from the introduction and appendix, into five very unequal parts (i. 16—45, ii. 1—iii. 6, iii. 7—vi. 13, vi. 14—x. 52, xi. 1—xvi. 8).

Dr Salmond (in Hastings, *D. B.*, iii. 249) suggests a division in accordance with the geographical data (i. 14—vii. 23, vii. 24—ix. 50, x. 1—31, x. 32—xv. 47).

purpose or plan in the mind of the writer. Even a hasty examination will shew that the book deals with two great themes, the Ministry in Galilee (i. 14—ix. 50), and the Last Week at Jerusalem (xi. 1—xvi. 8), and that these sections are connected by a comparatively brief survey of the period which intervened (x. 1—52). The first fourteen verses of the Gospel are evidently introductory; the last twelve have the character of an appendix, which links the Gospel history with the fortunes of the Church in the Apostolic age.

The first of the two great sections of St Mark bears manifest signs of brevity and compression, especially in certain parts of the narrative. On the other hand there are indications of the writer's desire to follow the order of events, as far as his information permitted him to do so. It is shewn by the notes of time and place which continually occur.

The following are examples: *παράγων παρὰ τὴν θάλασσαν* (i. 16)...  
*καὶ προβὰς δὲ λίγον* (19)...*καὶ εἰσπορεύονται εἰς Καφαρναούμ,* καὶ εὐθὺς  
*τοῖς σάββασιν εἰσελθὼν εἰς τὴν συναγωγήν* (21)...*καὶ εὐθὺς ἐκ τῆς*  
*συναγωγῆς ἔξελθόντες* (29)...*δψίας δὲ γενομένης* (32)...*καὶ πρῶτην*  
*λίαν ἀναστὰς ἔξῆλθεν* (35)...*καὶ εἰσελθὼν πάλιν εἰς Καφ.* δίημερῶν (ii. 1)  
...*καὶ ἔξῆλθεν πάλιν παρὰ τὴν θάλασσαν* (13)...*καὶ παράγων* (14)...*καὶ*  
*εἰσῆλθεν πάλιν εἰς συναγωγήν* (iii. 1)...*καὶ...ἀνεχώρησεν πρὸς τὴν θά-*  
*λασσαν* (7)...*καὶ ἀναβαίνει εἰς τὸ ὅρος* (13)...*καὶ ἔρχεται εἰς οἶκον* (20)...  
*καὶ πάλιν ἤρξατο διδάσκειν παρὰ τὴν θάλασσαν* (iv. 1)...*καὶ δτε ἐγένετο*  
*κατὰ μόνας* (10)...*καὶ λέγει αὐτῷς ἐν ἐκείνῃ τῇ ἡμέρᾳ δψίας γενομένης*  
*Διέλθωμεν εἰς τὸ πέρας* (35)...*καὶ ἥλθον εἰς τὸ πέραν* (v. 1)...*καὶ*  
*διαπεράσαντος τοῦ Ἰησοῦ ἐν τῷ πλοίῳ πάλιν* (21)...*καὶ ἔξῆλθεν ἐκεῖθεν*  
(vi. 1)...*καὶ περῆγεν τὰς κώμας* (7)...*καὶ ἀπῆλθον ἐν τῷ πλοίῳ εἰς*  
*ἔρημον τόπον* (32)...*καὶ διαπεράσαντες ἐπὶ τὴν γῆν ἥλθον εἰς Γεννησαρέτ*  
(53)...*ἐκεῖθεν δὲ ἀναστὰς ἀπῆλθεν εἰς τὰ ὄρια Τύρου* (vii. 24)...*καὶ*  
*πάλιν ἔξελθὼν ἐκ τῶν ὄριων Τύρου ἥλθεν διὰ Σιδῶνος εἰς τὴν θάλασσαν*  
(31)...*καὶ εὐθὺς ἐμβὰς εἰς τὸ πλοῖον...ἥλθεν εἰς τὰ μέρη Δαλμανούθα*  
(viii. 10)...*καὶ...παλιν ἐμβὰς ἀπῆλθεν εἰς τὸ πέραν* (13)...*καὶ ἔρχονται*  
*εἰς Βηθσαϊδάν* (22)...*καὶ ἔξῆλθεν...εἰς τὰς κώμας Καισαρίας* (27)...*καὶ*  
*μετὰ ἡμέρας ἔξ...ἀναφέρει αὐτὸν εἰς ὅρος ὑψηλόν* (ix. 2)...*καὶ καταβα-*  
*νόντων αὐτῶν ἐκ τοῦ ὄρους* (9)...*καὶ εἰσελθόντος αὐτοῦ εἰς οἶκον* (28)...  
*κάκεῖθεν ἔξελθόντες ἐπορεύοντο διὰ τῆς Γαλειλαίας* (30)...*καὶ ἥλθον εἰς*  
*Καφαρναούμ* (33).

It is impossible to resist the impression that the writer who constructed this chain of sequence believed himself to be presenting his facts upon the whole in the order of their actual

occurrence; and this impression is not weakened by the occasional dropping of a link (as e.g. at i. 40, ii. 23, vii. 1), for such exceptions suggest that he was unwilling to go beyond his information, and that the indications of order which he gives are sound so far as they go. This view is supported by the absence of his favourite  $\epsilon\nu\theta\acute{u}\acute{s}$  at the points of transition; at such times the writer vouches for the relative order only, and not for the immediate succession of the events. The kind of sequence which he aims to establish is consistent with the omission of many incidents or discourses, and with the bringing into close proximity of others which were separated by considerable intervals, but not with a disregard of chronological order; nor is it his habit to group together materials of similar character, or which appeared to illustrate the same principle<sup>1</sup>.

But granting that the writer intended to follow the relative order of time, is there reason to suppose that he has succeeded? Can we recognise in this part of his work the steady and natural development of events which possesses historical verisimilitude?

The answer makes itself distinctly heard by the careful student. He observes a progress in the history of the Galilean Ministry, as it is depicted by St Mark, which bears the stamp of truth. The teaching of Christ is seen to pass through a succession of stages in an order which corresponds to His method of dealing with men: first there is the synagogue homily, then the popular instruction delivered in the larger auditorium supplied by the sea-shore or the neighbouring hills, then the teaching by parables of the multitudes who had proved themselves incapable of receiving spiritual truth, and lastly the initiation of a select few into the mysteries of the Kingdom, which they were afterwards to proclaim to the world. And

<sup>1</sup> Dr Sanday, however, (*Smith, D.B.*<sup>2</sup>, i. p. 1224, cf. Hastings, *D.B.*, ii. p. 613) finds some instances of this: "Some sections (according to Holtzmann, ii, 23—iii. 6, iv. 21—25, ix. 33—50, x. 2—31, xi. 23—26) shew marks of artificial composition." Mr C.H. Turner (Hastings, *D.B.*, i. pp. 406, 410) expresses himself with less reserve: "even if the sections

as wholes are in chronological order, the events within each section are obviously massed in groups"; "within his first section St Mark certainly groups events by subject-matter rather than by time." The general attitude of St Mark towards chronological order is stated in a few careful sentences by Dr Salmond, in Hastings, *D. B.*, iii. p. 255.

the course of events as sketched by St Mark answers to this progress in the teaching and partly explains it. We see the crowd growing daily in numbers and enthusiasm, the opportunities of teaching increased, the necessity arising for a division of labour, the consequent selection and training of the Twelve; and on the other hand, the growing hostility of the Scribes, their reinforcement from Jerusalem, their alliance with the party of Herod, the unintelligent and dangerous excitement of the common people, the awakened curiosity of Antipas. As we look more closely into St Mark's picture, the plan of the Ministry begins to shape itself. We see that it includes (1) the evangelisation of the lake-side towns and country, both in the tetrarchy of Antipas and in that of Philip; (2) the extension of this work to the rest of Galilee during intervals of enforced withdrawal from the lake-district; and (3) the instruction and disciplining of the men who were ultimately to carry the preaching of the Divine Kingdom to the ends of the earth. The whole of this complicated process moves onwards in St Mark's history in so easy and natural a manner that we are scarcely conscious of the movement until we come to analyse the contents of the Gospel. But in fact the scheme is developed step by step, each incident forming a distinct link in the sequence<sup>1</sup>.

According to Papias St Mark wrote ἀκριβῶς, οὐ μέντοι τάξει, and this has been taken to mean that, while his recollections were faithfully reproduced, he made no attempt to arrange them chronologically<sup>2</sup>. But τάξις is order of any kind, and its precise meaning must be interpreted by the context in which it occurs. In this case the context supplies a clue, for Papias goes on to say that St Peter taught οὐχ ὥσπερ σύνταξιν τῶν κυριακῶν ποιούμενος λόγων, i.e. not with the view of producing a literary work. A σύνταξις is a set treatise which follows the rules of orderly composition; thus the writer of 2 Maccabees at the end of his task (xv. 39) finds comfort in the reflexion τὸ τῆς κατασκευῆς τοῦ λόγου τέρπει τὰς ἀκοὰς τῶν ἐντυγχανόντων τῇ συντάξει. Papias himself claims that his *logia* were compiled συντακτικῶς: οὐκ ὁκνήσω δέ σοι καὶ ὅσα ποτὲ παρὰ τῶν πρεσβυτέρων καλῶς ἔμαθον καὶ καλῶς ἐμνημόνευσα συνκατατάξαι (al.

<sup>1</sup> The solitary exception is the explanatory episode of the Baptist's death (vi. 17—29).

<sup>2</sup> For various explanations of this omission see Salmon, *Intr.*<sup>7</sup> p. 91.

*συντάξαι) ταῖς ἐρμηνείαις.* St Mark's work, being a mere echo of St Peter's *ἀπομνημονεύματα*, was not in this sense orderly; it belonged to a different category from the artificial treatises which were in fashion, and for the most part was a mere string of notes connected in the simplest way. The structure of the Second Gospel is wholly in harmony with this view. The paragraphs, often extremely brief, are connected by the simplest of Greek copulas. *Tότε*, which abounds in St Matthew, is not once used by St Mark as a note of transition; *οὖν*, St John's favourite copula, is employed in narration only by the writer of the supplementary verses; *δέ* occurs in this connexion but four times in the first nine chapters. Yet in the longer subsections the writer of this Gospel shews himself willing to vary the monotony of the repeated *καὶ* by the use of *ἄλλα*, *γάρ*, *ἰδού*, or by dispensing with copulas of any kind. His invariable use of *καὶ* at the commencement of a paragraph<sup>1</sup> may therefore be attributed to the deliberate purpose of connecting his notes together in the least artificial manner; and this feature of his work sufficiently explains the words of Papias.

When we pass from the narrative of the Galilean Ministry (i. 14—ix. 50) to the brief summary of the Judaean and Peraean journeys which followed it, St Mark's manner changes perceptibly. He is still, at least in c. x., a compiler of *ὑπομνηματισμοί*, but his memoranda are no longer accompanied by notes of time, and the notes of place are few (x. 1, 17, 32, 46). When Jerusalem is reached such indications of fuller knowledge appear again; the succession of the events is carefully noted, and the places where they occurred are specified (e.g. xi. 1, 11, 12, 15, 19, 20, 27; xii. 41; xiii. 1, &c.). The hand of the writer to whom we owe the first great section of the book is clearly to be seen in the last. Yet there is a change of manner which is perhaps not wholly due to the difference of theme. The narrative of the Passion is on a scale which is out of all proportion to that on which the Ministry is drawn. The subsections become noticeably longer; instruction holds a more prominent position; the terseness of the earlier sayings is exchanged for specimens of more prolonged teaching (e.g. xi. 23—25, xii. 24—27, 29—31, 38—40); a whole chapter (xiii.) is occupied by a single discourse; the style is more varied, and the monotonous *καὶ* gives place more frequently to *δέ* or some other equivalent. These are among the signs which point to a

<sup>1</sup> See above, p. xlvi. n.

partial use in these chapters of a source distinct in character from that which supplied the materials of the first nine or ten chapters.

3. The tradition which from the days of Irenaeus has identified the Second Gospel with the teaching of St Peter is too early and too consistent to be wholly set aside, unless the internal evidence of the book requires us to abandon it. There is certainly but little in this Gospel which did not fall within the limits of St Peter's personal knowledge. He may have been present on all the occasions in our Lord's life to which St Mark refers except the Baptism, the Temptation, and the Crucifixion and the scenes which followed it. On certain occasions he was one of three selected witnesses. It is true that the figure of Simon Peter does not loom large in the Second Gospel, and some pages in the history where he fills a prominent place are wanting in St Mark; it is St Matthew who relates the high commendation passed upon Peter's confession of faith, while St Mark gives only the story of his subsequent miscarriage; the story of Peter's walking on the sea, and of the stater in the fish's mouth, are also in Matthew only; indeed the only long paragraph in Mark which concerns St Peter is the account of his three-fold denial of the Master.

This difficulty presented itself to the acute mind of Eusebius of Caesarea, and he met it by what is probably on the whole the true explanation of the facts—the Apostle's reluctance to call attention to himself in a record of the words and works of Christ; *dem. ev. iii.* 3 ταῦτα μὲν οὖν ὁ Πέτρος εἰκότως παρασιωπᾶσθαι ηξίου· διὸ καὶ Μᾶρκος αὐτὰ παρέλιπεν, τὰ δὲ κατὰ τὴν ἀρνησιν αὐτοῦ εἰς πάντας ἐκήρυξεν ἀνθρώπους... Μᾶρκος μὲν ταῦτα γράφει, Πέτρος δὲ ταῦτα περὶ ἑαυτοῦ μαρτυρεῖ. Such reticence may indeed serve to disarm suspicion when we remember that the Pseudo-Peter writes in the first person (*Ev. Petr. ad fin.* ἐγὼ δὲ Σίμων Πέτρος καὶ Ἀνδρέας ὁ ἀδελφός μου), and that the same feature appears in other Christian pseudonymous literature.

But if tokens of Petrine origination are not prominent in St Mark's Gospel, they are not wanting altogether, and the unobtrusiveness of those which meet the eye of the careful student increases his sense of their importance. Thus, while the Second Gospel omits a series of incidents relating to St Peter which find a place in the first and third (e.g. Mt. xiv. 28 f., xv. 15,

xvi. 18, xvii. 24 ff., xviii. 21, Lc. v. 3 ff., xii. 41, xxii. 31), and contains no such incident which the other Synoptists omit, it occasionally identifies St Peter where St Matthew and St Luke are indefinite.

Simon, Peter, or Simon Peter is mentioned 28 times by Mt., 25 by Mc., 27 by Lc. Of Mc.'s references to the name in separate contexts four are peculiar to him (Mc. i. 36, xi. 21, xiii. 3, xvi. 7), whilst, except in the passages cited above, Mt. has no reference which is not shared by one or both of the other Synoptists. Lc. has four (viii. 45, xxii. 8, xxiv. 12, 34), but the last two are found elsewhere (Jo. xx. 3 ff., 1 Cor. xv. 5).

There are other facts which point to the same conclusion. The reader of the Synoptist Gospels is frequently struck by the appearance in St Mark of minute details or touches which suggest first-hand knowledge. This impression may be partly due to St Mark's characteristic style, though on the other hand it is possible that the style itself may have been moulded by intercourse with an eye-witness. Such striking phrases as ἐμβριμησάμενος αὐτῷ εὐθὺς ἔξεβαλεν αὐτόν (i. 43), περιβλεψάμενος αὐτοὺς μετ' ὀργῆς συνλυπούμενος ἐπὶ τῇ πωρώσει τῆς καρδίας αὐτῶν (iii. 5), περιεβλέπετο ἰδεῖν τὴν τοῦτο ποιήσασαν (v. 32), ἀνέπεσαν πρασιὰ πρασιά (vi. 40), can hardly be attributed to the fancy of a compiler. Certainly no amount of realism will account for the scores of unexpected and independent details with which St Mark enriches the common narrative; as Bishop Westcott observes, "there is perhaps not one narrative which he gives in common with St Matthew and St Luke to which he does not contribute some special feature".

Examples may be found in Mc. i. 14 f., 20, 27, 29, 33, 35 ff., ii. 2, 3, 4, 13, 15, 23, iii. 4, 7, 9, 14 f., 17, 20 f., 31, 32, 34, iv. 33, 34, 35, 36, 38, v. 13, 20, 21, 26, vi. 1, 5, 30, 32, 37, 45, 48, 51, 53, 56, vii. 24, 26, 31, viii. 12, 22 ff., 34, ix. 13, 15 ff., 28, 33 ff., x. 16, 21 ff., 32, 46 ff., xi. 8, 11, 13, 16, 19, 20 f., 27, xii. 12, 35, 37, 41, 43, xiii. 3, xiv. 40, 58, 59, 65, 66, 67, 72, xv. 7, 8, 21, 23, 25, 41, 44, 45, 46, xvi. 1, 3, 4, 5, 8.

Was St Peter the eye-witness who supplied this mass of independent information? There are three narratives in the Synoptic tradition which must have been derived originally from

<sup>1</sup> Westcott, *Introduction to the Study of the Gospels*, p. 562.

St Peter, St John, or St James; and there is one of which St Peter alone was competent to give a full account. A comparison of St Mark's account of these incidents ought to throw light upon the question.

(1) Mc. v. 37—43 (Mt. ix. 23—25, Lc. viii. 51—56). Mc. alone distinguishes the successive stages of the Lord's way to the dead child (*οὐκ ἀφῆκεν οὐδένα μετ' αὐτοῦ συνακολουθῆσαι εἰ μή κτλ....καὶ ἔρχονται εἰς τὸν οἶκον...καὶ εἰσελθὼν...εἰσπορεύεται ὅπου ἦν τὸ παιδίον*); in Mc. only the Lord's words are preserved in Aramaic, and the child's age is mentioned at this point to account for her rising and walking (*περιεπάτει, ἦν γὰρ ἐτῶν δώδεκα*); lastly, it is Mc. only who connects this miracle with the departure from Capernaum which followed (vi. 1). (2) Mc. ix. 2—13 (Mt. xvii. 1—13, Lc. ix. 28—36). Here Mt. is in some respects fuller than Mc., and seems to have had access to another tradition. But Mc. has several striking features, some of which point to Peter as their source. Such a phrase as *στίλβοντα λευκὰ λίαν οἴα γναφεύς κτλ.*, the untranslated "Rabbi" of Peter's 'answer,' the explanatory clause *οὐ γὰρ ἤδει τί ἀποκριθῆ*, the mention of the suddenness with which the vision vanished (*ἔξαπινα περιβλεψάμενοι οὐκέτι οὐδένα εἶδον*), the reference to the reticence which the three practised (*τὸν λόγον ἐκράτησαν...συνζητοῦντες κτλ.*)—are just such personal reminiscences as St Peter might have been expected to retain. (3) Mc. xiv. 33—42 (Mt. xxvi. 37—46, Lc. xxii. 40—46). Here Mt. agrees with Mc., yet a close examination reveals the greater originality of Mc., and some probable traces of a Petrine source; thus it is Mc. only who preserves the Aramaic *ἀββά*, and the *Σίμων* of the Lord's address to Peter; moreover the characteristic *οὐκ ἤδεισαν τί ἀποκριθῶσιν αὐτῷ* clearly comes from the same mind which supplied the similar note in the Marcan account of the Transfiguration. (4) Mc. xiv. 54, 66—72 (Mt. xxvi. 58, 69—75, Lc. xxii. 54—62). All the Synoptic accounts here depend on St Peter, for St John's report (Jo. xviii. 17—18, 25—27) is quite distinct. But Mc.'s narrative manifests special knowledge of the lesser details (e.g. *ἦν...θερμαινόμενος πρὸς τὸ φῶς, ἰδούσα τὸν Πέτρον θερμαινόμενον, εἰς τὸ προανέλιον, ἐκ δευτέρου, ἐπιβαλών*). His dialogue also has greater freshness and verisimilitude; comp. *καὶ σὺ μετὰ τοῦ Ναζαρηνοῦ ἥσθα τὸν Ἰησοῦν* with Mt.'s *καὶ σὺ ἥσθα μετὰ Ἰησοῦ τοῦ Γαλειλαίου*, and the answer *οὔτε οἶδα οὔτε ἐπίσταμαι σὺ τί λέγεις* (Mc.) with the tamer *οὐκ οἶδα τί λέγεις* (Mt.), *οὐκ οἶδα αὐτόν, γύναι* (Lc.).

The internal evidence does not amount to a proof of Petrine origination. But it is entirely consistent with the tradition which represents St Mark as specially indebted to St Peter; and the tradition is at once too early and too wide-spread to be abandoned unless the evidence of the Gospel itself renders its acceptance impossible.

It is another question whether the present book can be assigned as a whole to St Peter or even to St Mark<sup>1</sup>. The last twelve verses, as we shall see, almost certainly belong to another hand; the first verse is possibly no part of the original work. To St Mark and not to St Peter must probably be ascribed the episode of the Baptist's martyrdom, the story of the *νεανίσκος* in Gethsemane, such explanatory notes as vii. 3—4, 19 b, and the interpretations of Aramaic words and names. It may be doubted whether the long discourse of c. xiii. was derived from St Peter's teaching; indeed the note in v. 14 (*ό ἀναγινώσκων νοεῖτω*) seems to point distinctly to a written source which St Mark has incorporated. At xiv. 1 we come upon the traces of another source; the words *ἡν δὲ τὸ πάσχα καὶ τὰ ἔξυμα μετὰ δύο ημέρας* have the air of a new beginning and are not in St Mark's style, and the incident which follows, although it might have formed a suitable introduction to a detached narrative of the Passion, breaks St Mark's order of time, carrying us back, as St John shews, to the day before the Lord's entry into Jerusalem. Thus it is probable that at this point St Mark has availed himself of an earlier document, into which he has worked his recollections of St Peter's teaching and such other materials as his own residence at Jerusalem had placed within his reach<sup>2</sup>.

On the whole it seems safe to assume as a working theory of the origination of the Gospel that its main source is the teaching of St Peter, which has supplied nearly the entire series of notes descriptive of the Galilean Ministry, and has largely influenced the remainder of the book. But allowance must probably be made, especially in the last six chapters, for the use of other authorities, some perhaps documentary, which had been familiar to the Evangelist before he left the Holy City.

<sup>1</sup> The present writer has risen from his study of the Gospel with a strong sense of the unity of the work, and can echo the *requiescat Urmarkus* which ends a recent discussion. But he is not prepared to express an opinion as to the nature and extent of the editorial revision which St Mark's original has

undergone.

<sup>2</sup> For an account of the attempts made by critics since the time of Baur to discover a 'tendency' or a dogmatic purpose in the Second Gospel, see Salmon in Hastings, *D.B.* iii. p. 260; and on the supposed Paulinisms of St Mark cf. *Encycl. Bibl.* ii. p. 1844.

## VI.

### COMPARISON OF ST MARK WITH THE OTHER SYNOPTISTS.

If we accept the traditional account of the origin of St Mark's work, the writer was far from regarding it in the light of a 'Gospel,' i.e. as one of a series of attempts to produce a record of the life of Christ. It is not impossible that the present headline Ἀρχή τοῦ εὐαγγελίου Ἰησοῦ Χριστοῦ may be due to a later hand; the superscription Κατὰ Μᾶρκον was certainly added by a generation which had conceived the idea of a tetrad of Gospels. The interpreter of Peter, if he gave a title to his book, was doubtless content to call it by such a name as we find in Justin—*Απομνημονεύματα Πέτρου*.

But though originally an independent work, St Mark stands to the first and third of our present Gospels in a relation which is not accidental or artificial, but vital. When the three writings are compared together, they are found to deal with the same great cycles of events, and to describe them in words which are often nearly identical. The literary problem which arises from this remarkable fact belongs to the general Introduction of the Gospels, and cannot be usefully discussed here<sup>1</sup>; nor, indeed, is it one which directly concerns the student of St Mark. But he will do well to take note of the distinctive features of the second Gospel as compared with the first and the third, and to examine

<sup>1</sup> For a comprehensive treatment of the subject the reader may be referred to Professor Stanton's article *Gospels* in the second volume of Dr Hastings' *Dictionary of the Bible*. An elaborate and able article on the same subject in

*Encyclopaedia Biblica* is unhappily disfigured, more especially in the section on the 'Credibility of the Synoptics,' by the dogmatic statement of conclusions which are quite insufficiently supported.

their bearing upon the origin and character of the book upon which he is engaged.

The following table will shew how far the First and Third Gospels cover the ground which is covered by St Mark, and the relative order which they follow. For the contents of the sections see § v. p. li ff.

Mc.	Mt.	Lc.
I.		
1 2—8	III. 1—12	III. 1—6, 15—17
9—11	13—17	21—22
12—13	IV. 1—11	IV. 1—13
14—15	12—17	14—15
16—20	18—22	[V. 1 ff.]
21—28		IV. 31—37
29—31	VIII. 14—15	38—39
32—34	16	40—41
35—39		42—44
40—45	2—4	V. 12—16
II.	IX. 1—8	17—26
1—12	9	27—28
13—14	10—13	29—32
15—17	14—17	33—39
18—22	XII. 1—8	VI. 1—5
23—28	9—14	6—11
III.		17—19
1—6	15—21	12—16
7—12	X. 1—4	14—26
13—19 <sup>a</sup>	XII. 22—32	VIII. 19—21
19 <sup>b</sup> —30	46—50	4—8
31—35	XIII. 1—9	9—10
IV.	10—15	11—15
1—9	18—23	16—18
10—12		
13—20		
21—25		
26—29		
30—32	31—32	XIII. 18—19
33—34	34	
35—41	VIII. 23—27	VIII. 22—25
V.	28—32	26—33
1—13	33—34	34—37
14—17		38—39
18—20		
21—34	IX. 18—22	40—48
35—43	23—26	49—56
VI.	XIII. 53—58	IV. 16—30
1—6	IX. 35—X. I, X.	IX. 1—6
7—13	5—XI. I	
14—16	XIV. 1—2	III. 7—9
17—29	3—12	19—20

## lxviii COMPARISON WITH THE OTHER SYNOPTISTS.

Mc.	Mt.	Lc.
30—44	13—21	IX. 10—17
45—52	22—33	
VII. 1—13	XV. 1—9	
14—23	10—19	
24—30	21—28	
31—37	29 ff.—31	
VIII. 1—10	32—39 <sup>a</sup>	
11—13	39 <sup>b</sup> —XVI. 4	
14—21	XVI. 5—12	
22—26		
27—30	13—20	18—21
31—33	21—23	22
34—IX. 1	24—28	23—27
IX. 2—8	XVII. 1—8	28—36
9—13	9—13	
14—29	14—20	37—43 <sup>a</sup>
30—32	22—23	43 <sup>b</sup> —45
33—37	XVIII. 1—5	46—48
38—40		49—50
41—50	6—9	
X. 1	XIX. 1—2	
2—12	3—9	
13—16	13—15	XVIII. 15—17
17—22	16—22	18—23
23—27	23—26	24—27
28—31	27—30	28—30
32—34	XX. 17—19	31—34
35—45	20—28	
46—52	29—34	35—43
XI. 1—11	XXI. 1—11	XIX. 29—45 <sup>a</sup>
12—14	18—19	
15—19	12—17	45 <sup>b</sup> —48
20—25	19 <sup>b</sup> —22	
27—33	23—27	XX. 1—8
XII. 1—12	33—46	9—19
13—17	XXII. 15—22	20—26
18—27	23—33	27—38
28—34	34—40	
35—37 <sup>a</sup>	XXIII. 1—38	41—44
37 <sup>b</sup> —40		45—47
41—44		XXI. 1—4
XIII. 1—2	XXIV. 1—2	5—6
3—13	3—14	8—19
14—23	15—25	20—24
24—27	29—31	25—28
28—29	32—33	29—31
30—32	34—35	32—33
33—37	42—44	36

Mc.	Mt.	Lc.
XIV. 1—2	XXVI. 1—5	XXII. 1—2
3—9	6—13	
10—11	14—16	3—6
12—16	17—19	7—13
17—21	20—25	14, 21—23
22—25	26—29	17—20
26—31	30—35	31—39
32—42	36—46	40—46
43—50	47—56	47—53
51—52		
53—65	57—68	54 <sup>a</sup> , 63—71
66—72	69—75	56—62
XV. 1—15	XXVII. 1—26	XXIII. 1—25
16—20 <sup>a</sup>	27—31 <sup>a</sup>	
20 <sup>b</sup> —22	31 <sup>b</sup> —33	26—33 <sup>a</sup>
23—32	34—44	33 <sup>b</sup> —43
33—37	45—50	44—45 <sup>a</sup>
38—41	51—56	45 <sup>b</sup> —55
42—47	57—61	50—55
XVI. 1—8	XXVIII. 1—20	56—XXIV.

1. It appears from this table that out of the 106 sections of the genuine St Mark there are but three (excluding the head-line) which are wholly absent from both St Matthew and St Luke; and of the remaining 102, 96 are to be found in St Matthew, and 82 in St Luke. On the other hand, as the table shews with equal distinctness, there are large portions of St Matthew and St Luke (e.g. Mt. i.—ii., v.—vii., Lc. i.—ii., ix. 51—xviii. 14) which are either entirely wanting in St Mark, or represented there only by an occasional fragment. This is but a rough statement of the case, but it suffices to indicate the relation of St Mark to the other Synoptists<sup>1</sup> in regard to the extent of the fields which they respectively occupy.

2. Further, the table reveals a marked difference of order in that part of the common narrative which belongs to the Galilean Ministry. From the beginning of the journeyings to Jerusalem to the Resurrection the order of the sections differs but slightly. St Matthew (xxi. 19 f.) brings the withering of the fig-tree into immediate connexion with the sentence pronounced upon it, and

<sup>1</sup> Compare Mr W. C. Allen's paper in *Exp. T.* xii., p. 279 ff. (*The dependence of St Matt. i.—xiii upon St Mark*).

St Luke (xxii. 21 f.) places the detection of Judas after the distribution of the Eucharist. With these exceptions the order of Mc. x. 1—xvi. 8 is generally followed by St Matthew and St Luke. But in the sequence of the events narrated in Mc. i. 14—ix. 50 there is no such consensus. St Luke, indeed, is generally in fair agreement with St Mark, where the two are dealing with the same events; but St Matthew's displacements of the Marcan order are numerous and serious in the earlier chapters.

The chief differences of order in St Luke are as follows: (1) the charge of collusion with Beelzebul follows the arrival of the mother and brethren; (2) the parable of the mustard seed is detached from that of the sower and stands in a later context; (3) the preaching at Nazareth is placed at the outset of the Ministry. St Matthew's order is essentially different from St Mark's as far as Mc. vi. 13, although from that point the two are in almost complete agreement.

It may be taken as a *prima facie* argument in favour of St Mark's order that it is "confirmed either by St Matthew or St Luke, and the greater part of it by both<sup>1</sup>." Moreover, when one of the other Synoptists strikes out a path peculiar to himself, his order usually has less verisimilitude, and is open on internal grounds to suspicion.

Thus (1) when Mt. places the gathering of crowds from Decapolis and Judaea at the very outset of the Ministry (Mt. iv. 25), there can be little doubt that he antedates a state of things which Mc. rightly places at a later stage (Mc. iii. 7 ff.). (2) The crossing to the Gadarene (Gerasene) country, if preparatory to an evangelistic tour in the Decapolis, seems to come too early in Mt.'s order, and on the other hand he places the calling of the Apostles too late; in Mc. both incidents occupy places which accord with what appears to be the natural course of events. (3) The synagogue scene at Nazareth, which Lc. fixes before the commencement of the Lord's residence at Capernaum, bears upon its surface the evidence of a later date (cf. Lc. iv. 23 ὅσα ἡκούσαμεν γενόμενα εἰς τὴν Καφαρναούμ κτλ.). (4) Again the notes of time and place in Mc. are frequently precise where in Lc. they disappear, or exist only in a weakened form—e.g. Mc. i. 22 εὐθὺς τοῖς σάββασιν (Lc. ἐν τοῖς σ.), ii. 1 εἰσελθὼν πάλιν εἰς Καφαρναοῦμ δι' ἡμέρῶν (Lc. ἐγένετο ἐν μιᾷ τῶν ἡμέρων), iv. 35 ἐν ἐκείνῃ τῇ ἡμέρᾳ (Lc. ἐν μιᾷ τῶν ἡμέρων)—whilst in

<sup>1</sup> Mr F. H. Woods in *Studia Biblica*, ii. p. 62; cf. Dr Sanday's remarks in Smith's *D.B.*<sup>2</sup> (p. 1224).

Mt. the incidents have sometimes fallen into new surroundings which are inconsistent with those assigned to them in Mc. or Lc. or in both; comp. e.g. Mt. viii. 1 καταβάντος δὲ αὐτοῦ ἀπὸ τοῦ ὄρους (Lc. ἐν τῷ εἶναι αὐτὸν ἐν μιᾷ τῶν πόλεων), ix. 18 ταῦτα αὐτοῦ λαλοῦντος (Mc. and Lc. place the preceding parables in other contexts).

3. The comparison of St Mark's matter with that of the corresponding narratives in St Matthew and St Luke has been to some extent anticipated in the preceding section (p. lxiii ff.). But it may be useful to illustrate a little more fully the relative fulness of St Mark's knowledge in matters of detail<sup>1</sup>. The following examples are taken from the first four chapters of the Gospel.

## Mc.

i. 20 ἀφέντες τὸν πατέρα αὐτῶν Ζεβέδαιον ἐν τῷ πλοίῳ μετὰ τῶν μισθωτῶν ἀπῆλθον ὅπιστοι αὐτοῦ.

i. 35 πρωὶ ἔννυνχα λίαν ἀναστὰς ἐξῆλθεν καὶ ἀπῆλθεν εἰς ἔρημον τόπον κάκεῖ προσ- ηύχετο.

i. 43 καὶ ἐμβριμη- σάμενος αὐτῷ εὐ- θὺς ἐξέβαλεν αὐ- τὸν, καὶ λέγει αὐτῷ κτλ.

ii. 2 καὶ συνήχθη- σαν πολλοὶ ὥστε μηκέτι χωρεῖν μη- δὲ τὰ πρὸς θύραν.

ii. 23 ἤρξαντο ὁδὸν ποιεῖν τίλλοντες τοὺς στάχνας.

iii. 6 ἐξελθόντες οἱ Φαρισαῖοι εὐθὺς μετὰ τῶν Ἡρῳδιανῶν κτλ.

iii. 14 προσκαλεσά- οντος ἡθελεν αὐτός... καὶ ἐποίησεν δώδε- κα... ἵνα ὥστιν μετ' αὐτοῦ καὶ ἵνα ἀπο- στέλλῃ αὐτοὺς κη-

## Mt.

iv. 22 ἀφέντες τὸ πλοῖον καὶ τὸν πα- τέρα αὐτῶν ἡκολού- θησαν αὐτῷ.

viii. 4 καὶ λέγει αὐτῷ κτλ.

xii. 1 ἤρξαντο τίλλειν στάχνας καὶ ἐσθίειν.

xiii. 14 ἐξελθόντες δὲ οἱ Φαρισαῖοι κτλ.

x. 1 προσκαλεσά- μενος τοὺς δώδεκα μαθητὰς αὐτοῦ ἔδω- κεν αὐτοῖς ἐξουσίαν κτλ.

## Lc.

v. 11 καταγαγόν- τες τὰ πλοῖα ἐπὶ τὴν γῆν ἀφέντες πάντα ἡκολούθησαν αὐτῷ.

iv. 42 γενομένης δὲ ημέρας ἐξελθὼν ἐπορεύθη εἰς ἔρημον τόπον.

v. 14 καὶ αὐτὸς παρήγγειλεν αὐτῷ κτλ.

vi. 1 ἔπιλλον οἱ μαθηταὶ αὐτοῦ καὶ ἡσθιον τοὺς στάχνας.

vi. 11 αὐτοὶ δέ κτλ.

vi. 13 προσεφών- ησεν τοὺς μαθητὰς αὐτοῦ, καὶ ἐκλεξά- μενος ἀπ' αὐτῶν δώ- δεκα...

<sup>1</sup> Cf. Papias ap. Eus.: ἐνδο...ἐποιήσατο πρόνοιαν, τοῦ μηδὲν ὧν ἡκουσε παραλιπεῖν.

Mc.

Mt.

Lc.

*ρύσσειν καὶ ἔχειν  
ἔξουσίαν κτλ.*

iii. 19—21 *ἔρχε-  
ται εἰς οἶκον· καὶ  
συνέρχεται πάλιν  
ὁ ὄχλος, ὡστε μὴ  
δύνασθαι αὐτοὺς  
μηδὲ ἄρτον φαγεῖν.  
καὶ ἀκούσαντες οἱ  
παρ’ αὐτοῦ ἐξῆλθον  
κρατῆσαι αὐτόν, ἔ-  
λεγον γὰρ ὅτι ἐξέ-  
στη.*

iv. 10 ὅτε ἐγένετο  
κατὰ μόνας, ἥρωτῶν  
αὐτὸν οἱ περὶ αὐτὸν  
σὺν τοῖς δώδεκα κτλ.

iv. 34 κατ’ ἴδιαν  
δὲ τοῖς ἴδιοις μαθη-  
ταῖς ἐπέλυεν πάν-  
τα.

iv. 36 παραλαμβά-  
νουσιν αὐτὸν ὡς ἦν  
τῷ πλοίῳ, καὶ ἀλλα  
πλοῖα ἦν μετ’ αὐ-  
τοῦ.

iv. 38 καὶ αὐτὸς ἦν  
ἐν τῇ πρύμνῃ ἐπὶ  
τὸ προσκεφάλαιον  
καθεύδων.

iv. 39 ἐπετίμησεν  
τῷ ἀνέμῳ καὶ εἶπεν  
τῇ θαλάσσῃ Σιώπα,  
πεφίμωσο.

xiii. 10 προσελ-  
θόντες οἱ μαθηταὶ εἰ-  
παν αὐτῷ κτλ.

viii. 23 ἐμβάντι  
αὐτῷ εἰς πλοῖον ἡκο-  
λούθησαν αὐτῷ οἱ  
μαθηταὶ αὐτοῦ.

viii. 24 αὐτὸς δὲ  
ἐκάθευδεν.

viii. 26 ἐπετίμη-  
σεν τοῖς ἀνέμοις καὶ  
τῇ θαλάσσῃ.

viii. 9 ἐπηρώτων  
δὲ αὐτὸν οἱ μαθηταὶ  
αὐτοῦ κτλ.

viii. 22 αὐτὸς ἐνέ-  
βη εἰς πλοῖον καὶ οἱ  
μαθηταὶ αὐτοῦ.

viii. 23 πλεόντων  
δὲ αὐτῶν ἀφύπνωσεν.

viii. 24 ἐπετίμη-  
σεν τῷ ἀνέμῳ καὶ τῷ  
κλύδωνι τοῦ ὕδατος,  
καὶ ἐπαύσαντο.

When St Mark does not add to our knowledge, his presentation of a fact or saying is often distinct from that which it assumes in St Matthew and St Luke, and has the appearance of being the original from which one or both of the other accounts have been derived.

The following examples from the same chapters may suffice :

Mc.

Mt.

Lc.

i. 16 Σίμωνα καὶ  
Ἀνδρέαν τὸν ἀδελφὸν  
Σίμωνος,

iv. 18 δύο ἀδελ-  
φούς, Σίμωνα τὸν  
λεγόμενον Πέτρον

Mc.

Mt.

Lc.

i. 26 σπαράξαν αὐτὸν.

καὶ Ἀιδρέαν τὸν ἀδελφὸν Σίμωνος.

ii. 12 τὸν κράβαττον.

ii. 17 καλέσαι... ἀμαρτωλούς.

ii. 21 εἰ δὲ μή, αἴρει τὸ πλήρωμα ἀπ' αὐτοῦ τὸ καινὸν τοῦ παλαιοῦ.

iii. 16 καὶ ἐπέθηκεν ὄνομα τῷ Σίμωνι Πέτρον, καὶ Ἰάκωβον.

iv. 11 ὑμῖν τὸ μυστήριον δέδοται.

iv. 21 ἔρχεται ὁ λύχνος.

iv. 22 οὐ γάρ ἐστιν κρυπτὸν ἔδν μὴ ἵνα κτλ.

iv. 31 ὡς κόκκῳ.

ix. 6 τὴν κλίνην.

ix. 13 καλέσαι... ἀμαρτωλούς.

iv. 16 αἴρει γὰρ τὸ πλήρωμα αὐτοῦ ἀπὸ τοῦ ἴματίου.

x. 2 Σίμων ὁ καλούμενος Πέτρος... καὶ Ἰάκωβος.

xiii. 11 ὑμῖν δέδοται γνῶναι τὰ μυστήρια.

v. 15 καίουσιν λύχνον.

x. 26 οὐδὲν γάρ ἐστιν κεκαλυμμένον ὃ οὐκ κτλ.

xiii. 31 ὅμοία ἐστὶν...κόκκῳ.

iv. 35 ῥάψαν αὐτὸν εἰς τὸ μέσον...μηδὲν βλάψαν αὐτόν.

v. 24 τὸ κλινῖδιον.

v. 32 καλέσαι ἀμαρτωλοὺς εἰς μετανοιαν.

v. 36 εἰ δὲ μῆγε, καὶ τὸ καινὸν σχίσει καὶ τῷ παλαιῷ οὐ συμφωνήσει τὸ ἐπίβλημα τὸ ἀπὸ τοῦ καινοῦ.

vi. 14 Σίμωνα ὁν καὶ ὀνόμασεν Πέτρον...καὶ Ἰάκωβον.

viii. 9 ὑμῖν δέδοται γνῶναι τὰ μυστήρια.

viii. 16 λύχνον ἄψας.

viii. 17 οὐ γάρ ἐστιν κρυπτὸν ὃ οὐ κτλ.

xiii. 19 ὅμοία ἐστὶν κόκκῳ.

Although in several of these instances St Mark's mode of expressing himself is briefer than that which is preferred by the other Synoptists, his style is not on the whole distinguished by brevity. On the contrary his treatment of incident is constantly fuller than theirs, partly through the habit, already illustrated, of filling up his picture with an abundance of minute details, partly from his way of (1) presenting facts in a vivid and pictorial form, and (2) interpreting character and conduct.

Examples of (1) may be found in the story of the Gerasene demoniac, the narrative of the cleansing of the *aiμορρούσα* and the raising of the child of Jairus, the Baptist's martyrdom, the discussion arising out of the question about *κοινὰ χεῖρες*, the healing of the Syrophenician girl, the epileptic boy, and the son of Timaeus, the scribe's question, the anointing at Bethany. This feature in Mc. is most apparent when he is compared with Mt.

Lc. has a fulness of his own, but it is of another character, and largely due to a literary style; cf. Mc. ii. 22 with Lc. v. 37 f., v. 1 with Lc. viii. 26, v. 17 with Lc. viii. 37, viii. 30 with Lc. ix. 21, viii. 34 with Lc. ix. 23, ix. 32 with Lc. ix. 45, xi. 8 with Lc. xix. 37, xiii. 7 f. with Lc. xxi. 9 ff.

The following may serve as illustrations of (2): Mc. i. 41 σπλαγχνισθείς, i. 43 ἐμβριμησάμενος, iii. 5 μετ' ὀργῆς συνλυπούμενος, v. 30 ἐπιγροὺς ἐν ἑαυτῷ τὴν ἐξ αὐτοῦ δύναμιν, v. 36 παρακούσας τὸν λόγον λαλούμενον, vi. 19 ἐνεῦχεν αὐτῷ κτλ., vi. 20 ἐφοβεῖτο...πολλὰ ἡγέρει καὶ ἡδέως αὐτοῦ ἥκουεν, vi. 52 ἵν αὐτῶν ἡ καρδία πεπωρωμένη, vii. 19 καθαρίζων πάντα τὰ βρώματα, x. 21 ἐμβλέψας αὐτῷ ἡγάπησεν αὐτόν, x. 22 στυγνάσας ἐπὶ τῷ λόγῳ, xv. 15 βουλόμενος τῷ ὄχλῳ τὸ ικανὸν ποιῆσαι, xvi. 8 οὐδενὶ οὐδὲν εἶπον, ἐφοβοῦντο γάρ.

As a result of this characteristic fulness of St Mark, some eighty verses in his Gospel find no direct parallel in the other Synoptists. Although he seldom introduces a narrative or a parable which is not also found in St Matthew or St Luke, the aggregate of matter peculiar to the Second Gospel cannot fall much below one-sixth of the whole book.

In one respect, indeed, St Mark is concise where the other Evangelists are full. With a single exception (c. xiii.) he represents the longer discourses of St Matthew and St Luke by a few compact sentences. Thus, the Sermon on the Mount finds only an occasional echo in the Second Gospel (e.g. iv. 21, ix. 50, x. 11); the long charge to the Twelve (Mt. x.) is reduced by St Mark to a few verses (vi. 8—11); of the final denunciation of the Pharisees, which occupies a whole chapter in St Matthew (xxiii.), St Mark gives merely a specimen (xii. 38—40). Such public teaching as St Mark reports is chiefly parabolic (ii. 19—22, iii. 23—27, iv. 3—32, vii. 15, xii. 1—9); yet his parables are few in comparison with those of either Matthew or Luke. On the other hand instructions delivered privately to the Twelve are sometimes given more at length by St Mark than by the other two Synoptists (cf. e.g. vii. 18—23, viii. 17—21, ix. 33—50, xiii. 34—37). And such sayings as St Mark records are often, like his narrative, characterised by touches which possess a singular freshness and originality.

The following are examples: i. 14 πεπλήρωται ὁ καιρός, ii. 27 τὸ σάββατον διὰ τὸν ἀνθρωπὸν ἐγένετο καὶ οὐχ ὁ ἀνθρωπὸς διὰ τὸ σάββατον,

iii. 23 πῶς δύναται Σατανᾶς Σατανᾶν ἐκβάλλειν; 26 ἀλλὰ τέλος ἔχει,  
29 ἐνοχος ἔσται αἰώνιον ἀμαρτήματος, iv. 8 ἀναβαίνοντα καὶ αὐξανόμενα,  
13 οὐκ οἴδατε τὴν παραβολὴν ταῦτην κτλ., vii. 13 παρόμοια τοιαῦτα  
πολλὰ ποιεῖτε, vii. 27 ἀφες πρῶτον χορτασθῆναι τὰ τέκνα, viii. 21 οὐπω  
συνίετε; ix. 23 τὸ Εἰ δύνη, πάντα δινατὰ τῷ πιστεύοντι, ix. 29 τοῦτο τὸ  
γένος ἐν οὐδενὶ δύναται ἐξελθεῖν εἰ μὴ ἐν πρωτευχῇ, x. 30 μετὰ διωγμῶν,  
xi. 22 ἔχετε πίστιν θεοῦ, xii. 27 πολὺ πλαγάσθε, xii. 34 οὐ μακρὰν εἴ  
ἀπὸ τῆς βασιλείας τοῦ θεοῦ, xiv. 36 πάντα δινατά σοι.

To sum up these remarks. It would appear that the relation of St Mark to the other Synoptists is that of an early but fragmentary record towards records of a somewhat later origin<sup>1</sup> and more complex character. In compass St Mark falls far short of the other two<sup>2</sup>, but he excels them in approximation to chronological order and in life-like representation of the facts<sup>3</sup>. His narrative moves in a more contracted field; he reports but one of our Lord's longer discourses in full, and comparatively few of His sayings and parables. But where the three Synoptists are on common ground, St Mark is usually distinguished by signs of the minuter knowledge which comes from personal observation or from personal contact with an eye-witness<sup>4</sup>.

<sup>1</sup> For a discussion of this point see Hastings, *D. B.* iii. 259 f., *Enc. Bibl.* ii. 1847 f.; the literature upon it will be found in Moffatt, *Historical N. T.*, p. 262 f.

<sup>2</sup> Jerome, *de virr.* ill. 8, "Marcus... breve scripsit evangelium."

<sup>3</sup> On the 'genius' of St Mark's Gospel see Salmon in Hastings, *D. B.*, p. 253 ff.

<sup>4</sup> Mr F. P. Badham in *St Mark's Indebtedness to St Matthew* uses the picturesqueness of St Mark's narrative as an argument against his priority; see e.g. p. 44: "consider the frequently trivial character of these details... consider, too, the tendency to emphasise

the marvellous. With the phenomena of the Apocryphal Gospels before our eyes it will surely be reckoned a sign of decadence that our Second Evangelist dilates so exuberantly on the Gadarene's ferocity and the epileptic's paroxysm." The comparison of St Mark with the Apocryphal Gospels is unfortunate. It calls attention to the essential difference between the real and the realistic, a report based upon a first-hand authority and an historical romance. For a criticism of Mr Badham's method the student may be referred to Mr A. Wright's *Some N. T. problems*, p. 256 ff.

## VII.

### USE OF THE OLD TESTAMENT BY ST MARK.

This Gospel contains 68 distinct references to the Old Testament, of which 25 are either formal<sup>1</sup> or nearly verbal quotations. Only seven of the references are peculiar to St Mark.

In the following table quotations are distinguished by an asterisk; (Mt.), (Lc.), indicate that the passage is used by St Matthew or St Luke in a corresponding context; a dagger before a Marcan reference shews that it contains a quotation peculiar to St Mark.

*Gen.	i. 27	Mc.	x. 6 (Mt.)
*	ii. 24		x. 7 f. (Mt.)
	xviii. 14		x. 27 (Mt., Lc.)
	xxxvii. 20		xii. 7 (Mt., Lc.)
	xxxviii. 8		xii. 19 (Mt., Lc.)
*Exod.	iii. 6		xii. 26 (Mt., Lc.)
*	xx. 12		vii. 10 <sup>a</sup> , x. 19 (Mt.)
*	xx. 12—17		x. 19 (Mt., Lc.)
*	xxi. 17		vii. 10 <sup>b</sup> (Mt.)
*	xxiv. 8		xiv. 24 (Mt.)
Lev.	xiii. 49		i. 44 (Mt., Lc.)
*	xix. 18		xii. 31, 33 (Mt., Lc.)
Num.	xxvii. 17		vi. 34 (Mt.)
*Deut.	iv. 35	†	xii. 32
	v. 16		vii. 10 (Mt.)
	v. 17—20		x. 19 (Mt., Lc.)
*	vi. 4		xii. 29, 32
	vi. 5		xii. 33 (Mt., Lc.)
	xiii. 1		xiii. 22 (Mt.)
	xxiv. 1		x. 4 (Mt.)
*	xxiv. 14	†	x. 19
	xxv. 5		xii. 19 (Mt., Lc.)
	xxx. 4		xiii. 27 (Mt.)
I Sam.	xv. 22	†	xii. 33

<sup>1</sup> The formal quotations in Mc. are 19; see *Introduction to the O. T. in Greek*, pp. 382, 391.

1 Sam.	xxi. 6	Mc.	ii. 26 (Mt., Lc.)
1 Kings	xxii. 17		vi. 34 (Mt.)
2 Kings	i. 8		i. 10 (Mt.)
Esther	v. 3, vii. 2		vi. 23
Job	xlii. 2		x. 29 (Mt.)
*Ps.	xxii. 1		xv. 34 (Mt.)
	xxii. 7		xv. 29 (Mt.)
	xxii. 19		xv. 24 (Mt., Lc.)
*	xli. 9	†	xiv. 18
*	xlii. 6		xiv. 34 (Mt.)
*	lxix. 22		xv. 36 (Mt.)
*	cx. 1		xii. 36, xiv. 62 (Mt., Lc.)
*	cxviii. 22 f.		xii. 10 (Mt., Lc.)
*	cxviii. 25 f.		xi. 9 (Mt.)
Isa.	v. 1—2		xii. 1 (Mt., Lc.)
	vi. 9 f.		iv. 12 (Mt., Lc.)
	xiii. 10		xiii. 24 (Mt.)
	xix. 2		xiii. 8 (Mt., Lc.)
*	xxix. 13		vii. 6 (Mt.)
*	xxxiv. 4		xiii. 25 (Mt.)
*	xl. 3		i. 3 (Mt., Lc.)
*	lvi. 7		xi. 17 <sup>a</sup> (Mt., Lc.)
	lxii. 2		vi. 11 (Mt.)
*	lxvi. 24	†	ix. 48
Jer.	v. 21	†	viii. 18
*	vii. 11		xi. 17 <sup>b</sup> (Mt., Lc.)
Ezek.	xii. 2	†	viii. 18
	xvii. 23		iv. 32 (Mt., Lc.)
	xxxiv. 5		vi. 34 (Mt.)
Dan.	ii. 28, 29, 45		xiii. 7 (Mt., Lc.)
	iv. 12, 21		iv. 32 (Mt.)
	vii. 13		xiii. 26, xiv. 62 (Mt., Lc.)
	ix. 27		xiii. 14 (Mt.)
*	xi. 31		xiii. 14 (Mt.)
*	xii. 1		xiii. 19 (Mt.)
*	xii. 11		xiii. 14 (Mt.)
Joel	iii. 13	†	iv. 29
Mic.	vii. 6		xiii. 12 (cf. Mt., Lc.)
Zech.	ii. 10		xiii. 27 (Mt.)
	viii. 6		x. 27 (Mt.)
*	ix. 11		xiv. 24 (Mt.)
*Mal.	xiii. 7		xiv. 27 (Mt.)
	iii. 1		i. 2 (Mt., Lc.)
	iv. 5		ix. 12 (Mt.)

A comparison of the formal and direct quotations with the Cambridge manual edition of the LXX.<sup>1</sup> will shew that while St

<sup>1</sup> A more detailed comparison is given by Mr W. C. Allen in *Exp. Times*, xii. (1900-1) pp. 187 ff., 281 ff.

Mark is generally in fair agreement with the ms. which on the whole presents the LXX. in its relatively oldest form, there are some remarkable variations.

In the following list thick type is used where the text of the Cambridge LXX. diverges from the text of St Mark as edited in this volume.

Mc. i. 2 ἵδον ἀποστέλλω τὸν ἄγγελόν μου πρὸ προσώπου σου, δις κατασκευάσει τὴν ὁδόν σου.

Mc. i. 3 φωνὴ βοῶντος ἐν τῇ ἑρήμῳ Ἐτοιμάσατε τὴν ὁδὸν Κυρίου, εὐθείας ποιεῖτε τὰς τρίβους αὐτοῦ.

Mc. vii. 6 ὁ λαὸς οὗτος τοῖς χείλεσιν με τιμᾷ, ἡ δὲ καρδία αὐτῶν πόρρω ἀπέχει ἀπ' ἐμοῦ· μάτην δὲ σέβονται με, διδάσκοντες διδασκαλίας ἐντάλματα ἀνθρώπων.

Mc. vii. 10<sup>a</sup> τίμα τὸν πατέρα σου καὶ τὴν μητέρα σου.

Mc. vii. 10<sup>b</sup> ὁ κακολογῶν πατέρα ἡ μητέρα θανάτῳ τελευτώ.

Mc. ix. 48 ὁ σκώληξ αὐτῶν οὐ τελευτᾷ καὶ τὸ πῦρ οὐ σβέννυται.

Mc. x. 6 ἅρσεν καὶ θῆλυ ἐποίησεν αὐτούς.

Mc. x. 7 f. ἔνεκεν τούτου καταλεύψει ἀνθρωπος τὸν πατέρα αὐτοῦ καὶ τὴν μητέρα, καὶ ἔσονται οἱ δύο εἰς σάρκα μίαν.

Mc. x. 19 μὴ φονεύσῃς, μὴ μοιχεύσῃς, μὴ κλέψῃς, μὴ ψευδομαρτυρήσῃς, μὴ ἀποστερήσῃς, τίμα τὸν πατέρα σου καὶ τὴν μητέρα.

Mc. xi. 9 ὠσαννά· εὐλογημένος ἐρχόμενος ἐν ὀνόματι Κυρίου.

Mc. xi. 17<sup>a</sup> ὁ οἶκός μου οἶκος προσευχῆς κληθήσεται πᾶσιν τοῖς ἔθνεσιν.

Mc. xi. 17<sup>b</sup> σπήλαιον ληστῶν.

Mal. iii. 1 ἵδον ἔξαποστέλλω τὸν ἄγγελόν μου, καὶ ἐπιβλέψεται ὁδὸν πρὸ προσώπου μου.

Isa. xl. 3 φωνὴ βοῶντος ἐν τῇ ἑρήμῳ Ἐτοιμάσατε τὴν ὁδὸν Κυρίου, εὐθείας ποιεῖτε τὰς τρίβους τοῦ θεοῦ ἡμῶν.

Isa. xxix. 13 ἐγγίζει μοι ὁ λαὸς οὗτος ἐν τῷ στόματι αὐτοῦ, καὶ ἐν τοῖς χείλεσιν αὐτῶν τιμῶσιν με, ἡ δὲ καρδία αὐτῶν πόρρω ἀπέχει ἀπ' ἐμοῦ· μάτην δὲ σέβονται με, διδάσκοντες ἐντάλματα ἀνθρώπων καὶ διδασκαλίας.

Exod. xx. 12 (Deut. v. 16) τίμα τὸν πατέρα σου καὶ τὴν μητέρα.

Exod. xxii. 16 (17) ὁ κακολογῶν πατέρα αὐτοῦ ἡ μητέρα αὐτοῦ τελευτήσει θανάτῳ.

Isa. lxvi. 24 ὁ...σκώληξ αὐτῶν οὐ τελευτήσει (τελευτᾷ A), καὶ τὸ πῦρ αὐτῶν οὐ σβεσθήσεται.

Gen. i. 27 ἅρσεν καὶ θῆλυ ἐποίησεν αὐτούς.

Gen. ii. 24 ἔνεκεν τούτου καταλεύψει ἀνθρωπος τὸν πατέρα αὐτοῦ καὶ τὴν μητέρα αὐτοῦ,...καὶ ἔσονται οἱ δύο εἰς σάρκα μίαν.

Exod. xx. 12—17 τίμα τὸν πατέρα σου καὶ τὴν μητέρα...οὐ μοιχεύσεις, οὐ κλέψεις, οὐ φονεύσεις, οὐ ψευδομαρτυρήσεις.

Deut. xxiv. 14, A οὐκ ἀποστέρησεις.

Ps. cxvii. (cxviii.) 25, 26 σῶσον δῆ...εὐλογημένος ὁ ἐρχόμενος ἐν ὀνόματι Κυρίου.

Isa. lvi. 7 ὁ...οἶκός μου οἶκος προσευχῆς κληθήσεται πᾶσιν τοῖς ἔθνεσιν.

Jer. vii. 11 σπήλαιον ληστῶν.

Mc. xii. 10 λίθον δν ἀπεδοκίμασαν οἱ οἰκοδομοῦντες, οὗτος ἐγενήθη εἰς κεφαλὴν γωνίας παρὰ Κυρίου ἐγένετο αὐτῇ, καὶ ἔστιν θαυμαστὴ ἐν ὁφθαλμοῖς ἡμῶν.

Mc. xii. 26 εἶπεν... Ἐγὼ δὲ θεὸς Ἀβραὰμ καὶ θεὸς Ἰσαὰκ καὶ θεὸς Ἰακώβ.

Mc. xii. 29 f. ἄκουε, Ἰσραὴλ· Κύριος δὲ θεὸς ἡμῶν Κύριος εἰς ἔστιν· καὶ ἀγαπήσεις Κύριον τὸν θεόν σου ἔξι ὅλης [τῆς] καρδίας σου καὶ ἔξι ὅλης τῆς ψυχῆς σου καὶ ἔξι ὅλης τῆς διανοίας σου καὶ ἔξι ὅλης τῆς ἴσχυος σου.

Mc. xii. 31 ἀγαπήσεις τὸν πλησίον σου ὡς σεαυτόν.

Mc. xii. 32 οὐκ ἔστιν ἄλλος πλὴν αὐτοῦ.

Mc. xii. 36 εἶπεν Κύριος τῷ κυρίῳ μον Κάθου ἐκ δεξιῶν μον ἔως ἀνθρώπου τοὺς ἔχθρούς σου ὑποκάτω τῶν ποδῶν σου.

Mc. xiii. 14 τὸ βδέλυγμα τῆς ἐρημώσεως.

Mc. xiii. 19 θλίψις οἴα οὖν γέγονεν...

Mc. xiv. 24 τὸ αἷμα... τῆς διαθήκης.

Mc. xiv. 27 πατάξω τὸν ποιμένα, καὶ τὰ πρόβατα διασκορπισθήσονται.

Mc. xiv. 34 περίλυπος... ἡ ψυχή.

Mc. xv. 34 δὲ θεός μον δὲ θεός μον, εἰς τί ἐγκατέλιπές με;

Ps. cxvii. (cxviii.) 22 f. τὸν λίθον δὲν ἀπεδοκίμασαν οἱ οἰκοδομοῦντες, οὗτος ἐγενήθη εἰς κεφαλὴν γωνίας παρὰ Κυρίου ἐγένετο αὐτῇ, καὶ ἔστιν θαυμαστὴ ἐν ὁφθαλμοῖς ἡμῶν.

Exod. iii. 6 εἶπεν Ἐγώ εἰμι ὁ θεός... Ἀβραὰμ καὶ θεὸς Ἰσαὰκ καὶ θεὸς Ἰακώβ.

Deut. vi. 4 f. ἄκουε, Ἰσραὴλ· Κύριος δὲ θεὸς ἡμῶν Κύριος εἰς ἔστιν· καὶ ἀγαπήσεις Κύριον τὸν θεόν σου ἔξι ὅλης τῆς διανοίας σου καὶ ἔξι ὅλης τῆς ψυχῆς σου καὶ ἔξι ὅλης τῆς δυνάμεως σου.

Lev. xix. 18 ἀγαπήσεις τὸν πλησίον σου ὡς σεαυτόν.

Deut. iv. 35 οὐκ ἔστιν ἔτι (ἄλλος Α) πλὴν αὐτοῦ.

Ps. cix. (cx.) 1 εἶπεν δὲ κύριος τῷ κυρίῳ μον Κάθου ἐκ δεξιῶν μον ἔως ἀνθρώπου τοὺς ἔχθρούς σου ὑποπόδιον τῶν ποδῶν σου.

Dan. xii. 11 (LXX.) τὸ βδέλυγμα τῆς ἐρημώσεως.

Dan. xii. 1 (Th.) θλίψις οἴα οὖν γέγονεν...

Exod. xxiv. 8 τὸ αἷμα τῆς διαθήκης.

Zach. xiii. 7 πατάξατε τοὺς ποιμένας καὶ ἐκσπάσατε τὰ πρόβατα.

Ps. xli. (xlii.) 6 περίλυπος... ἡ ψυχή.

Ps. xxi. (xxii.) 1 δὲ θεός δὲ θεός μον... ἵνα τί ἐγκατέλιπές με;

The variations, it will be seen, are not numerous or extensive, but they are sometimes well marked and of considerable interest. Details have been discussed, as far as space permitted, in the footnotes; but attention may be called here to a few points. (1) St Mark manifests an occasional leaning towards the text of cod. A (Gen. ii. 24 [?], Exod. xx. 13 ff. (order), xxi. 16, Deut. vi. 4, Zach. xiii. 7). (2) In a few remarkable instances he agrees with the other Synoptists against the LXX. (Isa. xxix. 13, xl. 3,

Zach. xiii. 7, Mal. iii. 1). (3) While his LXX. quotations usually exhibit the same text as St Matthew's and St Luke's, he is here and there independent of one or both (Exod. xx. 13 ff., Deut. vi. 4, Ps. xxi. (xxii.) 1, cix. (cx.) 1).

With few exceptions (e.g. i. 2, 3) St Mark's references to the Old Testament occur in his report of the words of our Lord or of those who conversed with Him. But the commentary will make it probable that our Evangelist was intimately acquainted with the language of the Greek Bible<sup>1</sup>. To the LXX. he was probably indebted for nearly all that he knew of Greek as a written language<sup>2</sup>, as well as for the form in which his conceptions of the Messiah and the Kingdom of God were generally cast.

<sup>1</sup> See also § iv. of this Introduction.

<sup>2</sup> Sir J. C. Hawkins (*Hor. Syn.* pp. 108, 162 ff.) points out that, to judge by the list of words peculiar to St Mark, his acquaintance with the LXX. was less intimate than either St Matthew's or St Luke's. The test, however, is not

conclusive, merely establishing a probability that Mc. had other resources, such as those which a ἐρμηνευτής might not unnaturally possess, which rendered him more independent of the LXX. vocabulary than the other Synoptists.

## VIII.

### EXTERNAL CONDITIONS OF THE LIFE OF CHRIST AS DEPICTED BY ST MARK.

I. Two sections of Palestine make up the field of St Mark's history, Galilee (*ἡ Γαλειλαία*<sup>1</sup>), and Judaea (*ἡ Ἰουδαία χώρα* or simply *ἡ Ἰουδαία*); and two cities stand prominently forward as the centres of the movement, Capernaum (*Καφαρναούμ*), and Jerusalem (in Mc. always *Ἱεροσόλυμα*). Adjacent regions are also mentioned, into some of which the scene occasionally passes—Idumaea, Peraea (*πέραν Ἰορδάνου*), Phoenicia (*περὶ Τύρου καὶ Σιδῶνα, τὰ ὄρια Τύρου καὶ Σιδῶνος*), Decapolis (*ἡ δεκάπολις, Δεκάπολις*), Gennesaret, ‘the land of the Gerasenes’ (*ἡ χώρα τῶν Γερασηνῶν*); and other towns and villages—Nazareth (*Ναζαρέτ*), Bethsaida, Dalmanutha (? Magdala or Mageda), Caesarea (*Καισαρία ἡ Φιλίππου*), Tyre, Sidon, Jericho, Bethphage, Bethany. The river Jordan, the ‘wilderness’ of Judaea (*ἡ ἔρημος*), the waste or common ground in the neighbourhood of the towns of Galilee and Gaulonitis (*ἔρημοι τόποι, ἔρημια*), the lake (*ἡ θάλασσα τῆς Γαλειλαίας, or ἡ θάλασσα*), the Galilean and Peraean hills (*τὸ ὄρος, τὰ ὄρη*), a ‘high mountain’ in the North which is probably Hermon, and the Mount of Olives (*τὸ ὄρος τῶν ἐλαιῶν*), complete the geographical surroundings of the narrative.

<sup>1</sup> The name is spelt thus in cod. B throughout St Mark except i. 9 and xvi. 7, and uniformly in the O. T. (Jos. xx. 7, xxi. 32, 3 Regn. ix. 11, 4 Regn. xv. 29, 1 Chron. vi. 76, Isa. ix. 1). Winer-Schmidel, § 5, 13 a, classes Γαλειλαία with κρείνειν, μεισεῖν, πολεῖται. But though

analogy may have had weight, it is probable that Γαλειλαία is a genuine attempt to reproduce the sound of the Hebrew word, and that the diphthong answers to the long vowel in לִילָה. Cf. WH. Notes, p. 155.

If we consider the extent of our Lord's itinerations, this list will appear singularly meagre. During the period covered by Mc. i. 14—ix. 50 He seems to have evangelised in person or through the Twelve every part of Galilee, and a portion at least of the vaguely defined region east of the Jordan which was known as the Decapolis, besides undertaking a journey through Phoenicia and across the Lebanon. These missionary journeys led Him through all the towns and larger villages (*κωμοπόλεις*) of the most densely populated part of Palestine; but though St Mark relates the fact (i. 38 ff., vi. 6 ff.), he is silent as to the names of the places visited. Nor again, graphic as he is, does he stop to describe the effect produced upon fishermen of the little inclosed freshwater lake by their first sight of the Mediterranean and of the glories of Lebanon and Hermon. The Evangelist keeps strictly to his purpose, and allows himself to enter into details only when they illustrate the matter which is in hand. He is more concerned to set forth the character and method of the Ministry than the names of its localities. Nevertheless the indications of place are distinct enough to fix the geographical surroundings of almost every important incident, if we may assume that St Mark's order is roughly chronological. Of the events reported in c. x. 1—31 no more can be said than that they took place in Judaea or in Peraea (x. 1). But in both the greater sections of the history (i. 14—ix. 50, x. 32—xvi. 8) localisation can be carried into details.

This is obvious in x. 32—xvi. 8; but a little examination will shew that it is true also of the earlier section. Capernaum or its neighbourhood on the west side of the Lake is the scene of i. 16—38, ii. 1—iii. 12, iii. 20—iv. 36, v. 21—43, vi. 53—vii. 23, ix. 33—50, whilst v. 1—20, vi. 32—47, vii. 32—viii. 9, 22—26 belong to the eastern shore, and iv. 37—41, vi. 48—52, viii. 14—21, to the Lake itself; journeyings through Galilee, Phoenicia, Abilene and Ituraea occupy i. 39—45, iii. 13—19, vi. 1—13, 30—31, vii. 24—31, viii. 27—ix. 32. This accounts for the whole section i. 14—ix. 50 with the exception of vi. 14—29, which consists of an explanatory episode and belongs, as we learn from an independent source, to Machaerus on the east of the Dead Sea. In many cases we can locate separate incidents yet more precisely. Thus the events of i. 21—34, ii. 1—12, ix. 33—50, are expressly

connected with Capernaum ; others belong to Gerasa, Gennesaret, Bethsaida, Nazareth, the neighbourhoods of Tyre and Caesarea Philippi. The exact locality however is more frequently described than named ; the writer is usually content to place the event in its physical surroundings—in a house, on the road, by the side of the lake, among the hills, or wherever it may have occurred—but information of this kind is rarely withheld.

This method of localising the incidents imparts distinctness and movement to the history, while it does not burden the reader's memory with mere lists of names. At the same time it offers guidance in the construction of an intelligible plan of the Ministry. We can see quite clearly that the Ministry in Galilee found its centre in Capernaum ; there it begins and ends (i. 21, ix. 33). Other Gospels couple Chorazin with Capernaum (Mt. xi. 21 ff., Lc. x. 13 ff.); St Mark mentions no other town on the west shore of the lake, and thus fixes attention on the head-quarters of the movement. Capernaum was the home of Simon and Andrew (i. 29) and Levi (ii. 15); from Capernaum easy access could be had, not only to every part of the lake-district, but, by means of the great roads which were within reach, to every part of Palestine. The roads brought people together from east and west, north and south (iii. 8), and at other times carried the Lord and the Twelve upon their errand of preaching the Gospel to the rest of Galilee. So far as we can judge, it belonged to our Lord's design to evangelise the Tetrarchy thoroughly, while He made the lake-side the centre of His work. In St Mark we can see how the wider purpose was worked into the narrower. The itinerations occur at intervals determined by circumstances ; whenever the enthusiasm of the crowd rose to a dangerous height, or the hostility of the Scribes at Capernaum or of the court-party at Tiberias rendered a temporary withdrawal expedient, the Lord used the interval either in evangelistic work (i. 35 ff., vi. 1 ff.), or in intercourse with the Twelve, for which leisure and privacy were gained by travel (vii. 24 ff., viii. 27 ff.). Towards the end of the Ministry in Galilee the latter employment predominated, and in this fact it is impossible not to see the working out of a Divine plan. The solitudes of Lebanon and Hermon afforded an unrivalled scene for the teaching

of the laws of the Kingdom to the future Apostles and their initiation into the mystery of the Passion.

Besides the journey from Judaea to Galilee (i. 14), the Gospel describes (i.) three voyages on the lake, with visits to places in the neighbourhood, (ii.) three inland journeys in Galilee, (iii.) three longer journeys. The particulars are as follows: i. 1. From Capernaum to the land of the Gerasenes and back (iv. 35, v. 1, 21). 2. From some point on the west shore, probably north of Capernaum, to the neighbourhood of Bethsaida, and back to Gennesaret (vi. 32, 53). 3. From some point on the east shore to the neighbourhood of Dalmanutha, and from thence to Bethsaida (viii. 10, 22). ii. 1. Circuit of Galilee; return to Capernaum (i. 39, ii. 1). 2. Visit to the hill-country; return to Capernaum (iii. 13). 3. Circuit of the villages beginning with Nazareth; return to the lake (vi. 1, 6, 32). iii. 1. From Capernaum to Phoenicia, through Sidon, and round to Decapolis and the lake (vii. 24, 31). 2. From Bethsaida to the neighbourhood of Caesarea Philippi, thence northwards to Hermon; return through Galilee to Capernaum (viii. 27—ix. 33). 3. From Capernaum to Judaea and Peraea (x. 1).

For the identification of the various sites see the commentary upon the text, and the maps. It is to be understood that the dotted lines in the latter give merely the probable direction of the routes.

2. Into the political conditions of the countries where our Lord worked or travelled, St Mark allows his readers only a passing glimpse. He is almost obviously indifferent as to precise details of this kind. Herod Antipas is introduced as ‘the king’ (vi. 14, in a context where both Mt. and Lc. are careful to write ὁ τετραάρχης). There is nothing to shew that when Christ crossed the lake to Bethsaida or Gerasa He entered another tetrarchy, or that He came under the authority of the *legatus Syriae* when He visited Phoenicia, and under that of the Procurator of Judaea when He reached Jericho. Yet if St Mark’s history is placed in the light of these facts, it is seen to be in full accord with them. Tyre and Sidon, Caesarea Philippi, and even Bethsaida Julias are recognised as places of relative safety, where the Lord can shelter for a time from the intrigues of Herod. On the other hand, He is represented as being aware that in going up to Jerusalem He is encountering greater peril than in Galilee; there He will be delivered to Gentile officials (*τοῖς ἔθνεσιν*), and die by a Roman punishment. If the writer of this Gospel does not display a

knowledge of the complex political life which prevailed in Palestine at the time, his reticence is not due to ignorance.

3. On the state of religion in Galilee and Judaea St Mark is less reserved. The synagogues in Galilee, the Temple and Precinct at Jerusalem, control the ecclesiastical life of the two provinces; in the North the *ἀρχισυνάγωγοι*, in the South the *ἀρχιερεῖς*, are the ecclesiastical authorities. But in both the religious teachers of the people are the Scribes—*οἱ γραμματεῖς*, as St Mark uniformly calls them—and we meet them everywhere, at Capernaum (ii. 6), among the villages under Hermon (ix. 14), and at Jerusalem. Of the two great religious sects which divide religious opinion, the Pharisees are found both in Galilee and Judaea; of the Sadducees St Mark makes no mention till he reaches the last scenes at Jerusalem. In these the Pharisaic Scribes fall into the background, and their place is taken by the Sadducean priesthood which dominates the capital. There is a delicate mark of truth in this sudden but unannounced change, of which indications may be found everywhere in the last five chapters of the Gospel. On the first morning after His entrance into the Precinct the Lord comes into collision with the hierarchy through His action in the matter of the temple-market. From that moment they take the lead in seeking His death: they head the deputation from the Sanhedrin which demands to know His authority; they negotiate with Judas for the betrayal; a servant of the High Priest seems to have been foremost in the arrest; the Lord is taken from Gethsemane to the High Priest's Palace, and, though other members of the Sanhedrin are present, the condemnation is evidently the act of the priesthood, and it is from them that the Procurator learns the nature of the charge. Even Pilate could detect the motive which inspired them. For traditionalism, which concerned the Scribes so deeply, they cared little; but they could not suffer a superior, and if Jesus were the Christ, or were generally regarded in that light, their supremacy was at an end. Thus Jesus was condemned in the end not for His supposed contempt of the Law, written or oral, but for His acceptance of the Messianic character. The result is widely different from what the

experience of Galilee would have led the reader to expect; but it is fully explained by the change of circumstances which St Mark assumes but does not stop to relate.

Not less interesting is the light which the Evangelist throws upon the religious and social condition of the mass of the Jewish people. There is here again a marked distinction between the North and the South, though our attention is hardly called to it. In Galilee we find ourselves in the midst of a population which on the whole is rural; the towns are for the most part *κωμοπόλεις*, and round them are uninhabited spaces, high ground, cornfields (*τὰ σπόρια*), open country dotted with villages and farms (*ἀγροί*). The history moves among the working classes, the fishermen and husbandmen who were the backbone of the lake-side people. At Tiberias and Machaerus the court of Antipas attracted men of another stamp, and on the occasion of the Tetrarch's birthday we see the "heads of Galilee" (*οἱ πρῶτοι τῆς Γαλειλαίας*) mingling with high officials and military tribunes (*οἱ μεγιστᾶνες, οἱ χιλιάρχοι*). But at Capernaum the only indications of proximity to a seat of government are the *τελώνιον* which faces the shore, and the "Herodians" with whom the local Pharisees take counsel. The most striking feature here is the vast throng (*ὁ ὅχλος, οἱ ὅχλοι*) which surrounds the Prophet of Nazareth all day long and day after day. It is replenished from all parts of Syria, but the bulk of the crowd must always have come from the lake-side towns and villages (cf. vi. 55). This crowd is uniformly friendly and indeed enthusiastic, intent in the first instance upon getting its sick healed or watching and admiring the miracles, but also attracted by a teaching which was strangely unlike that of other Rabbis (i. 21, 27). Many elements were mingled in this Galilean audience; a few were themselves Rabbis, and these were at least secretly hostile; the majority were doubtless members of synagogues and men of unblemished orthodoxy (cf. Acts x. 14), but there was also a large following of persons who had no place in the religious life of Judaism (*τελῶναι καὶ ἀμαρτωλοί*, ii. 15), but were not averse to religious instruction such as Jesus offered. Our Lord was touched by their enthusiasm; it revealed a yearning

for guidance which deserved better shepherding than it received at the hands of their official guides (vi. 34). But He was at the same time grieved by the immaturity and obtuseness which rendered the masses impervious to directly spiritual teaching, and indeed unworthy of it (iv. 11 ff.). Even the picked companions of His journeys in Galilee retained much of the callousness and blindness which belonged to their environment (viii. 17, 21). Hence the Galilean teaching of Christ was limited to elementary lessons of truth, or, if it went further, was clothed in parables (iv. 11 f.).

Of the Jerusalemites this Gospel tells us little, but there are indications that the influences at work among them were widely different. The Lord had friends and disciples in Jerusalem and the neighbourhood—the household of Simon at Bethany (xiv. 3), Joseph of Arimathaea, the owner of Gethsemane, and the master of the house in the city where the last supper was eaten. But it may be doubted whether the Galilean Prophet was popular in the city. The crowds who escorted Him to Jerusalem, and who hung on His words in the Court of the Gentiles, were largely made up of Galileans and visitors; the crowd of citizens which thronged up to the Praetorium when the news of His arrest spread through the city, was chiefly interested in the opportunity of pressing its claims upon Pilate (xv. 8), and yielded to the importunity of the *ἀρχιερεῖς* (xv. 11). The report that Jesus had threatened to destroy the Temple easily turned the scale of feeling against Him; no release was attempted, no hands were laid on the party who had brought about His crucifixion, no sympathy was extended to Him on the cross by the passers-by, who mocked His sufferings (xv. 29). On the other hand our Lord's attitude at Jerusalem shews that He was brought face to face there with questions quite distinct from those which met Him in Galilee. He was no longer under a government which, though pagan in spirit, preserved the forms of Judaism; the shadow of the Roman *imperium* lay upon Jerusalem, and He was called there to vindicate His Messiahship, and to settle the apparently conflicting claims of Caesar and God.

4. The Gospel abounds with minute references to the external features of life.

Its vocabulary is rich in words which describe clothing (*ἱμάτιον, χιτών, στολή, κράσπεδον, πορφύρα, σινδών, ζώνη, στανδάλιον, ὑπόδημα, ἱμάς*), food (*ἄρτος, οἶνος, ὄξος, λάχανον, ἵχθυδιον, ζύμη, μέλι, βρῶμα, κλάσμα*), the house and its parts (*οἶκος, οἰκία, αὐλή, προαύλιον, πυλών, θύρα, ἀνάγαιον, κατάλυμα, στέγη, δῶμα, ἀφεδρών*), utensils and tools (*μόδιος, λύχνος, λυχνία, πίναξ, τρύβλιον, ποτήριον, ἀσκός, ἀλάβαστρος, ξέστης, κράβαττος, κλύη, πήρα, κόφινος, σφυρίς, μάχαιρα, κεράμιον, μύλος*), coins (*ἀργύριον, χαλκός, δηνάριον, κοδράντης, λεπτόν, κόλλυβος*), divisions of time (*ὥρα (τρίτη, ἔκτη), πρωΐ, πρωΐα, ὁψέ, ὁψία, μεσονύκτιον, ἀλεκτοροφωνία*), religious practices (*βαπτισμός, καθαρισμός, κορβάν, σάββατον, προσάββατον, παρασκευή, παράδοσις, συναγωγή, συνέδριον, ιερόν, γαζοφυλάκιον, ἑορτή, θυσία, δλοκαύτωμα, νηστεία, εὐλογεῖν, εὐχαριστεῖν, ὑμνεῖν*), marriage (*γαμίζειν, γαμεῖν, γαμεῖσθαι, νυμφίος, νυμφών, γυνή, πενθερά, βίβλος ἀποστασίου*), service (*διάκονος, ὑπηρέτης, δοῦλος, μισθωτός, θυρωρός, παιδίσκη*), punishment (*δέρειν, βασανίζειν, ἀποκεφαλίζειν, φυλακή, δέσμιος, σταυρός*), agriculture and other rural pursuits (*σπόριμα, πρασιά, ἀμπελών, ὑπολήνιον, φραγμός, πύργος, δρέπανον, θερισμός, γεωργός*), trade (*ἐκδιδόναι, ἀνταλλαγμα, λύτρον*), military matters (*κεντυρίων, χιλίαρχος, σπεκουλάτωρ, σπέρα, λεγιών*), boating and fishing (*ἀλεεῖς, ἀμφιβάλλειν, δίκτυον, πλοῖον, πλοιάριον, πρύμνα, προσκεφάλαιον, προσορμίζεσθαι*), animals (*θηρία, κάμηλος, χοῖρος, κυνάριον, πώλος, πετεινά, περιστερά*), disease (*πυρετός, λέπρα, κωφός, μογιλάλος, σπαράσσεσθαι, δαιμονίζεσθαι, μονόφθαλμος*), treatment of the dead (*ἐνειλεῖν, ἐνταφιασμός, μύρον, ἀρώματα*). A considerable number of these words are used by no other N.T. writer.

Besides this free use of words which describe the visible surroundings of life, there are many less manifest but not less instructive traces of local knowledge; such as the references to pauperism which appear only in connexion with Judaea and Jerusalem (*πτωχός, x. 21, xii. 42 f., xiv. 5, 7; προσαίτης, x. 46*), and a similarly restricted use of *ληστής* (xi. 17, xiv. 48) and *στασιαστής* (xiv. 7); the tacit assumption of the general employment of Aramaic, at least in Galilee, which underlies such Aramaisms as *βοανηργές* and *ταλειθὰ κούμ*; the careful choice of words which seem to imply that in Hellenised places, such as the Decapolis and the neighbourhood of Caesarea Philippi, the Lord's ministry was limited to the villages and open country, and that He did not enter the practically pagan towns.

St Mark's interests do not lie in the field of contemporary

history or political geography or in the social condition of Palestine. Every detail of this kind in his Gospel is merely incidental. But his passion for exact description, so far as it can be brought within the compass of his work, leads him unconsciously to supply a variety of information on these subjects, whilst his residence in Jerusalem and his personal relation to St Peter assure us that the information which he gives is first-hand and accurate.

## IX.

### ST MARK'S CONCEPTION OF THE PERSON AND OFFICE OF OUR LORD.

Whether the present headline of the Gospel in its fuller form is due to St Mark or not, it admirably expresses the idea of the book. It is *the Gospel of Jesus Christ, the Son of God*. St Mark begins (i. 2) by quoting two well-known Messianic passages (Mal. iii. 1, Isa. xl. 3), and tracing their accomplishment in the mission of the Baptist; and his next step is to shew that at His Baptism Jesus was declared to be the Beloved Son (i. 11). Thus he places in the forefront of the work the presupposition of our Lord's Messianic office and Divine Sonship, and all that follows is a record of the historical manifestation of the Christ.

According to St Mark the Lord began His Galilean Ministry in the character of the Baptist's successor, repeating St John's message, and carrying it a stage further (i. 15). His method, however, was new. John had appeared in the wilderness, Jesus shewed Himself in the heart of Galilee; John waited till men came to him, Jesus sought them out, and called them to follow Him (i. 17 ff.); John was a preacher only, Jesus on His first sabbath in Capernaum revealed His power over unclean spirits (i. 27), who at once recognised Him as the Holy One of God (i. 24), the Messiah (i. 34), and the Son of God (iii. 11, v. 7). But their premature and hostile testimony was refused and silenced, and the Lord proceeded to reveal Himself by other means. He began by applying to Himself the title *Son of man* (ii. 10), which, while it implied a relation to human weakness and mortality (viii. 31, ix. 9, 31, x. 33, 45, xiv. 21, 41), at the same time asserted His

authority over all matters connected with the spiritual well-being of the human race; and in this capacity he claimed the right to forgive sins upon earth (ii. 10), to regulate the observance of the Sabbath (iii. 28), and to adjudge future rewards and punishments (viii. 38 f.).

But neither friends nor enemies could find an explanation of His extraordinary powers in a name which seemed to carry no assertion of a superhuman origin. At Nazareth the wisdom and the miracles of the Son of Mary excited both surprise and resentment (vi. 2, 3). His own family and friends saw in them indications of madness which called for interference and restraint (iii. 21). Learned scribes, who had come down from Jerusalem to enquire and report, hazarded the conjecture that He was possessed by the chief of the unclean spirits (iii. 22). Among the crowd, on the other hand, whispers were heard that Jesus was a prophet, and one of the same rank as the Prophets of the canon; possibly Elijah himself, the expected forerunner of the Messiah (vi. 15, ix. 11), or the Baptist restored to life (vi. 14, 16, viii. 28). The Twelve shared the general perplexity (iv. 41). There is no indication that any one in Galilee, while the Ministry was in progress, stumbled upon the truth, or that Jesus during this period either publicly or privately declared Himself to be the Christ.

The Twelve were the first to make the discovery, but they did not make it till our Lord's work in Galilee was practically at an end. He was on His way to Caesarea Philippi, with his back turned upon Capernaum and the Lake, when He raised the question of His own personality, and received from St Peter the immediate answer "Thou art the Christ" (viii. 29). For the Apostles the moment was decisive. Henceforth the Messiahship of Jesus was a part of their faith, and the ruling idea of their lives; they knew themselves to be Christ's (ix. 41). The Lord now began to speak to them freely of His future glory (viii. 38); to Peter and the two sons of Zebedee, whom he seems to have constituted His three witnesses (v. 37, ix. 2, xiv. 33), He granted a remarkable anticipation of it, which at once confirmed and interpreted St Peter's confession. The Transfiguration proved

that Jesus was not a mere Prophet, not even Elijah, but greater than Elijah and Moses himself; it repeated the Divine assurance vouchsafed to the Baptist, that the Son of Mary was also the beloved or unique Son of God (ix. 7); it revealed Him for a moment clad in the glory of the Father, and thus rebuked the expectations which had begun to rise in minds that *savoured not the things of God*, while it encouraged hopes of a more than earthly magnificence. Raiment such as the Messiah wore at His Transfiguration *no fuller on earth could whiten* (ix. 3); all was celestial and superhuman in this vision of the glorified Christ.

Another revelation began simultaneously with that of the Lord's Messianic dignity. From the moment that St Peter confessed Him to be the Christ, Jesus set Himself to foretell His coming Passion (viii. 34); and the prediction was repeated more than once with growing clearness during the months which followed the Transfiguration (ix. 31, x. 33). But the doctrine of the Cross, while it perplexed and disquieted the Twelve, awoke no response in their hearts, and did not even penetrate their understandings (ix. 32, x. 32, 35 ff.). False ambitions were at work in them, shutting out the true conception of the Kingdom of God; and the Lord was occupied at this period in dispelling these errors, and teaching the primary laws of self-sacrifice and service (ix. 33 ff., x. 21—31, 35—45).

When at last the Lord approached Jerusalem to offer His own Sacrifice, the occasion for the reserve which He had practised in Galilee had passed away. His Messiahship was no longer a secret to be kept by the Twelve; it was openly recognised and acknowledged. At Jericho for the first time in this Gospel we hear the cry *Son of David* (x. 47). On the Mount of Olives the crowd acclaimed *the coming Kingdom of our father David* (xi. 10). In the parable of the vineyard the Lord openly represented Himself as *the Beloved Son* and *the Heir* (xii. 6, 7). His question on Ps. cx. 1, though it dealt only with the general subject of the Messianic dignity, was doubtless understood to refer to Himself. When Caiaphas asked *Art Thou the Christ?* the Lord, according to St Mark, replied without hesitation *I am,*

adding words from the Book of Daniel which placed His early claim to be the Son of Man in connexion with the vision of a Messianic Kingdom (xiv. 62). It was as Messiah that He was condemned to the Cross, for *the King of the Jews* is but 'the Christ,' expressed in terms intelligible to a Roman judge. The banter with which He was assailed on the Cross proves that His claim to be Messiah was uppermost in the thoughts of the people of Jerusalem, from the hierarchy downwards: *let the Christ, the King of Israel, come down now from the cross; He calleth Elijah...let us see whether Elijah cometh to take Him down* (xv. 32—36).

The abrupt end of St Mark's work prevents us from ascertaining his conception of the Risen Christ. We do not know whether the original work was ever brought to a completion. But if it was, a comparison of Mc. xvi. 7 with Mt. xxviii. 7 suggests that St Mark, like St Matthew, proceeded to give an account of the meeting in Galilee<sup>1</sup>. In such a narrative, if it followed the general lines of Mt. xxviii. 16—20, our Evangelist's view of the Person and work of *Jesus Christ the Son of God* would have found its natural issue. The Lord had begun His ministry in Galilee by claiming authority over the spiritual forces which are at work in man's world (Mc. ii. 10, 27); this claim was renewed in His last utterances, and extended to things in heaven (Mt. xxviii. 18). He had foretold the catholic mission of His Gospel (Mc. xiii. 10, xiv. 9); before He left the world He provided for its worldwide propagation (Mt. xxviii. 19). He had been revealed as the Beloved Son (Mc. i. 11, ix. 7, xii. 6), and had identified His work with the operation of the Divine Spirit (Mc. iii. 29, 30); He now completed the revelation of His oneness with the Father and the Spirit by the command that all His disciples should be baptized *into the Name of the Father and of the Son and of the Holy Ghost*. He had taken the Twelve to be with Him in the association of a common life (Mc. iii. 14), and now He pledged Himself to be

<sup>1</sup> Cf. Pseudo-Peter, *ev.* 12, and see Mr F. C. Burkitt's *Two Lectures on the Gospels*, p. 28 ff. See also Mc. xiv. 28.

with them and with His whole Church *until the consummation of the age.*

St Mark does not write with a dogmatic purpose. But the Person whose movements are depicted in his vivid narrative is seen to be at once man and more than man. In every act and word the Christ of the second Gospel is revealed as the supreme Son of man and the only Son of God. No Gospel brings into clearer light the perfect humanity of the Lord. He can be touched (i. 41) and grieved and angered (iii. 5); He makes as though He does not hear (v. 36) or does not see (vi. 48), He is moved with indignation (x. 14), He permits Himself to use irony (xiv. 41); He sleeps from fatigue (iv. 38); He possesses a human spirit (ii. 8), soul (xiv. 34), and body (xv. 43), with all their capacities and their sinless limitations. He turns to see who has touched Him (v. 30); He asks questions, apparently for the purpose of gaining information (viii. 5). He submits Himself absolutely to the Father's will (xiv. 36); He disclaims the right to make the final award apart from the Father's predestination (x. 40); He professes Himself ignorant, as the Son, of the Father's appointed time (xiii. 32). On the other hand He claims an authority in the sphere of man's relations to God which is coextensive with the present order (ii. 10, 28); He knows precisely what is passing in men's minds and hearts, and the circumstances of their lives (ii. 5, 8, viii. 17, ix. 3 f., xii. 15, 44); He foresees and foretells the future, whether His own (viii. 31, 38) or that of individual men (x. 39, xiv. 27) and communities (xiii. 1 ff.); in the most trying situations He manifests absolute wisdom and self-adaptation; even in His death He extorts from a Roman centurion the acknowledgement that He was a supernatural person (xv. 39). The centurion's words express the conviction with which the student of St Mark rises from his examination of the Gospel; *truly this man was Son of God.* But for those who have before them the whole record of that supreme human life they bear a meaning of which the Roman could not have dreamt; we realise that the Sonship of Jesus was unique and essential. It was not a servant who was sent in the last

resort to receive the fruits of the Divine Vineyard, but the only Son, Who is the Heir of God (xii. 2—7).

Limited as St Mark's work is to recollections of the Lord's Ministry and Passion, it is full of glimpses into His future relations to the world. *I came not to call the righteous but sinners* (ii. 17); *the Son of man...came...to give His life a ransom for many* (x. 45); *My blood of the covenant...is shed for many* (xiv. 24); *every one shall be salted with fire* (ix. 49); *the Bridegroom shall be taken away* (ii. 20); *the Son of man...shall come in the glory of His Father* (viii. 38); *the Gospel must first be preached to all the nations* (xiii. 10); *if any man willetteth to come after me let him deny himself* (viii. 34); *have salt in yourselves, and be at peace one with another* (ix. 50); *have faith in GOD...pray...believe...forgive* (xi. 23 ff.); *what I say unto you I say unto all, Watch* (xiii. 37). These and similar sayings contain an almost complete outline of Christian soteriology and eschatology, and assert the principles of the new life which the Lord taught and exemplified and which His Spirit was to produce in the life of the future Church.

## X.

### AUTHORITIES FOR THE TEXT.

I. The following Uncial MSS. contain the Greek text of St Mark in part or in whole.

- N. Cod. Sinaiticus (iv.). Ed. Tischendorf, 1862. Ends at xvi. 8 (see § xi.).
- A. Cod. Alexandrinus (v.). Ed. E. M. Thompson, 1879.
- B. Cod. Vaticanus, 1209 (iv.). Ed. Cozza-Luzi, 1889. Ends at xvi. 8 (see § xi.).
- C. Cod. Ephraemi (v.). Ed. Tischendorf, 1843. Contains Mc. i. 17—vi. 31, viii. 5—xii. 29, xiii. 19—xvi. 20.
- D. Cod. Bezae (vi.). Ed. F. H. A. Scrivener, 1864; reproduced in heliogravure by the Camb. Univ. Press<sup>1</sup>, 1899. Contains Mc., except xvi. 15—20, which is in a later hand.
- E. Cod. Basiliensis (viii.).
- F. Cod. Boreelianus (ix.). Contains Mc. i. 1—41, ii. 8—23, iii. 5—xi. 6, xi. 27—xiv. 54, xv. 6—39, xvi. 19—20.
- G. Cod. Seidelianus I. (ix. or x.). Contains Mc. i. 13—xiv. 18, xiv. 25—xvi. 20.
- H. Cod. Seidelianus II. (ix. or x.). Contains Mc. i. 1—31, ii. 4—xv. 43, xvi. 14—20.
- I. Fragm. Petropolitanum (v.). Ed. Tischendorf, *mon. sacr. ined., nov. coll. i.*, 1855. Contains Mc. ix. 14—22, xiv. 58—70.
- K. Cod. Cyprus (ix.).
- L. Cod. Regius (viii.). Ed. Tischendorf, *mon. sacr. ined.*, 1846. Contains Mc. i. 1—x. 15, x. 30—xv. 1, xv. 20—xvi. 20; the shorter ending precedes xvi. 9 (see § xi.).
- M. Cod. Campianus (ix.).

<sup>1</sup> A useful collation of D with Gebhardt's text is printed in Nestle's *N.T. Gr. supplementum* (Lips., 1896).

- N. Cod. Purpureus (vi.). Ed. Tischendorf, *mon. sacr. ined.*, 1846; an edition including the new St Petersburg fragments has been published by the Rev. H. S. Cronin in *Texts and Studies*, v. 4 (Cambridge, 1899). Contains v. 20—vii. 4, vii. 20—viii. 32, ix. 1—x. 43, xi. 7—xii. 19, xiv. 25—xv. 23, xv. 33—42.
- P. Cod. Guelpherbytanus (vi.). Ed. Tischendorf, *mon. sacr. ined., nov. coll. vi.*, 1869. Contains i. 2—11, iii. 5—17, xiv. 13—24, 48—61, xv. 12—37.
- S. Cod. Vaticanus 354 (x.).
- T<sup>d</sup>. Cod. Borgianus (vii.). Contains Mc. i. 3—8, xii. 35—37.
- U. Cod. Nanianus (ix. or x.).
- V. Cod. Moscuensis (ix.).
- W<sup>b</sup>. Fragm. Neapolitanum (viii. or ix.). Contains Mc. xiii. 21—xiv. 67.
- W<sup>c</sup>. Fragm. Sangallense (ix.). Contains Mc. ii. 8—16.
- W<sup>d</sup>. Fragm. Cantabrigiense (ix.). Contains Mc. vii. 3—4, 6—8, 30—viii. 16, ix. 2, 7—9. Ed. J. R. Harris (in an Appendix to his *Diatessaron of Tatian*, 1890).
- W<sup>f</sup>. Fragm. Oxoniense aer. Chr. (ix.). Contains Mc. v. 16—21, 22—28, 29—35, 35—40.
- W<sup>g</sup>. Fragm. Londiniense (ix.). Contains Mc. i. 1—42, ii. 21—v. 1, v. 29—vi. 22, x. 50—xi. 13.
- W<sup>h</sup>. Fragm. Oxoniense Bodl. (ix.). Contains Mc. iii. 15—32, v. 16—31.
- W<sup>l</sup>. Fragm. Parisiense I. (vii.). Contains Mc. xiii. 34—xiv. 29.
- W<sup>m</sup>. Fragm. Parisiense II. (vii. or viii.). Contains Mc. i. 27—41.
- W<sup>o</sup>. Fragm. Mediolanense (ix.). Contains Mc. i. 12—24, ii. 26—iii. 10.
- X. Cod. Monacensis (x.). Contains Mc. vi. 47—xvi. 20; many verses in xiv.—xvi. are defective.
- F. Cod. Oxoniensis (ix. or x.). Contains Mc. i. 1—iii. 34, vi. 21—xvi. 20.
- A. Cod. Sangallensis (ix. or x.). Ed. Rettig, 1836. On the text of this ms. in Mc. see WH., *Intr.* §§ 209, 225, 229, 307, 352; Nestle, *Textual Criticism of the N.T.*, p. 72.
- O<sup>b</sup>. Fragm. Petropolitanum I. (vii.). Contains Mc. iv. 24—35, v. 14—23.
- O<sup>f</sup>. Fragm. Porfirianum (vi.). Contains Mc. i. 34—ii. 12, with some *lacunae*.
- II. Cod. Petropolitanus (ix.). Contains Mc., except xvi. 18—20, which is in a later hand.

- Σ. Cod. Rossanensis (vi.). Ed. Gebhardt and Harnack, 1883.  
Contains Mc., except xvi. 14—20.
- Φ. Cod. Beratinus (vi.). Ed. Batiffol, 1886. Contains Mc. i. 1—xiv. 62.
- Ψ. Cod. Athous Laurae (viii. or ix.). Contains Mc. ix. 5—xvi. 20; the shorter ending precedes xvi. 9<sup>1</sup>.
- Ω. Cod. Athous Dionysii (viii. or ix.).
- β. Cod. Athous Andreeae (ix. or x.). Contains Mc. i. 1—v. 40, vi. 18—viii. 35, ix. 19—xvi. 20.
- γ<sup>10</sup>. Fragm. Sinaiticum (v.). Ed. J. R. Harris, *Biblical Fragments*, 1890. Contains Mc. i. 11—22, ii. 21—iii. 3, iii. 27—iv. 4, v. 9—20.
- γ<sup>11</sup>. Fragm. Sinaiticum (vi.). Ed. J. R. Harris, *op. cit.* Contains Mc. xii. 32—37.
- γ<sup>12</sup>. Fragm. Sinaiticum (vii.). Ed. J. R. Harris, *op. cit.*, and in Mrs Lewis's *Syriac MSS.*, p. 103. Contains Mc. xiv. 29—45, xv. 27—xvi. 10; the shorter ending precedes xvi. 9.
- ρ. Fragm. Parisiense (viii.). Ed. Amélineau, ap. *Notices et Extraits*, xxxiv. ii. pp. 370, 402 ff. Contains Mc. xvi. 6—18; the shorter ending precedes xvi. 9<sup>2</sup>.
- ϟ. Fragm. Oxyrhynchitanum (v. or vi.). Ed. Grenfell and Hunt, *Oxyrhynchus papyri*, i., 1898. Contains Mc. x. 50 f., xi. 11 f.

For the Freer ms. of the Four Gospels see p. 404.

2. The cursive Greek mss. which contain this Gospel are far too numerous to be recited here. According to Gregory (*Prolegomena* (1884—94), pp. 616, 717, 1310, the known cursive mss. of the Gospels are 1287, besides 953 lectionaries; Mr Miller (Scrivener's *Introduction* (1894), i. p. 283, 396\* f.) enumerates 1326 Gospels and 980 lectionaries. The following list is limited to those which are frequently cited in the *apparatus*.

- i. Basle, Univ. Libr. (x.). Ed. K. Lake in *Texts and Studies*, vii. 3, 1902.
- <sup>3</sup> 13. Paris, Nat. Libr. (xiii.); wants Mc. i. 20—45.
28. Paris, Nat. Libr. (xi.).
33. Paris, Nat. Libr. (ix. or x.); wants Mc. ix. 31—xi. 11, xiii. 11—xiv. 59.
59. Cambridge, Gonville and Caius Coll. (xii.); cf. J. R. Harris, *Origin of the Leicester Codex*.

<sup>1</sup> On the text of this Codex in Mc. see *J. Th. St.*, i. p. 290 ff., and *Studia Biblica*, v. 2, pp. 97—104; the latter gives also a complete transcript of the Marcan fragment (pp. 105—122).

<sup>2</sup> For this ms. Nestle proposes the

symbol T<sup>1</sup> (*Textual Criticism of the N. T.*, pp. 70, 74).

<sup>3</sup> For these mss. see Dr T. K. Abbott, *Collation of four important MSS.*, 1877; cf. J. R. Harris, *On the origin of the Ferrar Group*, 1893.

66. Cambridge, Trin. Coll. (x. or xiii.).
- <sup>3</sup>69. Leicester, Libr. of Town Council (xv.); cf. J. R. Harris, *op. cit.*
109. London, Brit. Mus. (xiv.).
118. Oxford, Bodl. Libr. (xiii.).
- <sup>3</sup>124. Vienna, Imp. Libr. (xii.).
131. Rome, Vat. Libr. (xiv. or xv.).
157. Rome, Vat. Libr. (xii.).
209. Venice, S. Mark's Libr. (xiv. and xv.).
238. Moscow, Libr. of the Holy Synod (xi.).
242. Moscow, Libr. of the Holy Synod (xii.).
282. Paris, Nat. Libr. (xii.).
299. Paris, Nat. Libr. (x. or xi.).
- <sup>3</sup>346. Milan, Ambr. Libr. (x. or xi.).
435. Leyden, Univ. Libr. (x.).
- 482 (=p<sup>sc</sup>, 570 Miller). London, Brit. Mus. (xiii.).
- 556 (=543 Greg.). Burdett-Coutts collection (xii.). See Scrivener, *Adversaria crit. sacr.*, p. 1 ff.
- 565 (=2<sup>pe</sup> Tisch., =81 WH., =473 Miller). St Petersburg, Imp. Libr. (ix. or x.). Edited by Belsheim, 1885; corrections of his text are supplied in an appendix to Mr Cronin's edition of cod. N (*Texts and Studies*, v. 4, p. 106 ff.).
- 569 (7<sup>pe</sup> Tisch., =475 Scriv.), St Petersburg, Imp. Libr. (xi.).
- 604 (=700 Greg.), London, Brit. Mus. (xi.). Collation published by H. C. Hoskier, 1890.
- 736 (=718 Greg.), Cambridge, in the possession of the editor.
1071. Athos, Laur. 104 A (xii.). See the Rev. K. Lake's description and collation in *Studia Biblica*, v. 2, p. 132 ff.

3. The ancient versions of St Mark used in this edition are the Latin, Syriac, Armenian, Egyptian, Gothic, and Ethiopic.

### I. Latin (latt).

#### (a) Old Latin (lat<sup>vt</sup>).

The following mss. are cited as offering a more or less purely pre-Hieronymian text.

- a. Cod. Vercellensis (iv.). Ed. Bianchini, *evang. quadr.*, 1749; Belsheim, 1894. Wants Mc. i. 22—34, iv. 17—25, xv. 15—xvi. 20; xvi. 7—20 is supplied by a later hand.
- b. Cod. Veronensis (v.). Ed. Bianchini, *op. cit.* Wants Mc. xiii. 9—19, xiii. 24—xvi. 20.

## AUTHORITIES FOR THE TEXT.

- c. Cod. Colbertinus (xii.). Ed. Sabatier, 1751; Belsheim, 1888.
- d. Cod. Bezae (vi.). The Latin version of Cod. D (*q. v.*).
- e. Cod. Palatinus (v.). Ed. Tischendorf, 1847. Contains Mc. i. 20—iv. 8, iv. 19—vi. 9, xii. 37—40, xiii. 2—3, 24—27, 33—36.
- f. Cod. Brixianus (vi.). Ed. Bianchini, *op. cit.*; Wordsworth and White in the Oxford Vulgate, 1891. Wants Mc. xii. 5—xiii. 32, xiv. 53—62, xiv. 70—xvi. 20.
- ff. (= ff<sup>2</sup>, Tisch. Greg. Scriv.). Cod. Corbeiensis II. (vi.). Ed. Belsheim, 1887. Wants a few verses in Mc. vi., xvi.
- g. (= g<sup>1</sup>, Tisch. Greg. Scriv.). Cod. Sangermanensis I. (viii.). Collated by Wordsworth and White, who cite it in Mc. as G.
- i. Cod. Vindobonensis (vi. or vii.). Ed. Belsheim, 1885. Wants i. 1—ii. 16, iii. 29—iv. 3, x. 2—32, xiv. 37—xv. 32, xv. 40—xvi. 20.
- k. Cod. Bobiensis (iv. or v.). Ed. Wordsworth Sanday and White, *O. L. Bibl. texts* ii., 1886. Contains viii. 8—11, 14—16, 19—xvi. 8, and the shorter ending (see § xi.).
- l. Cod. Vratislaviensis (vii.). Ed. H. F. Haase, 1865—6.
- n. Cod. Sangallensis I. (v.). Ed. Wordsworth Sanday and White, *op. cit.* Contains vii. 13—31, viii. 32—ix. 10, xiii. 2—20, xv. 22—xvi. 13.
- o. Cod. Sangallensis II. (vii.). Ed. Wordsworth Sanday and White, *op. cit.* Contains xvi. 14—20.
- q. Cod. Monacensis (vii.). Ed. White, *O. L. Bibl. texts* iii., 1888. Wants i. 7—22, xv. 5—36.
- r. Cod. Dublinensis (vi. or vii.). Ed. T. K. Abbott, *ev. versio antehier.*, 1884. Wants xiv. 58—xv. 8, xv. 32—xvi. 20; many lacunae.
- t. Cod. Bernensis (v. or vi.). Ed. Wordsworth, *O. L. Bibl. texts* ii., 1886. Contains i. 2—23, ii. 22—27, iii. 11—18.
- (β) Vulgate (lat<sup>vg</sup>). Ed. Wordsworth and White.

## II. Syriac (syrr).

- (a) Old Syriac (syrr<sup>sin cu</sup>).

This version exists in two mss., which appear to represent different recensions.

Cod. Sinaiticus (iv. or v.). Ed. Bensly Harris and Burkitt, 1894. Wants Mc. i. 1—11, i. 44—ii. 20, iv. 19—40, v. 27—vi. 4; ends at xvi. 8.

Cod. Curetonianus (v.). Ed. Cureton, 1858; a fresh edition is in progress under the care of F. C. Burkitt (*Texts and Studies*). Contains only xvi. 17—20.

- (β) Vulgate Syriac or Peshitta (*syr<sup>pesh</sup>*). Ed. Leusden and Schaaf, 1717; P. E. Pusey and G. H. Gwilliam, 1901.
- (γ) Harclean (*syr<sup>hcl</sup>*). Ed. White, 1778.
- (δ) Palestinian (*syr<sup>hier</sup>*). Ed. Lagarde, 1892; Mrs Lewis and Mrs Gibson, 1899. Contains Mc. i. 1—11, 35—44, ii. 1—12, 14—17, 23—iii. 5, v. 24—34, vi. 1—5, 14—30, vii. 24—37, viii. 27—31, 34—39, ix. 16—30, 32—40, x. 32—45, xi. 22—25, xii. 28—44, xv. 16—32, 43—xvi. 20.

### III. Armenian (arm).

The only critical edition of the Armenian text is that of Zohrab (Venice, 1805), whose margin gives variants, without however naming the codices from which they are taken. Uscan's edition (Amsterdam, 1666) is valueless to the critic, as having been freely corrected by the Latin Vulgate. The most recent study of the Armenian version is the article by Mr F. C. Conybeare in Hastings' *Dict. of the Bible* (1898). Some interesting facts about Uscan's edition are given by Simon (*Hist. Crit. des Versions*, 1690, pp. 196 ff.)<sup>1</sup>.

### IV. Egyptian (aegg).

- (α) Memphitic or Bohairic (me). Ed. D. Wilkins, 1717. A new edition by Mr G. Horner with a translation and copious *apparatus criticus* has been issued by the Clarendon Press (1898).
- (β) Thebaic or Sahidic (the). A list of the mss. is printed in G. Zoega's *Catalogus codd. Copticorum* (Romae, 1810). The known fragments of St Mark (Gregory, iii. p. 864) are i. 36—38, i. 41—44, ii. 2—4, ii. 7—9, ii. 12—ix. 16,

<sup>1</sup> This account of the Armenian version has been supplied by Dr J. Armitage Robinson. He adds: "According to the Armenian historians this version was translated from Syriac and afterwards subjected to a careful revision by the aid of Greek mss. Internal evidence affords striking confirmation of this view (see *Euthaliana*, Texts and Studies III. ii. pp. 72 ff.). Two conspicuous elements of the version are (1) the Old Syriac, as now represented for us in St Mark by the Sinai palimpsest, and (2) the text represented by the Greek

cursive known as the Ferrar group; see e.g. (1) viii. 4; (2) iii. 18, iv. 24, viii. 14, xi. 9. The relation of the Ferrar group itself to the Syriac is a vexed question. Striking correspondences are also to be noted with 1—28—209, with 2<sup>pe</sup>, and with 604; many too with D and with k; some, both in this Gospel and in the others, with the first hand of N. noteworthy is xiv. 25 οὐ μὴ προσθῶ πεῖν D (2<sup>pe</sup>) a f arm: it is curious that for a Semitic idiom like this no Syriac attestation is forthcoming."

ix. 19—xiv. 26, xiv. 34—xv. 41, xvi. 20—“about three quarters of [the] Gospel” (Scrivener-Miller, ii. p. 131).

A full account of these versions is given by Mr Forbes Robinson in Hastings’ *Dictionary* (i. 668 ff.).

#### V. Gothic (go).

Ed. Gabelentz and Löbe, 1836; Massmann, *Ulfilas*, 1857; Stamm-Heyne, *Ulfilas*, 1878; Skeat, *Gospel of St Mark in Gothic*, 1882. The extant fragments of Mark contain i. 1—vi. 30, vi. 53—xii. 38, xiii. 16—29, xiv. 4—16, xiv. 41—xvi. 12.

#### VI. Ethiopic (aeth).

Ed. T. P. Platt, 1830 (but cf. Gregory, *prolegg.*, p. 899 f.). See *Ethiopic Version*, in Hastings, i. 791 f.

## XI.

### ALTERNATIVE ENDINGS OF THE GOSPEL<sup>1</sup>.

In some of our authorities the Gospel according to St Mark ends with the words *καὶ οὐδενὶ οὐδὲν εἶπαν, ἐφοβοῦντο γάρ* (xvi. 8). Other MSS. and Versions add the twelve verses which follow in the Received Text, whilst others again, usually as an alternative, present a short ending which consists of only two sentences, and is wholly independent of the printed supplement.

I. Eusebius of Caesarea in his book of *Questions and Solutions concerning the Passion and Resurrection of the Saviour*<sup>2</sup> represents an apologist<sup>3</sup> as seeking to remove a supposed inconsistency in the Gospels by throwing doubt upon the genuineness of Mc. xvi. 9 ff.

*Quaest. ad Marin. ap. Mai nov. patr. bibl. iv. p. 255 f. δ μὲν γὰρ τὴν τοῦτο φάσκουσαν περικοπὴν ἀθετῶν εἴποι ἀν μῆ ἐν ἄπασιν αὐτὴν φέρεσθαι τοῖς ἀντιγράφοις τοῦ κατὰ Μᾶρκον εὐαγγελίου· τὰ γοῦν ἀκριβῆ τῶν ἀντιγράφων τὸ τέλος περιγράφει...ἐν τοῖς λόγοις...‘ἐφοβοῦντο γάρ.’ ἐν τούτῳ γάρ σχεδὸν ἐν ἄπασι τοῖς ἀντιγράφοις τοῦ κατὰ Μᾶρκον εὐαγγελίου περιγέγραπται τὸ τέλος, τὰ δὲ ἔξῆς σπανίως ἐν τισιν ἀλλ’ οὐκ ἐν πᾶσι φερόμενα περιττὰ ἀν εἴη. For a full discussion of this passage see WH., *Notes*, p. 30 f. The textual statement for which Eusebius appears to make himself responsible is reproduced by Jerome (*ad Hesib. 3* “*Marci testimonium...in raris fertur evangeliis, omnibus Graeciae libris paene hoc capitulum non habentibus*”), and by Victor of Antioch (in Mc. xvi. 1 ἐπειδὴ δὲ ἐν τισι τῶν ἀντιγράφων πρόσκειται...‘ἀναστὰς δέ κτλ.’...ἐροῦμεν ως δυνατὸν ἦν εἰπεῖν ὅτι νενόθενται τὸ παρὰ Μᾶρκῷ τελευταῖον ἐν τισι φερόμενον. Victor’s commentary ends accordingly with xvi. 8, for the note on xvi. 9 and the attempt to reestablish the authority of *vv. 9—20* which follow in Cramer are clearly due to other sources (WH., *Notes*, p. 35).*

<sup>1</sup> On the subject of this chapter see now Zahn, *Einleitung*, ii. p. 227 ff. (Leipzig, 1899); a useful summary of the literature is given by Salmon in Hastings, *D. B.* iii. p. 253.

<sup>2</sup> On this work see Bp Lightfoot’s art. *Eusebius* in *D. C. B.* (ii. p. 338 f.).

<sup>3</sup> Dean Burgon (*Last twelve verses*,

p. 47) suspected that Eusebius met “with the suggestion in some older writer (in Origen probably).” Dr Hort (*Notes*, p. 32) agrees with him, and points out that in this case “the testimony as to MSS. gains in importance by being carried back to a much earlier date and a much higher authority.”

The two great codices which have come down to us from the fourth century corroborate this evidence. Both B and Σ bring the Gospel to an end at *έφοβοῦντο γάρ*, as “the accurate copies” cited by the apologist in Eusebius were wont to do. In both the words are followed by the subscription; but in B the scribe has left a column blank after κατὰ μάρκον, which has been taken to mean that he was acquainted with a text of St Mark which did not end at v. 8, although his own copy failed him at that point.

The Gospel ends thus in the two MSS.:

Cod. B.

ΣΤΑΣΙC ΚΑΙ ΟΥΔΕΝΙ ΟΥ  
ΔΕΝ ΕΙΤΠΟΝ ΕΦΟΒΟΥΝ  
ΤΟ ΓΑΡ:  
> ΚΑΤΑ >  
> ΜΑΡΚΟΝ >

Cod. Σ.

ΣΤΑΣΙC ΚΑΙ ΟΥ >  
ΔΕΝΙ ΟΥΔΕΝ ΕΙ >  
ΠΟΝ ΕΦΟΒΟΥΝ  
ΤΟ ΓΑΡ<sup>3</sup> ::  
> ΕΓΑΓΓΕ >  
> λιον >  
> ΚΑΤΑ ΜΑΡΚΟΝ >

Witness of a similar kind is borne by the cursive MS. 22, which places τέλος after both v. 8 and v. 20, and after the first τέλος has the note ἐν τισι τῶν ἀντιγράφων ἔως ὥδε πληροῦται ὁ εὐαγγελιστής, ἐν πολλοῖς δὲ καὶ ταῦτα φέρεται. In like manner “some of the more ancient Armenian MSS. have εὐαγγέλιον κατὰ Μάρκον after both v. 8 and v. 20” (WH., *Notes, l.c.*); a few Ethiopic MSS. appear to omit everything after v. 8 (Sanday, *Appendices ad N. T.*, p. 195). To this must now be added the testimony of the Sinaitic Syriac, which ends the Gospel at *έφοβοῦντο γάρ*, followed immediately by the subscription and the opening of St Luke. Other documentary evidence of a less direct character will come into view as we proceed.

2. Of the two endings found in MSS. and versions which do not stop short at v. 8, it will be convenient to discuss the shorter first. It occurs in four uncial MSS. whose testimony must be given in full.

Cod. L.

εφοβουν  
το γαρ<sup>3</sup>.  
^ ^ ^ ^ ^ ^ ^  
φερετε που  
και ταυτα  
Παντα δε τα παρη  
γρελμενα τοις  
περι τον πετρον  
συντομως εζη  
γριλαν<sup>1</sup> μετα  
δε ταυτα και αυτος  
ο ισ, απο ανατολης  
και αχρι δυσεως  
εζαπεστιλεν δι  
αυτων το iερον  
και αφθαρτον κη  
ρυγμα<sup>2</sup> της αιω  
νιογ<sup>3</sup> σωτηριας  
εστην δε και  
ταυτα φερο  
μενα μετα το  
εφοβουντο  
γαρ.  
Αναστας δε πρωι  
πρωτη σαββατου  
κτλ... σημειων.  
αμην.

κτα μαρκον

Cod. 7<sup>12</sup>.

. . . . εφο  
[ΒΟΥΝΤΟ Γ]αρ > > >  
> > >  
> > >  
[εγαγγελ]ιον  
[κατα μα]ρκον  
[ΠΑΝΤΑ ΔΕ ΤΑ ΠΑ  
ΡΗΓΓΕΛΜΕΝΑ ΤΟΙΣ  
ΠΕΡΙ ΤΟΝ ΠΕΤΡΟΝ  
ΣΥΝΤΟΜΩΣ ΕΖΗΓ  
ΓΕΙΛΑΝ ΜΕΤΑ ΔΕ]<sup>1</sup>  
ΤΑΥΤΑ ΚΑΙ ΑΥΤΟΣ  
ΙΣ ΑΠΟ ΑΝΑΤΟΛΗΣ  
ΑΧΡΙ ΔΥΣΕΩΣ ΕΞΑ  
ΠΕΣΤΕΙΛΕΝ ΔΙ ΑΥ  
ΤΩΝ ΤΟ ΙΕΡΟΝ ΚΑΙ  
ΑΦΘΑΡΤΟΝ ΚΗΡΥ  
ΓΜΑ ΤΗΣ ΑΙΩΝΙΟΥ  
ΣΩΤΗΡΙΑΣ ΑΜΗΝ  
ΕΣΤΙΝ ΔΕ ΚΑΙ ΤΑΥΤΑ  
ΦΕΡΟΜΕΝΑ ΜΕΤΑ  
ΤΟ ΕΦΟΒΟΥΝΤΟ ΓΑΡ  
ΑΝΑΣΤΑΣ ΔΕ ΠΡΩΪ  
ΠΡΩΤΗ ΣΑΒΒΑΤΟΥ  
ΕΦΑΝΗ ΠΡΩΤΟΝ  
ΜΑΡΙΑ ΤΗ ΜΑΓΔΑ  
ΛΗΝΗ ΠΑΡ ΗС  
ΕΚΒΕΒΛΗΚΕΙ ΕΠΤΑ  
ΔΔΙΜΟΝΙΑ ΕΚΕΙΝΗ  
ΠΟΡΕΥΘ[ΕΙΑ] ΑΠΗΓ  
ΓΕΙΛΕΝ [ΤΟΙΣ] ΜΕ  
(cetera desiderantur)

<sup>1</sup> I owe this restoration (*πάντα δε... μετα δε*) to Mr Burkitt, who points out that, since 7<sup>12</sup> has 25 lines to the column, 5 lines are lost before *ταυτα και*

*αυτος*. He adds, however, that as the note *εστιν κτλ.* is “in a smaller character” (Syriac MSS., p. 104), *φέρεται που και ταυτα* may have stood before *πάντα*.

Cod. P.

Cod. Ψ.

εφοβούντο  
Γάρ.  
^ ^ ^ ^ ^  
[Πάντα] Δε τα  
[Πάρη] Γγελμένα  
τοις περι τον  
[Πέτρον] σύν  
τομως εζηγ  
γείλαν.  
Μετα δε τάγτα  
και αυτος ο Ἰη  
εφανη αυτοις  
απ ανατολης  
τογ ηλιογ και αχρι  
δγσεως εζεπε  
στειλεν δι αγ  
των το ιερον  
και αφθαρτον  
κηρυγμα της  
διωνιογ σωτη  
ριας αμην.  
^ ^ ^ ^ ^  
ειχεν Γαρ αυτας  
τρομος και εκ  
στασις και ογ  
δενι ογδεν ει  
πον εφοβογ  
το Γαρ.  
Αναστας δε...πιω[σιν]  
(cetera desiderantur)

εφοβούντο Γαρ: †  
Πάντα δε τα παρηγγελμένα τοις περι τον  
πέτρον σύντομως. εζηγγειλαν: Μετα  
Δε ταγτα. και αυτος το εφανη απο ανατολης  
και μεχρι δγσεως εζαπεστειλεν δι αυτων  
το ιερον και αφθαρτον κηρυγμα της αιω  
νιου σωτηριας αμην:  
εετιν και ταγτα φερομένα  
μετα το εφοβούντο Γαρ.  
Αναστας δε κτλ. . . σημειων. αμην.  
εγαγγελιον κατα μαρκον

It is obvious that the archetype of L Τ<sup>12</sup> P ended at ἐφοβούντο γάρ, and that the scribes on their own responsibility have added two endings with which they had met in other MSS., preferring apparently the shorter one, since it is in each case placed first. But each codex has its own way of dealing with the supplementary matter. In Τ<sup>12</sup> the subscription εναγγελιον κατὰ Μᾶρκον has been retained after v. 8, where it stood in the archetype; in L,

and possibly also in Τ<sup>12</sup>, each ending is preceded by a brief note of origin; in Ρ there are no such notes, but the scribe, after writing the shorter ending, returns to v. 8 and annexes the longer ending to it. Cod. Ψ, which stands alone in placing the shorter ending immediately after ἐφοβοῦντο γάρ, without either break or note<sup>1</sup>, seems to have descended from an archetype which had the shorter ending only, though the scribe of Ψ proceeds to give the longer with the usual prefatory note. Since the formula ἔστιν δὲ καὶ ταῦτα φερόμενα μετὰ τὸ ‘έφ. γάρ’ is common to L Ψ Τ<sup>12</sup>, we must suppose that these MSS., notwithstanding other features which attest independence, drew at this point from the same relatively early archetype.

Besides these uncials authorities the shorter ending finds a place in the margin of the cursive MS. 274 and of the Harclean Syriac, in the margin of two important MSS. of the Bohairic or Memphitic version<sup>2</sup>, and in several MSS. of the Ethiopic, where it stands in the text between v. 8 and v. 9 without note or break<sup>3</sup>. One authority which is still extant gives the shorter ending only—the O.L. MS. k, in which Mc. ends: “omnia autem quaecumque pracepta erant et qui cum puerō (sic) erant | breviter exposuerunt posthaec | et ipse hī adparuit · et ab orientē · usque · usque in orientem · misit | per illos · sanctam · et incorruptam · [praedicationem<sup>4</sup>] | salutis aeternae · amen.”

As the shorter ending has not been printed with the text, it may be convenient to give it here with an *apparatus*.

πάντα δὲ τὰ παρηγγελμένα τοῖς περὶ τὸν Πέτρον συντόμως ἐξήγγειλαν.  
μετὰ δὲ ταῦτα καὶ αὐτὸς ὁ Ἰησοῦς ἐφάνη αὐτοῖς, καὶ ἀπὸ ἀνατολῆς καὶ  
ἄχρι δύσεως ἐξαπέστειλεν δι' αὐτῶν τὸ ἱερὸν καὶ ἄφθαρτον κήρυγμα τῆς  
αἰώνιου σωτηρίας.

παντα...μετα δέ] hiat Τ | om καὶ αυτος me<sup>codd (mg)</sup> aeth<sup>codd</sup> | o Ιησους  
L] om o Ψ Τ o κυριος I. aeth<sup>codd</sup> | εφανη αυτοις (Ρ) me<sup>codd (mg)</sup> aeth<sup>codd</sup> ]

<sup>1</sup> Gregory, *prolegg.*, p. 445: “nihil adnotacionis ante πάντα δέ noster interponit, quod antiquorem sibi vindicare fontem videretur, nisi fortasse vocabula ἐφάνη, μέχρι, ἀμήν seriorem textus conformatioinem testarentur.”

<sup>2</sup> “In A, at the end of v. 8, in the break, as if referring to the last twelve verses, is a gloss [in Arabic] ‘this is the

chapter expelled in the Greek’” (Oxford edition, p. 480).

<sup>3</sup> So WH<sup>2</sup>, *Notes*, pp. 38, 44; see however Sanday, *App.*, p. 195.

<sup>4</sup> “Ha” which stands here in the margin refers, as Dr Sanday points out, to *praedicationis* (i.e. *praedicationem*) which the corrector has written at the foot of the page.

om L 274<sup>mg</sup> syr<sup>hel (mg)</sup> om αυτοις Ψ k | και 2<sup>o</sup> k [me<sup>codd (mg)</sup>] aeth<sup>codd</sup>  
 om rell [απο] απ P | απο ανατολης (ανατολων 274<sup>mg</sup> cf. me<sup>codd (mg)</sup>)  
 + του ηλιου P me<sup>codd (mg)</sup> aeth<sup>codd</sup> | om και 3<sup>o</sup> 7 k | αχρι] μεχρι Ψ | δυ-  
 σεως] orientem k | εξεπεστ. P | σωτηριας] + αμην Ψ 7 P 274<sup>mg</sup> k syr<sup>hel (mg)</sup>  
 me<sup>codd A (mg)</sup> aeth<sup>codd</sup>.

For cod. L see the facsimile in Burgeson, *Last twelve verses*, p. 112, and Tischendorf, *mon. sacr. ined.*, 1846; for cod. Ψ, Gregory, *Prolegg.* ii. p. 445, Lake, *Texts from Mt Athos*, p. 122; for cod. 7<sup>12</sup>, Mrs Lewis, *Catal. of Syriac MSS. on Mt Sinai*, p. 103 f.; for cod. P, Amélineau, *Notices et extraits* XXXIV. ii. p. 402 ff.; for cod. 274, Tischendorf, *N. T. Gr.<sup>8</sup>* i. p. 404; for syr<sup>hel</sup>, White's edition, i. p. 258; for me, Sanday, *Appendices ad N. T.*, p. 187, and *Coptic Version of the N. T.*, Oxf., 1898, i. p. 480 ff.; for aeth, Sanday, *op. cit.*, p. 195; k is printed in full in *O. L. Bibl. Texts*, ii. p. 23.

As to the origin of this ending there can be little doubt. It has been written by some one whose copy of the Gospel ended at ἐφοβούντο γάρ, and who desired to soften the harshness of so abrupt a conclusion, and at the same time to remove the impression which it leaves of a failure on the part of Mary of Magdala and her friends to deliver the message with which they had been charged. Terrified as they were, he adds, they recovered themselves sufficiently to report to Peter the substance of the Angel's words. After this the Lord Himself appeared to the Apostles and gave them their orders to carry the Gospel from East to West; and these orders, with His assistance, were loyally fulfilled.

The style of this little paragraph, as Dr Hort<sup>1</sup> observes, bears some resemblance to that of St Luke's prologue, but it is certainly as little as possible in harmony with the manner of St Mark. Perhaps it may without rashness be attributed to a Roman hand<sup>2</sup>; a Western origin is suggested by the pointed references to the westward course of the Apostolic preaching.

One or two verbal similarities may suggest Clement, cf. 1 Cor. 6 κήρυξ γενόμενος ἐν τῇ ἀνατολῇ καὶ ἐν τῇ δύσει, and with ιερὸν καὶ ἄφθαρτον cf. ib. 33 ιεραῖς καὶ ἀμώμοις. On the other hand some of the more striking words are characteristic of Ps.-Clement 2 Cor. (e.g. συντόμως, ἔξαποστέλλειν, ἄφθαρτος).

<sup>1</sup> WH., *Intr.*, p. 298 f.

<sup>2</sup> Nestle (in Hastings, *D. B.*, iii. p. 13) suggests Egypt as its birth-place, and Dobschütz (*Texte u. Unters.* xi. 1. p. 73 f.)

conjectures that it is taken from the Κήρυγμα Πέτρου, which, as he contends, was written as an appendix to Mc.

The place it occupies in *k* and its occurrence in other versions, and in the four uncials where it is given with considerable variations of text and setting, point to an early date, and there is nothing either in the vocabulary or the manner to forbid this view. On the other hand it must always have had a very limited acceptance, for no trace of it has been found in any Greek or Latin Christian writing. It was overshadowed almost from the first by the superior merits of the longer ending.

3. The longer ending follows *v.* 8 without break in every known Greek ms. except the two which end at ἐφοβοῦντο γάρ (¶ B) and the four which append both endings as partially attested alternatives (L Ψ ¶<sup>12</sup> P). It is found or at one time occupied a place without alternative in the uncial mss. AC(D)EFGHKM(N<sup>1</sup>) S U V X Γ Δ(ΠΣ)Ω, in all cursive mss., in the Old Latin mss. c ff g l n o q, in the Curetonian form of the Old Syriac, in the Memphitic and Gothic. Moreover, it appears as the recognised ending of St Mark in the earliest Christian writings which bear definite traces of the influence of the second Gospel. There are indications of its use in Hermas, and Justin appears to refer to *v.* 20, whilst *v.* 19 is expressly quoted by Irenaeus as the work of St Mark.

For Hermas see Dr C. Taylor's *Hermas and the Four Gospels*, p. 57 ff. Justin either has our fragment in view or stumbles unaccountably upon its phraseology when he writes (*ap.* i. 45): *οἱ ἀπόστολοι αὐτοῦ ἔξελθόντες πανταχοῦ ἐκήρυξαν*. Other "early evidence for the twelve verses" may be seen in a paper contributed by Dr Taylor to the *Expositor* for 1893 (iv. viii., p. 71 ff.). These writers, however, may have known the fragment in another connexion; in Irenaeus it is quoted as a true part of this Gospel: iii. 10. 6 "in fine autem evangelii ait Marcus *Et quidem dominus Iesus*," &c.

Thus on the whole it seems safe to conclude that at Rome and at Lyons in the second half of the second century the Gospel ended as it does now. If the last twelve verses did not form part of the autograph, there is nothing to shew when they were attached to the Gospel. But they must have been very generally accepted as the work of St Mark soon after the middle of the second century, if not indeed at an earlier time. It is significant

<sup>1</sup> See Cronin, *Codex purpureus Petropolitanus*, p. xxviii.

that a writer of such wide knowledge as Irenaeus entertained no doubt as to their genuineness.

4. The present ending of the Gospel stands in evident contrast with the formal and somewhat turgid manner of the shorter ending. Although it contains an abundance of words and phrases which differentiate it from the rest of the book, yet like St Mark's genuine work, it might have been written by a bilingual Jew of the first generation who had been nourished upon the vocabulary of the LXX., and accustomed to translate Aramaic into Greek. But the two fragments are distinguished by a more serious and indeed fundamental difference. While the shorter ending was evidently composed with the view of completing St Mark's work, the last twelve verses of the common text are as clearly part of an independent composition. They form an epitome of the appearances of the Risen Christ from the moment of the Resurrection to the Ascension, followed by a brief summary of the subsequent work of the Apostles. Instead of taking up the thread dropt at the end of xvi. 8, the longer ending begins with a statement which, if not inconsistent with xvi. 1—8, presupposes a situation to which the earlier verses of the chapter offer no clue. It is clear that the subject of *ἀναστὰς...έφανη* has been indicated in the sentence which immediately preceded; but v. 8 is occupied with another subject. The writer of v. 9 introduces Mary of Magdala as if she were a person who had not been named before, or not referred to recently; but St Mark has already mentioned her thrice in the previous sixteen verses. Moreover, both the structure and the general purpose of this ending are remarkably distinct from those which distinguish the genuine work of Mark. Instead of a succession of short paragraphs linked by *καὶ* and an occasional *δέ*, we have before us in xvi. 9—20 a carefully constructed passage, in which *μετὰ δὲ ταῦτα, ὕστερον δέ, οὐ μὲν οὖν, ἐκεῖνος δέ,* mark the successive points of juncture. The purpose is didactic and not simply or in the first instance historical; the tone is Johannine rather than Marcan. The author wishes to exhibit the slow recovery of the Apostles from their unbelief, and the triumphant power of faith (*ἡπίστησαν...οὐδὲ ἐπίστευσαν...*





ἀνείδισεν τὴν ἀπιστίαν αὐτῶν...ό πιστεύσας σωθήσεται...έκεινοι δὲ ἔξελθόντες ἐκήρυξαν πανταχοῦ). He carries the Risen Lord beyond the sphere of history to His place at the Right Hand of God, and recognises His cooperation in the work of the Church during the age which followed the Ascension. The historian has given place to the theologian, the interpreter of St Peter to the scholar of St John.

5. A recent discovery assigns a name to the author of this fragment. In November 1891 Mr F. C. Conybeare found in the Patriarchal Library of Edschmiazin an Armenian ms. of the Gospels written A.D. 989, in which the last twelve verses of St Mark are introduced by a rubric written in the first hand, *Of the presbyter Ariston*<sup>1</sup>. Mr Conybeare with much probability suggests that the person intended is the Aristion who is mentioned by Papias as one of the disciples of the Lord.

Papias (*Eus. H. E.* iii. 39) is quoted as saying: εἰ δέ που καὶ παρηκολουθηκώς τις τοῖς πρεσβυτέροις ἔλθοι, τοὺς τῶν πρεσβυτέρων ἀνέκρινον λόγους...ἄ τε Ἀριστίων καὶ ὁ πρεσβύτερος Ἰωάννης οἱ τοῦ κυρίου μαθηταὶ λέγοντιν. Eusebius adds: καὶ ἄλλας δὲ τῇ ιδίᾳ γραφῇ παραδίδωσιν Ἀριστίωνος τοῦ πρόσθεν δεδηλωμένου τῶν τοῦ κυρίου λόγων διηγήσεις. Papias frequently cited him by name in his Λογίων κυριακῶν ἔξηγήσεις (*Eus. l.c.*: Ἀριστίωνος δὲ καὶ τοῦ πρεσβυτέρου Ἰωάννου αὐτήκοον ἔαντόν φησι γενέσθαι: ὀνομαστὶ γοῦν πολλάκις αὐτῶν μνημονεύσας ἐν τοῖς αὐτοῦ συγγράμμασι τίθησιν αὐτῶν παραδόσεις).

Through Mr Conybeare's kindness a photograph is given of the leaf which bears the name of Ariston. He has sent me the following note in explanation of the facsimile.

"In this codex verse 8 of ch. xvi. ends at the beginning of a line, in the second column of a page. The line is partly filled up with the vermillioned flourishes which indicate that the Gospel proper of Mark is ended. Verse 9 however is begun on the next line, and the whole 12 verses are completed in the same large uncials as the rest of the Gospels. As it were by an afterthought the scribe adds the title *Ariston Eritzou* just above the flourishes mentioned, and within the columnar space. It is written in vermillioned smaller uncials identical in character with those which at the foot of each column denote the Ammonian canons, and also with those which the scribe uses to complete a word at the end of a line, thereby preserving the symmetry of the lines and avoiding the necessity of placing the last one or two letters of a word by themselves at the

<sup>1</sup> *Expositor*, iv. viii. p. 241 ff.

beginning of a fresh line. The title therefore was added by the first hand; or, if not by him, at least by the διορθωτής. In any case it is contemporary and must have stood in the older copy transcribed, from which also were perhaps transferred the fifth century full-page illuminations included in the existing codex. At first it was intended to omit the title, but on second thoughts it was added. If the scribe had from the first meant to keep it, he would have left room for it, instead of cramping it in above the terminal flourishes. That he regarded Mark proper as ending with verse 8, is further shewn by the large circular boss consisting of concentric circles of colour added against the end of verse 8 between the columns. The paler tints in the photograph correspond to vermilion in the codex; and the vermilioned lettering of the title was so faint in the positive sent to Mr Conybeare from Edschmiatzin in 1895, that he has strengthened it with ink for the preparation of the present facsimile. The parchment of the codex is so thin and fine that the writing on the back of the page here and there shews through in the photograph."

Though neither Eusebius nor Papias as quoted by Eusebius says that Aristion committed his *διηγήσεις* to writing, nothing is more likely than that they were collected and published by those who heard them. To such a collection, made under the influence of the school of St John, this summary of post-Resurrection history may well have belonged, and in the exemplar which was the archetype of the codices known to Irenaeus it had been judged worthy to complete the unfinished work of the Evangelist. While the shorter ending passed over to Carthage and established itself in some circles at Alexandria, Rome and Gaul were quick to perceive the higher claims of this genuine relic of the first generation, and it took its place unchallenged in the fourfold Gospel of the West.

6. The documentary testimony for the longer ending is, as we have seen, overwhelming. Nevertheless, there are points at which the chain of evidence is not merely weak but broken. Besides the fact that in the fourth century, if not in the third, the 'accurate copies' of the Gospel were known to end with xvi. 8, and that in the two great fourth century Bibles which have come down to us the Gospel actually ends at this point, those who maintain the genuineness of the last twelve verses have to account for the early circulation of an alternative ending, and for the ominous silence of the Ante-Nicene fathers between

Irenaeus and Eusebius<sup>1</sup> in reference to a passage which was of so much importance both on historical and theological grounds. When we add to these defects in the external evidence the internal characteristics which distinguish these verses from the rest of the Gospel, it is impossible to resist the conclusion that they belong to another work, whether that of Aristion or of some unknown writer of the first century<sup>2</sup>.

<sup>1</sup> See Zahn, *Einleitung*, ii. p. 227.

<sup>2</sup> Dr Salmon (*Introduction to the N.T.*, p. 151) writes in reference to the last twelve verses of this Gospel, "We must ascribe their authorship to one who lived in the very first age of the Church. And why not to St Mark?" St Mark, undoubtedly, has more than one manner; he writes with greater freedom when he is stating facts on his own knowledge than when he is com-

piling his recollections of St Peter's teaching. But is there anything in the Gospel, whether in its opening verses or elsewhere, which resembles the rhythmical structure and didactic tone of the present ending? Unless we entirely misjudge the writer of the second Gospel, the last twelve verses are the work of another mind, trained in another school.

## XII.

### COMMENTARIES.

We have already seen that this Gospel received little or no attention from the great commentators of the first five centuries. The commentary ascribed to Origen in a Paris MS. (Omont, *Manuscrits grecs de la bibl. nat.*, p. 180) is identical with the work of Victor (Harnack, *Gesch. d. altchr. Lit.*, p. 389; cf. Huet, *Origeniana*, iii., app. § iv.; see also Westcott, 'Origen,' in *D.C.B.* iv., p. 112). In *Anecdota Maredsolana* (III. ii. p. 319 sqq., 1897), Dom Morin has printed some interesting homilies on St Mark which he attributes to Jerome<sup>1</sup>, but the treatment is allegorical and practical rather than exegetical in the strict sense. A few fragments which are found among the exegetical works of Theodore of Mopsuestia are probably taken from his other writings (Fritzsche, *fragm. Th. Mops.*, p. 84). Chrysostom is said by Suidas to have written on St Mark, but the statement needs confirmation<sup>2</sup>.

The earliest extant commentary on the second Gospel is that which bears the name of "VICTOR, presbyter of Antioch."

In the Oxford ms. used by J. Cramer (*Catena in Evangelia*, 1840) the argument is said to be ἐκ τῆς εἰς αὐτὸν (τὸν Μᾶρκον) ἔρμηνειας τοῦ ἐν ἀγίοις Κυρίλλον Ἀλεξανδρείας. Other mss. have the same attribution, but the majority ascribe the work to Victor (Simon, *hist. crit. du N. T.*, p. 427). For an account of the mss. and editions of this commentary see Burdon, *Twelve last verses of St Mark*, p. 272 ff. It was first published by Possinus in the *Catena Graecorum Patrum in ev. sec. Marcum* (Rome, 1673); see Burdon, p. 270.

<sup>1</sup> Two commentaries upon St Mark are printed in the appendix to Jerome (Migne, *P.L.* xxx. coll. 560sqq., 590sqq.). Collections on St Mark from the works

of Gregory the Great will be found in *P.L.* lxxix. coll. 1052, 1178.

<sup>2</sup> See Bardenhewer, *Patrologie*, p. 313.

VICTOR OF ANTIOCH is otherwise unknown, but his personality is of little importance, since he professes to limit himself to the task of a compiler (*συνεῦδον τὰ κατὰ μέρος καὶ σποράδην εἰς αὐτὸν εἰρημένα παρὰ τῶν διδασκάλων τῆς ἐκκλησίας συναγαγεῖν, καὶ σύντομον ἑρμηνείαν συντάξαι*). Burgeson (*op. cit.*, p. 275 f.) has shewn that while Chrysostom's homilies on St Matthew supply the backbone of the work, Origen is freely used, and there are at least occasional references to St Basil, Apollinaris, Theodore of Mopsuestia, Titus of Bostra, and Cyril of Alexandria. A suggestion of Schanz<sup>1</sup> that the bulk of the commentary belongs to the school of Antioch is not supported by a solitary reference to Nestorius, which points the other way. Rather it seems to be the work of an industrious compiler who is willing to use all the materials at his disposal. Yet as Burgeson points out<sup>2</sup>, Victor is not a catenist in the ordinary sense, for he speaks occasionally in his own person, and rarely quotes his authorities by name. The popularity of his work in the Eastern Church is shewn by the multiplication of copies; it survives in more than fifty codices of the Gospels<sup>3</sup>. As to the time of its composition Dr Hort writes<sup>4</sup>: "it probably belongs to Cent. v. or vi., but there is no clear evidence to fix the date"; Dean Burgeson, less cautiously: "[the] date...may be assigned to the first half of the fifth century — suppose A.D. 425—450." A conjecture which placed it a century later would perhaps be nearer to the truth.

Next in point of age to Victor of Antioch comes our countryman BAEDA [† 735]. Bede's commentaries on St Mark and St Luke were written at the desire of Acca, Bishop of Hexham. A passage from a letter to Acca prefixed to the commentary on St Mark describes Bede's method: "quae in patrum venerabilium exemplis invenimus hinc inde collecta ponere curabimus, sed et nonnulla propria ad imitationem sensus eorum ubi oportunum videbitur interponemus." He complains in the preface to Luke of the difficulties which in a monastic cell beset such

<sup>1</sup> *Commentar.*, p. 53. The passage quoted runs: *εἰ ἄλλος ἐν ἄλλῳ ἔστι κατὰ τοὺς λόγους τοῦ Νεστορίου ἔδει εἰπεῖν "Ἐν σοι ἔστιν ὁ νῦν μου ὁ ἀγαπητὸς ἐν φῷ εὐδό-* κησα (Cramer, p. 272).

<sup>2</sup> *Op. cit.*, p. 277.

<sup>3</sup> *Ib.* pp. 60, 278 ff.

<sup>4</sup> *Notes*, p. 34.

work—"ipse mihi dictator simul notarius et librarius"—but tells us that he has nevertheless contrived to collect materials from all the great Latin fathers, Ambrose, Augustine, Gregory and Jerome. To the commentary of Jerome on St Matthew most of his exposition of Mark appears to be due; but the work is by no means devoid of independent merit, and perhaps its best features are those which it owes to the insight and devotion of Bede himself. Printed in Migne, *P. L.* xcii.

Under the name of WALAFRID STRABO († 750) we have (1) the *Glossa ordinaria*, and (2) a few notes on St Mark (Migne, *P. L.* cxiii., cxiv.).

THEOPHYLACT, Archbishop of Achridia (*Ochrida*) in Bulgaria (fl. c. A.D. 1077), has expounded St Mark with considerable fulness in his 'Ερμηνεία εἰς τὰ τέσσαρα εὐαγγέλια (Simon, iv., p. 390 ff.). Simon's judgement ("les commentaires de Théophylacte...sont plutôt des abrégés de S. Chrysostome que de véritables commentaires") is manifestly less applicable to this Gospel than to the others, if Chrysostom left no genuine work on St Mark; certainly Theophylact's commentary on St Mark is of considerable importance for the exposition of the Gospel, and in the dearth of older expositions invaluable. Printed in Migne, *P. G.* cxxiii.

EUTHYMIUS ZIGABENUS, a monk of Constantinople (fl. c. A.D. 1115), is also a follower of Chrysostom (*prooem. in Mt.*: μάλιστα μὲν ἀπὸ τῆς ἐξηγήσεως τοῦ ἐν ἀγίοις πατρὸς ἡμῶν Ἰωάννου τοῦ χρυσοστόμου, ἔτι δὲ καὶ ἀπὸ διαφόρων ἄλλων πατέρων συνεισενεγκόντος τινά). But unlike Theophylact he regards St Mark as scarcely deserving of a separate commentary, since 'the second Gospel is in close agreement with the first, excepting where the first is fuller' (*συμφωνεῖ λίαν τῷ Ματθαίῳ πλὴν ὅταν ἐκεῖνός ἐστι πλατύτερος*). His notes on Mark are therefore generally mere cross-references to those on Matthew; here and there, however, where Mark differs from Matthew or relates something which is peculiar to himself, useful comments will be found. Printed in Migne, *P. G.* cxxix.

BRUNO ASTENSIS († 1125) contributes a brief exposition, of which the author writes: "non multum quidem nos laborare

necesse erit quoniam valde pauca ibi dicuntur quae in Matthaeo exposita non sint." Printed in Migne, *P. L.* clxv.

RUPERTUS TUITIENSIS (Rupert of Deutz, † 1135): *in vol. iv. Evangelistarum commentariorum liber unus* (Migne, *P. L.* clxvii.).

(?) THOMAS AQUINAS († 1274): *catena aurea in iv. Evangelistas.*

ALBERTUS MAGNUS († 1289): *commentarius in Marcum.*

DIONYSIUS CARTHUSIANUS († 1417): *in iv. Evangelia.*

FABER STAPULENSIS († 1527): *commentarii initiatorii in iv. Evangelia.*

DESIDERIUS ERASMUS († 1536): *paraphrasis in N.T.*

JO. MALDONATUS († 1583): *commentarii in iv. Evangelistas.*

CORNELIUS A LAPIDE († 1637): *commentaria in iv. Evangelia.*

Among later writers on the four Gospels good work of varying merit and usefulness may be found in the commentaries of Bengel, Elsner, Grotius, Kuinoel, Kypke, and Weistein. The last century produced many expositions of St Mark, and others have appeared since 1900. It must suffice to specify the following:

FRITZSCHE, K. F. A.: *Evangelium Marci*, Lips., 1830.

MEYER, H. A. W.: in the *Krit.-exegetischer Kommentar*, first ed., 1832; ninth ed. (Meyer-Weiss), 1901.

ALFORD, H.: in the *Four Gospels*, London, 1849.

ALEXANDER, J. A.: *Gospel acc. to St Mark*, Princeton, 1858.

LANGE, J. P.: in the *Theol.-homiletisches Bibelwerk*, first ed., 1858; fourth ed., 1884.

KLOSTERMANN, A.: *das Markusevangelium*, Göttingen, 1867.

WEISS, B.: *das Markusevangelium*, Berlin, 1872; *die vier Evangelien*, Leipzig, 1900.

MORISON, JAS.: *Commentary on the Gospel acc. to St Mark*, London, 1873.

COOK, F. G.: in the *Speaker's Commentary on the N.T.*, vol. I., London, 1878.

RIDDLE, M. R.: in Schaff's *Popular Commentary on the N.T.*, Edinburgh, 1878-82.

PLUMPTRE, E. H. (in the *N.T. Commentary for English readers*), London, 1879.

SCHANZ, P.: *Commentar über das Evangelium d. h. Marcus*, Freiburg-im-Breisgau, 1881.

MACLEAR, G. F. (in the *Cambridge Greek Testament*), Cambridge, first ed., 1883; last reprint, 1899.

CHADWICK, G. A.: *the Gospel acc. to St Mark* (in the *Expositor's Bible*), London, 1887.

LUCKOCK, H. M.: *Footprints of the Son of Man as traced by St Mark*, London, 1889.

HOLTZMANN, H. J.: in the *Hand-commentar*, Freiburg-im-Breisgau, 1892; third edition, 1901.

KNABENBAUER, J.: *Commentarius in Evangelium sec. Marcum* (in the *Cursus scripturae sacrae*), Paris, 1894.

GOULD, E. P.: *a critical and exegetical commentary on the Gospel acc. to St Mark* (in the *International Critical Commentary*), Edinburgh, 1896.

BRUCE, A. B.: *St Mark* (in the *Expositor's Greek Testament*), London, 1897.

MENZIES, A.: *the Earliest Gospel: a historical study of the Gospel acc. to Mark*, London, 1901.

WELLHAUSEN, J.: *Das Evangelium Marci*. Berlin, 1903.

GRESSMANN, H., and KLOSTERMANN, E.: *Die Evangelien. I. Markus*. Tübingen, 1907.

WOHLENBERG, G.: *Das Evangelium des Markus* (in Th. Zahn's *Kommentar zum N.T.*). Leipzig, 1910.

The following are a few of the least obvious abbreviations employed in the footnotes:

- BDB. Brown Driver and Briggs, *Hebrew and English Lexicon of the O.T.* (Oxford, 1892— ).
- Blass, Gr. F. Blass, *Grammar of N.T. Greek*. Translated by H. St J. Thackeray (London, 1898).
- Burton. E. de W. Burton, *Syntax of the Moods and Tenses in N.T. Greek* (Edinburgh, 1894).
- Dalman, Gr. G. Dalman, *Grammatik d. Jüdisch-Palästinischen Aramäisch* (Leipzig, 1894).
- Dalman, Worte. G. Dalman, *Die Worte Jesu* bd. I (Leipzig, 1898): the English translation (*The Words of Jesus*, I, Edinburgh, 1902) appeared too late to be quoted in this edition.
- D.C.A. Smith and Cheetham, *Dictionary of Christian Antiquities*.
- D.C.B. Smith and Wace, *Dictionary of Christian Biography and Doctrines*.
- Deissmann. G. A. Deissmann, *Bible Studies*. Translated by A. Grieve (Edinburgh, 1901).
- Delitzsch. N.T. in Hebrew (Leipzig, 1892).
- Euth. Euthymius Zigabenus.
- Exp. *The Expositor*.
- Exp. T. *The Expository Times*.
- Field, Notes. F. Field, *Notes on the translation of the N.T. = Otium Norvicense* iii., edited by A. M. Knight (Cambridge, 1899).
- Hastings, D. B. J. Hastings, *Dictionary of the Bible* (Edinburgh, 1898—1902).
- J. B. L. *The Journal of Biblical Literature*.
- J. Th. St. *The Journal of Theological Studies*.
- Nestle, T.C. E. Nestle, *Textual Criticism of the N.T.* Translated by W. Edie and A. Menzies (London, 1901).
- SH. Sanday and Headlam, *Commentary on the Epistle to the Romans* (Edinburgh, 1895).
- Thphht. Theophylact.
- Vg. The Latin Vulgate.
- Victor. 'Victor of Antioch' (in Cramer's *Catena*).
- WH. Westcott and Hort, *N.T. in Greek* (Cambridge, 1881); WH.<sup>2</sup>, second edition (1896).
- WM. Winer-Moulton, *Grammar of N.T. Greek*, 8th Engl. ed. (Edinburgh, 1877).
- WSchl. Winer-Schmidel, *Grammatik d. NTlichen Sprachidoms* (Göttingen, 1894— ).
- Zahn, Einl. Th. Zahn, *Einleitung in das N.T.* (Leipzig, 1897—9).

*In substance and style and treatment the Gospel of St Mark is essentially a transcript from life. The course and issue of facts are imaged in it with the clearest outline. If all other arguments against the mythic origin of the Evangelic narratives were wanting, this vivid and simple record, stamped with the most distinct impress of independence and originality, totally unconnected with the symbolism of the Old Dispensation, totally independent of the deeper reasonings of the New, would be sufficient to refute a theory subversive of all faith in history. The details which were originally addressed to the vigorous intelligence of Roman hearers are still pregnant with instruction for us. The teaching which ‘met their wants’ in the first age finds a corresponding field for its action now....The picture of the sovereign power of Christ battling with evil among men swayed to and fro by tumultuous passions is still needful, though we may turn to St Matthew and St John for the ancient types or deeper mysteries of Christianity or find in St Luke its inmost connexion with the unchanging heart of man.—Bishop Westcott.*

# KATA MAPKON

ΑΡΧΗ τοῦ εὐαγγελίου Ἰησοῦ Χριστοῦ §[νιοῦ θεοῦ]. I I.  
§ r

κατὰ Μαρκοῦ ΚΕΒ] pr εὐαγγελιον ΑΔΕΗΚΛΜΥΓΔΗΣΦ min<sup>pl</sup> το κ. Μ. (αγιον)  
ευαγγελιον min<sup>satmu</sup>

I. 1 αρχη του ευ.] εὐαγγελιον syrhier | νιον θεον Κ<sup>a</sup>BDL] νιον του θεον ΑΕFHKMSU  
ΥΓΔΗΣΦ min<sup>pl</sup> latt syrr<sup>pech</sup> hel(mg) arm me go aeth Ir<sup>2</sup> Or<sup>pl</sup> Amb Hier<sup>1</sup> Aug (om Κ<sup>a</sup>\* 28  
[Ιησ. tantum 28\*] 255 syrhier Ir<sup>1</sup> Or<sup>4</sup> Bas Hier<sup>2</sup>)

## I. I. SUPERSCRIPTION.

I. ἀρχὴ τοῦ εὐαγγελίου 'Ι. Χ.] Possibly an early heading which arose from the fusion of an original title εὐαγγέλιον ΙΧΘΥΣ with the note ἀρχή that marked the beginning of a new book (Nestle, *Exp.*, Dec. 1894; *Intr.* pp. 163, 261; see on the other hand Zahn, *Einl.* ii. p. 220 ff., 235). Yet the sentence is intelligible if regarded as a title prefixed to the book by the writer or editor; for a similar opening comp. Hosea i. 1 (LXX.), ἀρχὴ λόγου Κυρίου ἐν 'Ωσῆς; see also Prov. i. 1, Eccl. i. 1, Cant. i. 1, &c. Or it may have been intended to refer to the immediate sequel. Irenaeus connects it with v. 2 : ἀπὸ τοῦ προφητικοῦ πνεύματος...τὴν ἀρχὴν ἐποίησατο λέγαν 'Αρχὴ...ώς γέγραπται, κτλ.; and so Origen (*in Jo. t. vi. 24*). Others with more probability find the ἀρχὴ in the events described in v. 4 ff., e.g. Basil c. *Eun.* ii. 15, ὁ δὲ Μᾶρκος ἀρχὴν τοῦ εὐαγγελίου τὸ 'Ιωάννου πεποίηκε κήρυγμα: Victor, 'Ιωάννην οὖν τελευταῖον τῶν προφητῶν ἀρχὴν εἶναι τοῦ εὐαγγελίου φησίν. The starting-point varies with the position of the writer; Mt. sees it in the ancestry and birth of the Messiah,

Lc., in the birth of the Baptist; Jo. (but see Jo. xv. 26) looks back to the ἀρχὴ in which the Word was with God; St Paul, using the word 'Gospel' in a wider sense, sees a fresh beginning in the foundation of each of the churches (Phil. iv. 15). That Mc. begins his Gospel with the ministration of the Baptist is one indication amongst many that he preserves the earliest form of the evangelical tradition, in which the record of the Birth and Childhood did not find a place.

Εὐαγγέλιον (in class. Greek usually pl., εὐαγγέλια) from Homer downwards is the reward accorded to a bearer of good tidings, but in later writers (e.g. Lucian, Plutarch) the good news itself. The LXX. use it only in 2 Regn. iv. 10, and in the class. sense, for in 2 Regn. xviii. 22, 25 we should probably read εὐαγγελία (cf. v. 20). In the N.T. the later sense alone occurs, but with some latitude of application; see v. 15 n. Ev. 'Ι. Χ. is 'the good tidings concerning J. C.' (gen. of the obj.), as revealed in His life, death, and resurrection. The phrase is unique in the Gospels, which elsewhere have τὸ εὐ. τοῦ θεοῦ (i. 14), τὸ εὐ. τῆς βασιλείας,

§ P 2      §<sup>2</sup> Καθὼς γέγραπται ἐν τῷ Ἡσαίᾳ τῷ προφήτῃ  
 § t      Ἰδοὺ ἀποστέλλω τὸν ἄγγελόν μου § πρὸ προσώπου

2 καθὼς ΝΒΚΛΔΠ\* i 33 209 604 2<sup>νο</sup> alpauc Or al] ws ADEFHMPUSUVΓΠ<sup>2</sup>ΣΤ  
 Ir Or<sup>1</sup> al | εν τῳ Ἡσαιᾳ τῳ προφητῃ ΝΒ(D)ΛΔ (i 22 al) 33 604 1071 alnoan latt  
 syrr<sup>peshcl(mg)hier</sup> arm<sup>codd</sup> me Ir<sup>1</sup> Or<sup>4</sup> al] εν τοις προφηταις ΑΕΦHKMPSUVΓΠΣΦ  
 syrhcl(txt) arm<sup>zoh</sup> aeth Ir<sup>2lat</sup> | om ιδου...την οδ. σου Bas Epiph Victorin | ιδου] +εγω  
 ΣΑΛΡΓΔΠΣΦ min<sup>fereomn</sup> vg<sup>ed</sup> syrhcl arm go aeth Or<sup>4</sup> (om BD 28 latt Ir<sup>int</sup>) | αποστελω  
 Η alpauc me

or simply τὸ εὐ. (i. 15). If the heading was added early in the second century we might understand by εὐ. here a record of the Lord's life and words: for the earliest exx. of this use of the word see Ign. *Philad.* 5, 8, *Did. App.* 8, 11, 15, Justin *ap.* i. 66; and cf. Zahn, *Gesch. des N. T. Kanons*, i. p. 162.

νιὸν θεοῦ] The evidence for the omission of these words is weighty, but meagre. WH. (*Notes*, p. 23) relegate them to the margin as a secondary reading, but hold that "neither reading can be safely rejected." Possibly the heading existed almost from the first in two forms, with and without νι. θ. The phrase νιὸς θεοῦ or ο νι. τ. θ. occurs in Mc. iii. 11, v. 7, xv. 39; cf. i. 11, ix. 7, xii. 6, xiii. 32, xiv. 61.

2—8. THE PREPARATORY MINISTRY OF JOHN THE BAPTIST (Mt. iii. 1—12, Lc. iii. 1—6, 15—17; cf. Jo. i. 6—31).

2. καθὼς γέγραπται] A LXX. formula = בָּאֵתֶת (4 Regn. xiv. 6, xxiii. 14, 2 Paral. xxiii. 18, xxv. 4, xxxiii. 32, xxxv. 12, Tob. i. 6). Mc. employs it again in ix. 13, xiv. 21, and it occurs in Lc.<sup>ev., act.</sup>, and frequently in St Paul; Jo. (vi. 31, xii. 14) seems to prefer καθὼς ἔστι γεγραμμένον. The perf. gives the sense of perpetuity; the 'litera scripta' abides. See WM., p. 339.

The apodosis to καθὼς κτλ. is wanting, unless we find it in v. 4. For a similar omission see the opening clause of 1 Tim. (i. 3, 4). For other possible constructions cf. Nestle, *Intr.* p. 261.

ἐν τῷ Ἡσαίᾳ τῷ προφήτῃ] The quotations are from Mal. iii. 1, Is. xl. 3.

In the parallels Mt. iii. 3, Lc. iii. 1—6 (cf. Jo. i. 23) Malachi is not quoted, but his words are used by the two Synoptists in another connexion (Mt. xi. 10, Lc. vii. 27). Origen (*in Jo. t. vi. 24*) remarks that Mc. is here δύο προφητείας ἐν διαφόροις εἰρημένας τόποις υπὸ δύο προφητῶν εἰς ἐν συνάγων. That he quotes the two under one name did not escape the notice of Porphyry (*Hier. tr. in Mc.*); Jerome (on Mt.) answers: "nomen Isaiae putamus aditum scriptorum vitio...aut certe de diversis testimoniis scripturarum unum corpus effectum." The latter solution is not improbable. Mc. (or his source) may have depended upon a collection of excerpts in which Mal. iii. 1 stood immediately before Is. xl. 3, possibly on a leaf headed Ησαιας. A similar confusion occurs in Iren. iii. 20. 4, where quotations from Micah (vii. 19) and Amos i. 2 are preceded by the formula *Amos propheta ait*. On the use of such collections see Hatch, *Essays*, p. 203 ff.; SH., *Romans*, pp. 264, 282. The reading is hotly contested in Burgon-Miller, *Causes of Corruption*, p. 111 f.

ἰδοὺ...τὴν ὁδὸν σου] LXX. Ιδοὺ ἐξαποστέλλω τὸν ἄγγελόν μου, καὶ ἐπιβλέψεται ὁδὸν πρὸ προσώπου μου. Both Mt. (xi. 10) and Lc. (vii. 27) read with Mc. κατασκευάσει and σου, and transpose πρὸ προσώπου σου, but both add ἐμπροσθέν σου after ὁδὸν σου. The LXX. ἐπιβλέψεται presupposes the vocalisation Πῆθ, whereas κατασκευάσει represents Πῆθ (Resch, *Paralleltexte zu Lucas*, p. 114); Symm. (ἀποσκευάσει) and Theod. (ἐποιμάσει) agree with the

*σου, ὃς κατασκευάσει τὴν ὁδόν σου.* <sup>3</sup>*φωνὴ βοῶντος* 3  
*ἐν τῇ ἐρήμῳ* <sup>¶</sup>*Ἐτοιμάσατε τὴν ὁδὸν* <sup>¶</sup>*Κυρίου, εὐθείας* <sup>¶</sup>*ποιεῖτε τὰς τρίβους αὐτοῦ.* <sup>4</sup>*έγένετο Ἰωάνης ὁ βαπτίζων* 4  
*ἐν τῇ ἐρήμῳ κηρύσσων βάπτισμα μετανοίας*

<sup>2</sup> *τὴν οδον σου] + εμπροσθεν σου ΑΓΔΙΠΣ* al min<sup>pl</sup> f ff g vg<sup>ed</sup> syr<sup>hel</sup> arm go me Or 3 *αυτου] του θεου νυμων D 34<sup>mg</sup> a b c f ff t (dei nostri) syr<sup>hel</sup>(mg) go Ir<sup>int vid bis</sup> (ante deum nostrum)* <sup>4</sup> *εγενετο] pr και* <sup>N\*</sup> *| Ιωανης B] Ιωαννης codd<sup>fer eomn</sup> | o βαπτ. NBLT<sup>d</sup> Δ 33 me] om o A(D)ΡΓΠΣΦ al syr<sup>pesh</sup> arm | εν τη ερ. βαπτ. D 28 604 latt (exc f) syr<sup>pesh</sup> | κηρυσσων] pr και NADLΔΣΦ al latt syrr arm me (om και B 33 73 102)*

Gospels. For *σου* the Heb. supplies no justification : it is perhaps due to the compiler of the excerpts (see last note), who has blended Mal. *l.c.* with Exod. xxiii. 20.

*πρὸ προσώπου σου] Victor : καθάπερ ... ἐπὶ τῷ βασιλέων οἱ ἔγγὺς τοῦ ὄχηματος ἐλαύνοντες οὗτοι τῶν ἄλλων εἰσὶ λαμπρότεροι.*

3. *φωνὴ...τρίβους αὐτοῦ]* So the LXX. exactly, except that for the last word, following the Heb., they give *τοῦ θεοῦ ἡμῶν*—a reading which has found its way into some Western texts of Mc. (see vv. II.). Origen (*in Jo. l.c.*), Jerome (*in Mal. iii.*), and Victor notice this remarkable divergence of the Synoptists from the LXX. The passage is quoted also by Jo. (i. 23), but he stops at *Κυρίου*.

Tregelles connects *ἐν τῇ ἐρήμῳ* with *ἔτοιμάσατε*, following the M. T.; but the absence in the Greek of any parallelism corresponding to *הַשְׁמִינִית* justifies the ordinary punctuation which is common to the Gospels and the LXX., and it is supported by Jewish interpretation (Delitzsch *ad l.*).

4. *έγένετο Ἰωάνης κτλ.]* ‘There arose John the Baptizer in the wilderness, preaching’ &c. For this use of *έγένετο* cf. 2 Pet. ii. 1, 1 Jo. ii. 18; and especially Jo. i. 6, where it begins a sentence with equal abruptness. On the forms *Ιωάνης, Ιωάννης* see WH., *Notes*, p. 166; Winer-Schmiedel, p. 57; Blass, p. 11. Mt. (iii. 1) has *παραγίνεται*, Lc. (iii. 3) *ῆλθεν*. ‘Ο βαπτίζων is nearly

= *ὁ βαπτιστής*, as in vi. 14, 24 (cf. 25); on this use of the participle see Lightfoot on Gal. i. 23. If with all the uncials except B and with the versions we read *καὶ κηρύσσων*, the descriptive clause will run on to the end of the verse (‘John the Baptizer ... and preacher,’ &c.).

*ἐν τῇ ἐρήμῳ]* Mt. connects this with *κηρύσσων* and adds *τῆς Ιουδαίας*. According to Lc. (i. 80, iii. 3) the Baptist was *ἐν ταῖς ἐρήμοις* till his call came, and then went to the Jordan ; Mt. and Mc., writing in view of Isa. xl. 3, draw no distinction between the *ἐρημος* and the Jordan valley. The wilderness of Judah or Judea (*גְּבֻרָה יְהוּדָה*, LXX. (A), *τὴν ἐρημον Ιούδα*, Jud. i. 16) has been described as a region “piled up from the beach of the Dead Sea to the very edge of the central plateau” (G. A. Smith, *Hist. Geogr.* p. 263), and, from an opposite point of view, as “the barren steeps in which the mountains break down to the Dead Sea” (Moore, *Judges*, p. 32); Engedi seems to have been the most southerly town of this district (Moore, *l.c.*, referring to Josh. xv. 61 f.). It was in the wilderness of Engedi that David had sought a retreat (1 Sam. xxiv. 1), and the same neighbourhood would naturally have offered itself to John, whose childhood had been spent in the hill country of Judaea (Lc. i. 39).

*κηρύσσων βάπτισμα...άμαρτιῶν]* The *vox clamantis* (Isa. *l.c.*, cf. Jo. i. 23)

5 εἰς ἀφεσιν ἀμαρτιῶν. 5 καὶ ἐξεπορεύετο πρὸς αὐτὸν πᾶσα ἡ Ἰουδαία χώρα καὶ οἱ Ἱεροσολυμεῖται πάντες, καὶ ἐβαπτίζοντο ὑπ' αὐτοῦ ἐν τῷ Ἰορδάνῃ ποταμῷ,

5 εξεπορευοντο EFHLSVΓ latv<sup>nōn</sup> go | πάντες καὶ εβ. Ν<sup>c</sup>.<sup>a</sup>BDLT<sup>d</sup>ΔΣ 28 33  
ΙΟΥΔΑΙΑΝΩΝ go | πάντες καὶ εβ. π. ΑΡΓΠΙ al syr<sup>hel</sup> go 13 al om πάντες Φ min<sup>pauc</sup>  
f om καὶ Ν<sup>\*</sup> 69 a | om ποταμῷ D 604 a b c

was the cry of a herald (Ἄφεσις is rendered indifferently by *βοῆ* and *κηρύσσειν*, cf. Dan. iii. 4, LXX. and Theodotion), proclaiming a religious rite which was to be at once the expression and the pledge of repentance (*μετάνοιας*, gen. of inner reference, WM., p. 235), and had remission of sins for its purpose and end (εἰς ἄφεσιν, WM., p. 495). The baptism of John was strictly speaking εἰς μετάνοιαν (Mt. iii. 11, Acts xix. 3; cf. Wünsche, *neue Beiträge*, p. 385); it was εἰς ἀφεσιν only inasmuch as it prepared for the ἐν β. εἰς ἀφεσιν ἀμαρτιῶν of the Christian Creed. Ambr. in Lc. ii.: "aliud fuit baptisma paenitentiae, aliud gratiae est"; Victor: *προοδοποιῶν παραγέγονε καὶ προετοιμάζων, οὐ τὴν δωρεὰν χαρίζομενος ... ἀλλὰ προπαρασκευάζων τὰς ψυχάς.* "Αφεσις belongs properly to the Messianic Kingdom (Mc. ii. 5 ff.), in which it is associated with the Baptism of the Spirit (Acts ii. 38). The Law itself offered forgiveness of external offences through external rites; the new order, anticipated in the Psalms and Prophets and beginning with John, proclaimed a full forgiveness *citra sacrificia levitica* (Bengel).

On the form *βάπτισμα* see Mc. vii. 4, note, and Lightfoot on Col. ii. 12: neither *βάπτισμα* nor *βαπτισμός* is known to the LXX., and the verb is used of a religious purification only in Sir. xxxi. (xxxiv.) 30. *Μετάνοια* is nearly restricted to the non-canonical books (Prov.<sup>1</sup> Sap.<sup>3</sup> Sir.<sup>3</sup>); ἀφεσις, though frequent, occurs nowhere in the Greek O.T. in the sense of forgiveness, although the ἐνιαυτὸς ἀφέσεως (Lev. xxv. 10) is the archetype of an

era of spiritual remission (Lc. iv. 21). In the N.T. both words are used with some reserve (ἀφεσις<sup>18</sup>, μετάνοια<sup>22</sup>) except perhaps by Lc. (ἄφ.,<sup>10</sup> μετ.).<sup>11</sup>

5. [ἐξεπορεύετο...πάντες] Judaea is personified, as in Gen. xli. 57 πᾶσαι αἱ χώραι ἥλθον. So Mt.; Lc. (iii. 7) prefers to speak of ἐκπορεύμενοι ὅχλοι. With ἡ Ἰ. χώρα (Vg. *Iudeae regio*) cf. the similar phrases in Lc. iii. 1, Acts xvi. 6, xviii. 23; ἡ Ἰουδαία γῆ occurs in Jo. iii. 22, ἡ χώρα τῶν Ἰουδαίων in Acts x. 39, ἡ χ. τῆς Ἰουδαίας in Acts xxvi. 20. More usually we have simply ἡ Ἰουδαία (e.g. Mc. iii. 7, x. 1, xiii. 14). For the limits of Judaea see Joseph. B. J. iii. 3, 5, and comp. Neubauer, géogr. du Talmud, p. 59 ff., G. A. Smith, Hist. Geogr., c. xiii. Mt. adds καὶ πᾶσα ἡ περίχωρος τοῦ Ἰορδάνου, i.e. the Jordan valley (גְּנַעַן הַיַּם־לְבָנָן, Gen. xiii. 10); some came from Galilee, as Simon, Andrew, and John (Jo. i. 35 ff.), and Jesus Himself. Οἱ Ἱεροσολυμεῖται (on the breathing see WH., p. 313, and on the termination in -είτης, WH., Notes, p. 154: for the form comp. 4 Macc. xviii. 5, Jo. vii. 25, Joseph. ant. xii. 5. 3); distinguished from ἡ Ἰ. χώρα as a conspicuous portion of the whole, cf. Isa. i. 1, ii. 1, iii. 1—not only the district in general, but the capital itself, poured out its contribution of visitors. Πᾶσα, πάντες, like the Heb. לְבָנָן, are used with some looseness: cf. Mt. ii. 3 πᾶσα Ἱεροσόλυμα. The movement was practically universal. The long-cherished desire for a revival of prophecy (1 Macc. iv. 46, xiv. 41, cf. Mt. xi. 9, 32) seemed to have been realised; hence this exodus to the Jordan.

ἐβαπτίζοντο Both the exodus and

ἐξομολογούμενοι τὰς ἀμαρτίας αὐτῶν. ὁ καὶ ἦν ὁ 6  
Ιωάνης ἐνδεδυμένος τρίχας καμήλου καὶ ζώνην δερ-  
ματίνην περὶ τὴν ὄσφὺν αὐτοῦ, καὶ ἔσθων ἀκρίδας καὶ

6 καὶ ην NBLT<sup>d</sup> 33 2<sup>per̄mg</sup> b d al vg] ην δε ADPΓΔΠΣΦ al | τριχας] δερρην D a  
(pellem) | om και ζωνην...αυτον D a b d ff t | εσθιων ADL<sup>corr</sup>ΡΓΗ al<sup>pl</sup>

the baptisms were continuous; comp. Jo. iii. 23, and contrast the aorists in Acts ii. 41, I Cor. i. 13f., x. 2, xii. 13. ‘Υπ’ αὐτοῦ determines the voice of ἐβαπτ., ‘they received baptism at the hands of John’ (cf. v. 9); the middle is also used, as in 4 Regn. v. 14, Judith xii. 7, Acts xxii. 16, I Cor. x. 2. For Josephus’s account of the baptism of John see *ant.* xviii. 5. 2, and on the question of its relation to proselyte-baptism, cf. Schürer II. ii. 319 ff. ‘Ἐν τῷ Ἰορδ. ποταμῷ (cf. εἰς τὸν Ἰορδ., v. 9, note): so Mt.; “im Jordanstrom” (Schanz). Ι. ποταμός is regarded as a single term, needing but one article (synthetical apposition, cf. WM., p. 72 f.).

ἐξομολ. τὰς ἀμ. αὐτῶν] Evidence of μετάνοια. Ἐξομολογεῖσθαι in Biblical Greek is usually to give glory to God (= ἡ πρᾶγμα), a phrase especially common in the Psalms; see also Mt. xi. 25, Rom. xiv. 11. The rarer ἐξομολ. ἀμαρτίας occurs in Dan. ix. 20 (LXX.), where Th. has ἐξαγορεύειν, the usual equivalent in the LXX. of the Hithp. of ἤτι. Ἐξαγορεύειν does not occur in the N. T., but ἐξομολ. τὰς ἀμαρτίας is used in James v. 16 as well as by Mt., Mc. in this place; see also Barnabas (19), Clement of Rome (I Cor. 51), Ps. Clement (2 Cor. 8), Tert. pat. 15, paen. 10, 12.

6. ἦν...ἐνδεδυμένος κτλ.] Elijah had worn a sheepskin mantle (*μηλωτή*, 3 Regn. xix. 19; cf. Heb. xi. 37, Clem. R. I Cor. 17) and a leathern girdle (4 Regn. i. 8 ζώνην δερματίνην περιεζω-σμένος τὴν ὄσφὺν αὐτοῦ); and a similar costume had become the traditional dress of the prophet (Zech. xiii. 4

ἐνδύσονται δέρριν τριχίνην; cf. Mt. vii. 15). Δέρριν has been transferred from Zech. l.c. into some representatives of the ‘Western’ text of Mc.; see vv. ll. But John’s ἐνδυμα ἀπὸ τριχῶν καμῆλου (Just. dial. 88) was probably not a camel’s skin, but an ordinary garment of sackcloth (*σάκκος τριχίνος*, Apoc. vi. 12) woven from the rough hair of the animal; J. Lightfoot *ad loc.* points out that the Talmud speaks of such a garment (*בְּנֵד מַצְמָר גִּמְלִים*). Cf. Victor: σαφέστερον ὁ Ματθαῖος φησιν ὡς τὸ ἐνδυμα αὐτοῦ ἦν ἀπὸ τριχῶν καμῆλου. Euth.: τρίχας οὐχὶ ἀκατεργάστους ἀλλ’ ὑψηφασμένας, and see Joseph. *ant.* xvi. 4, B. J. i. 17. Hieron. *op. imp.*: “non de lana cameli habuit vestimentum ... sed de asperioribus setis.” The crowd did not go out to see ἄνθρωπον ἐν μαλακοῖς ἡμιφεσμένον (Mt. xi. 8), but one who inherited the poverty as well as the power of Elijah. Jerome claims the Baptist as the head of the monastic order: “monachorum princeps Johannes Baptista est.” With the constr. ἐνδεδ. τρίχας cf. Apoc. i. 13, xix. 14.

καὶ ἔσθων] Mt. ἦ δὲ τροφὴ ἦν αὐτοῦ. It was “wilderness food” (Gould). Certain locusts were accounted ‘clean’: Lev. xi. 22, 23, ταῦτα φάγεσθε ἀπὸ τῶν ἐρπετῶν...τὴν ἀκρίδα (*בָּנָת*) καὶ τὰ ὄμοια αὐτῆς. “The Gemarists feign that there are 800 kinds...of such as are clean” (J. Lightfoot *ad loc.*): Hieron. *adv. Jovin.* ii. 6, “apud orientales...locustis vesci moris est.” It was perhaps in ignorance of this fact, perhaps from encratite tendencies, that some ancient commentators understood by ἀκρίδα in this place a

7 μέλι ἄγριον. 7 καὶ ἐκήρυσσεν λέγων Ἐρχεται ὁ  
ισχυρότερος μου ὀπίσω μου, οὐκ εἰμὶ ἰκανὸς<sup>¶</sup>  
κύψας λῦσαι τὸν ἴμαντα τῶν ὑποδημάτων αὐτοῦ.

7—8 καὶ ελεγεν αυτοις εγω μεν νη. βαπτ. εν υδ. ερχ. δε οπ. μου ο ισχυροτ. μου ουκ ειμι ικ. λυσαι τ. ιμ. των υποδ. αυτοις νη. βαπτιζει εν πν. αγ. D (a) (ff).  
7 εκηρυσσεν] εκεκραγεν Γ | ισχυρος A min<sup>1</sup> | om μου 2<sup>o</sup> B Or<sup>1</sup> | om οπισω μου Δ  
min<sup>1</sup> ff t | om κυψας D 28 256 1071 2<sup>o</sup> abcfg Amb

kind of vegetable food (cf. Euth.); see J. R. Harris, *Fragments of Ephrem*, p. 17 f. As to the wild honey of Palestine (*ἄγριον*, Vg. *silvestre*, Wycliffe, “hony of the wode”), cf. 4 Regn. iv. 39, Ps. lxxix. (lxxx.) 14, and see Exod. iii. 8, Deut. xxxii. 13, Judg. xiv. 8, 1 Sam. xiv. 25; also Joseph. B. J. iv. 8. 3, where it is named among the products of the plain of Jericho. The Sinaitic (Mt.) and Jerusalem Syriac versions render μέλι ἄγριον ‘mountain honey’ (cf. Lc. xii. 28 in Syrr. <sup>sin.cu.</sup>); the Ebionite Gospel had the curious gloss (from Exod. xvi. 31, Num. xi. 8) οὐκ ἡ γενῆσις ἦν τοῦ μάννα ὡς ἔγκρις ἐν ἐλαῖῳ: cf. Resch, *Paralleltexte zu Mt. u. Mc.*, p. 56. The name μέλι ἄγριον (*mel silvestre*) was also given by the ancients to a vegetable product: Diod. Sic. xix. 94, φύεται...ἀπὸ τῶν δένδρων καὶ μέλι πολὺ τὸ καλούμενον ἄγριον: Plin. *H. N.* xix. 8, “est autem mel in arundinibus collectum.” But it is unnecessary in the present case to go beyond the natural meaning.

“Ἐσθειν = ἐσθίειν, a Homeric form which “occurs Mc.<sup>1</sup> and probably Mc.<sup>1</sup>, Lc.<sup>4</sup>, mostly in the participle” (WH.<sup>2</sup>, *Notes*, p. 152 f., cf. WSchm., p. 127, Blass, p. 54). In the LXX. the shorter form of the participle is frequent in cod. B.

7. καὶ ἐκήρυσσεν λέγων Ἐρχεται κτλ.] A second stage in the Baptist’s preaching—the heralding of the Christ. Lc. (iii. 15) mentions that he was led to it by the growing belief in his own Messiahship. ‘Ο ισχυρότερος μου: cf.

Lc. xi. 22. Mt. inverts the sentence (ὅ δὲ οπ. μου ἐρχ. ισχυρότερος...); comp. Jo. i. 15, where the ground of the superiority is found in the preexistence of Messiah (ὅτι πρώτος μου ἦν). Οὐ... αὐτοῦ: see WM., p. 184 f.

οὐκ εἰμὶ ικανός] Cf. Exod. iv. 10 (LXX.). Ικανός εἰμι in the N. T. is followed by an inf., as here (Burton, § 376), by ἵνα (Mt. viii. 8), or by πρός τι (2 Cor. ii. 16). Jo. (i. 27) substitutes ἄξιος for ικανός; see Origen in Jo. t. vi. 36 (20).

κύψας λῦσαι τὸν ἴμαντα κτλ.] Κύψας is a touch peculiar to Mc. and expunged by D and some other Western authorities. For λῦσαι...ὑπόδ. αὐτοῦ (Mc. Lc.) Mt. substitutes τὰ ὑποδήματα βαστάσαι, cf. Victor, and Origen (in Jo. t. vi. 34), who suggests, ἀκόλουθόν γε μηδενὸς σφαλλομένου τῶν εὐαγγελιστῶν ...ἀμφότερα κατὰ διαφόρους καιροὺς εἱρηκέναι τὸν βαπτιστήν: similarly Aug. *de cons.* ii. 30. Both were servile acts connected with the use of the bath, and possibly suggested by the baptismal rite (Bengel: “ad baptismum...calcei exuebantur”): see Ps. lx. 10, and Lc. xv. 22, where the slaves offer ὑποδήματα. Plautus *trin.* ii. 1 speaks of slaves known as *sandaliferae*: and cf. Lucian *Herod.* 5, ὁ δέ τις μάλα δονλικῶς ἀφαιρεῖ τὸ σανδάλιον. For ιμάς (*corrigia*) see Isa. v. 27 (LXX.) οὐδὲ μὴ ράγωσιν οἱ ἴμαντες τῶν ὑποδημάτων αὐτῶν. Victor: ιμ. φησὶ τὸν σφαιρωτῆρα (Gen. xiv. 23) τοῦ ὑποδήματος. Euth.: τὸν ἐλάρου δεσμόν. For λῦσαι in this connexion see Exod. iii. 5 (LXX.) and Polyc. Mart. ἐπειράτο

<sup>8</sup> ἐγὼ ἐβάπτισα ὑμᾶς ὕδατι, αὐτὸς δὲ βαπτίσει ὑμᾶς 8 πνεύματι ἀγίῳ.

<sup>9</sup> Καὶ ἐγένετο ἐν ἐκείναις ταῖς ἡμέραις ἥλθεν 9 Ἰησοῦς ἀπὸ Ναζαρὲτ τῆς Γαλειλαίας καὶ ἐβαπτίσθη

8 εγω] + μεν ADPΓΔΠΕΦ al (om μεν ΙBLT<sup>d</sup> 33 69 al<sup>2</sup> b c ff t vg Or<sup>1</sup>) | υδατι] pr εν ADLPT<sup>d</sup>ΓΠΣΦ (om εν ΙΒΗΔ 16 33 al pauc Or<sup>1</sup>) | om υμας 2<sup>o</sup> Ι\* (hab Ιc<sup>a</sup>) b | πνευματι pr εν ΙADHPT<sup>d</sup>ΓΔΠΣΦ al a c fff r me Or<sup>1</sup> (om εν BL b t vg) | αγιω] + και πνρι ΡΦ al syr<sup>hel\*</sup> 9 om και i<sup>o</sup> B | om και εγενετο α | Ιησους] pr o DMΓΔΠΣΦ al | Ναζαρετ ΙBLΓΔ 33 69<sup>corr</sup> a b d f Or] Ναζαρατ ΑΡΣ Ναζαρεθ DEFHKMUVPΦ min<sup>mu</sup> vg me go

καὶ ὑπολύειν ἔαυτόν, μὴ πρότερον τοῦτο ποιῶν. Οὐ..αὐτοῦ, cf. vii. 25, and see WM., p. 184 f.

8. ἐβάπτισα] Mt., Lc., βαπτίξω. The aor. represents John's course as already fulfilled in view of the coming of Messiah: cf. the epistolary ἔγραψα scripsi, and ἐπεμψα misi (WM., p. 347). "Υδατι...πνέυματι 'with water,' 'with the Spirit,' dat. of manner or instrument (WM., p. 271): ἐν ὕδατι, ἐν πν. are used (Mt. Lc. Jo. i. 33, 34, Acts i. 5) in reference to the spheres, material and spiritual, in which the action is performed (WM., p. 483 ff.). For the correlation of ὕδωρ and πνέυμα see also Jo. iii. 5, iv. 14, vii. 38, 39, Acts i. 5, Tit. iii. 5. Mt., Lc. add καὶ πνρι. The effusion of the Spirit was a well-known characteristic of the Messianic age (see Isa. xliv. 3, Ezek. xxxvi. 25—27, Jocl ii. 28), but the phrase βαπτίξειν πνεύματι is new, though Joel (LXX.) has ἐκχεῶ and Ezek. ρανῶ. Πν. ἄγιον is the Holy Spirit in operation; contrast τὸ πν. (i. 10, 12), τὸ πν. τὸ ἄγ. (iii. 29), the Holy Spirit regarded as a Divine Power.

9—11. THE BAPTISM (Mt. iii. 13—17, Lc. iii. 21—22; cf. Jo. i. 32—34).

9. καὶ ἐγένετο...ἥλθεν] A Hebraism, יְהִי; also καὶ ἐγ. (or ἐγ. δέ)...καὶ: both constructions occur in the LXX., e.g. Gen. iv. 3, 8, and the N. T., but Mc. has only the first. For καὶ ἐγένετο followed by the inf. see Mc. ii. 23, and on the whole subject consult WM., p. 760 n., Burton, § 357 f. 'Εν

ἐκείναις ταῖς ἡμέραις, another Hebraism=בַּיּוֹם בְּזֶה. Cf. Exod. ii. 11, Jud. xviii. 1, &c., and in the N. T. Mt. iii. 1, Mc. viii. 1, xiii. 17, 24, Lc. ii. 1, iv. 2, Acts ii. 18, vii. 41, &c.; ἐν ἐκείνῃ τῇ ἡμέρᾳ occurs in nearly the same sense Lc. xvii. 31, Jo. xvi. 23, 26. As a note of time the phrase is somewhat indefinite, but like τότε (Mt. iii. 13) it brings the narrative which follows into general connexion with the preceding context. Here e.g. it connects the arrival of Jesus at the Jordan with the stage in the Baptist's ministry described in 7, 8. Euth.: ἡμέρας δὲ νῦν φησιν ἐν αἷς ἐκήρυσσε...δὲ ἵωαννης.

ἀπὸ Ναζαρὲτ τῆς Γαλειλαίας] Mt., ἀπὸ τῆς Γ.; the exact locality had been mentioned by him in ii. 23. Mc.'s ἀρχή does not carry him behind the Lord's residence at Nazareth; to the first generation Jesus was ὁ ἀπὸ Ν. (Jo. i. 46, Acts x. 37), or ὁ Ναζαρηνός (Mc. i. 24, xiv. 67, xvi. 6) or Ναζωραῖος (Lc.<sup>1</sup> Jo.<sup>3</sup> Acts<sup>8</sup>)—on the two forms see Dalman Gr. d. Aram. p. 141 n. Ναζαρέτ (-ρέθ, -ράθ, -ρά are also found, but not in Mc., see WH., Notes, p. 160) is unknown to the O. T. and to Josephus; and its insignificance seems to be implied by the explanatory notes which accompany the first mention of the place in Mt. ii. 23, Lc. ii. 39, and here: perhaps also by the question of Jo. i. 46. The onomastica reveal in etymologies, e.g. "N. flos aut virgultum eius vel munditiae aut separata vel custodita"; the first was based on a

το εἰς τὸν Ἰορδάνην ὑπὸ Ἰωάνου. ἐκαὶ εὐθὺς ἀναβαίνων  
εἰς τοῦ ὄδατος εἶδεν σχιζόμενους τοὺς οὐρανούς καὶ τὸ

<sup>9 εἰς τ. Ιορδ. υπὸ Ιωάν. ΝΒΔΛ 33 al] υπὸ Ιωάν. εἰς τ. Ιορδ. ΑΡΓΔΠΣΦ αἱ πλεῖ f συρ<sup>hcl</sup></sup>

arm go aeth | Ιορδ.] + ποταμον συρ<sup>hier</sup>      <sup>10 εὐθέως ΑΡΓΠ om D a b t | εκ ΝΒΔΛΔ</sup>

33 al go] απὸ ΑΡΓΔΠΣΦ αἱ πλεῖ | σχιζόμενους] ημνγμενους D latt (apertos, aperiri)

συρ<sup>hier</sup> | το πνευμα] + τον θεον arm

supposed reference to the נֶצֶר in Isa. xi. 1. Delitzsch (*Z. f. d. l. Th.*, 1876) proposed to connect the name with נֶצֶר, Aram. נֶצֶר (Dalman, p. 119, prefers תְּנִצְרָה, Aram. נֶצֶרָה, נֶצֶרָה), a watch-tower, in reference to its position on the flank of a hill commanding a wide prospect. On the situation see G. A. Smith's *H. G.*, p. 432 f. and Merrill, *Galilee*, p. 122. Τῆς Γαλειλαίας (Mt. xxi. 11, Lc. i. 26) is the topographical gen., cf. WM., p. 234. ‘Η γῆ ἡ Γαλειλαία, or simply ἡ Γ., occurs in the LXX. as far back as Jos. xx. 7, xxi. 32; cf. 3 Regn. ix. 11, 4 Regn. xv. 29, 1 Par. vi. 76 (61), Isa. ix. 1 (viii. 23), and answers to לִילֵי, הַלִּילֵי, a roll, or ring, hence a circuit of country: see G. A. Smith, *H. G.*, p. 413 ff., cf. Joseph. *B. J.* iii. 3. 1. From Nazareth the journey to the place of the Baptism would lie along the Esdraelon as far as Bethshan, and then down the valley of the Jordan. On the locality of the Baptism see G. A. Smith, *H. G.*, p. 496.

καὶ ἐβαπτίσθη...ὑπὸ Ἰ.] Mt. adds that the journey was taken for this purpose (τὸν βαπτισθῆναι). Εἰς τὸν Ἰορδάνην (WM., p. 517 f.) = ἐν τῷ Ἰορδάνῃ (i. 5), but with the added thought of the immersion, which gives vividness to the scene. In every other instance βαπτίζειν εἰς is followed by the acc. of the purpose (εἰς μετάνοιαν, εἰς ἄφεσιν) or of the object to which the baptized are united (εἰς Χριστὸν Ἰησοῦν, εἰς τὸν Μωυσῆν, εἰς τὸν θάνατον). ‘Υπὸ Ἰωάνου (cf. i. 5, note), as the rest—μετὰ τῶν δούλων ὁ δεσπότης (Euth. Zig.).

ΙΟ. καὶ εὐθὺς κτλ.] Εὐθὺς (Wy-

cliffe, *anoon*) is characteristic of Mc.—“ein Lieblingswort des Marcus,” Schanz—occurring Mc.<sup>41</sup> Mt.<sup>19</sup> Lc.<sup>7</sup>; Mt. shews a similar partiality for τότε. In the LXX. (Gen. xv. 4, xxxviii. 29) καὶ εὐθὺς = καὶ ἦδού, a phrase which, though common in the other Gospels, is not used by Mc. Of the forms εὐθὺς, εὐθέως the first only occurs in Mc.; the second predominates in the rest of the N. T. (§ 2).

ἀναβαίνων ἐκ τοῦ ὄδατος] Out of the river into which He had descended: cf. Jos. iv. 18, ἐξέβησαν οἱ ἱερεῖς...ἐκ τοῦ Ἰορδάνου, Jer. xxix. 20 (xlix. 19), ὥσπερ λέων ἀναβήσεται ἐκ μέσου τοῦ Ἰορδάνου. Mt.'s ἀπὸ τοῦ ὄδατος is less graphic, giving merely the point of departure: cf. Acts xxv. 1, Apoc. vii. 2. Lc. adds προσευχόμενος, cf. Mc. i. 25, vi. 46, Lc. ix. 28.

εἶδεν σχιζόμενους τοὺς οὐρανούς] The subject is Ἰησοῦς (v. 9). Some interpreters, influenced by Jo. i. 32 ff., have regarded ἀναβαίνων as a *nōm. pendens*, and understood ὁ Ἰωάνης after εἶδεν: cf. Tindale, “John saw heavens open” (so even in Mt.). It was permitted to the Baptist to share the vision as a witness (Jo. l.c. ἔώρακα καὶ μεμαρτύρηκα), but the vision was primarily for the Christ.

σχιζόμενους] Vg. *apertos*, with the ‘Western’ text, from Mt. (ἡνεψχθησαν οἱ οὐρανοί, cf. Lc.); in the true text of Mc. both the word and the tense are more graphic—‘He saw the heaven in the act of being riven asunder.’ Bengel: “dicitur de eo quod antea non fuerat apertum.” Σχιζόμενος is used of a garment (Isa. xxxvi. 22, Jo. xix. 24), a veil (Lc. xxiii. 45), a net (Jo. xxi. 11), rocks (Zech. xiv. 4, Isa.

πνεῦμα ὡς περιστερὰν καταβαῖνον εἰς αὐτόν. <sup>π</sup> καὶ ΙΙ

10 ωἱ] ωσεὶ ΜΡΣΦ al | καταβαινον]+και μερον ΝΔfortespatvac 33 262 al b ff t vg me  
aeth | eis BD 13 69 al<sup>paue</sup> a g] επ ΝΑΛΡΓΔΠΣΦ alpler

xlviii. 21, Mt. xxvii. 51), and wood (Gen. xxii. 3): *scindere caelum* occurs in Silius Italicus i. 535 f. Ἀνοίγειν is the usual word in this connexion (Gen. vii. 11, Ps. lxxvii. (lxxviii.) 23, Isa. xxiv. 18, lxiv. 1, Acts vii. 56, Apoc. iv. 1, xix. 11): cf. esp. Ezek. i. 1, ἥνοιχθησαν οἱ οὐρανοὶ καὶ εἴδου ὅράστεις θεοῦ. Orig. in *Jo. fragm.* (Brooke, ii. 238), ἀνοίξων δὲ ἡ σχίσιν οὐρανῶν αἰσθητικῶς οὐκ ἔστιν ἰδεῖν, ὅπότε οὐδὲ τῶν παχυτέρων σωμάτων. Jerome in Matt. l.c. “aperiuntur autem caeli non reseratione elementorum, sed spiritualibus oculis.” This vision of the rending heavens seems to have symbolised the outcome of Christ’s mission: cf. Jo. i. 51.

καὶ τὸ πνεῦμα] Mt. πνεῦμα θεοῦ (cf. Gen. i. 2), Lc. τὸ πν. τὸ ἄγιον. The art. either looks back to i. 8, ‘the (Holy) Spirit already mentioned,’ or more probably indicates the Person of the Spirit, as in Jo. i. 32, 33, Acts x. 19, xi. 12, &c.

ὡς περιστεράν] Mt. ὡσεὶ π., Lc. σωματικῷ εἶδει ὡς π. Jerome: “non veritas sed similitudo monstratur.” The Ebionite Gospel paraphrased: ἐν εἴδει περιστερᾶς κατελθούσης καὶ εἰσελθούσης εἰς αὐτόν. Cf. Justin *dial.* 88, ὡς περιστερὰν τὸ ἄγιον πνεῦμα ἐπιπήναι ἐπ’ αὐτὸν ἔγραψαν οἱ ἀπόστολοι, and see other references in Resch, *Paralleltexte zu Luc.*, p. 15 f. The vision corresponds to that of Gen. i. 2, where תְּפַתְּרַתְּ suggests the motion of a bird; cf. *Chagigah* (ed. Streane) 15 A. The dove is a familiar image in Hebr. poetry; see esp. Ps. lxviii. 13 (Cheyne), Cant. ii. 12; F. C. Conybeare (*Exp. iv.* ix. 436) produces illustrations from Philo, e.g. *quis rer.*

*div. her.* 25, ἡ θεία σοφία...συμβολικῶς ...τρυγών καλεῖται: ib. 48, περιστερᾶ μὲν ὁ ἡμέτερος νοῦς...εἰκάζεται, τῷ δὲ τούτου παραδείγματι (i.e. the Divine λόγος) ἡ τρυγών. In the *Protev.*, c. 9, Joseph is said to have been marked by a like phenomenon: ἵδον περιστερᾶ...ἔξηλθεν ἐπὶ τὴν κεφαλὴν Ἰωσῆφ. On the significance of the symbol, cf. Mt. x. 16, Tert. *bapt.* 8, and the Greek commentators *ad l.*, e.g. Victor: ἐν εἴδει περιστερᾶς...πὸ πνεῦμα ἔρχεται τὸν ἔλεον τοῦ θεοῦ καταγγέλλον τῇ οἰκουμένῃ, ἅμα καὶ δηλοῦν ὅτι τὸν πνευματικὸν ἀπόνηρον εἶναι χρὴ καὶ πρᾶον, ἀπλοῦν τε καὶ ἄδολον.

καταβαῖνον εἰς αὐτόν] The κατάβασις answers to the ἀνάβασις of i. 10; cf. the play upon these compounds in Jo. iii. 13, Eph. iv. 9, 10. For εἰς αὐτόν, Mt., Lc. prefer ἐπ’ αὐτόν: only Jo. (i. 33) has καὶ ἔμενεν ἐπ’ αὐτόν (cf. Isa. xi. 2; see v. II. here). The immanence of the Spirit in Jesus was at once the purpose of the Descent and the evidence of His being the Christ; see note on next verse.

II. καὶ φωνή κτλ.] Victor: ἡ ἀγγελικὴ τις ἦν ἡ καὶ ἐτέρα ἐκ προσώπου τοῦ πατρός. For exx. of such voices in the O. T. see Gen. xxi. 17, xxii. 11, 15, Exod. xix. 19, xx. 22, 1 Kings xix. 12, 13. In the Gospels the Father’s Voice is heard thrice, at the Baptism and Transfiguration (cf. 2 Pet. i. 17) and before the Passion (Jo. xii. 28). The Voice was audible or articulate only to those who had ‘ears to hear’ (Jo. v. 37, xii. 29): comp. the scoff of the Jew in Orig. c. *Cels.* i. 41, τίς ἤκουσεν ἔξ οὐρανοῦ φωνῆς; On its relation to the לִיר הַבָּא see Edersheim, *Life and Times*, i. p. 285.

φωνῇ ἐγένετο ἐκ τῶν οὐρανῶν Κὺ εἰ ὁ νιός μου, ὁ ἀγαπητός· § ἐν σοὶ Τ εὐδόκησα. Τ

I 2      §<sup>12</sup> Καὶ εὐθὺς § τὸ πνεῦμα αὐτὸν ἐκβάλλει εἰς τὴν

II εγενετο Νe.aABLP alpler latvetplervg syrr arm me] om Η\*D ff g t ηκουσθη 28  
2<sup>pe</sup> [ ουρανων]+λεγων syrhier+και λεγει arm | σοι ΗBDLPAΣ7 i 13 22 33 69 604 2<sup>pe</sup>  
al a t vg me al] ω ΑΓΠΦ al b d g | ηδοκησα D<sup>corr</sup> EFHVTΔ al      12 το πνευμα]+το  
αγιον D

σὺ εἰ ὁ νιός μου, ὁ ἀγαπητός] So Lc., after Ps. ii. 7; Mt., οὐτός ἐστιν κτλ. The words point to Gen. xxii. 2 and perhaps also to Isa. xlvi. 1 (cf. Mt. xii. 18). 'Αγαπητός in the LXX. answers to ΤΙΠΙ (μονογενής, unicus, cf. Hort, *Two Diss.* p. 49 f.) in seven instances out of fifteen; in the N. T., where the word is much more frequent, it is exclusively a title of Christ, or applied to Christians as such. As a Messianic title (cf. Mc. ix. 7, xii. 6, 2 Pet. i. 17, Eph. i. 6 (ὁ ἡγαπημένος), Col. i. 13 (ὁ νιός τῆς ἀγάπης αὐτοῦ), where however see Lightfoot), it indicates a unique relation to God; thus in Rom. viii. 31 τοῦ ιδίου νιού is substituted for τοῦ ἀγαπητοῦ νιού of Gen. xxii. 16. The title is frequent as a name of Messiah in the *Ascension of Isaiah* (ed. Charles, p. 3 &c.; see also Hastings, *D. B.* ii. 501; cf. *Test. XII. patr.* Benj. 11, ἀναστήσεται... ἀγαπητὸς Κυρίου) and is used in the *Targum of Jonathan* on Isa. xlvi. 1.

ἐν σοὶ εὐδόκησα] Latt., *in te complacui.* Mt., ἐν φῳ εὐθ. Εὐδοκεῖν ἐν= בְּ יְהוָה 2 Regn. xxii. 20, Mal. ii. 17, or בְּ יְהוָה Ps. xlvi. (xliv.) 4, cxlv. (cxlvii.) 11. The reference is probably to Isa. xlvi. 1 ΤΙΠΙ בְּ יְהוָה (LXX. προσεδέξατο, Th. ηδόκησεν); the exact phrase occurs in Isa. Ixii. 4. In Lc. an early Western reading substitutes ἐγὼ σήμερον γεγέννηκά σε (from Ps. ii. 7), cf. Just. dial. 103; in the G. acc. to the Hebrews the two sayings seem to have been combined (Epiph. haer. xxx. 13). Acc. to Jerome (on Isa. xi. 2) the Nazarene Gospel had the interesting gloss, "Fili mi, in omnibus prophetis expectabam

te ut venires et requiescerem in te; tu es enim requies mea."

The aor. εὐδόκησα does not denote merely "the historical process by which God came to take pleasure in Jesus during his earthly life" (Gould), but rather the satisfaction of the Father in the Son during the preexistent life; cf. Jo. i. 2, xvii. 24. Thus it corresponds to the perf. ΠΗצְל of Isa. xlvi. 1; cf. Driver, *Tenses in Hebr.* § 9, Burton, § 55.

Theodore of Mopsuestia, in the interests of his Christology, held that the εὐδοκία arose from the foreseen perfection of the Man with whom the Word united Himself (*Minor Epp.* ii. p. 294 ff.). According to his view the Son in whom God took pleasure was not the Word, but the ἀναληφθεὶς ἀνθρωπος (ib. i. 63, 260; Migne, *P. G.* lxvi. 705—6).

12—13. THE TEMPTATION (Mt. iv. 1—11, Lc. iv. 1—13).

12. καὶ εὐθὺς τὸ πνεῦμα κτλ.] For καὶ εὐθὺς see i. 10 n. 'Εκβάλλει, Vg. expellit; other Latin texts (a, f) have duxit, eduxit: Wycliffe, "puttide hym (forth)." Mt. has simply ἀνήχθη... ὑπὸ τοῦ πνεύματος, Lc. ἥγετο ἐν τῷ πνεύματι. 'Εκβάλλειν is used for the power exercised by Christ over the δαιμόνια (e.g. i. 34). But expellit and "driveth" (A.V.) or "driveth forth" (R.V.) are perhaps too strong in this context, cf. Mt. ix. 38, Mc. i. 43, Jo. x. 4; ἐκβάλλειν=ΝΙΨΗ in 2 Chron. xxiii. 14, xxix. 5 (see Guillemand, *G. T., Hebraistic ed.* p. 20). At the most the word denotes here only a pressure upon the spirit (Victor: ἔλκει), not an irresistible

ἐρημον. <sup>τις</sup> καὶ ἦν ἐν τῇ ἐρήμῳ τεσσεράκοντα ἡμέρας 13 πειραζόμενος ὑπὸ τοῦ σατανᾶ, καὶ ἦν μετὰ τῶν θηρίων· § καὶ οἱ ἄγγελοι διηκόνουν αὐτῷ.

§ G

13 εν τη ερ.] pr εκει EFHMΓΔΗ<sup>corr</sup>ΦΣΤ al<sup>pl</sup> syrr arm go aeth εκει sine εν τ. ε. KII\*  
I 28\* 69 124 131 209 604 2<sup>ro</sup> al syr<sup>sin</sup> arm | ημέρας]+καὶ τεσσαράκοντα νυκτας (vel  
κ. ν. τ.) LM 13 33 al vg syr<sup>helmg</sup> me aeth | πειραζόμενος] pr καὶ D | οι αγγελοι] om  
οι AM<sup>7</sup> 33 al

power. Mt. adds the purpose (*πειρασθῆναι ὑπὸ τοῦ διαβόλου*). Cf. Hilary in *Matt.*, “significatur libertas Spiritus sancti, hominem suum iam diabolo offerentis”; Jerome in *Matt. l.c.*, “dudicatur autem non invitus aut captus, sed voluntate pugnandi.”

*εἰς τὴν ἔρημον*] To be distinguished apparently from the *ἔρημος* of i. 4. Christian tradition from the time of the Crusades points to the Quarantania (*Jebel Kuruntul*), a rugged limestone height which rises 1000 feet above the plain of Jericho (cf. Josh. xvi. 1); the Arabs on the other hand select the conical hill *'Osh el Ghurāb*. The Gospels give no indication beyond the fact that the Lord went to the place from the Jordan.

13. *τεσσεράκοντα ἡμέρας...σατανᾶ*] The same limit of time occurs in the lives of Moses and Elijah (Exod. xxxiv. 28, 1 Kings xix. 8), and again in the life of Christ (Acts i. 3); for other exx. of the number in Scripture see Trench, *Studies in the Gospels*, p. 13 ff. Mc., Lc. make the Temptation coextensive with the 40 days; Mt. seems to connect the limit of time with the fasting, and to place the Temptation at the end of the days. Comp. in support of the Marcan tradition Clem. *hom.* xi. 35, xix. 2; Orig. *hom. in Luc.* 29. *Πειράζειν* in the LXX. is used of man tempting God, and of God tempting man, but not of Satanic suggestions: in 1 Chron. xxi. 1 we have *ἐπέστεισεν* in this connexion: in 1 Macc. i. 15 *ἐπειράθησαν* (*N<sup>c.a<sup>2</sup></sup>*) approaches to the latter sense, but the

reading is more than doubtful. In the N. T. this meaning is common (cf., besides the present context and its parallels, 1 Cor. vii. 5, Gal. vi. 1, Heb. ii. 18, Apoc. ii. 10, iii. 10); in Mt. iv. 3, perhaps also in 1 Thess. iii. 5, ὁ πειράζων=ὁ σατανᾶς. See Mayor on James i. 13.

ὑπὸ τοῦ σατανᾶ] Mt., Lc., ὑπὸ τοῦ διαβόλου. The LXX. translate יְהוָה by ὁ διάβολος in Job i., ii., and Zech. iii.; σατάν is used in the sense of an adversary in 3 Regn. xi. 14, 23, ὁ σατανᾶς appears first in Sir. xxi. 27 (30). In the N. T. ὁ σατανᾶς or Σατανᾶς (Mc. iii. 23, Lc. xxii. 3) is invariably the Adversary *κατ' ἐξοχήν*, and the name is freely used by the Synoptists and St Paul, and in the Apocalypse. On the history of the Jewish belief in Satan see Cheyne, *Origin of the Psalter*, p. 282 f., Schultz, *O.T. Theology*, ii. p. 274 ff., Edersheim, *Life &c.* ii. p. 755 ff., Charles, *Enoch*, pp. 52 ff., 119, Weber, *Jüd. Theologie*, ed. 2, p. 251 f.

ἦν μετὰ τῶν θηρίων] Comp. 2 Macc. v. 27, Ιούδας...διάχωρήσας ἐν τοῖς ὅρεσιν (i.e. probably the wilderness of Judea), θηρίων τρόπον διέζη. In Ps. xc. (xc.) 13 the promise of victory over the θηρία follows immediately after that of angelic guardianship, cited by the Tempter in Mt. iv. 6. But this peculiarly Marcan touch may be simply meant to accentuate the loneliness of the place; cf. Victor: οὗτος ἄβατος ἦν ἡ ἔρημος ὡς καὶ θηρίων πλήρης ὑπάρχειν: it was not such an *ἔρημος* as John tenanted, but a haunt of the hyaena,

14     <sup>14</sup>*Kai μετὰ τὸ παραδοθῆναι τὸν Ἰωάννην ἥλθεν ὁ Ἰησοῦς εἰς τὴν Γαλειλαίαν κηρύσσων τὸ εὐαγγέλιον*

14 καὶ μετὰ BD a (c) *syr<sup>sin</sup>*] μετὰ δὲ ΝΑΛΓΔΠΣΦΤ al latt<sup>vitruv</sup> syrr<sup>Desh hec</sup> go aeth | τὸν Ιωαν.] om τὸν AEFG\*H al | o Ιησους] om o AV<sup>corr</sup>ΓΠΤ al | κηρυσσων] pr διδασκων καὶ L

jackal, and leopard (cf. Tristram, *Land of Israel*, p. 240; G. A. Smith, *H. G.*, p. 316 f.). The mystical reference to the Second Adam (Gen. ii. 19), which some have imagined, seems, as Meyer has well said, out of place in this narrative; see, however, Trench, *Studies*, p. 9 f.

καὶ οἱ ἄγγελοι διηκόνουν αὐτῷ] Apparently during the forty days, the imperf. corresponding with ἦν...πειραζόμενος...ἦν. Mt. seems to limit this ministry to the end (*τότε προσῆλθον*). Comp. Gen. xxviii. 12, Jo. i. 51, Heb. i. 14; esp. the hymn in 1 Tim. iii. 16, ἐδικαίωθή ἐν πνεύματι, ὡφθῇ ἀγγέλοις. The *διακονία* may refer to the supply of physical (1 Kings xix. 5 ff.) or spiritual (Dan. x. 19 ff.) needs. Such a ministration, while it attests the human weakness of the Lord, bears witness also to His Sonship; cf. Clem. Al. *exc. Theod.* § 85 ὡς ἀν ἥδη βασιλεὺς ἀληθὴς ὑπ' ἀγγέλων ἥδη διακονεῖται.

14—15. FIRST PREACHING IN GALILEE (Mt. iv. 12—17, Lc. iv. 14—15).

14. μετὰ τὸ παραδοθῆναι τὸν Ἰωάννην] A definite *terminus a quo* for all that follows: cf. Mt., ἀκούσας δὲ ὅτι Ἰωάννης παρεδόθη. *Παραδίδωμι* (in the LXX. generally the equivalent of ἔπειτα) acquires its special meaning from the context; the most usual complement is *εἰς* (τὰς) *χεῖρας* (τῶν) ἐχθρῶν or the like, but we find also *π.* *εἰς* *θάνατον* 2 Chr. xxxii. 11, *εἰς* *προνομήν* (Isa. xxxiii. 23), *εἰς* *σφαγήν* (xxxiv. 2). Here we may supply *εἰς* *φυλακήν*, as in Acts viii. 3, xxii. 4; cf. Lc. iii. 20, Jo. iii. 24. The events of Jo. ii. iii. must be placed before the commencement of the Synoptic Ministry. If Mark is silent as to the previous work in Galilee and

Judea, he does not “exclude it” (Gould); it lies outside his subject—perhaps outside his information. From Mc.’s point of view the Lord’s Ministry begins where the Baptist’s ends: “Ioanne tradito, recte ipse incipit praedicare; desinente lege, consequenter oritur evangelium” (Jerome).

ἥλθεν] Mt., ἀνεχώρησεν. This journey to Galilee was in fact a withdrawal from Judea, where the tidings of John’s imprisonment (Mt.), and still more the growing jealousy of the Pharisees towards the new Teacher (Jo. iv. 1), rendered a longer stay dangerous or unprofitable. Though Galilee was under the jurisdiction of Antipas, His mission there would not expose Him at first to the tetrarch’s interference (cf. Mc. vi. 14, Lc. xiii. 31 f., xxiii. 8). It was Jerusalem, not Galilee, that shed the blood of the prophets; in any case it was clear that Jerusalem would not tolerate His teaching; Galilee offered a better field (cf. Jo. iv. 45). The Greek commentators think of the move only as an escape from peril (Theod. Heracl., ἵνα ἡμᾶς διδάξῃ μὴ ἀποπηδᾶν τοῖς κινδύνοις: Victor, διετήρει ἑαυτόν); but the other motive should be kept in view.

εἰς τὴν Γαλειλαίαν] Jo. adds πάλιν, and states the route (iv. 4 διὰ τῆς Σαμαρίας). Cana was visited on the way to Capernaum (Jo. iv. 46).

κηρύσσων τὸ εὐαγγέλιον τοῦ θεοῦ] Contrast i. 4 κηρύσσων βάπτισμα μετανοίας. Both proclamations urged repentance, and both told of good tidings; but μετάνοια predominated in the one, εὐαγγέλιον in the other. The preaching of Jesus began, as a regular mission, with the silencing of John:

τοῦ θεοῦ <sup>τις</sup> καὶ λέγων ὅτι Πεπλήρωται ὁ καιρός, 15  
καὶ ἥγγικεν ἡ βασιλεία τοῦ θεοῦ· μετανοεῖτε, καὶ  
πιστεύετε ἐν τῷ εὐαγγελίῳ.

<sup>14 του θεου]</sup> pr της βασιλειας ΑΔΓΔΙΙΣΦ<sup>τ</sup> al a f g vg syrpesh go aeth      15 καὶ  
λεγων<sup>ν</sup> ΒΚΛΜΔΙΦ alpler a b vg syrr<sup>pesch</sup> hel me] om καὶ Ν<sup>α</sup>ΑΔΕΦΓΗΣΥΣΤ<sup>τ</sup> 1071 al  
f ff g t go om καὶ λεγ. Ν<sup>\*</sup> ε συι<sup>sin</sup> Or | πεπληρωνται οι καιροι D a b c ff g r t | om εν  
36<sup>εν</sup> 481 b f vg Or

cf. Mt. iv. 17, ἀπὸ τότε ἥρξατο. He took up the Baptist's note, but added another. Τὸ εὐαγγέλιον τοῦ θεοῦ (εὐ. θεοῦ) is a Pauline phrase (Rom. i. 1, xv. 16, 2 Cor. xi. 7, 1 Thess. ii. 8, 9), used however also by St Peter (1 Pet. iv. 17). The gen. probably denotes the source: the Gospel which comes from God, of which God (the Father) is the Author and Sender; cf. v. 1; see, however, the more inclusive view advocated by SH. (on Rom. i. 1). The insertion of τῆς βασιλειας (vv. ll.) is due to a desire to explain an unusual phrase: see next verse.

15. ὅτι Πεπλήρωται ὁ καιρός κτλ.] The substance of the new proclamation. "Οτι" is here 'recitative' (WM., p. 683 n.), as in i. 37, 40, ii. 12, and frequently in Mc. For πληροῦσθαι used of time, cf. Gen. xxix. 21, πεπλήρωνται (**אִלְלַבְּ**) αἱ ἡμέραι—a phrase frequently occurring in the LXX.; and for its connexion with καιρός see Tob. xiv. 5 (B), Esth. ii. 12 (A). Καιρός (usually = **תֹּהֶם** or **צָמֵן**) is the 'season,' the 'opportune moment' (see esp. Eccl. iii. 1–8), with an ethical outlook, χρόνος being merely the time, considered as a date: see Trench, *syn.* § vii. and cf. Lightfoot on 1 Thess. v. 1. Thus St Paul speaks of the πλήρωμα τοῦ χρόνου (Gal. iv. 4), when he has in view the place of the Incarnation in the order of events, but of the πλήρ. τῶν καιρῶν (Eph. i. 10), when he thinks of the Divine οἰκονομία. Here the thought is that of the opportuneness of the moment. The season fixed in the foreknowledge of God (Acts i. 7),

and for which the whole moral guidance of the world had prepared, was fully come. It is not so much in regard to Galilee that the words are spoken as in reference to the world and humanity considered as a whole. See *Lux Mundi*, Essay iv.

καὶ ἥγγικεν ἡ βασιλεία τοῦ θεοῦ]  
Acc. to Mt. (iii. 2) this announcement had been anticipated by John. Mt. has usually ἡ βασ. τῶν οὐρανῶν (τοῦ θ. only in vi. 33, xii. 28, xix. 24, xxi. 31, 43), but the two expressions are nearly equivalent (see Schürer II. ii. 171, Bevan on Dan. iv. 26, Stanton, *J. and Chr. Messiah*, p. 208 f.). The term possibly originated in the language of Daniel—see esp. ii. 24, vii. 22 (Nestle, *Marginal.*, p. 41), and cf. Stanton, p. 211—and there are parallels in pre-Christian literature, e.g. Ps. Solom. xvii. 23, ἀναστήσει αὐτοῖς τὸν βασιλέα αὐτῶν...εἰς τὸν καιρὸν ὃν ἔδει. On the Rabbinical use of the term see Stanton, p. 214 f. A yearning for a Divine Kingdom pervades the history of Israel, and the new preaching in announcing its realisation probably found the phrase ready. For a fresh and invigorating if incomplete view of the subject see *Ecce Homo* cc. iii., iv. "ἥγγικεν, appropinquavit," 'hath drawn near,' is nigh; cf. Isa. lvi. 1, Thren. iv. 19, Ezek. vii. 7, &c. (**בָּקָר** or **בָּקָר**); Mc. xiv. 42, Lc. x. 9, 11, 1 Pet. iv. 7.

μετανοεῖτε, καὶ πιστεύετε κτλ.] See on v. 14. For the connexion of μετάνοια and πίστις cf. Acts xx. 21, Heb. vi. 1. Πιστεύειν ἐν (**בְּ יַמְנָנָה**) occurs in Ps. lxxvii. (lxxviii.) 22, cv.

16     <sup>τὸν</sup> Καὶ παράγων παρὰ τὴν θάλασσαν τῆς Γαλειλαίας εἶδεν Σίμωνα καὶ Ἀνδρέαν τὸν ἀδελφὸν Σίμωνος ἀμφιβάλλοντας ἐν τῇ θαλάσσῃ, ἥσαν γὰρ ἀλεῖς.

16 καὶ παραγων ΝΒΔΛ 13 33 69 60<sup>4</sup> al latt syr<sup>sin pesh</sup> arm me] περιπατῶν δε ΑΓΔΠΣΦ al<sup>pl</sup> syr<sup>hel</sup> (txt) | Σίμωνος ΝΒΛΜΦ min<sup>rauc</sup> a arm me] τον Σ. ΑΕ<sup>corr</sup>Δ 1 69 al<sup>nonn</sup> αυτου τον Σ. Ε\*FHKSUVIIΣΦΤ al<sup>mu</sup> syr<sup>hel</sup> go αυτον DGF 33 al latt<sup>vtpl</sup> syrr aeth | αμφιβαλλοντας ΝΑΒΔΕ\* al] βαλλοντας Ε<sup>corr</sup>ΜΓΠ<sup>corr</sup> al+αμφιβληστρον ΑΓΔΠΣΦΤ 2<sup>pe</sup>mg al b ff+αμφιβληστρα t al+ta δικτυα D 13 28 69 134 346 2<sup>petxt</sup> a c f g vg | αλεις ΝΒ<sup>corr</sup>(D)ΓΠ al

(cvi.) 12 (cf. 24), Jer. xii. 6, and elsewhere, frequently however with a v. l. which omits *ἐν*. In the N. T. the construction is perhaps unique (see Westcott on Jo. iii. 15, and Ellicott on Eph. i. 13—on its occurrence in Ign. *Philad.* 8, cf. Lightfoot *ad l.*); nor do we elsewhere hear of believing the Gospel (see however ‘Mc.’ xvi. 15, 16); faith is regarded as primarily due to the Person of whom the Gospel speaks (cf. e.g. Jo. xiv. 1). Yet faith in the message was the first step; a creed of some kind lies at the basis of confidence in the Person of Christ, and the occurrence of the phrase *π. ἐν τῷ εὐαγγέλιῳ* in the oldest record of the teaching of our Lord is a valuable witness to this fact. Τὸ εὐαγγέλιον is the nucleus of Christian teaching already imparted in the announcement ἡγγικεν, κτλ. For other meanings see note on i. 1.

16—20. CALL OF THE FIRST FOUR DISCIPLES (Mt. iv. 18—22; cf. Lc. v. 1 ff.).

16. καὶ παράγων παρὰ τὴν θάλασσαν κτλ.] Mt. περιπατῶν δε; see vv. ll. here. Παράγων intrans. (=גַּבֵּעַ) occurs in the LXX. (Ps. cxxviii. (cxxix.) 8, cxlii. (cxliv.) 4) and N. T. (Mt. Mc. Jo. Paul), but the construction with παρά seems to stand alone; see however 3 Macc. vi. 16, κατὰ τὸν ἰππόδρομον παρῆγεν. Mt. and Mc. carry the reader at once to the lake-side; Lc. prefaches the preaching at Caper-

naum with the synagogue-scene at Nazareth: see Mc. vi. 1, note.

τὴν θάλασσαν τῆς Γ.] So Mt., Mc., or more usually ‘the Sea.’ Jo. adds (vi. 1) or substitutes (xxi. 1) τῆς Τιθεριάδος. Lc. prefers λίμνη to θάλασσα, and in v. 1 calls it ἡ λ. Γεννησαρέτ, apparently from the district known as Γεννησαρέτ on its western shore (Mc. vi. 53): cf. Joseph. B. J. iii. 10, 7, ἡ λ. Γεννησάρ, 1 Macc. xi. 67, τὸ ὄδωρ τοῦ Γ. The O. T. name is מִן־צָהָב, θάλασσα Χενάρα (Χενέρεθ, Χενεράθ), Num. xxxiv. 11, Jos. xiii. 27. On the topography of the Lake see G. A. Smith, *H. G.* c. xxi.

εἶδεν Σίμωνα καὶ Ἀνδρέαν] Σίμων is a Hellenized form of Συμεών (=יַעֲזֹבֶר, Gen. xxix. 33, cf. Apoc. vii. 7); both forms are used in reference to Simon Maccabaeus, 1 Macc. ii. 3, 66, to whose reputation the popularity of this name is probably due (Lightfoot, *Gal.*, p. 268). The Apostle is called Συμεὼν in Acts xv. 14, 2 Pet. i. 1 (ΝΑ); the Synoptists call him Σίμων up to the choosing of the Apostles, after which he is Πέτρος (but see Mt. xvi. 16, 17, xvii. 25, Mc. xiv. 37, Lc. xxii. 31, xxiv. 34), a name which Mt. anticipates here (iv. 18, Σ. τὸν λεγόμενον Π.). For a fuller discussion see Hort, *St Peter*, p. 151 ff., or Chase, in Hastings’ *D. B.* iii. p. 756. Ἀνδρέας is a true Greek name (Herodotus vi. 126), but instances occur of its use by Jews (Smith’s *D. B.*, ed. 2, i. 128); and Andrew appears in com-

<sup>17</sup>καὶ εἶπεν αὐτοῖς ὁ Ἰησοῦς Δεῦτε ὀπίσω μου, καὶ <sup>17</sup>  
ποιήσω §ὑμᾶς γενέσθαι ἀλεεῖς ἀνθρώπων. <sup>18</sup>καὶ εὐθὺς <sup>18</sup> § C  
ἀφέντες τὰ δίκτυα ἥκολούθησαν αὐτῷ. <sup>19</sup>καὶ προβὰς <sup>19</sup>

17 ομ o Ιησους Φ | ομ γενεσθαι i 13 28 69 118 209 604 1071 al b syrr<sup>in pesh</sup>  
aeth | αλεις B<sup>corr</sup> DΓΠ 18 ευθυς ΝL 33] ευθεως ABCD al pl | τα δικτυα ΝBCL al  
vg arm me]+ αυτων ΑΓΔΠΣΦΤ alpler f g syrr go aeth παντα D a b c ff τα λινα  
604 | ηκολουθουν B 19 προβας]+ εκειθεν Ν\*ΑCΓΔΠΣΦΤ alpler (Νc.a 33 post ολιγ.)  
e f vg syr<sup>hel</sup> arm go aeth

pany with Greeks in Jo. xii. 20 f. The brothers came from Bethsaida (Jo. l.c., i. 44, cf. Mc. vi. 45 n.), but at this time resided in Capernaum (Mc. i. 29); the father's name was Jonas (Mt. xvi. 17), or John (Jo. i. 42, xxi. 15—17). Andrew had been a disciple of the Baptist (Jo. i. 35, 40), but apparently both A. and S. had for some time followed Jesus, witnessing His miracles in Galilee (Jo. ii. 2, 7) and Jerusalem (ib. 13, 23), and baptizing in His Name (Jo. iii. 22, iv. 2); after His return to Galilee they had gone back to Capernaum and resumed their fishing.

ἀμφιβάλλοντας ἐν τῇ θαλάσσῃ] Mt. βάλλοντας ἀμφιβληστρον εἰς τὴν θάλασσαν: cf. Hab. i. 17, ἀμφιβαλεῖ τὸ ἀμφιβληστρον αὐτοῦ, and see vv. II. here. Mc. alone uses ἀμφιβάλλειν absolutely; cf. however οἱ ἀμφιβολεῖς, Isa. xix. 8. On the synonyms ἀμφιβληστρον, δίκτυον (Mc. i. 18, 19), σαγήνη (Mt. xiii. 47), see Trench *syn.*, § Ixiv.: ἀμφ. and σαγήνη occur together in Hab. i. 16, cf. Isa. xix. 8. On ἀμφιβ. εἰς, ἐν, see WM., p. 520.

ἥσαν γὰρ ἀλεεῖς] The form ἀλεεῖς predominates in the best mss. of the LXX. (Isa. xix. 8 Ν\*B\*, Jer. xvi. 16 Ν\*B\*, Ezek. xlvi. 10 B\*A (but Job xl. 26 ἀλιέων); cf. WII., *Notes*, 151. On the fish of the Lake of G. see Sir C. W. Wilson in Smith's *D. B.*, ed. 2, ii. p. 1074; Merrill, *Galilee*, p. 43 f.

17. καὶ εἶπεν αὐτοῖς κτλ.] The brothers are in their boat, Jesus speaks from the shore; cf. Jo. xxi. 4, 5. Δεῦτε ὀπίσω μου = ἩΠΑΝ ΚΩΣ, 4

Regn. vi. 19; other forms are ἔρχεσθαι (Mc. viii. 34), ἀπέρχεσθαι (Mc. i. 20), ἀκολουθεῖν ὄπίσω (Mt. x. 38), or simply ἀκολουθεῖν w. dat. (Mc. ii. 14, viii. 34 b, Jo. i. 43, &c.); for ὑπάγειν ὄπίσω with a very different sense, see Mc. viii. 33. On the form of the sentence see Burton § 269 c.

καὶ ποιήσω...ἀνθρώπων] Mt. omits γενέσθαι (ΠΟΙΗ?) ; see WM., p. 757, and C. W. Votaw, *Use of the Infinitive*, p. 7. Ἀλεεῖς ἀνθρώπων: so Mt.; Lc. ἀπὸ τοῦ νῦν ἀνθρώπους ἔσῃ ζωγρῶν. For the metaphor, cf. Prov. vi. 26, Jer. xvi. 16, 2 Tim. ii. 26, and cf. Pitra, *Spic. Solesm.* iii. 419 ff.; as to its influence on early Christian thought and art see the articles 'fish,' 'fisherman' in *D. C. A.* In Clem. Alex. *hymn. in Chr.* the Lord Himself is the ἀλιεὺ[ς] μερόπων | τῶν σωζομένων | πελάγους κακίας | ἱχθύς ἀγνούς | κύματος ἔχθροῦ | γλυκερᾶ ζωῆ δελεάζων. The *anulus piscatoris* worn by the Pope is of mediaeval origin (*D. C. A.* ii. p. 1807). Erasmus appositely remarks, "piscantes primum piscatus est Jesus."

18. καὶ εὐθὺς ἀφέντες τὰ δίκτυα] So Mt.; Lc., who appears to follow another tradition (cf. Latham, *Pastor pastorum*, p. 197 f.), and connects the call with a miraculous draught of fishes, concludes (v. 11): καταγαγόντες τὰ πλοῖα ἐπὶ τὴν γῆν ἀφέντες πάντα ἥκ. αὐτῷ.

19. καὶ προβὰς κτλ.] Another pair of brothers (Mt. ἀλλους δύο ἀδελφούς), called shortly after the first pair (δόλιγον, Mc. only). Ιάκωβος, *Iacobus*

ολίγον εἶδεν Ἰάκωβον τὸν τοῦ Ζεβεδαίου καὶ Ἰωάννην τὸν ἀδελφὸν αὐτοῦ, καὶ αὐτοὺς ἐν τῷ πλοίῳ καταρ-  
20 τίζοντας τὰ δίκτυα, <sup>20</sup> καὶ εὐθὺς ἐκάλεσεν αὐτούς. καὶ ἀφέντες τὸν πατέρα αὐτῶν Ζεβεδαῖον ἐν τῷ πλοίῳ μετὰ τῶν μισθωτῶν ἀπῆλθον <sup>¶</sup> ὅπίσῳ <sup>§</sup> αὐτοῦ.

¶ 13  
§ e

19 οἱ οἰλιγον ΣΦ (προβ. οἰλιγον sine εκ. BDL min<sup>nonn</sup> a b ff g syrr<sup>sin pesh</sup> me)  
20 εὐθὺς (εὐθεως ACDΓΔΗ al min<sup>pl</sup>) ante αφ. transpon Δ 124 al c ff syrpesh arm |  
απῆλθον οπισω αυτον] ηκολουθησαν αυτω D latt

= בְּנֵי LXX. 'Ιακώβ (Gen. xxv. 26 and throughout O. T.), English 'James' (through Ital. Giacomo, Mayor) from Wycliffe onwards. 'Ιωάνης (for the orthography, see on i. 4) = יְהוֹחֶן, יְהוֹנָן (LXX., 'Ιωανάς, 'Ιωανάν, 'Ιωνά, but in 2 Paral. xxviii. 12, 1 Esdr. viii. 38, cod. B uses 'Ιωάνης, and 'Ιωάνης occurs in cod. A, 1 Esdr. l. c., 1 Macc. ii. 1 sq.). The father, who is mentioned as present (*infra*), was one Ζεβεδαῖος = זְבָדִיא or rather זְבָדִיא, for which the LXX. have Ζαβδεῖα in 2 Esdr. viii. 8, x. 20, and Ζαβδαιᾶς in 1 Esdr. ix. 35, or Ζαβδαῖος, ib. 21; the mother was Salome, see Mc. xv. 40—on the form of the name cf. Dalman, p. 122. Τὸν ἀδελφὸν αὐτοῦ implies that John was the younger or the less important at the time; cf. τὸν ἀδελφὸν Σίμωνος (v. 16). Προβάς ὁλίγον, i.e. along the shore (i. 16) towards Capernaum (ii. 1).

καὶ αὐτούς] Mc. only. Vg. et ipsos, 'they too': cf. Lc. i. 36, Acts xv. 27, 32 (Blass); the exx. of καὶ αὐτός with a finite verb, adduced by Knabenbauer, are inapposite. James and John, like Simon and Andrew, were in their boat (ἐν τῷ πλ.). though not similarly occupied. Καταρτίζοντας τὰ δίκτυα, Vg. componentes retia: Wycliffe, "makynge nettis," Tindale, A.V., R.V., "mending their nets," cf. Jerome: "ubi dicitur componentes ostenditur quod scissa fuerant." Καταρτίζειν is used of rebuilding a ruin (2 Esdr. iv.

12, 13), and in surgery, of setting a bone, or bringing the broken parts together (Galen). In a metaphorical sense the word is a favourite with St Paul (see Lightfoot on Gal. vi. 1, 1 Thess. iii. 10), but it is also used in 1 Pet. v. 10. Here it may include the whole preparation (see Heb. x. 5, xi. 3) of the nets for another night's fishing. Comp. the different account in Lc. v. 2.

20. καὶ εὐθὺς ἐκάλεσεν αὐτούς] On εὐθὺς see v. 10, note. Mt. omits it here, but places εὐθέως before ἀφέντες, as in v. 18. The call was doubtless as before, v. 17; and the voice was as familiar and as authoritative in the second case as in the first.

ἀφέντες τὸν πατέρα] See the archetype of this parting in 1 Kings xix. 20 f., and cf. Mc. x. 28, 29. Mt. brings out more fully the relative greatness of the sacrifice in this case: ἀφέντες τὸ πλοῖον καὶ τὸν πατέρα αὐτῶν. In both cases the abandonment was complete (Lc. ἀφέντες πάντα); all left what they had to leave. Mc.'s μετὰ τῶν μισθωτῶν has been thought to imply comparative prosperity, but the two pairs of brothers were partners in the fishing industry (Lc. v. 7, 10), so that there was at least no social difference. Of μισθωτοί we hear again in connexion with other businesses (Jo. x. 12, 13, cf. Mt. xx. 1).

ἀπῆλθον ὅπισω αὐτοῦ. Mt. ἡκολούθησαν αὐτῷ. See note on i. 17.

<sup>21</sup> Καὶ εἰσπορεύονται εἰς Καφαρναούμ· καὶ εὐθὺς 21 τοῖς σάββασιν [εἰσελθὼν] εἰς τὴν συναγωγὴν ἐδίδασκεν.

21 om εἰσπ. εἰς K. καὶ εὐθ. syr<sup>sin</sup> | εἰσεπορευοντο D 33 61 a b f go | Καπερναούμ ACLΓII al<sup>pl</sup> | εὐθὺς ΝL 1 28 33 131 1071] εὐθεως ABCD rell min<sup>pl</sup> | om εἰσελθων ΝCLΔ 28 69 346 2<sup>pe</sup> al pauc me syr<sup>sin pesh</sup> Oxbis (hab ABDΓΙΣΦ al latt syr<sup>hcl</sup> arm go aeth) | την συν.] + αντων Δ syr<sup>pesh</sup>

21—28. CASTING OUT AN UNCLEAN SPIRIT IN THE SYNAGOGUE AT CAPERNAUM (Lc. iv. 31—37).

21. καὶ εἰσπ. εἰς Καφαρναούμ] Cf. Mt. iv. 13 καταλιπόν τὴν Ναζαρὰ ἐλθὼν κατώκησεν εἰς K.; Lc. iv. 31 (after the Sabbath at Nazareth) κατῆλθεν εἰς K. In Mc. the entrance into Capernaum follows the walk by the Sea, but εἰσπ. does not of course exclude a previous arrival from Nazareth. Καφαρναούμ (Καπερν. is a ‘Syrian’ corruption, WH., Notes, p. 160); Mt. adds τὴν παραθαλασσίαν ἐν ὅριοις Ζαβουλῶν καὶ Νεφθαλείμ, in ref. to Isa. viii. 23 (ix. 1). The name נָהָרָה, ‘Nahum’s village,’ is unknown to the O. T., but Josephus mentions a κώμην Κεφαρνώκὸν λεγομένην (*vit.* 72) and a fountain called Capharnaum in Gennesar (πηγὴ ...Καφαρναούμ αὐτὴν οἱ ἐπιχώριοι λέγουσιν, *B. J.* iii. 10. 8), identified by some with ‘Ain-et-Tin close to Khan Minyeh, by others with ‘Ain-et-Tabigah. The site has been sought either at Khan Minyeh, at the N. end of the plain (so G. A. Smith, *H.G.* p. 456; *Enc. Bibl.* i. p. 696 ff.), or at Tell Hum 2½ miles N.E. of Khan M. (see Wilson, *Recovery of Jerusalem*, p. 342 ff., and the other authorities quoted in *Names and Places*, s.v.). Jerome *onomast.* says, “usque hodie oppidum in Galilaea.” On the Talmudic references see Neubauer, *géogr. du Talmud*, p. 221. Tell Hum is now a wilderness of ruins, half buried in brambles and nettles; among them are conspicuous the remains of a large synagogue built of white limestone (Wilson, *l.c.*). On the strange statement of Hera-

cleon, οὐδὲ πεποιηκάς τι λέγεται ἐν αὐτῇ ἡ λελαληκάς see Origen in *Joann.* t. x. 11.

καὶ εὐθὺς τοῖς σάββασιν] On the first sabbath after the call of the Four. Σάββατα (so Joseph. *ant.* iii. 6. 6, and even Horace, *sat.* i. 9. 69) is perhaps pl. only in form = Aram. אַנְבָשׁ; cf. however τὰ ἄξυμα, τὰ γενέσια, and the like. The LXX. use both σάββατον and σάββατα for ‘a sabbath,’ cf. Exod. xvi. 23, xx. 8 f., xxxi. 15; but σάββατον does not appear in cod. B before 4 Regn. iv. 23. Mc. uses the sing. in ii. 27, 28, vi. 2, xvi. 1, and it is the prevalent form in the N. T.; σάββατα occurs as a true plural in Acts xvii. 2. The meta-plastic dat. σάββασιν is normal in the N.T.; “B twice has σαββάτοις,” WH., Notes, p. 157 (in Mt. xii. 1, 12). On τοῖς σ. with or without ἐν see WM., p. 274.

εἰσελθὼν εἰς τὴν συναγωγὴν ἐδίδασκεν] He was engaged in teaching in the synagogue, when the event about to be recorded took place. The rejection of εἰσελθών by some good authorities (?‘Alexandrian’) may be justified by such passages as i. 39, x. 10, xiii. 9. The ‘pregnant’ use of εἰς is not to be attributed to confusion of εἰς with ἐν; see WM., p. 516 ff. Τὴν συν.; there was probably but one (see Lc. vii. 5). The synagogue teaching of Christ seems to have been characteristic of the earlier part of His ministry: we hear no more of it after Mc. vi. 2. On the Synagogue as an institution see Schürer II. ii. 52 ff. The word occurs abundantly in the Pentateuch (LXX.) for נָהָר or לְהָרָה, the congregation of Israel (see Hort, *Chr.*

§<sup>22</sup> καὶ ἐξεπλήσσοντο ἐπὶ τῇ διδαχῇ αὐτοῦ, ἦν γὰρ 22 διδάσκων αὐτοὺς ὡς ἔξουσίαν ἔχων καὶ οὐχ ὡς<sup>¶</sup> οἱ

22 οἱ γραμματεῖς] + αὐτῶν ΣΜΔΣ 33 al c f syrr aeth + et farisaei e

*Ecclesia*, p. 4 ff.); later on it is used for any assembly (Prov. v. 14 ἐν μέσῳ συναγωγῆς καὶ ἐκκλησίας, 1 Macc. xiv. 28 ἐπὶ συναγωγῆς μεγάλης ἱερέων), esp. a religious assembly, Ps. Sol. xvii. 8; but as denoting a place of assembly it is almost peculiar to the N. T., and occurs chiefly in the Synoptists and Acts (Jo. vi. 59, xviii. 20, James ii. 2 are not real exceptions). Teaching was a chief purpose of the synagogues; Phil. *de Sept.* 2 calls them διδασκαλεῖα φρονήσεως. It arose out of the Scripture lections (Lc. iv. 16, Acts xiii. 15), which were followed by a παράγνωσις or exposition. The expositor (παράγνωτος) was not an officer of the synagogue, but any competent Israelite who was invited by the officers. Hence the synagogue supplied invaluable opportunities to the first preachers of the Gospel.

22. καὶ ἐξεπλήσσοντο κτλ.] So Mt. vii. 28 f., Lc. iv. 32. Ἐκπλ., though used from Homer downwards, is rare in the LXX. (Eccl.<sup>1</sup> Sap.<sup>1</sup> Macc.<sup>3</sup>) and in the N. T. is limited to Mt., Mc., Lc. ev., act. For ἐπὶ τῇ δ. see WM., p. 491 ('over'=at). The amazement was due to the manner of the teaching. It was authoritative, and that not on certain occasions only, but in general (ἢν διδάσκων, periphrastic imperf., cf. Blass, *Gr.* p. 203 f.). Its note was ἔξουσία, Justin, *apol.* i. 14, contrasting our Lord with the Greek σοφισταί says: βραχεῖς δὲ καὶ σύντομοι παρ' αὐτοῦ λόγοι γεγόνασιν οὐ γὰρ σοφιστὴς ὑπῆρχεν ἀλλὰ δύναμις θεοῦ ὁ λόγος αὐτοῦ ἦν. The frequenters of the synagogue were chiefly struck by the Lord's tone of authority; there was no appeal to Rabbis greater or older than Himself, His message came direct from God. The same character pervades all our

Lord's conduct: cf. i. 27, ii. 10, xi. 28 ff. The source of this ἔξουσία is the Father (Mt. xxviii. 18, Jo. v. 27, x. 18, xvii. 2); the Son delegates His authority to His servants (Mc. vi. 7, xiii. 34, Jo. i. 12). On the distinction between δύναμις and ἔξουσία see Mason, *Conditions of O. L.'s Life*, p. 98: "authority is not always power delegated, [nor is it always] a rightful power...the distinction is rather between the inward force or faculty...and the external relationship." For the use of ὡς with the part. to denote the manner of an action cf. Burton, § 445.

καὶ οὐχ ὡς οἱ γρ., generic art., 'the Scribes as a class.' On the functions of this class see Schürer II. i. 306 ff.; Robertson Smith, *O.T.J.C.* 42 ff. The classical γραμματεῖς is the secretary or clerk of a public body; γραμματεῖς τῆς βουλῆς, τῆς γερουσίας, τοῦ δήμου are mentioned in the inscriptions, cf. Hicks, *Inscr. of Ephesos*, p. 8, and Blass on Acts xix. 35. In the LXX. γραμματεῖς first appear in connexion with the Egyptian ἐργοδιώκται, and Deissmann has shown (*Bibelst.* p. 106 f.) that the papyri employ the word for a class of military officers, presumably those who kept the register of the army (cf. Driver on Deut. xx. 5, Moore on Jud. v. 14). In the later sense of a Biblical scholar the word first occurs in 1 Esdr. viii. 3, 2 Esdr. vii. 6: cf. 1 Macc. vii. 12, 2 Macc. vi. 18; the Gospels know no other. But the γραμματεῖς had before this time become a dominant factor in Jewish life, the recognised teachers of Israel, taking their place in the Sanhedrin with the representatives of priesthood and people (Mc. xv. 1). 'Scribe' (Latt. *scriba*) unfortunately lays stress on the etymological sense of the word

γραμματεῖς. <sup>23</sup>καὶ εὐθὺς ἦν ἐν τῇ συναγωγῇ αὐτῶν 23  
 ἀνθρωπος<sup>¶</sup> ἐν πνεύματι ἀκαθάρτῳ, καὶ ἀνέκραξεν <sup>¶ t</sup>  
<sup>24</sup>λέγων Τί ἡμῖν καὶ σοί, ἸησοῦΝαζαρηνέ; ἥλθες 24  
 ἀπολέσαι ἡμᾶς; οἶδά σε τίς εἶ, ὁ ἄγιος τοῦ θεοῦ.<sup>¶ w</sup>

23 om ευθυς ACDFΔΠΣΦ al latt syrr arm go aeth (hab NBL i 33 131 209 me Or) |  
 om αυτων DL 72 b c e ff g | ανεκραξεν] + φωνη μεγαλη 1071 24 τι] pr ea  
 Nc.aACLFΔΠΣΦ al syr<sup>hel</sup> arm go Or<sup>1</sup> Eus<sup>3</sup> (om ea N\*BD 102 157 2<sup>pe</sup> latt syr<sup>sin posh</sup>  
 me aeth) | οιδαμεν NLΔ arm me aeth Or<sup>2</sup> Eus<sup>4</sup>

(γραμματεῖς = מִרְפֵּס); ‘lawyer’ (νομικός Mt.<sup>1</sup> Lc.<sup>6</sup>) is scarcely better: Lc.’s νομοδιδάσκαλος (v. 17, cf. Acts v. 34) is perhaps the most exact title. On the relation of our Lord’s teaching to the Law and its authorised expounders see Hort, *Jud. Chr.* p. 14 ff. Ἡ γὰρ διδάσκων is a little wider than ἐδίδασκεν above; as He proceeded, the note of authority rang out more and more clearly.

23. καὶ εὐθὺς ἦν κτλ.] Mc. and Lc. only. Lc. omits εὐθὺς and αὐτῶν; both words as they stand in Mc. belong to the completeness of the picture; the events occurred at a definite time and place, on that Sabbath during the sermon in the synagogue of the Capharnaites.

ἀνθρωπος ἐν πνεύματι ἀκαθ.] Lc. ἀνθρ. ἔχων πνεῦμα διαμονίου ἀκαθάρτου—an easier phrase. For [εἴναι] ἐν πνεύματι cf. Mt. xxii. 43, Mc. v. 2, xii. 36, Lc. ii. 27, Rom. viii. 9, 1 Cor. xii. 3, Apoc. i. 10. ‘Ἐν’ is not here instrumental or indicative of manner (Blass, *Gr.* p. 131): rather it represents the person who is under spiritual influence as moving in the sphere of the spirit. Most of the exx. refer to the Holy Spirit, but there is nothing in the formula to forbid its application to evil spirits in their relation to men under their control. Πνεῦμα ἀκάθαρτον appears already in Zech. xiii. 2 (= נַשְׁמַת הַבָּאָר); ἀκάθαρτος and ἀκαθαρτία are ordinarily used in Leviticus for the ceremonial pollution which banishes from the Divine

presence. This idea of estrangement from God probably predominates in the present phrase: cf. Victor: διὰ τὴν ἀσέβειαν καὶ τὴν ἀπὸ τοῦ θεοῦ ἀναχώρησιν, adding however—what should not perhaps be excluded—διὰ τὸ πάσαις ταῖς αἰσχραῖς καὶ πονηραῖς ἐφήδεσθαι πράξεισιν.

καὶ ἀνέκραξεν κτλ.] Ἀνακράζειν (LXX.; late Gk.) is used again of the cry of a demoniac in Lc. viii. 28; and of the cry of human terror (Mc. vi. 49) or excitement (Lc. xxiii. 18). Lc. adds here φωνῆ μεγάλη (cf. 1 Regn. iv. 5 and Mc. *infra*, v. 26).

24. τί ἡμῖν καὶ σοί κτλ.] = מַה־נָּא־קָלְךָ: cf. Jos. xxii. 24, Jud. xi. 12, 2 Regn. xvi. 10, 3 Regn. xvii. 18; the phrase was used also in class. Gk., see Wetstein on Mt. viii. 29 and WM., p. 731. ‘What have we in common with Thee?’ Cf. Mc. v. 7, and esp. 2 Cor. vi. 14, τίς γὰρ μετοχὴ δικαιοσύνη καὶ ἀνομίᾳ κτλ. ‘Ημῖν=τοῖς δαιμονίοις, ‘us, as a class’; only one seems to have been in possession in this case, but he speaks for all. Ναζαρηνός is the Marcan form (cf. xiv. 67, xvi. 6); Mt., Lc. (xviii. 37), Jo., Acts, give Ναζωραῖος. On the origin of the two forms see Dalman, p. 141 n.

ἥλθες ἀπολέσαι ἡμᾶς;] Probably a second question, parallel to τί ἡμῖν κ. σ.: ‘didst Thou come (hither from Nazareth, or perhaps, since ἡμᾶς is generic, into the world) to work our ruin, to destroy and not to save, in our case?’ Contrast Lc. xix. 10. The

25 <sup>25</sup>*καὶ ἐπετίμησεν αὐτῷ ὁ Ἰησοῦς λέγων Φιμώθητι καὶ*

25 οἱ λεγων Ι\*Α\*vid | εἰς αὐτου] εκ του ανθρωπου D (8<sup>pe</sup>) latt (exc f) απ αυτου HLΣ  
33 al<sup>pl</sup>+πνευμα ακαθαρτο D (8<sup>pe</sup>) b c e ff g q go aeth | αυτων 1071

Saviour of men must needs be the Destroyer of unclean spirits. See the use made of this context against Marcionism by Tertullian, *adv. Marc.* iv. 7.

*οἴδα σε τίς εἶ κτλ.]* See James ii. 19 τὰ δαιμόνια πιστεύοντιν καὶ φρίσσοντιν, and cf. also Lc. iv. 41, Mc. v. 7, Acts xix. 15. Orig. *in Jo.* t. xxviii. 15, δύναται καὶ πονηρὰ πνεύματα μαρτυρεῖν τῷ Ἰησοῦν καὶ προφητεύειν περὶ αὐτοῦ. For the special meaning of *οἴδα* as opposed to *γνώσκω* (Acts *l.c.*) see Lightfoot on Gal. iv. 9, Rom. vii. 7, 1 Cor. ii. 11 : *οἴδα* is absolute, *γνώσκω* relative. At this stage the evil spirits merely knew as a matter of fact that Jesus was the Messiah : experience of His power came later on. The slightly pleonastic *σέ* is common to Mc. and Lc. here, and perhaps is due to an Aramaic original (Delitzsch, 'בְּנֵי עֲזֹרֶן'; פָּתַח); for the attraction cf. Mt. xxv. 24. 'Ο ἄγιος τοῦ θεοῦ: cf. Ps. cv. (cvi.) 16, 'Αρρών τὸν ἄγιον Κυρίον: 4 Regn. iv. 9, ἀνθρωπος τοῦ θεοῦ ἄγιος. The Apostles learnt afterwards to adopt the title (John vi. 69, cf. 1 Jo. ii. 20, Apoc. iii. 7). Employed in this way it distinguished the Christ from all other consecrated persons. Victor: ἄγιος ήν καὶ ἔκαστος τῶν προφητῶν..διὰ τοῦ ἄρθρου τὸν ἔνα σημαίνει τῶν ἄλλων ἔξαιρετον. 'Ο δίκαιος is also used (Acts xxii. 14, James v. 6 : the two stand together in Acts iii. 14). But it was the ἄγιότης of Jesus—His absolute consecration to God (Jo. x. 36, xvii. 19)—which struck terror into the δαιμόνια. Bede: "præsentia Salvatoris tormenta sunt daemonum."

25. *ἐπετίμησεν αὐτῷ]* Sc. τῷ ἀνθρώπῳ, but in effect the spirit, as the words that follow shew; cf. v. 8.

'Επιτιμᾶν, Vg. *communari*, Wycliffe and Rheims "threaten," other Engl. vv., "rebuke"; the strict meaning of the word is 'to mete out due measure,' but in the N. T. it is used only of censure ; cf. 2 Tim. iv. 2, where it stands between ἐλέγχειν and παρακαλεῖν : Jude 9 (Zach. iii. 2), ἐπιτιμήσαι σοι Κύριος. With these two exceptions it is limited to the Synoptists.

*φιμώθητι καὶ ἔξελθε]* The rebuke takes the form of a double command : Euth., ἔξουσιαστικὸν τὸ φιμ. καὶ τὸ ἔξελθε. The offence was two-fold : (1) The confession *οἴδα σε κτλ.*, coming inopportunedly and from unholy lips ; cf. i. 34, Acts xvi. 18, and see Tert. *Marc.* iv. 7, "increpuit illum...ut invidiosum et in ipsa confessione petulantem et male adulantem, quasi haec esset summa gloria Christi si ad perditionem daemonum venisset" : (2) the invasion of the man's spirit by an alien power. *Φιμοῦν* occurs in its literal sense in Deut. xxv. 4, cited in 1 Cor ix. 9, 1 Tim. v. 18; *φιμοῦσθαι* is in the LXX. (4 Macc. i. 35, ΙV) and N.T. uniformly metaphorical, Vg. *obmutescere*. The word is not a vulgar colloquialism, as Gould's rendering suggests ; it occurs in this sense in good late writers (Josephus, Lucian, &c.); see, however, Kennedy, *Sources*, p. 41. In Mt. xxii. 34, 1 Pet. ii. 15 we find the active similarly used, cf. Prov. xxvi. 10 Th. *φιμῶν ἀφρονα φιμοῖ χόλοις*. For *ἔξελθε* see v. 8, ix. 25. The summons to depart was in this case the penalty for unprovoked interruption ; the δαιμόνιον was the aggressor. An exodus was possible, since the human personality, although overpowered, remained intact, awaiting the Deliverer : cf. iii. 27, Lc. xi. 21 ff.

ἐξελθε ἐξ αὐτοῦ. <sup>26</sup> καὶ σπαράξαν αὐτὸν τὸ πνεῦμα <sup>26</sup>  
τὸ ἀκάθαρτον καὶ φωνῆσαν φωνῇ μεγάλῃ ἐξῆλθεν  
ἐξ αὐτοῦ. <sup>§27</sup> καὶ ἐθαυμάζησαν ἀπαντες, ὥστε 27 § W<sup>m</sup>  
συνζητεῖν αὐτοὺς λέγοντας Τί ἐστιν τοῦτο; δι-

26 καὶ εξῆλθεν τὸ πν. τὸ ακ. καὶ σπαράξας αυτὸν καὶ κραξας φωνῇ μεγ. εξῆλθεν ατ  
αυτού D (e) (ff) | om τὸ πν. B 102 | φωνῆσαν NBL 33 (1071) Or] κραξαν AC(D)ΓΔΠΣΦ  
alpler | εξ] ατ C(D)ΜΔΣ 33 al<sup>mu</sup> 27 εθαυμάζησαν D Or | παντες ACDΓΔΠ al | αυτους  
NB b e ff q] προς αυτους GLSΦ min<sup>mu</sup> προς εαντ. ACDΓΔΠ al min<sup>pl</sup> προς αυτον  
2<sup>pe</sup>mg | λεγοντες ACE\*ΜΔ<sup>corr</sup> 13 33 238 346 736 | om τι εστιν τουτο D evpauε b c e ff q  
arm

26. καὶ σπαράξαν...ἐξῆλθεν] The spirit obeyed, but displayed his malice (Apoc. xii. 12); cf. Lc. ρίψαν  
αὐτὸν εἰς τὴν μέσον ἐξῆλθεν.. μηδὲν βλάψαν αὐτόν. Σπαράξαν, Vg. *discerpens*; the verb is used in reference to a spirit again in Mc. ix. 20 (*συνεσπ.*) 26, Lc. ix. 39, 42 (*συνεσπ.*). The later usage of the word inclines towards the meaning ‘convulse’; see 2 Regn. xxii. 8, but esp. Dan. viii. 7, where

חִזְקָא בַּיִלְשׁוֹן is translated by Th. ἔριψεν αὐτὸν ἐπὶ τὴν γῆν, but by LXX. ἐσπάραξεν αὐτὸν ἐπὶ τὴν γῆν. From the second instance it is clear that, on the hypothesis of a Hebrew or Aramaic original, Lc.’s ρίψαν may represent the same word as Mc.’s σπαράξαν, and that the latter implies no laceration, so that Lc.’s (perhaps editorial) note μηδὲν βλ. αὐτόν is justifiable. The reading of D in ix. 20 (*ἐτάραξεν*) and in Lc. ix. 42 (*συνεσπ.*) is a serviceable gloss. For the mystical interpretation see Greg. M. *hom.* in Ezek. i. 12. 24, “quid est quod obsessum hominem antiquus hostis quem possessorum non discepserat deserens discepserit, nisi quod plerumque dum de corde expellitur acriores in eo tentationes generat?” Φωνῆσαν φωνῇ μεγάλῃ, using for the last time the human voice through which he had so long spoken. Lc. has connected φωνῇ μεγάλῃ with the cry τί ἐμοὶ κ. σ., and omits it here.

27. καὶ ἐθαυμάζησαν ἀπαντες]

Amazement (v. 22) deepened into awe. Lc. ἐγένετο θάμβος ἐπὶ πάντας. Θαυμάζεσθαι, ἐκθαυμάζεσθαι are used in the N. T. only by Mc., but occur occasionally in the LXX.; in class. Gk. the words are found chiefly in poetry, and θαυμάζειν is intrans.; cf. 1 Regn. xiv. 15, and the reading of D here. Θάμβος is connected with ἔκπασις in Acts iii. 10, and the verb with φοβεῖσθαι in Mc. x. 32.

ώστε συνζητεῖν αὐτούς] = Lc. συνελάλουν πρὸς ἀλλήλους. Συνζητεῖν is usually followed by πρός (ix. 14, Acts ix. 29), or the dative (viii. 11, Acts v. 9), or a dependent clause giving the subject of debate (ix. 10); see vv. ll. here. Here, as again in xii. 28, it is used absolutely: ‘they discussed.’ The word is predominantly Marcan; see Hawkins, *Hor. Syn.* p. 10.

τί ἐστιν τοῦτο; διδαχὴ κανῆ] Lc. τίς ὁ λόγος οὗτος; ὅτι κτλ. Mc. gives the incoherent and excited remarks of the crowd in their natural roughness: the Western and traditional texts attempt to reduce them to literary form. For διδαχὴ κανῆ see v. 22. There was now another element which was new: the ἐξουσία was manifested in accompanying acts —κατ’ ἐξουσίαν καὶ κτλ. Exorcism was not unknown among the Jews of this period, cf. Mt. xii. 27, Acts xix. 13 (on the latter reference see Blass, and cf. Edersheim i. 482); but

δαχὴ καινή· κατ' ἔξουσίαν καὶ τοῖς πνεύμασιν τοῖς  
28 ἀκαθάρτοις ἐπιτάσσει καὶ ὑπακούουσιν αὐτῷ.<sup>28</sup> καὶ  
ἔξηλθεν ἡ ἀκοὴ αὐτοῦ εὐθὺς πανταχοῦ εἰς ὅλην  
τὴν περίχωρον τῆς Γαλειλαίας.

29      <sup>29</sup> Καὶ εὐθὺς ἐκ τῆς συναγωγῆς ἐξελθὼν ἦλθεν εἰς

<sup>27</sup> διδαχὴ καινῇ κατ' εξ. NBL 33 102 (1 28\* 2<sup>pe\*</sup>) (604)] τις η διδ. η καινῃ αυτῃ οτι κατ' εξ. (A)CGΔΙΙΣΦ al min<sup>pl</sup> f vg syrr<sup>pesh</sup> arm go τις η διδ. εκεινη η καιν. αυτ. η εξουσια οτι D τις η διδ. (η καιν.) αυτ. κατ' εξ. b c e ff (q) r (syr<sup>sin</sup>)      28 εξηλθεν δε ΑΓΙΙ al | om ευθυς N\* 1 28 33 al b c e ff q syr<sup>sin</sup> arm | om πανταχον N\*ADGΔΙΙΣΦ min<sup>pl</sup> c f ff vg syrr arm go (hab (Nc.a) BC(L) 69 124 b e q me) | της Γαλ.] της Ιουδαιας N\* του Ιορδανου 28+και πολλοι ηκολουθησαν αυτω syr<sup>sin</sup>      29 om ευθυς D c e ff g syrr<sup>sin</sup> pesh aeth | εξελθων ηλθεν B(D)(Σ) 1 22 69 124 604 al f g syr<sup>hel(mg)</sup> arm aeth] εξελθουτες ηλθον NAC(F)(L)Γ(Δ)ΠΦ min<sup>pl</sup> syr<sup>pesh</sup> hel txt εξελθων ηλθον ff syr<sup>sin</sup> vid

it consisted in the use of magical formulae, not in the power of a direct command. The tone of authority adopted by Jesus was extended even (*καὶ*) to the uncontrollable wills of spirits who defied all moral obligations (*τοῖς πν. τοῖς ἀκαθ.*, an order which emphasises the adj., cf. Eph. iv. 30, 1 Thess. iv. 8), and even in that sphere it received attention (*καὶ ὑπ. αὐτῷ*, cf. iv. 41). For *διδαχὴ καινή* cf. Acts xvii. 19, and for the sense of *καινός* as compared with *νέος* see Mc. ii. 21, 22. The freshness and vigour of the teaching, and not merely its novelty, attracted attention.

κατ' ἔξουσίαν] Lc. ἐν ἔξουσίᾳ καὶ δυνάμει. With *κατ'* ἔξ. ‘in the way of authority’ cf. Rom. iv. 16, ὥν κατὰ χάριν, Phil. ii. 3, μηδὲν κατ' ἐριθίαν μηδὲ κατὰ κενοδοξίαν. Lc.’s καὶ δυνάμει brings into sight another factor (see i. 22, note), in the act, which however was not in the forefront of men’s thoughts at the time. Καὶ τοῖς πνεύμασιν...‘even the demons obey His word,’ cf. iv. 41 καὶ ὁ ἄνεμος καὶ ἡ θάλασσα. See Lc. x. 17, 20. ‘Υπακούουσιν αὐτῷ: Lc. ἐξέρχονται.

28. καὶ ἔξηλθεν...πανταχοῦ] From that hour (εὐθὺς) the new Teacher’s fame (ἀκοή, Vg. *rumor*) spread in all directions. ‘Ακοὴ is (1) ‘hearing’ (e.g. in the common LXX. phrase ἀκοή

ἀκούειν); (2) in pl., ‘the organs of hearing’ (Mc. vii. 35, Acts xvii. 20); (3) the thing heard, ‘hearsay,’ 1 Regn. ii. 24 (Πῶμα), Isa. liii. 1, cf. Rom. x. 16, 17, where (3) passes back into (1).

εἰς ὅλην τὴν π. τῆς Γ.] Either = *εἰς* ὅλην τὴν Γαλειλαίαν (τῆς Γ. being epexegetical of π. π.), or ‘into all the district round G.’; Wycliffe, “the cuntree of G.”; Tindale, Cranmer, &c., “the region borderinge on G.” The latter accords with Mt.’s summary (iv. 24, ἀπῆλθεν ἡ ἀκοὴ αὐτοῦ εἰς ὅλην τὴν Συρίαν) and with usage: cf. ἡ π. τοῦ Ιορδάνου (Gen. xiii. 10, 11, Mt. iii. 5), τῶν Γερασηνῶν (Lc. viii. 37), ‘Ιερουσαλήμ (2 Esdr. xiii. 9); and on the other hand see Deut. iii. 13 πᾶσαν περίχωρον Ἀργόβ. A third interpretation is ‘the whole of that part of Galilee which lay round Capernaum.’ But for this *εἰς* ὅλην τὴν π. Καφαρναούμ would have sufficed, for there was no need at present to contrast the Galilean περίχωρος with the tetrarchy of Philip which had not yet been mentioned; moreover the report could not have been limited to the W. of the Jordan. Lc., however, seems to incline to the narrowest sense (*εἰς πάντα τόπον τῆς περιχώρου*).

29–31. HEALING OF SIMON’S WIFE’S MOTHER (Mt. viii. 14–15, Lc. iv. 38–39).

29. καὶ εὐθὺς ἐκ τῆς συν. ἐξελθὼν

τὴν οἰκίαν Σίμωνος καὶ Ἀνδρέου μετὰ Ἰακώβου καὶ Ἰωάνου. <sup>ζο</sup> ἡ δὲ πενθερὰ Σίμωνος κατέκειτο πυρέσ-<sup>ζο</sup>  
σουσα, καὶ εὐθὺς λέγουσιν αὐτῷ περὶ αὐτῆς. <sup>ζι</sup> καὶ <sup>ζι</sup> προσελθὼν ἤγειρεν αὐτὴν κρατήσας τῆς χειρός, καὶ ἀφῆκεν αὐτὴν ὁ πυρετός, καὶ διηκόνει αὐτοῖς. ¶

¶ H

<sup>ζο</sup> κατέκειτο δε η π. Σ. D latt (exc f) | om εὐθυς b c ff g q syrr<sup>(sin)posh</sup> aeth  
<sup>ζι</sup> ηγειρεν αυτην κρατ. της χειρος] εκτεινας την χειρα κρατ. ηγ. αυτην D (b f q) |  
χειρος]+αυτης ΑΓΔΠΣΦ al vg syrr arm me (om αυτ. ΝΒΙ (D b q)) | πυρετος]+  
ευθεως Α(D)ΓΔΠΣΦ al (b c e f ff q vg) syrr<sup>(sin)posh</sup> go aeth (om ευθ. ΝΒΙ I 28  
33 al<sup>pauo</sup> e arm me) | και διηκονει] pr και ηγερθη 16 syrr<sup>(sin)posh</sup> aeth

ἢλθεν] The narrative is still unbroken, as κ. εὐθύς suggests, and ἐκ τῆς σ. shews. We are carried back to the end of v. 26, vv. 27, 28 being parenthetical. As soon as the congregation had broken up (Acts xiii. 43), Jesus went to the house of Simon. 'Εξελθὼν ἢλθεν, as it stands, is a 'subsingular' reading of B (see WH., *Intr.* § 308 ff.), but D gives ἐξελθ. δὲ ἐκ τῆς συν. ἢλθεν, and Σ, καὶ ἐξελθ. εὐθὺς ἐκ τῆς συν. ἢλθεν: with B are also a fair number of important cursives (see vv. II.), and the sing. part. is supported by Syr.<sup>sin.</sup> and the O. L. ms. *ff*; besides, the roughness of B's text is in its favour, and ἐξελθόντες ἢλθαν followed by μετὰ Ἰακώβου καὶ Ἰωάνου is hardly tolerable; see however Zahn, *Einleitung* ii. pp. 246, 252, where an ingenious explanation is given of the reading of § A. Τὴν οἰκίαν Σίμωνος καὶ Ἀνδρέου. Mt., Lc. mention only Simon (Mt., Πέτρον); the home was probably his, since he was a married man, but shared by his brother. Syr.<sup>sin.</sup> has: "Andrew and James and John were with Him" (? μετὰ Ἀνδρ. κ. Ἰακ. καὶ Ἰω.). A house in Caper-naum is frequently mentioned as the *rendez-vous* of Jesus and the disciples (Mc. ii. 1, iii. 27, vii. 24, ix. 33, x. 10). Jerome: "utinam ad nostram domum veniat...unusquisque nostrum febricitat."

ζο. ἡ δὲ πενθερὰ Σίμωνος] Simon was therefore "himself also a married

man" before his call, and his wife accompanied him afterwards in his Apostolic journeys (1 Cor. ix. 5, cf. Suicer s. v. γυνί); see the story told of her by Clem. Alex. *strom.* vii. 11. 62 (Eus. *H. E.* iii. 30), and Clement's statement, *strom.* iii. 6. 52 (cf. Hieron. *adv. Jovin.* i. 26): ἡ καὶ ἀποστόλους ἀποδοκάζουσι; Πέτρος μέν γάρ καὶ Φίλιππος ἐπαιδοποιήσαντο. Hermother (for πενθερά and the correlative νύμφη see Mt. x. 35) 'kept her bed of a fever,' *decumbebat febricitans*: *κατακεῖσθαι* is used of the sick by Galen, and occurs again in this sense Mc. ii. 4, Lc. v. 25, Jo. v. 3, 6, Acts ix. 33, xxviii. 8; cf. Mt. βεβλημένην καὶ πυρ. See Field, *Notes*, p. 25. For πυρέσσοντα Lc. has the professionally precise συνεχομένη πυρετῷ μεγάλῳ, 'in a high fever,' and similarly ἡρώτησαν for the simple λέγουσιν. The pl. is best explained as referring to οἱ περὶ τὸν Σίμωνα. The Lord is told as soon as He enters the house (εὐθύς); they have waited till He returned from the synagogue.

ζι. καὶ προσελθών κτλ.] He approached the sufferer, took her by the hand, and raised her up. Lc. substitutes ἐπιστᾶς ἐπάνω αὐτῆς ἐπειμησεν τῷ πυρετῷ (cf. Mc. i. 25, iv. 39). For κρατήσας τ. χ. compare Mc. v. 41, ix. 27. The aor. part. is one of 'antecedent action,' see Burton § 134—rather perhaps of concurrent action, the grasp scarcely preceding and certainly

32     <sup>32</sup>Οψίας δὲ γενομένης, ὅτε ἔδυσεν ὁ ἥλιος, ἐφερον  
πρὸς αὐτὸν πάντας τοὺς κακῶς ἔχοντας καὶ τοὺς  
33 δαιμονιζομένους.     <sup>33</sup>καὶ ἦν ὅλη ἡ πόλις ἐπισυνηγμένη

32 εδύσεν BD 28] εδύ ΝΑCLΓΔΠΣΦ al<sup>pl</sup> | εφεροσαν D | om προς αυτον syr<sup>sin</sup> |  
κακως εχ.] transl Ν\* ad κακ. εχ. (v. 34) + νοσις ποικιλαις D b c e ff g q syr<sup>sin</sup> vid | om  
και τους δαιμ. syr<sup>sin</sup>

coinciding with the lifting of the prostrate form; cf. Blass, *Gr.*, p. 197. The genitive is partitive (WM., p. 252); for an ex. from the LXX. see Gen. xix. 16. With the whole narrative compare Acts xxviii. 8—another case of miraculous recovery from fever.

καὶ διηκόνει ἀντοῖς] The prostration which attends early convalescence found no place; she at once assumed her usual function in the household (cf. Lc. x. 40, Jo. xii. 2). Jerome: “natura hominum istiusmodi est ut post febrim magis lassescant corpora, et incipiente sanitate aegrotationis mala sentiant; verum sanitas quae confertur a Domino totum simul reddit.” The service was probably rendered at the Sabbath meal; cf. Joseph. *vit.* 54 ἔκτη ὥρᾳ καθ' ἣν τοῖς σάββασιν ἀριστοποιεῖσθαι νόμιμόν ἐστιν ἡμῖν. For διακονεῖν ‘to wait at table’ cf. Lc. *l.c.*, xvii. 8, xxii. 26, 27, Acts vi. 2. Victor: ἀνεχώρουν ὡς ἐν σαββάτῳ ἐπὶ ἐστίασιν εἰς τὸν οἶκον τοῦ μαθητοῦ. Ἀντοῖς Mc., Lc.: Mt., ἀντῷ. The Lord, Who had restored her, was doubtless the chief object of her care. Jerome: “et nos ministremus Iesu.”

32—34 MIRACLES AFTER SUNSET (Mt. viii. 16, Lc. iv. 40—41).

32. ὀψίας δὲ γενομένης, ὅτε ἔδυσεν ὁ ἥλιος] For the phrase ὀψία ἐγένετο cf. Judith xiii. 1. Mt. omits ὅτε ἔδυσεν ὁ ἥλιος, Lc. changes it into δύνοντος τοῦ ἥλιον: comp. the similar discrepancy in the readings of Mc. xvi. 2 (ἀνατέλαντος s. ἀνατέλλοντος τοῦ ἥλιον). Lc.’s recension is probably intended to leave time before dark for the miracles that follow. On the Sabbath the crowds would not bring

their sick before sunset, cf. Victor: οὐχ ἀπλῶς πρόσκειται τὸ ‘δύνοντος τοῦ ἥλιον,’ ἀλλ’ ἐπειδὴ ἐνόμιζον μὴ ἔξειναι τοιις θεραπεύειν σαββάτῳ, τούτον χάριν τοῦ σαββάτου τὸ πέρας ἀνέμενον. For ἔδυσα = ἔδυν see WSchm., p. 109, and cf. vv. ll.

ἐφερον κτλ.] Case after case arrived (imperf.); Mt. προσήγεγκαν, Lc. ἤγαγον, with less realisation of the scene. In using the Marcan tradition Lc. has changed the position of ποικιλαις νόσοις: cf. what is said of φωνῇ μεγάλῃ supra, v. 26. Κακῶς ἔχειν (Ezech. xxxiv. 4) is not uncommon in the Gospels (Mt.<sup>7</sup> Mc.<sup>4</sup> Lc.<sup>2</sup>). Καὶ τοὺς δαιμονιζομένους: Mt. δ. πολλούς (cf. Mc. *infra*, v. 34). Δαιμόνια have not yet been mentioned by that name, yet the verb is used as if familiar to the reader. The corresponding classical form is δαιμονᾶν, and δαιμονίζεσθαι is rare before the N. T.; there is no trace of it in the Gk. O. T., but it occurs in the later literary Greek in reference to the insane. In the N. T. its use is nearly limited to the participles δαιμονιζόμενος, δαιμονισθείς, in the sense of a person possessed by a δαιμόνιον: cf. Acts x. 38, τοὺς καταδυναστευομένους ὑπὸ τοῦ διαβόλου.

33. καὶ ἦν ὅλη ἡ πόλις κτλ.] See note on i. 5. Ἐπισυνάγειν is a strengthened form of συνάγειν found in late Greek and frequent in the LXX., normally implying a large or complete gathering, cf. 1 Macc. v. 10, 16, Mt. xxiii. 37, Mc. xiii. 27, Lc. xii. 1; cf. ἐπισυντρέχειν, Mc. ix. 25. Πρὸς τὴν θύραν: the acc. dwells on the thought of the flocking up to the door which preceded, and the surging, moving,

πρὸς τὴν θύραν. <sup>34</sup>καὶ ἐθεράπευσεν πολλοὺς κακῶς 34  
ἔχοντας ποικίλαις νόσοις, <sup>§</sup>καὶ δαιμόνια πολλὰ ἔξε- § a  
βαλεν· καὶ οὐκ ἥφιεν λαλεῖν τὰ δαιμόνια, <sup>§</sup>ὅτι § θ'  
ἥδεισαν αὐτὸν [Χριστὸν εἶναι].

33 προς τὴν θύραν (πρ. τη θυρα Ο πρ. τας θυρας 28 124 2<sup>pc</sup>)]+αυτου D c ff g q  
syr<sup>sin</sup> 34 καὶ εθερ. αυτους καὶ τους δαιμονια εχ. εξεβαλεν αυτα απ αυτων και ουκ  
ηφ. αυτα λαλειν οτι ηδισαν αυτον και εθερ. π. κ. εχοντας ποικ. ν. και δαιμ. π.  
εξεβαλεν D | om κακως.. νοσοις syr<sup>sin</sup> | om ποικ. νοσ. L<sup>\*hab</sup> (hab Ι<sup>c.a</sup>) | τα δαιμ. λαλ.  
B αυτα λαλειν D | χριστον ειναι BLΣ i 28 33 69 alsat mu g syrhel arm me aeth] τον  
χν ειναι Ι<sup>c.a</sup>CGM ει om Ι<sup>\*</sup>ADEFKSUVΓΔΘΦ al a b c e f ff q vg syrr<sup>sin</sup>pesh go

mass before it: cf. ii. 2, xi. 4, and contrast Jo. xviii. 16, ιστήκει πρὸς τὴν θύραν.

34. καὶ ἐθεράπευσεν κτλ.] For θερα-  
πεύειν to attend on a patient, to treat  
medically, see Tobit ii. 10 (Ι), ἐπορευό-  
μην πρὸς τὸν λατρὸν θεραπευθῆναι.  
It is in Mt. and Mc. the nearly constant  
word for Christ's treatment of disease;  
λατρεῖ occurs only in Mt. viii. 8, 13,  
xiii. 15 (LXX.), xv. 28, Mc. v. 29. The  
treatment was not tentative; πολλοὺς  
is either coextensive with πάντας (v.  
32, cf. Mt.), or it implies that if  
all could not approach the Lord that  
night, there were many that did and  
were healed (on Mt. see Hawkins, *Hor.*  
*Syn.*, p. 96). Lc. adds the method of  
individual treatment: ἐνī ἐκάστῳ αὐ-  
τῶν τὰς χεῖρας ἐπιτίθεις. The diseases  
were various—ποικίλαις: cf. π. ἐπιθυ-  
μίαι (2 Tim. iii. 6), ήδοναι (Tit. iii. 3),  
δυνάμεις (Heb. ii. 4), διδαχαί (Heb.  
xiii. 9).

καὶ δαιμόνια πολλὰ ἔξεβαλεν] The  
class. δαιμῶν (Mt. viii. 31) or δαιμόνιον  
is simply a power belonging to the  
unseen world but operating upon men  
here (θεὸς ἡ θεοῦ ἔργον Arist.; μεταξύ  
ἐστι θεοῦ καὶ θνητοῦ Plat.). In Biblical  
Greek the word took a bad sense  
through its appropriation to heathen  
deities (Deut. xxxii. 17, Ps. xcvi. (xcvi.)  
5, Bar. iv. 7, cf. 1 Cor. x. 20, 21), re-  
garded either as מִנְפָּץ genii (?) (see  
Driver on Deut. l. c., Cheyne, *Origin*  
of the *Psalter*, p. 334f.) or מִלְלָאָן. In

Tobit, under Persian influence, the  
conception of evil δαιμόνια is devel-  
oped (Tob. iii. 8, Ἀσμόδαος (-δαῖος Ι) τὸ  
πονηρὸν δαιμόνιον); a further progress  
is made in Enoch (c. xvi.), where how-  
ever the Greek has πνεύματα. Joseph.  
B. J. vii. 6. 3 identifies them with the  
spirits of the wicked dead (τὰ καλούμενα  
δαιμόνια, ταῦτα δὲ πονηρῶν ἐστι ἀνθρώ-  
πων πνεύματα τοῖς ζῶσιν εἰσδυνόμενα). On the later Jewish demonology see  
Edersheim, *Life and Times*, ii., app.  
viii., or the subject may be studied in  
J. M. Fuller's intr. to Tobit (Speaker's  
Comm.) or in Weber *Jüd. Theologie*  
pp. 251–9; cf. F. C. Conybeare in  
*J.Q.R.* 1896, and the arts. *Demon*,  
*Demons* in Hastings, *D.B.*, and *Enc.*  
*Bibl.* The N.T. uses δαιμόνια as = πνεύ-  
ματα ἀκάθαρτα, adopting the accepted  
belief and the word supplied by the  
LXX. Ἐξέβαλεν: see note on i. 12.  
Mt. adds λόγῳ—a command sufficed.

καὶ οὐκ ἥφιεν λαλεῖν] Cf. i. 25. Lc.  
fills in this brief statement, represent-  
ing the spirits as κράζοντα καὶ λέγοντα  
ὅτι Σὺ εἶ ὁ νῖος τοῦ θεοῦ. Ἡφιεν, so  
Mc. xi. 16; cf. ἀφίομεν Lc. xi. 4. Ἀφίω,  
ἀφιέω, ἀφίμι seem to have been all  
in use (W.H., *Notes*, p. 167, Blass, *Gr.*,  
p. 51): ἀφίω occurs in the best MSS. of  
the LXX., i Esdr. iv. 50, Eccl. v. 11, and  
ἀφιέω in Sus. (LXX.) 53 τὸν δὲ ἐνό-  
χοντος ἥφιεις, cf. Phil. *leg. ad Cai.* 1021.  
Ἡδεισαν αὐτόν: see on οἴδα σε i. 24;  
and contrast Jo. x. 14 γνώσκοντί με  
τὰ ἐμά. Χριστὸν (or τὸν χριστόν) εἶναι

yrhier 35      <sup>35§</sup> Καὶ πρωὶ ἔννυχα λίαν ἀναστὰς ἐξῆλθεν [καὶ  
36 ἀπῆλθεν] εἰς ἑρμον τόπον κάκει προσηγένετο. <sup>36</sup> καὶ  
37 κατεδίωξεν αὐτὸν Σίμων καὶ οἱ μετ' αὐτοῦ, <sup>37</sup> καὶ

35 εννυχα NBCDLΘ<sup>f</sup> 28 33 al] εννυχον ΑΙΔΠΣΦ al<sup>bler</sup> | om αναστας D 226 a c |  
om εξηλθεν και 1071 b d e q | om και απηλθεν B 28 56 102 235 2<sup>pe</sup> ff g | ερημ. τοπ.] pr  
τον D | και εκει AD | προσηγένετο D      36 κατεδιωξεν ΝΒΜΣU 28 40 604 vg al]  
κατεδιωξαν ΑCDLΓΔΘ<sup>f</sup>ΠΣΦ a b c e f ff g q syrr | ο Σιμων ΑCΓΔΘ<sup>f</sup> ο τε Σ. ΚII 1071 οι  
μετ αυτ.] om οι B + ησαν Δ

is strongly supported, yet may have been an early gloss from Lc.; cf. Victor: *τὸ δὲ τελευτῶν Μᾶρκος οὐκ ἔχει*. But in any case it probably strikes a true note. It does not seem as though the knowledge of the *δαιμόνια* went beyond the fact of our Lord's Messiahship; both ὁ ἄγιος τοῦ θεοῦ and ὁ νιὸς τ. θ. are Messianic titles.

35—39. WITHDRAWAL FROM CAPERNAUM, AND FIRST CIRCUIT OF GALILEE (Lc. iv. 42—44).

35. καὶ πρωὶ ἔννυχα λίαν κτλ.] Πρωὶ may be the morning watch—the *φυλακὴ πρωία* (Ps. cxxix.=cxxxi. 6), as in Mc. xiii. 35; but in the present context the simpler meaning seems preferable—‘early,’ so early that it was still quite dark: cf. λίαν πρωὶ (xvi. 2)=ὅρθρον βαθέως (Lc. xxiv. 1)=πρωὶ σκοτίας ἔτι οὖσης (Jo. xx. 1). “*Ἔννυχος* is used by the poets from Homer downwards, and in the prose of the later Gk., cf. 3 Macc. v. 5. With the adv. *ἔννυχα* (ἀπ. λεγ.) compare *πάννυχα* (poet. and late Gk.); Hesych. quotes *νύχα*=*νύκτωρ*. The Vg. *diluculo valde* fails to give the force of *ἔννυχα* (Euth. ἀντὶ τοῦ νυκτὸς ἔτι οὖσης). In Lc. this touch of intimate acquaintance with the circumstances is lost (*γενομένης δὲ ἡμέρας ἐξελθών*). ‘*Ἐξῆλθεν*: i.e. out of the house and town. It is difficult to believe that the reading *ἐξ*. καὶ *ἀπῆλθεν* is not a conflation which happens to have secured a consensus of the great majority of the authorities (see vv. II.), although under the circumstances it must retain its place

in the text: *ἀπῆλθεν* is probably from vi. 32, 46. The *ἑρμος τόπος* (Mc. Lc.) was doubtless in the neighbourhood of Capernaum: cf. vi. 31 ff., Lc. ix. 10.

κάκει προσηγένετο] Cf. Ps. v. 4, lxxxvii. (lxxxviii.) 14. These words reveal the purpose of the sudden withdrawal. Sunrise would bring fresh crowds, new wonders, increasing popularity. Was all this consistent with His mission? Guidance must be sought in prayer. Comp. vi. 46, xiv. 32, Lc. vi. 12, ix. 18, 28, xi. 1. Victor: οὐκ αὐτὸς ταῦτης δεόμενος...ἀλλ’ οἰκονομικῶς τοῦτο ποιῶν. Ambros. in Lc. v.: “quid enim te pro salute tua facere oportet quando pro te Christus in oratione pernoctat?” There is truth in both remarks, but they overlook the *εὐλάβεια* of the Incarnate Son which made prayer a necessity for Himself (Heb. v. 7, 8).

36. καὶ κατεδίωξεν αὐτὸν Σίμων κτλ.] Vg. *Et persecutus est eum S.* Simon (whose personal narrative we clearly have here) started in pursuit of Him with Andrew and James and John (*οἱ μετ' αὐτοῦ*, cf. v. 29; Bengel: “iam Simon est eximus”), and tracked Him to His retreat. *Καταδιώκω* (an ἀπ. λεγ. in the N.T. but freq. in LXX., where it usually= *Ἄζω*) has an air of hostility: Gen. xxxi. 36, τί τὸ ἀδίκημά μου...ὅτι κατεδίωξας δπίσω μον; yet cf. Ps. xxii. (xxiii.) 6, τὸ ἔλεός σου καταδιώξεται με. Simon's intention at least was good; the Master seemed to be losing precious opportunities and must be brought back. Yet see, note on v. 31.

εὗρον αὐτὸν καὶ λέγουσιν αὐτῷ ὅτι Πάντες ζητοῦσίν σε. <sup>38</sup> καὶ λέγει αὐτοῖς Ἀγωμεν ἀλλαχοῦ εἰς τὰς 38 ἔχομένας κωμοπόλεις ἵνα καὶ ἐκεῖ κηρύξω, εἰς τοῦτο

37 κ. ευρον αυτον και λεγ. NBL e me<sup>cod</sup> aeth] κ. ευροντες αυτ. λεγ. ΑΣΓΔΘ<sup>¶</sup>ΠΦ  
al κ. ευροντες αυτον ειπον Σ κ. οτε ευρον αυτον λεγ. D | dicentes b c | σε ζητουσιν  
ΑΦΘ<sup>¶</sup>Π 1071 38 om αλλαχον AC<sup>corr</sup>ΔΓΔΘ<sup>¶</sup>ΠΣΦ latt syrr go (hab NBC<sup>\*</sup>L 33  
arm me aeth) | εχομενας (εχομενα B)] ενγυς D | κωμοπολεις] κωμας και eis tas πολεις  
D latt syrr<sup>sin pesh</sup>

37. καὶ εὗρον αὐτόν κτλ.] Lc.'s account apparently is not based on the Marcan tradition, and in form at least conflicts with it: in Lc. the ὥχλοι pursue Jesus and stay Him; from Mc. we learn that in fact the attempt was made by the disciples. Tatian endeavours to harmonise the two traditions, in the order Mc. i. 35—38, Lc. iv. 42, 43. Πάντες ζητοῦσίν σε, i.e. all the Capharnaites and others on the spot. Cf. Jo. vi. 24, 26, xiii. 33. The quest was prompted by very mixed motives.

38. καὶ λέγει αὐτοῖς Ἀγωμεν ἀλλαχοῦ κτλ.] In Lc. similar words are addressed to the crowd, but the occasion is clearly the same. Ἀγωμεν, intrans., as in Mc. xiv. 42; Jo. xi. 7, 15, 16, xiv. 31, and as ἄγε in Homer and the poets: 'let us go elsewhere'; ἀλλαχοῦ = ἀλλοσε or ἀλλαχόσε, as πανταχοῦ, i. 28, = πάντοσε or πανταχόσε: the latter forms are not used in N. T. Gk. Ἀλλαχοῦ occurs here only in N. T.; cf. ἀλλαχόθεν, Jo. x. 1.

εἰς τὰς ἔχομένας κωμοπόλεις] Into the neighbouring country towns (Wycliffe, "the nexte townes and citees," after Vg., *in proximos ricos et civitates*: comp. the reading of D). 'Ο ἔχόμενος = ὁ πλησίον is freq. in the LXX., but uncommon in the N. T., cf. Lc. xiii. 33; Acts xiii. 44, xx. 15, xxi. 26; Heb. vi. 9: the phrase "is used of local contiguity and also of temporal connexion" (Westcott on Heb. l.c.). Κωμόπολις—an ἄπ. λεγ. in the N. T. and not

found in the LXX., though Aq. and Theod. seem to have used it in Josh. xviii. 28 (Field)—occurs in Strabo (pp. 537, 557), and in Joseph. (*ant.* xi. 86). According to J. Lightfoot it is the Ῥῆψις as distinguished from the Ῥῆψις (cf. Schürer II. i. 155)—the small country town, whether walled or not, or partly fortified (cf. Euth. ἡ ἐν μέρει μὲν ἀτείχιστος ἐν μέρει δὲ τετειχισμένη). There were many such in Galilee: Joseph. *B. J.* iii. 3. 2, πόλεις πυκναὶ καὶ τὸ τῶν κωμῶν πλῆθος πανταχοῦ πολυάνθρωπον διὰ τὴν εὐθηρίαν. Lc. has merely πόλις in this context. Such small towns are called indifferently κώμαι or πόλεις; cf. Lc. ii. 4, Jo. vii. 42.

ἵνα καὶ ἐκεῖ κτλ.] The Lord's primary mission was to proclaim the Kingdom (i. 14); dispossessing demoniacs and healing the sick were secondary and in a manner accidental features of His work. Εἰς τοῦτο γὰρ ἐξῆλθον (Mc.) is interpreted for us by Lc. ὅτι ἐπὶ τοῦτο ἀπεστάλην. Ἐξῆλθον does not refer to His departure from Capernaum (v. 35), but to His mission from the Father (Jo. viii. 42, xiii. 3); whether it was so understood at the time by the disciples is of course another question. The thought, though perhaps unintelligible to those about Him, was present to His own mind from the first, as even the Synoptists shew (Lc. ii. 49). Bengel: "primi sermones Iesu habent aenigmatis aliquid, sed paullatim apertius de se loquitur."

39 γάρ ἐξῆλθον. <sup>39</sup>καὶ ἦλθεν κηρύσσων εἰς τὰς συναγωγὰς αὐτῶν εἰς ὅλην τὴν Γαλειλαίαν καὶ τὰ δαιμόνια ἐκβάλλων.

40 <sup>40</sup>Καὶ ἔρχεται πρὸς αὐτὸν λεπρὸς παρακαλῶν αὐτὸν [καὶ γονυπετῶν], λέγων αὐτῷ ὅτι Ἐὰν θέλῃς,

38 εξῆλθον <sup>NBCL 33]</sup> εξεληνθα ADGΠΣΦ al εληνθα Δ (Θ<sup>f</sup>) 2<sup>pe</sup> min<sup>sat</sup> mu 39 ηλθεν NBL syrb<sup>hior</sup> me aethl] ην ACDΓΔΘ<sup>f</sup>ΠΣΦ latt syrr<sup>sin pesh</sup> hel arm go | εις τας συναγωγας ABCDKLΔΘ<sup>f</sup>Π i 69 al] εν ταις συναγωγαις EFGMSUVΓΣΦ (εν τας συναγωγας) alpl 40 παρακαλων] ερωτων D | και γονυπετων NL i 209 300 736\* 2<sup>pe</sup> al<sup>pau</sup> e f q vg arm] κ. γ. αυτον ACΔΘ<sup>f</sup>ΠΣΦ al syrr me aeth om BDGΓ min<sup>pau</sup> a b c ff g | λεγων] pr και <sup>Nc.a</sup>ACDLΓΔΘ<sup>f</sup>ΠΣΦ al | οτι εαν θελης ΝΑΓΔΠ al min<sup>pl</sup> syr<sup>sin</sup>] κυριε o. ε. θ. B κυριε ε. θ. CLΣ c e ff g arm go aeth o. ε. θ. κυριε Θ<sup>f</sup>Φ 28 εαν θελης (D) 69 71 238 b f q vg syrpesh | δυνη B

39. καὶ ἦλθεν κηρύσσων κτλ.] A tour of synagogue preaching follows, extending through the whole of Galilee (Mc., cf. Mt. iv. 23), and if we accept the reading *Ioudaías* (see WH., *Notes*, p. 57) in Lc. iv. 44, through Judaea also; Judaea is occasionally used by Lc. inclusively (i. 5, perhaps also vii. 17, Acts ii. 9, x. 37), but not as = Galilee. See the references to this synagogue preaching in Lc. xxiii. 5, Jo. xviii. 20. Such a cycle may have lasted many weeks or even months (see Lewin, *fast. sacr.*, § 1245, Edersheim, *Life and Times*, i. p. 501, and on the other hand Ellicott, *Lectures*, p. 168), although only one incident has survived. *Eis τὰς συναγωγάς*: wherever He went, He entered the synagogue and proclaimed His message there; *eis ὁ. τ. Γαλειλαίαν* adds the locality, = *ἐν δλῃ τῇ Γαλειλαίᾳ* (cf. Mt. iv. 23), but with the added thought of the movement which accompanied the preaching. Mc. has fused into one, the two clauses *ἦλθεν eis ὁ. τ. Γ.* (cf. i. 14), and *ἐκήρυσσεν eis τὰς συν. αὐτῶν* (cf. i. 21).

40—45. CLEANSING OF A LEPER (Mt. viii. 2—4, Lc. v. 12—16).

40. ἔρχεται πρὸς αὐτὸν λεπρός] Though the purpose of this circuit was preaching, miracles were incidentally performed. One is selected, possibly

as the first of its class, or as having made the deepest impression. All the Synoptists relate it, but in different contexts. *Λεπρός* (*עִירָצָן, עִירָצָה*), ‘suffering from leprosy,’ is in the Gospels used as a noun. Lepers were evidently a numerous class of sufferers in Palestine in our Lord’s time, cf. Mt. x. 8, xi. 5; Lc. xvii. 12, perhaps at all times (Lc. iv. 27), as indeed the elaborate provisions of Lev. xiii., xiv. seem to shew. The approach of this leper (*προσελθών*, Mt.) to Jesus is remarkable; cf. Lev. xiii. 45, 46, Lc. xvii. 12 (*πόρρωθεν*). He came near enough to be touched (v. 41). The event took place *ἐν μᾶτων πόλεων*, i.e. in one of the *κωμοπόλεις* of Galilee where the Lord was preaching, but doubtless outside the gate (Lev. l.c.).

παρακαλῶν αὐτὸν κ. γονυπετῶν] The entreaty begins at the first sight of the Lord; when the leper has come up with Him, the prostration follows. *Γονυπετεῖν* (Polyb., but not LXX.) occurs also in Mt. xvii. 14, xxvii. 29, and Mc. x. 17; in this place the words *καὶ γον.* are open to doubt (see vv. ll.), yet as they are not from Mt. (*προσεκύνει*) or Lc. (*πεσὼν ἐπὶ πρόσωπον*) it is difficult to regard them as an interpolation. For *λέγων* *ὅτι* see i. 15 note.

ἐὰν θέλης, δύνασαι με καθαρίσαι] So Mt., Lo., but with a prefixed *Κύριε*.

δύνασαι με καθαρίσαι. <sup>41</sup> καὶ σπλαγχνισθεὶς ἐκτείνας τὴν χεῖρα αὐτοῦ ἦψατο καὶ λέγει αὐτῷ Θέλω, καθαρίσθητι. <sup>42</sup> καὶ εὐθὺς ἀπῆλθεν ἀπ' αὐτοῦ ἡ λέπρα, 42 ¶ F, W<sup>m</sup>

<sup>41</sup> καὶ ι<sup>ο</sup> ΝΒΔ a b e] ο δε is ΑΓΔΑ al [ σπλαγχνισθεὶς] οργισθεὶς D a ff r\* Eph om b g | αυτου ηψατο] + αυτου D γ<sup>pe</sup> latt<sup>pl</sup> ηψ. αυτου ΑΓΔΘ<sup>f</sup>II al<sup>pl</sup> | om αυτω Ν I 209 c ff + ι<sup>ο</sup>] + ειποντος αυτου ΑΓΔΘ<sup>f</sup>ΙΙΣΦ min<sup>pl</sup> f q vg syr<sup>hel</sup> arm go aeth | om απηλθεν απ αυτου η λ. και syr<sup>sln</sup> | εκαθαρισθη ΝΒ<sup>corr</sup>DEKMSUΓII al<sup>pl</sup>

Contrast the petition in Mc. ix. 22, and the Lord's method of dealing with the two cases. On the force of the apodosis see Burton § 263. For δύνασαι=δύνη (Mc. l.c.) see WH, *Notes*, p. 168. Καθαρίζειν=καθαίρειν (רָמַט), the term used for the ceremonial cleansing of a leper in Lev. xiii., xiv., is transferred in the Gospels to the actual purging of the disease.

41. καὶ σπλαγχνισθεὶς κτλ.] On the 'Western' reading ὁργισθεὶς see WH., *Notes*, p. 23: "a singular reading, perhaps suggested by v. 43 (ἐμβριμσάμενος), perhaps derived from an extraneous source." Nestle thinks that it may be "an instance of a difference in translation"; see his *Intr.*, p. 262. Ὁργή is attributed to our Lord in Mc. iii. 5, but under wholly different circumstances; nor is Ephraem's explanation satisfactory: "quia dixit *Si vis, iratus est*" (Moesinger, p. 144); for at this stage in the story there is nothing to suggest anger, and σπλ. is obviously in keeping with ἔκτ. τ. χ. a. ἦψατο. In the N. T. σπλαγχνίζεσθαι is limited to the Synoptists: in the LXX., Prov. xvii. 5 ὁ δὲ ἐπισπλαγχνίζομενος (A, σπλ.) ἐλεηθήσεται (where the Gk. is the converse of the Heb.) seems to be the only instance of its use in a metaphorical sense; for the literal sense of the verb and its derivatives, see 2 Macc. vi. 7, 8, 21, vii. 42, ix. 5, 6. It is remarkable that, while σπλάγχνα was used in classical Gk. for the seat of the affections, the verb appears first in Biblical Greek: see Lightfoot on Phil. i. 8, "perhaps a coinage of the Jewish dispersion."

Delitzsch renders here, יְלִעַן וַיְהִי but מַפְלֵג is represented in the LXX. by ἐλεῶ or οἰκτείρω. The σπλάγχνα Ἰησοῦν Χριστοῦ (Phil. l.c.) are a favourite topic with the author of the Ep. to the Hebrews (see ii. 17, iv. 15, v. 2).

ἐκτείνας τὴν χεῖρα αὐτοῦ ἦψατο] Contrast i. 31, κρατήσας τῆς χειρός; the action is adapted to the circumstances. Even after the Ascension the Apostles remembered the out-stretched Hand (Acts iv. 30). As specimens of patristic exegesis see Origen c. *Cels.* i. 48: νοητῶς μᾶλλον ἡ αἰσθητῶς Ἰησοῦς ἦψατο τὸν λεπροῦ, ἵνα αὐτὸν καθαίρῃ, ὡς οἷμαι, διχώς. Victor: διὰ τί δὲ ἀπτεται τοῦ λεπροῦ καὶ μὴ λόγῳ ἐπάγει τὴν λασιν;...ὅτι ἀκαθαρσία κατὰ φύσιν οὐχ ἀπτεται Σωτῆρος ...καὶ ὅτι κύριος ἔστι τοῦ ἰδίου νόμου.

Θέλω, καθαρίσθητι] So Mt., Lc. The Lord's human will is exercised here in harmony with the Divine: contrast Mc. xiv. 36, where it remains in harmony by submission. The subject may be studied further by comparing Mt. xv. 32, xxiii. 37; Mc. iii. 13, vi. 48, vii. 24; Lc. xii. 49; Jo. vii. 1, xvii. 24, xxi. 22. For a singular misunderstanding created by an ambiguity in the Latin version see Jerome in *Matt.*: "non ergo ut plerique Latinorum putant...legendum volo mundare, sed separatim [volo, mundare]."

42. καὶ εὐθὺς...έκαθερίσθη] Mc.'s text seems here to be a conflation of Mt. (καὶ εὐθέως ἐκ. αὐτοῦ ἡ λέπρα) and Lc. (καὶ εὐθέως ἡ λ. ἀπῆλθεν ἀπ' αὐτοῦ). But it is possible that Mt. and Lc. have each preserved a portion of the original tradition, and the general

W<sup>g</sup> 43 καὶ ἐκαθερίσθη. <sup>¶</sup> 43 καὶ ἐμβριμησάμενος αὐτῷ εὐθὺς  
syr<sup>sin</sup> 44 ἐξέβαλεν αὐτόν, <sup>44</sup> καὶ λέγει αὐτῷ "Ορα μηδενὶ <sup>¶</sup> μηδὲν  
εἴπης, ἀλλὰ ὑπαγε σεαυτὸν δεῖξον τῷ ιερεῖ, καὶ  
προσένεγκε περὶ τοῦ καθαρισμοῦ σου ἀ προσέταξεν

43 om εὐθὺς εξέβαλεν αυτον και syr<sup>sin</sup>  
al latt syr<sup>pesh</sup> me aeth | ιερει] αρχιερει 33 69 vg

44 om μηδεν NADLA 33 69 124 604

phenomena agree with this hypothesis. For the form ἐκαθερίσθη (Mt. Mc.) see WII., Notes, p. 150, and Winer-Schm., p. 50. With the whole narrative it is instructive to compare 4 Regn. v. 6—14. Of Naaman too ἐκαθαρίσθη is used.

43. καὶ ἐμβριμησάμενος αὐτῷ κτλ.] 'Εμβριμάσθαι (Aesch. *Sept. c. Theb.* 46, of the snorting of the horse) is to speak or act sternly: cf. Dan. xi. 30 (LXX), 'Ρωμαῖοι...ἐμβριμήσονται αὐτῷ, in reference to the attitude of C. Popilius Laenas towards Antiochus (Bevan on Daniel *l.c.*); in Lam. ii. 6, ἐμβριμήματι ὁργῆς αὐτοῦ = יְאַמְשֵׁב. But the idea of anger is not inherent in the word; see Jo. xi. 33, 38, where it is used of our Lord's attitude towards Himself; rather it indicates depth and strength of feeling expressed in tone and manner. A close parallel to the present passage is to be found in Mt. ix. 30. In neither case can we discover any occasion for displeasure with the subject of the verb: the Vg. *committatus est* (Wycliffe, "thretenyde hym") is too harsh, nor is there any apparent room for ἐπιτίμησις, unless by anticipation. We may paraphrase, 'He gave him a stern injunction': cf. Hesych. ἐμβριμῆσαι· κελεῦσαι. A summary dismissal followed—εὐθὺς ἐξέβαλεν αὐτόν: on ἐκβάλλω cf. v. 12. Vg. *eiecit illum*; Wycliffe, "putte hym out"; Tindale, "sent him away," and so A.V.; R.V. "sent him out." If the first rendering is too strong, the last seems to fall short of the original, which involves at least some pressure and urgency.

44. καὶ λέγει αὐτῷ κτλ.] The words reveal in part the need for this stern and curt manner. If the man remained even a few minutes, a crowd would collect; if he went away to spread the news, the danger of interruption to the Lord's work of preaching would be yet greater. He must go at once, keep his secret, and fulfil the immediate duty which the Law imposed. "Ορα μηδενὶ μηδὲν εἴπης (Mt. omits μηδέν): for the double negative cf. Rom. xiii. 8. How grave the danger which Jesus sought to avert ultimately became is apparent from Jo. vi. 15.

ἀλλὰ ὑπαγε κτλ.] So Mt.; Lc. ἀπελθὼν δεῖξον σ. τ. ι.; cf. Lc. xvii. 14, in a narrative peculiar to the third Gospel, πορευθέντες ἐπιδείξατε ἑαυτοὺς τοῖς ιερεῦσιν. All depend on Lev. xiii. 49 δεῖξε τῷ ιερεῖ [τὴν ἀφήν], xiv. 2 ὃ ἂν ἡμέρᾳ καθαρισθῇ καὶ προσαχθήσεται τῷ ιερεῖ. "Ὑπαγε = <sup>τῷ</sup>, as in ii. 11, v. 19, and frequently: a use of ὑπάγειν which, though classical, is unknown to the LXX.

καὶ προσένεγκε κτλ.] Mt. προσένεγκον: on the two forms see WSchm., p. 111 f. Περὶ τοῦ καθαρισμοῦ σου, in the matter of, in reference to the ceremonial purification required by the Law; cf. Lev. xiv. 32 εἰς τὸν καθαρισμὸν αὐτοῦ. So καθ. is always used in the Gospels (cf. Lc. ii. 22, Jo. ii. 6, iii. 25); in the Epistles (2 Pet. i. 9, Heb. i. 3) the deeper sense comes into sight. "A (οἱ, Mt.; καθώς, Lc.) προσέταξεν Μωυσῆς, see Lev. xiv. 4 ff. The Mosaic origin of the Levitical and Deuteronomic legis-

Μωσῆς εἰς μαρτύριον αὐτοῖς.<sup>¶</sup> 45 ὁ δὲ ἐξελθὼν ἤρξατο 45 ¶ <sup>syrhier</sup>

κηρυσσειν πολλὰ καὶ διαφημίζειν τὸν λόγον, ὥστε  
μηκέτι αὐτὸν δύνασθαι φανερῶς εἰς πόλιν εἰσελθεῖν,

44 Μωσῆς ACEGLMSUT al<sup>pl</sup>

45 om πολλὰ D latt

lation is accepted as belonging to the recognised belief (cf. vii. 10, x. 3, 4, Jo. vi. 32, vii. 19), and not set forth by our Lord as part of His own teaching; see Sanday, *Inspiration*, p. 413 ff. There was no revolt on His part against 'Moses,' still less any disposition to detach the Jew from the obedience he still owed to the Law: cf. Hort, *Jud. Chr.*, p. 30.

*εἰς μαρτύριον αὐτοῖς*] The phrase occurs again in vi. 11 and xiii. 9, cf. Lc. ix. 5, *εἰς μ. ἐπ' αὐτούς*. For *εἰς μαρτύριον* in the LXX. see Prov. xxix. 14 (γν?), Hos. ii. 12 (14), Mic. i. 2, vii. 18 (γν?). The cure of the leper would witness to the priests (*αὐτοῖς=τοῖς ιερεῦσιν* suggested by τῷ ιερεῖ above) that there was a Prophet amongst them (2 Kings v. 8); the knowledge that λεπροὶ καθαρίζονται (Mt. xi. 5) might lead them to suspect that the Messiah had come. WM., p. 183, interprets *αὐτοῖς* of the Jews, but they are not in question: indeed it was not the Lord's purpose that the miracle should be generally known—it was enough to leave the guides of the nation without excuse, if they rejected Him (Jo. v. 36, xv. 24). *Αὐτοῖς* however is not like *ἐπ' αὐτούς* necessarily hostile; whether the witness saved or condemned them would depend on their own action with regard to it. Victor's exposition is too harsh: *τουτέστιν, εἰς κατηγορίαν τῆς αὐτῶν ἀγνωμοσύνης*. Comp. Jerome: "si crederent, salverentur; si non crederent, inexcusabiles forent." Οὐτως (writes Origen in Jo. t. ii. 34) *εἰς μαρτύριον τοῖς ἀπίστοις οἱ μάρτυρες μαρτυροῦσι καὶ πάντες οἱ ἄγιοι*.

45. ὁ δὲ ἐξελθὼν κτλ.] He left the presence of Christ (ἐξελθών corresponds

to ἐξέβαλεν), only to tell his tale to every one he met. For this use of κηρύσσειν cf. v. 20, vii. 36; the adverbial πολλά occurs again in iii. 12, v. 10, 23, 38, 43, ix. 26, with the meaning 'much' or 'often.' Both senses are almost equally in place here. An oriental with a tale not only tells it at great length, but repeats it with unwearied energy. "Ηρξαρο κηρύσσειν: cf. ii. 23, iv. 1, v. 17, etc., and see Blass, *Gr.*, p. 227.

καὶ διαφημίζειν τὸν λόγον] Διαφημίζειν (Vg. *diffamare*), a word of the later Greek, not in LXX.; cf. Mt. ix. 31, xxviii. 15. Τὸν λόγον = **τὸ τέλος**, the tale; Tindale, "the dede," A.V., "the matter"; cf. i Macc. viii. 10 ἐγνωσθῇ ὁ λόγος, Acts xi. 22 ἡκουσθῇ δὲ ὁ λόγος: Lc. here, διήρχετο ὁ λόγος. Euth. understands by τὸν λόγον the words of Jesus (θέλω, καθαρίσθητι). But Victor is doubtless right: *τουτέστι, τὴν παράδοξον θεραπείαν*.

ὥστε μηκέτι αὐτὸν δύνασθαι κτλ.] The result was, as Jesus had foreseen, another enforced retreat, and the abandonment of His synagogue preaching; if He entered a town, it could only be at night or in such a manner as not to attract attention (cf. Jo. vii. 10, οὐ φανερῶς ἀλλ' ὡς ἐν κρυπτῷ). But in general He lodged henceforth outside the walls (ἐξω, cf. xi. 19) in the neighbouring open country (ἐπὶ with dat. of place = on, i.e. remaining in, the locality, WM., 489: for ἐρημοι τόποι cf. i. 35). The interval was spent in prayer: Lc. ἦν ὑποχωρῶν ἐν ταῖς ἐρήμοις καὶ προσευχόμενος. On ὥστε μηκέτι see WM., p. 602. The inability was of course relative only: He could not enter the towns to any good purpose, or indeed without endangering the success of His

ἀλλὰ ἔξω ἐπ' ἑρήμοις τόποις ἦν· καὶ ἤρχοντο πρὸς αὐτὸν πάντοθεν.

II    I    <sup>1</sup> § *Kai εἰσελθὼν πάλιν εἰς Καφαρναοὺμ δι’ ήμερῶν,*  
<sup>syr<sup>hier</sup></sup> *2 ἡκούσθη ὅτι ἐν οἴκῳ ἐστίν· <sup>2</sup>καὶ συνήχθησαν πολλοὶ*

45 επ ΝΒΔΛ min<sup>pau</sup>] εν ACDΓΘ<sup>f</sup>ΠΣΦ al | om ην B 102 om ην και b e | παντοθεν  
 ΝΑΒCDKLMSΔΘ<sup>f</sup>ΠΣΦ i 33 1071 al<sup>nonn</sup>] πανταχοθεν EGUVT al

II I εισελθων ΝΒΔΛ 28 33 604 al<sup>pau</sup> a c arm me aethl] εισηλθεν ACEFGKMΣΦ al  
 b d e f ff q vg syrr<sup>pesh</sup>hel go | om παλιν S e | Καπερναούμ ACLΓΘ<sup>f</sup>Π al<sup>pl</sup> | ηκουσθη]  
 pr και ACDΓΔΘ<sup>f</sup>ΠΣΦ al lattv<sup>t</sup>plvg syrr<sup>pesh</sup>hel go | εν οικω εις οικον ΑCΓΔΘ<sup>f</sup>ΠΦ al g<sup>vid</sup>  
 2 και 1<sup>o</sup>] + ενθεως ACDΓΔΘ<sup>f</sup>ΠΣΦ al pler a c e f ff g q syr<sup>hel</sup> go

mission; of physical danger as yet there was none.

καὶ ἤρχοντο πρὸς αὐτὸν πάντοθεν] Lc. συνῆρχοντο ὅχλοι πολλοὶ ἀκούειν καὶ θεραπεύεσθαι: He could still deliver His message, but not in the synagogues, where He willed to preach at this stage in His ministry. Πάντοθεν, cf. Lc. xix. 43, Heb. ix. 4; so the LXX. (Jer. xx. 9, Sus. 22 Th., Sir. li. 7 (10)); the prevalent form in Attic prose is πανταχόθεν (vv. ll.).

II. 1—12. HEALING OF A PARALYTIC IN A HOUSE AT CAPERNAUM. THE FORGIVENESS OF SINS. (Mt. ix. 1—8, Lc. v. 17—26.)

1. καὶ εἰσελθὼν πάλιν κτλ.] The circuit (i. 39) is now over, ended perhaps prematurely by the indiscretion of the leper (i. 45); and the Lord returns to Capernaum. Εἰσελθών, an anacoluthon, cf. WM., p. 709 ff. and vv. ll.; πάλιν looks back to the visit before the circuit (i. 21 ff.). According to Mt. the Lord appears to have arrived by boat from the other side of the lake, but the impression is perhaps due simply to Mt.'s method of grouping events; in Lc. as in Mc. the healing of the paralytic follows the healing of the leper. Mt. in this context calls Capernaum τὴν Ἰδίαν πόλιν, probably, as Victor suggests, διὰ τὸ πολλάκις ἐκεῖσε ἐπιδημεῖν: Lc. ἐν μᾶτι τῶν πόλεων. Δι’ ήμερῶν (Lc. ἐν μᾶτι τῶν ήμερῶν), Vg. post dies, Euth., ἀπὸ τοῦ ‘διελθουσῶν ήμερῶν τινῶν’: for this use of διά see WM.,

p. 476 f. and Lightfoot on Gal. ii. 1, and cf. Dion. Hal. *ant.* x. διὰ πολλῶν ήμερῶν, and the class. διὰ χρόνου. The note of time is to be attached to εἰσελθών, not to ἡκούσθη, and covers the interval between the first visit to Capernaum and the second; as to the length of the interval it suggests nothing. See note on i. 39.

ἡκούσθη ὅτι ἐν οἴκῳ ἐστίν] Men were heard to say ‘He is indoors.’ Ήκούσθη impers., Vg. *auditum est*: cf. 2 Esdr. xvi. 1, 6, Jo. ix. 32; in Acts xi. 22 we have ἡκούσθη ὁ λόγος: cf. Blass, *Gr.*, p. 239, who suggests a personal construction here. The reading εἰς οἶκον (WM., 516, 518) is attractive, but the balance of authority is distinctly against it in this place. The house was probably Simon's (i. 29), but ἐν οἴκῳ is not = ἐν τῷ οἴκῳ: the sense is ‘at home,’ ‘indoors,’ cf. 1 Cor. xi. 34, xiv. 35.

2. καὶ συνήχθησαν πολλοὶ κτλ.] Cf. i. 33. The concourse was so great as to choke the approaches to the house, ‘so that even the doorway could hold no more,’ Vg. *ita ut non caperet neque ad ianuam*. The θύρα or house-door seems to have opened on to the street in the smaller Jewish houses (cf. xi. 4, πρὸς θύραν ἔξω ἐπὶ τοῦ ἀμφόδον); no προαύλιον or πρόθυρον (xiv. 68) would intervene between the door and the street, nor would there be a θυρωρός (Jo. xviii. 16) to exclude unwelcome visitors. Τὰ πρὸς τὴν θύραν is simply the neighbourhood of

ώστε μηκέτι χωρεῖν μηδὲ τὰ πρὸς τὴν θύραν, καὶ ἐλάλει αὐτοῖς τὸν λόγον. <sup>3</sup>καὶ ἔρχονται φέροντες 3 πρὸς αὐτὸν παραλυτικὸν αἴρομενον ὑπὸ τεσσάρων. <sup>4</sup>καὶ μὴ δυνάμενοι προσενέγκαι αὐτῷ διὰ τὸν ὄχλον 4 ἀπεστέγασαν τὴν στέγην ὅπου ἦν, <sup>§</sup>καὶ ἐξορύξαντες

§ H

<sup>2</sup> αὐτοῖς] προς αὐτοὺς D b c ff q | τὸν λόγον] om τὸν D      3 ερχ. προς αὐτὸν τινες παραλ. φερ. Φ | υπο] απὸ L επὶ Δ παρα γ<sup>sc</sup> 4 προσενέγκαι ΧΒL 33 al f vg syr<sup>hel</sup> me aeth] προσεγγίσαι ACDΓΔΘΓΠΣΦ al minpler ab c e ff g syr<sup>pesh</sup> arm go | δια τὸν οχλον] απὸ τὸν οχλον D arm<sup>vid</sup> | om εξορυξαντες D lat<sup>vt</sup>pler syr<sup>pesh</sup> aeth

the door on the side of the street: cf. πρὸς τὴν θάλασσαν, iv. 1: on the acc. cf. i. 33. For χωρεῖν *capere* see Gen. xiii. 6, 3 Regn. vii. 24 (38), Jo. ii. 6, xxi. 25; and on ὥστε μηκέτι...μηδέ see notes on i. 44, 45.

καὶ ἐλάλει αὐτοῖς τὸν λόγον] The preaching meanwhile proceeded within (imperf.). 'Ο λόγος = τὸ εὐαγγέλιον occurs with various explanatory genitives, e.g. τοῦ θεοῦ, τοῦ κυρίου (Acts viii. 14, 25), τῆς σωτηρίας, τῆς χάριτος, τοῦ εὐαγγελίου (Acts xiii. 26, xiv. 3, xv. 7), τοῦ σταυροῦ (1 Cor. i. 18), τῆς καταλλαγῆς (2 Cor. v. 19), τῆς ἀληθείας (Col. i. 5); but the term (like ἡ ὁδός, τὸ θελημα, &c.) was also used by itself in the first generation; cf. Mc. iv. 14 ff., 33, Acts viii. 4, x. 44, xiv. 26, xviii. 5. To αὐτὸς ἦν διδάσκων Lc. adds καὶ δύναμις Κυρίου ἦν εἰς τὸ λασθαι αὐτὸν: on which see Mason, *Conditions*, &c., p. 97.

3. καὶ ἔρχονται φέροντες κτλ.] Mt. καὶ ἵδον προσέφερον αὐτῷ, Lc. κ. ἵδον ἄνδρες φέροντες. Mc. alone mentions that the bearers were four. They reach the outskirts of the crowd, but are stopped before they can approach the door. For αἴρομενον cf. Ps. xc. (xcii.) 12, cited in Mt. iv. 6. Παραλυτικός (not class. or in LXX.) is used by Mt., Mc. in this context, and by Mt. also in cc. iv. 24, viii. 6; Lc. seems to avoid it (v. 18, ἄνθρωπον ὃς ἦν παραλειμένος, 24 τῷ παραλειμνεῷ).

4 καὶ μὴ δυν. προσενέγκαι] Vg., cum non possent offerre eum illi;

for προσενέγκαι the 'Western' and traditional texts read προσεγγίσαι, possibly a correction due to the absence of αὐτόν. Cf. Lc. μὴ εὐρόντες πολὺς εἰσενέγκωσιν αὐτόν. Nothing daunted, they mounted on the roof (so Lc. alone expressly, ἀναβάντες ἐπὶ τὸ δῶμα, cf. Acts x. 9), by an external staircase, the existence of which in Palestinian houses of the period is implied in Mc. xiii. 15.

ἀπεστέγασαν τὴν στέγην κτλ.] 'Αποστεγάζω (ἀπ. λεγ. in the N. T.) is used by Strabo (iv. 4), and by Symmachus in Jer. xxix. 11 (xlix. 10) for 'Ηγέτης, LXX. ἀπεκάλυψα. The unroofing was, according to Lc., limited to the removal of the tiles (διὰ κεράμων: see however W. M. Ramsay, *Was Christ born*, &c., p. 63 f.) just over the spot where the Lord sat. It was done by 'digging up' the place (ἐξορύξαντες). 'Εξορύσσειν is chiefly used of putting out the eyes (Jud. xvi. 21, 1 Regn. xi. 2, Gal. iv. 15); the housebreaker is said διορύσσειν (Mt. vi. 19); Joseph. ant. xiv. 15. 12 uses ἀνασκάπτειν similarly. It is difficult to realise the circumstances. The Lord was clearly in a room immediately under the roof. The ὑπερφῶν would answer to the conditions, and it appears to have been a favourite resort of Rabbis when they were engaged in teaching; cf. Lightfoot ad l., Vitringa de Syn. 145, Edersheim, *Life and Times*, i. 503; the last-named writer suggests a roofed gallery round the αὐλή. But it may

χαλῶσι τὸν κράβαττον ὅπου ὁ παραλυτικὸς κατέ-  
5 κείτο. 5 καὶ ἴδων ὁ Ἰησοῦς τὴν πίστιν αὐτῶν λέγει  
. τῷ παραλυτικῷ Τέκνον, ἀφίενταί σου αἱ ἄμαρτίαι.

4 κραβαττον **N** item 9, 11, 12 κραββατον **BcorrV** *grabattum* a e *grabatum* τ d f g ff |  
οπου 2° **NBDL** a g] εφ ω ACEGΘf<sup>f</sup> al latt<sup>t</sup> pler<sup>vg</sup> syrr arm me go aeth εφ ο Γ | ην ο  
παραλ. κατακειμενος **D** 5 τεκνον] pr θαρσει C + μον **N\*** *syr<sup>hier</sup>* me | αφιενται  
B 28 33 a c e ff vg syrr go] αφιονται Δ αφεωνται **NACDLΓΘ<sup>f</sup> ΠΣ(Φ)** al | σου αι αμ.  
**NBDGLΔ** i 33 69 al<sup>nonn</sup>] σοι αι αμ. σον **AC<sup>3</sup>EHKM<sup>2</sup>SUVΓΠΣΦ** al a c d f q

be doubted whether a fisherman's house in Capernaum would have been provided with such conveniences. The next step was to lower (*χαλῶσι* = Lc. *καθῆκαν*) the pallet on which the man lay (Lc. the man, bed and all). For *χαλᾶν* cf. Jer. xlvi. (xxxviii.) 6, *ἐχάλασαν αὐτὸν εἰς τὸν λάκκον*, Acts ix. 25, 2 Cor. xi. 33. *Κράβαττος*, said to be a Macedonian word (Sturz, *dial. Mac.*, p. 175 f.), does not occur in the LXX., but is used by Aq. in Amos iii. 12 for *שְׂמֹלֶת* (see Jerome's remarks *ad l.*), and in the N. T. by Mc. (in this context and vi. 55), Jo. (v. 8 ff.), and Lc. (Acts v. 15, where it is distinguished from *κλίνη*—see Blass, *ad l.*, ix. 33); from the N. T., perhaps, it has passed into *Ev. Nicod.* 6, *Act. Thom.* 50, 51. It was used by certain writers of the New Comedy. For the forms of the word (*κράβατος*, *κράβαττος*—so **N**<sup>10</sup>, cf. *κραβάκτιον*, Grenfell, *Gk. papyri* ii. p. 161—*κράββατος*, *κράβαττος*) see Winer-Schm., p. 56, and n.; in Latin it became *grabatus* (Catullus and Martial); modern Greek retains it in the form *κρέββατος* (Kennedy, *Sources of N. T. Gk.*, p. 154). The classical equivalents are *ἀσκάντης*, *σκίμποντος* (*Phryn.* *σκίμποντος λέγει ἀλλὰ μὴ κράβατος*), *σκίμποδον*. Clem. Al. *paed.* i. 6 substitutes *σκίμποδα* here; see also the story related by Sozom. *H. E.* i. 11. The *κράβαττος* or *σκίμποντος* was the poor man's bed (Seneca, *ep. mor.* ii. 6, where *grabatus* goes with *sagum* and *panis durus et sordidus*), small and flexible, and therefore better adapted for the purpose of the bearers than the *κλίνη*.

which Mt. and Lc. substitute. Lc., who seems to feel the difficulty as to *κλίνη*, uses *κλινίδιον* as the story advances (v. 19).

5. καὶ ἴδων ὁ Ἰησοῦς τὴν πίστιν αὐτῶν] So Mt., Lc.; Victor: οὐ τὴν πίστιν τοῦ παραλελυμένου ἀλλὰ τῶν κομισάτων. Ephrem: "See what the faith of others may do for one." Ambros. in Lc. v. 20, "Magnus Dominus qui aliorum merito ignoscit aliis...si gravium peccatorum diffidis veniam, adhibe precatores, adhibe ecclesiam"—an application of the words which, as the history of Christian doctrine shews, needs to be used with caution. For *ἰδεῖν πίστιν* (Bengel: "operosam") cf. i Macc. xiv. 35, James ii. 18. *Λέγει τῷ παραλυτικῷ*: Mt. εἰπεν τ. π., Lc. εἰπεν.

*τέκνον, ἀφίενται σου αἱ ἄμαρτίαι*] 'Child, thy sins are receiving forgiveness.' *Τέκνον* is used of disciples and spiritual children (Mc. x. 24, 1 Cor. iv. 14, 17, &c.; see Intr., p. xx f.); for the contrast between *τέκνον* and *παιδίον* see Westcott on Jo. xxi. 5. Victor: τὸ δὲ 'τέκνον' ἡ καὶ αὐτῷ πιστεύσαντι ἡ κατὰ τῆς δημιουργίας λέγει. In either case it is intended to cheer and win confidence (Schanz: "Jesus den Kranken mit dem gewinnenden *τέκνον* anredet"), a point of which Lc.'s ἀνθρωπε loses sight. *Αφίενται, dimittuntur*, see vv. ll. here and in v. 9, and cf. Mt. ix. 2, 5.—The forgiveness is regarded as continuous, beginning from that hour (see however Burton, § 13, who calls ἀφ. an "aoristic present"). Lc. has *ἀφέωνται* (a Doric

Ἔῆσαν δέ τινες τῶν γραμματέων ἐκεῖ καθήμενοι καὶ διαλογιζόμενοι ἐν ταῖς καρδίαις αὐτῶν Ὡτί οὗτος οὐτως λαλεῖ; βλασφημεῖ· τίς δύναται ἀφίεναι ἀμαρ-

6 αυτων] + λεγοντες D lat<sup>vtexsq</sup> 7 τι] οτι B 482 om b c | om ουτως min<sup>20</sup> c  
syr<sup>pesh</sup> arm | om ουτως λαλει b q | λαλει βλασφημει NBDL a f ff vg me] λ. βλασφημας  
ACG(Δ)ΠΣΦ al c syrr<sup>(pesh)</sup> hol arm go aeth

perfect, Winer-Schm., p. 119, cf. Blass, *Gr.*, p. 51), regarding the ἄφεσις, from another point of view, as complete, although enduring in its effects. Jewish thought connected forgiveness with recovery: "there is no sick man healed of his sickness until all his sins have been forgiven him" (Schöttgen *ad l.*).

6. Ἔῆσαν δέ τινες τῶν γραμματέων κτλ.] The first appearance of the Scribes in the Synoptic narrative; cf. *supra* i. 22. Lc. Φαρισαῖοι καὶ νομοδάσκαλοι (cf. Mc. ii. 16), adding οἱ Ἠσαῖ ἐλληνοθότες ἐκ πάσης κώμης τῆς Γαλειλαίας καὶ Ἰουδαίας καὶ Ἱερουσαλήμ: i.e., the local Galilean Rabbis had now been reinforced by others from the capital, some of them possibly members of the Sanhedrin (see Mc. iii. 22). The suspicions of the Pharisees of Jerusalem had been roused before Jesus left Judaea (Jo. iv. 1, 2), and they had decided to watch His movements in Galilee (cf. Jo. i. 19, 24). The Scribes were seated (*καθήμενοι* Mc., Lc.), probably in the place of honour near the Teacher (cf. xii. 38, 39).

διαλογιζόμενοι ἐν ταῖς καρδίαις αὐτῶν] Mt. εἶπαν ἐν ἑαυτοῖς (cf. Mc., v. 8); in the immediate presence of Jesus communication was impossible. Like many of the finer points this passes out of sight in Lc. (ἥρξαντο διαλογίζεσθαι). For the two senses of διαλογισμός see Lightfoot on Phil. ii. 14. The καρδία is the source and seat of deliberative thought, cf. Mc. vii. 21, Lc. ii. 35, ix. 47. As the centre of the personal life, it is the

sphere not only of the passions and emotions, but of the thoughts and intellectual processes, at least so far as they go to make up the moral character. Thus διάνοια may be distinguished from καρδία (Mc. xii. 30, Lc. i. 51), as one of the contents from the seat and source; see Lightfoot on Phil. iv. 7, and Westcott on Hebrews viii. 10 (cf. p. 115 f.). Yet in the LXX. διάνοια is for the most part used as a rendering of בְּלַע or בְּלַעַן, with καρδία as an occasional variant; see e.g. Exod. xxxv. 9, Deut. vi. 5, Job i. 5.

7. τί οὗτος οὐτως λαλεῖ; βλασφημεῖ] Comp. Mt. οὗτος βλασφημεῖ, Lc. τίς ἔστι οὗτος ὃς λαλεῖ βλασφημίας; For βλασφημεῖν = λαλεῖν βλασφημίας cf. 2 Macc. x. 34, xii. 14, Mt. xxvi. 65, Jo. x. 36, Acts xiii. 45, &c.: the more usual constructions are βλ. τινα (τε), εἰς τινα, ἐν τινι, and in class. Gk., περί, κατά τινος (WM., p. 278). Used absolutely the word is understood of the sin of blasphemy (sc. εἰς τὸν θεόν, cf. Dan. iii. 96 (29), Lxx., Apoc. xvi. 11). The offence was a capital one (Mt. xxvi. 65 f.), and the normal punishment stoning (Lev. xxiv. 15, 16, 1 Kings xi. 13, Jo. x. 33, Acts vii. 58). The blasphemy in the present instance was supposed to lie in the words ἀφίενται σον αἱ ἄμ. (οὐτως λαλεῖ), by which the Lord seemed to claim a Divine prerogative: cf. Jo. x. 36, Mt. xxvi. 65.

τίς δύναται...εἰ μὴ εἰς ὁ θεός;] See Exod. xxxiv. 6, 7, Isa. xlvi. 25, xliv. 22. On the O. T. doctrine of Forgiveness see Schultz, ii. 96: on the Rabbinic doctrine, Edersheim, i. p.

§ F 8 τίας εἰ μὴ εἴς ὁ θεός ; <sup>§§</sup> καὶ εὐθὺς ἐπιγνοὺς ὁ Ἰησοῦς  
τῷ πνεύματι αὐτοῦ ὅτι οὕτως διαλογίζονται ἐν  
§ W ἑαυτοῖς § λέγει αὐτοῖς Τί ταῦτα διαλογίζεσθε ἐν ταῖς  
9 καρδίαις ὑμῶν ; <sup>9</sup> τί ἐστιν εὐκοπώτερον, εἰπεῖν τῷ

8 om εὐθὺς D 28 64 565 abeffgq syr<sup>posh</sup> arm aeth | om αὐτοῦ D 258 abeffq |  
om οὗτως B 102 a gr | διαλογίζονται] pr αὐτοὶ ACDΓΔΘΠΣ 13 22 33 69 1071 min<sup>ma</sup>  
syr<sup>hol</sup> go | εαυτοῖς] αὐτοῖς L min<sup>2</sup> | λέγει NBL 33 c f vg] ειπεν ACDΓΔΘΠΙI al<sup>pl</sup>  
abeffgq | om αὐτοῖς B 102 ff arm | om ταῦτα L

508 ff. For *εἰς solus* (Lc. μόνος) cf. Mc. x. 18. Mt. omits this clause.

8. καὶ εὐθὺς ἐπιγνοὺς ὁ Ἰ. τῷ πνεύματι αὐτοῦ] The Lord at once became conscious of the thoughts which occupied those about Him. Ἐπιγνοὺς (so Lc.; Mt. ἰδὼν): cf. Mc. v. 30, ἐπιγνοὺς ἐν ἑαυτῷ: the verb describes the fuller knowledge gained by observation or experience (cf. Lightfoot on Col. i. 6, 9)—the *locus classicus* is 1 Cor. xiii. 12, ἥρτι γνώσκω ἐκ μέρους τότε δὲ ἐπιγνώσομαι. The recognition was in the sphere of his human spirit, and was not attained through the senses; there was not even the guidance of external circumstances, such as may have enabled Him to ‘see the faith’ of the friends of the paralytic. He read their thoughts by His own consciousness, without visible or audible indications to suggest them to Him. For τὸ πνέον, used in reference to our Lord’s human spirit, see Mt. xxvii. 50, Mc. viii. 12. His spirit, while it belonged to the human nature of Christ, was that part of His human nature which was the immediate sphere of the Holy Spirit’s operations, and through which, as we may reverently believe, the Sacred Humanity was united to the Divine Word. Wycliffe glosses “by the holy goost”; Tindale rightly, “in his spreete.” On our Lord’s power of reading the thoughts of men see Jo. ii. 24, 25, xxi. 17. In the O. T. this power is represented as Divine, e.g. Ps. cxxxviii. (cxxxix.) 2 σὺ συνῆκας τοὺς διαλογισμούς μου, cf. Acts i. 24,

xv. 8 ὁ καρδιογνώστης θεός. Its presence in Jesus clearly made a deep impression on His immediate followers. See Mason, *Conditions, &c.*, p. 164 ff.

ὅτι οὕτως διαλ. ἐν ἑαυτοῖς] =Mt. τὰς ἐνθυμήσεις αὐτῶν, Lc. τοὺς διαλογισμοὺς αὐτῶν. For τί ταῦτα διαλογίζεσθε Mt. has ἵνα τί ἐνθυμεῖσθε πονηρά, whilst Lc. simply omits ταῦτα.

9. τί ἐστιν εὐκοπώτερον κτλ.] Mt. τί γάρ... The second question justifies the first: ‘why think evil...for which is easier...?’ Τί...ἢ=πότερον...ἢ (W-M, p. 211). To the scribes the answer would seem self-evident; surely it was easier to say the word of absolution than the word of healing (*εἰπεῖν...ἢ εἰπεῖν*), since the latter involved an appeal to sensible results. Jerome: “inter dicere et facere multa distantia est; utrum sint paralytico peccata dimissa, solus noverat qui dimittebat.” Anticipating this reply the Lord utters the word which they deemed the harder, with results which proved His power. But His question, sinking into minds prepared to receive it, suggests an opposite conclusion; the word of absolution is indeed the harder, since it deals with the invisible and eternal order. In speaking with authority the word of absolution Christ had done the greater thing; the healing of the physical disorder was secondary and made less demand on His power. But this answer does not lie upon the surface; the question presented no enigma at the time; and Christ does not stop to interpret His words,

παραλυτικῷ Ἀφίενται σου αἱ ἀμαρτίαι, ἵνα εἰπεῖν  
Ἐγειρε καὶ ἄρον τὸν κράβαττόν σου καὶ περιπάτει;  
·<sup>10</sup>ίνα δὲ εἰδῆτε ὅτι ἔξουσίαν ἔχει ὁ νιὸς τοῦ ἀνθρώπου ιο  
ἐπὶ τῆς γῆς ἀφιέναι ἀμαρτίας—λέγει τῷ παραλυτικῷ

9 αφιενται...περιπατει] εγειρε αρον τον κραβ. σου και υπ. εις τ. οικον σου η ειπειν αφαιωνται σοι αι αμ. D | αφιενται [NB 28 565] αφεωνται AC(D)ΛΓΔΘΠΣ(Φ) al | σου αι αμ. ΝΒΕFGHKLΜUΝΙΣ min<sup>satmu</sup>] σοι αι αμ. ACDSW<sup>c</sup>ΓΔΘΦ σοι αι αμ. σου a c f q syrr<sup>pesh</sup> arm me go aeth | εγειρε ΝΑCDEFGHΚΜSΥΓΘΠΣΦ i 33 al<sup>mu</sup>] εγειρου BL 28 εγειραι UW<sup>c</sup>ΔΘ<sup>f</sup> min<sup>pl</sup> | om και 10 CDL i syrpesh armi | περιπατει ABCPΗ al min<sup>fere</sup> mn b c e f q vg syrr<sup>pesh</sup> me aeth] υπαγε ΝLW<sup>e</sup>Δ υπ. εις τον οικον σου D 33 a ff vg arm 10 επι τ. γ. αφ. αμ. ΑCDHLMW<sup>c</sup>ΔΘ<sup>f</sup>Σ al<sup>mu</sup> latt syrpesh me arm go] αφ. επι τ. γ. αμ. ΑΕFGKSUVTΠ i 69 al syrhel αφ. αμ. επι τ. γ. ΒΦ 142 157

but leaves them to germinate where they found soil. Εὐκοπώτερόν ἐστιν occurs here in the three Synoptists, and again in Mc. x. 25 (Mt. Lc.) and Lc. xvi. 17; for εὔκοπος see Sir. xxii. 15, 1 Macc. iii. 18, and εὔκοπία occurs in 2 Macc. ii. 25; the words belong to the later Greek from Aristophanes onwards. *"Εγειρε":* WH. prefer ἐγείρου, the reading of BL 28; see note on v. 11.

10. ἴνα δὲ εἰδῆτε ὅτι κτλ.] ‘But—be the answer what it may—to convince you that the word of absolution was not uttered without authority, I will confirm it by the word of healing of which you may see the effects.’ On the construction see Blass, *Gr.*, p. 286 f. *Ἐξουσίαν ἔχει*, Mt., Mc., Lc., not = *potest*, *potestatem habet*, as the Latin versions render, followed by the English versions from Wycliffe onwards, but “hath authority”: cf. i. 22, 27. This *ἔξουσία* is not in conflict with the *δύναμις* of God (ii. 7), but dependent on it. It is claimed by the Lord as the Son of Man, i.e. as belonging to Him in His Incarnate Life as the ideal Man Who has received the fulness of the Spirit (cf. i. 10, Jo. xx. 23), and as Head of the race: cf. Jo. v. 26.

οἱ νιὸι τοῦ ἀνθρώπου] Used here for the first time in the Synoptic narrative: cf. ii. 28, viii. 31, 38, ix.

9, 12, 31, x. 33, 45, xiii. 26, xiv. 21, 41, 62. The LXX. has (*οἱ*) *νιὸι τοῦ ἀνθρώπου* (מְנֻחָה בָּבֶל), Eccl. iii. 18, 19, 21, and *νιὸς ἀνθρώπου* (שְׁנָאָרָב), Dan. vii. 13 (Lxx. and Th.) and (מְנֻחָה בָּבֶל), Ezek. ii. 1, &c., Dan. viii. 17. The term is usually thought to be based on Dan. vii. 13, but see Westcott, add. note on Jo. i. 51, and on the interpretation of Dan. l.c. cf. Stanton, *J. and C. Messiah*, p. 109, and Bevan, *Daniel*, p. 118 f. Comp. also Charles, *B. of Enoch*, p. 312 ff., and on the use of *νιὸς τοῦ ἀνθρ.* by our Lord and in the early Church, see Stanton, p. 239 ff.; G. Dalman, *Die Worte Jesu* i., p. 191 ff.; the careful investigations by Dr Jas. Drummond in *J. Th. St.* ii. pp. 350 ff., 539; and the art. *Son of Man* in Hastings, *D.B.* iv.

ἐπὶ τῆς γῆς ἀφιέναι ἀμαρτίας] In contrast to an implied ‘in Heaven,’ cf. Lc. ii. 14, ἐν ὑψίστοις...ἐπὶ γῆς: Mt. xvi. 19, Col. i. 20, ἐπὶ τῆς γῆς...ἐν τοῖς οὐρανοῖς. The ratification of the absolving words belongs to another order (Mt. l.c.): the act of absolution, which is committed to the Son of Man as such, takes place in man’s world, and is pronounced by human lips, either those of the Son of Man Himself or of men who receive His Spirit and are sent by Him for that end (Jo. xx. 23). Such absolutions do not invade

11 <sup>τι</sup> Κοί λέγω, ἔγειρε, ἄρον τὸν κράβαττόν σου καὶ  
12 ὑπαγε εἰς τὸν οἶκόν σου. <sup>τοῦ</sup> καὶ ἡγέρθη, καὶ εὐθὺς  
ἄρας τὸν κράβαττον ἐξῆλθεν ἐμπροσθεν πάντων·  
ώστε ἐξίστασθαι πάντας καὶ δοξάζειν τὸν θεὸν  
[λέγοντας] ὅτι Οὐτως<sup>¶</sup> οὐδέποτε εἴδαμεν.<sup>¶</sup>

¶ Θεοφ

11 εγειραι LUW<sup>c</sup>Δ alsatmu εγειρον K+και AW<sup>c</sup>ΔΘ<sup>f</sup>II al 12 ηγ. και ευθὺς  
NB(C\*) L 33 me<sup>cod</sup>] ηγ. ευθεως και AC<sup>3</sup>W<sup>c</sup>ΓΔΘ<sup>f</sup>ΙΙΣΦ al syrr go aeth ευθεως ηγ. και  
D om ευθ. b c e ff q | εμπροσθεν NBL 604] εναντιον ACDW<sup>c</sup>ΓΔΠΣ al ενωπιον W<sup>c</sup>Θ<sup>f</sup>Φ  
33 1071 al<sup>parce</sup> | λεγοντας ΝΑCLW<sup>c</sup>ΓΔΘ<sup>f</sup>ΙΙΣΦ] om B b και λεγειν D arm | ειδαμεν  
CD (ειδομεν Νc<sup>a</sup>BLW<sup>c</sup>Γ al ιδομεν ΑΚΜVII al)] εφανη εν τω Ισραηλ Ν\*

the prerogative of God, since they ultimately proceed from Him, and become effective only on conditions which He prescribes.

λέγει τῷ παραλυτικῷ] Mt. τότε κτλ.: Lc. ἐπένει τῷ παραλελυμένῳ. It is instructive to observe how a note which clearly belongs to the common tradition receives a slightly different form from each of the Synoptists.

II. σοὶ λέγω, ἔγειρε] The absolution was declaratory (ἀφίενται), the healing is given in the form of a command, for the recipient must co-operate. "Εγειρε, like ἀγε, is used intransitively; see Winer-Schm., p. 126; ἔγειρον (vv. ll. v. 9) seems to be a grammatical correction; ἐγειραι (Mt. ix. 5, 6, Mc. ad l., Lc. v. 24, vi. 8, viii. 54, Jo. v. 8) is possibly an itacism, yet see WSchm. p. 126.

ἄρον τὸν κράβ. σου] Cf. Jo. v. 8. The κράβαττος without its burden could easily be carried by one man if in good health. That the paralytic could do this was proof of his complete recovery. Taken with ὑπαγε εἰς τὸν οἶκόν σου (Mt. Mc.), the command points to his being an inhabitant of Capernaum, and not one of the crowd from outside. He would therefore remain as a standing witness to Jesus.

12. καὶ ἡγέρθη, καὶ εὐθὺς κτλ.] The command received prompt (εὐθύς, Mc.

only) obedience: the paralytic rose (ἡγέρθη, raised himself), took the pallet on his back or under his arm and, the crowd giving way, passed out into the street (ἐξῆλθεν, Mc.; Mt. Lc. ἀπῆλθεν), in the sight of (ἐμπροσθεν = ἐνώπιον = ΥΨΗΛΟΥ, cf. Guillemand on Mt. v. 16) the whole company.

ώστε ἐξίστασθαι πάντας κτλ.] Mt. ιδόντες δὲ ἐφοβήθησαν: Lc. ἐκστασίς ἔλαβεν ἄπαντας. For the moment the general amazement was too great for words (cf. v. 42, vi. 51): when they spoke, it was to glorify God for the authority committed to humanity in the person of Jesus (Mt. τὸν δόντα ἐξονσίαν τουατην τοῖς ἀνθρώποις). According to Lc. the restored paralytic had set the example (ἀπῆλθεν...δοξάζων τὸν θεόν).

λέγοντας ὅτι Οὐτως οὐδέποτε εἴδαμεν] Lc. εἴδαμεν παράδοξα σήμερον. The contrast between this astonishment at the physical cure, and the silence with which the absolution had been received, did not escape the ancient expositors: cf. Victor: τὸ μεῖζον ἔσαντες τὴν τῶν ἀμαρτιῶν ἀφεσιν τὸ φαινόμενον θαυμάζοντις. <sup>7</sup>Ιδεῖν οὐτως is an unusual construction for ιδ. τουαντα, but see Mt. ix. 33, οὐδέποτε ἐφάνη οὐτως; for εἴδαμεν cf. WH., Notes, p. 164: Blass, Gr., p. 45. Lc. has given the sense in other words; both accounts convey the same impression of unbounded surprise.

<sup>13</sup> Καὶ ἐξῆλθεν πάλιν παρὰ τὴν θάλασσαν· καὶ ἡ πᾶς ὁ ὄχλος ἤρχετο πρὸς αὐτόν, καὶ ἐδίδασκεν αὐτούς. <sup>14</sup> καὶ παράγων εἶδεν Λευεῖν τὸν τοῦ Ἀλφαίου <sup>14 § syr<sup>hier</sup></sup> καθήμενον ἐπὶ τὸ τελώνιον, καὶ λέγει αὐτῷ Ἀκολούθει μοι· καὶ ἀναστὰς ἥκολούθησεν αὐτῷ.

<sup>13</sup> om παλιν D 13 | παρα] εις Β\* (π. Βc.a) | om ο D\* | ηρχοντο 1071      <sup>14</sup> παραγων]+is FGHI' min<sup>nomn</sup> | Λευειν Βc.a BE\*LMΣΦ (Λευειν CE<sup>2</sup>FGHSUV Λευει Β\* Λευι AKSGΔΠ 33 al<sup>ma</sup>)] Ιακωβον D 13 69 124<sup>txt</sup> a b c d e f g r

13—14. CALL OF LEVI (Mt. ix. 9, Lc. v. 27—28).

13. καὶ ἐξῆλθεν πάλιν κτλ.] Probably as soon as the crowd was dispersed and the excitement had subsided. Ἐξῆλθεν, i.e. from the house and the town, cf. i. 35: with ἐξ, παρά comp. Acts xvi. 13, ἐξῆλθομεν ἔξω τῆς πόλης παρὰ ποταμού: the way out led Him to the seaside, Vg. *ad mare*, i.e. *ad oram maris*. Πάλιν—a note frequently struck by Mc., cf. ii. 1, iii. 1, 20, iv. 1, &c.—refers not to ἐξ, but to παρὰ τ. θάλασσαν, cf. i. 16; once again He found Himself, as at the beginning of His Ministry, by the side of the lake.

καὶ πᾶς ὁ ὄχλος ἤρχετο κτλ.] As soon as He is seen there, the crowd reassembles as thick as ever (*πᾶς*), and the teaching, interrupted in the house, begins afresh by the lake. The imperfects ἤρχετο...ἐδίδασκεν, as contrasted with ἐξῆλθεν, point to the continuance of the process, perhaps at intervals, through the day. Only Mc. notes the teaching by the seaside on this occasion.

14. καὶ παράγων κτλ.] As He teaches, or at intervals between the instructions, He passes on along the shore. Παράγων εἰδεν: the same words are used at the call of Simon and Andrew (i. 16): cf. also Jo. ix. 1; even in moving from place to place the Lord was on the watch for opportunities. Λευεῖν τὸν τοῦ Ἀλφαίου (so Mc. only: Lc. ὄνόματι Λευεῖν: Mt. ἄνθρωπον...λεγύμενον Ματθαῖον). Λευεῖς

(Λευεῖ, ιλ) occurs in 1 Esdr. ix. 14 as the proper name of a Jew of the time of the exile, and is used in Heb. vii. 9 for the patriarch; cf. Λευίς Joseph. ant. i. 19. 7. In Origen c. Cels. i. 62 the true reading is Λευής, and not, as was formerly supposed, Λεβής: see WH., Intr., p. 144 (ed. 2, 1896). Ἀλφαῖος, Vg. *Alphaeus*, was also the name of the father of the second James (Mc. iii. 18): hence apparently the ‘Western’ reading Ιάκωβον in this context, see vv. ll., and Ephrem’s comment “He chose James the publican,” *ev. concord. exp.* p. 58: cf. Photius in Possin. *caten. in Mc.* p. 50: δύο ἡσαν τελῶναι ἐκ τῶν δώδεκα, Ματθαῖος καὶ Ιάκωβος.

τοῦ Ἀλφαίου] Ἀλφαῖος = Aram. Ḫלְפָן, cf. Syrr. <sup>sin. (Lo.) pesh.</sup> مل. Whether it is identical with Κλωπᾶς (Jo. xix. 25) is more than doubtful, see Lightfoot, *Galatians*, p. 267 n.; against that view is the spelling of the latter word in Syrr. <sup>pesh. hier.</sup> with م instead of م. On the identity of Λευεῖς with Ματθαῖος see note on iii. 18.

καθήμενον ἐπὶ τὸ τελώνιον] Capernaum was on the Great West road which led from Damascus to the Mediterranean (G. A. Smith, *Hist. Geogr.*, p. 428), and like Jericho had its establishment of τελῶναι and its τελώνιον, but the tolls were here collected for the tetrarch and not for the Emperor (Schürer i. ii. 68). Τελώνιον (Vg. *teloneum*, cf. *Ter. de bapt.* 12; used in modern Greek, Kennedy,

15 <sup>15</sup> Καὶ γίνεται κατακεῖσθαι αὐτὸν ἐν τῇ οἰκίᾳ αὐτοῦ, καὶ πολλοὶ τελῶναι καὶ ἀμαρτωλοὶ συνανέ-

15 γίνεται NBL 33 565 δο<sub>4</sub>] εγένετο ΑCDΓΔΠΣΦ al latt | κατακεισθαι αυτ.] pr. εν τω ACW<sup>c</sup>ΓΠΣΦ alpler f q vg syrr<sup>peshel</sup> arm me εν τω κατακλιθηται Δ κατακειμενων αυτων Da b c e ff

p. 154) is, (1) the toll (Strabo, xvi. i. 27, τελώνιον ἔχει καὶ τοῦτ' οὐ μέτριον), (2) the toll-house (Wycliffe, "tolbothe," Tindale, "receyete of custome"), as in this context. Levi was seated, doubtless amongst other τελῶναι (v. 15), 'at' (*ad*) the office. 'Επι c. acc. in the N. T. often answers the question 'whither?' (Blass, *Gr.*, p. 136), cf. iv. 38, Lc. ii. 25, Acts i. 21: the phrase is here common to Mt., Mc., Lc.

καὶ λέγει αὐτῷ Ἀκολούθει μοι] See note on i. 17. The command was practically a call to discipleship, involving the complete abandonment of his work. Disciples who were fishermen could return to their fishing at pleasure (cf. Jo. xxi. 3); not so the toll-collector who forsook his post. Yet Levi did not hesitate: ἀναστὰς ἡκολούθησεν αὐτῷ, Mt., Mc.; Lc., thinking of the life which was thus begun, writes ἡκολούθει, and adds καταλιπὼν πάντα. The call was given by One Who knew that the way had been prepared for its acceptance. How the preparation had been made can only be conjectured: possibly, as in the case of the first four, through the Baptist, Lc. iii. 12. Cf. Tert. *l. c.*, "nescio quorum fide uno verbo Domini suscitatus teloneum dereliquit." To Porphyry, who saw in Matthew's prompt obedience proof of the mental weakness of Christ's disciples, Jerome replies that it rather attests the magnetic power exerted on men by His unique personality.

15—17. FEAST IN LEVI'S HOUSE  
(Mt. ix. 10—13, Lc. v. 29—32).

15. καὶ γίνεται ... καὶ] Mt. καὶ εγένετο...καὶ ίδοι: Lc. drops the Hebraic turn of the sentence. Kata-

κεῖσθαι, used of the sick in i. 30, ii. 4, refers here and in xiv. 3 to persons at table (see Amos vi. 4); cf. Judith xiii. 15, Lc. v. 29, I Cor. viii. 10, and in class. Greek, Plato, *Symp.* 185 D. Mt. prefers ἀνακεῖσθαι, which is more usual in this sense in Biblical Greek (LXX., i Esdr. iv. 10, Tob. ix. 6 (N), Mc. xiv. 18, &c.), so Mc. just below (*συνανέκειντο*); the Vg. endeavours to distinguish between the two (*cum accumperet...simul discumbabant*). 'Εν τῇ οἰκίᾳ αὐτοῦ: so Lc.; Mt., speaking of his own house, omits αὐτοῦ—a house to its owner or tenant is simply ἡ οἰκία. A second house in Capernaum is now thrown open to Jesus and His disciples, cf. i. 29. On αὐτοῦ (nearly = ἔκεινον) cf. WM., pp. 183, 788.

πολλοὶ τελῶναι κτλ.] So Mt.; Lc. ἦν ὄχλος πολὺς τελωνῶν καὶ ἄλλων. It was, as, Lc. says, a μεγάλη δοχή, a 'reception' which, if intended in the first instance to do honour to the Master (αὐτῷ), included many of Levi's friends and colleagues. Τελώνης occurs in Mc. only in this context. Τελωνεῖν 'to impose taxes' is used in i Macc. xiii. 39 (εἴ τι ἄλλο ἐτελωνεῖτο ἐν Ἱερουσαλήμ, μηκέτι τελωνεῖσθω, cf. x. 29, 30) of dues exacted from the Jews under the Syrian domination. The τελώνης or tax-farmer was a well-known personage at Athens in the time of Aristophanes, and not popular; cf. Ar. *Eg.* 247 f., παῖς παῖς τὸν πανούργον... καὶ τελώνην καὶ φάραγγα καὶ Χάρυβδιν ἀρπαγῆς. The Vg. renders the word by the title of the corresponding officer at Rome, *publicanus*; but the τελῶναι of the Gospels corresponded more nearly to the *portidores*. With the τελῶναι were ἀμαρτωλοὶ: the two classes are found together again in

κειντο τῷ Ἰησοῦ καὶ τοῖς μαθηταῖς αὐτοῦ· ἥσαν γὰρ πολλοί· καὶ ἡκολούθουν αὐτῷ<sup>16</sup> καὶ [οἱ] γραμματεῖς ιβ

[15 συναντειντο] pr ελθούτες AC\* | καὶ ηκολουθουν (-θησαν ΑCDΓΠΣΦ) αυτω] pr οι D b f vg et omisso και a e eff q arm 16 και (οι και ΒΔ me) οι (οι οι ΙW<sup>vid</sup>) γρ. των Φαρ. (Ι)BL(W<sup>vid</sup>)Δ 33 b me<sup>cod</sup>] και οι γρ. και Φαρ. ΑCDΓΠΦ αι οι δε γρ. και οι Φαρ. Σ 6ο<sub>4</sub> arm<sup>vid</sup>

Mt. ix. 19, Lc. xv. 1. Fritzsche cites Lucian *Necyom.* 11, *μοιχοὶ καὶ πορνοβοσκοὶ καὶ τελῶναι καὶ κόλακες καὶ συκοφάνται καὶ τοιοῦτος ὅμιλος τῶν πάντα κυκώντων ἐν τῷ βίῳ*. But ἄμ. is probably used in this connexion with some latitude: sometimes it refers to the outcasts of society (Lc. vii. 37), but as used by the Scribes it would include non-Pharisees e.g. Sadducees (so frequently in the Psalms of Solomon, Ryle and James, pp. xlvi, 3 f.), Gentiles (Galatians ii. 15, Lightfoot's note), or even Hellenizing Jews (1 Macc. ii. 44, 48). Many of the men thus branded in Capernaum were probably guilty of no worse offence than abstaining from the official piety of the Pharisees, or following proscribed occupations (Lc. xix. 7, 8), or were of Gentile extraction, or merely consorted with Gentiles (Acts x. 28): cf. Mt. xviii. 17 ὁ ἔθνικὸς καὶ ὁ τ. The word ἀμαρτωλός belongs to the later Greek, but was probably a colloquialism in earlier times (cf. Ar. *Thesem.* IIII); in the LXX. it is specially common in Pss. (where it mostly = ψ. 7) and in Sirach.

συνανέκειτο τῷ Ἰησοῦ κτλ.] So Mt. Συνανακεῖσθαι (3 Macc. v. 39) occurs again in vi. 22, and in Lc. vii. 49, xiv. 10, 15; Jo. appears to prefer ἀνακεῖσθαι σύν (xii. 2). Ἰησοῦ is the N. T. form of the dat. (WM., p. 77); in Deut. iii. 21, xxxi. 23, Jos. i. 1, &c. Ἰησοῖ is the reading of Cod. B (in Jos. iv. 15 of A also). Μαθητής is here used by Mc. for the first time; it occurs in Cod. A of Jer. xiii. 21, and again in xx. 11, xxvi. (xlvi.) 9, and not

elsewhere in the LXX., but it is used by Plato for the adult pupil of a philosopher (*Prot.* 315 A). The Biblical μαθητής is the pupil (ταξιδιώτης) of a religious teacher, such as a Rabbi, or a Prophet who assumed the office of διδάσκαλος. On the pupils of the Scribes see Schürer II. i. p. 324; cf. the reference to them in Aboth i. 1 (Taylor, *Sayings*, &c., p. 25). The master followed by his pupils was a familiar sight in Galilee; it was the teaching which was new.

ἥσαν γὰρ πολλοί] These words appear to refer to τελ. κ. ἄμ., reasserting the singular fact just mentioned—an editorial note, or possibly one belonging to the earliest form of the tradition. If καὶ ἡκολούθουν αὐτῷ is to be connected (WH.) with the antecedent clause, it must be taken to refer to the fact that a number of this class had already begun to follow Jesus, probably in consequence of His words of forgiveness to the paralytic, as well as through the example of Levi. But see next note.

15—16. καὶ ἡκολούθουν αὐτῷ κτλ.] So the words should probably be connected and read. Jesus was followed to Levi's house by enemies as well as (καὶ) disciples. Ακολούθειν in the Gospels usually implies moral attraction, and it may be to the rarity of the ordinary meaning that the disturbance of the text is due: D (οἱ καὶ...καὶ...καὶ εἰδαν) mediates between the two texts. Οἱ γραμματεῖς τῶν Φαρισαίων: those of the Scribes who belonged to the Pharisees, cf. Acts xxiii. 9, τινὲς τῶν γραμματέων

τῶν Φαρισαίων καὶ ἰδόντες ὅτι ἐσθίει μετὰ τῶν ἀμαρτωλῶν καὶ τελωνῶν ἔλεγον τοῖς μαθηταῖς αὐτοῦ  
¶ W. "Οτι μετὰ τῶν τελωνῶν" καὶ ἀμαρτωλῶν ἐσθίει;  
§ i 17 §<sup>17</sup> καὶ ἀκούσας ὁ Ἰησοῦς λέγει αὐτοῖς ὅτι Οὐ χρείαν  
ἔχουσιν οἱ ἴσχυοντες ἰατροῦ, ἀλλ' οἱ κακῶς ἔχοντες·  
οὐκ ἥλθον καλέσαι δικαίους ἀλλὰ ἀμαρτωλούς.<sup>¶</sup>

16 καὶ ιδούτες ΝΒΛΔΩ<sup>c</sup>] οἱν καὶ ΑΓΓΙΣΦ latt<sup>vplv</sup> arm<sup>rid</sup> καὶ εἰδαν Δ | οτι εσθίει  
B 33 565] οτι ησθίειν ΝDL c vg αυτον εσθιοντα ACW<sup>c</sup>ΓΔΙΙΣΦ al a f q go | αμαρτ. κ.  
τελ. BDL\* 33 565 a b c g q vg<sup>odd</sup>] τελ. κ. αμαρτ. ΝΑCL<sup>cor</sup>W<sup>c</sup>ΓΔΙΙΣΦ al f ff syrr<sup>pesh hel</sup>  
arm go | οτι] pr τι ΑΓΓΔΙΙΣΦ al δια τι ΝD | τελ. κ. αμ.] τελ. κ. των αμ. B αμ. κ. των  
τελ. D a aeth | εσθίει 2<sup>o</sup> (ΝBD minpaue a b c ff εσθίετε GΣ 124 604 syr<sup>hel</sup>)]+καὶ πινει  
ACEFHKLΓΔΠΦ al c f vg syrr<sup>pesh hel</sup> me go aeth+καὶ πινετε GΣ 124 604 syr<sup>hel</sup>+ο  
διδασκαλος υμων ΝC (ante εσθ.) ΛΔ 69 1071 al c f vg me aeth 17 om αυτοις D  
I 209 a b c ff g q | οτι BD 1071] om cett | ov] ov γαρ CL 1071 c f ff vg | αλλα B [  
αμαρτωλοις]+eis μετανοιαν CG al a c f g syrr<sup>hier</sup> (om eis μ. ΝΑΒΔΚΛΔΠΣΦ al b f ff q vg  
syrr<sup>pesh hel</sup> arm me aeth)

τοῦ μέρους τῶν Φαρισαίων. Mt. has  
οἱ Φαρισαῖοι, Lc., combining Mt. and  
Mc., οἱ Φ. καὶ οἱ γρ. αὐτῶν.

καὶ ἰδόντες ὅτι κτλ.] The changes of  
order (15, τελ. κ. ἀμ., 16, ἀμ. κ. τελ.  
(1<sup>o</sup>), τελ. κ. ἀμ. (2<sup>o</sup>)) are singular and,  
if original, can hardly be accidental.  
Possibly Mc. means to shew that in  
the thoughts of these Scribes, though  
not in their words, the charge of  
being in the company of sinners was  
foremost. Here, at least, the Master  
had, as they supposed, revealed His  
departure from the standard of the  
O. T. (Ps. i. 1). For ἰδεῖν ὅτι (see  
vv. ll.) cf. ix. 25.

ἔλεγον τοῖς μαθηταῖς κτλ.] Not yet  
daring to remonstrate with the Master;  
they have learnt caution from the  
experience related in ii. 8. "Οτι" is  
here = τι; (Mt., Lc., διὰ τι;); cf. ix. 11,  
28, and for the LXX., I Chron. xvii. 6  
(ὅτι=πιθέτι), Jer. ii. 36 (=πιθέτι); see  
WM., p. 208, n. 5, and Burton,  
§ 349. To eat with Gentiles was an  
offence recognised even by Pharisaic  
Christians (Acts xi. 3, cf. Gal. ii. 11 f.),  
and publicans and sinners were ranked  
in the same category with Gentiles  
(I Cor. v. 11).

After ἐσθίει Mt. supplies ὁ διδάσκα  
λος ἡμῶν: Lc. includes the disciples  
(ἐσθίετε καὶ πίνετε).

17. καὶ ἀκούσας ὁ Ἰησοῦς] The  
remark does not escape Him: cf.  
v. 36. Οὐ χρείαν ἔχουσιν οἱ ἴσχ.  
κτλ.: so the three Synoptists (Lc.,  
ὑγιαίνοντες=ἴσχυοντες). The proverb  
in some form was not unknown to  
pagan writers, e.g. Pausanias ap.  
Plutarch. *apophth. Lacon.* 230 F, οὐδὲ  
οἱ ἱατροί, ἔφη, παρὰ τοῖς ὑγιαίνοντιν  
ὅπου δὲ οἱ νοσοῦντες διατρίβειν εἰώθα-  
σιν: Diog. Laert. *Antisth.* vi. 1. 6,  
οἱ ἱατροί, φησί, μετὰ τῶν νοσοῦντων  
εἰσὼν ἀλλ' οὐ πυρέττοντιν: the last  
words present an application to which  
Jesus does not refer, but which is im-  
plied in the use of the saying.

οὐκ ἥλθον κτλ.] Lc. οὐκ ἔλήλυθα,  
adding eis μετάνοιαν—a true gloss,  
but perhaps not so well in keep-  
ing with the proverbial form of  
the saying as the terser ending.  
There is no need to say that the  
physician's aim is the restoration of  
the patient to health. For early  
homiletic applications see Justin M.,  
*apol.* i. 15, οὐ γὰρ τοὺς δικαίους οὐδὲ  
τοὺς σώφροντας eis μετάνοιαν ἐκάλεσεν

<sup>18</sup> Καὶ ἦσαν οἱ μαθηταὶ Ἰωάνου καὶ οἱ Φαρισαῖοι 18  
νηστεύοντες. καὶ ἔρχονται καὶ λέγουσιν αὐτῷ Διὰ

18 οἱ Φαρισαῖοι ΝΑΒCDKMII al b c e f ff q vg syrr<sup>gw</sup> hel arm me go] οἱ τῶν Φαρισαίων  
ΕFGHLSUVΓΔΙΙΣ 1 33 al a g l syr<sup>soh</sup> οἱ Φαρισαῖοι Φ

ὅς Χριστός, ἀλλὰ τὸν δοεῖβος καὶ ἀκολάστους καὶ ἀδίκους. Ps. Clem. 2 Cor. 2, τοῦτο λέγει ὅτι δεῖ τὸν ἀπολλυμένους σῷζειν ἐκεῖνο γάρ ἐστιν μέγα καὶ θαυμαστόν, οὐ τὰ ἐστῶτα στηρίζειν ἀλλὰ τὰ πίπτοντα. The contrast of ἀμαρτωλός and δίκαιος appears first in Ps. i. 5. The question who are the δίκαιοι whom Christ did not come to call has exercised interpreters here and in Lc. xv. 17. In such contexts the relatively righteous can hardly be in view, since all are ἀμαρτωλοί in the sight of God and of Christ (Rom. iii. 23, 1 John i. 8). Hence Macarius Magnes, iv. 18, argues that the δίκαιοι are the Angels. But since our Lord speaks only of those within the sphere of His mission, the explanation is inadmissible. Rather His reference is to the Pharisees, on the assumption that they were what they professed to be, and the saying in this respect should not be pressed beyond its immediate application: cf. Jerome: “sugillat scribas et Pharisaeos, qui iustos se aestimantes peccatorum et publicanorum consortia declinabant”; we need not add with Thphpt.: κατ’ εἰρωνείαν γὰρ τοῦτό φησιν. The point of it is that if the guests were ἀμαρτωλοί, it was in such company the physician of souls might be sought, and not under opposite circumstances. For this view of sin as a disease comp. Isa. i. 4 ff. and liii. 5, τῷ μῶλωπι αὐτοῦ ἡμεῖς λάθημεν. Mt. inserts between the proverb and its application a reference to Hosea vi. 6 q. v. With ἥλθον cf. ἐξῆλθον, i. 38, and note there; x. 45, Jo. i. 11, iii. 2, &c.

18—22. QUESTION OF FASTING:  
THE OLD AND THE NEW (Mt. ix. 14  
—17, Lc. v. 33—39).

18. καὶ ἦσαν οἱ μαθηταὶ κτλ.] Vg. et

erant...ieunantes, ‘were fasting’ not (as WM., p. 438) ‘were used to fast’; cf. Lc. νηστεύοντις πυκνά; on this imperfect see Blass, Gr., p. 198 f., Burton, § 34. If Levi’s entertainment fell on a Sunday or a Wednesday night, the disciples of Jesus were feasting after the disciples of stricter schools had begun one of their weekly fasts. The Law required abstinence only on the Day of the Atonement (ἡ νηστεία, Acts xxvii. 9), but the stricter Jews practised it on the second and fifth days of every week (Schürer II. ii. 119). For the practice of the disciples of the Pharisees (i.e. the pupils of Pharisaeic Rabbis) see Lc. xviii. 12, νηστεύεις τοῦ σαββάτου, *Didache* 7=Apost. Const. vii. 23, νηστεύοντις γὰρ δευτέρᾳ σαββάτῳ καὶ πέμπτῃ, and J. Lightfoot on Mt. ix. 14. The disciples of John (mentioned again in Jo. i. 35, iii. 25, cf. Acts xix. 2 ff.) naturally inherited John’s asceticism (Mt. xi. 18). Tatian omits this explanatory note, which is peculiar to Mc.

καὶ ἔρχονται κτλ.] Not apparently the disciples of John or of the Pharisees, but the Scribes, who have now gathered courage from confidence in the goodness of their cause: cf. Lc. οἱ δὲ εἶπαν. Mt. gives another account: προσέρχονται αὐτῷ οἱ μαθηταὶ Ἰωάνου, and alters the question accordingly (διὰ τί ἡμεῖς κτλ.). Tatian ignores the difference, adopting Lc.’s form. Later harmonists imagine the same question to be put in varying form by the disciples and the guests, e.g. Aug. *de cons.* ii. 26. 62, who is followed by Bede: “colligendum a pluribus hanc Domino objectam esse quaestioneum et a Pharisaeis scilicet et a discipulis Joannis et a convivis vel aliis quibusdam.” The uncertainty thus imported into the history is

τί οἱ μαθηταὶ Ἰωάνου καὶ οἱ μαθηταὶ τῶν Φαρισαίων  
νηστεύοντις οἱ δὲ σοὶ μαθηταὶ οὐ νηστεύοντιν; καὶ  
19 εἶπεν αὐτοῖς ὁ Ἰησοῦς <sup>19</sup>Μὴ δύνανται οἱ νιὸι τοῦ  
νυμφῶν ἐν ᾧ ὁ νυμφίος μετ' αὐτῶν ἐστιν νηστεύειν;  
ὅσον χρόνον ἔχουσιν τὸν νυμφίον μετ' αὐτῶν οἱ  
20 δύνανται νηστεύειν. <sup>20</sup>ἐλεύσονται δὲ ἡμέραι ὅταν

18 οἱ μαθ. τ. Φαρ. ΚΒC\*<sup>L</sup> 33 565 e aeth] οἱ τ. Φ. C<sup>2</sup>ΔΓΔΠΣΦ al c vg syrr<sup>pesh hel</sup> οἱ  
Φαρισαῖοι min<sup>pau</sup> a f ff arm οἱ από τ. Φ. οἱ μαθ. τ. Φ. 1071 om A | om μαθηταὶ 4<sup>o</sup> B  
127 2<sup>pe</sup> 19 om ο Ιησ. D 28 b i q | τὸν νυμφ.] nuptiarum b ff vg | om οσον  
χρονον ... νηστευειν DU 1 33 604 al<sup>pau</sup> a b e ff g i syrpesh aeth | μεθ εαυτων  
ΑΛΓΔΠΣΦ al

surely a worse evil than any doubt  
that can arise as to the precise  
accuracy of one of the reports.

οἱ δὲ σοὶ μαθηταὶ κτλ.] They still  
stop short of a direct attack upon the  
Master; cf. v. 24.

19. μὴ δύνανται;] Vg. *numquid possunt?* Μὴ expects a negative answer (WM., p. 641, Blass, *Gr.*, p. 254); cf. e.g. Mt. vii. 9, 10, Jo. iii. 4, James ii. 14. Lc., as often, turns the sentence into another form with a slightly different sense: μὴ δύνασθε...ποιεῖν νηστεῦσαι; in Mt. and Mc. δύνανται points to the moral impossibility; they might be made to fast, but it would not be a fast worthy of the name.

οἱ νιὸι τοῦ νυμφῶν] = πατρὶς γυναικῶν, known in class. Greek as *νυμφενταί*, and in the later literary style as *παράνυμφοι* or *παρανύμφοι*. For νυμφών (= *παστός*, Joel ii. 16) cf. Tobit vi. 14, 17, and for the idiom 'sons of,' &c., 1 Macc. iv. 2 οἱ νιὸι τῆς ἄκρας = 'the men of the citadel'; see Trench, *Studies*, p. 170 n. The Lord perhaps designedly adopts the Baptist's own metaphor (Jo. iii. 29), substituting however οἱ νιὸι τοῦ νυμφῶν for διὰ φίλος τοῦ νυμφίου: on the distinction between the two see Edersheim i. 355, and Moore on Judges xiv. 11, 20. The rôle of the 'best man' was over; twelve disciples had taken the place of the one fore-

runner. In the present connexion the title 'sons of the bride-chamber' had perhaps a further appropriateness; it was in fact an answer to the cavil of v. 18, for "apparently by Rabbinic custom all in attendance on the bride-groom were dispensed from certain religious observances in consideration of their duty to increase his joy" (Hort, *Judaistic Christianity*, p. 23).

ἐν ᾧ ὁ νυμφίος κτλ.] So the Lord identifies Himself with the Bridegroom of O.T. prophecy (Hos. ii. 20, &c.), i.e. God in His covenant relation to Israel, a metaphor in the N.T. applied to the Christ (Mt. xxv. 1, Jo. iii. 28, 29, Eph. v. 28 ff., Apoc. xix. 7, &c.). Victor: ποῖος νυμφίος; ὁ μέλλων νυμφεύεσθαι τὴν ἑκκλησίαν...τί ἐστιν ἡ νύμφευσις; ἀρραβών δόσις, τουτέστι πνεύματος ἀγίου χάρις. Ἐν ᾧ Mc., Lc. = ἐφ' ὅσον Mt., cf. Mc., *infra*, ὅσον χρόνον. For νηστεύειν Mt. substitutes πενθεῖν. Fasting was fitting for the house of mourning, not for a time of rejoicing: cf. Judith viii. 6, ἐνήστευε πάστας τὰς ἡμέρας τῆς χηρεύσεως αὐτῆς. With ὅσον χρόνον ἔχουσιν cf. xiv. 7, ἐμὲ δὲ οὐ πάντοτε ἔχετε [μεθ' ἑαυτῶν]: Jo. xiii. 33, ἔτι μικρὸν μεθ' ὑμῶν εἰμι. "Οσον χρόνον is the acc. of duration, WM., p. 288. Tatian again (cf. v. 18) omits the words which Mc. adds.

20. ἐλεύσονται δὲ ἡμέραι κτλ.]

ἀπαρθῆ ἀπ' αὐτῶν ὁ νυμφίος, καὶ τότε νηστεύσουσιν  
ἐν ἐκείνῃ τῇ ἡμέρᾳ. §<sup>21</sup> οὐδεὶς § ἐπίβλημα ῥάκους 2I §<sup>Wg</sup>  
§ ἀγνάφου ἐπιράπτει ἐπὶ ἴματιον παλαιόν· εἰ δὲ μή, §<sup>syr<sup>sin</sup></sup> 7

20 απαρθῆ] αρθη C 13 28 64 69 124 346 | εν εκειναις ταις ημεραις ΓΠ<sup>2</sup> al minpler  
a b c e f vg me 21 ουδεις] pr και EFHUVΓΠ al+de DGM | επισυνραπτει D |  
ιματιω παλαιω ΑΓΔΠΣΦΤ al | μη] μηγε ΚΔΠ\*Σ min<sup>nom</sup>

There must be a limit to the joyous life of personal intercourse. The saying as far as *νηστεύσουσιν* is reported in identical words in Mt., Mc., Lc. For the phrase *ἔλευσονται ἡμ.* see Lc. xxi. 6, and with the whole verse compare Jo. xvi. 20. "Οταν ἀπαρθῇ, Vg. *cum auferetur*—rather perhaps, *cum ablatus fuerit*; *ὅταν* leaves the moment uncertain, while of the certainty of the future occurrence there is no question: cf. Burton, § 316. *'Απαίρεσθαι*, here only used of Christ's departure; but cf. Isa. liii. 8, *ἀρεται ἀπὸ τῆς γῆς ἡ ζωὴ αὐτοῦ*. *Καὶ τότε νηστεύσουσιν*: a prophecy, not a command; the Lord anticipates that fasting will remain as an institution of the Church after the Passion, and regulates its use (Mt. vi. 16). Comp. Acts xiii. 2, 3, xiv. 23, *Didache* 7, 8, *ὑμεῖς δὲ νηστεύσατε τετράδα καὶ παρασκευήν*. The fast before Easter was from the end of the second century specially connected with this saying of Christ: Tert. *ieiun.* 2, "certe in evangelio illos dies ieiuniis determinatos putant in quibus ablatus est Sponsus, et hos esse iam solos legitimos ieiuniorum Christianorum...de cetero indifferenter ieiunandum ex arbitrio, non ex imperio." Cf. *Const. Ap.* v. 18 *ἐν ταῖς ἡμέραις οὖν τὸν πάσχα νηστεύετε ...ἐν ταύταις οὖν ἥρθη ἀφ' ἡμῶν*. Even in regard to the Paschal fast there was at first no rigid uniformity; cf. Iren. (*ap.* Eus. v. 24) who remarks: *ἡ διαφωνία τῆς νηστείας τὴν ὄμονιαν τῆς πίστεως συνίστησι*. 'Εν ἐκείνῃ τῇ ἡμέρᾳ=(Lc.) *ἐν ἐκειναις ταις ημεραις*, for which see Mc. i. 9 note. On the change introduced by the Gospel into

the ordinance of fasting, see Victor: *οὐκ ἀνάγκη ... ἀλλὰ γνώμη, δι' ἀρετήν*. Bede aptly compares Acts ii. 13. Cf. the *logion*: *ἔάν μη νηστεύσῃς τὸν κόσμον οὐ μὴ εὑρητε τὴν βασιλείαν τοῦ θεοῦ* (*Oxyrhynchus Papyri*, i. p. 3).

21. οὐδεὶς ἐπίβλημα κτλ.] The two parables that follow occupy the same position in the three Synoptists, and doubtless are meant to illustrate the answer to the question of v. 18. *'Ἐπίβλημα ῥάκους ἀγνάφου*, Vg. *adsumendum panni ruditis*, is explained by Lc. as *ἐπίβλημα ἀπὸ ἴματίου καινοῦ*. 'Ράκος is a rag, whether of old stuff (Jer. xlv. (xxxviii.) 11, *παλαιὰ ῥάκη*), or, as here, newly torn from the piece: e.g. Artemidorus (27) uses it of the strips of cloth wound round a mummy. In the present case the ῥάκος is *ἀγναφον* (=ἀγναπτον, ἀκναπτον)—torn from a piece which had not gone through the hands of the γναφεῖς. *Γναφεύς* (Mc. ix. 3)=**סְבִיבָה**, Aram. **אַרְצָה**, occurs thrice in the Lxx. (4 Regn. xviii. 17, Isa. vii. 3, xxxvi. 2) in connexion with "the fuller's field"—possibly a bleaching ground at Jerusalem; cf. Joseph. *B. J.* v. 4. 2, *τὸ τοῦ γναφέως προσαγορευόμενον μνῆμα*. Comp. the account of the martyrdom of James 'the Just,' Euseb. *H. E.* ii. 23: *λαβὼν...εἰς τῶν κναφέων τὸ ξύλον ἐν φῷ ἀπεπλεξε τὰ ἴματα κτλ.* *'Ἐπίβλημα*, 'a patch,' cf. Jos. ix. 11 (5), Symm., *τὰ σανδάλια ἐπίβληματα ἔχοντα*: for *ἐπιράπτει* (WH., *Notes*, p. 163, Blass, *Gr.*, p. 10) Mt., Lc. have *ἐπιβάλλει*.

εἰ δὲ μή κτλ.] *Εἰ δὲ μή* (Lc. *εἰ δὲ μήγε*), Vg. *aliоquin*, 'if otherwise': see Blass, *Gr.*, p. 260, and cf. Mt. vi. 1, Jo. xiv. 2, Apoc. ii. 5.

αἴρει τὸ πλήρωμα ἀπ' αὐτοῦ τὸ καινὸν τοῦ παλαιοῦ,  
 § t 22 καὶ χεῖρον σχίσμα γίνεται. <sup>22</sup>καὶ οὐδεὶς § βάλλει  
 οἶνον νέον εἰς ἀσκοὺς παλαιούς—εἰ δὲ μή, ρήξει ὁ  
 οἶνος τοὺς ἀσκούς, καὶ ὁ οἶνος ἀπόλλυται καὶ οἱ  
 ἀσκοί [—ἀλλὰ οἶνον νέον εἰς ἀσκοὺς καινούς].

21 αρει Η | το πλ. απ αυτον Ι (om το) ΑΒ (αφ εαυτ.) ΚΔΠ\*Σ 33 al<sup>mu</sup>] om απ CLΠ<sup>2</sup>Φ min<sup>pl</sup> aeth om απ αυτον D 13 28 69 124 a b f ff i q vg | τον παλαιον] pr απo D 13 etc | om και...γινεται L 22 μη] μηγε CLM<sup>2</sup>Σ al<sup>pau</sup> | ρησσει ΑΓΔΠΣΦΤ al c eff q syrr<sup>sin pesh</sup> hel arm me aeth | ο οινος 1<sup>o</sup>] + ο νεος AC<sup>2</sup>ΓΔΠΣΦΤ e f syrr<sup>hel</sup> go aeth | ο οινος απολλυται και οι ασκοι BL me] ο οινος και οι ασκοι απολουνται D a b e ff οι ασκ. απολλυνται και οι οινος εκχειται 124 syrr arm ο οιν. εκχειται και οι ασκ. απολουνται Ι\*ΑΓΔΠΣΦΤ al c f q vg me go aeth | om αλλα...καινους D a b ff i | καινους]+ βληητεον Ι\*α ACLΓΔΠΣΦΤ al c e f q vg (syrr) me go arm aeth + βαλλουνται syrr<sup>sin pesh</sup> (om Ι\*B) | ad fin vers add και αμφοτεροι συντηρουνται min<sup>pau</sup> e f g aeth

αἴρει τὸ πλήρωμα ἀπ' αὐτοῦ] Mt. αἴρει...τὸ πλ. αὐτοῦ ἀπὸ τοῦ ἴματον. In each case it seems best to identify τὸ πλήρωμα with τὸ ἐπίβλημα, and to take αὐτοῦ as = τοῦ ἴματον. In adopting this view it is not necessary to give up the passive sense of πλήρωμα for which Lightfoot contends (*Colossians*, p. 323 ff.); for as he points out, the patch may be so called “not because it fills the hole, but because it is itself fulness or full measure as regards the defect.” As ἐπίβλημα is the piece laid on or applied to the rent, so πλήρωμα is the same piece as filled in and become the complement (Vg. *supplementum*). Τὸ καινὸν τοῦ παλαιοῦ, the new complement of the old garment; the contrast of καινός (*νέος*), παλαιός, is frequent in the N.T., perhaps through the influence of this saying, and the examples are interesting: Rom. vii. 6, Eph. iv. 22 ff., Col. iii. 9 f., Heb. viii. 13. For παλαιός as applied to a garment cf. Deut. viii. 4, Isa. l. 9, li. 6.

καὶ χεῖρον σχίσμα γίνεται] ‘And a worse rent is the result’ (Wycliffe, “more brekyng is maad”). Cf. Lc.’s paraphrase, and Philo, *de creat. princ.* 11, οὐ μόνον ἡ διαφορότης ἀκοινώνητον, ἀλλὰ καὶ ἡ ἐπικράτεια θατέρου ρήξιν ἀπεργασμένη μᾶλλον ἢ ἔνωσιν. For

σχίσμα cf. i. 10: elsewhere in the N.T. the word is used in an ethical sense (Jn. vii. 43, 1 Cor. i. 10, &c.).

22. καὶ οὐδεὶς βάλλει κτλ.] So Lc.; Mt. οὐδὲ βάλλουσιν. The worn out ἀσκός passed into a proverb, see Job xiii. 28, Ps. cxviii. (cxix.) 83: comp. especially Jos. ix. 10 (4), ἀσκοὺς οἶνον παλαιούς καὶ κατερρωγότας: ib. 19 (13), οὗτοι οἱ ἀσκοὶ τοῦ οἴνου οὓς ἐπλήσαμεν καινούς, καὶ οὗτοι ἐρρώγασιν. The wine-skins in the parable are as yet whole, but thin and strained by use, and unable to resist the strength of the newly fermented wine. The contrast is here between νέος and παλαιός: νέος is *recens* (Vg. *novellus*), freshly made, in reference to time: for οἶνος νέος cf. Isa. xlvi. 26, Sir. ix. 10. A full treatment of the synonyms καινός, νέος may be found in Trench, *syn.* 10, or in Westcott on Heb. viii. 8, xii. 24.

εἰ δὲ μή κτλ.] Mt., Lc. εἰ δὲ μήγε: see on v. 21. If any one is so unwise as to become an exception to the rule, he will lose both wine and skins. Mc.’s brevity is noticeable; both Mt. and Lc. distinguish the manner of the loss in the two cases—οἱ οἶνος ἐκχείται (έκχυθήσεται) καὶ οἱ ἀσκοὶ ἀπόλλυνται (ἀπολούνται). Similarly in the next clause Mt. supplies βάλλουσιν, Lc. βληητεον. Attempts have been made

<sup>23</sup>§ *Kai ἐγένετο*<sup>¶</sup> αὐτὸν ἐν τοῖς σάββασιν διαπορεύ- 23 § <sup>syr<sup>tier</sup></sup> F  
εσθαι διὰ τῶν σπορίμων, καὶ οἱ μαθηταὶ αὐτοῦ ἤρξαντο  
όδὸν ποιεῖν τίλλοντες τοὺς στάχυας. <sup>24</sup>καὶ οἱ Φαρι-

23 εγενετο]+παλιν D 13 69 124 346 a ff q vg pr παλιν Φ | om εν Φ 1071 | δια-  
πορευεσθαι BCD] παραπορ. ΝΑΛΙΔΠΣΦΤ al latv<sup>t</sup> pler<sup>vg</sup> πορ. 13 69 124 | om αυτον  
D 435 ff | οδον ποιειν τιλλοντες ΝΑCLΓΔΠΦΤ] οδοποιειν τιλλοντ. BGH 13 69 124 346  
τιλλειν D 26<sup>ev</sup> b c e ff g t+εσθιειν c e ff

in the mss. to assimilate Mc.; see vv. ll. The contrast between νέος, καινός is preserved by the three Synoptists, but it has been missed in the Vg., *vinum norum in utres novos*. On the connexion of these parables with the context see Hort, *Jud. Chr.*, p. 24. The general teaching is that men “nova non accepturos esse nisi novi fierent” (Hilary). The old system was not capable of being patched with mere fragments of the new, and still less could the old man receive the new spirit and life. For some special applications of the principle cf. Trench, *Studies*, p. 180 ff.

23—28. CORN-FIELD INCIDENT.  
QUESTION OF THE SABBATH. (Mt. xii. 1—8, Lc. vi. 1—5.)

23. καὶ ἐγένετο...διαπορεύεσθαι] *Et factum est ut...ambularet* (f); cf. ii. 15, and see Burton, § 360. Lc. has the same construction, and agrees with Mc. also in the order of events: Mt., who begins ἐν ἐκείνῳ τῷ καιρῷ ἐπορεύθη, places this incident much later. ‘Ἐν τοῖς σάββασιν (τοῖς σ. Mt., ἐν σαββάτῳ Lc.: see note on i. 21), ‘on the sabbath’; in Lc. ‘Western’ and ‘Syrian’ authorities add δευτερο-πρώτῳ, cf. WH., *Notes*, p. 58. Δια-πορεύεσθαι, a common LXX. word (usually=¶גַּנְבָּה or רְבָּעָה), is rare in the N. T., occurring, besides this context, Lc. <sup>ev.</sup> 2, act. 1, Paul<sup>1</sup>; the construction varies, the verb being used absolutely, or followed by acc. with or without prep.; for διαπ. διὰ cf. Prov. ix. 12 c, Soph. iii. 1. The fields were probably in the neighbourhood of Capernaum; there is no charge of having exceeded

the Sabbath day’s journey (Acts i. 12, cf. Joseph. *ant.* xiii. 8. 4, οὐκ ἔξεστιν δὲ ήμιν οὔτε ἐν τοῖς σάββασιν οὔτ’ ἐν τῇ ἑορτῇ [τῇ πεντηκοστῇ] ὁδεύειν). Τὰ σπόριμα: in the LXX., σπόριμος = ¶גַּנְבָּה (Gen. i. 29) or רְבָּעָה (Lev. xi. 37); σπό-ριμα = “sown land,” “corn-fields” (V. *sata*), is found in a papyrus of c. A.D. 346, and seems to have been familiar in colloquial Greek of cent. i, for it belongs to the common tradition of the Synoptic Gospels.

ἥρξαντο ὄδὸν ποιεῖν τίλλοντες] Mt. ᥥρξαντο τιλλειν, Lc. ᥥτιλλον. ‘Οδὸν ποιεῖν is properly, like ὄδοποιεῖν, to make a road, or make one’s way, and suggests that the party was pushing its way through the corn where there was no path; Euth.: ἵνα προβαίνειν ἔχοιεν. But ὄδὸν ποιεῖσθαι is used (Herod., Xen., Dion. Hal., Joseph., &c.) of simple advance (Vg. *cooperunt praegredi*, v.l. *progreedi*), and ὄδ. ποιεῖν probably bears that meaning here; cf. Jud. xvii. 8 τοῦ ποιῆσαι ὄδὸν αὐτὸν (יְמִצְתֵּן שְׂעִירָה), but see Moore, *Judges*, p. 385 f.). As they went they plucked the ears and ate (καὶ ἐσθίειν Mt.; καὶ ἡσθιον Lc., who adds ψώχοντες ταῖς χερσίν). Permission to pluck and eat ears of standing corn was given by the Law, provided that no instrument was used, Deut. xxiii. 24 (26): συλλέξεις ἐν ταῖς χερσίν σου στάχυς καὶ δρέπανον οὐ μὴ ἐπιβάλῃς.

24. καὶ οἱ Φαρισαῖοι κτλ.] See notes on ii. 16, 18. The Master is again attacked through the disciples. Mt. supplies οἱ μαθηταὶ σου before ποιοῦσιν, Lc. represents the question as addressed to the disciples (τι

σταῖοι ἔλεγον αὐτῷ<sup>24</sup> Ἰδε τί ποιοῦσιν τοῖς σάββασιν ὁ  
25 οὐκ ἔξεστιν; <sup>25</sup> καὶ ἔλεγεν αὐτοῖς Οὐδέποτε ἀνέγνωτε  
τί ἐποίησεν Δανείδ ὅτε χρείαν ἔσχεν καὶ ἐπείνασεν  
§ W° 26 αὐτὸς καὶ οἱ μετ' αὐτοῦ; <sup>26</sup> εἰσῆλθεν εἰς τὸν οἶκον  
τοῦ θεοῦ ἐπὶ Ἀβιαθὰρ ἀρχιερέως, καὶ τοὺς ἄρτους τῆς

24 ποιοῦσιν] + οἱ μαθηται σου DMS 1 13 28 69 124 346 al lat<sup>vt(exce)</sup> syrr<sup>sin hel</sup> arm go aeth + οἱ μαθ. 1071 | τοις σαββασιν] pr ev EGHLUVΓΣ 25 ελεγεν ΑΒΓΔΠΙ λεγει NCL 33 604 1071 al αποκριθεις ειπεν Da pr αυτος ΑΓΔΠ al 26 εισηλθεν] pr πως ΝΑCLΓΔΠΣΦΤ latt syrr arm al (om π. BD t) | om επι Αβ. αρχ. D 271 ab effit syr<sup>sin</sup> | αρχ.] pr του ΑCΔ (τ. iερ.) ΠΣΦΤ 1 33 69 al

ποιεῖτε). "Ιδε (=ΗΑΓ), not ιδού (=ΗΑΓ); cf. iii. 34, xi. 21, xiii. 1, 21, xv. 4, 35, xvi. 6. The offence was being openly committed under the very eyes of the Master. Plucking corn was considered as equivalent to reaping, the hand taking the place of the sickle, and reaping on the Sabbath was forbidden (Exod. xxxiv. 21, τῷ ἀμήτῳ κατάπαυσις; cf. J. Lightfoot on Mt. xii. 2). Τί ποιοῦσιν τοῖς σάββ. ὁ οὐκ ἔξεστιν; sc. ποιεῖν τοῖς σάββασιν. Mt. simplifies the construction by writing ποιοῦσιν ὁ οὐκ ἔξεστιν ποιεῖν ἐν σαββάτῳ, and similarly Lc. The act was not unlawful in itself, but only in regard to the occasion.

25. καὶ ἔλεγεν αὐτοῖς Οὐδέποτε ἀνέγνωτε κτλ.] The Lord concedes the principle for the moment, content with pointing out that rules of this kind admit of exceptions. Οὐδ. ἀνέγν., an appeal to an authority which they recognised and of which they were professed students. The formula is frequently used by our Lord, cf. xii. 10, 26, Mt. xii. 5, xix. 4, xxi. 16 (οὐδέποτε, οὐδέ, or οὐκ ἀνέγν. ;).

τί ἐποίησεν Δανείδ κτλ.] The reference is to 1 Sam. xxi. 1—6, but the words χρείαν ἔσχεν καὶ ἐπείνασεν are an inference from the facts, added to bring out the parallel. David and his men find their counterpart in the Son of David and His disciples.

26. εἰσῆλθεν εἰς τὸν οἶκον τοῦ θεοῦ] Le., the Tabernacle: cf. Jud. xviii.

31, 1 Regn. i. 7, 24. It was at this time in Nob (Νομβά, Νομρά (B), Νοβά (A), Νόβ (N)), a town of Benjamin (Neh. xi. 32) near Jerusalem (Isa. x. 32 Heb.). Mt. πῶς εἰσῆλθεν (cf. vv. ll. here), Lc. ὡς εἰσ.

ἐπὶ Ἀβιαθὰρ ἀρχιερέως] Vg. sub A. principe sacerdotum: cf. 1 Macc. xiii. 42, ἔτος πρώτου ἐπὶ Σίμωνος ἀρχιερέως. Lc. iii. 2, ἐπὶ ἀρχιερέως Ἄννα καὶ Καιάφα. Polyc. mart. 21, ἐπὶ ἀρχιερέως Φιλίππου Τραλλιανοῦ. Ἐπὶ = 'in the time of,' as in Acts xi. 28 ἐγένετο ἐπὶ Κλανδίου: when an anarthrous title is added to the personal name, the period is limited to the term of office: 'in the days when A. was highpriest.' Τοῦ ἀρχ. (AC) is perhaps a correction. The clause is peculiar to Mc., and may be an editorial note. It is in conflict with the account in 1 Sam. l.c. where the high-priest at the time of David's visit to Nob is Ahimelech (Ἄχιμελές, LXX., codd. BA, Ἀβ(ε)ιμελέχ, but in 1 Regn. xxx. 7, 2 Regn. viii. 17, Ἀχειμελέχ), not Abiathar, Ahimelech's son and successor (1 Sam. xxii. 20). The confusion between Ahimelech and Abiathar seems to have begun in the text of the O. T., where (both in M.T. and LXX.) we read of Ahimelech the son of Abiathar as high-priest in the time of David (2 Sam. viii. 17, cf. Driver, ad l., 1 Chron. xviii. 16, xxiv. 6). The clause is omitted by Mt., Lc., see Hawkins, H.S., p. 99.

προθέσεως ἔφαγεν οὐς οὐκ ἔξεστιν φαγεῖν εἰ μὴ τοὺς ἱερεῖς, καὶ ἐδώκεν καὶ τοῖς σὺν αὐτῷ οὖσιν. <sup>27</sup> καὶ 27 ἐλεγεν αὐτοῖς Τὸ σάββατον διὰ τὸν ἀνθρωπὸν ἐγένετο

26 προσθεσεως D (cf. Nestle Intr. p. 237) | ους...ουσιν] καὶ εδώκεν τοις μετ αυτου ουσιν ους ουκ εξεστιν φαγειν ει μη τοις ιερευσιν D | τοις ιερεις NBL] τοις ιερευσιν ΑCDΓΔΠ al τοις αρχιερευσι Φ+μονοις ΔΦ 13 33 69 αλβανι latvtnu +μονον ΙΟΤΙ 27-28 και ελεγεν...ωστε] λεγω δε υμιν Daceffit <sup>27 εγενετο]</sup> εκτισθη Ι 131 209 604 syrr<sup>sin pesh</sup>

τοὺς ἄρτους τῆς προθέσεως] Vg. *panes propositionis* (Wycliffe, “loues of propoſiciooun”); cf. Heb. ix. 2, ὁ πρόθεσις τῶν ἄρτων, *propositio panum*. The ‘shewbread’ as set before God is called **נִזְבָּחַת הַפְּנִים**, ἄρτοι ἐνώπιοι (Exod. xxv. 29), *προκείμενοι* (Exod. xxxix. 18 (36)), *τοῦ προσώπου* (1 Regn. xxi. 6), τῆς προσφορᾶς (3 Regn. vii. 34=48). (Οἱ) ἄρτοι(τῆς) προθέσεως occurs also in 1 Regn. l.c., but as a paraphrase for **נִזְבָּחַת**, and in 2 Chron. iv. 19 it stands for **נִזְבָּחַת חֲמֻרָה**; but elsewhere it = **נִזְבָּחַת עֵשֶׂב** (Exod. xl. 21 (23), &c.) or in Chron., *כְּתַבְתְּנִינָה נִזְבָּחַת* (1 Chr. ix. 32); i.e., it points to the ordered rows upon the table rather than to their ceremonial import. See however Deissmann, *Bibelstudien*, p. 155 f. (E. Tr., p. 157). It was one of the glories of Judas Maccabaeus that he restored the use of the shewbread (2 Macc. x. 3, τῶν ἄρτων τὴν πρόθεσιν ἐποίησαντο).

οὐς οὐκ ἔξ. φαγεῖν εἰ μὴ τοὺς ἱερεῖς] ‘Which it was not lawful that any should eat except the priests’: so Lc.; Mt. has the more usual construction *ἔξεστιν...τοῖς ιερεῦσιν*. On the law of the shewbread see Lev. xxiv. 5, Joseph. *ant.* iii. 10. 7, οἱ δὲ τοῖς ιερεῦσιν πρὸς τροφὴν δίδονται. But the prohibition does not seem to have been absolute; cf. 1 Sam. xxi. 4. Οὐκ ἔξεστιν is taken out of the mouth of the Scribes, and used in their sense (v. 24): it was at least as unlawful to eat the shewbread as to pluck and eat corn on the Sabbath.

καὶ ἐδώκεν καὶ τοῖς σὺν αὐτῷ οὖσιν] Cf. v. 25, οἱ μετ’ αὐτοῦ. An O. T. phrase

(see Gen. iii. 6). Delitzsch renders: **וְיָדָיו אֲנָשִׁים נִזְבָּחַת**. The companions were in David’s case *παιδάρια, Σύντομοι*, i.e. personal followers, the nucleus of the crowd who gathered round him in the cave of Adullam (1 Sam. xxii. 2). The contrast between these men and the peaceful disciples of Jesus is great, but it only serves to add force to the argument.

27. Mt. gives another argument: the priests in the temple were compelled to violate the strict law of the Sabbath, their duties being in fact doubled on that day (Numb. xxviii. 9); if the exigencies of the temple justified their conduct, a greater than the temple was here to justify the disciples. He adds a quotation from Hos vi. 6, which he had previously cited in connexion with the saying of v. 17 (Mt. ix. 13).

τὸ σάββατον...διὰ τὸ σάββατον] Mc. only; cf. Hawkins, *H.S.* p. 99. Comp. 2 Macc. v. 19, οὐ διὰ τὸν τόπον τὸ ἔθνος, ἀλλὰ διὰ τὸ ἔθνος τὸν τόπον ὁ κύριος ἔξελέξατο. The Rabbis themselves occasionally admitted the principle; see Schöttgen *ad l.* and the passage cited by Meyer from *Mechilta* in Exod. xxxi. 13: “the Sabbath is delivered unto you, and ye are not delivered to the Sabbath.” Our Lord’s words rise higher, and reach further: at the root of the Sabbath-law was the love of God for mankind, and not for Israel only. Cf. Ephrem: “the Sabbath was appointed not for God’s sake, but for the sake of man.” Bengel: “origo et finis rerum spectanda; benedictio sabbati (Gen. ii. 3) hominem

¶ t 28 καὶ οὐχ ὁ ἀνθρωπος διὰ τὸ σάββατον. <sup>28</sup> ὥστε ¶  
κύριος ἐστιν ὁ νιὸς τοῦ ἀνθρώπου καὶ τοῦ σαββάτου.

III. I <sup>1</sup>Καὶ εἰσῆλθεν πάλιν εἰς συναγωγὴν, καὶ ἦν ἐκεῖ  
2 ἀνθρωπος ἔξηραμμένην ἔχων τὴν χεῖρα. <sup>2</sup>καὶ παρετή-

<sup>27</sup> om καὶ οὐχ ο ἀνθρ. δ. το σ. syr<sup>sin</sup> | om καὶ <sup>2º</sup> AC<sup>3</sup>ΓΠ al<sup>pl</sup>

III I συνα-

γωγὴν] pr την ACDΛΣΦΤ al (om ΝΒ) | εξηραμμένην] ξηραν D

2 παρετηρουντο

AC\*DΔΣΤ min<sup>punc</sup>

spectat." For a similar antithesis cf. I Cor. xi. 9. "Ο ἄνθρωπος, man, i.e. humanity; cf. Eccl. i. 3, iii. 19.

28. ὥστε κύριος ἐστιν κτλ.] Wycliffe, "and so mannes sone is also lord of the sabbath." *Kύρος γάρ ἐστιν*, Mt.; *Κ.ἐστιν*, Lc. In Mc. the sequence of the thought is clear. The Sabbath, being made for man's benefit, is subject to the control of the ideal and representative Man, to whom it belongs. On ὥστε with the indic. mood see WM., p. 377, Burton § 237, and cf. Mc. x. 8. *Κύρος* is here perhaps rather 'owner' than 'master'—*מָבֹשֶׁלְעַד*, cf. Gen. xl ix. 23, Jud. xix. 22. On ὁ νί. τ. ἀνθρ. see v. 10 n. Tatian, followed by the O. L. cod. a, places after this verse c. iii. 21 (q.v.), as if it was His doctrine of the Sabbath which led our Lord's relatives to suspect insanity.

### III. I—6. HEALING OF A WITHERED HAND ON THE SABBATH (Mt. xii. 9—14, Lc. vi. 6—11).

I. καὶ εἰσῆλθεν πάλιν εἰς συναγωγὴν] Another scene in a synagogue. *Πάλιν* points back to i. 21 (cf. ii. 1, 13; iii. 20, iv. 1) unless, with Bengel, we interpret "alio sabbato." *Εἰς συναγωγὴν*, not *εἰς τὴν σ.*, as in i. 21, (vi. 2), where the synagogue is localised; here the reader's thought is limited to the fact that the event took place in a synagogue. Cf. Jo. vi. 59, xviii. 20, James ii. 2; similarly we speak of going 'to church' or being 'in church' when no particular building is in view. Mc. suggests, and Mt. seems distinctly to state (*μεταβὰς ἐκεῖθεν ἥλθεν*), that this visit to the synagogue followed

immediately after the cornfield incident; Lc. places it on another Sabbath (*ἐν ἑτέρῳ σαββάτῳ*). St Augustine's reply (*de cons. ev. 81*, "post quot dies in synagogam eorum venerit...non expressum est") is not wholly satisfactory; the two traditions if not absolutely inconsistent are clearly distinct, Lc. perhaps possessing information unknown to Mc. and Mt. Cod. D meets the difficulty by omitting *ἑτέρῳ* in Lc.

καὶ ἦν ἐκεῖ ἀνθρωπός κτλ.] For *ξηραίνομαι* (=*שָׁבֵךְ*) see 3 Regn. xiii. 4, Zach. xi. 17. Jo. (v. 3) mentions *ξηροί* as a class of chronic invalids; in the present instance the paralysis of the hand was not congenital, but as Bengel says "morbo aut verbere," as the past participle implies—a point which Mt.'s *ξηράω* overlooks. *Τὴν χεῖρα*, 'his hand,' cf. v. 3, vv. 11; for exx. of the predicative use of the art. see Blass, *Gr.* p. 158. Lc. adds that the hand was *ἡ δεξιά*. Jerome says that the Gospel according to the Hebrews represented the man as pleading his case with the Lord: "caementarius eram, manibus victum quaeritans; precor te, Iesu, ut mihi restituas sanitatem ne turpiter mendi-  
cam cibos."

2. καὶ παρετήρουν αὐτόν] Cf. Ps. xxxvi. (xxxvii.) 12, *παρατηρήσεται* (*ΘΩΡ*) ὁ ἀμαρτωλὸς τὸν δίκαιον: Dan. vi. 11, Sus. 12, 16 (Th.). The middle is more frequent, but *παρατηρεῖν* occurs in Susanna and in Lc. xx. 20. Polybius (xvii. 3. 2) couples *παρατηρεῖν* with *ἐνεδρεύειν*. This hostile sense is not however inherent in the word, which

ρουν αὐτὸν εἰ τοῖς σάββασιν θεραπεύσει αὐτόν, ἵνα κατηγορήσωσιν αὐτοῦ. <sup>3</sup>καὶ λέγει τῷ ἀνθρώπῳ τῷ 3 τὴν χεῖρα ἔχοντι ξηράν<sup>¶</sup> "Ἐγειρε εἰς τὸ μέσον. <sup>4</sup>καὶ 4 <sup>¶</sup><sup>10</sup> λέγει αὐτοῖς Ἐξεστιν τοῖς σάββασιν ἀγαθοποιῆσαι

**2 τοῖς σ.]** pr ev ΝCDHM min<sup>1</sup> me | θεραπευει ΚΔΣ | κατηγορησουσιν ΔΣ 3 τω την χ. εχ. ξηραν BL 565 a me aeth] τω την ξ. χ. εχ. ΚC\*Δ 33 τω εξηραμμενην εχ. τ. χ. A<sup>corr</sup>(D)ΓΠΣΦΠ al go | εγειραι ΟΓΦ | εις το μεσον (εν μεσω D c)] pr και στηθι Δ c aeth 4 εξεστιν] pr τι Ε\* i 118 131 arm | τοις σαββ.] pr ev ADE al 2<sup>pe</sup> me go | αγαθοποιησαι] αγαθον ποιησαι Κ τι αγ. π. D e arm

merely means (Lightfoot on Gal. iv. 10) to observe minutely, going along as it were with the object for the purpose of watching its movements. Lc. uses the middle here and in xiv. 1. *Παρατηρεῖν εἰ*, to watch whether; cf. Blass, *Gr.* p. 211.

*εἰ τοῖς σάββασιν θεραπεύσει]* According to the Rabbinical rule relief might be given to a sufferer on the Sabbath only when life was in danger (Schürer II. ii. 104). Since in the present case postponement was clearly possible, a charge might lie against Jesus before the Sanhedrin if He restored the hand; and they watched Him closely in the hope that this opportunity might be given (*ἴνα κατηγορήσωσιν αὐτόν*). According to Mt. they even challenged Him by asking *Εἰ ἔξεστι τοῖς σάββασιν θεραπεύειν*; The question afterwards put to them by Jesus (Mc.) does not exclude this account of the matter (Victor, *εἰκὼς δὲ ἀμφότερα γεγενῆσθαι*); but Lc.'s comment (*ἥδει τοὺς διαλογισμοὺς αὐτῶν*) seems to be inconsistent with it, and the additional matter in Mt. clearly belongs to another occasion (Mt. xii. 11, 12=Lc. xiii. 15, xiv. 5).

**3. καὶ λέγει τῷ ἀνθρώπῳ κτλ.]** His knowledge of their purpose (Lc.) did not deter Him: comp. Dan. vi. 10. His first step was to bring the man out into the body of the synagogue where he could be seen by all (Mc., Lc.); there should be no secrecy and

no need for *παρατήρησις* in the matter, since a principle was involved: comp. Jo. xviii. 20. *"Ἐγειρε εἰς τὸ μέσον*, a pregnant construction: 'arise [and come] into the midst'; cf. examples in Blass, *Gr.* p. 122. Lc. interpolates *καὶ στῆθι*, and adds *καὶ διαστὰς ἔστη*—details which Mc. leaves to be imagined. The purpose of the command is clear. The miracle was intended to be a public and decisive answer to the question 'Will He work His cures on the Sabbath?'

**4. καὶ λέγει αὐτοῖς κτλ.]** The Lord anticipates their question (cf. ii. 8). Lc. prefixes *ἐπερωτῶ ὑμᾶς*. His questioning of the Rabbis began in childhood (Lc. ii. 46): in the method there was nothing unusual, still less disrespectful; see J. Lightfoot on Lc. l.c. The present question puts a new colour on that which was in their minds; for *θεραπεύειν* He substitutes *ἀγαθοποιῆσαι*, which raises the principle. *Ἀγαθοποιεῖν* (formed on the analogy of the class, *κακοποιεῖν*) is a word of the LXX. (= בְּשַׁלֵּחַ), for which class. Gk. used *εὖ ποιεῖν* or *εὐεργετεῖν*. In Tob. xii. 13, 1 Macc. xi. 33 *ἀγαθὸν ποιεῖν* has been substituted by some of the scribes, and the same tendency appears here; but the compound is well supported in the N.T., especially in 1 Peter, where, besides *ἀγαθοποιεῖν* (*quater*), we find *ἀγαθουποίᾳ* and *ἀγαθοποίός*. *Η κακοποιῆσαι* raises the startling alternative: 'if good may not be done on

§ P ἡ κακοποιῆσαι, ψυχὴν σῶσαι ἡ ἀποκτεῖναι; οἱ δὲ  
5 ἐσιώπων. <sup>5</sup>καὶ περιβλεψάμενος αὐτοὺς μετ' ὥργης,  
συνλυπούμενος § ἐπὶ τῇ πωρώσει τῆς καρδίας αὐτῶν,

4 η] pr μαλλον 28 124 | αποκτεῖναι] απολεσαι ΛΔ 1 124 209 2<sup>re</sup> latt syr<sup>pesh</sup> arm |  
εσιώπησαν (L)ΣΦ a g q 5 επι τ. πωρώσει] επι τ. πηρωσει 17 20 arm super caeci-  
tate(m) cordis a b e f q vg επι τ. νεκρώσει D syr<sup>sim</sup> super emortua corda c ff i r

the Sabbath, are you prepared to justify evildoing on that day? I.e., Was it unlawful on the Sabbath to rescue a life from incipient death (*ψυχὴν σῶσαι*), and yet lawful to watch for the life of another, as they were doing at the moment? Was the Sabbath a day for maleficent and not for beneficent action? *'Αποκτέῖναι* is used of a judicial sentence, Jo. xviii. 31; Lc. substitutes here the more usual *ἀπολέσαι*.

*οἱ δὲ ἐσιώπων*: whether from policy, or shame (ix. 34), or simply because they had no answer ready (Lc. xx. 26).

5. *καὶ περιβλεψάμενος αὐτούς*] Except in Lc. vi. 10 (the parallel to this context) *περιβλέπεσθαι* is used by Mc. only (iii. 5, 34, v. 32, ix. 8, x. 23, xi. 11), and five times out of six in reference to the quick searching glance round the circle of His friends or enemies, which St Peter remembered as characteristic of the Lord: see Ellicott, *Lectures*, pp. 25, 176. Bengel: “vultus Christi multa nos docuit.” For the use of *περιβλ.* in the LXX. cf. Exod. ii. 12, 3 Regn. xxi. (xx.) 40, Tob. xi. 5. *Μετ' ὥργης*: there was anger in the look or attending it (cf. *μετὰ δακρύων* Acts xx. 31, Heb. xii. 17). Anger is attributed to the Lamb, Apoc. vi. 16, 17: it is “legitimate in the absence of the personal element” (Gould), i.e. if not vindictive, and not inconsistent with a gentle character (Mt. xi. 29).

*συνλυπούμενος ἐπὶ κτλ.*] Mc. only. The anger was tempered by grief: comp. 1 Esdr. ix. 2, *πενθῶν ὑπὲρ τῶν ἀνομιῶν τῶν μεγάλων τοῦ πλήθους*.

*Συνλυπεῖσθαι*, Vg. *contristari*, implies sorrow arising from sympathy, either with the sorrow of another (cf. Ps. lxviii. (lxix.) 21, where the *ὁ συνλυπούμενος* answers to *ὁ παρακαλῶν*), or, as here, with his unconscious misery. With this sorrow of Christ for sinners comp. Eph. iv. 30. Sorrow is predicated of Jesus again in Mt. xxvi. 37. *Συνλυπούμενος* pres., in contrast with *περιβλεψάμενος* aor., points to the abiding nature of this grief: the look was momentary, the sorrow habitual. Cf. *Oxyrhynch. log.* 3 *πονεῖ ἡ ψυχή μου ἐπὶ τοῖς νιοῖς τῶν ἀνθρώπων*. *Πώρωσις τῆς καρδίας* occurs again in Eph. iv. 18, where it is a characteristic of pagan life: in this respect unbelieving Israel was on a level with untaught heathendom (Rom. xi. 25); even the Apostles suffered at times from this same malady (Mc. viii. 17). *Πωροῦσθαι* is ‘to grow callous,’ and *πώρωσις* in medical language is the formation of the hard substance (*πῶρος, callus*) which unites the fractured ends of a broken bone; transferred to things spiritual, it is the process of moral ossification, which renders men insensible to spiritual truth. Cod. D and the Sin. Syriac express the result by substituting *νέκρωσις*: so some O.L. texts, *super emortua illorum corda*. The idea seems to be derived from Isa. vi. 10, where the LXX. has *ἐπαχύνθη...ἡ καρδία τοῦ λαοῦ τούτου*, but Jo. (xii. 40) paraphrases *ἐπώρωσεν αὐτῶν τὴν καρδίαν*. The Vg. renders *super caecitate(m) cordis eorum* (Wycliffe, “on the blindness of her harte,” followed by Tindale and Cranmer), reading appa-

λέγει τῷ ἀνθρώπῳ Ἐκτεινον τὴν χεῖρά σου· §καὶ § F  
 ἔξετεινεν, καὶ ἀπεκατεστάθη ἡ χεὶρ αὐτοῦ. ¶ <sup>6</sup> καὶ 6 ¶ syrhier  
 ἔξελθόντες οἱ Φαρισαῖοι εὐθὺς μετὰ τῶν Ἡρῳδιανῶν  
 συμβούλιον ἐδίδουν κατ' αὐτοῦ ὅπως αὐτὸν ἀπολέ-  
 σωσιν.

5 om σου BEMSUVΓΦΤ min<sup>nonn</sup> | εξετεινεν] + την χειρα αυτου syrhier | απεκατεσταθη  
 (ΝΑΒΛΡΓΔΠ<sup>2</sup> al) αποκ. (DΠ\*Φ min<sup>sat mu</sup>)] απεκατεστη C 565 | η χειρ αυτ. (om  
 syrhier)] + ενθεως D ff i + νγης ws η αλλη C<sup>3</sup>ΛΓ al + ws η α. syrsin hier 6 om ευθυς  
 DL al b c ff g i q aeth | εδιδουν BL 13 28 69 124 346 604] εποιησαν ΚΔ 238 736  
 1071 2<sup>pe</sup> αλραυς εποιουν ΑΡΓΠΣΦ al latt<sup>vtpv</sup> arm go ποιουντες D | om κατ αυτου syrsin |  
 απολεσουν Σ

rently πηρώσει: cf. Job xvii. 7, B,  
 πεπόρωνται...οἱ ὁφθαλμοὶ μου, where  
 Ν.α. A have the variant πεπήρωνται.  
 See however J. Th. St. iii. 1, p. 81 ff.,  
 where Dr J. Armitage Robinson main-  
 tains that πόρωσις acquired by use  
 the sense of πήρωσις.

λέγει τῷ ἀνθρώπῳ] As He had  
 turned to the paralytic, ii. 10, II. A  
 command in each case precedes the  
 healing; recovery comes through faith  
 and obedience. With the whole  
 scene comp. 3 Regn. xiii. 6.

ἀπεκατεστάθη ἡ χεὶρ] Mt. adds  
 ὑγῆς ὡς ἡ ἀλλη. For this use of  
 ἀπεκ. cf. Mc. viii. 25. The verb is  
 frequent in the later Gk. and in the  
 LXX.; in the N.T. (exc. Heb. xiii. 19)  
 its use is always more or less dis-  
 tinctly Messianic, and based perhaps  
 on Mal. iv. 5 (see on Mc. ix. 12).  
 Each miracle of healing was an earnest  
 in an individual case of the ἀποκατά-  
 στασις πάντων (Acts iii. 21). For the  
 double augment see WH., Notes,  
 p. 162, and Blass, Gr., p. 39.

6. καὶ ἔξελθόντες οἱ Φ. εὐθύς] The  
 Pharisees left the synagogue mad  
 with rage (ἐπλήσθησαν ἀνοίας, Lc.)  
 and lost no time (εὐθύς, Mc. only) in  
 plotting revenge. Lc. speaks only  
 of an informal discussion (διελάλουν  
 πρὸς ἀλλήλους), Mc., Mt. of a council  
 or consultation (συμβούλιον—in Prov.  
 xv. 22 it is Th.'s word for ΤΙΣ, LXX.  
 συνέδρια). Συμβ. διδόναι occurs here  
 only in the N.T.; the usual phrases

are σ. λαμβάνειν (Mt.<sup>5</sup>) or ποιεῖν  
 (Mc. xv. 1, with a variant ἐποιηάζειν).  
 Ἐδίδουν (ἐποίουν) perhaps implies that  
 the consultation held that day was  
 but one of many; the last is described  
 in xv. 1. Ὅπως αὐτὸν ἀπολέσωσιν re-  
 presents the purpose and ultimate  
 issue of their counsels (cf. Burton,  
 § 207)—not however without refer-  
 ence to the means to be employed.  
 Lc. gives the immediate subject of  
 debate—τι ἀν ποιήσαιεν τῷ Ἰησοῦ, and  
 Mc.'s form implies the question Πῶς  
 αὐτὸν ἀπολέσωμεν; (WM., p. 374).

μετὰ τῶν Ἡρῳδιανῶν] Mc. only.  
 Tindale, “with them that belonged  
 to Herode.” The Ἡρῳδιανοί appear  
 again in the same company c. xii.  
 13 = Mt. xxii. 16, and some under-  
 standing between the two parties is  
 implied also in Mc. viii. 15. Josephus  
 (ant. xiv. 15. 10) speaks of τοὺς τὰ  
 Ἡρόδου φρονοῦντας, but the term  
 Ἡρῳδιανός occurs only in Mt., Mc.  
 Adjectives in -ανός denote partisanship  
 (Blass on Acts xi. 26). An Herodian  
 party, so far as it found a place in  
 Jewish life, would be actuated by  
 mixed motives; some would join it  
 from sympathy with the Hellenising  
 policy of the Herod family, others  
 because they “saw in the power” of  
 that family “the pledge of the pre-  
 servation of their national existence”  
 (Westcott in Smith's B.D.<sup>2</sup>, s.v.). The  
 latter would have certain interests in  
 common with the Pharisees, and

7 Ἔτεν δὲ ὡς Ἰησοῦς μετὰ τῶν μαθητῶν αὐτοῦ ἀνεχώρησεν πρὸς τὴν θάλασσαν· καὶ πολὺ πλῆθος ἀπὸ τῆς 8 Γαλειλαίας ἤκολούθησεν καὶ ἀπὸ τῆς Ἰουδαίας 9 καὶ

7 [Ιησους]+γνωσ 1071 | προς] εις DHP min<sup>nonn</sup> παρα 13 28 69 124 1071 | πολυ πληθος] πολυς οχλος D latt | ηκολουθησεν] om D 28 124 a (b c) eff i q syr<sup>sin</sup> post Ιουδ. transp ΒΔ 238 1071 f vg+αυτω Φ

might have readily joined them in an effort to suppress a teacher who threatened the *status quo*; although, as Bengel quaintly suggests, "fortasse non magnopere curabant Sabatum." The Pharisees on their part, without any great affection for the Herods, could acquiesce in their rule as the less of two evils. H. the Great had made bids for their support (Schürer I. i. pp. 419, 444 f.), and Lc. shews (xiii. 31 f., xxiii. 10) that they were not unwilling to use Antipas as an ally against Jesus, or even to act as emissaries of the Tetrarch.

7—12. SECOND GREAT CONCOURSE BY THE SEA (Mt. xii. 15—21, Lc. vi. 17—19).

7. καὶ ὡς Ἰησοῦς...ἀνεχώρησεν] Ἀναχωρεῖν is used, esp. by Mt., of withdrawal from danger, Mt. ii. 12 ff., iv. 12, xiv. 13; in the present context Mt. makes this meaning clear by adding γνούσ. Jesus withdrew from the town to the seaside because He was aware of the plot. He and His would be safer on the open beach, surrounded by crowds of followers, than in the narrow streets of Capernaum. His friends would prevent an arrest; in case of danger, a boat was at hand. Eἰς is the usual preposition after ἀναχωρεῖν (Mt. ii. 14, &c.): πρός gives the direction or locality of the retreat (cf. ii. 2). On the policy of this retreat see Bede: "neque adhuc venerat hora passionis eius, neque extra Ierusalem fuit locus passionis."

καὶ πολὺ πλῆθος κτλ.] Cf. i. 28, 37, 45; ii. 13. Πλῆθος is frequent in Lc.;

for πολὺ πλ. cf. Lc. xxiii. 27, Acts xiv. i, xvii. 4. On the prominence given to the adj. see WM., p. 657; the normal order occurs when the words are repeated in v. 8. The punctuation of this paragraph is open to some doubt; we may either keep ἤκολούθησεν for the Galileans, assigning the other factors in the crowd to ἥλθον (v. 8), or we may begin a new sentence at πλῆθος πολύ, or at ἀκούοντες. WH. and R.V. adopt the former view, but the repeated ἀπό seems to point to the continuity of the words from καὶ πολύ το Ιδουμαίας, and probably to Σιδῶνα: comp. Lc. πλῆθος πολὺ...οἱ ἥλθαν.

7—8. καὶ ἀπὸ τ. Ἰουδαίας κτλ.] The Galilean following is now supplemented by others from south, east, and north. Judaea had already sent Pharisees and Scribes (Lc. v. 17), and now, perhaps as a result of the synagogue preaching mentioned in Lc. iv. 45, adds its contribution to the Lord's willing hearers. Jerusalem is named separately, as in Isa. i. 1, Jer. iv. 3, Joel iii. 20; cf. i. 5. Ἡ Ιδουμαία, named here only in the N.T.=סִדְמָה in the LXX. (Isa. xxxiv. 5, 6, &c.). The victories of Judas Maccabaeus (I Macc. v. 3) and John Hyrcanus (Joseph. ant. xiii. 9. 1) had gone far to remove the barrier between Edom and Israel, and the Edomite extraction of the Herods brought the two peoples nearer: "in our Lord's time Idumaea was practically a part of Judaea with a Jewish [circumcised] population" (G. A. Smith, *Hist. Geogr.* p. 240; cf. Joseph. ant. xiii. 9. 1). Moreover in Roman times Idumaea was

ἀπὸ τῆς Ἱεροσολύμων καὶ ἀπὸ τῆς Ἰδουμαίας καὶ πέραν τοῦ Ἰορδάνου καὶ περὶ Τύρου καὶ Σιδῶνα, πλῆθος πολύ, ἀκούοντες ὅσα ποιεῖ, ἥλθον πρὸς αὐτόν. 9 καὶ ἐπεντοῦσι μαθηταῖς αὐτοῦ ἵνα πλοιάριον προσκαρτερῆ

8 οἱ καὶ απὸ τῆς Ἰδουμ. Ν\* 1 118 131 209 258 c ff syr<sup>sin</sup> arm | πέραν] pr οἱ D f | περὶ] pr οἱ ADPΓΠΣΦ rell a vg syr<sup>hel</sup> go arm | Σιδῶνα] pr οἱ περὶ D | om πληθ. πολὺ a b c syr<sup>sin</sup> | ἀκούοντες ΝΒΔ 1 13 69 al latt (exc a) me go aeth] ἀκούσαντες ACDLPGΠΣΦ al | οσα] a CD min<sup>2</sup>a i r vg me | ποιει BL syrr<sup>vid</sup>] εποιει ΝΑCDPΓΔΠΣΦ al latt me | ηλθαν D ηλθεν U 9 πλοιαρια B

used loosely for the south border-land of Judaea; cf. Joseph. *c. Ap.* ii. 9 ἡ μὲν Ἰδουμαία τῆς ἡμετέρας χώρας ἐστὶν ὅμορος κατὰ Γάζαν κειμένη: *ant.* v. 1. 22 ἡ μὲν Ἰούδα λαχοῦσα πᾶσαν αἱρέεται τὴν καθύπερθεν Ἰδουμαίαν παρατίνουσαν μὲν ἄχρι τῶν Ἱεροσολύμων, τὸ δὲ εὖρος ἔως τῆς Σοδομίτιδος λίμνης καθήκουσαν. Thus Judaea and Idumaea together represent the South. The East too sent its contribution from Peraea (πέραν τοῦ Ἰορδάνου, i.e. ἀπὸ τοῦ πέραν τ. Ι.). Ἡ Περαία (Joseph. *B. J.* iii. 3. 3) is both in LXX. and N.T. simply πέραν τοῦ Ἰορδάνου = Ἰαπωνία, cf. Isa. ix. 1 (viii. 23), Mt. iv. 25, Mc. x. 1. According to Josephus *l.c.* Peraea extended on the East of Jordan from Machaerus to Pella, i.e. it lay chiefly between the Jabbok and the Arnon; but, like Idumaea, the name seems to have been somewhat loosely applied (G. A. Smith, p. 539); Mt. in a similar list (iv. 25) substitutes Decapolis for Peraea: see note on Mc. v. 20. From the North-West came inhabitants of the Phoenician sea-coast (περὶ Τύρου καὶ Σιδῶνα = τῆς παραλίου Τύρου καὶ Σιδῶνος, *Lc.*); the district is called Φοινίκη in Acts xi. 19, xv. 3, xxi. 2, and in the LXX. (1 Esdr. ii. 16 ff., 2 Macc. iii. 5, &c.), but not in the Gospels, where it is simply τὰ μέρη or τὰ ὅρια Τύρου κ. Σιδῶνος (Mt. xv. 21, Mc. vii. 24). The network of roads which covered Galilee facilitated

such gatherings; see G. A. Smith, p. 425 ff.

πλῆθος πολὺ κτλ.] Cf. πολὺ πλῆθος v. 7, note; the emphasis is no longer on the magnitude of the concourse, but on its cause. The fame of the miracles (cf. i. 28, 45) had brought them together, and also, as *Lc.* adds, the fame of the teaching (ἥλθαν ἀκούσαι αὐτοῦ καὶ λαθῆναι). Ἀκούοντες ὅσα ποιεῖ, ἥλθον: for ἀκούοντες we expect ἀκούσαντες (see vv. II.), but the pres. part. may denote that the rumour on the strength of which they started continued and increased in strength (WM., p. 429; Burton § 59, who calls it “the present of past action still in progress”); in ποιεῖ we hear the report as it is passed from one to another in the crowd. “Οσα, ‘how many things’ rather than ‘how great,’=‘all that’; cf. Mc. iii. 28, v. 19, vi. 30, x. 21; Lc. viii. 39; Acts xiv. 27, xv. 4, 12.

9. καὶ ἐπεν...ἵνα κτλ.] On ἐπεν...ἵνα see WM., p. 422. Πλοιάριον, Vg. *nauicula*, probably here a light boat in contrast with a fishing smack (*πλοῖον*), as in Jo. vi. 22, 24, xxi. 8 (cf. Westcott). Προσκαρτερῶν (Acts<sup>6</sup>, Paul<sup>3</sup>, here only in the Gospels) is rendered in the Vg. by *perseverare*, *perdurare*, *instare*, *adhaerere*, *parere*, *servire*, and here by *deservire*: in Mc. the English versions from Tindale have had the happy rendering ‘wait on.’ The boat was to keep close to the shore, moving when He

το αὐτῷ διὰ τὸν ὥχλον, ἵνα μὴ θλίβωσιν αὐτόν· <sup>το</sup> πολ-  
λοὺς γὰρ ἐθεράπευσεν, ὥστε ἐπιπίπτειν αὐτῷ ἵνα  
τὸν αὐτοῦ ἄψωνται ὅσοι εἶχον μάστιγας. <sup>το</sup> καὶ τὰ  
πνεύματα τὰ ἀκάθαρτα, ὅταν αὐτὸν ἐθεώρουν, προσέ-  
πιπτον αὐτῷ καὶ ἔκραζον λέγοντα ὅτι Κὐ εἰ ὁ νῖος

<sup>9 αυτον]</sup>+ πολλοὶ D a ff+οι οχλοι i3 28 69 124 346      10 εθεραπευεν KII min<sup>2</sup>  
lat<sup>vptl</sup> vg me | αυτῷ] pr ev D latt      11 καὶ πν. ακαθ. D | οταν]+ουν D | εθεωρουν  
(BCDGLΔΣ i3 33 69 1071 al)] εθεωρει ΑΡΓΠΦ | προσεπιπταν Β προσεπιπτεν EHSUV  
al | εκραζεν EHMSUV al | λεγοντες ΝDK min<sup>pauc</sup> | σν ει]+ο χριστος ΣΜΡΦ 16 121 syr<sup>hel\*</sup>

moved, so as to be ready at any moment to receive Him; comp. Lc. v. 3. On the present occasion He does not seem to have used it; the work of healing kept Him on the land as long as it was possible to remain there. There was no shrinking from contact with the crowd, but only a provision against a real danger—*ἴνα μὴ θλίβωσιν αὐτόν*. For the literal sense of *θλίβω* cf. Mt. vii. 14 *τεθλιμμένη ἡ ὁδός*: both in LXX. and N.T. it is used with few exceptions metaphorically.

10. πολλοὺς γὰρ ἐθεράπευσεν κτλ.] On θεραπεύειν see note on i. 34. For πολλούς, Mt. has πάντας: see note on i. 34: all were healed who touched Him or on whom He laid hands.

ώστε ἐπιπίπτειν αὐτῷ] The enthusiasm grew till it became dangerous: the sufferers threw themselves on Him in their eagerness, or impelled by the crowd. For ἐπιπίπτειν τυί (more usually ἐπί τινα or τινι) see 2 Regn. xvii. 9, Job vi. 16, Judith xv. 6. The action is not always hostile (cf. Acts xx. 10), but it implies suddenness, and usually some degree of passion; Field (*Notes*, p. 25) adduces Thuc. vii. 84, ἐπέπιπτόν τε ἀλλήλοις καὶ κατεπάτουν. In the present case it was natural enough, yet perilous. *Ίνα αὐτοῦ ἄψωνται*: contact was thought to be a condition, since it was often the concomitant, of healing (Mc. i. 41, v. 27 ff., vi. 56, viii. 22; cf. Lc. ἐξήγοντον ἀπτεσθαι αὐτοῦ, ὅτι δύναμις παρ' αὐτοῦ ἐξήρχετο καὶ λάτο πάντας).

ὅσοι εἶχον μάστιγας] For this use of μάστιγες see Mc. v. 29, 34, Lc. vii. 21 νόσων καὶ μαστίγων. Μάστιξ represents disease or suffering as a Divine scourge used for chastisement; comp. Prov. iii. 12, cited in Heb. xii. 6; the idea is frequent in the O.T. and ‘Apocrypha,’ cf. e.g. Ps. lxxiii. 4, 5, Jer. v. 3, Tob. xiii. 14 (18), 2 Macc. iii. 34, ix. 11, Ps. Sol. x. 1, but the noun does not appear in the LXX. as interchangeable with νόσος: possibly even in the N.T. it carries with it the thought of greater suffering, as well as of a more direct visitation of God.

11. καὶ τὰ πνεύματα τὰ ἀκάθ. κτλ.] For πνεύμα ἀκάθαρτον=δαμόνιον see i. 23 note. “Οταν αὐτὸν ἐθεώρουν=the class, ὅτε or ὅποτε θεωροίεν (Madv. § 134 b); see Burton, §§ 290, 315, and cf. WM., p. 388, Blass, Gr. p. 207: ‘whenever, as often as, they caught sight of Him.’ Προσέπιπτον—an act of homage (Acts xvi. 29) akin to adoration (cf. Ps. xciv. (xcv.) 6, προσκυνήσωμεν καὶ προσπέσωμεν αὐτῷ), now, as it seems, for the first time offered to Jesus since the commencement of His ministry; subsequently such prostrations were frequent (Mc. v. 6, 33, vii. 25). The contrast between ἐπιπίπτειν (v. 10) and προσέπιπτειν is striking and perhaps not accidental.

καὶ ἔκραζον κτλ.] Κράξω is used of the wild cry of the demoniacs also in i. 23, v. 5, 7, ix. 26. The words of the cry go beyond the confession of

*τοῦ θεοῦ.* <sup>12</sup>καὶ πολλὰ ἐπετίμα αὐτοῖς ἵνα μὴ αὐτὸν 12  
Φανερὸν ποιήσωσιν.

<sup>13</sup>Καὶ ἀναβαίνει εἰς τὸ ὄρος καὶ προσκαλεῖται οὓς 13

<sup>12 ποιησωσιν]</sup> ποιωσιν B<sup>2</sup>DKLΠ\* 13 69 al<sup>pauc</sup>+οτι ηδεισαν τον χριστον αυτον ειναι  
CΦ 2 pe<sup>corr</sup> w<sup>scorr</sup> a+οτι ηδ. αυτον b ff g q t

i. 24, for ὁ νιὸς τοῦ θεοῦ, however interpreted, is more definite than ὁ ἄγιος. Comp. Mt. iv. 6, ὁ διάβολος λέγει αὐτῷ Εἶ νιὸς εἰ τοῦ θεοῦ κτλ. The earliest confession of the Sonship seems to have come from evil spirits, who knew Jesus better than he was known by His own disciples—τὰ δαιμόνια πιστεύουσιν (James ii. 19).

12. καὶ πολλὰ ἐπετίμα αὐτοῖς κτλ.] Cf. i. 25, 43. The purpose of the censure was to prevent a premature divulgence of His true character: cf. Phil. ii. 6, οὐχ ἀρπαγμὸν ἡγήσατο τὸ εἴναι Ἰησα τῷ θεῷ. Mt. reminds his readers of Isa. xlvi. 1—4, which he sees fulfilled in our Lord's freedom from personal ambition. Πολλὰ ἐπετίμα, Vg. *vehementer comminabatur*: πολλά as an adverb is characteristic of Mc., cf. v. 10, 23, 43, ix. 26. Mt. has the less vivid ἐπετίμησεν αὐτοῖς: Lc. omits the circumstance. Φανερὸν ποιεῖν=φανεροῦν occurs only here and in Mt.'s parallel. The φανέρωσις was postponed only; cf. iv. 22, Rom. xvi. 26; it was not yet the time for a general manifestation (Jo. vii. 6 f., xvii. 6), and the δαιμόνια were possibly aware that their revelations could only work mischief at this stage. “Nec tempus erat, neque hi praecones” (Bengel). Bede compares Ps. xlix. (l.) 16.

13—19 a. SECOND WITHDRAWAL FROM CAPERNAUM, AND CHOICE OF THE TWELVE (Mt. x. 1—4, Lc. vi. 12—16).

13. καὶ ἀναβαίνει κτλ.] Lc. ἐγένετο δὲ ἐν ταῖς ἡμέραις ταύταις ἔξελθεῖν, again implying an interval where Mc.'s narrative seems to be continuous (comp. Mc. iii. 1); in Mt. the order

is entirely different. Ἀναβαίνει, the historical present, frequent in Mc. (e.g. i. 21, 40, ii. 15, 18, iii. 4, 8; cf. Hawkins, p. 113 ff.); τὸ ὄρος as in vi. 46—the hills above the Lake (τὰ ὄρη, v. 5), cf. ἡ θάλασσα (ii. 13, iii. 7): any other mountain is specified, e.g. ix. 2, xi. 1. Similarly in Gen. xix. 17 τὸ ὄρος (**ταῦτα**) is the heights above the Jordan valley, and in Jud. i. 19, the hill country of Judah (ἡ ὄρων, Lc. i. 39, 65). With the phrase ἀναβαίνειν εἰς τὸ ὄ. compare Mt. v. 1, xiv. 23, xv. 29.

The purpose of this retreat to the hills is stated by Lc.: ἐγένετο...ἔξελθεῖν αὐτὸν...προσεύξασθαι, καὶ ἦν διανυκτερεύων ἐν τῇ προσευχῇ τοῦ θεοῦ. A crisis had been reached, for which special preparation must be made. “A way was prepared in that night of prayer upon the hills whereby an organic life was imparted to the little community...Our Lord takes counsel of the Father alone,...when the morning comes [Lc. ὅτε ἐγένετο ἡμέρα] His resolve is distinct, and it is forthwith carried out” (Latham, *Pastor pastorum*, p. 238). It was the first Ember night; Victor: τοὺς ἡγουμένους διδάσκων τῆς ἐκκλησίας πρὸ τῶν γινομένων ὥπ' αὐτῶν χειροτονιῶν διανυκτερεύειν ἐν προσευχῇ.

καὶ προσκαλεῖται οὓς ἡθελεν αὐτός κτλ.] The King chooses His ministers: the selection is His act and not theirs: Jo. vi. 70, xv. 16, Acts i. 2. For other instances of the exercise of our Lord's human will, see i. 41, vii. 24, ix. 30, Jo. xvii. 24, xxi. 22; and for its renunciation, xiv. 36, Jo. v. 30. Bengel: “volebat, ex voluntate Patris.” Two steps (Mc., Lc.); the point is not noticed by

14 ἦθελεν αὐτός, καὶ ἀπῆλθον πρὸς αὐτόν. <sup>14</sup>καὶ ἐποίησεν δώδεκα, [οὓς καὶ ἀποστόλους ὠνόμασεν,] ἵνα ὥσιν μετ' αὐτοῦ, καὶ ἵνα ἀποστέλλῃ αὐτοὺς κηρύσσειν

14 δώδεκα post iwa ωσιν Daci vg | οὐς καὶ απ. ωνομασεν NBC\* vid Δ 13 28 69 124  
238 346 syr<sup>hel(mg)</sup> me (aeth)] om AC<sup>o</sup>DLPΣ(Φ) min<sup>pl</sup> latt syrr<sup>sin pesh hcl(tx)</sup> go arm |  
om iwa 2<sup>o</sup> B | αποστελει Φ | κηρυσσειν] pr καὶ αποστολους ωνομασεν του Φ+το εναγγειων D befffgiq

Mt.) appear in this ἔκλογή: (1) the summoning of an inner circle of disciples; (2) the appointment of twelve of their number to a special office. *Προσκαλεῖσθαι* (*vocare ad se*, Vg.), first in Gen. xxviii. 1, is from this time forth frequently used of the summons of Christ whether to the *μαθηταί* or the *ὄχλος* (Mc.<sup>8</sup>). Those who were summoned in this instance ἀπῆλθον πρὸς αὐτόν—more perhaps than *venerunt* (Vg.): in coming they finally parted with the surroundings of their previous life.

14. καὶ ἐποίησεν δώδεκα] Out of those who answered His summons He again selected twelve: Lc. ἔκλεξάμενος ἀπ' αὐτῶν δώδεκα; Victor: ἡσαν γὰρ πλείους οἱ παρόντες. These He appointed (ἐποίησεν, Mc.). For *ποιεῖν* in this sense see 1 Regn. xii. 6 (ὁ ποιήσας τὸν Μωυσῆν καὶ τὸν Ααρὼν), Acts ii. 36, Heb. iii. 2 (Westcott), Apoc. v. 10; the Vg. *fecit ut essent, &c.* presupposes the Western reading ἐποίησεν ἵνα ὥσιν εἰς μετ' αὐτοῦ. The number (1) seems to have reference to the tribes of Israel, to whom the Twelve were originally sent (Mt. x. 6, 23); (2) it suggests their relation to the larger Israel as patriarchs and princes of the new Kingdom (Mt. xix. 28, Lc. xxii. 30, Apoc. xxi. 12, 14). Cf. Barn. 8. 3, οἵς ἔδωκεν τοὺς εὐαγγελίου τὴν ἔξουσίαν, οὗσιν δεκαδύο εἰς μαρτύριον τῶν φυλῶν.

οὓς καὶ ἀποστόλους ὠνόμασεν] See vv. ll.: the words look like an interpolation from Lc., and it has been suggested that their omission by D and other 'Western' authorities is an

instance of 'Western non-interpolation'; but the external evidence is too strong in their favour to permit their ejection from the text of Mc., even if Mc. vi. 30 does not presuppose their presence here. The name was not perhaps given at the time, but it was given by the Lord; He not only created the office but also (καὶ) imposed the title. *Ἀπόστολος* is used by the LXX. only in 3 Regn. xiv. 6 (A), where it = חָנָן, cf. Isa. xviii. 2 Symm. ἀποστέλλων ἀποστόλους (= מִנְנָן, Aq. πρεσβευτάς). For the history and N.T. use of the word see Lightfoot, *Galatians*, p. 92 ff.; Hort, *Ecclesia*, p. 22 ff.

ἵνα ὥσιν μετ' αὐτοῦ κτλ.] Two immediate purposes of the creation of an Apostolate: (1) such closer association with the Master as was impossible for the general body of *μαθηταί*, (2) a mission based on the special training thus imparted. Association with Christ was at once the training of the Twelve, and if they were faithful, their reward (Jo. xvii. 24). For its effects see Acts iv. 13. On *ποιεῖν* iwa cf. Blass, *Gr.* p. 226.

14—15. ἵνα ἀποστέλλῃ κτλ.] Hence the name of their office. On ἀποστέλλω as distinguished from πέμπω see Westcott on Jo. xx. 21 (add. note); for *κηρύσσω* cf. i. 4, 14, and vv. ll. here; the substance of the original Apostolic *κήρυγμα* was (Mt. x. 7), "Ὕγγικεν ἡ βασιλεία τῶν οὐρανῶν. A second part of their commission was to exorcise and to heal; Mc. mentions only exorcism, but cf. Mt. (x. 1). For this work au-

<sup>15</sup>καὶ ἔχειν ἐξουσίαν § ἐκβάλλειν τὰ δαιμόνια. <sup>16</sup>καὶ <sup>15</sup> § W<sup>h</sup> ἐποίησεν τοὺς δώδεκα· καὶ ἐπέθηκεν ὄνομα τῷ Σίμωνι Πέτρον, <sup>17</sup>καὶ Ἰάκωβον τὸν τοῦ Ζεβεδαίου καὶ Ἰω-

<sup>15</sup> εχειν] εδωκεν αυτοις D b c fff i t vg aeth | εξουσιαν]+θεραπευειν τας νοσους και AC<sup>2</sup>DPΓΠΣΦ min<sup>fero</sup>omn latt syrr arm go <sup>16</sup> και εποιησεν τ. δωδ. NBC<sup>4</sup>ΔΦ aeth<sup>ed</sup>] om AC<sup>2</sup>DLPTΠΣ min<sup>pl</sup> latt syrr arm me go aeth<sup>old</sup> πρωτον Σιμωνα 13 69 124 346 | επεθηκεν αυτοις ονοματα 1071 | τω Σ. ονομα ΑΡΓΠΣΦ al min<sup>pler</sup> Σ. ονομα D

uthority was necessary (*ἔχειν ἐξουσίαν*, cf. Mt. *ἔδωκεν αὐτοῖς ἐξουσίαν κτλ.*); authority delegated from Christ was to be the note of their ministry, as authority delegated from the Father had been the note of the Master's (see i. 22, ii. 10). Their mission was identical in its purposes with His, but secondary, and dependent on His gifts.

16. καὶ ἐποίησεν τοὺς δώδεκα] The thread of v. 14 is picked up after the parenthesis *ἴνα δισι...τὰ δαιμόνια*—‘and so He created the Twelve.’ Δώδεκα now has the article, cf. iv. 10, vi. 7, &c.: so Lc. x. 1 ἀνέδειξεν...ἐβδομήκοντα δύο, ib. 17 οἱ ἐβδομήκοντα δύο, Acts vi. 3 ἀνδρας...ἐπτά, xxi. 8 ὅντος ἐκ τῶν ἐπτά. For ποιεῖν cf. v. 14, note.

καὶ ἐπέθηκεν ὄνομα τῷ Σίμωνι Πέτρον] For *ἐπιθεῖναι* ὄνομα cf. 4 Regn. xxiv. 17, and on the practice of imposing characteristic names on scholars, see Schöttgen, *ad l.*; Bengel: “domini nota est dare cognomen.” The construction thus begun is broken off by the intervention of another train of thought. Mc. is (as it seems) about to continue καὶ τῷ Ἰακώβῳ...καὶ Ἰωάνῃ ἐπέθηκεν ὄνομα Βοανηργές, when it occurs to him that a list of the twelve will naturally follow ἐποίησεν τοὺς δώδεκα. Hence he proceeds as if he had written Σίμωνα φὲ ἐπέθηκεν ὄνομα Πέτρον. WH. regard καὶ...Σίμωνι as a parenthesis, but a parenthesis in such a context is almost intolerable. Such added names are common in the N.T., cf. Acts i. 23 Βαρσαβᾶν ὃς ἐπεκλήθη Ἰοῦστος, iv. 36 Ἰωσῆφ ὁ ἐπικληθεὶς Βαρνάβας,

xii. 12 Ἰωάνου τοῦ ἐπικαλούμενου Μάρκου: in Acts a similar formula is used in Simon's case (x. 5, 18, 32, xi. 13), but only when that Apostle is mentioned by or to persons outside the Church; elsewhere in the Acts and in the Gospels he is henceforth Πέτρος or Σίμων Πέτρος, the latter especially in St John. Πέτρος = Κηφᾶς (Jo. i. 42), i.e. קִפְאֵן, (cf. בָּבֶל, Job xxx. 6, Jer. iv. 29), Syr. ↗, a rock, or usually a detached piece of rock, a stone (cf. Hort, *First Epistle of St Peter*, p. 152). “The title appears to mark not so much the natural character of the Apostle as the spiritual office to which he was called” (Westcott): cf. Victor, *ἴνα προλάβῃ τὸ ἔργον ἡ κλῆσις προφητικῶς*. The name was actually given at the first call of Simon (Jo. l.c.), but apparently not appropriated till he became an Apostle. Mc.'s ἐπέθηκεν leaves the time undetermined, so that Augustine (*de cons.* 109) may be right: “hoc recolendo dixit, non quod tum factum sit.” Justin appears to refer to this verse, *dial.* 106: μετωνομακέναι αὐτὸν Πέτρον ἔνα τῶν ἀποστόλων, καὶ γεγράφθαι ἐν τοῖς ἀπομνημονεύμασιν αὐτοῦ γεγενημένον καὶ τοῦτο (cf. Intr. p. xxx).

17. καὶ Ἰάκωβον...καὶ Ἰωάνην] Sc. ἐποίησεν. For these Apostles see note on i. 19. They follow next after Peter (πρῶτος Σίμων, Mt.), either because they shared with him the prerogative of a title imposed by the Lord, or because with him they were afterwards singled out for special

¶ P ἀνὴν τὸν ἀδελφὸν τοῦ Ἰακώβου—καὶ ἐπέθηκεν  
αὐτοῖς ὄνομα \*Βοανηργές\*, ὁ ἐστιν Υἱὸς βροντῆς—  
18<sup>18</sup> καὶ Ἀνδρέαν καὶ Φίλιππον καὶ Βαρθολομαῖον καὶ

17 του Ιακωβου] αυτου Ιακ. ΑΕΣ al αυτου G min<sup>pauc</sup> syr<sup>sin</sup> om του CKSD | ονομα BD min<sup>3</sup> syr<sup>pesh</sup>] ονοματα ΝΑCLΓΔΠΣΦ al min<sup>pl</sup> latt syr<sup>hal</sup> arm me go aeth | βοανηργές ΝΑΒCKLMΔ<sup>2</sup>Π\* 1 33 69 al<sup>pauc</sup>] βοανεργης D βοανεργες EFGHUVΓΠ<sup>2</sup>Φ min<sup>pl</sup> βοαναργες Δ\* βανηρεγες 604 βανηρεγες 2<sup>pe</sup> | om ο εστιν νιοι βρ. syr<sup>sin</sup>

privileges (Mc. v. 37, ix. 2, xiv. 32; Acts i. 13, where the titles are not mentioned, has the same order).

καὶ ἐπέθηκεν αὐτοῖς ὄνομα Βοανηργές κτλ.] Dalman, *Gr.* pp. 112 n., 158 n., suggested that *Βοανηργές* is a corruption of *Βανηρόγες* (בָּנֵי נֶגֶד), and similar forms occur in two important cursives (see vv. ll.), and in the Syriac versions, which have the meaningless ﺏـ، and the Armenian (*Banereges*). More recently (*Worte Jesu*, p. 39, n. 4) he has proposed to regard either *o* or *a* as an intrusion into the text. Others have justified the prevalent form by such partial analogies as Σόδομα = מְדֻרָּה, 'Ρωβάθ = תְּחִרָּה. The second factor in *Βοανηργές* is hardly less perplexing. The Syriac root ﺏـ is never used of thunder, and the ordinary Heb. for thunder is מַעַן (Syr. ﺏـ). The

Jerome (on Dan. i. 7) proposed *Bene-reem* or *Baneraem* (בָּנֵי נֶגֶד), but without Greek authority. In Job xxxvii. 2 נֶגֶד appears to be used for the rumbling of the storm, and this seems to point to the quarter where a solution may be found. The νιοι βροντῆς (=οἱ βροντῶντες, Euth.) were probably so called not merely from the impetuosity of their natural character (cf. e.g. Mc. ix. 38, Lc. ix. 54), but, as Simon was called Peter, from their place in the new order. In the case of James nothing remains to justify the title beyond the fact of his early martyrdom, probably due to the force of his

denunciations (Acts xii. 2): John's νοητή βροντή (Orig. *Philoc.* xv. 18) is heard in Gospel, Epistles, and Apocalypse; see esp. Trench, *Studies*, p. 144 f., Westcott, *St John*, p. xxxiii; and for the patristic explanations cf. Suicer s. v. Βροντή. Victor: διὰ τὸ μέγα καὶ διαπρύσιον ἡχῆσαι τῇ οἰκουμένῃ τῆς θεολογίας τὰ δόγματα.

18. καὶ Ἀνδρέαν καὶ Φίλιππον] As Simon Peter's brother, Andrew follows the first three, although πρὸς τοὺς τρεῖς οὐκ ἥλθεν (2 Regn. xxiii. 23); cf. Mc. xiii. 3, Acts i. 13; Mt. and Lc. place him second. He appears again in connexion with Philip in Jo. xii. 22. Both Ἀνδρέας and Φίλιππος are purely Greek names, whilst Σίμων is Συμεὼν Hellenised (note on i. 16): the three men came from the same town, Bethsaida (Jo. i. 44), where Hellenising influences were at work; see note on viii. 22.

καὶ Βαρθολομαῖον] Βαρθολομαῖος (only in the Apostolic lists)=ברְּתַלְמִי, Syr. sin. pesh. ﺏـ, the son of Talmai or Tolomai: cf. Βαριωνά Mt. xvi. 17=[νιὸς] Ιωάνον Jo. xxi. 15, Βαρτιμαῖος=ὸ νιὸς Τιμαίου (Mc. x. 46). The name תְּלִמִּי (M.T. טְלִמִּי) occurs in Num. xiii. 22, Josh. xv. 14, Judg. i. 10, 2 Sam. iii. 3, xiii. 37, 1 Chron. iii. 2, and among its Greek equivalents in codd. BA are Θαλμεῖ, Θαλμαῖ, Θολμεῖ, Θολαμαῖ; Josephus has Θολομαῖος (ant. xx. 1. 1). Only the patronymic of this Apostle appears in the lists, but he is probably identical with the Ναθαναὴλ of Jo. i. 46 ff., xxi. 2 (see

*Μαθθαῖον* καὶ Θωμᾶν καὶ Ἰάκωβον τὸν τοῦ Ἀλφαίου ¶ t

18 *Μαθθαῖον* B\*D] *Μαρθαῖον* ¶ (sed alibi plerumque *Μαθθ.*) AB<sup>c</sup>CLΓΔΗΣΦ al min<sup>omnivid</sup>+τὸν τελωνῆν 13 69 124 209 604 1071 syr<sup>hel(mg)</sup> arm

Westcott *ad ll.*). If so, he was from Cana, and his introduction to the Lord was due to Philip, whom he follows in the lists of Mt. Mc. Lc. Tradition (Eus. *H. E.* v. 10) gave him India as his field of Apostolic work.

καὶ *Μαθθαῖον* καὶ *Θωμᾶν*] The two names are associated, in varying order (M. κ. Θ., Mc. Lc.; Θ. κ. M., Mt.), by the three Synoptists; in Acts they are separated by Bartholomew. Mt. adds ὁ τελώνης to his own name. *Μαθθαῖος*, Syr.<sup>sin. cu. pesh.</sup> ﴿ ﴿ , is either like *Μαθθίας* an abbreviated form of מַתְתִּיאוֹן (1 Chron. xxv. 21 *Μαρθίας*, A)—so Dalman, *Gr.* p. 142, *Worte J.*, p. 40 f.—or connected with פֵּר, *vir*. That Matthew is identical with Levi seems to follow from Mt. ix. 9 ff. compared with the parallels in Mc., Lc. But some expositors ancient as well as modern have distinguished the two, e.g. Heracleon (ap. Clem. Al. *strom.* iv. 9, ἐξ ὧν *Μαθθαῖος*, Φιλίππος, Θωμᾶς, Λευΐς, καὶ ἄλλοι), and perhaps Origen (*Cels.* i. 62). No difficulty need be felt as to the double name, of which the Apostolic list has already yielded examples. Θωμᾶς=אֶתְמָתָה (=אַיִלָּה Gen. xxxviii. 27), cf. Dalman, p. 112, is interpreted by Jo. xi. 16, xx. 24, xxi. 2 (ὁ λεγόμενος Διδύμος, the twin). According to the *Acta Thomae* (cf. Eus. *H.E.* i. 13) his personal name was Judas (ἔλαχεν ἡ Ἰνδίᾳ Ἰούδᾳ Θωμᾶ τῷ καὶ Διδύμῳ). In Jo. xiv. 22 Syr.<sup>cu.</sup> has ‘Judas Thomas’ and Syr.<sup>sin.</sup> ‘Thomas’ for Ἰούδας οὐχ ὁ Ἰσκαριώτης: see Lightfoot, *Galatians*, p. 263 n. If there were three Apostles of the name of Judas, the substitution of a secondary name in the case of one of them was natural enough.

καὶ Ἰάκωβον τὸν τοῦ Ἀλφαίου] So Mt.: Lc.<sup>ev. act.</sup> Ἰάκωβος Ἀλφαῖον: so called no doubt to distinguish him from Ἰάκωβος ὁ τοῦ Ζεβεδαίου. Ἀλφαῖος (=אֶלְעָזָר, cf. Χαλφέι, 1 Macc. xi. 70) is perhaps identical with Κλωπᾶς, Jo. xix. 25: if he is the Κλεόπατρας = Κλεόπατρος of Lc. xxiv. 18, the latter name must be simply a Greek substitute for the Aramaic name (cf. Lightfoot, *Galatians*, p. 267 n., Dalman, p. 142 n.). If the identification of Ἀλφαῖος with Κλωπᾶς is correct, this James was also known in the Apostolic Church as ὁ μικρός: his mother was a Mary, and he had a brother Joses (=Joseph); cf. Mc. xv. 40. There is no reason for regarding him as a brother of Levi, or as one of the ‘brothers’ of the Lord (see notes on ii. 14, vi. 3).

Θαδδαῖον] Aram. אֶתְמָתָה, בָּרֶנְגָּל (Dalman, *Gr.*, p. 143; *Worte J.*, p. 41). Both in Mt. and Mc. the Western text gives Λεββαῖος (WH., *Notes*, pp. 11, 24), either an attempt to identify this Apostle with Levi (H.), or another rendering of his name (from בָּרֶן, *cor*, as Θαδδαῖος is from בָּרֶנְגָּל, Syr. ﴿ ﴿ mamma). In Lc.<sup>ev. act.</sup> his name is given as Ἰούδας Ἰακώβου: cf. Orig. *praeſ. ad Rom.*: “eundem quem... Marcus Thaddaeum dixit, Lucas Iudam Iacobi scripsit...quia moris erat binis vel ternis nominibus uti Hebraeos.” This Judas is apparently referred to in Jo. xiv. 22 as οὐχ ὁ Ἰσκαριώτης. For fuller particulars see Nestle, in Hastings, *D. B.* iv. p. 741 f.

Σίμωνα τὸν Καναναῖον] So Mt.; Lc.<sup>ev.</sup> Σίμωνα τὸν καλούμενον ζηλωτήν, Lc.<sup>act.</sup> Σίμωνό ζηλωτής. Καναναῖος like Θαδδαῖος is a descriptive name, not a native of

καὶ Θαδδαῖον καὶ Σίμωνα τὸν Καναναῖον <sup>τον</sup> καὶ Ἰούδαν <sup>τον</sup>  
 Ἰσκαριώθ, ὃς καὶ παρέδωκεν αὐτόν.

18 Θαδδαῖον] Δεββαιον D a b ff i q | Καναναιον NBCDLΔ 33 565 latt syrrsin pesh vid  
 arm me aeth] Κανανιτην ΑΓΠΣΦ al min <sup>fere omn</sup> syr<sup>hel</sup> go                    19 Ισκαριώθ NBCDLΔ  
 33 2<sup>pe</sup> al<sup>2</sup>] Σκαριώθ D a<sup>vid</sup> b ff i q vg Ισκαριωτην ΑΓΠΣΦ al min<sup>pler</sup> (syr<sup>sin pesh</sup> arm)  
 syr<sup>hel</sup> me go

Cana (Καναῖος), nor a Canaanite (Χαναναῖος, חַנָּנֵי), but, as Lc. interprets it, a zealot (Ἄγνωτος, Syr.<sup>sin. pesh.</sup> , cf. Exod. xx. 5, Deut. iv. 24 נְזִבָּלָן, LXX. θεὸς ζηλωτῆς, and in reference to devout Israelites 1 Esdr. viii. 69, A, 2 Macc. iv. 2; the model of a true ζηλωτῆς was Phinehas, 4 Macc. xviii. 12. The later Zealots were a fanatical party originating among the Pharisees (Schürer I. ii. 80 n., 229 f.). This Simon cannot have belonged to the more advanced Zealots who were associated with sedition and outrage (cf. Joseph. *ant.* xviii. 1, *B. J.* iv. 3. 9, &c.), but he may have been before (Gal. i. 14) and even after (Acts xxi. 20) his call a scrupulous adherent to the forms of the Law. Yet it is difficult to suppose this of one who belonged to the inner circle of our Lord's disciples, and the analogy of other secondary names in the list leads us to regard the name as descriptive of personal character only. As the first Simon was 'rocklike,' so the second was characterized by jealousy for what he conceived to be right or true. Possibly he was a man who under other teaching might have developed into the fanatic or bigot, but who learnt from the Master to cherish only the 'fire of love.'

19. Ἰούδαν Ἰσκαριώθ] So xiv. 10, Lc. vi. 16; elsewhere ὁ Ἰσκαριώτης (Mt. x. 4, xxvi. 14, Lc. xxii. 3 (ὁ καλούμενος), Jo. xii. 4, xiii. 2, 26, xiv. 22). Ἰσκαριώθ appears to = Ἰησοῦς קְרַב שׁוֹא: for the form Ἰσκαριώτης comp. Joseph. *ant.* vii. 6. 1, Ἰστοβος = טָוב שׁוֹא. There is some difficulty in identifying

Kerioth; in Josh. xv. 25, to which reference is usually made, the word is but part of the name Kerioth-Hezron; in Jer. xlvi. 24, 41 Kerioth (LXX., Καριώθ) is a town of Moab distinct apparently from Kiriathaim, one or the other of which Tristram (*Land of Moab*, p. 275) is disposed to identify with Kureiyat, S.E. of Ataroth on the east side of the Dead Sea. In Jo. vi. 71 the name of the town is given as Καρύωτος by Ν\* and some good cursives (ἀπὸ Καρυώτου), and the same reading appears in D at Jo. xii. 4, xiv. 22; cf. Lightfoot, *Bibl. Essays*, p. 143 f. If this Judas came from a town east of the Dead Sea, he was possibly one of the newly arrived disciples (Mc. iii. 8)—a circumstance which would perhaps account for his position at the end of the list. His father Simon ('Ιούδας Σίμωνος Jo.<sup>4</sup>) was also of the same town (Jo. vi. 71, 'Ιούδαν Σίμωνος Ἰσκαριώτου, Ν\*BCGL). See Zahn, *Einl.* ii. p. 561, and the artt. in Hastings and *Encycl. Bibl.*

ὅς καὶ παρέδωκεν αὐτόν] Mt. ὁ καὶ παραδόντας αὐτόν, Lc. ὁ ἐγίνετο προδότης (cf. Acts i. 16, τοῦ γενομένου ὀδηγοῦ τοῖς συλλαβοῦσιν Ἰησοῦν), Jo. xii. 4 ὁ μέλλων αὐτὸν παραδίδονται, xviii. 2, 5 ὁ παραδίδοντας αὐτόν. In one form or another the terrible indictment is rarely absent where the name of this Apostle is mentioned. For παραδίδονται comp. note on i. 14, and on the use of the aor., Blass, *Gr.* p. 198. Καὶ calls attention to the identity of the traitor with the Apostle, and contrasts the treachery of Judas with the choice of Christ.

20 *Kai ἔρχεται εἰς οἶκον· καὶ συνέρχεται πάλιν  
οὐδὲν ὅχλος ὥστε μὴ δύνασθαι αὐτὸν μηδὲ ἀρτον φαγεῖν.  
21 καὶ ἀκούσαντες οἱ παρ' αὐτοῦ ἐξῆλθον κρατῆσαι*

19 ερχεται Η\*ΒΙ<sup>g</sup> αլpaue b e i ff syrsin] ερχονται Ηc.aCLΔΠΣΦ al minpler e q vg syrr<sup>deut</sup> hel arm go : εισερχονται D | οικον] pr τον 2<sup>ρο</sup> 20 συνερχεται M c syrsin arm συνερχονται Π\* minpaue syrpsh | ο οχλος (Ηc.aABDL<sup>corr</sup> min<sup>nonn</sup>)] om o Η\*CEFGKL\*TΠΣΦ alpler | om αυτους D go | μηδε ABKLUΔΠ\* min<sup>nonn</sup>] μητε Η\*CEFGΣΦ alpler | αρτους D 21 ακουσαντες οι παρ αυτον (ακ. οι αδελφοι αυτου syrr<sup>vid</sup>)] οτε ηκουσαν περι αυτου οι γραμματεις και οι λοιποι D lat<sup>vt</sup>pler go

19b—30. QUESTION OF THE SOURCE OF THE LORD'S POWER TO EXPEL δαιμόνια (Mt. xii. 22—32, Lc. xi. 14—26; cf. Mt. ix. 32—34, Lc. xii. 10).

19. καὶ ἔρχεται εἰς οἶκον] Compared with v. 13 the words imply an interval during which the Lord descends from the mountain and returns to Capernaum (Lc. vii. 1). Lc. introduces here the discourse ἐπὶ τόπου πεδίνον which corresponds on the whole to Mt.'s 'Sermon on the Mount,' and the harmonists from Tatian onwards place it—rightly as it seems—in this position. Mc., to whom the Sermon is unknown, passes without notice to his next fact, and the English reader's sense of the relation of the sequel to what has gone before is further confused by the verse division. The house entered is probably Simon's (i. 29); for the omission of the article cf. ii. 1.

20. καὶ συνέρχεται πάλιν κτλ.] Apparently in the house and at the house-door; cf. i. 32, ii. 2. For πάλιν see note on ii. 1. "Ωστε μὴ...μηδέ, Vg. *ita ut non possent neque panem manducare*, 'so that they could not even,' &c.; the reading ὥστε μὴ... μήτε could only = "ita ut n. p. neque panem manducarent" (WM., p. 614, Blass, Gr. p. 265). "Αρτον φαγεῖν, to take food (of any kind) = מִתְבָּשֵׂל, as in Gen. iii. 19, xlvi. 16, Exod. ii. 20, &c. The difficulty must often have arisen during the height of the Lord's popularity; for another in-

stance see Mc. vi. 31. Bede exclaims, "Quam beata frequentia turbae confluentis, cui tantum studii ad audiendum verbum Dei."

21. καὶ ἀκούσαντες οἱ παρ' αὐτοῦ κτλ.] Cf. Prov. xxix. 39 (xxxii. 21) οι παρ' αὐτῆς=הַנִּיר. In Sus. 33 (cf. 30) οι παρ' αὐτῆς are Susanna's parents, children, and other relatives (Th.), or her parents and dependents (LXX.); in I Macc. ix. 44 (ΗV, but τοις ἀδελφοῖς, A), xi. 73, xii. 27, xiii. 52, xv. 15, xvi. 16, 2 Macc. xi. 20, the phrase is used in a wider sense of adherents, followers, &c., cf. Joseph. ant. i. 11, περιτέμνεται καὶ πάντες οἱ παρ' αὐτοῦ. Thus the Syr. sin. 'His brethren' or the Vg. *sui* fairly represents its general sense; "his kynnesmen" (Wycliffe), or "kynesfolkes" (Geneva) is too definite; the context, however, shews that this is practically what is meant. Clearly οἱ παρ' αὐτοῦ cannot be the Scribes and Pharisees, as D, which substitutes οἱ γραμματεῖς καὶ οἱ λοιποί, and Victor: νομίζω...περὶ τῶν Φαρισαίων καὶ γραμματέων λέγειν τὸν εὐαγγελιστήν. Either disciples or relatives are intended, and as the former were on the spot, ἀκούσαντες ἐξῆλθον could hardly apply to them. We are thus led to think of His family at Nazareth, whose coming is announced in v. 31. The incident of vv. 22—30 fills the interval between their departure and arrival. For κρατεῖν in this sense, cf. xii. 12, xiv. 1, 46.

22 αὐτόν, ἔλεγον γὰρ ὅτι Ἐξέστη. <sup>22</sup>καὶ οἱ γραμματεῖς οἱ ἀπὸ Ἱεροσολύμων καταβάντες ἔλεγον ὅτι Βεελζεβοὺλ ἔχει, καὶ ὅτι Ἐν τῷ ἄρχοντι τῶν δαιμονίων

21 εἶσταται αὐτοὺς D\* (εἶσται D<sup>2</sup>) exentiāt eos ab dffiq εἶσταται 13 69  
εἶσταται 346 εἶστι minpaue 22 οἱ απὸ I.] pr καὶ H alpaue a | Βεεζεβούλ B

ἔλεγον γὰρ ὅτι Ἐξέστη] On the aor. see Burton, § 47; as to the meaning cf. Euth., παρεφρόνησε, and the Vg. here, “in furorem versus est.” The same charge was brought against St Paul, Acts xxvi. 24, cf. 2 Cor. v. 13, εἴτε γὰρ ἔξεστημεν, θεῶ. For ἔξεστην in this sense see Isa. xxviii. 7, Hos. ix. 7. The family of Jesus were doubtless inspired by a desire for His safety, but their interpretation of His enthusiasm implied want of faith in Him, cf. Jo. vii. 5; the Mother perhaps was overpersuaded by the brethren. Tatian strangely places this verse in connexion with the narrative of Mc. ii. 23—28 (Hill, *Diatess.*, p. 71; see above, p. 50).

22. καὶ οἱ γραμματεῖς κτλ.] Mt. οἱ Φαρισαῖοι, Lc. τινὲς ἔξ αὐτῶν. The Pharisaic Scribes from Jerusalem had been from the first the instigators of the opposition (Lc. v. 17; cf. Mc. ii. 6, vii. 1). The present attack arose out of the healing of a possessed man who recovered sight and speech (Mt. Lc.); voices were heard in the crowd asking Μήτι οὐτός ἐστιν ὁ νίδος Δαυείδ; (Mt. xii. 23), and the Jerusalem Scribes were thus tempted to suggest another explanation. For καταβῆναι ἀπὸ Ἱερ. cf. Lc. ii. 51, x. 30 f., Acts viii. 26.

Βεελζεβοὺλ ἔχει] The form *Beelzebul*, which occurs in Syrr.<sup>sin. cu. pesh.</sup> and in most MSS. of the Vulg., but in no Greek ms., comes from 2 Kings i. 2, 6 ρוּבְנֵי בְּבָלִיל, where the LXX. render ἐν τῷ (τῇ) Βάαλ μυίαν θεὸν Ἀκκαρών, but Symm. had παρὰ τοῦ Βεελζεβοὺβ θεοῦ Ἐκρών. The derivation of Βεελζεβούλ is obscure: some connect the second factor of the name with

לַבְּבָלִיל, whence לִבְּגָל, a Talmudic word for dung (so Dalman, p. 105 n.), others with לִבְּבָל, habitation: cf. Kautzsch, p. 9, Dalman, l.c. Neubauer (*Stud. Bibl.* i. p. 55) suggests that בְּבָל is a dialectal form of בְּבָבָר, a bee, so that Βεελζεβούλ = Βεελζεβούρ: but the conjecture has not much to recommend it. We have then to choose between ‘Lord of dung’ and ‘Lord of the habitation’; to the latter the apparent play upon לִבְּבָל in Mt. x. 25 (*τὸν οἰκοδεσπότην Β. ἐπεκάλεσαν*) lends some support; if the former is adopted, ‘dung’ is used as an opprobrious name for idols (J. Lightfoot on Mt. xii. 24), and the application of the word to the prince of the unclean spirits points to the old belief in the connexion of idols with δαιμόνια: see note on Mc. i. 34. The form Βεεζεβούλ, given by B here and by ΚΒ in Mt. x. 25, xii. 24, Lc. xi. 15, 18, 19, is admitted by WH. into the text (*Notes*, p. 166); but it is difficult to regard it as anything but a phonetic corruption, perhaps a softening of the original word. With Βεελζ. ἔχει cf. Jo. vii. 20, where a similar charge comes from the ὄχλος at Jerusalem. Even of the Baptist some had said Δαιμόνιον ἔχει (Mt. xi. 18). The charge brought against our Lord was perhaps equivalent to that of using magic: see Hastings, iii. p. 211 a.

ἐν τῷ ἄρχοντι κτλ.] In the power and name of the chief of the unclean spirits: cf. Mt. xii. 28 ἐν πνεύματι θεοῦ, Lc. xi. 20 ἐν δακτύῳ θεοῦ. With ὁ ἄρχων τῶν δ. cf. ὁ τοῦ κόσμου ἄρχων (Jo. xiv. 30), ὁ ἄρχων τοῦ κόσμου

ἐκβάλλει τὰ δαιμόνια. <sup>23</sup>καὶ προσκαλεσάμενος αὐτοὺς 23  
ἐν παραβολαῖς ἔλεγεν αὐτοῖς Πῶς δύναται Σατανᾶς  
Σατανᾶν ἐκβάλλειν; <sup>24</sup>καὶ ἐὰν βασιλεία ἐφ' ἐαυτὴν 24

<sup>23</sup> αυτοῖς] + o κυριος Ιησους Da f g r + o Ιησους U 1071 b c (al)

τούτον (Jo. xvi. 11), ὁ ἄρχων τῆς ἔξουσίας τοῦ ἀρέπος (Eph. ii. 2). The authority is not denied, but limited to its proper sphere: ἐν ἐμοὶ οὐκ ἔχει οὐδέν (Jo. xiv. 30).

23. καὶ προσκαλεσάμενος αὐτούς] See on iii. 13. The remark of the Scribes, if made openly, was not audible to Jesus, but He knew their thoughts (Mt. Lc.): cf. ii. 8. He beckoned them to Him, and they came, little suspecting His purpose.

ἐν παραβολαῖς ἔλεγεν: in half-veiled, proverb-like teaching. Παραβολή, which occurs here for the first time, is the usual LXX. rendering of לְבָבֶךָ, cf. Num. xxiii. 7 ff. (ἀναλαβεῖν παραβολήν), 3 Regn. iv. 28 = v. 12 (ἐλάλησεν Σαλωμάν τρισχιλίας παραβολάς), Ps. lxxvii. (lxxviii.) 2 (ἀνοίξω ἐν παραβολαῖς τὸ στόμα μου, cited in Mt. xiii. 35); the other rendering being παρομία, which gives its Greek title to the Book Λύτρη. The Synoptists use the former in reference to the teaching of Jesus, St John (x. 6, xvi. 25, 29) the latter. A παραβολή is properly a comparison (Mc. iv. 30), and a kind of παράδειγμα (Arist. Rhet. ii. 20), an illustration drawn from life or nature. This meaning prevails in the Gospels, but the sense suggested by the Hebrew equivalent, a gnomic saying (cf. Prov. i. 6), shews itself occasionally, e.g. Lc. iv. 23; the present instance may be regarded as intermediate. A distinction between παρομία and παραβολή appears perhaps first in Sir. xlvi. 17, ἐν φόδαις καὶ παρομίαις καὶ παραβολαῖς (Heb. לְבָבֶךָ שִׁירַת פְּנֵי מִלְּפָנֵי יְהוָה, cf. Prov. i. 6). ‘Parable’ comes to us through the ‘European’

O.L. and Vg., and appears in Wycliffe: Tindale substituted ‘similitude’ (cf. *similitudo* of the ‘African’ O.L.), but the familiar word re-appears in Cranmer and A.V.

πῶς δύναται Σατανᾶς κτλ.] The Lord does not use Βεελζεβούλ, but the ordinary name for the Chief of the evil spirits; the occasion was too grave for banter. Only Mc. reports this saying, which goes to the heart of the matter. The Scribes’ explanation was morally impossible: the δαιμόνια could not be expelled through collusion with their Chief. For Σατανᾶς cf. note on i. 13. Σατανᾶν, i.e. τὰ δαιμόνια regarded as Satan’s representatives and instruments. The identification is instructive as throwing light on the manifoldness of Satanic agency. For the form of the question cf. Mt. xii. 29, 34, Lc. vi. 42, Jo. vi. 52.

24—25. καὶ ἐὰν βασιλεία κτλ.] The first καὶ seems to be merely a connecting link with v. 23: the two that follow (vv. 25, 26) coordinate the three cases of the divided kingdom, the divided house, and the divided Satan (WM., pp. 543, 547). For ἐφ’ ἐαυτὴν, ‘in relation to itself,’ Mt. substitutes the explanatory καθ’ ἐαυτῆς, returning however to ἐπί just afterwards (ἐφ’ ἐαυτόν). Οὐ δύναται σταθῆναι = ἐρημοῦται, Mt., Lc.; similarly for οὐ δυνήσεται στῆναι Lc. has πίπτει—both probably interpretations: cf. Burton, §§ 260, 262. For the phrase which Mc. uses cf. Ps. xvii. (xviii.) 39, xxxv. (xxxvi.) 13: the corresponding Heb. is בְּלֹא קִים יְכַל. If the difference between σταθῆναι and στῆναι is to be pressed in this

25 μερισθῆ, οὐ δύναται σταθῆναι ἡ βασιλεία ἐκείνη·<sup>25</sup> καὶ  
έὰν οἰκία ἐφ' ἑαυτὴν μερισθῆ, οὐ δυνήσεται ἡ οἰκία  
26 ἐκείνη στῆναι.<sup>26</sup> καὶ εἱ̄ ὁ σατανᾶς ἀνέστη ἐφ' ἑαυτὸν  
καὶ ἐμερίσθη, οὐ δύναται στῆναι ἀλλὰ τέλος ἔχει.  
εἰς τὴν οἰκίαν τοῦ §ισχυροῦ  
27 ἀλλ' οὐ δύναται οὐδεὶς εἰς τὴν οἰκίαν τοῦ §ισχυροῦ  
εἰσελθὼν τὰ σκεύη αὐτοῦ διαρπάσαι ἐὰν μὴ πρῶτον

25 δυνησεται NBCLD 1071 a i vg] δυναται ADGPISΦ al b c e f ff q syrr | στηναι BKLΠ] εσταναι D σταθηγαι ΙΑΕFGHMSUVΓΔΣΦ al 26 ει] εαν D | ανεστη εφ εαυτον] σαταναν εκβαλλει D a b c e ff g i q r | και εμερισθη ου Ιc.aBL] και μεμερισται ου AC<sup>2</sup>ΓΗΙΣΦ al syrr<sup>vid</sup> arm me go al εμερισθη και ου Ι\*C\*vidΔ f vg μεμερισται (-θαι D\*) εφ εαυτον ου D | στηναι NBCCL] σταθηγαι ADΓΔΠΦ al min<sup>omn</sup><sup>vid</sup>+η βασιλεια αυτου D a b g i q r | τελος] pr το D 27 αλλ] και C<sup>2</sup>vidG om ADGPISΦ al latt<sup>vtp</sup> vg syrr go | ου δυν. ουδεις NBC\*Δ] ουδεις δυναται ADLTΓΠΣΦ al latt syrr arm go | εις την οικ. του ισχ. εισελθ. τα σκ. (N)BCLΔ 33 1071 syrr<sup>sin pesh</sup> me aeth] τα σκ. του ισχ. εισελθ. εις τ. οικ. ADΓΠΣΦ al latt syr<sup>hel</sup> arm go τα σκ. του ισχ. G

place, it must lie in the fact that the body politic takes up and keeps a position (cf. Lc. xviii. 11, 40, xix. 8) whilst the building stands as an inert mass; but the use of *στῆναι* in the third clause is against this distinction. Jerome: "quomodo concordia parvae res crescunt, ita discordia maxima dilabuntur."

26. καὶ εἱ̄ ὁ σατανᾶς ἀνέστη...ἐμέρισθη] This clause might have run on the same lines as the other two (καὶ ἐὰν ὁ Σ. ἀναστῇ...καὶ μερισθῆ κτλ.), i.e., as involving a supposition which will probably be fulfilled (Burton, p. 250, cf. Blass, Gr. p. 214); but the three Synoptists agree in representing the action of Satan as a matter of fact: 'suppose Satan to have actually risen against himself...then he is at this moment in an unstable condition, his end has come.' 'Εμερίσθη, i.e. Satan in his corporate capacity, as representing the Kingdom of evil; cf. 1 Cor. i. 12, μεμέρισται ὁ χριστός.

ἀλλὰ τέλος ἔχει] Cf. Lc. xxii. 37. A phrase frequent in class. Gk. (cf. e.g. Plat. Legg. 717 E, τῶν ἥδη τέλος ἐχόντων = τῶν νεκρῶν). Mt., Lc. add here in almost identical words εἰ [δε]

ἔγὼ ἐν Βεελζεβούλ...ἄρα ἔφθασεν ἐφ' ὑψᾶς ἡ βασιλεία τοῦ θεοῦ.

27. ἀλλ' οὐ δύναται οὐδεὶς κτλ.] Another παραβολή. Mt. gives it in a form almost exactly the same as this; Lc. resets the picture. The connexion of thought is: 'so far from being in league with Satan, I am his conqueror, for he is too strong an οἰκοδεσπότης to witness with equanimity the spoiling of his goods.' Οἰσχυρός possibly hints at the claims of Satan as a usurper of Divine authority (cf. e.g. Mt. iv. 9, 2 Cor. iv. 4), since ισχυρός or ὁ ισχ. in the Lxx. frequently represents נַס or נְבָגֶת. The parable itself is based on Isa. xlix. 24, 25.

τὰ σκεύη αὐτοῦ] Lc. τὰ ὑπάρχοντα αὐτοῦ. Cf. Gen. xxxi. 37 (πάντα τὰ σκεύη τοῦ οἴκου μου), Lc. xvii. 31 (τὰ σκ. αὐτοῦ ἐν τῇ οἰκίᾳ), 2 Tim. ii. 20f.; how inclusive the word can be is seen from Acts x. 11, σκεύός τι ὡς ὀθόνην. For διαρπάσαι...διαρπάσει Mt. has ἀρπάσαι...διαρπάσει, as if the result were to be even more thorough than could have been anticipated; for διαρπάζειν cf. Gen. xxxiv. 27. Lc., who describes the Strong One as armed to

τὸν ἰσχυρὸν δῆσῃ, καὶ τότε τὴν οἰκίαν αὐτοῦ διαρπάσει. <sup>28</sup>ἀμὴν λέγω ὑμῖν ὅτι πάντα ἀφεθήσεται 28 τοῖς νιοῖς τῶν ἀνθρώπων, τὰ ἀμαρτήματα καὶ αἱ βλασphemίαι ὅσα ἔὰν βλασphemήσωσιν. <sup>29</sup>ὅς δὲ ἂν 29 ἣ i

<sup>27</sup> τὴν οἰκ. <sup>28]</sup> τα σκευη syr<sup>sinvid</sup> | διαρπασει] διαρπασει D διαρπαση AEFGKUV ΓΠ<sup>2ΣΤ</sup> <sup>28 αι βλασφ.] om αι DKMSUVΓΗ al | οσα ΝΒΔΕ\*ΓΗΔΙΙ\* al] οσας ACE<sup>1</sup>FKLMSUVΓΗ<sup>2ΣΦ</sup> 2<sup>re</sup> | om οσ. αν βλασφ. a b c e f g i q r Cypr<sup>2</sup> Ambrtr</sup>

the teeth (*καθωπλισμένος*), and keeping guard, mentions his *πανοπλία* and *σκῦλα* among his goods (*τὰ ὑπάρχοντα αὐτοῦ*): the picture seems to be amplified from Isa. l.c. (LXX.). In this fuller form of the parable three stages can be distinguished in the vanquishing of Satan: (1) a personal victory (*δῆση* Mc., *νικήσῃ* Lc., cf. Jo. xvi. 33, Apoc. iii. 21), (2) the disarming of the defeated *οἰκοδεσπότης*, (3) the spoiling (*διαρπάσει*) and distribution (*διαδίδωσιν*) of his ill-gotten gains (*σκῦλα*). Cf. Victor: ἐπειδὴ σκεύη τῶν δαιμόνων γεγόνασιν οἱ ἀνθρώποι...ἀδύνατον ἦν ἀφαιρεθῆναι τοὺς δαιμόνας τὴν οἰκείαν κτίσιν ἀλλ᾽ ἡ πρότερον αὐτῶν ἡττηθέντων. The initial victory was won at the Temptation.

Both Mt. and Lc. add here ὁ μὴ μετ' ἐμοῦ, κτλ.; see the complementary canon in Mc. ix. 40.

28. ἀμὴν λέγω ὑμῖν occurs here for the first time in Mc. (Mt.<sup>30</sup> Mc.<sup>13</sup> Lc.<sup>6</sup> Jo.<sup>26</sup>); in Jo. ἀμὴν is constantly doubled, cf. Num. v. 22 (Heb.), I Esdr. ix. 47 (B), 2 Esdr. xviii. 6 (Heb.). The adv. ΥΝ is rendered by γένοιτο in Deut. xxvii. 15 ff.: the transliteration ἀμὴν appears first in I Chron. xvi. 36. On the different uses of *Amen* in the O. and N. T., see an article in *J. Q. R.*, Oct. 1896. The *Amen* of the Gospels is what the writer in *J. Q. R.* calls “introductory,” i.e. it opens a sentence, as in I Kings i. 36, Jer. xi. 5, xxviii. 6 (Heb.); but it is sharply distinguished from the O. T. exx. inasmuch as it affirms what is to follow, not what

has just been said. The form ἀμὴν λέγω ὑμῖν is characteristic of Him who is ὁ Ἄμην (Apoc. iii. 14). Here Mt. has merely λέγω ὑμῖν, but the occasion suits the graver style. The logical victory is followed by the most solemn of His warnings.

πάντα ἀφεθήσεται κτλ.] See ii. 5 ff. There is one exception to the ἔξονσία of the Son of Man in the forgiveness of sins, which He proceeds to state. Τοῖς νιοῖς τῶν ἀνθρώπων = Mt. τοῖς ἀνθρώποις: for the phrase (= מִנְאָגֶן) see Dan. ii. 38 Th. (cf. LXX.), Eph. iii. 5; Log. 3; cf. Hawkins, *Hor. Syn.* p. 56. Τὰ ἀμαρτήματα, Mt. πᾶσα ἀμαρτία: ἀμάρτημα, which is fairly common in the LXX., is limited in the N. T. to this context and Paul<sup>2</sup> (Rom. iii. 25, I Cor. vi. 18); as distinguished from ἀμαρτία it is ‘an act of sin,’ whilst ἀμαρτία is strictly the principle (SH., *Romans*, p. 90); but the distinction is in the case of ἀμαρτία repeatedly overlooked. See note on next verse.

καὶ αἱ βλασphemίαι] They had charged Him with blasphemy (ii. 7), and were themselves grievous offenders in this way. But blasphemies against the Son of Man (Mt., Lc. xii. 10) formed no exception to His mission of forgiveness. “Οσα ἔὰν βλασphemήσωσιν — a *constratio ad sensum* (= ὅσας κτλ.); cf. Deut. iv. 2, v. 28 (WM., p. 176 n.); on ἔάν = ἄν see Burton, § 304.

29. ὃς δὲ ἂν βλασphemήσῃ κτλ.] Mt. ἡ δὲ τοῦ πνεύματος βλασphemία, Lc. τῷ δὲ εἰς τὸ ἄγιον πνεύμα βλασ-

¶ c βλασφημήσῃ εἰς τὸ πνεῦμα τὸ ἄγιον<sup>¶</sup>, οὐκ ἔχει ἀφεσιν εἰς τὸν αἰῶνα, ἀλλὰ ἐνοχός ἐστιν αἰωνίου ἀμαρτή-  
ζο ματος. 30 ὅτι ἐλεγον Πνεῦμα ἀκάθαρτον ἔχει.

29 om εἰς τὸν αἰῶνα D min<sup>pauc</sup> a b e f ff q vg Cypr<sup>2</sup> | εστιν ABCΓΠΦΤ al 1 69 al<sup>mu</sup> b  
syrr me go Ath Cypr<sup>1</sup>] εσται ΝDLΔΣ 33 al<sup>pauc</sup> a e f ff q vg arm Cypr<sup>test</sup> | αμαρτηματος  
ΝBLΔ 28 33 565 (αμαρτιας C<sup>\*vid</sup>D 13 69 346 Ath) latt<sup>pler</sup> syr<sup>sin</sup> me go Cypr<sup>2</sup>] κρισεως  
AC<sup>2</sup>ΓΠΣΦΤ al f tol syr<sup>pesh</sup> aeth 30 εχει] pr αυτον C εχειν D a b c e f ff g q

*φημήσαντι.* For *πνεῦμα ἄγιον* see Mc. i. 8, and for *τὸ πνεῦμα*, i. 10, 12; *τὸ πν.* *τὸ ἄγιον* occurs again in Mc. xiii. 11, Lc. ii. 26, iii. 22, Jo. xiv. 26, Acts i. 16, v. 32, &c., and in the LXX. Ps. l. (li.) 13, Isa. lxiii. 11 (דָּבָרְךָ יְהֹוָה, יְשִׁירָךְ). The repeated article brings the holiness of the Spirit into prominence (cf. Eph. iv. 30, 1 Thess. iv. 8, where see Lightfoot), contrasting it with the *ἀκάθαρσια* of the evil spirits. The charge *Βεελζεβούλ ἔχει* was directed in fact against the *πνεῦμα Ἰησοῦ* (Acts xvi. 7)—not the human spirit of the Son of Man, but the *πνεῦμα θεοῦ* (Mt. iii. 16) which pervaded and controlled it. For an early extension of this saying cf. *Didache* II.

οὐκ ἔχει ἀφεσιν κτλ.] To identify the Source of good with the impersonation of evil implies a moral disease for which the Incarnation itself provides no remedy; *ἀφεσις* avails only where the possibility of life remains. *Εἰς τὸν αἰῶνα* in the LXX.=**מָלֹעַ**, ‘in perpetuity’ (Exod. xxi. 6, xl. 13), or with a negative, ‘never more’ (2 Regn. xii. 10, Prov. vi. 33); in the N. T. it gains a wider meaning in view of the eternal relations which the Gospel reveals. ‘Ο αἰών is indeed the present world (=ο αἰών οὗτος, δένεστάς) in Mc. iv. 19, the future life being distinguished from it as αἰών δέ ψυχόμενος (Mc. x. 30); and *εἰς τὸν αἰῶνα* in Mc. xi. 14 is used in the narrower sense. In this place however it is interpreted by Mt. as inclusive of both *αἰώνες* (*οὐτε ἐν*

*τούτῳ τῷ αἰώνι οὐτε ἐν τῷ μέλλοντι*), and this interpretation is supported by the context in Mc.

ἀλλὰ ἐνοχός ἐστιν αἰωνίου ἀμαρτήματος] ‘But lies under the consequences of an act of sin which belongs to the sphere of the world to come’: Vg. *reus erit aeterni delicti* (Wycliffe, “gilty of euerlastynge trespasses”). *Ἐνοχός* is used in the N. T. with a dative of the person or body to whom one is responsible (*τῇ κρίσει, τῷ συνεδρίῳ*, Mt. v. 22), and a genitive of the penalty (e.g. *θανάτου* Mc. xiv. 64, *δονήσις* Heb. ii. 15), or of the offence (cf. 2 Macc. xiii. 6, *τὸν ἱεροσυλλας ἐνοχὸν*), or of that against which the offence is committed (*τὸν σώματος κροῦ αἴματος τὸν κυρίον*, 1 Cor. xi. 27). The man is in the grasp of his sin, which will not let him go without a Divine *ἀφεσις*, and to this sin, since it belongs to the eternal order, the power exercised by the Son of Man on earth does not apply. *Αἰώνιος* in the N. T. seems never to be limited to the present order, as it often is in the LXX. (cf. e.g. Gen. ix. 12, Lev. vi. 18 (11)), always reaching forward into the life beyond (as in the frequent phrase *ζωὴ αἰώνιος*) or running back into a measureless past (Rom. xvi. 25, 2 Tim. i. 9). On the *αἰώνιον ἀμάρτημα* see the interesting remarks of Origen, *de orat.* 27, *in Jo.* t. xix. 14, and comp. Heb. vi. 4 ff., 1 Jo. v. 16, with Bp Westcott’s notes. Bengel: “peccata humana sunt, sed blasphemia in Spiritum sanctum est peccatum satanicum.”

30. ὅτι ἐλεγον κτλ.] I.e., it was this suggestion which called forth the

<sup>31</sup> Καὶ ἔρχονται ἡ μήτηρ αὐτοῦ καὶ οἱ ἀδελφοὶ <sup>31</sup>  
αὐτοῦ, καὶ ἔξω στήκοντες ἀπέστειλαν πρὸς αὐτὸν  
καλοῦντες αὐτόν. <sup>32</sup> καὶ ἐκάθητο περὶ αὐτὸν ὁ χλος, <sup>32</sup> ¶ W<sup>h</sup>  
καὶ λέγουσιν αὐτῷ Ἰδοὺ ἡ μήτηρ σου καὶ οἱ ἀδελφοί  
σου ἔξω ζητοῦσίν σε. <sup>33</sup> καὶ ἀποκριθεὶς αὐτοῖς λέγει <sup>33</sup>  
Τίς ἔστιν ἡ μήτηρ μου καὶ οἱ ἀδελφοί; <sup>34</sup> καὶ περι- <sup>34</sup>

<sup>31</sup> καὶ ερχ. NBCDGLΔ i 13 69 1071 al<sup>pauc</sup> latt syr<sup>pesh</sup> me go aeth] ερχ. ουν  
ΑΓΠΣΦ<sup>7</sup> al syr<sup>hel</sup> (ερχεται ΝDG lat<sup>v<sup>6</sup></sup>) | οι αδ. (αυτ.) καὶ η μητηρ αυτου ΑΓΠ al min<sup>pler</sup>  
syr<sup>hel</sup> arm | στηκοντες BC\*Δ 28] σταντες Κεστηκοτες C<sup>o</sup>or<sup>gl</sup> min<sup>pauc</sup> εστωτες ΑΔΓΠΣΦ<sup>7</sup>  
al | καλουντες ΒCL i 13 28 69 al] φωνουντες ΔΓΠΣΦ<sup>7</sup> al ζητουντες Α. <sup>32</sup> περι  
αυτ. οχλος] προς αυτ. ο. Η\* προς τον οχλον Δ | οχλος]+πολυς 1071 και λεγουσιν] ειπον  
δε ΑΓΠΣΦ<sup>7</sup> al syr<sup>hel</sup> go | σου 2<sup>o</sup>] +και αι αδελφαι σου ΑΔΕΦΗΜΣΥΥΡ<sup>7</sup> min<sup>mu</sup>  
a b c f ff q syr<sup>hel(mg)</sup> go (om ΒCGKLΔΠ i 13 33 69 al<sup>nonn</sup> e vg syr<sup>pesh</sup> arm me aeth)  
33 απεκριθ...λεγων ΑΔΓΠΣΦ al | και 2<sup>o</sup>] η Α(D)ΕΦΗΚΜΣΓΙΣΦ<sup>7</sup> cef q r syr<sup>sin</sup> arm  
34 om και 1<sup>o</sup> B

Lord's utterance on the Eternal Sin.  
Mc. only; perhaps an editorial note.  
Jerome: "[Marcus] caussas tantae  
irae manifestius expressit."

31—35. THE ERRAND OF THE  
BROTHERS AND THE MOTHER OF  
JESUS, AND THE TEACHING BASED  
UPON IT (Mt. xii. 46—50, Lc. viii.  
19—21).

31. καὶ ἔρχονται ἡ μήτηρ κτλ.] See note on v. 21. Mt. explicitly connects this incident with the foregoing (*ἔτι αὐτοῦ λαλοῦντος*). The mother of Jesus does not appear again in Mc., but is mentioned in vi. 3 (οἱ γιδοὶ τῆς Μαρίας) in company with the brothers; see notes on vi. 3 and comp. Acts i. 14.

ἔξω στήκοντες] On στήκω see WH., Notes, p. 169. Mt. ιστήκεισαν ἔξω. They were crowded out, as in the case of the paralytic, ii. 4; cf. Lc. οὐκ ἤδύναντο συντυχεῖν αὐτῷ διὰ τὸν όχλον. Naturally they were unwilling to disclose their errand (iii. 21), and therefore contented themselves with asking for an interview. Καλοῦντες: on the reading see Nestle, T. C., p. 263.

32. καὶ ἐκάθητο περὶ αὐτὸν ὁ χλος] The scene is similar to that in c. ii. 1 ff., but the Scribes seem to have left, and the Lord is surrounded by a

crowd of friends (not ὁ όχλος), amongst whom the Apostles and other μαθηταί form an inner circle (v. 34). The message is passed from one to another till it reaches Jesus.

ἰδού ἡ μήτηρ κτλ.] The addition καὶ αἱ ἀδελφαὶ σου is "Western and probably Syrian" (WH., Notes, p. 24). The sisters of Jesus are mentioned in vi. 3 as living at Nazareth (ῳδε πρὸς ἡμᾶς). But they would scarcely have taken part in a mission of this nature, and the addition was probably suggested by vi. 3 or by ἀδελφή in v. 35.

33. καὶ ἀποκριθεὶς αὐτοῖς λέγει] Not to His relatives who are still without, but τῷ λέγοντι αὐτῷ (Mt.), and through His informant to the audience. The interruption affords, as so often, an opportunity for fresh teaching; it is instruction and not censure which is the purpose of the Lord's answer. Ἀποκριθεὶς is the later Gk. for ἀποκρινάμενος (Blass, Gr., pp. 44, 177); so LXX. and N.T.; ἀπεκρίνατο appears however in Mc. xiv. 61, and a few other passages. The phrase ἀποκριθεὶς λέγει or εἶπεν is a LXX. equivalent for γράψῃ ψη (Gen. xviii. 27, &c.).

τίς ἔστιν ἡ μήτηρ μου κτλ.] This

¶ Γ βλεψάμενος τοὺς περὶ αὐτὸν κύκλῳ καθημένους λέγει  
 35 Ἰδε ἡ μήτηρ μου καὶ οἱ ἀδελφοί μου. ὁ δὲ ἀν ποιήσῃ  
 τὸ θέλημα τοῦ θεοῦ, οὗτος ἀδελφός μου καὶ ἀδελφὴ  
 καὶ μήτηρ ἔστιν.

34 περιβλ. κυκλω τ. π. αυτον ΑΓΠΣΦΤ alpler syr<sup>hcl</sup> (arm) go περιβλ. τους κυκλω D |  
 ομ κυκλω 16 61 syrr<sup>sin pesh(vid)</sup> | ιδον ADGKMDΠΣ 1 13 al | μου 2<sup>o</sup>] + οντοι εισιν 1071  
 35 os av B b c me] os γαρ av ΝACDLΔΠΣΦΤ al min<sup>omnivid</sup> f ff q vg syrr arm go | τα  
 θεληματα B | αδελφη] + μου CΠΦΤ min<sup>pauc</sup> a vg syrr me aeth | μητηρ] + μου H\* al<sup>mu</sup>  
 a (l) syrr<sup>sin pesh</sup> me al

relative renunciation of kinship appears at the outset of the Ministry (Jo. ii. 4) and continues to the end (Jo. xix. 26), and a similar attitude is urged upon the disciples (Mc. x. 29). But it is a relative attitude only (Mt. x. 37), and is perfectly consistent with tender care for kinsmen, as the saying on the Cross shews: cf. 1 Tim. v. 4, 8. Victor: δείκνυσιν δτι πάσης προτιμᾶ συγγενείας τοὺς κατὰ τὴν πίστιν οἰκείους· ταῦτα δὲ ἔφη οὐδὲ ἀποδοκιμάζων πάντως τὴν μητέρα καὶ τοὺς ἀδελφούς. Ambrose: "neque tamen iniuriose refutantur parentes, sed religiosiores copulae mentium docentur esse quam corporum." At the present moment the relatives of Jesus were forfeiting their claim to consideration by opposing His work (Mt. x. 35). Here again His knowledge of the unspoken purposes of men appears; for He could hardly have been informed of the nature of their errand.

34. περιβλεψάμενος τοὺς περὶ αὐτὸν] For περιβλ. cf. note on iii. 5. Who those round Him were appears from Mt., ἐκτείνας τὴν χεῖρα αὐτοῦ ἐπὶ τοὺς μαθητὰς αὐτοῦ. Stretching forth the hand was another characteristic movement (Mc. i. 41), which may well have accompanied the searching and inclusive glance. Οἱ μαθηταὶ need not be limited to the Apostles: cf. Lc. vi. 17.

ἴδε ἡ μήτηρ] Cf. v. 32, ίδον ἡ μ. On the difference between ίδον and ίδε see WM., p. 319. Both are re-

garded as interjections (*en, ecce*), and not as verbs.

35. ὁ δὲ ἀν ποιήσῃ τὸ θέλημα τοῦ θεοῦ] Mt. τοῦ πατρός μου τοῦ ἐν οὐρανοῖς (perhaps a reminiscence of the Lord's Prayer); Lc. interprets the phrase οἱ τὸν λόγον τοῦ θεοῦ ἀκούοντες καὶ ποιοῦντες—the particular fulfilment of the Father's Will in which those who were present were then engaged. The bond which unites the family of God is obedience to the Divine Will. This was the end of the life of the Incarnate Son (Jo. v. 30, &c., Mt. xxvi. 42), and is the aim of the adopted children (Mt. vi. 10, vii. 21). Τὸ θέλημα became a recognised term (SH. on Rom. ii. 18); τὰ θελήματα (B) is an O. T. equivalent (Chase, *Lord's Prayer*, p. 39 f.).

καὶ ἀδελφῆ] So Mt. also. See v. 31. The word would have its fitness in the teaching even if the sisters were not among the relatives without; doubtless the ὄχλος contained women as well as men who were attached followers: cf. Lc. viii. 2, 3, Mc. xv. 40. Our Lord, however, characteristically lays stress on the works which reveal faith and are the truest note of His next of kin.

καὶ μήτηρ] Jerome: "isti sunt mater mea qui me quotidie in credentium animis generant." But the form of the sentence (οἱ δὲ ποιήσῃ...οὗτος ἀδελφὸς...καὶ μήτηρ) seems to forbid this mysticism in details. Hilary's interpretation is truer to the text:

<sup>1</sup> Καὶ πάλιν ἤρξατο διδάσκειν παρὰ τὴν θάλασσαν. <sup>1</sup> IV.  
 καὶ συνάγεται πρὸς αὐτὸν ὄχλος πλεῖστος, ὥστε  
 αὐτὸν εἰς πλοῖον ἐμβάντα καθῆσθαι ἐν τῇ θαλάσσῃ,  
 καὶ πᾶς ὁ ὄχλος πρὸς τὴν θάλασσαν ἐπὶ τῆς γῆς  
 ἦσαν. <sup>2</sup> καὶ ἐδίδασκεν αὐτοὺς ἐν παραβολαῖς πολλά, <sup>2</sup>  
 καὶ ἔλεγεν αὐτοῖς ἐν τῇ διδαχῇ αὐτοῦ <sup>3</sup> Ἀκούετε. <sup>3</sup>

IV 1 παρὰ] πρὸς D [ συναγέται ΒCLΔ 13 28 69 124 604] συνηχθη ΔΠΣΦ<sup>1</sup> al min<sup>pler</sup> latt syrr<sup>sin hel</sup> συνηχθησαν A 2<sup>pe</sup> al sat mu syrr<sup>pesh</sup> go arm aeth | οχλος] ο λαος D | πλειστος ΒCLΔ] πολυς ADΠΣΦ<sup>1</sup> min forte omni | πλοιον Β<sup>\*</sup>CKLMΠΣΦ<sup>1</sup> 1 33 al go] pr το ΑΒ<sup>2</sup>ΔΔ al min<sup>pler</sup> me | εν τη θαλ.] περαν της θαλασσης D παρα την θαλ. 131 circa mare d circa litus (maris), ad l., a b c proxime l. e ff | προς την θαλασσαν] περαν της θαλασσης D | om επι της γης D lat<sup>vt</sup> syrr<sup>sin</sup> | ην επι της γης 1071 2 πολλαις D 3 ακουσατε C 2<sup>pe</sup> al pauc

"respondit...quicunque voluntati paternae obsecutus est, eum esse et patrem et sororem et matrem...propinquitatum omnium ius atque nomen iam non de conditione nascendi sed de ecclesiae communione retinendum." He justly adds: "ceterum non fastidiose de matre sua sensisse existimandus est, cui in passione positus maximae sollicitudinis tribuerit affectionem."

#### IV. 1—9. TEACHING BY PARABLES. THE PARABLE OF THE SOWER. (Mt. xiii. 1—9, Lc. viii. 4—8.)

1. καὶ πάλιν κτλ.] Πάλιν (see on ii. 1) looks back to ii. 13, iii. 7. Mt. places this new teaching by the sea immediately after the indoor scene of iii. 31—35 (xiii. 1, ἐν τῇ ἡμέρᾳ ἐκείνῃ ἔξειθων ὁ Ἰ. τῆς οἰκίας); in Lc. this order is inverted. For παρὰ τὴν θάλ. see ii. 13.

καὶ συνάγεται] The pres. (Burton, § 14) places the scene before us, the crowds flocking together as the Lord begins to speak. The gathering was even greater than on former occasions—ὄχλος πλεῖστος: cf. πολὺ πλῆθος iii. 7, 8. Mt. and Lc. are less precise (ὄχλοι πολλοί, ὄχλον πολλοῦ), but Lc. adds καὶ τῶν κατὰ πόλιν ἐπιπορεομένων, i.e. the audience came from the other towns as well as from Caper-naum.

ώστε αὐτόν κτλ.] He was seated at first on the beach (Mt. xiii. 1), but when He saw the crowd hurrying down, He took refuge in a boat (cf. iii. 9)—possibly Simon's (Lc. v. 3), but if so, no stress is laid upon the fact, for πλοῖον is anarthrous in the best text of Mc. and Mt. "The whole multitude" (all were by this time assembled) stood (ἦσαν = ιστήκει, Mt.) on the land facing (πρὸς, WM., p. 504) the sea, the sloping beach (Mc.) forming a theatre from which He could be seen and heard by all. Thph. ἵνα κατὰ πρόσωπον ἔχων πάντας ἐν ἐπηκόῳ πάντων λέγοι. Cf. Victor: κάθηται ἐν τῷ πλοίῳ ἀλιεύων καὶ σαγνεύων τοὺς ἐν τῇ γῇ.

2. καὶ ἐδίδασκεν κτλ.] He began a series of parables; ἐν παραβολαῖς πολλά, i.e. as D rightly interprets, παραβολαῖς πολλαῖς. Mt.'s aor. (ἐλάλησεν) is less exact, while Lc., who limits himself here to the Parable of the Sower, has nothing to mark the commencement of a new course of teaching (εἰπεν διὰ παραβολῆς). On παραβολή see iii. 23 note. Ἐν τῇ διδ. αὐτοῦ, in the course of His teaching, =ἐν τῷ διδάσκειν αὐτόν (cf. xii. 38).

3. ἀκούετε] A characteristic summons to attend—"ad sedandum populi strepitum" (Bengel); cf. Mt. xv. 10, xxi. 33, Mc. vii. 14. It finds its

§ i 4 ἰδού ἐξῆλθεν ὁ σπείρων σπεῖραι· §<sup>4</sup> καὶ ἐγένετο ἐν τῷ  
σπείρειν<sup>¶</sup> ὁ μὲν ἔπεσεν παρὰ τὴν ὁδόν, καὶ ἥλθεν τὰ  
§ e 5 πετεινὰ καὶ κατέφαγεν αὐτό. §<sup>5</sup> καὶ ἄλλο ἔπεσεν ἐπὶ<sup>¶</sup>  
τὸ πετρῶδες [καὶ] ὅπου οὐκ εἶχεν γῆν πολλήν, καὶ

3 σπείραι Ν<sup>\*</sup>ΒΤ seminare a b c d e ff g] pr τοῦ Ν<sup>c.a</sup>ACLΔΠΣΦ ad seminandum f vg  
+ τοῦ σποροῦ αὐτοῦ F min<sup>nominative</sup> go om σπείραι D 4 om εγένετο DF min<sup>participle</sup> latt  
(exc a) syr<sup>sin pesh</sup> | σπείραι D | τα πετεινα]+ τοῦ ουρανοῦ DGM min<sup>nominative</sup> a iq 5 αλλα  
D 33 2<sup>pe</sup> alpauc | τα πετρώδη Ν<sup>\*</sup> (το πετρώδες Ν<sup>c.a</sup>) D 1 33 2<sup>pe</sup> alpauc lattpler | καὶ οπου  
B a<sup>vivid</sup>] καὶ οτι D b c ff οπου rell

prototype in the famous γρῦ of Deut. vi. 4 (Mc. xii. 29): but see also Gen. xxiii. 5, 13, Jud. v. 3, I Regn. xxii. 7, 12, &c. Mt., Lc., omit it here; Lc. omits also the ἰδού which follows and strengthens the call (cf. iii. 32).

ἐξῆλθεν ὁ σπείρων σπεῖραι] 'Ο σπ. (so also Mt., Lc.), the sower (see on i. 4), i.e. the particular sower contemplated in the parable, the representative of his class (WM., p. 132). Σπεῖραι = τοῦ σπείρεω (Mt.), τοῦ σπεῖραι (Lc.), the inf. of purpose which may be used with or without the article (Burton, §§ 366, 397): both uses occur together in Lc. ii. 23, 24: παραστῆσαι...καὶ τοῦ δούναι.

4. καὶ ἐγένετο κτλ.] The pleonastic καὶ ἐγέν. (cf. i. 9) is abandoned by Mt., Lc. 'Ἐν τῷ σπείρειν, in the process of sowing: the article points back to σπεῖραι, whilst the change of tense brings into view the succession of acts which constitutes the sowing. In σπεῖραι the whole is gathered up in a single purpose; it is ἐν τῷ σπείρειν, as the sower carries out his purpose, that the things happen which are about to be related. This delicate train of thought is lost in Mt.

4 ff. ὁ μέν...καὶ ἄλλο...καὶ ἄλλο...καὶ ἄλλα] Mt. ἀ μέν...ἄλλα δέ...ἄλλα δέ...ἄλλα δέ: Lc. ὁ μέν...καὶ ἔτερον...καὶ ἔτερον...καὶ ἔτερον. Cf. WM., p. 130. Some part of the seed (ὁ μέν), i.e. some seeds (ἀ μέν), fell by the side of the road (*παρά*, Mt. Mc. Lc.; WM.,

p. 502); not of course that the sower deliberately sowed the pathway, but that he partly missed his aim, as in such rapid work must needs happen; or he had not time to distinguish nicely between the pathway and the rest of the field. Cf. Victor: οὐκ εἰπεν ὅτι αὐτὸς ἐρριψεν, ἀλλ' ὅτε ἔπεσεν.

καὶ ἥλθεν κτλ.] Lc. καὶ κατεπατήθη καὶ...κατέφαγον αὐτό. But in the interpretation he adds nothing to correspond to this new feature, which has possibly been suggested by the mention of ὁδός. The birds would be on the spot immediately and leave little for the passers by to spoil; moreover the point of the illustration is that the seed, if unable to penetrate the soil, will presently be stolen away. For καταφαγῆν, comedere, used in reference to the clean sweep which birds make of food, see Gen. xl. 17, 3 Regn. xii. 24, xiv. 11 (cod. A), xvi. 4, xx. 24 (cod. A).

5. 'And another (portion) fell upon the rocky (part of the field)': τὸ πετρῶδες = Mt. τὰ πετρώδη, Lc. (less precisely) τὴν πέτραν. Πετρώδης does not occur in the LXX, or in the N.T. except in this context (Mt., Mc.), but it is used in good Greek (Soph., Plat., Arist.); the word implies not a stone-strewn surface, as the English versions except R. V. suggest, but rock thinly coated with soil and here and there cropping up through the earth—a characteristic feature in the cornlands

εὐθὺς ἐξανέτειλεν διὰ τὸ μὴ ἔχειν βάθος γῆς· ἕκαὶ 6  
ὅτε ἀνέτειλεν ὁ ἥλιος ἐκαυματίσθη, καὶ διὰ τὸ μὴ  
ἔχειν ρίζαν ἐξηράνθη. 7 καὶ ἄλλο ἐπεσεν εἰς τὰς 7  
ἀκάνθας, καὶ ἀνέβησαν αἱ ἀκανθαὶ καὶ συνέπνιξαν

5 εξανετειλεν] εξεβλαστησεν 1 13 28 118 124 346 604 | γης] της γης Β την γην D  
6 και οτε ανετ. ο ηλιος ΙΒCDΛΔ 1071 ff i q vg me] ηλιου δε ανατειλαντος ΑΠΣΦ al  
min<sup>forteomin</sup> a c f | εκαυματισθη ΙΑCLΔΠΣΦ] εκαυματισθησαν BD a e | εξηρανθησαν  
D (604) e 7 αλλος Ι\* αλλα ΙC<sup>a</sup> 28 33 al<sup>pauc</sup> e | eis ΙΑBLΔΠΣΦ al min<sup>pl</sup> latt<sup>pl</sup>  
επι CDM<sup>2</sup> 33 604 2<sup>pe</sup> al<sup>nonn</sup> b me | απεπνιξαν 33 604 al<sup>nonn</sup>

of Galilee, still to be noted by the traveller among the hills which slope down to the Lake. Καὶ ὅπου κτλ. Καὶ if genuine is probably epexegetic (WM., p. 545 f.); Mt. omits it without detriment to the sense. The πετρῶδες was that part of the ground where the earth was shallow.

καὶ εὐθὺς ἐξανέτειλεν κτλ.] Mt. here agrees with Mc. almost *verbatim*; Lc. compresses greatly (καὶ φνέν). Ἐξανατέλλω in the LXX is trans., see Gen. ii. 9, Ps. cxlvii. (cxlvii.) 8, but ἀνατέλλω is used transitively of vegetable growth (Gen. iii. 18, cf. Is. lxi. 11). Nearness to the warm surface induced rapid growth, but it also led to the shortening of the young plant's life. Βάθος γῆς: Syr.<sup>sin.</sup> adds 'below its root.' The reading of D, 'because the earth had no depth,' does not suit the context so well; both in οὐκ εἶχεν (v. 5) and διὰ τὸ μὴ ἔχειν (2<sup>o</sup>, v. 6) it is the seed which is the subject of the verb.

6. καὶ ὅτε ἀνέτειλεν κτλ.] In Mc.'s simpler style καὶ merely adds a fresh particular, without regard to the logical connexion. Here there is in fact a contrast (cf. Mt. ηλίου δὲ ἀνατειλαντος). The plant grew rapidly in the warm Eastern night (comp. Jon. iv. 10, ἐγενήθη ὑπὸ νύκτα), but as soon as the sun grew hot it languished and withered. Ἐκαυματίσθη is a word of the later Greek (Plutarch, &c.), not used in the LXX, but occurring again in Apoc. xvi. 8, 9:

'it felt the burning heat' (*καῦμα*), was scorched; Latt., *aestuavit*, *ex-aestuavit*. The same illustration occurs in James i. 11, ἀνέτειλεν γὰρ ὁ ἥλιος σὺν τῷ καύσων καὶ ἐξήρανεν τὸν χόρτον. See also Mc. xi. 20, 21, Jo. xv. 6, 1 Pet. i. 24 (Isa. xl. 7). In this case the withering is due to the very cause which led to rapid growth—the shallowness of the soil which did not permit the plant to develop its roots. For διὰ τὸ μὴ ἔχειν ρίζαν Lc. has the remarkable variant διὰ τὸ μὴ οὐκάραδα. Cf. Jer. xvii. 8, ἐπὶ ικμάδα βαλεῖ ρίζαν αὐτὸν· οὐ φοβηθήσεται ὅταν ἔλθῃ καῦμα—a passage which may have suggested the Lucan gloss, if it be such.

7. καὶ ἄλλο ἐπεσεν εἰς τὰς ἀκάνθας] 'And another (portion) fell into the thorns.' Mt. ἐπὶ τὰς ἀκ., Lc. ἐν μέσῳ τῶν ἀκανθῶν: when the clause is repeated in the interpretation (Mt. xiii. 22, Lc. viii. 14), both agree with Mc. Cf. Lc. x. 36, τοῦ ἐμπεσόντος εἰς τοὺς λγοτάς (30, λγοτάις περιέπεσεν).

ἀνέβησαν αἱ ἀκανθαὶ] Lc. συνφυεῖσαι. Mc.'s word, retained by Mt., is more fully descriptive of the process: the thorns not only grew with the wheat, but grew faster and higher. For ἀναβαίνειν (= Π<sup>τ</sup>ην) 'to mount up,' used of vegetation, see Gen. xli. 5, Deut. xxix. 23 (22), especially Isa. v. 6, xxxii. 13.

συνέπνιξαν] Mt., Lc. ἀπεπνιξαν: in the interpretation all have συνπνίγειν; the Latin versions use *suffocare* with-

τε 8 αὐτό, καὶ καρπὸν οὐκ ἔδωκεν. <sup>8</sup>καὶ ἄλλα ἐπεσεν<sup>¶</sup> εἰς τὴν γῆν τὴν καλήν, καὶ ἐδίδον καρπόν, ἀναβαίνοντα καὶ αὐξανόμενα· καὶ ἐφερεν εἰς τριάκοντα καὶ εἰς

8 αλλα Ν<sup>\*c,b</sup>BCL 28 33 124 e] αλλο Ν<sup>c,a</sup>ΑΔΔΠΣΦ al min<sup>pl</sup> latt<sup>pl</sup> | εις 10] επι ΣΣ 1 28 118 124 a b | αυξανομενα ΝΒ 1071] αυξανομενον ΑCDΛΔ 238 αυξανοντα ΠΣΦ al min<sup>fereomn</sup> | φερει D 124 604 2<sup>10e</sup> | εις 2<sup>o</sup>, 3<sup>o</sup>, 4<sup>o</sup> ΝC\*Δ 28 604 2<sup>10e</sup> al<sup>panic</sup>] εις...εν...εν BL (εις, εν bis L) εις...και...και εν 1071 εν ter AC<sup>2</sup>DEFGHJKLMUVΠΣΦ min<sup>permu</sup> εν ter latt<sup>pler</sup> syr<sup>pesh</sup> vid

out distinction. Συνπν. suits Mc.'s context best, for he adds καὶ καρπὸν οὐκ ἔδωκεν, which Mt., Lc. omit. The thorns, crowding round the wheat and keeping off light and air, effectively prevented the yielding of fruit, and ultimately (but this is not the point on which Mc. dwells) killed it off. For the distinction between ἀποπν., συνπν., comp. Lc. viii. 33, 42; and for the use of συνπν. in reference to plants, Theophrast. plant. vi. 11. 6, δένδρα συμπνιγόμενα. Καρπὸν οὐκ ἔδωκεν : καρπὸν φέρειν, ποιεῖν are more usual phrases; but cf. Mt. xiii. 8, and see next note.

8. καὶ ἄλλα ἐπεσεν εἰς τὴν γῆν τὴν καλήν] ‘And other (seeds) fell into the good soil.’ Wycliffe, “in to good lond.” Mt. ἐπὶ τ. γ. τ. καλήν, Lc. εἰς τ. γ. τ. ἀγαθήν. Καλήν calls attention to that which met the eye; ἀγαθήν to the nature and condition of the soil. The repetition of the article (τὴν γ. τὴν κ., not τὴν κ. γ.) gives prominence to the adjective: the seeds now in view not merely fell into the ground (in contrast with those which fell εἰς ἀκάνθας or ἐπὶ τὸ πετρώδες), but into ground specifically good: cf. Jo. x. 11, 14, ὁ ποιμῆν ὁ καλός. Blass, Gr. p. 158. Ἐδίδον...ἐφερεν, a continuous process, contrasted with ἐπεσεν. Διδόναι καρπόν (רָבַתִּים, Ps. i. 3) includes the formation of the wheat ear, which under the circumstances would be concurrent with the growth of the young wheat (ἀναβαίνοντα καὶ αὐξανόμενα). For ἀνα-

βαίνειν, now applied to the wheat, see on v. 7 and reff. there; the Vg., following the reading αὐξανόμενον, wrongly interprets it of the ear (*fructum ascendente et crescente*) and so the English versions except R.V. With αὐξανόμενα compare Col. i. 6, 10, and for φέρειν (καρπόν) see Jo. xii. 24, xv. 2 ff.

εἰς τριάκοντα κτλ.] The text here is embarrassing. Of the possible readings (εις...εις...εις: ἐν...ἐν...ἐν: ἐν...ἐν...ἐν: εις...ἐν...ἐν) the last is perhaps the best supported, and has been adopted by W.H.; but the change of preposition is meaningless and intolerably harsh, and it has the appearance of being due to a partial assimilation of v. 8 to v. 20. Εἰς (ἐν) answers to ἡ ‘at the rate of,’ cf. BDB., p. 90; Harcl. represents it by —. If we read εΝ ter, there is something to be said for printing it ἐν: the triple εις occurs in I Regn. x. 3, and elsewhere, and ἐν will accord here with Mt.'s ὁ μέν, ὁ δέ...ὁ δέ. The Vg. has *unum* both here and in v. 20; hence Wycliffe, “oon thritty fold,” &c.

τριάκοντα...ἔξηκοντα...ἔκατόν] Even the highest rate of increase named here is not extravagant: cf. Gen. xxvi. 12, εὑρεν...ἔκατοστεύουσαν κριθήν, and see Wetstein and J. Lightfoot ad l. The fertility of Esraelon and of the volcanic soil of the Hauran was prodigious, and there were rich cornfields about the Lake which may have justified these figures: cf. G. A. Smith, *H. G.* pp. 83, 439 ff., 612; Merrill, *Galilee*, p. 20 ff.

ἐξήκοντα καὶ εἰς ἑκατόν. ἐκαὶ ἐλεγεν ὁ οὐχεὶ ὥτα 9  
ἀκούειν ἀκούέτω.

<sup>10</sup> Καὶ ὅτε ἐγένετο κατὰ μόνας, ἡρώτων αὐτὸν οἱ ΙΟ  
περὶ αὐτὸν σὺν τοῖς δώδεκα τὰς παραβολάς. <sup>11</sup> καὶ ΙΙ  
ἐλεγεν αὐτοῖς Ὅμην τὸ μυστήριον δέδοται τῆς βασι-

9 ος εχει NBC\*DΔ] o εχων Nc.aAC<sup>2</sup>LΠΣΦ al min<sup>forteonn</sup> | ακονετω]+και o συνιων συνιετω D a b ff i syr<sup>hel(mg)</sup> 10 ηρωτων (vel -τουν) ΝABCΔΦ 33] ηρωτησαν ΠΣ al min<sup>pl</sup> c f ff vg επηρωτων D επηρωτησαν 604 | οι π. α. σ. τ. δωδεκα] οι μαθηται αυτου D 13 28 69 124 346 2<sup>ρο</sup> a b c ff g i q syr<sup>sin</sup> Or<sup>int</sup> | τας παραβολας] την παρα-  
βολην ΑΠΣ al min<sup>pl</sup> syr<sup>pesh</sup> go aeth τις η παραβολη αυτη D 13 28 69 124 346 2<sup>ρο</sup>  
a b c f ff g i l q Or<sup>int</sup> φρασον ημιν την παραβολην Φ 11 το μυστηριον δεδοται  
NBC\*vidL] δεδ. το μ. ΑΚΠ al min<sup>pauw</sup> (syr<sup>sin</sup>) δ. γνωναι το μ. C<sup>2</sup>ΔΔ al min<sup>pl</sup> lattvtplyg  
syrr<sup>pesh</sup> hier aeth δ. γν. τα μυστηρια GΣΦ min<sup>nonn</sup> syr<sup>hel</sup> arm

9. ὁς εχει ὥτα κτλ.] The parable ends as it began with a solemn call to attention; the picture might easily be regarded as a pleasant picture and no more. With one exception (Apoc. xiii. 9) the present formula is found only in contexts ascribed to our Lord (Mt. xi. 15, xiii. 9 [=Mc. iv. 9], 43, Mc. iv. 23, Lc. xiv. 35, Apoc. ii. 7, ΙΙ, 17, 29, iii. 6, 13, 22). The forms vary slightly; besides that which is given in the text we have εἰ τις εχει ὥτα ἀκούειν ἀκούέτω (Mc. iv. 23), ὁ εχων ὥτα ἀκούειν (Mt.), ὁ εχων ὥτα ἀκούειν ἀκούέτω (Lc.), ὁ εχων ουσις ἀκουσάτω (Apoc. ii., iii.) and εἰ τις εχει ουσις ἀκουσάτω (Apoc. xiii. 9). For the inf. after εχει see Blass, *Gr.*, p. 226. For the idea cf. Deut. xxix. 3 (LXX., 4), Isa. vi. 10, Ezek. iii. 27. Wetstein (on Mt. xi. 15) quotes from Philo the phrase ἀκοὰς (or ὥτα) εχειν ἐν τῇ ψυχῇ. Cf. Euth., ὥτα νοητά. Some Gnostic sects saw in these words an encouragement to find in the Parable of the Sower mysteries which the Church did not recognise; cf. Hippol. *haer.* v. 8, *τοντέστι*, *φησίν*, οὐδεὶς *τούτων* τῶν μυστηρίων ἀκροατὴς γέγονεν εἰ μὴ μόνοι οἱ γνωστικοὶ τελειοι. Cf. viii. 9, διὰ τοῦτο εἴρηκε... Ὁ εχων κτλ., διτι ταῦτα οὐκ εἴστι πάντων ἀκούσ-  
ματα.

10—12. REASONS FOR THE USE OF PARABLES (Mt. xiii. 10—15, Lc. viii. 9—10).

10. ὅτε ἐγένετο κατὰ μόνας] Probably when the public teaching of the day was over. Κατὰ μόνας (frequently used in LXX. for **τις**), Vg. *singularis*, is relative only: He was apart from the multitude, but the Twelve and other disciples (οἱ περὶ αὐτὸν σὺν τοῖς δ.) shared His solitude; cf. Lc. ix. 18, ἐν τῷ εἶναι αὐτὸν προσευχόμενον κατὰ μόνας συνῆσαν αὐτῷ οἱ μαθηταί. The succinct ἡρώτων αὐτὸν...τὰς παρα-  
βολάς (WM., p. 284) is expanded by Mt. (διὰ τί ἐν παραβολαῖς λαλεῖς αὐτοῖς;) and Lc. (τίς αὗτη εἴη ἡ παρα-  
βολή;) : the latter narrows the enquiry to the particular parable, but, as the answer shews, it raised the whole question of parabolic teaching.

11. Ὅμην τὸ μυστήριον δέδοται] The variations in the other Synoptists are instructive (ὑμῖν δ. γνῶναι τὰ μυσ-  
τήρια Mt. Lc.). Γνῶναι interprets δέδοται, but like other interpretations of Christ's words, does not exhaust its sense. The mystery was given to the disciples, and the knowledge of it followed in due time; but the gift was more than knowledge, and even independent of it. Μυστήριον occurs here only in the Gospels; its later use in

λείας τοῦ θεοῦ, ἐκείνοις δὲ τοῖς ἔξω ἐν παραβολαῖς  
12 τὰ πάντα γίνεται· <sup>12</sup>ίνα βλέποντες βλέπωσι καὶ μὴ  
ἰδωσιν, καὶ ἀκούοντες ἀκούωσι καὶ μὴ συνίωσιν, μή  
ποτε ἐπιστρέψωσιν καὶ ἀφεθῆ αὐτοῖς.

II τ. εξωθεν B [τα παντα] om τα ΝDKII 28 124 2<sup>ρ</sup> al<sup>paue</sup> | γινεται] λεγεται DΣ  
28 64 124 2<sup>ρ</sup> abc<sup>ff</sup>giq 12 βλεπωσιν (βλεψ. 1071)] pr μη E\*FGΗΔ min<sup>paue</sup>  
syr<sup>sin</sup> Or | om μη ιδωσιν Δ syr<sup>sin</sup> Or<sup>bis</sup> | ακουωσιν (-σωσιν CM 33 69 124 al<sup>paue</sup>)] pr  
μη Δ | συνωσιν D\*L al min<sup>paue</sup> Or<sup>cod bis</sup> | επιστραφωσι 604 | αφεθη NBCDLΔΣΦ al  
min<sup>pl</sup> Or<sup>1</sup>] αφεθησεται AKII min<sup>paue</sup> αφεθησομαι D\* αφησω D<sup>b</sup> (dimittam d (ff) g i q r) |  
αυτοις]+τα αμαρτηματα (αντων) AD(Δ)ΠΦ (604) latt<sup>tp1v5</sup> me (syrr<sup>sin pesh</sup>) +τα παρα-  
πτωματα Σ min<sup>paue</sup>

the N.T. is limited to Paul<sup>(21)</sup> and Apoc.<sup>(4)</sup>. The LXX. employ it in Daniel<sup>(8)</sup> (for Υ, a secret of state), Tob.<sup>(1)</sup>, Judith<sup>(1)</sup>, Sap.<sup>(4)</sup>, Sir.<sup>(4)</sup>, 2 Macc.<sup>(1)</sup>; in Daniel ii. 28 ff., 47, Sap. ii. 22 the word passes into the theological sense which it exclusively has in the N.T.; see Hatch, *Essays*, p. 58. ‘The mystery of the Kingdom of God’ is the content of the Gospel (τὸ μ. τοῦ χριστοῦ, Eph. iii. 4, Col. iv. 3, τοῦ θεοῦ, Col. ii. 2, τοῦ εὐαγγελίου, Eph. vi. 19, τῆς πίστεως, 1 Tim. iii. 9, τῆς εὐσεβείας, 1 Tim. iii. 16), i.e. Christ Himself as revealing the Father, and fulfilling His counsels. As given to the Apostles it was still a secret, not yet to be divulged, nor even except in a small degree intelligible to themselves. On the Pauline sense of μυστήριον see Lightfoot on Col. i. 26. Τὰ μυστήρια (Mt. Lc.) loses sight of the unity of the gift, and belongs to a somewhat later form of the common tradition.

ἐκείνοις δὲ τοῖς ἔξω] Vg. “illis autem qui foris sunt”; ‘but to those, the men who are outside,’ i.e. the ὄχλος as contrasted with the μαθηταί, cf. xii. 7, Lc. xii. 38. Lc. τοῖς δὲ λοιποῖς, Mt. simply ἐκείνοις δέ. The words must not be understood as a reproach; they merely state the fact. Οἱ ἔξω are ‘non-disciples,’ who are as yet outside the pale—a Rabbinical phrase (מִן חַחַצְׂגָּנִים) for Gentiles or unorthodox

Jews (see J. Lightfoot *ad h. l.*, Bp Lightfoot on Col. iv. 5); οἱ ἐκτός is similarly used in Sir. prol. I. 4: οἱ ἔξωθεν, which has some support here, is used by St Paul (1 Tim. iii. 7). To such, while they remained outside, the mystery was not committed in our Lord’s lifetime; nevertheless, they received what they could. On exoteric teaching among Greek philosophers cf. A. Gellius *N. A.* xx. 4, and for the practical application of the principle by the later Church see Cyril. Hier. *catech.* vi. 29.

ἐν παραβολαῖς τὰ πάντα γίνεται] Vg. *in parabolis omnia fiunt*: ‘the whole is transacted in parables,’ i.e. the mystery takes the form of a series of illustrative similitudes. Euth.: τὰ π., τὰ τῆς διδασκαλίας δηλονότι.

12. ίνα βλέποντες κτλ.] An adaptation of Isa. vi. 9, 10, LXX., ἀκοῇ ἀκούσετε καὶ οὐ μὴ συνήτε καὶ βλέποντες βλέψετε καὶ οὐ μὴ ἴδητε...μή ποτε...επιστρέψωσιν καὶ λάσομαι αὐτούς: the whole passage is quoted by Mt. with the preface ἀναπληροῦται αὐτοῖς ἡ προφητεία Ἡσαίου ἡ λέγουσα: cf. John xii. 39 f., Acts xxviii. 25 ff. “Ινα, which is not part of the quotation, explains the purpose of the parabolic teaching in regard to those who, after long attendance on Christ’s Ministry, were still ‘without’; it was intended to fulfil the sentence of judicial blindness pronounced on those who will not see,

<sup>13</sup> Καὶ λέγει αὐτοῖς Οὐκ οἴδατε τὴν παραβολὴν <sup>13</sup>  
 ταύτην, καὶ πῶς πάσας τὰς παραβολὰς γνώσεσθε;  
<sup>14</sup> ὁ σπείρων τὸν λόγον σπείρει. <sup>15</sup> οὗτοι δέ εἰσιν οἱ <sup>14</sup>  
<sup>15</sup>

14 σπερει Ι

Bengel: "iam ante non videbant; nunc accedit iudicium divinum." Mt. substitutes ὅτι for ἵνα, 'I speak in parables, because they cannot see—the sentence is already working itself out in their incapacity to understand.' The result, however, is due to themselves: cf. Thph. βλέποντες· τοῦτο τοῦ θεοῦ· μὴ βλέπωσι· τοῦτο τῆς κακίας αὐτῶν. Cf. Iren. iv. 29. 1: "unus et idem Deus his quidem qui non credunt...infert caecitatem, quemadmodum sol in his qui propter aliquam infirmitatem oculorum non possunt contemplari lumen eius."

The distinction between βλέπειν and ιδεῖν corresponds here to that between ἀκούειν and συνίειν. The Syriac versions and the Vg. (*ut videntes videant et non videant*) fail to notice this. Καὶ ἀφεθῆ αὐτοῖς (impers.) is preferred by Mc. to καὶ λάσομαι αὐτοὺς which Mt., Jo. and Acts borrow from the LXX.; in form at least it is nearer to the original (לְאַנְתֶּם: see Delitzsch *ad l.*); for ἀφ. impers. cf. Mt. xii. 31, 32, Lc. xii. 10, James v. 15. On the reading ἀφεθήσομαι see WM., p. 630 f.

13—20. INTERPRETATION OF THE PARABLE OF THE SOWER (Mt. xiii. 18—23, Lc. viii. 11—15).

13 ff. The disciples' question had implied that they needed to have the parable of the Sower explained to them. To this point the Lord now addresses Himself. Mc. alone prefacing the interpretation with a rebuke—οὐκ οἴδατε κτλ. 'Ye know not (or, "Know ye not?"—so all the English versions) what this first parable means: how then will you come to understand the parables which are to follow?' Οἶδα is used in reference to a know-

ledge which comes from intuition or insight, γνώσκω of that which is gained by experience or acquaintance (see Lightfoot on 1 Cor. ii. 11). An initial want of spiritual insight boded ill for their prospect of becoming apt interpreters of parabolic teaching. Cf. Sir. iii. 29, καρδίᾳ συνετοῦ διανοηθήσεται παραβολὴν. Καὶ πῶς; 'how then?' cf. Lc. xx. 44, Jo. xii. 34. Πάσας τὰς παραβολὰς, not 'parables in general' (πάσας παραβολὰς), but 'all the parables which you are to hear from Me.'

14. ὁ σπείρων τὸν λόγον σπείρει.] That which the sower sows is the word. Lc. more explicitly, ὁ σπόρος ἔστιν ὁ λόγος. 'The sower' is not interpreted. Theophylact's view (*τίς οὖν ἔστιν ὁ σπείρων; αὐτὸς ὁ χριστός*) is correct (cf. Mt. xiii. 37), if it be borne in mind that Christ acts through His Spirit in the Church. For the sense of ὁ λόγος see note on ii. 2. Mt. adds τῆς βασιλείας, Lc. τοῦ θεοῦ; in the phraseology of Mc. it is usually unqualified (ii. 2, iv. 14—20, 33, viii. 32 [xvi. 20]). For the comparison of teaching to sowing see Philo, *de agr.* 2, ὁ νοῦς...τὰς ἀπὸ τῶν σπαρέντων καὶ φυτευθέντων ὡφελείας εἴωθε καρποῦσθαι...ἐν διανοίᾳ καρποὺς ὡφελιμωτάτους οἴστει [sc. τὰ σπαρέντα] καλὰς καὶ ἐπινετὰς πράξεις. 'Ο σπείρων here is not simply, as in *v. 2*, the sower, whoever he may be, but the sower to whom the parable refers; the same remark applies to τὴν ὄδον (*v. 15*), τὰ πετρώδη (*v. 16*), τὰς ἀκάνθας (*v. 18*), τὴν γῆν (*v. 20*).

15. οὗτοι δέ κτλ.] A compressed note which it is difficult to disentangle. Lc. gives the general sense, οἱ δὲ παρὰ τὴν ὄδον εἰσιν οἱ ἀκούσαντες. As the words stand in Mc. we must either

παρὰ τὴν ὁδὸν ὅπου σπείρεται ὁ λόγος, καὶ ὅταν  
ἀκούσωσιν εὐθὺς ἔρχεται ὁ σατανᾶς καὶ αἴρει τὸν  
16 λόγον τὸν ἐσπαρμένον εἰς αὐτούς. <sup>16</sup>καὶ οὗτοί εἰσιν  
ὅμοιως οἱ ἐπὶ τὰ πετρώδη σπειρόμενοι, οἱ ὅταν ἀκού-  
σωσιν τὸν λόγον εὐθὺς μετὰ χαρᾶς λαμβάνουσιν

<sup>15 οπου]</sup> ois D 69<sup>2</sup> ff g syr<sup>pesh</sup> | οπ. σπειρ. ο λογος] qui neglegenter verbum suscipiunt  
a b (c) p q r οι ακουοντες τον λογον syrsinvid | και οταν] οι οτ. B | om ευθυς I 118 syr<sup>sin</sup>  
arm | αιρει] αφερει D αρπαξει ΚΔ | eis autous B I 13 28 69 al<sup>pau</sup>] ev autous ΚΔ  
e me<sup>odd</sup> syr<sup>hel(mg)</sup> εν ταις καρδιαις αυτων ΔΠΣΦ al minpl latt<sup>v</sup> pl<sup>v</sup> syrr<sup>sin pesh hel(txt)</sup>  
go arm απο της καρδιας αυτων A l aeth 16 om ομοιως D I 13 28 69 al<sup>pau</sup>  
a b c ff g i q | σπειρομενοι]+λογοι M | οι οταν] om οι B<sup>3?</sup>) | om ευθυς D I 28  
al<sup>pau</sup> c ff i q syr<sup>sin</sup> | λαμβανουσιν] δεχονται I 13 I 209 al<sup>pau</sup>

translate “these are they by the wayside where,” &c., leaving the construction incomplete, or “these are they by the wayside, (namely those who are) where,” &c. The analogy of v. 16 points rather to the former rendering; the Evangelist has written *καὶ ὅταν* for *οἱ ὅταν*, forgetting that a relative clause ought to follow *οὗτοι*. *Oἱ παρὰ τὴν ὁδὸν*, sc. *πεσόντες* or (as in Mt.) *σπαρέντες*: the hearers are identified with the seed, and not, as we might expect, with the soil. Since this identification is common to Mt., Mc., Lc., it probably belongs to the essence of Christ’s teaching, and represents a “truth both of nature and of grace; the seed sown...becomes the plant and bears the fruit, or fails of bearing it; it is therefore the representative, when sown, of the individuals of whom the discourse is” (Alford, on Mt. xiii. 19).

*ὅταν ἀκούσωσιν]* On each occasion, as soon as their hearing of the message, or of any part of it, is complete.

*εὐθὺς ἔρχεται ὁ σατανᾶς κτλ.]* Mt. *ἔρχεται ὁ πονηρός* (cf. Mt. v. 37, vi. 13, xiii. 38, I Jo. ii. 13, &c.). Lc. *εἴτε* *ἔρχεται ὁ διάβολος*. For *ὁ σ.* see note on Mc. i. 13. *Εὐθύς* retains its proper sense; the birds lose no time, nor does Satan. With this interpretation

of *τὰ πετενά* comp. Eph. ii. 2, vi. 12. *Τὸν ἐσπαρμένον εἰς αὐτούς* leaves the region to which the word had penetrated undetermined; Mt.’s *ἐν τῇ καρδίᾳ* (cf. Lc.) represents it as having entered the intellectual life, which is less in accord with this part of the parable. Lc. adds Satan’s purpose, *ἵνα μὴ πιστεύσαντες σωθῶσιν*: cf. ‘Mc.’ xvi. 16. The perf. part. *ἐσπαρμένον* (Mt. Mc.) indicates that the sowing was completed, and the seed not yet disturbed when Satan arrived (Burton, § 154).

16. *καὶ οὗτοί εἰσιν κτλ.]* ‘On the same principle of interpretation (*ὅμοιως*) those who are sown on the rocky places are,’ &c. *Oἱ σπειρόμενοι*, *qui seminantur*, the class of persons to whom belongs *τὸ σπείρεσθαι ἐπὶ τὰ π.* Cf. Burton, § 123, and contrast *οἱ σπαρέντες* in v. 20, where the notion of time comes in. In one sense ‘the word is sown,’ in another the hearers are the seed; see above on v. 15.

*εὐθὺς μετὰ χαρᾶς λαμβάνουσιν αὐτόν]* Cf. v. 5, *εὐθὺς ἔξαντειλεν*. The joy of the enthusiastic hearer corresponds to the bursting through the soil of the fresh green blade—a visible response to the sower’s work. Lc. substitutes for *λαμβ.* the warmer *δέχονται* (cf. Acts xi. 1, xvii. 11, I Thess. i. 6, ii. 13, James i. 21).

αὐτόν, <sup>17</sup>καὶ οὐκ ἔχουσιν ρίζαν ἐν ἑαυτοῖς ἀλλὰ πρόσ- 17  
καιροί εἰσιν· εἴτα γενομένης θλίψεως ἡ διωγμοῦ διὰ τὰ  
τὸν λόγον<sup>¶</sup> εὑθὺς σκανδαλίζονται. <sup>18</sup>καὶ ἄλλοι εἰσὶν 18 ¶ syr<sup>sin</sup>

<sup>17 μιξαν]</sup> νδωρ V | προκαιροι F | η] και D c f f i q vg | σκανδαλισθησονται D  
18 αλλοι] ουτοι AC<sup>2</sup>ΠΣΦ al 33 min<sup>pl</sup> f q go aeth om αλλ. εισιν I 13 28 124 604 al<sup>mu</sup>  
syr<sup>pesh</sup> arm

17. οὐκ ἔχουσιν ρίζαν] The seed of the word has not driven its way into the soil. With this use of *ρίζα* cf. 4 Regn. xix. 30, Job xix. 28, Sap. iii. 15, iv. 3, Sir. i. 6, 20, Isa. xl. 24; and contrast Deut. xxix. 18 (Heb. xii. 15), 1 Macc. i. 10.

ἐν ἑαυτοῖς] So Mt.; Lc. omits the words. The hearer of the Gospel is at once plant (οὐ σπειρόμενος or σπαρεῖς) and soil; the roots which the seed under normal conditions throws out are within, in his heart, the seat of the personal life. In the case now contemplated the heart is πετρώδης; there has been a πάρωσις within (iii. 5) which stops the development of the roots.

ἀλλὰ πρόσκαιροί εἰσιν] Vg. sed temporales sunt: ‘but (so far from being well rooted) they are short-lived’; Lc. πρὸς καιρὸν πιστεύοντι. Nearly all the English versions paraphrase πρόσκ. εἰσιν, e.g. Wycliffe, “thei ben temporal, that is lasten a lytil tyme”; Tindale, Cranmer, Geneva, A. V. “endure but a time” or “for a time”: “for a season” (Heb. xi. 25) has perhaps been avoided as ambiguous in this connexion. Πρόσκαιρος, though common in the later Gk., is rare in the Greek of the Bible, occurring only in 4 Macc. xv. 2, 2 Cor. iv. 18, Heb. l.c., besides the present context.

εἴτα γενομένης κτλ.] Εἴτα, ‘then,’ as the next step consequent upon the non-development of the roots; cf. εἴτεν (v. 28). Θλίψεως ἡ διωγμοῦ (Lc. πειρασμοῦ), crushing sorrow of any kind, or in the particular form of

persecution. Θλίψις (on the accentuation see WM., p. 56 n.), though rarely used in non-Biblical Greek and only in its literal sense, is common both in LXX. and N.T.; in the former it is usually an equivalent of נֶגֶשׁ or one of its cognates. It is coupled with ἐλεγμός (4 Regn. xix. 3), στενοχωρία (Esth. A 7 (xi. 8), Is. viii. 22, Rom. ii. 9, viii. 35), ὀδύνη (Ps. cxiv. (cxvi.) 3), ἀνάκητη (Ps. cxviii. (cxix.) 143, Zeph. i. 15, 2 Cor. vi. 4, 1 Th. iii. 7), ὀνειδισμός (Is. xxxvii. 3), διωγμός (2 Thess. i. 4); its opposites are πλανυσμός (cf. Ps. iv. 1), ἀνάπαυσις (cf. Hab. iii. 16), εἰρήνη (Zach. viii. 10), ἀνεστις (2 Th. i. 7). See Lightfoot on 1 Th. iii. 7, 2 Th. i. 7. For διωγμός, another too familiar word in Apostolic times, see x. 30, 2 Macc. xii. 23, Acts viii. 1, xiii. 50. The two words correspond here to the fierce heat which withers the rootless plant (v. 6): cf. Ps. cxx. (cxxi.) 6, Is. xxv. 4, xlix. 10, Jer. xvii. 8. Διὰ τὸν λόγον is a new point, which is not represented in the parable: cf. xiii. 13, διὰ τὸ σνομά μον.

σκανδαλίζονται] Σκανδαλίζειν occurs in Dan. xi. 41, LXX. (= לְשִׁבֵּן), Sir. ix. 5, xxiii. 8, xxxv. 15, Pss. Sol. xvi. 7, and in Aq., Symm., but perhaps not elsewhere except in the N.T. and Church writers; and whereas σκάνδαλον is used occasionally in its literal sense (Judith v. 1, Isa. viii. 14, Aq., 1 Pet. ii. 8), the verb seems to be limited to the sphere of ethics. Lc. interprets it here of apostasy (ἀφίστανται), but there may be moral stumbling which falls short of that: see Mc. xiv. 27.

18. καὶ ἄλλοι εἰσὶν κτλ.] Another

οἱ εἰς τὰς ἀκάνθας σπειρόμενοι· οὗτοί εἰσιν οἱ τὸν  
 λόγον ἀκούσαντες,<sup>19</sup> καὶ αἱ μέριμναι τοῦ αἰῶνος καὶ ἡ  
 ἀπάτη τοῦ πλούτου καὶ αἱ περὶ τὰ λοιπὰ ἐπιθυμίαι  
 εἰσπορεύομεναι συνπνίγουσιν τὸν λόγον, καὶ ἄκαρπος  
 γίνεται.<sup>20</sup> καὶ ἐκεῖνοι εἰσιν οἱ ἐπὶ τὴν γῆν τὴν καλὴν  
 σπαρέντες, οἵτινες ἀκούουσιν τὸν λόγον καὶ παρα-

18 εἰς ABDLΠΣΦ al min<sup>forte omn</sup>] επὶ ΚΔ me | om οὐτοι εἰσιν ΑC<sup>2</sup>ΠΣ (non Φ)  
 al 33 al<sup>pl</sup> f q go aeth aκουσαντες (N)BCDLΔ 13 69 124 346 1071 al<sup>pauc</sup> me] aκουοντες  
 ΑΠΣΦ al min<sup>pl</sup> latt syr<sup>hel</sup> go aeth 19 αιωνος] βιον D 604 latt<sup>vt</sup>+τοντον ΑΠΣΦ al  
 min<sup>pl</sup> f syr<sup>pes</sup> arm me go aeth | η απατη (αγαπη Δ) τον πλουτον] απαται τον κοσμον  
 D (b) g i q ηδοναι τον κοσμον c eff | om και αι π. τ. λ. επιθυμαι D 1 28 604 a b c e ff i q  
 arm | aκαρποι γινονται D 124 b c e f f g i q 20 εκεινοι ΚΒCLΔ] ουτοι ADΠΣΦ al  
 min<sup>forte omn</sup> latt syr<sup>hel</sup> go aeth Or

class consists of those who are sown upon the thorns: cf. v. 16, οὗτοι δέ εἰσιν οἱ κτλ. The construction is broken after ἀκούσαντες (Mt. Mc.); we expect, what Lc. gives, καὶ...συνπνίγονται.

19. αἱ μέριμναι κτλ.] The thorns of the spiritual soil. Αἱ μ. τοῦ αἰῶνος: the cares of the age (usually ὁ αἰών οὗτος), the present course of events—wider than Lc.'s μέριμναι τοῦ βίου (or βιωτικαὶ Lc. xxi. 34). For other N.T. warnings against worldly care see Mt. vi. 25 ff. (=Lc. xii. 22 ff.), Lc. x. 41, xxi. 34; Phil. iv. 6, 1 Pet. v. 7. With ἀπάτη τοῦ πλούτου comp. ἀπάτη ἀδικίας (2 Th. ii. 10), τῆς ἀμαρτίας (Heb. iii. 13); the confusion of ἀπάτη with ἀγάπη in some MSS. finds an interesting parallel in 2 Pet. ii. 13. Αἱ περὶ τὰ λοιπὰ ἐπιθυμίαι is peculiar to Mc.; Lc.'s equivalent is ηδοναι τοῦ βίου, but Mc. is again more comprehensive; cf. Euth.: συμπειριλαβών πᾶσαν βλαβερὰν ἐπιθυμίαν, where however βλαβ. narrows the reference unduly if it suggests only such desires as are vicious in themselves (see 1 Jo. ii. 15 ff. with Westcott's notes). On this interpretation of the ἀκανθαι see Herm. sim. ix. 20; for the phrase αἱ περὶ κτλ., see WM., p. 240.

εἰσπορεύομεναι συνπ. τ. λόγον] The ἐπιθυμίαι enter the heart together with the λόγος and in greater strength, gathering round it (for συνπν. see v. 7) and excluding from it the action of the understanding and the affections which are as light and warmth to the spiritual plant.

ἄκαρπος γίνεται]=καρπὸν οὐκ ἔδωκεν (v. 7): Lc. οὐ τελεσφοροῦσιν. The fruit does not mature itself, and so the word proves in their case fruitless. For the metaphorical use of ἄκαρπος see Sap. xv. 4, σκιαγράφων πόνος ἄκαρπος: Eph. v. 11, Tit. iii. 14, 2 Pet. i. 8.

20. ἐκεῖνοι...οἵτινες] 'Those who are such as,' &c. Ἐκεῖνοι contrasts this last class with οὗτοι (vv. 15, 16) and ἄλλοι (v. 18): cf. Jo. ix. 9, ἄλλοι...ἄλλοι...ἐκεῖνος. For ὅστις as distinguished from ὃς see Lightfoot on Gal. iv. 24 and 2 Th. i. 9. The timeless σπειρόμενοι (vv. 16, 18) is now exchanged for σπαρέντες—'those who in the parable were represented as sown,' &c.: those of this type (1) hear the word (Lc. adds ἐν καρδίᾳ καλῇ καὶ ἀγαθῇ), (2) accept it, (3) yield fruit. Παραδέχονται (Exod. xxiii. 1, 3 Macc. vii. 12, Acts xvi. 21, xxii. 18, Heb. xii. 6). goes beyond λαμβάνονται (v. 16),

δέχονται καὶ καρποφοροῦσιν ἐν τριάκοντα καὶ ἐν  
έξικοντα καὶ ἐν ἑκατόν.

<sup>21</sup> Καὶ ἐλεγεν αὐτοῖς ὅτι Μῆτι ἐρχεται ὁ λύχνος 21

20 εν...εν...εν ΝΔΕΓΗΚΜΥΒΙΙ (εν latt me go arm)] om εν 2<sup>o</sup> BC\*vid et 3<sup>o</sup> B  
min<sup>perpauc</sup> 21 οτι BL] om ΝΔΕΓΗΚΜΥΒΙΙ al min<sup>pl</sup> | ερχεται] απτεται D 13 69 124  
al c e ff g i r adfertur b (aeth)

cf. Mt. *συνεῖς* (probably in contrast to the *ἀσύνετοι* of Isa. vi. 10), Lc. *κατέχουσιν*.

καὶ καρποφοροῦσιν κτλ.] For καρποφορεῖν (Xen., Theophr. &c.) see Hab. iii. 17 (=Πῆψ), Sap. x. 7, Mc. iv. 28; and in the metaphorical sense Rom. vii. 4, 5, Col. i. 6 (middle, see Lightfoot), 10. Lc. adds ἐν ὑπομονῇ, "the opposite of ἀφίστανται, v. 13" (Plummer). For ἐν...ἐν...ἐν Blass (*Gr.* p. 146) would write ἐν...ἐν...ἐν, cf. Mt. ὁ μὲν...ὁ δὲ...ὁ δέ: but εν is probably the equivalent of ἡ, 'at the rate of'; see note on *v.* 8. The employment of this detail in the interpretation by Mt., Mc. is remarkable. Lc. omits it, but it clearly asserts a principle which is as true in the kingdom of God as in nature. Cf. Victor: τέταρτον οὐν μέρος ἔσθιθε καὶ οὐδὲ τοῦτο ἐπ' ἵησα καρποφορεῖ. The comment of Theophylact serves to throw light upon the estimate of Christian perfection formed by a later age: οἱ μέν εἰσι παρθένοι καὶ ἐρημικοί, ἄλλοι μυάδες καὶ ἐν κοινωνίᾳ, ἔτεροι λαϊκοί καὶ ἐν γάμῳ. (Cf. Jerome on Mt. xiii.)

21-25. PARABOLIC WARNINGS AS TO THE RESPONSIBILITY OF HEARING THE WORD (Lc. viii. 16-18; cf. Mt. v. 15, x. 26, vii. 2, xiii. 12, xxv. 29; Lc. xi. 33, xii. 2, vi. 38, xix. 26).

21. *kai ἔλεγεν* occurs with remarkable frequency in this chapter (vv. 9, 11, 13 (*λέγει*), 21, 24, 26, 30, 35 (*λέγει*)). Possibly its repetition indicates that the editor had before him here a number of detached sayings of uncertain order, which he has thus strung together without note of time. Several of these sayings are given by Mt. in other contexts (see last note),

or occur in a slightly different form which suggests a double rendering of the same Aramaic words: cf. Lc. viii. 16 with xi. 33, viii. 17 with xii. 2, viii. 18 with xix. 26 (A. Wright *ad loc.*). These phenomena at first sight throw doubt upon the Marcan sequence in this place, and it is worthy of notice that Tatian passes from *v. 20* to *v. 29*; but the inner coherence of the sayings with the preceding context supports Mc., and, unless they were repeated on other occasions, it is probably Mt.'s order which is at fault.

μήτι ἔρχεται ὁ λύχνος] Vg. *numquid* *venit lucerna?* Μήτι expects a negative answer, cf. e.g. Pilate's question (Jo. xviii. 35) μήτι ἔγω Ιουδαῖος εἰμι; and see on Mc. xiv. 19. With ἔρχεται the commentators compare Liban. *ep.* 358 ή δὲ (ἐπιστολὴ) ἔρχεται. The reading of D (*ἄπτεται* for ἔρχεται: cf. Lc. ἄψας) is a harmonising gloss, unless, as has been ingeniously suggested, we may see in it a retransliteration of *accēditur* (*accenditur*), Harris, *Cod. Bez.*, p. 89. ‘Ο λύχνος “a lanterne” (Wycliffe); rather, the lamp (on the article see *v. 3*), as contrasted with the λαμπτός or torch: see exx. in Trench, *syn.* § xlvi, and cf. *Lamp*, *Lantern*, in Hastings, *D.B.* iii. The λύχνος when at rest is placed on a stand—λυχνία—a later form of λυχνίον or λυχνέον = λυχνοῦχος—used in the LXX. for the *תְּנִינָה* of the Tabernacle (Exod. xxv. 31, &c., esp. xl 4, *εἰσοδοις τὴν λυχνίαν καὶ ἐπιθήσαις τοὺς λύχνους*). In the present context the λύχνος is the word, the λυχνία the hearer or body of hearers (cf. Apoc. i. 20); in Lc. xi. 34, Apoc. xxi. 23 the metaphor is applied somewhat

ἴνα ὑπὸ τὸν μόδιον τεθῆ ἢ ὑπὸ τὴν κλίνην, οὐχ ἵνα  
22 ἐπὶ τὴν λυχνίαν τεθῆ; <sup>22</sup>οὐ γάρ ἔστιν κρυπτὸν ἐὰν  
μὴ ἵνα φανερωθῆ, οὐδὲ ἐγένετο ἀπόκρυφον ἀλλ' ἵνα  
23 ἐλθῇ εἰς φανερόν. <sup>23</sup>εἴ τις ἔχει ὥτα ἀκούειν ἀκουέτω.

21 *ινα ν. τ. μ. τεθη] ν. τ. μ. τεθηναι δ\* [επι] υπο ΚΒ\*Σ 13 33 69 1071 | τεθη 2°]  
επιτεθη ΑΙΙ al<sup>pl</sup> 22 *εστιν] +τι ΚΑΣΕΦΓΛΣΝΔΠ<sup>2</sup>ΣΦ min<sup>permu</sup> c f vg syr<sup>pesh</sup> arm  
go (om τι BDHKMUII\* min<sup>sat mu</sup> b e ff i q aeth) | εαν μη ινα ΚΒΔ (1 13 28 69 604  
al<sup>permuo</sup>) εαν μη ΑΚΛΠΣ 33 209 al<sup>pauc</sup> αλλ ινα D 49 b ff i q o εαν μη  
ΕFGHMSUVΦ | ελθη εις φανερον] φανερωθη Β (syr<sup>pesh</sup>) aeth**

differently. When the word has been proclaimed, its purpose is defeated if it be concealed by the hearers; when the lamp comes in, who would put it under the *modius* or the couch of the *triclinium*? *Μόδιος* (Mt. v. 15, Lc. xi. 33,—in viii. 16 Lc. has *σκεῦος*) = 16 sextarii, a sixth of a *μέδιμνος* (?=πάξ), a peck rather than a bushel (so all the English versions), is a Latinism common, as the ref. shew, to the three Synoptists; the word had doubtless been adopted into colloquial Greek. The reading *ὑπὸ τὴν λυχνίαν* is rightly called by Holtzmann “ein Beispiel ältesten Textverderbs”; cf. WH., *Notes*, p. 24.

This saying brings before us the commonest furniture of a Galilean home, and the details add to its picturesqueness—ὅ λύχνος, ἡ λυχνία, ὁ μόδιος, ἡ κλίνη.

22. οὐ γάρ ἔστιν κρυπτὸν κτλ.] Vg. *non enim est aliquid*, &c., cf. Mt. οὐδὲν γάρ κτλ. and vv. ll. here; ‘for there is not [anything] hidden (Mt. *κεκαλυμμένον*, Lc. xii. 2 *συγκεκαλυμμένον*) except with a view to its future manifestation, neither did it become a secret [to remain a secret], but on the contrary (ἀλλά) that it might pass into the light of day.’ The interpretation of the parable takes the form of a parallelism after the manner of Proverbs and Sirach. While asserting a great principle of the Divine government, our Lord corrects a false impression which might have arisen from the mention

of a *μυστήριον* (v. 11). If the Gospel was for the moment treated as a secret, this was so only because temporary secrecy was essential to its successful proclamation after the Ascension. Those to whom the secret was now confided were charged with the responsibility of publishing it then. The *λυχνία* must be ready to receive and exhibit the *λύχνος* as soon as the appropriate time had come.

*Κρυπτός* and *ἀπόκρυφος* are both O. T. words: cf. esp. Dan. ii. 22, Th. *αὐτὸς ἀποκαλύπτει βαθέα καὶ ἀπόκρυφα* (*Ἄπτραψι*); ib. 47, LXX., ὁ ἐκφαίνων *μυστήρια κρυπτά*. On *ἀπόκρυφος* cf. Lightfoot on Col. ii. 3. ‘Ἐὰν μὴ ἵνα φ., ‘except for the purpose of being revealed’; for ἐὰν μή without a verb see Blass, *Gr.* p. 216. ‘Αλλ’ ἵνα answers to ἐὰν μή ἵνα (Blass, *Gr.* p. 269), but (ag. Blass) there is a perceptible difference of meaning: see the paraphrase attempted above. Similarly *ἔστιν* and *ἐγένετο*, though relating to the same set of facts, present them in different lights; what ‘is’ now hidden from us ‘became’ so through the will of God working its way through darkness to the perfect light. Thph. *τί γάρ ἦν κρυφώτερον θεού*; ἀλλ’ *ὅμως καὶ οὗτος ἐφανερώθη ἐν σαρκὶ*. Bengel: “id axioma valet de rebus naturae, de sensibus et actionibus hominum malis et bonis in statu naturali et spirituali, de mysteriis divinis.”

23. εἴ τις ἔχει ὥτα κτλ.] See on

<sup>24</sup> Καὶ ἐλεγεν αὐτοῖς Βλέπετε τί ἀκούετε· ἐν ὧ 24  
μέτρῳ μετρεῖτε μετρηθήσεται ὑμῖν καὶ § προστεθή- § Θ<sup>b</sup>  
σεται ὑμῖν. <sup>25</sup> ὁς γάρ ἔχει, δοθήσεται αὐτῷ· καὶ ὁς 25 § a  
οὐκ ἔχει, καὶ ὁ ἔχει ἀρθήσεται ἀπ' αὐτοῦ.

<sup>26</sup> Καὶ ἐλεγεν Οὕτως ἐστὶν ἡ βασιλεία τοῦ θεοῦ, 26

24 ακούετε] + καὶ προστεθησεται υμιν τοις ακουουσιν 13 69 3+6 556 arm | αντιμετρη-  
θησεται 1071 | καὶ προστεθ. υμιν] om DG 114 2<sup>pe</sup> b e g + τοις ακουουσιν ΑΘ<sup>b</sup>ΠΣΦ al  
ι 33 69 al<sup>pl</sup> q syrr arm 25 εχει] pr αν DE\*FHKΘ<sup>b</sup> αν εχη AE<sup>2</sup>G(M)SUVII |  
δοθησεται] προστεθησεται D 271

v. 9. The warning is needed for the Apostles as for the rest.

24. *βλέπετε τί ἀκούετε.* Lc. *βλ. οὖν πῶς ἀκούετε.* In Mc.'s form of the saying *βλέπειν* is to consider: 'look well what it is that ye hear,' i.e. weigh its meaning; be not as those who *βλέποντες οὐ βλέπουσιν* (Mt. xiii. 13). Thph. *πρὸς τὴν φαλιότητα διεγέρει τοὺς μαθητάς... μηδὲν ὑμᾶς τῶν λεγομένων παρ' ἐμοῦ διαφευγέτω.* Cf. Heb. ii. 1 f.

ἐν ὧ μέτρῳ κτλ.] 'You shall be paid back (Lc. *ἀντιμετρηθήσεται*) in your own measure.' The proverb occurs in several contexts (Mt. vii. 2, Lc. vi. 38) with different applications: here the sense is: 'your attention to the teaching will be the measure of the profit you will receive from it.' Euth. *ἐν φῷ μέτρῳ μετρεῖτε τὴν προσοχήν, ἐν τῷ αὐτῷ μετρηθήσεται ὑμῖν ἡ γνώσις.* The *μέτρον* however is not intellectual merely, but spiritual; its capacity depends on the moral condition of the hearer. Bengel: "est cor cum sua capacitate, cupiditate, studio impertiendi aliis, obsequio." Nor is the return limited by it: *καὶ προστεθήσεται ὑμῖν* (Mt. *περισσευθήσεται*), i.e. the *λόγος* when received by one who is not an *ἀκροατής ἐπιλησμονῆς* exceeds his immediate power of assimilation; he is rich beyond his measure, richer than he knows.

25. *ὁς γάρ ἔχει κτλ.]* Another proverbial saying, found also in other connexions (Mt. xiii. 12, xxv. 29, Lc.

xix. 26). Here the sense is: 'for the appropriation of any measure of Divine truth implies a capacity for receiving more; and each gift, if assimilated, is the forerunner of another'; Bede: "qui amorem habet verbi dabitur illi etiam sensus intellegendi quod amat." But the converse is also true: 'incapacity for receiving truth leads to a loss of truth already in some sense possessed.' The paradoxical form of the original tradition is removed by Lc. who writes *ὁ δοκεῖ ἔχειν ἀρθήσεται*. But the paradox is characteristic of Christ's sayings (cf. e.g. viii. 35, x. 31), and it is true: the man both 'has' and 'has not': cf. Rom. ii. 20, 2 Tim. iii. 5. With *ἀρθήσεται ἀπ' αὐτοῦ* cf. Mt. xxi. 43, xxv. 28, 29. On the readings *ὅς ἔχει, ὃς ἄν* *ἔχει* (*ἔχη*) see Blass, *Gr.*, p. 217.

26–29. PARABLE OF THE AUTOMATIC ACTION OF THE SOIL (Mc. only).

26. *καὶ ἐλεγεν κτλ.]* The record of the public teaching seems to begin again here; the unexplained parable belongs to the *ἔχλος*, not to the *μαθηταί* (see below v. 33 f.). The parable which follows is peculiar to Mc., unless we accept the improbable theory of Weiss and Holtzmann that it forms one side of the picture of which the other is preserved in the Parable of the Tares (Mt. xiii. 24 ff.). There are verbal coincidences, e.g. *καθείδῃ* (cf. Mt. v. 25), *χόρτον...σῖτον* (cf. Mt. vv. 26, 30), *θερισμός* (cf. Mt. v. 30); but both the purpose and the story differ

τὰ 27 ὡς ἄνθρωπος βάλῃ τὸν σπόρον ἐπὶ τῆς γῆς καὶ καθεύδῃ καὶ ἐγείρηται νύκτα καὶ ημέραν, καὶ ὁ σπόρος βλαστᾷ καὶ μηκύνεται, ὡς οὐκ οἶδεν αὐτός. 28 ἀυτομάτη ἡ γῆ καρποφορεῖ, πρῶτον χόρτον, εἶτεν

26 ὡς ΝΒΔΙΔ 13 28 33 69 al<sup>pauc</sup> me] ὡς εἰν (αὐ, οταν) ΑCΘ<sup>h</sup>ΠΣΦ al min<sup>pl</sup> latt<sup>vplvg</sup> go al | βαλλῃ F βαλλει min<sup>pauc</sup> | om τον D 2<sup>pe</sup> 27. καθευδει EFHU 33 69 al<sup>mu</sup> | εγειρεται ΝΕFGHLM 69 al<sup>pauc</sup> εγερθη D | βλαστα BC\*DLΔ 2<sup>pe</sup> al<sup>pauc</sup>] βλαστανη ΝΑC<sup>2</sup>GKMSUΝΘ<sup>b</sup>ΠΣΦ min<sup>pl</sup> βλαστανει EFH 33 al<sup>mu</sup> | μηκυνεται BDΗΣ min<sup>nonn</sup>] μηκυνηται ΝΑCLΔΠ al<sup>pl</sup> 28 αυτοματη]+γαρ ΔΠΣΦ al latt<sup>vplvg</sup> go pr οτι D 2<sup>pe</sup> arm | ειτεν bis B\*(L)Δ (cf. Ν)] ειτα bis AB<sup>2</sup>CDII al min<sup>forte omn</sup>

widely. Tatian places Mc.'s parable immediately before the Tares, an order which has much to recommend it.

οὗτως...ὡς ἄνθρωπος βάλῃ] The regular construction would have been ὡς ἐὰν ἄνθρ. βάλῃ (cf. 1 Th. ii. 7), or ὡς ἄνθρ. βαλών (cf. 1 Cor. ix. 26, Jas. ii. 12) or ὡς ἀν βάλῃ. There is a partial parallel to the anomalous ὡς...βάλῃ in xiii. 34, ὡς ἄνθρωπος...ἐνετείλατο. Τὸν σπόρον: as in Lc. viii. 5, τὸν σπ. αὐτοῦ, or perhaps generic, seed of any kind. In the series βάλῃ...καθεύδῃ...ἐγείρηται, &c., the first verb alone stands in the aor., the act of sowing being "single and transient" (Madvig, § 128); for the conjunction of aor. and pres. cf. Jo. iii. 16, 1 Pet. iv. 6. Σπόρος, sowing or seed time, is used in the later Biblical Gk. as nearly = σπέρμα, where the reference is to the seed as used by the sower, not to the particular grain; cf. Deut. xi. 10, Lc. viii. 5, 11, 2 Cor. ix. 10 (contrast σπέρμα in Mc. iv. 31, 1 Cor. xv. 38).

27. καὶ καθεύδῃ καὶ ἐγείρηται] Cf. Ps. iii. 6, ἐγὼ ἐκοιμήθην καὶ ὑπνωσα. ἐξηγέρθην. The process goes on νύκτα καὶ ημέραν, not merely νυκτὸς καὶ ημέρας (v. 5), but occupying the νυχθῆμερον: cf. Lc. ii. 37, where the point is that Anna's whole life was given to devotion; Jo. iv. 52 (Westcott's note). The order ν. καὶ ἡ. is usual (cf. Gen. i. 5, &c.), and appropriate in this context where καθεύδῃ precedes.

Βλαστᾶ=βλαστάνει. Βλαστάω occurs also in Eccl. ii. 6, Hermas *Sim.* iv. 1, δένδρα τὰ μὲν βλαστῶντα τὰ δὲ ἔηρά: cf. WSchm. p. 125. Μηκύνεσθαι is an ἀπ. λεγ. in the N. T., but cf. Isa. xliv. 14, ἔύλον...νετὸς ἐμήκυνεν (לְמִקְנֵן). The middle emphasises the activity of growth internal to the plant. Into this mystery of growth however the sower cannot penetrate: it takes place ὡς οὐκ οἶδεν αὐτός, after a manner which baffles his understanding. Vg. "dum nescit ille," Wycliffe, "while he wote not," and similarly the other English versions before 1611, regarding ὡς as an adverb of time; A.V., R.V. "he knoweth not how."

28. αὐτομάτη ἡ γῆ καρποφορεῖ] Vg. *ultra enim terra fructificat*. Αὐτόματος is used of the spontaneous produce of uncultivated land (Lev. xxv. 5, 11, 4 Regn. xix. 29, = חַדְרָה): cf. Plat. *polit.* 272 A, καρποὺς οὐχ ὑπὸ γεωργίας φυομένους ἀλλ' αὐτομάτης ἀναδιδούσης τῆς γῆς. Bengel's remark is true and weighty: "non excluditur agricultura et caelestis pluvia solesque." Here however the thought is that when man has done his part, the actual process of growth is beyond his reach or comprehension; he must leave it to the apparently spontaneous action of the soil. In the N.T. the word occurs again but once (Acts xii. 10). Cf. Philo, *de incorr. mund.* 944, ἀπαν-

§στάχυν, εἶτεν πλήρη σῖτον ἐν τῷ στάχυι. <sup>29</sup> ὅταν 29 § a  
δὲ παραδοῖ ὁ καρπός, εὐθὺς ἀποστέλλει τὸ δρέπανον,  
ὅτι παρέστηκεν ὁ θερισμός.

<sup>30</sup> Καὶ ἔλεγεν Πᾶς ὄμοιώσωμεν<sup>¶</sup> τὴν βασιλείαν τοῦ 30 ¶ a

28 σταχυν] σταχυν D | πληρη σιτον ΝΑC<sup>2</sup>ΛΔΠΦ al min<sup>pl</sup>] πληρεσ σιτοσ B πληρησ  
ο σιτοσ D πληρησ σιτον C<sup>\*vid</sup> πληρεσ σιτον min<sup>2</sup> πληροι σιτον min<sup>pau</sup> me<sup>cod</sup>  
29 παραδοι Ν<sup>\*</sup>BDA 2<sup>pe</sup>] παραδω Ν<sup>c</sup>ΑΒΛΘ<sup>b</sup>ΠΣΦ al min<sup>fere omn</sup> | εξαποστελλει 13 69 346  
30 πως ΝBCLΔ min<sup>pau</sup> b e syr<sup>hel mg</sup>] τινι ADΠΣΦ al min<sup>pl</sup> c f f i q vg syrr<sup>peh hel (txt)</sup>  
arm me go aeth Or | ομοιωσομεν C i 60<sub>4</sub> al<sup>pau</sup> latt ομοιωσω K 28 69 a.<sup>pau</sup> arm<sup>cod</sup>

τοματίζουσα ἡ τοῦ ἔτους ὥρα παρέχεται. On καρποφορεῖν see v. 20: here it is loosely used in reference to the incipient stages of the fruitbearing plant.

πρῶτον χόρτον κτλ.] Vg. *primum herbam, deinde spicam, deinde plenum frumentum.* With πρῶτον...εἶτεν ...εἶτεν cf. πρῶτον...ἔπειτα (1 Cor. xv. 46, 1 Th. iv. 16), πρῶτον...εἴτη (1 Tim. iii. 10): εἴτεν (Blass, Gr. p. 20) is a very rare, originally Ionic, form of εἴτη, for which see note on v. 17. Χόρτος is properly herbage suitable for pasture (see e.g. vi. 39, Jo. vi. 10); here it is the green blade of corn, as in Mt. xiii. 26. The next stage is that of the στάχυς (ii. 23, cf. Gen. xli. 6 ff. = Πλέσ), to which succeeds the πλήρης σῖτος (Job v. 26, σῖτος ὥριμος κατὰ καιρὸν θεριζόμενος). Not improbably Mc. or his early copyists wrote πλήρης σῖτον: see WH., *Notes*, p. 24, and J. Th. St. i., p. 121.

29. ὅταν δὲ παραδοῖ ὁ καρπός] Vg. *cum se produixerit fructus.* Cf. Mt. xiii. 26, ὅτε δὲ ἐβλάστησεν ὁ χόρτος καὶ καρπὸν ἐποίησεν. Παραδοῖ (conj. aor. = παραδῷ, see WH., *Notes*, p. 175, WSchm., p. 121, Blass, Gr. p. 49) is either ‘permits,’ ‘allows,’ a sense supported by such writers as Herod., Xen., Polyb. (e.g. Polyb. xxii. 24. 9, τῆς ὥρας παραδίδούσης), or rather perhaps, ‘yields [itself]’ for which Jos. xi. 19 (AF) is quoted (οὐκ ἦν πόλις ἡτις οὐ παρέδωκεν τοῖς νιοῖς Ἰσραὴλ = (B) ἦν οὐκ ἔλαβεν Ι.); cf. 1 Pet. ii. 23 ὃς...παρεδίδον ‘gave Himself

up,’ ‘yielded,’ ‘surrendered.’ Compare the Complutensian text of Hab. iii. 17 (LXX.), which for συκῆ οὐ καρποφορήσει reads ἡ σ. οὐ μὴ παραδῷ τὸν καρπὸν αὐτῆς.

ἀποστέλλει τὸ δρέπανον] Sc. ὁ ἄνθρωπος (v. 26); the time has again come for the intervention of the agriculturist. The phrase is borrowed from Joel iii. (iv.) 13: ἐξαποστειλατε (Ἄγγελοι, cf. Field, *Notes*, p. 26) δρέπανα ὅτι παρέστηκεν τρυγγός: cf. Apoc. xiv. 15, πέμψον τὸ δρέπανόν σου...ὅτι ἐξηράνθη ὁ θερισμὸς τῆς γῆς. Δρέπανον is the later form of the Attic δρεπάνη (cf. δρεπανηφόρος in 2 Macc. xiii. 2), used in LXX.<sup>(12)</sup> and N.T.<sup>(2)</sup>. Παρέστηκεν, not ‘is at hand,’ Vg. *adest*, or ‘stands by,’ as in the phrase οἱ παρεστηκότες (xiv. 47, &c.), but ‘is ready’ for the reaper, as the O.T. shews: cf. Joel l.c. where it is Ἀγγέλος and Exod. ix. 32, ἡ γὰρ κριθὴ παρεστηκύια (= בְּנֵי אֱלֹהִים).

Of the interpretation of this interesting parable only a few leading points can be stated here. The functions of the sower end with the sowing, those of the reaper begin with the harvest; all that lies between is left to the mysterious laws of growth co-operating with the soil, the sunshine, and the rain. Christ came to sow, and will come to reap: the rest belongs to the invisible working of His Spirit in the Church and in the soul.

30—32. PARABLE OF THE MUSTARD SEED (Mt. xiii. 31—32, Lc. xiii. 18—19).

30. πῶς ὄμοιώσωμεν...θῶμεν; (delib.

31 θεοῦ, ἦ ἐν τίνι αὐτὴν παραβολὴ θῶμεν; ὡς κόκκῳ σινάπεως, ὃς ὅταν σπαρῇ ἐπὶ τῆς γῆς, μικρότερον ὄν 32 πάντων τῶν σπερμάτων τῶν ἐπὶ τῆς γῆς—καὶ ὅταν

30 τωι NBC\*Δ min<sup>nonn</sup> Or] ποια AC<sup>2</sup>DΘ<sup>b</sup>ΙΙΣΦ min<sup>pl</sup> | θῶμεν NBC\*Δ 28 63 al<sup>pauc</sup>  
b (e) syr<sup>pshel</sup> me Or] παραβαλωμεν AC<sup>2</sup>DΘ<sup>b</sup>ΠΙΣΦ al min<sup>pl</sup> latt<sup>vt</sup>plvg syrr<sup>pshel(txt)</sup> arm  
31 ως] ομοια εστιν D cvid mevid | κοκκῳ NBCΔΠ<sup>b</sup>\*ΣΦ min<sup>nonn</sup>] κοκκον ACLΘ<sup>b</sup>Π<sup>b</sup> al  
min<sup>mu</sup> latt<sup>vid</sup> | om os NBC\* (hab NBC\*) | μικροτερον NBC\*LMΔ 13\* 28 33 131 179 235  
258 1071 al<sup>pauc</sup>] μικροτερος ACD<sup>2</sup>Θ<sup>b</sup>ΠΙΣΦ al min<sup>pl</sup> go | ov] εστιν (A)C(D)ΜΘ<sup>b</sup>ΙΙΣΦ al  
min<sup>pl</sup> latt<sup>vt</sup>plvg arm go | των επι της γης] om C 271 b e a εισιν ε. τ. γ. D

conj., WM., p. 356, Blass, *Gr.*, p. 210). Lc. (who has placed this parable and the parable which follows it in Mt. in quite another context) retains the double question which Mt. has lost; for the form cf. Isa. xl. 18. ‘How are we to depict the kingdom of God? in what new light can we place it?’ The Lord, as a wise teacher, seems to take His audience into His counsels, and to seek their help (cf. Blass, *Gr.*, p. 166). But the parable is ready, and follows without a break.

31. ὡς κόκκῳ σινάπεως] Wycliffe, “as a corn of seneueye.” Answer to πῶς ὁμοιώσωμεν κτλ.; two constructions seem to be combined—ὡς κόκκον [θήσομεν] and κόκκῳ [όμοιώσομεν]. Κόκκος is here a grain or seed, as in κ. σίτου Jo. xii. 24, 1 Cor. xv. 37; in the LXX. κόκκος is the scarlet dye (Lam. iv. 5, Heb. יְלִינָה, Sir. xlvi. 11, Heb. יְלִינָה), more usually τὸ κόκκινον (cf. Mt. xxvii. 28, &c.), produced from the berry-like grub which feeds on the *ilex coccifera*. The σίναπι is probably *sinapis nigra*, which, though but a herb (λάχανον Mt. xiii. 32), grows to a great height in the warm valley of the Jordan, forming branches and assuming the appearance of a small tree (Lc. xiii. 19, ἐγένετο εἰς δένδρον). The point of the parable lies in the contrast between the relatively small seed and the size to which the plant attains; cf. Mt. xvii. 20 = Lc. xvii. 6. The disproportion seems to have been proverbial. Pa-

tristic writers refer also to the properties of the mustard seed e.g. Hilary (*in Mt.*): “grano sinapis seipsum Dominus comparavit acri maxime ...acrius virtus et potestas tribulationibus et pressuris accenditur.” But this, if designed, is quite in the background of the thought.

ὅταν σπαρῇ ἐπὶ τῆς γῆς] Mt. and Lc. particularise: the mustard is sown not in the open plain like the wheat, but ἐν τῷ ἀγρῷ, εἰς κῆπον (3 Regn. xx. [xxi.] 2); it is a garden herb. Μικρότερον ὄν πάντων τῶν σπερμάτων: the construction is again involved: we expect ὃ (sc. σπέρμα) μικρ. ὄν...γῆς, ὅταν σπαρῇ κτλ., or as in Mt. ὃ μικρ. μέν εστιν...ὅταν δέ κτλ. The verse reads like a rough note translated without any attempt to remove grammatical difficulties. On the use of the comp. when the superlative seems to be required see WM., p. 303. The seed is relatively the least of seeds, i.e. in proportion to the plant. For one of several possible applications cf. Jerome *in Mt.* xiii.: “praedicatio evangelii minima est omnibus disciplinis...hominem Deum, Deum mortuum, scandalum crucis praedicans. Confer huiuscmodi doctrinam dogmatibus philosophorum...sed illa cum creverit, nihil mordax, nihil vividum, nihil vitale demonstrat.”

32. καὶ ὅταν σπαρῇ takes up the thread of ὃς ὅταν σπ., broken by the intruded participial clause. For ἀναβαίνει, *ascendit*, see above, v. 7. Mt. and Lc. exaggerate the growth (*γίνεται*

*σπαρῆ, ἀναβαίνει καὶ γίνεται μεῖζον πάντων τῶν λαχάνων καὶ ποιεῖ κλάδους μεγάλους, ὥστε δύνασθαι ὑπὸ τὴν σκιὰν αὐτοῦ τὰ πετεινὰ τοῦ οὐρανοῦ κατασκηνοῦν.*

<sup>33</sup> Καὶ τοιαύταις παραβολαῖς πολλαῖς ἐλάλει 33 αὐτοῖς τὸν λόγον, καθὼς ἦδύναντο ἀκούειν. <sup>34</sup> χωρὶς 34 δὲ παραβολῆς οὐκ ἐλάλει αὐτοῖς, κατ' ἴδιαν δὲ τοῖς ἴδιοις μαθηταῖς ἐπέλυεν πάντα.

<sup>32</sup> μεῖζων DFGHKMSUΔΠΣΦ min<sup>v1</sup> | κατασκηνοῦν B\* (-νουν ΝΑΒ<sup>2</sup>CDL al)] κατασκηνωσ[αι] Δ<sup>v1d</sup>      33 ομ πολλαῖς C\*<sup>v1d</sup>Δ I 28 33 131 604 al<sup>nonn</sup> b c e syr<sup>pesh</sup> arm me<sup>odd</sup> aeth | ομ καθὼς ηδυν. ἀκονειν Φ      34 χωρὶς δε] καὶ χωρὶς ΒΦ 604 me syr<sup>pesh</sup> | καθ ἴδιαν B\*ΔΔ | τοις ἴδιοις μαθ. ΝΒCLΔ 1071 ΟΓ] τ. μαθ. αυτον ΑΔΘ<sup>b</sup>ΠΣΦ al min<sup>fero</sup> omn | απελνειν Θ<sup>b</sup>

δένδρον, ἐγένετο εἰς δ.), whilst Mc. adheres to the fact: it becomes the tallest of garden herbs—a δενδρολάχανον, as Theophrastus calls such towering succulent plants (*hist. plant.* i. 3, 4). For λάχανον see Gen. ix. 3, Prov. xv. 17, Le. xi. 42, Rom. xiv. 2; for ποιεῖν κλάδους cf. Ezech. xvii. 8 τοῦ ποιεῖν βλαστούς.

καὶ ποιεῖ κτλ. refers to Dan. iv. 9 (12), Th., ἐν τοῖς κλάδοις αὐτοῦ κατόκουν (v. 18 κατεσκήνουν) τὰ ὄρνεα (LXX. τὰ πετεινὰ) τοῦ οὐρανοῦ κτλ.: cf. Ps. ciii. (civ.) 12, Ezech. xvii. 23. Κατασκηνοῦν: see WH., *Notes*, p. 173; WSchm., p. 116 n., Blass, *Gr.* p. 48.

The parable supplied the followers of the Gnostic Marcus with materials for one of their mystic formulas: Iren. i. 13. 2, ἡ ἀνενόητος καὶ ἄρρητος χάρις...πληθύναι ἔν σοι τὴν γνώσιν αὐτῆς, ἐγκατασπείρουσα τὸν κόκκον τοῦ σωτάπεως εἰς τὴν ἀγαθὴν γῆν.

The three parables of the Sower, the Growth, and the Seed, direct attention successively to the soil, the hidden life working in the seed, and the seed itself in its relation to the final results of the sowing. Any impression of failure derived from the first parable is corrected by the second and the third. While the first two regard the Kingdom of

Heaven in its operations upon the individual, the third represents it as an imperial power, destined to overshadow the world.

33–34. GENERAL LAW OF PARABOLIC TEACHING (Mt. xiii. 34).

33 f. τοιαύταις παραβολαῖς πολλαῖς] The parables just given are to be regarded as specimens, a few out of many. Even Mt.'s ταῖτα πάντα ἐλάλησεν ...ἐν παραβολαῖς must not be taken as limiting the parables to the seven which he relates. Ἐλάλει αὐτοῖς τὸν λόγον: the subject of the teaching was the same as at the outset (ii. 2)—the word of the Kingdom—though the method was new. Καθὼς ἦδύναντο ἀκούειν: comp. Jo. xvi. 12, 1 Cor. iii. 2, Heb. v. 12 f., xii. 20. Χωρὶς δὲ παραβολῆς κτλ., 'but apart from a parable,' except in a parabolic form, He did not speak to them (sc. τοῖς ὄχλοις, Mt.), i.e. at this stage of His ministry; with the form of the sentence comp. Jo. i. 3, Philem. 14, Heb. ix. 18. Mt. finds in this a fulfilment of Ps. lxxviii. 2 f.

κατ' ἴδιαν δέ κτλ.] Wycliffe, "bi hemisilf," by themselves. Κατ' ἴδιαν (for the form καθ' ἴδιαν see WH., *Notes*, p. 145)=κατὰ μόνας. v. 10—when the crowd had dispersed and He was left with His immediate followers. Τοῖς

τεθ<sup>35</sup> 35 Καὶ λέγει<sup>¶</sup> αὐτοῖς ἐν ἐκείνῃ τῇ ἡμέρᾳ ὁψίας  
 36 γενομένης Διέλθωμεν εἰς τὸ πέραν. 36 καὶ ἀφέντες  
 τὸν ὄχλον παραλαμβάνουσιν αὐτὸν ὡς ἦν ἐν τῷ  
 37 πλοιώ, καὶ ἄλλα πλοῖα ἦν μετ' αὐτοῦ. 37 καὶ γίνεται

35 om το 107<sup>1</sup> 36 καὶ αλλα] + δε AC<sup>2</sup>DEFGHKMSUVΠΣΦ (om δε NBC<sup>\*</sup>LΔ  
 min<sup>pauc</sup>) | πλοια ΗΑΒCДKМΔΠΣ 1 13 33 69 107<sup>1</sup> al<sup>nomn</sup>] πλοιαρια EFGHLSUVΦ  
 al<sup>pl</sup> | πλ. ην (ησαν ΝΔΔ) μετ αυτ.] τα οντα μετ αυτ. πλ. 1 28 604 2<sup>pe</sup> al<sup>pauc</sup> arm<sup>vid</sup>

*iδίοις μαθ.*, possibly suggested by *κατ'* *iδ.*, = *τοῖς μαθηταῖς αὐτοῦ* (Jo. xiii. 1), but emphasising the relation. *'Επιλύειν* is used of interpreting dreams (Gen. xl. 8, xli. 8, 12, Aq. = *συγκρίνειν*, *ἀπαγγέλλειν*, LXX.), and of deciding a question (Acts xix. 39); *ἐπίλυσις* in 2 Pet. i. 20 = the exposition of Scripture. Mc. has given us our Lord's *ἐπίλυσις* of one of the parables (*v. 14 ff.*): exposition now regularly followed (*ἐπέλυνεν πάντα*) the public teaching. Cf. Orig. c. Cels. iii. 46, *ἐπέλυεν ... προτιμῶν παρὰ τοὺς ὄχλους τοὺς τῆς σοφίας αὐτοῦ ἐπιθυμοῦντας.*

35—41. STILLING OF THE WIND AND SEA (Mt. viii. 23—27, Lc. viii. 22—25).

35. *ἐν ἐκείνῃ τῇ ἡμέρᾳ* links on the sequel with iv. 1 ff., and therefore with iii. 20 ff. Lc. seems to have lost this note of time, but preserves the general order (*έγένετο δὲ ἐν μιᾷ τῶν ἡμερῶν*); Mt. transfers this miracle and the next into another context.

*οψίας γενομένης*] Late in the afternoon, but probably before sunset; for the crowd had not yet left the shore; see however i. 32, Jo. vi. 16, 17. The immediate purpose of the crossing was perhaps to disperse the crowd before nightfall. *Διέλθωμεν*, 'let us go through'; so Lc., Mt. uses *ἀπελθεῖν*. *Διαπερᾶν* is the usual word (*v. 21*, vi. 53), *διέρχεσθαι* being more appropriate to travelling by land (Lc. ii. 15, xvii. 21, Jo. iv. 4, Acts viii. 4, &c.), or, if used of the water, meaning to wade (Ps. lxv.

(lxvi.) 12) rather than to cross. *Τὸ πέραν*: sc. *τῆς θαλάσσης*, cf. v. 1.

36. καὶ ἀφέντες τὸν ὄχλον κτλ.] See the two striking incidents which Mt. connects with this departure (viii. 18—22). The Lord was already on board (Mc. iv. 1)—a point which Mt. (*ἔμβάντι αὐτῷ*) and Lc. (*αὐτὸς ἐνέβη*) overlook,—and He now put to sea (Lc. *ἀνήχθησαν*) without going ashore to make preparations (*ὡς ἦν*, Vg. *ita ut erat*). Euth.: *ὡς ἦν, ἀντὶ τοῦ ὡς ἐκάθητο ἐν τῷ πλοιώ*. For the phrase cf. 4 Regn. vii. 7 (*ὡς ἔστιν = נִיר שְׂאָכָה*); Fritzsche cites Lucian, *As.* 24, *ἀφῆκαν ὡς ἦν ἐν τῷ δεσμῷ*. For *παραλ.* see Acts xv. 39: in the Gospels the word is commonly used of the Lord 'taking' the Twelve, e.g. ix. 2, x. 32, xiv. 33, cf. Jo. xiv. 3; but here the disciples, as owners and navigators of the boat, 'take' Him with them. Mc. alone adds that other boats started with them, either as an escort, or through eagerness to follow the Rabbi; these were probably scattered by the storm, or soon turned back again. One boat seems to have sufficed for the Twelve and the Lord, see vi. 32, 45; otherwise we might suppose the *ἄλλα πλοῖα* to be those of other disciples.

37. γίνεται λαῖλαψ μεγάλη κτλ.] Mt. speaks only of the *σεισμὸς μέγας* on the water which resulted. Lc. on the other hand adds to the picture, possibly from his knowledge of the locality, *κατέβη λ. ἀνέμου εἰς τὴν λίμνην*. The cyclonic wind which arose swept down upon the lake from the hills through the ravines on the W. shore:

λαῖλαψ μεγάλη ἀνέμου, καὶ τὰ κύματα ἐπέβαλλεν εἰς τὸ πλοῖον, ὥστε ἥδη γεμίζεσθαι τὸ πλοῖον.  
 38 καὶ αὐτὸς ἦν ἐν τῇ πρύμνῃ ἐπὶ τὸ προσκεφάλαιον καθεύδων· καὶ ἐγείρουσιν αὐτὸν καὶ λέγουσιν αὐτῷ Διδάσκαλε, οὐ μέλει σοι ὅτι ἀπολλύμεθα; 39 καὶ 39 ¶ α

37 μεγαλον Σ ε | επεβαλλεν ABCGHKSVΔΠ<sup>2</sup>ΣΦ min<sup>pl</sup> latt<sup>vt</sup> plv<sup>g</sup>] επεβαλλεν ΝΕFL ΜΠ\* min<sup>sat</sup> mu εβαλεν D ενεβαλεν (U) min<sup>pauc</sup> | om ωστε...το πλ. Ν\* (hab Ν<sup>a</sup>) | ηδη γεμ. το πλ.] αυτο ηδη γεμ. ΑΕΦΗΚΜΣΥΝΠ(Σ)Φ 13 69 124 346 syrr<sup>Desh hel</sup>(txt) arm go | γεμιζεσθαι] βυθιζεσθαι G 1 33 al<sup>nominative</sup> καταποντιζεσθαι min<sup>pauc</sup> 38 εν ΝΑΒCΔLΔ min<sup>nominative</sup>] επι ΠΣΦ al min<sup>pl</sup> | επι προσκεφαλαιον D 131 | εγειρουσιν ΝΒ\* C\*ΔΠ min<sup>pauc</sup>] διεγειρουσιν AB<sup>2</sup>C<sup>2</sup>LΠ<sup>2</sup>ΣΦ al min<sup>pl</sup> διεγειραντες (om και sq) D 28 69 604 2<sup>po</sup> εγειραντες 13 69 al<sup>pauc</sup>

cf. G. A. Smith, *H. G.* p. 441 f. For λαῖλαψ see Ps. liv. (lv.) 9, Aq. (= LXX., καταγίς), Job xxi. 18, Sir. xlvi. 9 (חַרְשָׁם), Jer. xxxii. 18 = xxv. 32 (רַעֲשָׁם), 2 Pet. ii. 17.

καὶ τὰ κύματα ἐπέβαλλεν κτλ.] ‘The waves came crowding up into the boat.’ For various uses of ἐπιβάλλειν intrans. cf. Tob. vi. 11, Judith xi. 12, 1 Macc. iv. 2, 2 Macc. iii. 3, Mc. xiv. 72, Lc. xv. 12: of classical exx. Plat. *Phaedr.* 248 Δ comes fairly near to the sense of the present context: ξυμπεριφέρονται πατοῦσαι ἀλλήλας καὶ ἐπιβάλλουσαι. If we follow these analogies εἰς is not ‘against,’ but ‘so as to enter’; the point is not the violence of the waves, but the filling of the boat.

ώστε ἥδη γεμίζεσθαι] Mt. ώστε... καλύπτεσθαι, Lc. συνεπληρούντο, adding καὶ ἐκινδύνευον (Jon. i. 4). For γεμίζεσθαι cf. Lc. xiv. 23, Apoc. xv. 8.

38. καὶ αὐτὸς...προσκεφάλαιον] Peculiar to Mark; the other Synoptists notice only that He slept (Mt. ἐκάθευδεν, Lc. ἀφύπνωσεν). Comp. Jon. i. 5, Ἰωνᾶς δὲ κατέβη εἰς τὴν κοιλην τοῦ πλοίου καὶ ἐκάθευδεν. Our Lord’s work for the day was done; the navigation belonged to others, and He took the opportunity of repose. He was in the stern (Acts xxvii. 29, 41), where He would not interfere with the working of the ship, on the head-rest—προσκεφάλαιον,

properly a pillow (*πρὸς κεφαλῆς*, Gen. xxviii. 11, 1 Regn. xxvi. 11 ff., 1 Esdr. iii. 8, Ezech. xiii. 18, 20), here possibly a rower’s cushion (see Smith, *Shipwreck*, p. 126 ff.); the art. indicates that there was but one on board, or in that part of the boat. According to the later Greek interpreters, it was merely a wooden head-rest (Thph. ξύλινον δὲ πάντας ἦν τοῦτο), possibly a stage or platform; cf. Macgregor, *Rob Roy on the Jordan*<sup>4</sup>, p. 321. See however Hesychius *ad v.*: τὸ δερμάτινον ὑπῆρσιον ἐφ' φ' καθέζονται οἱ ἔρεσσοντες. Sleep is attributed to our Lord in this context only; but it is probably implied in i. 35, and in passages which describe His vigils as if they were exceptional. The fact that He slept is rightly regarded by Leo M. (*ad Flav.*) as fatal to a Eutychian view of His Person: “dormire evidenter humanum est.” Yet, as Ambrose says (*in Lc.*), “exprimitur securitas potestatis quod...solus intrepidus quiescebat.” On αὐτός see WM., p. 187.

διδάσκαλε] Mt. κύριε, Lc. ἐπιστάτα —all probably = Rabbi, cf. Mt. xvii. 4 with Mc. ix. 5, Lc. ix. 33, and Jo. i. 39. The touch of natural resentment at His seeming neglect which is seen in Mc.’s οὐ μέλει σοι, disappears in Mt. and Lc. For the phrase see Tob. x. 5, Lc. x. 40.

διεγερθεὶς ἐπετίμησεν τῷ ἀνέμῳ καὶ εἶπεν τῇ θαλάσσῃ Κιώπα, πεφίμωσο. καὶ ἐκόπασεν ὁ ἄνεμος,  
§ a 40 καὶ ἐγένετο γαλήνη μεγάλη. <sup>40</sup><sup>§</sup> καὶ εἶπεν αὐτοῖς Τί  
τι δειλοί ἔστε; οὐπω ἔχετε πίστιν; <sup>41</sup> καὶ ἐφοβήθησαν

39 εγερθεὶς D 28 69 60<sub>4</sub> 2<sup>po</sup> al<sup>pau</sup> | καὶ ειπεν τη θαλ.] καὶ τη θαλ. καὶ ειπεν D 1 118  
131 209 60<sub>4</sub> b c e ff i q arm | πεφίμωσο] καὶ φιμωθητι D <sup>40 εστε]</sup>+ουτως ACΠΣΦ  
al min<sup>fere</sup> oomn syrr arm go (om ΝBDΛΔ 2<sup>pe</sup> latt me aeth) | ουτω ΝBDΛΔ min<sup>pau</sup>  
latty<sup>tplyg</sup> arm me aeth] πως ουκ ACΠΣΦ al 33 al<sup>pl</sup> f syrr go

39. διεγερθεὶς κτλ.] They had no need to repeat their cry; it had the effect of fully arousing Him. From Wycliffe onwards the English versions follow the Vg. *exsurgens*, “He rose up,” or “He arose”; R.V. rightly, “He awoke.” The rebuking of the wind and sea presents a striking analogy to that of the unclean spirit in i. 25. The Sea is personified (cf. Ps. cv. (cvii.) 9), or perhaps regarded as the instrument of adverse powers; but comp. xi. 14, 23, for exx. of dramatic commands to inanimate objects. Mc. alone gives the words of the rebuke: πεφίμωσο (Wycliffe, “wexe doumb”), be still and continue so (WM., p. 395 f.), stronger than φιμωθητι (i. 25).

καὶ ἐκόπασεν κτλ.] Κοπάξειν is used of water in repose after a storm or a flood, Gen. viii. 1 ff., Jon. i. 11, 12; of fire, Num. xi. 2; of wind again in Mc. vi. 51. The wind, as if weary of a fruitless struggle, “sank to rest,” and the result was (*ἐγένετο*) a “great calm”: the little lake rapidly settled down again into its normal state of repose. Γαλήνη in Biblical Greek occurs only in this context and in Ps. cvi. (cvii.) 29, Symm.

40. τι δειλοί ἔστε;] Mt. with less probability makes the rebuke precede the stilling of the storm. In classical Greek δειλία is the extreme opposite of θρασύτης, the mean being ἀνδρεία (see Trench, *syn.* § x.). The δειλός is the man who lacks physical or moral courage and therefore fails to do his duty in danger: Arist. *rhet.* i. 9, ἀν-

δρεία δέ, δι' ἣν πρακτικοί εἰσι τῶν καλῶν ἔργων ἐν τοῖς κινδύνοις—δειλία δὲ τούναρτίον. Jewish ethical writers connect δειλία with an evil conscience (Sap. iv. 20, xvii. 11). In the N. T. a new element enters into the conception; δειλία is connected with ὀλιγοπιστίᾳ (Mt. here) and ἀπιστίᾳ (Apoc. xxi. 8); it is excluded by πίστις. Thus it becomes a sin of the first rank, for which the δεύτερος θάνατος is reserved. Hence the warning now, and again before the end (Jo. xiv. 27). The πνεῦμα δειλίας is not of God (2 Tim. i. 7); it is the opposite of the πνεῦμα δυνάμεως which was in Christ, and comes of faith.

οὐπω ἔχετε πίστιν;] Not yet, after months of discipleship. Comp. viii. 17, Jo. xiv. 9, Heb. vi. 12. Faith in its fulness (Mt. viii. 26) was still wanting to them; or as Lc. puts the matter, if they had faith, it was not ready at hand for use in time of need (ποῦν ἡ πίστις ὑμῶν;). This is the first of a series of censures on the Apostles for their lack of faith or understanding; see vii. 18, viii. 17, 21, 33, ix. 19, [xvi. 14], Mt. xiv. 31, xvi. 8, xvii. 20.

41. ἐφοβήθησαν φόβον μέγαν] An awe of the Presence of Christ generically different from the fear which sprang from want of faith in Him —indeed its direct opposite. This miracle came home to the Apostles above any that they had witnessed. It touched them personally: they had been delivered by it from imminent peril. It appealed to them as men

φόβον μέγαν, καὶ ἔλεγον πρὸς ἀλλήλους <sup>¶</sup> Τίς ἄρα οὗτός ἐστιν, ὅτι καὶ ὁ ἄνεμος καὶ ἡ θάλασσα ὑπάκουει αὐτῷ;

<sup>1</sup>Καὶ ἥλθον εἰς τὸ πέραν τῆς θαλάσσης εἰς τὴν Ι. χώραν τῶν Γερασηνῶν. <sup>¶</sup> <sup>2</sup>καὶ ἐξελθόντος αὐτοῦ ἐκ 2 ¶ W<sup>e</sup>

41 ο ἄνεμος] οι ἄνεμοι N<sup>c,a</sup>DE i 33 131 1071 al<sup>nonn</sup> b c f i q me aeth | υπακοει  
αυτω N<sup>c,BL</sup>] αυτω υπακοει N<sup>\*CΔ</sup> i 13 28 69 al<sup>pau</sup> υπακοουσιν αυτω ΑΠΣΦ al min<sup>pl</sup>  
b c d e f vg arm me go υπακοουσιν D V i ηλθεν CGLMΔ | θαλασσης] λιμνης  
604 | Γερασηνων N<sup>\*BD</sup> latt] Γαδαρηνων ΑCΠΣΦ al min<sup>pl</sup> syrr<sup>peshel(txt)</sup> go Γεργεσηνων  
N<sup>c,a</sup>LUA i 28 33 604 1071 al<sup>nonn</sup> syrr<sup>shel(mg)</sup> arm aeth Or 2 εξελθοντος αυτον  
N<sup>c,BCL</sup>Δ i 13 69 604 al<sup>pau</sup> b f syrr arm me aeth] εξελθοντι αυτω ΑΠΣΦ al min<sup>pl</sup>  
g i q vg go εξελθοντων αυτων D c eff

used to the navigation of the Lake. Thus it threw a new and awful light on the Person with Whom they daily associated. For φοβεῖσθαι φόβον μέγαν (cogn. acc., WM., p. 281) comp. Jon. i. 10, 1 Pet. iii. 6, 14 (Isa. viii. 12).

ἔλεγον πρὸς ἀλλήλους κτλ.] To Him they said nothing, their awe kept them silent (cf. Jo. xxi. 12). But as they worked the ship while He perhaps was resting again, the question went round τίς ἄρα οὗτός ἐστιν (Mc. Lc.) = ποταπός ἐστιν Mt. "Ἄρα is illative; 'in view of what we have just witnessed, what can we say of Him?' Cf. Mt. xviii. 1, xix. 25; Lc. i. 66, and see WM., p. 556. Wycliffe, "who, gessist thou, is this?" Τίς...ὅτι, cf. Blass, *Gr.* p. 293 n.

καὶ ὁ ἄνεμος καὶ ἡ θάλασσα] Not only the demons (i. 27), but, what to these sea-going men was a greater marvel, the wind and the sea. For a promise of the further extension of this power of Christ over the creation see i Cor. xv. 25 ff., Heb. ii. 5 ff.

An exquisite homiletical treatment of the story may be found in Aug. *serm.* 63: "audisti convicium, ventus est; iratus es, fluctus est...periclitatur navis, periclitatur cor tuum...oblitus es Christum; excita ergo Christum, recordare Christum, evigilet in te Christus, considera illum...imperavit Christus mari, facta est tranquillitas.

quod autem dixi ad iracundiam, hoc tenete regulariter in omnibus tentationibus vestris."

V. 1—13. CASTING OUT OF THE LEGION (Mt. viii. 28—32, Lc. viii. 26—33).

i. ἥλθον εἰς κτλ.] Lc. recasts the whole sentence: κατέπλευσαν εἰς τὴν χ. τῶν Γερ., ήτις ἐστὶν ἀντίπερα τῆς Γαλειλαίας. They reached the land of the Gerasenes right over against the Galilean shore. For τὸ πέραν see iv. 35.

τῶν Γερασηνῶν] So Lc. In Mt. Γαδαρηνῶν is the best attested reading. The 'Western' text substitutes Γερασηνῶν for Γαδ. in Mt., the 'Syrian' on the other hand changes Γερασηνῶν into Γαδ. in Mc. and Lc.; whilst the 'Alexandrian' text reads Γεργεσηνῶν in all three: see WH., *Notes*, p. II. Origen (*in Ioann.*, t. vi. 41) supports Γεργ. on purely internal grounds: Γέρασα δὲ τῆς Ἀραβίας ἐστὶ πόλις οὗτε θάλασσαν οὔτε λίμνην πλησίον ἔχουσα... Γάδαρα γὰρ πόλις μέν ἐστι τῆς Ιουδαίας ...ἀλλὰ Γέργεσα ἀφ' ἣς οἱ Γεργεσαῖοι πόλις ἀρχαῖα περὶ τὴν νῦν καλουμένην Τιβεριάδα λίμνην περὶ ἣν κρημνὸς προσκείμενος τῇ λίμνῃ (cf. t. x. 12 (10)). Jerome, who like Origen knew Palestine, bears witness to the existence of a Gergesa on the E. shore of the lake (*de situ*, p. 130: "et hodieque super montem viculus demonstratur iuxta

*τοῦ πλοίου [εὐθὺς] ὑπήντησεν αὐτῷ ἐκ τῶν μνημείων  
3 ἀνθρωπος ἐν πνεύματι ἀκαθάρτῳ, 3 ὃς τὴν κατοί-  
κησιν εἶχεν ἐν τοῖς μνήμασιν, καὶ οὐδὲ ἀλύσει οὐκέτι*

<sup>2</sup> om *ενθυς* B b c e ff i syrr<sup>sin pesh hel</sup> arm | *απηντησεν ΑΠΣΦ al min<sup>pl</sup>* 3 *μνημειοις*  
DH *min<sup>mu</sup>* | *ουδε ΚΒCDΛΔ 33 2<sup>ρη</sup>* *ουτε ΑΠΣΦ al min<sup>pl</sup>* | *αλυσει BC\*Λ 33 2<sup>ρη</sup> e e*  
*αλυσειν ΚΑC<sup>2</sup>ΔΗΠΦ al min<sup>pl</sup> b f ff i l q vg syrr arm me go aeth ουτε αλυσειν ουτε*  
*πεδεις 1071* | *om ουκετι ΑC<sup>2</sup>ΠΣΦ al min<sup>pl</sup> i q syrr me go aeth*

stagnum Tiberiadis"). Almost directly opposite to Mejdel on the Ghuweir are the ruins now known as *Kersa* (Wilson, *Recovery of Jerusalem*, p. 369) or *Kursi*: the nature of the place answers fairly well to the description in *vv. 11 ff.* where see note; comp. Thomson, *Land and the Book*, pp. 374f. But the Arabic name, which means a 'stool,' may be merely descriptive (Schumacher, *Jau-lân*, p. 179); and there seem to be philosophical difficulties in the way of an identification of *Kursi* with either Gerasa or Gergesa. The Decapolis city Gerasa, *Jerash* (Joseph. *B. J.* i. 4. 8, iii. 3), was thirty miles to the S.E., and, as Origen saw, impossible (see however Burkitt in *J.B.L.* xxvii. ii. (1908)). On the other hand the neighbourhood of the lake-side Gerasa might perhaps be loosely described as Gadarene territory; Gadara, *Um Keis* (Joseph. *B. J.* iv. 7), was but 6 miles S.E. of the southern extremity of the Lake, and Josephus (*vit. 9, 10*) mentions Γαδαρηνῶν καὶ Ἰππηνῶν κώμας αἱ δὴ μεθόρους τῆς Τιβεριάδος...έτυγχανον κείμεναι.

2. ἔξελθόντος...εὐθὺς κτλ.] The Lord had but just landed (*Lc. ἐπὶ τὴν γῆν*) when the incident occurred. Υπαντάν is common to Mt., Mc., Lc.; for ἐκ τῶν μνημείων Lc. has ἐκ τῆς πόλεως, but apparently in the sense of 'belonging to the town,' for he agrees with Mt. that the man had his residence in the tombs. "There do not appear to be any rock-hewn tombs near Kersa; but the demoniac may possibly have lived in one of those tombs built above ground" which were "much more common in Galilee

than has been supposed" (Wilson, *l.c.*). *Μνημεῖον* is used of both, see Mt. xxvii. 60, Lc. xi. 47.

ἀνθρωπος ἐν πνεύματι ἀκαθάρτῳ] *Ἐν*= in the sphere of, under the influence of: see note on *i. 23*. Mt. δύο δαιμονιζόμενοι, cf. δύο τυφλοί, Mt. xx. 30, where Mc. and Lc. mention one only. As Victor remarks, *τοῦτο οὐ διαφωνίαν ἐμφαίνεται*, since the mention of one demoniac does not exclude the presence of a second, unless it is expressly stated that he was alone: still it indicates either a distinct or a blurred tradition. Mc.'s description is too minute in other respects to permit us to suppose that it is defective here.

3. *τὴν κατοίκησιν εἶχεν ἐν τοῖς μν.*] Vg. *domicilium habebat in monumentis*. On the practice of haunting sepulchral chambers see Ps. lxvii. (lxviii.) 7, LXX. *τοὺς κατοικοῦντας ἐν τάφοις*, Isa. lxv. 4 ἐν τοῖς μνήμασιν...κοιμῶνται. *Κατοίκησις* is an ἀπ. λεγ. in the N.T.; in the LXX. it is fairly distributed (= בְּשִׁימָה), together with the non-classical *κατοικεσία*. *Μνῆμα* and *μνημεῖον* are used with nearly equal frequency in the LXX.; in the N.T. *μνῆμα* is relatively rare (Mc.<sup>1</sup> Lc.<sup>ev. 3, act. 2,</sup> Apoc.<sup>1</sup>, against about 40 exx. of *μνημεῖον*).

3—4. *καὶ οὐδὲ ἀλύσει κτλ.*] Not even (*οὐδέ*) fetters availed any longer (*οὐκέτι*); the malady had grown upon him to such an extent that coercive measures were now fruitless. Διὰ τὸ αὐτὸν...συντετρίφθαι: reason for the statement just made: 'since the experiment had often been made and proved futile.' Διὰ with the inf. here

οὐδεὶς ἐδύνατο αὐτὸν δῆσαι, <sup>4</sup>διὰ τὸ αὐτὸν πολλάκις 4 πέδαις καὶ ἀλύσεσι δεδέσθαι, καὶ διεσπάσθαι ὑπ’ αὐτοῦ τὰς ἀλύσεις καὶ τὰς πέδας συντετρίφθαι, καὶ οὐδεὶς ἵσχυεν αὐτὸν δαμάσαι. <sup>5</sup>καὶ διὰ παντὸς 5 νυκτὸς καὶ ἡμέρας ἐν τοῖς μνήμασιν καὶ ἐν τοῖς ὄρεσιν ἦν κράζων καὶ κατακόπτων ἐαυτὸν λίθοις. <sup>6</sup>καὶ 6

3 εδυνατο] ετολμα M 4 δια το...συντετριφθαι] οτι πολλακις αυτον δεδεμενον πεδes και αλυσεσιν εν αις εδησαν διεσπακεναι και τας πεδας συντετριφεναι D <sup>(sim ff i q vg)</sup> δια το αυτον πολλας πεδας και αλυσεις (hucusque sy<sup>sin</sup>) αις εδησαν αυτον διεσπακεναι και συντετριφεναι I 28 131 209 (60<sup>4</sup>) al<sup>antm</sup> δια το πολλ. αυτ. πεδαις και αλυσεσιν αις εδησαν διεσπακεναι και τας πεδας συντετριφθεναι 2<sup>pe</sup> | και μηδενα αυτον ισχυν δαμασαι D 604 | δαμασαι] δησαι A om N\* (hab N<sup>c.a</sup>) 5 και δια παντος νυκτος] νυκτος δε D b c effi q κ. δια πασης ν. 604 | εν τοις ορεσιν και εν τοις μνημειοις D (be i q) | κραζων] κραζον D κρανγαζων 69 124 225 346 | εαυτον] αυτον D

"expresses the evidence rather than the cause" (Burton, § 408). Πέδαις καὶ ἀλύσεσι, Vg. *compedibus et catenis*, with fetters and manacles; Wycliffe, "in stockis and cheynes"; cf. Ps. civ. (cv.) 18, 3 Macc. iv. 9, Acts xii. 7, and Lightfoot, *Philippians*, p. 8: Horacē, ep. i. 16, 76 "in manicis et compedibus saevo te sub custode tenebo." The perfects δεδέσθαι, διεσπάσθαι, συντετρίφθαι refer to actions "whose result was existing not at the time of speaking, but at an earlier time" (Burton, § 108). It is as if the writer's imagination had caught the words of the neighbours as they told the tale of their repeated failures (*οὐ δυνάμεθα αὐτὸν δῆσαι, πολλάκις γὰρ δέδεται κτλ.*), and he had embodied them without a change of tense. The scene reminds the reader of Samson, Jud. xvi. 8, 9, ἔδησεν αὐτὸν...καὶ διέσπασεν τὰς νευρέας (διέρρηξεν, A; cf. Lc., v. 29, διαρήσσων τὰ δεσμά). Διασπᾶσθαι is more than 'to be torn apart,' rather 'torn to shreds': cf. Jud. xvi. 9, Jer. x. 20, Acts xxiii. 10; συντρίβεσθαι is 'to be crushed' or 'broken into pieces,' like glass or pottery or a bone; cf. Mc. xiv. 3, Jo. xix. 36, Apoc. ii. 27.

4 καὶ οὐδεὶς ἵσχυεν αὐτὸν δαμάσαι] In its logical connexion the clause

belongs to the evidence introduced by διά, so that we should expect καὶ μηδένα ἵσχυειν. Mc. however reverts to the ind. imperf. of v. 3. On ἵσχυειν=δύνασθαι see Field, *Notes*, p. 26 f. Δαμάζειν is used properly of wild animals: see however James iii. 7, 8, with Mayor's note. Even iron ὁ δαμάζων πάντα (Dan. ii. 40, LXX.) failed in the present case.

5. νυκτὸς καὶ ἡμέρας] I.e. at intervals during the night and the day (see note on iv. 27); yet without any long intermission—practically διὰ παντός, cf. Deut. xxxiii. 10, Lc. xxiv. 53, Heb. ix. 6.

ἐν τοῖς ὄρεσιν] At times he left the shelter of the tombs for the open downs, and his cry was heard among the hills.

κράζων καὶ κατακόπτων ἐαυτόν] For κράζειν used of demoniacs or the possessing spirits see i. 26, iii. 11, ix. 26. St Paul transfers it to the domain of the Spirit of God, Rom. viii. 15, Gal. iv. 6. The word suggests strong emotion, which may be either good or evil. For κατακόπτειν, Vg. *concidere*, to cut to pieces (here only in N.T.) cf. 2 Chron. xxxiv. 7 (κ. λεπτά), Jer. xxi. 7 (κ. ἐν στόματι μαχαίρας); his body may in this way have been gashed and scarred all over, for (Lc.) χρόνῳ

ἰδὼν τὸν Ἰησοῦν ἀπὸ μακρόθεν ἐδραμεν καὶ προσε-  
7 κύνησεν αὐτόν, <sup>7</sup>καὶ κράξας φωνῇ μεγάλῃ λέγει Τί  
ἐμοὶ καὶ σοί, Ἰησοῦ, νὶè τοῦ θεοῦ τοῦ ὑψίστου;  
§ a 8 ὁρκίζω σε τὸν θεόν, μή με <sup>§</sup>βασανίσης. <sup>8</sup>ἔλεγεν γὰρ

6 om απὸ AKLMΠΣΦ min<sup>nomn</sup> | προσεκυνησεν] προσεπεσεν F | αυτων ABCΔΔ  
min<sup>pae</sup>] αυτω ΚΔΠΣΦ min<sup>nomn</sup> 7 λεγει] ειπεν D al min<sup>pl</sup> | υψιστου] ζωντος A  
syrr<sup>hel(mg)</sup> 8 ελεγεν γαρ] και ελεγεν Ι

*ικανῷ οὐκ ἐνεδύσατο ἡμάτιον.* Field (*Notes*, p. 27) defends the Wycliffite rendering “betynge hymself,” quoting Chrysostom for this use of *κατακόπτειν*; but *λίθοις* seems to determine its meaning in this context; cf. Syrr.<sup>sin. pesh.</sup> Mt. adds that the man was a source of danger to passers by, so that people avoided that way (i.e. apparently the way from the shore over the hills). At times a paroxysm seized him (Lc. *συνηρπάκει αὐτόν,* ἥλαννετο ἀπὸ τοῦ δαιμονίου), and then he was at his worst. Nevertheless the man did not attempt suicide; “servatus est homo ne, ut porci, in mare se praecepitaret” (Bengel).

6. καὶ ἰδών κτλ.] <sup>7</sup>Απὸ μακρόθεν (WM., p. 753 f.) occurs again viii. 3, xi. 13, xiv. 54, xv. 40, “ein dem Mark. besonders beliebter Pleonasmus” (Meyer-Weiss); it occurs also Mt.<sup>2</sup>, Lc.<sup>2</sup>, Apoc.<sup>3</sup>, and is fairly common in the LXX.; cf. 4 Regn. xix. 25, Α; 2 Esdr. iii. 13, xxii. 43, Ps. xxxvii. (xxxviii.) 12 (ΝεαΡΤ), cxxxvii. (cxxxviii.) 6, cxxxviii. (cxxxix.) 2: Aq. has εἰς ἀπὸ μ., 4 Regn. xix. 25. *Μακρόθεν* itself is a late Greek equivalent for *πόρρωθεν* (Blass, *Gr.* p. 59). <sup>7</sup>Ἐδραμεν—at first perhaps with hostile intentions. The onrush of the naked yelling maniac must have tried the newly recovered confidence of the Twelve. We can imagine their surprise when, on approaching, he threw himself on his knees; comp. iii. 11, *τὰ πνεύματα... προσέπιπτον.* *Προσκυνεῖν* is rarely used in the Gospels in reference to these acts of prostration exc. in Mt.

(only here and Mc. xv. 19, Lc. xxiv. 52, Jo. ix. 38).

7. καὶ κράξας] Lc. ἀνακράξας (cf. Mc. i. 23). The words of the cry begin as in Mc. l.c. (where see note) by repudiating fellowship and intercourse (*τι ἐμοὶ καὶ σοὶ;*). With *νὶè τοῦ θεοῦ* cf. ὁ ἄγιος τοῦ θεοῦ in the earlier incident. Τοῦ ὑψίστου, not in Mt., but probably original; ὁ ὑψίστος or (as a proper name) “Ὑψίστος = ᾧ ιηλυ λλ or ιηλυ, in LXX. frequently from Gen. xiv. 18, 19 onwards: in the N.T. it occurs only in passages with an O.T. ring, Lc. i. 32, 35, 76; vi. 35, viii. 28, Heb. vii. 1 (where see Westcott’s note), or in sayings attributed to the possessed (here, and in Acts xvi. 17). This name, which Israel used in common with other monotheists and even pagans, seems to have been displaced in Christian Gentile circles by words which gave a fuller view of God as revealed in Christ—Κύριος, θεός, ὁ πατήρ.

μή με βασανίσης] Mt. ἥλθες ὥδε πρὸ καιροῦ βασανίσαι ἡμᾶς; a remarkable variation which has the air of originality. The unclean spirits recognise that *βασανισμός* awaits them; it is only a question of time; cf. *Act. Thom.* § 42, τοῦ καιροῦ ἡμῶν μηδέπω ἐνεστῶτος... and on *καιρός* see Mc. i. 15 note. The ill-sounding words *βάσανος βασανίζω βασανισμός* meet the reader constantly in the Books of the Maccabees in descriptions of physical torture; in Wisdom they are used in reference to the plagues of Egypt (*Sap.* xi. 9, xii. 23, &c.). The N.T.

αὐτῷ Ἐξελθε, τὸ πνεῦμα τὸ ἀκάθαρτον, ἐκ τοῦ  
ἀνθρώπου. <sup>9</sup>καὶ ἐπηρώτα αὐτόν *Tί ὄνομά σοι;* καὶ <sup>9</sup>  
λέγει αὐτῷ Λεγιὼν ὄνομά μοι [ἐστίν], <sup>¶</sup> § ὅτι πολλοί <sup>¶ a</sup>  
ἔσμεν. <sup>10</sup>καὶ παρεκάλει αὐτὸν πολλὰ ἵνα μὴ αὐτὰ ΙΟ  
ἀποστείλῃ ἔξω τῆς χώρας. <sup>11</sup>ἡν δὲ ἐκεῖ πρὸς τῷ ΙΙ

8 εκ] απὸ Α 33 alpau<sup>c</sup> fi q vg 9 τι σοι ον. εστιν D latt Or<sup>int</sup> | λεγει αυτω] απεκριθη λεγων EFGHSUV<sup>mg</sup> min<sup>pl</sup> | λεγων N\*B\*CDLΔ latt syrr me] λεγεων (Nc)AB<sup>c</sup>PΣΦ al min<sup>forte omn</sup> | μοι]+εστιν B(D) 69 124 238 346 lat<sup>vplv</sup> arm 10 παρεκαλει NBCDLΠΣΦ min<sup>pl</sup> b e f i q vg go] παρεκαλονν ΑΔΤ i 28 2<sup>pe</sup> alpau<sup>c</sup> ff syr<sup>sin</sup> arm go + οι δαιμones syr<sup>sin</sup> | αυτα BCΔ] αυτον DEFGHSUVΣΦ<sup>7</sup> αυτον N KLII min<sup>pauc</sup> b e syrpesh aeth 11 προς τα ορη (S) min<sup>pauc</sup> vid

transfers them to the spiritual consequences of sin: cf. Mt. xviii. 34, Lc. xvi. 23, Apoc. xx. 10. Mc. alone retains the form of adjuration which accompanied this despairing appeal. Ὁρκίσω τνὰ κατὰ Κυρίον (*τοῦ θεού*) is the LXX. form (3 Regn. ii. 43, cf. Mt. xxvi. 63), but the present construction occurs again in Acts xix. 13, 1 Thess. v. 27; cf. ὥρκισω σε...τὸν θεὸν τοῦ Ἀβραάν κτλ. in the long Jewish incantation printed by Deissmann, *Bibelstudien*, p. 28 ff. (= E. Tr. p. 274 ff.).

8. ἔλεγεν γάρ κτλ.] ‘He had been saying’; cf. Burton, § 29. The command probably followed the words *τι ἐμοὶ...νψίστου;* With Ἐξελθε cf. i. 25, ix. 25. Τὸ πν. τὸ ἀκάθ., nom. for vocative; see WM., p. 227 f. and Blass, Gr. p. 86 f.

9. καὶ ἐπηρώτα] Lc. ἐπηρώτησεν. The imperfect carries on the narrative of the conversation. The question is probably a reply to the appeal μὴ με βασανίσης. Who was the suppliant? was it the man or his oppressor? This was the first point to be determined. Αὐτόν, cf. Euth.: τὸν ἄνθρωπον μὲν ἐπηρώτα πρὸς τὸ πλήθος δὲ τῶν ἐν αὐτῷ δαιμόνων διέβανεν η ἐρώτησις.

Λεγιὼν ὄνομά μοι κτλ.] *Legio* made its way not only into the later Greek, both Hellenistic and literary (Plutarch, i. 1072, Mt. xxvi. 53), but probably into the Aramaic of Palestine;

it is found in Rabbinical writings (לְגִידָן, pl. לְגִידָנִין, Dalman, *Gr.*, p. 149) and in early Aramaic inscriptions (S. A. Cook, *Glossary*, p. 67 s.v. נֶגֶד), and it survives in Lejjun, the modern name of a site usually identified with Megiddo (G. A. Smith, *H.G.* pp. 386, 407). To a Palestinian of our Lord’s time the name would connote not only vast numbers—the strength of the legion often reached 5000 to 6000 men (Marquardt, ii. 389, 441)—and submission to a superior will (Bengel: “uni parebant ut legio imperatori”); but the miseries of a military occupation by a foreign power (on the history of the Roman legion in Syria see Schürer II. i. p. 50 ff.); even such small bodies of irregular troops as served under Herod Antipas and Philip knew how to harass and plunder (Lc. iii. 14). For other exx. of possession by more than one unclean spirit cf. ‘Mc.’ xvi. 9, Lc. xi. 26; cf. Tertull. *anim.* 25, “septenarii spiritus, ut in Magdalena, et legionarii numeri, ut in Geraseno.”

10. παρεκάλει αὐτὸν πολλά] The sing. is used because the spirits, speaking by the voice of the man, are still regarded as a single *ego*; the imperfect implies repetition. Πολλά, Vg. *multum*, cf. i. 45, vi. 20; so μακρά Mc. xii. 40, πυκνά Lc. v. 33.

ἔξω τῆς χώρας] Vg. *extra regionem*,

12 ὅρει ἀγέλη χοίρων μεγάλη βοσκομένη· <sup>12</sup>καὶ παρε-  
§ a κάλεσαν § αὐτὸν λέγοντες Πέμψον ἡμᾶς εἰς τοὺς  
13 χοίρους, ἵνα εἰς αὐτοὺς εἰσέλθωμεν. <sup>13</sup>καὶ ἐπέτρεψεν  
αὐτοῖς. καὶ ἐξελθόντα τὰ πνεύματα τὰ ἀκάθαρτα

11 om μεγαλη DLU<sup>1</sup> min<sup>paue</sup> b e ff i go | βοσκομενων Nc.a ALΔ min<sup>paue</sup> b d q  
12 παρεκαλεσαν NBCLΔΠ<sup>mg</sup>ΣΦ7 i 28 al<sup>pl</sup> c go syr<sup>hcl</sup>] παρεκαλουν ADKMII<sup>txt</sup> min<sup>nominative</sup>  
b f ff i q vg | αυτον] + παντες οι δαιμones AEFGHSUVII<sup>mg</sup>ΣΦ7 a syr<sup>hcl</sup> arm + οι δαιμones  
KMP<sup>txt</sup> min<sup>nominative</sup> b e ff i q vg syr<sup>in pesh</sup> + παντα τα δαιμonia 604 2<sup>pe</sup> + τα δαιμonia D e f |  
λεγοντα D | απελθωμεν D 13 και επετρ. αυτοις] + ενθεως ΑΠΣ (Φ7 ενθ. o 15) al  
min<sup>pl</sup> f vg και ενθεως κς ης επεμψεν αυτους εις τους χοιρους D και ο I. επεμψεν  
αυτους 604 2<sup>pe</sup>

sc. τῶν Γερασηνῶν. Lc. has the remarkable variation εἰς τὴν ἄβυσσον, which may have the double meaning, (1) "into the depths of the sea" (so ἄβυσσος is frequently used in the LXX., cf. e.g. Isa. lxiii. 13); (2) into the place of punishment (Apoc. ix. 1, &c.). An attempt has been made (*Exp. iv. iv. p. 377*) to treat these two versions of the demoniac's words as renderings of nearly identical Aramaic; but it is probably safer to regard Lc.'s phrase as interpretative. The man feared nothing worse than expulsion from his native hills; the spirits dreaded a graver punishment. Bede: "hostis humanae salutis non exiguum sibi dicit esse tormentum ab hominis laesione cessare."

11. ἦν δὲ ἔκει κτλ.] Within sight, but (Mt.) at some distance. The herd was a large one (μεγάλη Mc., cf. πολλῶν Mt., ἱκανῶν Lc.), numbering ὡς δισχίλιοι (Mc. only). Πρὸς τῷ ὅρει: 'at,' on the side of the mountain, cf. Lc. xix. 37 πρὸς τῇ καταβάσει τοῦ ὅρους — a construction more frequent in the LXX. than in the N.T. (WM., p. 493).

ἀγέλη χοίρων μεγάλη] For the number see v. 13. The O.T. mentions ἀγέλαι προβάτων (1 Regn. xvii. 34), αἴγῶν (Cant. iv. 1, vi. 4), καμήλων (Isa. lx. 6); an ἀγ. χοίρων was perhaps hardly to be found W. of the Jordan and its lakes: even the word χοῖρος is unknown to the LXX. who use ὁσ in the few passages where they have oc-

casion to mention the unclean animal. On the moral difficulty which the destruction of the swine has been felt to present see Plummer, *St Luke*, p. 228 f.

βοσκομένη] For the middle voice of this verb cf. Gen. xli. 2, Job i. 14, Isa. xi. 6, etc. The swine were under the control of swineherds (οι βόσκοντες v. 14): for this class see Lc. xv. 15.

12. παρεκάλεσαν] Contrast παρεκάλει (v. 10), κράξα...λέγει (v. 7). The Spirits at length dissociate themselves from the man, for they know that their hold over him is at an end, and the plural is consequently used; cf. v. 13.

πέμψουν] Mt. ἀπόστειλον: for the difference of meaning see on iii. 14. Lc. avoids both verbs (ἵνα ἐπιτρέψῃ αὐτοὺς εἰς ἔκεινους εἰσελθεῖν). The Lord's ὑπάγετε (Mt.) was permissive only: they were left free to go if they would.

13. καὶ ἐπέτρεψεν αὐτοῖς] See last note. The reading of D (εὐθέως κύριος Ἰησοῦς ἐπεμψεν αὐτοὺς εἰς τους χοίρους) loses sight of an important distinction. The permission shewed how completely the spirits were subject to His will: Clem. *Hom.* xix. 14, ὡς μηδὲ τοῦ εἰς χοίρους εἰσελθεῖν ἀνευ τῆς αὐτοῦ συγχωρήσεως ἐξουσίαν ἔχοντες. Cf. Tertull. *fug.* 2: "nec in pororum gregem diaboli legio habuit potestatem nisi eam de Deo impetrasset," and Thphnt. *ad loc.*

καὶ ἐξελθόντα κτλ.] Ἐξελθεῖν and εἰσελθεῖν are regularly used in refer-

εἰσῆλθον εἰς τοὺς χοίρους, καὶ ὥρμησεν ἡ ἀγέλη κατὰ τοῦ κρημνοῦ εἰς τὴν θάλασσαν, ὡς δισχίλιοι, καὶ ἐπνίγοντο ἐν τῇ θαλάσσῃ.

<sup>14</sup> Καὶ οἱ βόσκοντες αὐτοὺς ἔφυγον<sup>¶</sup> § καὶ ἀπήγ- 14<sup>¶</sup><sub>a</sub><sup>b</sup> γειλαν εἰς τὴν πόλιν καὶ εἰς τοὺς ἄγρους· καὶ ἦλθον

<sup>13 αγελη]+πασα 1071 | ως δισχιλιοι] ως β (ras i lit ante β B?) B ως χιλιοι H pr ησαν δε AC<sup>2</sup>ΠΡΦΤ al min<sup>pl</sup> a fil (arm) go pr ησαν γαρ min<sup>pau</sup> syr<sup>hel</sup> 14 αυτοις]  
τους χοιρους ΑΠ al<sup>pl</sup> syr<sup>hel</sup> arm go | ανηγγειλαν EFGHSUVΔ al<sup>pl</sup> | ηλθον Κ.Α  
ΑΒΚΛΜΥΝ<sup>\*ΣΦΤ</sup> 33 al<sup>nonn</sup> syr<sup>hel</sup> me go] εξηλθον Κ\*CDEFGHSVΔΠ<sup>2</sup> min<sup>pl</sup>  
b e f f i v g syr<sup>sin pesh</sup> arm aeth om H al<sup>pau</sup></sup>

ence to possession: cf. Mc. i. 25, 26, vii. 29, 30, Mt. xii. 43, Lc. viii. 30, xi. 26, Jo. xiii. 27. Τὰ πνεύματα τὰ ἀκάθαρτα, cf. τὸ πνεῦμα τὸ ἀκάθαρτον (v. 7). The corporate unity which resulted from their identification with the man's personality is now lost: see on v. 11. *Eἰς τοὺς χοίρους.* Patristic writers point out the fitness of the coincidence which brought unclean spirits into fellowship with the most unclean of beasts: e.g. Macarius Maganes iii. 11, οὐ προβάτων ἀγέλας οὐδὲ ἵππων οὐδὲ βοῶν λαβεῖν πουνδάζομεν, ταῦτα γάρ τὰ ζῷα καθαρὰ καὶ ἀμύσακτα, ἀλλὰ χοίρων ὑπόστρων καὶ ἀτάκτων ἄθροισμα. The moral was readily drawn: Clem. *Hom.* x. 6, ἐπεὶ οὖν ἀλόγοις ζῷοις ἐσικότα πράξαντες ἐκ τῆς ψυχῆς ὅμῶν τὴν ἀνθράπον ψυχὴν ἀπωλέσατε, ὥσπερ χοῖροι γενόμενοι δαιμόνων αἰτήματα ἐγένεσθε.

ὥρμησεν ἡ ἀγέλη κτλ.] Vg. *magno impetu grex praecipitatus est*; Wycliffe, "with a great birre the flok was cast doun." Driven to madness by a new and sudden impulse the herd rushed to its destruction. Ὁρμᾶν is used of the unreasoning onrush of a crowd, 2 Macc. ix. 2, x. 16, xii. 22, Acts vii. 57, xix. 29. Κατὰ τοῦ κρημνοῦ, "down from the steep," WM., p. 477. Κρημνός = γύρη, 2 Chron. xxv. 12. Of Kersa Schumacher (p. 180) reports: "steep precipices at a

slight distance from the Lake...are numerous." Ως δισχιλιοι: the number is given by Mc. alone. Dr Plummer (*St Luke*, p. 231) remarks that it "may be an exaggeration of the swineherds or owners," adding, "Had the number been an invention of the narrator, we should have had 4000 or 5000 to correspond with the legion."

ἐπνίγοντο] *suffocati sunt*, Lc. ἀπεπνίγη; Mt. more vaguely, ἀπέθανον ἐν τοῖς ὕδαισι. The word is used in 1 Regn. xvi. 14 f. of the effect of possession by an evil spirit.

14-17. THE GERAENES ALARMED AND HOSTILE (Mt. viii. 33-34, Lc. viii. 34-37).

14. καὶ οἱ βόσκοντες κτλ.] The χοιροβόσκοι fled, narrowly escaping the fate of the herd, and reported the matter in Gerasa and the country places round the town (καὶ εἰς τοὺς ἄγρους, Mc. Lc., cf. Mc. vi. 36, 56, xv. 21). Καὶ ἦλθον ἰδεῖν, i.e. the townsfolk and the countryside poured down to the place where Jesus was apparently still halting by the Lake; cf. Mt. πάσα ἡ πόλις ἐξῆλθεν εἰς ὑπάτησιν τῷ Ἰησοῦ. Their immediate object was to see what had happened (τὸ γεγονός); but finding all quiet again, they went down to the shore (ἔρχονται πρὸς τὸν Ι. Mc., cf. Lc.) and there witnessed a scene more remarkable than that which the swineherds had described.

15 ἴδεῖν τί ἔστιν τὸ γεγονός. <sup>15</sup>καὶ ἔρχονται πρὸς τὸν  
 Ἰησοῦν, καὶ θεωροῦσιν τὸν δαιμονιζόμενον καθήμενον  
 ἵματισμένον καὶ σωφρονοῦντα, τὸν ἐσχηκότα τὸν  
 § W<sup>r</sup> 16 λεγιῶνα· καὶ ἐφοβήθησαν. <sup>16</sup>καὶ § διηγήσαντο αὐτοῖς  
 § Whoi iδόντες πῶς § ἐγένετο τῷ δαιμονιζομένῳ, καὶ περὶ

15 τὸν δαιμ.] pr. *αυτον* D | om. *καθημενον* Δ *minperpauc* e | *ιματισμενον*] pr. και  
 ΑCIIΦΠ al *minpl* q *syr<sup>sin</sup> hel* arm go (om και ΗBDLΔΣ) | om *τον εσχηκοτα τον λεγιωνα*  
 D *minperpauc* *latt<sup>vt</sup> vg* (odd pler) 16 και διηγησαντο] διηγ. δε DEFHUV al<sup>mu</sup>  
 e f i q και διηγ. δε 1071 | *ιδοντες*] ειδοτες Δ | εγενετο τω δαιμ.] εσωθη ο δαιμονισθεις  
 1 209

15. θεωροῦσιν τὸν δαιμονιζόμενον κτλ.] For θεωρεῖν cf. iii. 11, xii. 41, xv. 40. ‘Ο δαιμονιζόμενος is timeless (see note on i. 4), the man who, as they knew him, belonged to the class of demoniacs: see WM., p. 444, Burton § 123. Contrast ὁ δαιμονισθείς (v. 18), where the fact of the possession being now at an end is emphasised. Καθ., ίμ., σωφρ., “cum antea fuisse sine quiete, vestibus, rationis usu” (Bengel). Καθήμενον, as a disciple (Lc. ii. 46, x. 39). Lc. adds here παρὰ τοὺς πόδας τοῦ Ἰησοῦ, the technical phrase for the position of the scholar (Acts xxii. 2, cf. Schürer II. i. 326).

ιματισμένον] Before he took his seat among the disciples he had been clothed (cf. Lc. viii. 27), perhaps with a spare χιτών belonging to one of the Twelve. Though ιματισμός is fairly common, the verb has not been detected elsewhere in Greek literature, yet here it is used both by Mc. and Lc., who also share καθήμ. and σωφρονοῦντα—a coincidence difficult to explain except on the hypothesis of a common Greek tradition or document, or on that of one of the two Evangelists having borrowed from the other. Σωφρονεῖν is opposed to ὑπερφρονεῖν (Rom. xii. 3), and ἐκστῆναι (2 Cor. v. 13); the σωφρων goes with the νηφάλιος, the κόσμιος, the σεμνός (1 Tim. iii. 2, Tit. ii. 2), σωφροσύνη with αἰδάς (1 Tim. ii. 9). These conceptions however belong to a developed Chris-

tian ethic; in the present passage the word scarcely rises above its ordinary Greek sense. Cf. Arist. *rhet.* i. 9. 9 σωφροσύνη δὲ ἀρετὴ δι' ἥν rās ήδονὰς τοῦ σώματος οὕτως ἔχουσιν ὡς ὁ νόμος κελεύει· ἀκολαστὰ δὲ τούναντίον. 4 Macc. i. 31 σωφρ. δὴ τοίνυν ἐστὶν ἐπικράτεια τῶν ἐπιθυμιῶν. The man was not simply *sanae mentis* (Vg.), but free from the slavery of headstrong passions, master of himself again. Τὸν ἐσχηκότα τὸν λεγιῶνα emphasises the contrast between his present state and that from which he had been just set free; the words are not in Lc. and may be an editorial note due to Mc. For the perf. part. see Burton, § 156; while ιματισμένον describes a condition which belongs to the time indicated by θεωροῦσιν, ἐσχηκότα goes back behind it, to a state which had ceased to exist, ‘who had had the Legion’; so the mss. of the Vg. which retain the clause (*qui habuerat legionem*). Καὶ ἐφοβήθησαν, cf. iv. 41; both events excited the awe which attends the supernatural.

16. καὶ διηγήσαντο κτλ.] The towns-folk turned to those who had witnessed everything—the Twelve, and perhaps a few bystanders—and learnt from them the whole story. Διηγεῖσθαι (a common equivalent of רְבַד in the LXX. but relatively rare in the N.T., Mt.<sup>2</sup> Lc.<sup>ev. 2, act. 3</sup> Heb.<sup>1</sup>) well expresses the voluminousness of the Eastern story-teller; cf. ix. 9.

*τῶν χοίρων.* <sup>17</sup> καὶ ἤρξαντο παρακαλεῖν αὐτὸν ἀπέλ- 17  
θεῖν ἀπὸ τῶν ὄριων αὐτῶν.

<sup>18</sup> Καὶ ἐμβαίνοντος αὐτοῦ εἰς τὸ πλοῖον παρεκάλει 18  
αὐτὸν ὁ δαιμονισθεὶς ἵνα μετ' αὐτοῦ ἦ. <sup>19</sup> καὶ οὐκ 19  
ἀφῆκεν αὐτόν, ἀλλὰ λέγει αὐτῷ <sup>“</sup>Υπαγε εἰς τὸν οἶκόν  
σου πρὸς τοὺς σούς, καὶ ἀπάγγειλον αὐτοῖς ὅσα § 6      § a  
κύριός σοι πεποίηκεν καὶ ἥλεησέν σε. <sup>20</sup> καὶ ἀπῆλθεν 20

<sup>17</sup> ηρξ. παρακαλειν] παρεκαλουν D 225 604 2<sup>ρο</sup> a | απελθειν] ινα απελθη D | απο] εκ Δ      18 εμβαινοντος ΗΑΒCDKLMΔΠΣΤ 1 33 124 al<sup>nomin</sup>] εμβαντος ΕFGHSUVΦ  
min<sup>pl</sup> | παρεκαλει] ηρξατο παρακαλειν D latt<sup>vtplyg</sup>      19 και 1<sup>ο</sup> ΗΑΒCKLMΔΠ 1 33  
f1 vg syrpeshel me go] και ο Ιησους 69 arm ο δε I. D rell b c eff g i aeth | απαγ-  
γειλον] διαγγειλον D 1 13 28 69 131 209 346 604 αναγγειλον ΑΛΠΣΦΤ al | ο κυριος] ο  
θεος D 238 | πεποιηκεν ΗΑΒCLΠΣΤ min<sup>permu</sup> me] εποιησεν DKΦ min<sup>nomin</sup> | και ηλ.] κ.  
οτι ηλ. D b c f i syrpesh(non sin)

17. καὶ ἤρξαντο κτλ.] Ephrem (*conc. exp. ev.* p. 75) represents the Gerasenes as hostile from the first. It is difficult to say how far this little town within Gadarene territory may have fallen under pagan influences—the owners and keepers of the swine were surely indifferent Jews—but their unwillingness to receive Christ was probably due to the fear that His miraculous powers might bring upon them further losses. The demand for His departure was unanimous acc. to Lc.: ἡρώτησεν αὐτὸν ἀπαν τὸ πλῆθος τῆς περιχώρου. The only parallel in the Galilean Ministry is the expulsion from Nazareth (Lc. iv. 29). The ὅρια would be the bounds of the district attached to Gerasa, cf. Mt. ii. 16, xv. 39, Mc. vii. 24, 31.

18—20. THE RESTORED DEMONIAC SENT TO EVANGELISE (Lc. viii. 38—39).

18. ἐμβαίνοντος αὐτοῦ κτλ.] As He was going on board, the released demoniac begged to be taken with Him as a disciple: cf. Mc. iii. 14, Lc. xxii. 59. Thph't's explanation is quite unnecessary (*ἐφοβεῖτο γάρ μήποτε μόνον εἰρόντες αὐτὸν οἱ δαιμόνες πάλιν ἐπέλθωσιν αὐτῷ*). For ὁ δαιμονισθεὶς see note on ὁ δαιμονιζόμενος, v. 15; atten-

tion is now called to his deliverance; the possession was a thing of the past. On the constr. παρεκάλει...ινα see Burton, § 200, and cf. v. 10 *supra*.

19. καὶ οὐκ ἀφῆκεν αὐτόν] Lc. ἀπέ-  
λυσεν δὲ αὐτόν. The request is re-  
fused, because the man is wanted for  
immediate service. The eastern shore  
of the Lake was for the present closed  
against Jesus and the Twelve. A pre-  
paratory publication of the demoniac's  
story was necessary in anticipation of  
a later visit (vii. 31 ff.). What had  
been prohibited in Galilee (i. 43 f.) is  
under other circumstances not only  
permitted but commanded in Deca-  
polis: cf. Eccl. iii. 7, καιρὸς τοῦ σιγῆν  
καὶ καιρὸς τοῦ λαλεῖν.

εἰς τὸν οἶκόν σου πρὸς τοὺς σούς] Cf. ii. 11. The man's first duty was to  
his own house (where he had long  
been a stranger, Lc. viii. 27), and his  
relatives and acquaintances. Comp.  
i Tim. v. 4, 8. His tale was to be  
told in his own circle first. Οι σοί: cf. τὸ σόν, Mt. xx. 14; τὰ σά, Lc. vi. 30.  
For ἀπάγγειλον Lc. has διηγοῦν (see on v. 16).

ὅσα ὁ κύριός σοι κτλ.] On ὅσα see  
iii. 8 note, and *infra*, v. 20. Lc. ὁ θεός:

§ N καὶ ἤρξατο κηρύσσειν ἐν τῇ Δεκαπόλει § ὅσα ἐποίησεν  
 ¶ 10 αὐτῷ ὁ Ἰησοῦς, καὶ πάντες ἐθαύμαζον. ¶  
 2 I <sup>21</sup> Καὶ διαπεράσαντος τοῦ Ἰησοῦ ἐν τῷ πλοίῳ  
 πάλιν εἰς τὸ πέραν, συνήχθη ὄχλος πολὺς ἐπ' αὐτόν

21 om *εν τω πλοιω* D 1 28 2<sup>pe</sup> a b c e *syr<sup>sin</sup>* arm | *eis to περαν παλιν* ND 2<sup>pe</sup> a b c f g i q *syr<sup>utr</sup>* | *επι*] *προς* DN 13 28 69 346 2<sup>pe</sup>

ὁ κύριος is here = *Κύριος* as in Lc. i. 6, &c., either *ῆγος* or *Ἄλλος*, as repeatedly in the LXX.; ὁ κ. is used of Jesus by Mc. only in xi. 3 where it possibly = ὁ διδάσκαλος (Jo. xiii. 13). Euth.: οὐκ εἶπεν "Οσα ἔγώ πεποίκα· τῷ πατρὶ τὸ θαῦμα ἐπιγραφόμενος. Πεποίκεν καὶ ἡλέσεν": the combination of tenses expresses two sides of the transaction, its historical completeness and its permanent results. The act of mercy was momentary, the consequences would be before the eyes of those who listened to his tale. On such combinations see WM., p. 339. In some cases the perfect appears to bear a sense almost undistinguishable from that of the aorist, *ib.*, p. 340, Burton, §§ 80, 88; but here the change of tense can be conveyed in a translation: cf. R.V. 'hath done,' 'had mercy.' In the next verse where an ordinary narrative is in view Mc. writes ἐποίησεν. For ποιεῖν τί τινι cf. Mt. xxvii. 22. "Οσα, which belongs properly to πεποίκεν, is loosely carried on to ἡλέσεν, before which we should expect ὡς.

20. ἤρξατο κηρύσσειν ἐν τῇ Δεκαπόλει] Lc. καθ' ὅλην τὴν πόλιν i.e. Gerasa. The Decapolis (G. A. Smith, *H. G.* p. 595 ff., Schürer II. ii. 94 ff.) was strictly a confederation of Greek cities, perhaps originally ten in number. Pliny *H. N.* v. 18. 74 mentions Damascus, Philadelphia, Raphana, Scythopolis (the O.T. Bethshan), Gadera, Hippos, Dios, Pella, Gerasa (now *Jerash*), Kanatha: but he warns his readers that the names varied in different lists. As a geographical name the word was prob-

ably used with a corresponding laxity, and the territory of each city in the league was regarded as the local 'Decapolis.' If so, the Decapolis of the Gospels (Mt. iv. 25, Mc. v. 20, vii. 31) may be sought for in the neighbourhood of Gadara and Hippos, which bordered on the Lake (Joseph. *B.J.* iii. 3. 1, πρὸς ἥα δὲ Ἰππηνή τε καὶ Γαδάραις ἀποτέμνεται [ἡ Γαλιλαία] καὶ τῇ Γαλωνίτιδι). See note on vii. 31 *infra*. Κηρύσσειν: the man became a κηρυξ, sharing in his measure the ministry of Christ and the Apostles (i. 14, iii. 14). For the moment the result was merely to excite astonishment (*ἐθαύμαζον*).

21—34. ON HIS RETURN TO THE WESTERN SHORE THE LORD IS CALLED TO HEAL THE CHILD OF JAIRUS, AND ON HIS WAY THITHER IS TOUCHED BY A WOMAN IN THE CROWD (Mt. ix. 18—22, Lc. viii. 40—48).

21. διαπεράσαντος...εἰς τὸ πέραν] Τὸ πέραν is here the Western shore; the place of landing is apparently Capernaum. See below, *v. 22*. For διαπερᾶν ('cross the water') cf. vi. 53, Acts xxi. 2.

συνήχθη κτλ.] The contrast is remarkable; on the E. side He had been desired to depart; on the W., ἀπεδέξατο αὐτὸν ὁ ὄχλος (Lc.). The reading of ND looks back to iv. 1: 'again a great multitude assembled.' *Ἐπι* with acc. of a person is not common (WM., p. 508), and when preceded as here by a verb which implies rest it is a little difficult; the multitude had come together at the first sight of the boat putting out from Gerasa, and as soon as He had

καὶ ἦν παρὰ τὴν θάλασσαν.<sup>¶</sup> <sup>22</sup> καὶ ἐρχεται εἰς τῶν 22 ¶ W<sup>r</sup>  
ἀρχισυναγώγων, <sup>§</sup> ὀνόματι Ἰάειρος, καὶ ᾧδην αὐτὸν <sup>§</sup> W<sup>r</sup>  
πίπτει πρὸς τοὺς πόδας αὐτοῦ. <sup>23</sup> καὶ παρεκάλει 23  
αὐτὸν πολλὰ λέγων ὅτι Τὸ θυγάτριόν μου ἐσχάτως  
ἔχει· ἵνα ἐλθὼν<sup>¶</sup> ἐπιθῆς τὰς χεῖρας αὐτῇ, ἵνα σωθῇ <sup>¶</sup> Θ<sup>b</sup>  
καὶ ζήσῃ. <sup>24</sup> <sup>§</sup> καὶ ἀπῆλθεν μετ' αὐτοῦ.

24 § syr<sup>tier</sup>

21 om καὶ ην D b c e f f i q syr<sup>sin</sup> aeth  
arm go | εις] τις D | om ονοματι Ἰαειρος D a e f f i | om ιδων αυτον D e ιδ. τον Ιησουν  
N | προς] παρα N <sup>23</sup> παρεκαλει BDΔΠΣΦ] παρακαλει ΚΑCLN 33 1071 2<sup>ρε</sup>  
al<sup>nomm</sup> παρακαλων D a b e f f i q | om πολλα D al b c f f i q | wa ελθων...αυτη] ελθε αψαι  
αυτης εκ των χειρων σου D b i q syr<sup>sin</sup> | om αυτη N | wa σωθη και ζηση ΚBCDLΔ 13 69  
346 604 2<sup>ρε</sup>] οπως σ. κ. ζησεται ΑΝΠΙΣΦ

22 και 1<sup>ο</sup>] + ιδον ACP a l p i c f l syr<sup>hel</sup>  
22 και 1<sup>ο</sup>] + ιδον ACP a l p i c f l syr<sup>hel</sup>  
23 παρεκαλει BDΔΠΣΦ] παρακαλει ΚΑCLN 33 1071 2<sup>ρε</sup>  
εις των χειρων σου D b i q syr<sup>sin</sup> | om αυτη N | wa σωθη και ζηση ΚBCDLΔ 13 69  
24 απηλθεν] υπηγειν D 124 επορευετο 604

landed, it swarmed down upon Him — a constr. *praegnans*. <sup>3</sup> Ην παρὰ τὴν θάλασσαν may merely mean, ‘He was by the Sea’; cf. WM., p. 503, Blass, *Gr.* p. 138.

22. [ἔρχεται εἰς τῶν ἀρχισυναγώγων] The teaching is interrupted by an arrival. Mt. (ix. 18) places this incident in an entirely different context; Lc. agrees with Mc. For εἰς τῶν ἀρχισ. Mt. has ἔρχων εἰς, Lc. ἔρχων τῆς συναγωγῆς here, but ἀρχισυνάγωγος further on (viii. 49). In a small synagogue there might be but one such officer (Lc. xiii. 14); in larger synagogues there were sometimes several (Acts xiii. 15, xiv. 2, D). The ἀρχισυνάγωγος (**חַנְכָּרֶן שָׁנָאָרֶן**) was the supervisor of the worship of the synagogue (Schürer II. ii. p. 63 ff.), but not (as Irenaeus v. 13. 1 calls him) an ἀρχιερέως: his functions were not priestly but administrative only. For a later distinction between ἔρχοντες τ. συναγωγῆς and ἀρχισυνάγωγοι see W. M. Ramsay, *Exp. v. i.* p. 272 ff.

[Ἰαειρος] = רִיאָרֶן, LXX. Ἰαείρος, Num. xxxii. 41, Jud. x. 3 f.; in Esth. ii. 5, 1 Esdr. v. 31 Ἰαειρος; Syrr. <sup>sin. pesh.</sup> have Joarash. For the Jair of Judges Josephus (*ant. v. 7*) gives Ἰάρης (Niese), but with the variants Ἰαείρης, Ἰαειρος. In view of these facts it is arbitrary to derive Ἰαειρος from **נון**, as if

it arose out of the story itself (Cheyne, in *Encycl. Bibl.* s. v.). Both the earlier Jairs were Gileadites. Victor remarks: τὸ ὄνομα κεῖται διὰ τῶν Ἰουδαίους τοὺς εἰδότας τὸ γεγονός. More probably, because it was familiar to the first generation of believers; cf. xv. 21. Bengel: “quo tempore Marcus hoc scripsit [? Petrus hoc dixit] Jairus eiusve filia adhuc repeiri in Palestina potuit.” The name occurs also in Lc., but not in Mt.

πίπτει πρὸς τ. πόδας αὐτοῦ] Mt. προσεκύνει αὐτόν: see on v. 6. The prostration is the more remarkable as that of a dignitary in the presence of a crowd. His dignity was forgotten in the presence of a great sorrow; he recognised his inferiority to the Prophet who had the power to heal.

[παρεκάλει κτλ.] On πολλά see v. 10, note. Θυγάτριον, cf. vii. 25: a diminutive of affection used in later Greek (Plutarch, Athenaeus); in the N. T. peculiar to Mc. Lc. adds that she was μονογενής (cf. vii. 12, ix. 38). ἐσχάτως ᔡχει, also peculiar to Mc., a phrase condemned by the Atticists, see Lob. *Phryn.* p. 389; Josephus has (*ant. ix. 8. 6*) ἐν ἐσχάτοις εἴναι, cf. Vg. here, *in extremis est*. Wycliffe<sup>2</sup>, “is nyz deed.” Mt. substitutes ἄρτι ἐτελεύτησεν, Lc. ἀπέθησκεν.

[ἵνα ἐλθὼν ἐπιθῆς κτλ.] For the ellipsis see WM., p. 396. Either παρα-

<sup>¶ syr<sup>sin</sup></sup>

Καὶ ἡκολούθει αὐτῷ ὁ χλος πολὺς, καὶ συνέθλιβον  
 25 αὐτόν. <sup>25</sup>καὶ γυνὴ οὖσα ἐν ρύσει αἷματος δώδεκα  
 26 ἔτη, <sup>26</sup>καὶ πολλὰ παθοῦσα ὑπὸ πολλῶν ἰατρῶν καὶ  
 27 δαπανήσασα τὰ παρ' αὐτῆς πάντα καὶ μηδὲν <sup>¶</sup> ὠφελη-  
 27 θεῖσα ἀλλὰ μᾶλλον εἰς τὸ χεῖρον ἐλθοῦσα, <sup>27</sup>ἀκού-

25 γυνῇ] + τις DNII al min<sup>pl</sup> 26 τα παρ αυτης ABLNΣ al min<sup>fors<sup>100</sup></sup>] τα παρ  
 εαυτης ΝCKΔII min<sup>mu</sup> τα εαυτης D τα υπαρχοντα αυτης Φ τα παρ αυτη 736

καλῶ or θελω may be mentally supplied: cf. *vv.* 10, 18, and see Burton, §§ 202, 203. Mt. gives a simple imperative (ἀλλὰ ἐλθὼν ἐπιθέσ), and so the Western text in Mc.; cf. Vg. *reni impone manus*; Mc.'s broken construction reflects the anxiety of the speaker. The Greek expositors contrast the superior faith of the centurion (Mt. viii. 8). For the use of imposition of hands in healing see vi. 5, vii. 32, viii. 23, 25, [xvi. 18]; Acts ix. 17, xxviii. 8; as a primitive form of benediction (Gen. xlvi. 14ff.) in common use among the Jews (Mason, *Baptism and Conf.* p. 10, cf. Hastings, *D. B.* iii. p. 84f.), it was adopted by our Lord, and employed in the Church in various rites to symbolise and convey gifts whether of healing or of grace. *Ira σωθῆ καὶ ζήσῃ* is not a *hendiadys*: 'that she may be healed (of her disorder) and her life may be spared.' For *σώζειν* 'to restore to health,' in cases where the disease is not fatal, see *vv.* 28, 34, vi. 56, x. 52.

24. ἀπῆλθεν μετ' αὐτοῦ] The Lord rose and followed the synagogue-ruler, and after him went the Twelve (Mt.), and a vast crowd (Lc.), eager to see another wonder. The crowd pressed round Him, leaving Him scarce space to move (*συνέθλιβον αὐτόν*, Mc.) or even to breathe (*συνέπνιγον αὐτόν*, Lc.). *Συνθλίβω* (Sir. xxxiv. 14=xxxii. 17), Mc. only; cf. *θλίβειν*, Mc. iii. 9, *ἀποθλίβειν*, Lc. viii. 45.

25. γυνὴ οὖσα ἐν ρύσει] So Lc.; Mt. γ. αἱμορροοῦσα. For εἴναι ἐν ρ. see WM., p. 230: ἐν ρ. in a condition of, i.e. suffering from, hemorrhage. Fritzsche compares ήν ἐν τῇ νόσῳ Soph. *Aj.* 271. *Ρύσις* is used in Lev. xv. 2 ff. for בִּלְתַּ; *αἱμορροεῖν* occurs in the same context (*v.* 33). The trouble had lasted as many years (12) as Jair's child had lived, cf. *infra*, *v.* 42; Bengel: "uno tempore initium miseriae et vitae habuerant." For a curious use made of this number by the Valentinian Gnostics see Iren. i. 3. 3.

26. πολλὰ παθοῦσα ὑπὸ πολλῶν ἰατρῶν] She had suffered much at the hands of many physicians: cf. Mt. xvi. 21, πελλὰ παθεῖν ἀπὸ τῶν πρεσβυτέρων. Both ὑπὸ and ἀπὸ are used with verbs of passive significance to denote the agent: Blass, *Gr.* pp. 125f., 135. For some of the prescriptions ordered by the Rabbinical experts see J. Lightfoot on this verse. *Δαπανήσασα τὰ παρ' αὐτῆς πάντα*, Vg. *et erogaverat omnia sua*; cf. iii. 21 οἱ παρ' αὐτοῦ, Lc. x. 7 τὰ παρ' αὐτῶν, Phil. iv. 18 τὰ παρ' ὑμῶν, and see Field, *Notes*, p. 27; the phrase is equivalent to οὖσα εἰχεν, ὅλον τὸν βίον αὐτῆς (xii. 44), which might indeed be little enough, as the last reference shews. In Lc. BD Syr.<sup>sin</sup> omit the corresponding words *ἰατροῖς προσαναλώσασα ὅλον τὸν βίον αὐτῆς*, and WH. exclude them from margin as well as text. For varying estimates of the physician in later Jewish writings see

σασα τὰ περὶ τοῦ Ἰησοῦ, ἐλθοῦσα ἐν τῷ ὅχλῳ  
ὅπισθεν ἦψατο τοῦ ἵματίου αὐτοῦ.<sup>28</sup> ἔλεγεν γάρ ὅτι 28  
Ἐὰν ἀψωμαι καν τῶν ἵματίων αὐτοῦ, σωθήσομαι.<sup>¶ Wt</sup>  
<sup>29</sup> § καὶ εὐθὺς ἐξηράνθη ἡ πηγὴ τοῦ αἵματος αὐτῆς, 29 § Ws  
§ καὶ ἐγνω τῷ σώματι ὅτι ἴαται ἀπὸ τῆς μάστιγος. § Wt

27 τα περὶ Β\*ΒC\*Δ] om τα Α<sup>2</sup>DLNΠΣΦ min<sup>fereomn</sup> | εν τω οχλω] εις τον  
οχλον N 13 28 69 124 346 | τον υματιου] pr τον κρασπεδον M 1 33 1071 al<sup>pauc</sup>  
28 ελεγεν γαρ (λεγουσα D 604 2<sup>po</sup> b c ff i q aeth)] + εν εαυτη DKNΠΣ 1 33 209 604 2<sup>po</sup>  
al<sup>nomin</sup> a c ff i q arm | εαν (+ μονον 33 arm) αψ. καν των υματιων (τον υματιου Β 33) αυτ.  
ΝΒCΔ 49<sup>ev</sup>] καν των υματιων αυτ. (τον υματιου D) αψ. ADII al min<sup>fereomn</sup>

Tobit ii. 10 (B and Β texts)—an interesting parallel—and on the other hand Sir. xxxviii. 1 ff. Holtzmann quotes from the Mishna a sentence which seems to shew that they were in ill odour with the Rabbis (*Kidushim*, iv. 14, “medicorum optimus dignus est gehenna”). Μηδὲν ὁφελθεῖσα, as her experience told her; οὐδὲν ὁφ. would have merely stated the fact; see, however, Blass, *Gr.* p. 255. Εἰς τὸ χείρον ἐλθοῦσα : cf. ἐπὶ τὸ χείρον προκόπτειν (2 Tim. iii. 13).

27. τὰ περὶ τοῦ Ἰησοῦ] I.e. the report of His powers of healing; cf. Lc. xxiv. 14, Acts xxiv. 10, Phil. ii. 23.

ἐλθοῦσα ἐν τῷ ὅχλῳ ὅπισθεν] She mixed with the crowd which followed the Lord and contrived to make her way to the front, immediately behind Him. For a similar touch of delicate feeling cf. Gen. xviii. 10.

ἦψατο τοῦ ἵματίου αὐτοῦ] The part touched was the *κράσπεδον* (Mt. Lc.), i.e. the edge of the outer garment. The Law required every Jew to attach to the corners of his quadrangular covering tassels, which according to later usage consisted of three threads of white wool twisted together with a cord of blue; see Num. xv. 38 f.: ποιησάτωσαν ἑαυτοῖς κράσπεδα (Π' Ψ' Ψ') ἐπὶ τὰ πτερύγια τῶν ἵματίων αὐτῶν... καὶ ἐπιθήσετε ἐπὶ τὰ κράσπεδα τῶν πτερυγίων κλώσμα ὄνκινθινον; Deut.

xxii. 12: στρεπτὰ (“twists”) ποιήσεις σεαυτῷ ἐπὶ τῶν τεσσάρων κράσπεδων (Τίβις) τῶν περιβολαίων σου (see Driver, *ad l.*). Interesting details will be found in Hastings, *D. B.* i. p. 627, ii. p. 68 ff., and *Encycl. Bibl.* ii. p. 1565. The Lord doubtless conformed to the precept of the Law, though he afterwards censured the Scribes for their ostentatious obedience (Mt. xxiii. 5). The *κράσπεδον* may have been either one of the tassels, or the corner from which it hung (so the LXX. in Deut. Lc., Zach. viii. 23). One corner with its tassel was behind Him, and on this the woman laid her hand (ἐλθοῦσα ... ὅπισθεν).

28. ἔλεγεν] Mt. adds ἐν ἑαυτῇ: the words were unspoken. Εἴαν... καν has caused trouble to the copyists, but καν qualifies τῶν ἵματίων (WM., p. 730), cf. Vg. *si vel vestimentum eius tetigero*; similarly we find ἴνα...καν in vi. 56, and Acts v. 15 (where see Blass, and cf. his *Gr.* pp. 19, 275). Mt. substitutes μόνον for καν without materially modifying the sense. Τῶν ἵματίων, ‘the clothes,’ general and inclusive, as in v. 30 *infra*. On the expectation of a cure by contact comp. iii. 10, and on σωθήσομαι see v. 23 *supra*.

29. εὐθὺς ἐξηράνθη κτλ.] The hemorrhage ceased: Lc., using perhaps a medical term (cf. Plummer,

30 <sup>οὐκαὶ εὐθὺς ὁ Ἰησοῦς ἐπιγνοὺς ἐν ἑαυτῷ τὴν ἐξ αὐτοῦ δύναμιν ἐξελθοῦσαν, ἐπιστραφεὶς ἐν τῷ ὅχλῳ ἔλεγεν</sup>  
 31 <sup>Τίς μου ἦψατο τῶν ῥιματίων; καὶ ἐλεγον αὐτῷ οἱ μαθηταὶ αὐτοῦ Βλέπεις τὸν ὅχλον συνθλίβοντά σε,</sup>

30 την εξ αυτου δυναμιν εξελθ.] την δ. (+την D<sup>a</sup> arm<sup>vid</sup>) εξελθ. απ. αυτου D 31 λεγουσιν DN 2<sup>pe</sup> (a) ει q

Luke, pp. lxv, 235), ἔστη ἡ ρύσις. For ἔηραινω in the sense of drying up a spring cf. 3 Regn. xvii. 7, Jer. xxviii. (li.) 36, ἔηραινω τὴν πηγὴν αὐτῆς: ἡ πηγὴ τοῦ αἷματος is from Lev. xii. 7. "Ἐγνω τῷ σώματι ὅτι ἵαται: she knew from her bodily sensations, cf. ii. 5, ἐπιγνοὺς...τῷ πνεύματι, dat. of sphere (WM., p. 270). <sup>7</sup>Iatai transfers the reader into the region of the woman's thoughts: the conviction flashed through her mind, "Iamai: 'I have received a permanent cure.' The perf. pass. of *ἴαμαι* occurs here only in Biblical Greek, for *ἴαμαι* in 4 Regn. ii. 21, Hos. xi. 3 is middle; but *ἴαθην*, *ἴαθησομαι* are repeatedly used in a passive sense both in LXX. and N.T. For *μάστιξ plaga* see iii. 10, note.

30. εὐθὺς ὁ Ἰησοῦς κτλ.] The Lord also experienced an instantaneous sensation in the sphere of His consciousness (*ἐν ἑαυτῷ*), amounting to a definite knowledge of the fact; for *ἐπιγνούς* as contrasted with *ἔγνω* (v. 29) see note on ii. 8. He was fully aware that this power had gone forth from Him—*τὴν ἐξ αὐτοῦ δύναμιν ἐξελθοῦσαν*—not as Vg., *virtutem quae exierat de eo*, but “*virtutem quae de eo [erat] exisse*”: cf. Lc. *ἔγνων δύναμιν ἐξελθοῦσαν ἀπ' ἐμοῦ*, Vg. *novi virtutem de me exisse*. *Τὴν ἐξ αὐτοῦ*, that which belonged to Him and from time to time proceeded from Him; *ἐξελθοῦσαν*, “the substantive part. as object,” Burton, § 458; cf. Acts xxiv. 10, Heb. xiii. 23. That miraculous energy went forth from Jesus was notorious, cf. vi. 14; con-

trast the disavowal of personal power on the part of the Apostles, Acts iii. 12. The Gk. commentators are careful to point out that the Lord's power did not leave Him when it went forth to heal; the movement is not to be understood *τοπικῶς ἢ σωματικῶς* (Victor, Thph.).

*ἐπιστραφεὶς ἐν τῷ ὅχλῳ*] Ἐπεστράφη in a middle sense: cf. Sap. xvi. 7, Mt. x. 13, Mc. viii. 33, Jo. xxi. 20. The Lord turned and questioned the crowd which pressed upon Him from behind (vv. 24, 27). The act of turning was characteristic; see viii. 33, Lc. vii. 9, 44, ix. 55 &c. The question seems to imply that He needed information; see Mason, *Conditions*, &c. p. 149 f.; on the other hand cf. Jerome, *tract. in Mc.*: “nesciebat Dominus quis tetigisset? quomodo ergo quaerebat eam? quasi sciens, ut indicaret...ut mulier illa confiteatur et Deus glorificetur.”

The order *τίς μου...τῶν ῥιματίων;* may perhaps be intended to bring together the two persons of the toucher and the Touched, cf. v. 31, *τίς μου ἦψατο*; see however WM., p. 193.

31. *ἔλεγον αὐτῷ οἱ μαθηταὶ*] Lc. εἶπεν ὁ Πέτρος. That the remark was Peter's might have been inferred from its hasty criticism, and a certain tone of assumed superiority, which at a later time called for a severe rebuke; cf. viii. 32 ff.

On the spiritual significance of *συνθλίβειν* and *ἀπτεσθαι* see Victor: ὁ πιστεύων εἰς τὸν σωτῆρα ἀπτεται αὐτοῦ· ὁ δὲ ἀπιστῶν θλίβει αὐτὸν καὶ λυπεῖ. Compare especially Aug. serm.

καὶ λέγεις Τίς μου ἥψατο; <sup>32</sup> καὶ περιεβλέπετο ἵδεν 32 τὴν τοῦτο ποιήσασαν. <sup>33</sup> ἡ δὲ γυνὴ φοβηθεῖσα καὶ 33 τρέμουσα, εἰδὺν ὃ γέγονεν αὐτῇ, ἥλθεν καὶ προσέπεσεν αὐτῷ καὶ εἶπεν αὐτῷ πᾶσαν τὴν ἀλήθειαν. <sup>34</sup> ὁ δὲ εἶπεν αὐτῇ Θυγάτηρ, ἡ πίστις σου σέσωκέν 34 σε. ὑπαγε εἰς εἰρήνην, <sup>¶</sup> καὶ ἴσθι ὑγιὴς ἀπὸ τῆς <sup>¶</sup> syr<sup>hier</sup> μάστιγός σου.

<sup>31</sup> ηψατο] + των ιματων arm      33 τρεμουσα] + δι ο πεποιηκει λαθρα D 50 124  
604 736 (1071) 2<sup>po</sup> (6<sup>pe</sup>) a ff i arm | ο γεγονεν] το γεγονος N | αυτη] pr επ ΑΝΙΣ αι  
min<sup>pl</sup> c f vg επ αυτην Φ 13 66 al<sup>pauc</sup> | προσεπεσεν αυτω] προσεκυνησεν αυτον C προσεκ.  
αιτω 6<sup>pe</sup> | αληθειαν] αιτιαν I 13 28 69 346 (arm)      34 θυγατηρ BD] θυγατερ  
ΝΑC<sup>2</sup>LNΔΠΣΦ al min<sup>forte omn</sup> | υπαγε] πορευον N 604

62; Bede *ad l.*: "quem turba passim comitans comprimit, una credula mulier Dominum tangit."

32. περιεβλέπετο ἵδεν κτλ.] The Lord's only reply was to look round with a prolonged (imperf.) and scrutinising gaze (iii. 5, 34) which revealed to Him the individual who had stolen a cure. 'Ιδεν is the inf. of purpose, Burton, § 366; on the distinction between *ιδεν* and *βλέπειν* see note on iv. 12. The use of the fem. (*τὴν ποιήσασαν*) is anticipatory: 'the person who had done this and who proved to be a woman.' Or it may refer to Christ's knowledge of the fact — 'whom He knew to be a woman.' Her 'woman's touch' (Bruce) had revealed her sex.

33. ἡ δὲ γυνὴ κτλ.] Lc. adds *ιδοῦσα* ... ὅτι οὐκ ἔλαθεν. She was detected partly by her nearness to Christ,—a position from which she could not withdraw, on account of the crowd—partly by her own consciousness (*εἰδὺν ὃ γέγονεν αὐτῇ*). She felt the Lord's eye resting on her, and knew herself discovered. The fear and trembling with which she came forward are not fully explained by the Western gloss δι' ὃ πεποιήκει λάθρα (WH., *Notes*, p. 24); a deeper psychology would take into account the excitement of the moment and the

spiritual effort. For the combination φοβ. καὶ τρέμ. cf. Jud. ii. 28 (B), Dan. v. 19 (Th.), 4 Macc. iv. 10, 1 Cor. ii. 3, 2 Cor. vii. 15, Eph. vi. 5, Phil. ii. 12. The inward movement expressed itself in visible signs of excitement.

πᾶσαν τὴν ἀλήθειαν] 'The whole truth.' Cf. Jo. xvi. 13 (τὴν ἀλ. π.) and Westcott's note. Lc. gives the details. The confession revealed both the purpose (δι' ὃν αἰτίαν) and effect (ὡς λάθη παραχρῆμα). Moreover it was made publicly (ἐνώπιον παντὸς τοῦ λαοῦ). Bede: "ecce quo interrogatio Domini tendebat."

34. θυγάτηρ = θύγατερ: so the LXX. (codd. BA) in Ruth ii. 2, 22; iii. 1; cf. WH., *Notes*, p. 158. With this use of θυγάτηρ cf. τέκνον (ii. 5), παιδία (Jo. xxi. 5). 'Η πίστις σου σέσωκέν σε: 'thy restoration is due to thy faith,' cf. x. 52, Lc. xvii. 19—a statement which does not of course exclude the complementary truth that she was healed by power proceeding from the person of Christ (v. 30). Christ's purpose in detecting her was to perfect her faith by confession (Rom. x. 10); this end being now gained, she is free to reap the fruits of her venture. Jerome: "nec dixit 'Fides tua te salvam factura est,' sed 'salvam fecit.'"

ὑπαγε εἰς εἰρήνην] Lc. πορεύον εἰς

¶ W<sup>r</sup> 35      35' Ετι αύτοῦ λαλοῦντος ἔρχονται ἀπὸ τοῦ ἀρχι-  
 § W<sup>r</sup> συναγώγου λέγοντες ὅτι Ἡ θυγάτηρ σου ἀπέθανεν.  
 36 τί ἔτι σκύλλεις τὸν διδάσκαλον;      36' ὁ δὲ Ἰησοῦς  
 παρακούσας τὸν λόγον λαλούμενον λέγει τῷ ἀρχι-

35 οἱ ετι Ν      36 οἱ δε Ι.] + εὐθεως AC(N)ΠΦ al min<sup>pl</sup> a syr<sup>hel</sup> go | παρακούσας  
 Η\*<sup>c,b</sup>BLΔ ε] ακούσας Η<sup>c,a</sup>ACDNΠΣΦ al min<sup>forteomn</sup> latt (exc e) al | τον λογον λαλ.]  
 τον λογ. τον λαλ. Β τοιτον τον λογ. Δ τον λογ. εὐθεως λαλ. Σ

εἰρ., ‘go and enjoy peace’; an O. T. phrase = מַלְאֵךְ לֶשׂ ? בִּנְיָם i Regn. i. 17: cf. i Regn. xxix. 7, 2 Regn. xv. 9. The Vg. *vade in pace* answers better to the tamer πωρ. ἐν εἰρήνῃ (Acts xvi. 36, James ii. 16, where see Mayor's note). “Ισθι ὑγῆς ἀπὸ τῆς μ. σου, ‘be sound (and therefore free) from thy scourge’: i.e. continue so from this time forth; cf. Mt. ἐσώθῃ ἡ γυνὴ ἀπὸ τῆς ὥρας ἔκεινης. With ὑγ. ἀπό cf. Rom. ix. 3 ἀνάθεμα εἶναι ἀπό. For μάστιξ see note on iii. 10.

Acc. to *Ev. Nicod.* i. 7 (B) the woman's name was Veronica. Eusebius (*H.E.* vii. 18) relates a tradition that she was a native of Caesarea Philippi or Paneas, where a brazen statue of her in the act of kneeling before the Saviour had been seen by himself. Macarius Magnes (i. 6) represents her as a princess of Edessa, and as μέχρι τοῦ νῦν ἀοιδῶν ἐν τῇ μέσῃ τῶν ποταμῶν. For the mass of legend which has gathered round the story see Thilo, *Cod. apocr.* i. 560 n.

### 35—43. RAISING OF THE DEAD CHILD (Mt. ix. 23—26, Lc. viii. 49—56).

35. ἔτι αύτοῦ λαλοῦντος] So Lc.: the exact phrase occurs in Gen. xxix. 9, LXX. The coincidence was a happy one for the αἰμορροοῦσα, for the new arrival at once diverted the attention of the crowd. Ἀπὸ τοῦ ἀρχισυναγώγου: he was present (v. 36), so that the words = ἀπὸ τῆς οἰκίας τοῦ ἀρχ. (Euth.); cf. Lc. παρὰ τοῦ ἀρχ. Ἐρχονται, “man kommt” (Lc. ἔρχεται τις); cf.

λέγουσιν, i. 30 (Meyer). Ἀπέθανεν = τέθυηκεν (Lc.); see Burton, § 47.

τί ἔτι σκύλλεις κτλ.] Tindale: “why diseasest thou the master any further?” Lc. μηκέτι σκύλλε. Σκύλλειν is properly to flay or to mangle (Aesch. *Pers.* 577), but in later Greek ‘to harass, annoy’ (Euth. ἀντὶ τοῦ περισπᾶς, ἐνοχλεῖς); cf. 3 Macc. iii. 25 μεθ ὕβρεως καὶ σκυλμῶν, ib. vii. 5 μετὰ σκυλμῶν ὡς ἀνδράποδα, Mt. ix. 36. Here and in Lc. vii. 6 the verb means scarcely more than ‘to trouble,’ ‘put to inconvenience’ (Vg. *vexare*). Τὸν διδάσκαλον = רְבָנָן (רְבָנָן), Dalman, *Worte Jesu*, p. 278; cf. Mc. xiv. 14. The remark shews that the power of raising the dead was not yet generally attributed to Jesus; only one instance, so far as we know, had occurred, and that not in the Lake district (Lc. vii. 11 ff.). Victor: ἐνόμισαν μηκέτι αύτοῦ χρείαν εἶναι διὰ τὸ τεθνηκέναι αὐτήν, οὐκ εἰδότες ὅτι δυνατὸς ἦν καὶ ἀποθανούσαν ἀναστῆσαι.

36. παρακούσας τὸν λόγον λαλούμενον] On the construction see WM., p. 436. In the LXX. παρακούειν is uniformly to hear without heeding, to neglect or refuse to hear, or to act as if one did not hear; cf. Ps. xxxix. 13 Symm., i Esdr. iv. 11, Esther iii. 3, 8, vii. 4 (παρήκουσα = ἡσχήμη), Tob. iii. 4, Isa. lxv. 12 (παρηκούσατε = ἡσχήμης ήλ): and so the word is used in Mt. xviii. 17 bis; whilst παρακού is the reverse of ὑπακοή (Rom. v. 19, 2 Cor. x. 6, Heb. ii. 2). The Lord heard the words said (for λαλ. see WM., p. 436, Burton, § 458, and note

**συναγάγω** *Mή φοβοῦ μόνον πίστευε.* <sup>37</sup>καὶ οὐκ 37  
ἀφῆκεν οὐδένα μετ' αὐτοῦ συνακολουθῆσαι, εἰ μὴ  
τὸν Πέτρον καὶ Ἰάκωβον καὶ Ἰωάννην τὸν ἀδελφὸν  
Ἰακώβου. <sup>38</sup>καὶ ἔρχονται εἰς τὸν οἶκον τοῦ ἀρχι- 38  
συναγάγου, καὶ θεωρεῖ θόρυβον καὶ κλαίοντας καὶ

37 οὐδὲ ενα D | μετ αυτου συνακ. NBCLD] αυτω συνακολουθησαι EFGHMSUV  
Π<sup>2</sup>(Σ)Φ αυτω ακολουθησαι ΑΚΠ\* min<sup>rauc</sup> παρακολουθησαι αυτω D i 28 124 209 604  
2<sup>rauc</sup> | τον Πετρον] om τον ADLII al min<sup>omnivid</sup> 38 ερχονται ΗΑΒCDFΔ i 33  
alrauc b e i q syr<sup>pesh</sup> me] ερχεται ΛΝΠΙΣΦ al min<sup>pl</sup> a c f ff go syr<sup>hel</sup> arm aeth | τον  
οικου] την οικιαν Δ 604 2<sup>rauc</sup> | εθεωρει D | om και 3<sup>o</sup> ΔΦ al min<sup>pl</sup> latt<sup>vtpl</sup> me | κλαιοντων  
και αλαλαξοντων D 2<sup>rauc</sup>

on v. 30 *supra*), but spoke as if He had not heard, passed them by in silence and followed His own course. Contrast *Act. Ioann.* 17 (ed. James, p. 22 f.), ὁφ' ἐκάστου ήμων καλούμενος οὐχ ὑπομένει παρακούσαι ήμων, and cf. Field's note *ad l.*

**μόνον πίστευε]** Lc. μ. πίστευσον, faith being viewed as an act rather than as a state. With *μόνον tantummodo* cf. Mt. viii. 8. There was no cause for fear, unless the man's faith broke down.

37. The crowd is not suffered to approach the house. Lc., perhaps with less exactness, represents the Lord as dismissing them on reaching the house (ἐλθὼν...οὐκ ἀφῆκεν εἰσελθεῖν: cf. Mc.'s οὐκ ἀφῆκεν...καὶ ἔρχονται). *Συνακολουθεῖν* is a rare compound in Biblical Greek (2 Macc. ii. 4, 6; in N. T. only here and in xiv. 51, Lc. xxiii. 49); comp. ἡκολούθει in v. 24—the crowd followed, but there was no bond of fellowship to keep them with Him to the end.

**εἰ μὴ τὸν Πέτρον κτλ.]** Even of the Apostles only three are permitted to enter; so careful is the Lord not to invade at such a time the seclusion of the home life. Three were sufficient as witnesses (Mt. xviii. 16); and the same triad were chosen on other occasions when privacy was desired (ix. 2, xiv. 33).

The order of the names is the same

as in Mc.'s list of the Apostles (iii. 16), and it is maintained in ix. 2, xiii. 3, xiv. 33; Mt. on the whole agrees (x. 2, xvii. 1): Lc. on the other hand usually writes Π. καὶ Ἰωάννης καὶ Ἰάκωβος (viii. 51, ix. 28, Acts i. 13), though his Gospel preserves the older order in the Apostolic list (Lc. vi. 14). See note on Mc. iii. 16. The single article in Mc. before the three names seems to represent the three as a body. But the practice of the Evangelist varies; thus in ix. 2 we have τὸν Π. καὶ τὸν Ἰάκ. καὶ Ἰω., while in xiv. 33 an article stands in WH.'s text (though the margin agrees with v. 37) before each name. For τὸν ἀδελφὸν Ἰακ. see i. 16, 19 notes.

38. **θεωρεῖ...ἀλαλάξοντας πολλά]** The Lord has dismissed one crowd only to find the house occupied by another (θόρυβον = ὅχλον θορυβούμενον, Mt.). For the moment He stands gazing at the strange spectacle (θεωρεῖ, cf. xii. 41). Θόρυβος is the uproar of an excited mob (xiv. 2, Acts xx. 1, xxi. 34). The καὶ which follows is epexegetic (WM., p. 345); the uproarious crowd within consisted of mourners. Ἀλαλάξειν is 'to shout,' whether for joy (so often in the Psalms, e.g. Ps. xlvi. (xlvii.) 1, ἀλαλάξατε τῷ θεῷ), or in lamentation, cf. Jer. iv. 8, κόπτεσθε καὶ ἀλαλάξατε. The correction ὀλολύζοντας proposed by Naber is unnecessary; even if

39 ἀλαλάζοντας πολλά· <sup>39</sup> καὶ εἰσελθὼν λέγει αὐτοῖς Τί  
θορυβεῖσθε καὶ κλαίετε; τὸ παιδίον οὐκ ἀπέθανεν  
40 ἀλλὰ καθεύδει. <sup>40</sup> καὶ κατεγέλων αὐτοῦ. αὐτὸς δὲ  
ἐκβαλὼν πάντας παραλαμβάνει τὸν πατέρα τοῦ

39 κλαίετε] pr τι D 28 b f ff i q      40 αυτος δε NBCDLΔ 33 latt (exc e) me]  
ο δε ANIΙΣ al min<sup>pl</sup> syr<sup>hel(txt)</sup> arm o δε iſ MΦ min<sup>vau</sup> syr<sup>pesh</sup> | πάντας] τοὺς οχλους εξω  
D lat<sup>vtp</sup> pl

ἀλαλάζειν is to be taken in its ordinary sense, the heartless uproar was an ἀλαλαγμός rather than an ὀλολυγμός. The mourners were probably professional; among them were musicians (*αὐληταί*, Mt.), and wailing women (*αἱ θρηνοῦσαι*, Jer. ix. 17); "even the poorest of Israel will afford his dead wife not less than two minstrels and one woman to make lamentations" (J. Lightfoot), and this was the house of an ἀρχισυνάγωγος. On the shallowness of the feeling which prompted these demonstrations see Sir. xxxviii. 16 ff.

39. *εἰσελθών κτλ.*] The Lord entered the court, and expostulated. For Mc.'s *τί θορυβεῖσθε* and Lc.'s milder *μὴ κλαίετε*, Mt. has the sterner *ἀναχωρεῖτε*, which may have followed when the call to silence had proved in vain. Οὐκ ἀπέθανεν ἀλλὰ καθεύδει is enigmatical; *καθεύδειν* may = *τεθνηκέναι*, as in Dan. xii. 2 (LXX. and Th.), 1 Th. v. 10; cf. *κοιμᾶσθαι* in Jo. xi. 11 ff., but this sense seems to be excluded when the verb is placed in contrast with *ἀποθανεῖν*. Hence some have declined to regard this miracle as a raising of the dead (see Trench, *Miracles*, p. 182 f.). But the fact of the child's death was obvious to the bystanders, and is apparently assumed by the Evangelists, at least by Lc. (*εἰδότες ὅτι ἀπέθανεν*). The Lord's meaning seems to be: 'a death from which there is to be so speedy an awakening can only be regarded as a sleep.' Cf. Bede: "hominibus mortua, qui suscitare nequierant, Deo dormiebat." Ambrose: "fleant ergo

mortuos suos qui putant mortuos; ubi resurrectionis fides est, non mortis est species, sed quietis."

40. *κατεγέλων αὐτοῦ*] So Mt., Mc., Lc. The compound is used in the N. T. only in this context, but it is common in classical Gk. and in the LXX., e.g. Ps. xxiv. (xxv.) 2, Prov. xvii. 5, 4 Macc. vi. 20. The Engl. versions rightly lay stress on the scornfulness of the laughter expressed by *κατά* (e.g. Wycliffe, "thei scorneden hym"; Tindale, "they lawght him to scorne"). On the gen. see WM., p. 537 n. According to the Gk. expositors the Lord suffered these hirelings to deride Him in order to prevent them from saying afterwards that the child was not really dead (Thph. ὡς ἀν μὴ ἔχωσιν ὕστερον λέγειν ὅτι κάτοχος (cataleptic) ἐγένετο). But it is unnecessary to seek for any such explanation; η ἀγάπη πάντα νπομένει.

*αὐτὸς δὲ ἐκβαλὼν πάντας κτλ.*] On *ἐκβάλλω* see i. 12. In this case some pressure was needed, for it was the interest of these paid mourners to remain. There is a sternness manifested in their ejection which finds a counterpart on other occasions when our Lord is confronted with levity or greed; cf. xi. 15, Jo. ii. 15. Jerome: "non enim erant digni ut viderent mysterium resurgentis, qui resuscitantem indignis contumeliis deridebant." Αὐτὸς δέ, 'He on His part,' Vg. *ipse vero*. *Παραλαμβάνει*, cf. iv. 36. Five persons enter the chamber of death by His invitation. In the O. T. instances of the raising of the dead the prophet is alone (1 K. xvii.

παιδίου καὶ τὴν μητέρα καὶ τοὺς μετ' αὐτοῦ, καὶ εἰσπορεύεται ὅπου ἦν τὸ παιδίον.<sup>¶ 41</sup> καὶ κρατήσας 41 ¶ W<sup>t</sup>, τῆς χειρὸς τοῦ παιδίου λέγει αὐτῇ Ταλειθά, κούμ· ὁ ἐστιν μεθερμηνεύμενον Τὸ κοράσιον, σοὶ λέγω, ἔγειρε. <sup>42</sup> καὶ εὐθὺς ἀνέστη τὸ κοράσιον καὶ περιεπάτει, 42

40 μετ αυτού] +οντας D | το παιδιον]+ανακειμενον ACNIIΦ al min<sup>pl</sup>+κατακειμενον  
Σ 604 arm 41 της χειρος] την χειρα D | ταλειθα (ταλιθα ΝΑCLNII al arm)]  
ραββι· θαβιθα D thabitha (tabitha etc.) a b c ff i r vg<sup>odd</sup> tabea acultha e | κουμ  
ΝΒCLMNΣ 1 33 1071 al<sup>nonn</sup> ff] κουμ (A)DΔΠΦ al min<sup>pl</sup> latt<sup>vtpi(vg)</sup> syrr<sup>pesh</sup> arm  
me aeth | εγειραι ΟΦ min<sup>satmu</sup> εγειρον min<sup>pauc</sup>

19 ff, 2 K. iv. 33), and this seems to have been the case also at the raising of Tabitha (Acts ix. 40). Our Lord, knowing the issue (Jo. xi. 41, 42), chooses to work in the presence of witnesses, not excepting the mother, though He ejects the jeering hirelings who were not in sympathy with His purpose. Euth.: τὸν μὲν οὖν πατέρα καὶ τὴν μητέρα...παρέλαβε θεατὰς τοῦ θαύματος ὡς οἰκείους ἔκεινη, τοὺς δὲ μαθητὰς ὡς οἰκείους ἔαυτῷ. Εἰσπορεύεται ὅπου =εἰσπ. εἰς τὸ ὑπερώφον (Acts ix. 39) ὅπου.

41. κρατήσας τῆς χειρὸς τοῦ παιδίου] Wycliffe, "he heeld the hond of the damysel"; Tindale rightly, "toke the mayden by the honde." See W.M., p. 252; Blass, Gr. p. 101; and cf. i. 31, ix. 27. He addresses Himself to the personality, not to the body only (λέγει αὐτῇ : cf. Lc. vii. 14, Jo. xi. 43); comp. Jo. v. 28, οἱ ἐν τοῖς μνημείοις ἀκούσοντιν. Αὐτῇ i.e. τῷ παιδίῳ, a *constructio ad sensum*: cf. Blass, Gr. p. 166.

ταλειθά, κούμ] (קִוְמַי) (Dalman, p. 118 n., 266 n.; with ταλειθά cf. the use of תַּלְתָּה, יָמַת in 1 Sam. vii. 9, Isa. xl. 11, lxv. 25). On the strange corruptions of these Aramaic words in some Western texts see Chase, *Syro-Latin Text*, p. 109 f.; *tabita* for *talitha* found its way into our earlier English versions, Tindale, as well as Wycliffe. For other Ara-

maic words preserved by Mc., see vii. 34, xiv. 36; and on the general subject of Aramaisms in the Gospels, Schürer II. i. 9. "Ο ἐστιν μεθερμηνεύμενον, a phrase common to Mt., Mc., Jo., and Acts; other forms are ὁ λέγεται μεθερμ., ὁ ἐρμηνεύεται, οὗτος γάρ μεθερμηνεύεται. Μεθερμηνεύειν (a late compound for the class. ἐρμηνεύειν) is already used in reference to the translation of Hebrew into Greek in the prologue to Sirach (l. 19). Τὸ κοράσιον: the word is late and colloquial (Lob. *Phryn.* p. 74), and survives in modern Gk. (Kennedy, *Sources*, p. 154); in the LXX. where it usually represents נָשָׁה, it is fairly common from Ruth onwards; in the N. T. it is used only of the girl in this narrative and of the daughter of Herodias. On the nom. (τὸ κοράσιον) see v. 8 note, and cf. Lc. ή παῖς, ἔγειρον.

42. εὐθὺς ἀνέστη...καὶ περιεπάτει] The effect was instantaneous (*παραχρῆμα*, Lc.), the child rose and walked (imperf., since the act was continuous, and not, like the rising, momentary; cf. Jo. v. 9, Acts iii. 8). Strength returned as well as life: cf. Lc. vii. 15 (ἥρξατο λαλεῖν), Jo. xi. 44 (ἐξῆλθεν... ἄφετε αὐτὸν ὑπάγειν). Ἡν γάρ ἐτῶν δώδεκα justifies περιεπάτει—the child was of an age to walk; the correction in D has arisen from a failure to understand γάρ. For the gen. of

ἥν γάρ ἐτῶν δώδεκα· καὶ ἔξέστησαν εὐθὺς ἐκστάσει  
43 μεγάλῃ. <sup>43</sup>καὶ διεστείλατο αὐτοῖς πολλὰ ἵνα μηδεὶς  
γνοῖ τοῦτο· καὶ εἶπεν δοθῆναι αὐτῇ φαγεῖν.

VI. I    <sup>18</sup>*Kai ἔξηλθεν ἐκεῖθεν, καὶ ἔρχεται εἰς τὴν πατρίδα*

<sup>syntier</sup>  
42 ην γαρ] ην δε D 2<sup>ro</sup> 7<sup>ro</sup> latt | δωδεκα (δεκα δυο Φ 1)] pr ωσει ΝCΔ pr ως 1 33 6ο4  
alpauc arm | εξεστησαν + παντες D c f ff i q + οι γονεις αυτης 736 8<sup>ro</sup> alpauc | om ευθυς 2<sup>o</sup>  
ADNΠΣΦ al min<sup>pl</sup> latt syrr arm go al (hab ΝBCΛΔ 33 me aeth)      43 om πολλα  
D lat<sup>vpl</sup> | γνοι ΔBDL] γνω ΝCΝΔΠΣΦ al | δοθηναι] δουναι D      VI 1 και ερχεται  
ΝBCΛΔ] κ. ηλθεν ΑΝΠΣΦ al min<sup>pl</sup> Or καπηλθεν D (sic)

time cf. Lc. ii. 37, 42, iii. 23, Acts iv. 22. For a patristic homily on the three miracles of raising the dead recorded in the Gospels see Aug. *serm.* 98 (Migne).

ἐξέστησαν κτλ.] On ἐξίστασθαι see note on ii. 12, and for ἐκστασις in this sense xvi. 8, Lc. v. 26, Acts iii. 10. The nearly equivalent phrase ἐκστῆναι ἐκστασιν μεγάλην occurs in Gen. xxvii. 33. Εὐθύς is not necessarily otiose: the astonishment was instantaneous and complete.

43. διεστείλατο κτλ.] Two directions follow the miracle: (1) the facts are not to be made public, (2) the restored child is to receive nourishment. The purpose of (1) was partly to prevent idle curiosity, and the excitement which would check spiritual work (cf. i. 44 note, vii. 36), partly to gain time for His departure (vi. 1 note). In (2) we have fresh evidence of the sympathetic tenderness of the Lord, and His attention to small details in which the safety or comfort of others was involved. In the excitement of the moment the necessity of maintaining the life which had been restored might have been overlooked. But life restored by miracle must be supported by ordinary means; the miracle has no place where human care or labour will suffice. Chrys. : οὐκ αὐτὸς δίδωσιν, ἀλλ' ἐκείνοις κελεύει· ὥσπερ καὶ ἐπὶ τοῦ Λαζάρου εἶπε Δύσπατε αὐτόν. Victor sees in this command evidence of the reality of the miracle: εἰς ἀπόδειξιν τοῦ ἀληθῶς αὐτὴν ἐγεγέρθαι

καὶ οὐ δυκήσει τινὶ καὶ φαντασίᾳ, referring to Lc. xxiv. 41 f.; cf. Iren. v. 13. 1, Jerome, *tract. in Mc. ad l.*

Διαστέλλειν is properly to divide or distinguish: cf. e.g. Gen. xxx. 35, 40, Deut. x. 8. In the mid. the word in later Gk. has acquired the meaning 'to give an explicit order,' 'to enjoin': Jud. i. 19, Judith xi. 12, Ezech. iii. 18 ff., and this sense it uniformly bears in the N. T. (Mc.<sup>5</sup>, Acts<sup>1</sup>; cf. the pres. part. pass. in Heb. xii. 20). With the conj. γνοῖ cf. παραδοῖ, iv. 29 note, and WM., p. 360. For the inf. δοθῆναι see Burton, §§ 337, 391; for φαγεῖν, almost = βρῶμα, cf. vi. 37, Jo. iv. 33.

VI. 1—6a. DEPARTURE FROM CAPERNAUM: PREACHING AT NAZARETH (Mt. xiii. 53—58; cf. Lc. iv. 16—30).

1. ἔξηλθεν ἐκεῖθεν] From the house of Jairus (cf. v. 39, εἰσελθών), but also from Capernaum; cf. Mt. xiii. 53, μετῆρεν ἐκεῖθεν, where there is no mention of Jairus in the context. The purpose was probably to escape from the enthusiasm of the crowd, who, notwithstanding the charge to conceal what had occurred (v. 43), must soon hear of the miracle.

εἰς τὴν πατρίδα αὐτοῦ] I.e. to Nazareth, cf. Lc. iv. 23, 24; the word can be used of a town, cf. Phil. *leg. ad Cai.* 36, ἔστι δέ μοι Ἱεροσόλυμα πατρίς. Neither Mt. nor Mc. mentions Nazareth here, but Mc. i. 9, 24, Jo. i. 46 imply that the Lord was regarded by the Galileans as a Nazarene; His birth at Bethlehem was forgotten

αὐτοῦ καὶ ἀκολουθοῦσιν αὐτῷ οἱ μαθηταὶ αὐτοῦ.  
<sup>2</sup>καὶ γενομένου σαββάτου ἥρξατο διδάσκειν ἐν τῇ 2  
 συναγωγῇ· καὶ οἱ πολλοὶ ἀκούοντες ἔξεπλήσσοντο  
 λέγοντες Πόθεν τούτῳ ταῦτα, καὶ τίς ἡ σοφία ἡ  
 δοθεῖσα τούτῳ, καὶ αἱ δυνάμεις τοιαῦται διὰ τῶν

<sup>2 γενομένου σαββάτου]</sup> ημέρα σαββάτων D (ff) i (q) r | οἱ πολλοὶ BL 13 28 69 346] om οἱ ΝΑCDΔΠΣΦ al min<sup>pl</sup> | ακούσαντες DFHLNΔII al om b c e | εξεπλησσοντο]+επι  
 τη διδαχῇ αυτοῦ D min<sup>pauc</sup> latt (exc e) syrposh arm | ταῦτα] + ταῦτα ΝC<sup>2</sup> (απαντα C\*)  
 (Δ) τούτῳ παντα 1071 | τούτῳ 2<sup>ο</sup> ΝBCLΔ me] αυτῷ ΑDΠΣΦ al min<sup>forte omn</sup> | αἱ  
 δυνάμεις τοιαῦται δ. τ. χ. α. γνομέναι Ν<sup>\*(c)</sup>B(LΔ) 33 (vg) me] δυν. τοιαῦται δ. τ. χ. α.  
 γνονται ΑC<sup>2</sup>ΕFGHM(N)SUUVΣ (αι δυν.) Φ i 13 28 69 al<sup>mu</sup> a e wa και δυν. τοι. δ. τ. χ.  
 α. γνωνται D (sim C\* b f i q ff r arm) | δια τῶν χειρῶν] δ. τ. χειλεων c<sup>vld</sup> (per labia)

(cf. Jo. vii. 41, 42), and even if it had been notorious, the village where His family lived (v. 3), and where He had passed His youth (Lc. iv. 16), might well be called His *πατρίς*. Lc. places this visit, of which he has preserved a much fuller account, at the outset of the Ministry, but without note of time.

ἀκολουθοῦσιν αὐτῷ οἱ μαθ. αὐτοῦ] It was not a private visit to His family; He came as a Rabbi, surrounded by His scholars.

<sup>2 γενομένου σαββάτου]</sup> Vg. *facto sabbato*, ‘when Sabbath had come.’ Lc. *ἐν τῇ ἡμέρᾳ τῶν σαββάτων*. He took His place in the synagogue as the reader (Ambr. “ille ita ad omnia se curvavit obsequia ut ne lectoris quidem adsperraretur officium”). Lc. describes the whole scene from the recollections of some eyewitness, perhaps the Mother of the Lord. The Scripture expounded was Isa. lxi. 1, 2. “*Ηρξατο διδασκειν=έδιδασκεν*, Mt. cf. Lc. *ἥρξατο λέγειν*. A similar phrase is used in i. 45, iv. 1, v. 20, vi. 34, viii. 31, always apparently with reference to a new departure. It was perhaps the first time He had taught officially in His own town, and but for the hostility of the Nazarenes it might have been the beginning of a course of teaching there. On this use of *ἄρχεσθαι* cf. W.M., p. 767.

οἱ πολλοὶ...ἔξεπλήσσοντο] Mt. ὁστε ἐκπλήσσεσθαι αὐτούς, Lc. πάντες ἐμαρτύρουν αὐτῷ. Mc. is more exact: the majority were impressed, but there was an undercurrent of dissatisfaction which in the end prevailed. For *ἔξεπλ.* cf. i. 22.

πόθεν τούτῳ ταῦτα κτλ.] A change had come over Him for which they could not account; the workman had become the Rabbi and the worker of miracles. Of His wisdom they had evidence in His discourse; it was a gift (*ἡ δοθεῖσα*) and not the result of study (Jo. vii. 15); it had shewn itself in childhood (Lc. ii. 40, 47), and now was revealed again in the man. But whence and what was it (*πόθεν; τίς;*)? And the miracles—such miracles as report said were being wrought from time to time (*γνόμεναι*) by His instrumentality (*διὰ τῶν χειρῶν αὐτοῦ*, cf. Acts v. 12, xix. 11), whence were these? No similar powers distinguished any other member of the family, mother or brothers or sisters; why should they distinguish Him? (Mt. *πόθεν οὖν τούτῳ ταῦτα πάντα;*). Jerome: “mira stultitia Nazarenorum; mirantur unde habeat sapientiam Sapientia, et virtutes Virtus.” On *τίς ἡ σ.* see Blass, *Gr.* p. 176. Αἱ δυνάμεις...γνόμεναι, sc. τί: ‘what mean such miracles wrought,’ &c. For *δύναμις*, a miracle, see vi. 5, 14.

3 χειρῶν αὐτοῦ γινόμεναι; <sup>3</sup> οὐχ οὗτός ἐστιν ὁ τέκτων,  
ὁ νιὸς τῆς Μαρίας καὶ ἀδελφὸς Ἰακώβου καὶ Ἰωσῆτος

[3 ο τέκτων ο νιος] ο του τεκτονος νιος και 13 33 69 60<sup>4</sup> 2<sup>pe</sup> alpauc a b c e i (arm)  
aeth om ο τέκτων syr<sup>helhier</sup> (cf. Or infr) | της Μαρίας] om της ADII alpl | Ιωσητος]  
Ιωσηφ & 121 b e f q vg aeth Ιωση ACNΠΣΦ al minpl syrr go arm

3. ὁ τέκτων] Mt. ὁ τοῦ τέκτονος νιός. To the sneer of Celsus τέκτων ἦν τὴν τέχνην Origen (*Cels.* vi. 36) replies οὐδαμοῦ τῶν ἐν ταῖς ἔκκλησίαις φερομένων εὐαγγελίων τέκτων αὐτὸς ὁ Ἰησοῦς ἀναγέγραπται. “He either forgot this passage or, perhaps more probably, did not hold Mc. responsible for the words of the Galileans” (WH., *Notes*, p. 24: see however the *app. crit.* above). As the son of a τέκτων Jesus would naturally have learnt τὴν τεκτονικήν (see Lightfoot and Schöttgen *ad loc.*). This inference, if it was no more, was early drawn: cf. Justin, *dial.* 88, τὰ τεκτονικὰ ἔργα ἡργάζετο ἐν ἀνθρώποις ὅν, ἄροτρα καὶ ζυγά, and the answer to the scoffing question of Libanius (*Thdt. H. E.* iii. 18). Τέκτων is properly an artificer in wood, but it is occasionally used of a worker in metals (1 Regn. xiii. 19 τέκτων σιδήρου), and several of the Fathers held Joseph to have been a smith (see Thilo, *Cod. apocr. N. T.* i. p. 368 f. n.). Mystical reasons were found for the Lord’s connexion with one or other of these trades; thus Hilary (on Mt. xiv.) writes: “Fabri erat filius ferrum igne vincentis, omnem saeculi virtutem iudicio decoquenter,” and Ambrose (on Lc. iii. 25): “hoc typo patrem sibi esse demonstrat qui Fabricator omnium condidit mundum.” The family continued to be engaged in manual labour to the third generation; see the story of the grandsons of Jude in Eus. *H. E.* iii. 20, τὰς χεῖρας τὰς ἑαυτῶν ἐπιδεικνύναι, μαρτύριον τῆς αὐτουργίας τὴν τοῦ σώματος σκληρίαν καὶ τοὺς ἀπὸ τῆς συνεχοῦς ἔργασίας ἐναποτυπωθέντας ἐπὶ τῶν ἰδίων χειρῶν τύλους παριστάντας. Of the particu-

lars of Joseph’s work, and of the interest manifested in it by the Child Jesus, the apocryphal Gospels have much to tell: see Thilo *l.c.*

ὁ νιὸς τῆς Μαρίας] The absence of any reference to Joseph in Mc. is noteworthy; contrast Lc. iii. 23, iv. 22, Jo. i. 45, vi. 42. He was still alive in our Lord’s thirteenth year (Lc. ii. 41 ff.), but there is no evidence of his life having been prolonged further; according to *Protev.* 9 Joseph was already an old man before the Birth of Jesus, and all the later notices of the Lord’s Mother (e.g. Jo. ii. 1 ff.; Mc. iii. 31 ff.; Jo. xix. 25 ff.) confirm the supposition that he died before the Ministry began. The Arabic *Historia Josephi* (cc. 14, 15) places his death in our Lord’s eighteenth year, when Joseph had reached the age of 111.

ἀδελφός] On this relationship see Lightfoot (*Galatians*, “The Brethren of the Lord”) and J. B. Mayor (*St James*, Introd.). Lightfoot disposes of Jerome’s view (cf. *de vir. ill.* 2) that the ‘brothers’ were cousins, sons of “Mary the sister of the Lord’s Mother,” and on the whole supports the alternative, which was widely held by Catholics of the fourth century, that they were sons of Joseph by a former marriage. This belief is traced by Origen (*in Matt.* x. 17) to the apocryphal Gospel of Peter, and it finds some support in the *Protevangelium* (c. 9). On the other hand the more obvious interpretation, which makes the brothers sons of Joseph and Mary, born after the Birth of Jesus, was apparently accepted by Tertullian (cf. *adv. Marc.* iv. 29, *de*

καὶ Ἰούδα καὶ Σίμωνος; καὶ οὐκ εἰσὶν αἱ ἀδελφαὶ  
αὐτοῦ ὥδε πρὸς ἡμᾶς; καὶ ἐσκανδαλίζοντο ἐν αὐτῷ.

3 om οὐκ syrhier

carn. Chr. 7), who does not shew any consciousness of departing in this matter from the Catholic tradition of his time.

The names of the four brothers are given only here and in Mt. xiii. 55; Mt.'s order is Ἰάκωβος, Ἰωσήφ, Σίμων, Ἰούδας. The loyalty of the family to the traditions of the O.T. appears in the selection: Joseph named his firstborn after Jacob, and his other sons after the greater patriarchs.

[*Ιακώβον*] This James is mentioned as ὁ ἀδελφὸς τοῦ κυρίου in Gal. i. 19; see also Joseph. *ant.* xx. 9. 1, τὸν ἀδελφὸν Ἰησοῦ τοῦ λεγομένου Χριστοῦ, Ἰάκωβος ὄνομα αὐτῷ, and Hegesippus ap. Euseb. *H. E.* ii. 23. His eminence in the Church at Jerusalem, to which Heg. refers, is implied in Acts xii. 17, xv. 13, xxi. 18, and in Gal. ii. 9, 12, where he is classed with Peter and John (*οἱ δοκοῦντες στῦλοι ἑναυ*); by a somewhat later age he was regarded as an ἐπίσκοπος, and even (in Ebionite circles) as ἐπισκόπων ἐπίσκοπος (*Clem. Hom. ad init.*), or *archiepiscopus* (*Recogn. i. 73*, cf. Hort, *Clem. Recogn.* p. 116 f.). In the heading of his own letter he describes himself simply as θεοῦ καὶ κυρίου Ἰησοῦ Χριστοῦ δοῦλος. For further particulars see Mayor, p. xxxvi ff., and Hort, *Ecclesia*, p. 76 ff., who suggests that "he was at some early time after the persecution of Herod taken up into the place among the Twelve vacated by his namesake."

[*Ιωσῆτος*] The name is another form of Ἰωσήφ; see Mt. xiii. 55 and cf. Mc. xv. 40, 47 with Mt. xxvii. 56; also Acts iv. 36, where for Ἰωσῆφ ὁ ἐπικληθεὶς Βαρνάβας the R.T. reads Ἰωσῆς. Lightfoot's difficulty (*Galatians*, p. 268, n. 1) seems to be met by Dalman's view (p. 75) that 'סִי' was a Galilean abbreviation of נַדְבָּא;

cf. the Rabbinic forms which he quotes, pp. 139, 143. For the Hellenised termination -ῆτος, gen. -ῆτος, see Blass, *Gr.* p. 30 f. This brother is mentioned only here and in the parallel passage of Mt.; the Joses of Mc. xv. 40 f. is another person (see note there).

[*Ἰούδα*] The Judas who styles himself (Jude 1) Ἰούδας Ἰησοῦ Χριστοῦ δοῦλος ἀδελφὸς δὲ Ἰακώβου. If he was the third brother (or fourth, according to Mt.'s order) born after B.C. 4, his age at this time could not have been thirty, and his grandsons might well have been men in middle life during the reign of Domitian (Euseb. *H. E.* iii. 20). St Paul speaks of the Lord's brothers as married men (1 Cor. ix. 5).

[*Σίμωνος*] Mentioned only here and in Mt. xiii. 55: for the form of the name see note on i. 16. The Symeon who succeeded James as Bishop of Jerusalem was, according to Hegesippus, a son of Clopas, Joseph's brother (Euseb. *H. E.* iii. 11).

[*αἱ ἀδελφαὶ*] Mt. adds πᾶσαι. Epiphanius *haer.* lxxviii. 9 gives the names of two—Salome and Mary, but his statement possibly rests upon a confused recollection of Mc. xv. 40; for other accounts see Thilo, *Cod. apocr.* p. 363 n. The sisters of Jesus are not mentioned elsewhere (cf. however Mc. iii. 32 v.l.), even in Acts i. 14 where the mother and brothers appear among the disciples at Jerusalem. They were settled at Nazareth (ὥδε πρὸς ἡμᾶς), and possibly were already married women whose duties tied them to their homes; while the brothers passed from unbelief (Jo. vii. 5) to faith, the sisters were perhaps scarcely touched by the course of events.

[*ἐσκανδαλίζοντο ἐν αὐτῷ*] So Mt. Lc. passes over this intermediate stage of

4 καὶ ἔλεγεν αὐτοῖς ὁ Ἰησοῦς ὅτι Οὐκ ἔστιν προφήτης ἄτιμος εἰ μὴ ἐν τῇ πατρίδι αὐτοῦ καὶ ἐν τοῖς συγγενεῦσιν αὐτοῦ καὶ ἐν τῇ οἰκίᾳ αὐτοῦ. 5 καὶ οὐκ ἐδύνατο § ἔκει ποιῆσαι οὐδεμίαν δύναμιν, εἰ μὴ ὀλίγοις ἀρρώ-

<sup>syr<sup>sin</sup></sup>

+ πατρ. αυτον Ν<sup>a</sup>ABCDΠΣΦ] πατρ. εαντον Ν<sup>a</sup>L 13 69 346 pr ιδια Ν<sup>a</sup>AL | τοις συγγενευσιν B<sup>a</sup>D<sup>a</sup>EFGHLNUVΔΣ 1 33 69 1071 al<sup>sat</sup>mu] τ. συγγενεσιν Ν<sup>a</sup>AB<sup>a</sup>CD<sup>a</sup>\*K<sup>a</sup>MSΙΠΦ min<sup>pl</sup> τη συγγενεια K<sup>a</sup> min<sup>perpauc</sup> cognatione latt<sup>vtplv</sup>g (arm) | om αυτον Ν<sup>a</sup>AC<sup>a</sup>DEF GHMSUVII al<sup>pl</sup> a f go arm 5 ουκ εδυνατο...ποι.] non faciebat b c e (ff) noluit facere a f i q r

feeling, but adds afterwards ἐπλήσθησαν πάντες θυμοῦ. Amazement rapidly gave place to jealous suspicion, and jealousy to anger. The σκάνδαλον was the fact that the Lord till lately had been one of themselves. For σκανδαλίζεσθαι see note on iv. 17, and for σκ. ἐν τωι cf. Mt. xi. 6, xxvi. 31 f.; the construction occurs also in Sir. ix. 5, xxiii. 8, xxxv. 15 (xxxii. 19). The Nazarenes found their stumblingblock in the person or circumstances of Jesus; He became a πέτρα σκανδάλου (1 Pet. ii. 7, 8, Rom. ix. 33) to those who disbelieved. The Cross enormously increased the difficulties of belief for those who expected external display; see 1 Cor. i. 23, Gal. v. 11. But for such there were difficulties from the first.

4. καὶ ἔλεγεν αὐτοῖς κτλ.] An answer to the objection which He anticipates (Lc.), that the Capharnaites had been more favoured than His own fellow-townsmen. In His own city He would have been received with less alacrity; people are slow to credit with extraordinary powers one who has lived from childhood under their observation. For οὐκ ἔστιν προφῆτης εἰ μὴ κτλ. (Mt. Mc.) Lc. substitutes οὐδεὶς προφήτης δεκτός ἔστιν ἐν τῇ πατρίδι αὐτοῦ: Jo., who seems to regard Judaea as the πατρίς (cf. Westcott ad l. and Origen in Corderius, p. 138), has a reminiscence of the saying in its earlier form (iv. 44, αὐτὸς γὰρ Ἰησοῦς ἐμαρτύρησεν ὅτι προφ. ἐν τῇ ἴδιᾳ πατρίδι τιμὴν οὐκ ἔχει).

Comp. *Oxyrhynch. log.* 6. The Lord here assumes the rôle of the Prophet which was generally conceded to Him (vi. 15, viii. 28, Mt. xxi. 11, 46, Lc. xxiv. 19, Jo. iv. 19, vi. 14, vii. 40, ix. 17, Acts iii. 22, vii. 37). Συγγενεύσιν = συγγενέσιν: for the form cf. 1 Macc. x. 89 (Ν<sup>c,a</sup>Α), Lc. ii. 44 (LΧΔΔ 1, 13, 33, 69, al.); see WH., Notes, p. 158, W Schm., p. 89, Blass, Gr., p. 27. Of the ἄτιμια cast upon the Lord by His kindred and family (ἡ οἰκία αὐτοῦ) see exx. in iii. 21, Jo. vii. 3 f.

5. οὐκ ἐδύνατο...ποιῆσαι] Mt. οὐκ ἐποίησεν. Origen (on Mt. x. 19) has an interesting comment on Mc.'s phrase: οὐ γὰρ εἴπεν Οὐκ ἡθελεν· ἀλλ' Οὐκ ἡδύνατο, ὡς ἐρχομένης μὲν ἐπὶ τὴν ἐνεργούσαν δύναμιν συμπράξεως ὑπὸ πίστεως ἔκείνου εἰς ὃν ἐνήργει ἡ δύναμις κωλυομένης δὲ ἐνεργεῖν υπὸ τῆς ἀπιστίας. To work a miracle upon a responsible human being it was necessary that faith on the part of the recipient should concur with Divine power; neither was effectual without the other: οὕτε τὰ ἐνεργήματα τῶν δυνάμεων χωρὶς πίστεως τῆς τῶν θεραπευομένων ...οὕτε ἡ πίστις, ὅποια ποτ' ἀνὴρ, χωρὶς τῆς θείας δυνάμεως. Faith was necessary also on the part of the worker of the miracle (see Mt. xvii. 19, 20), but in our Lord's case this condition was always satisfied (Mc. xi. 21 f., Jo. xi. 41).

εἰ μὴ ὀλίγοις ἀρρώστοις κτλ.] Cf. 'Mc.' xvi. 18, ἐπὶ ἀρρώστοις χεῖρας ἐπιθήσόνσιν, and for other instances

*στοις ἐπιθεὶς τὰς χεῖρας ἐθεράπευσεν·* ¶<sup>6</sup> καὶ ἐθαύμασεν 6 ¶<sup>syrhier</sup>  
διὰ τὴν ἀπιστίαν αὐτῶν.

*Καὶ περιῆγεν τὰς κώμας κύκλῳ διδάσκων.* 7 καὶ 7  
προσκαλεῖται τοὺς δάδεκα καὶ ἤρξατο αὐτοὺς ἀπο-  
στέλλειν δύο δύο, καὶ ἐδίδου αὐτοῖς ἔξουσίαν τῶν

6 εθαύμασεν ΚΒΕ<sup>\* vid 2<sup>pe</sup> al<sup>pauc</sup>] εθαύμαζεν ACDLΠΣΦ al min<sup>pl</sup> | απιστιαν] πιστιν D  
(sed incredulitatem d) 7 προσκαλεῖται...δύο δύο] προσκαλεσαμενος τους ἵβ μαθητας  
απεστειλεν αυτους ανα β̄ D lat<sup>vt</sup> syr<sup>sin</sup> | των πν. των ακαθ.] pr kata Δ 238 al aeth  
om των bis CΔ</sup>

of the imposition of hands in such cases, Mc. v. 23, vii. 32, viii. 23, 25. These works of healing at Nazareth must, it would appear, have preceded the scene in the synagogue, which was immediately followed by the Lord's expulsion from the town (Lc. iv. 28 ff.).

6. *ἐθαύμασεν*] His wonder, as well as the limitation of His power, was real and not apparent only. Cf. Mt. viii. 10, where the Lord expresses wonder at a high degree of faith under conditions where faith was not to be expected. The surprises of life, especially those which belong to its ethical and spiritual side, created genuine astonishment in the human mind of Christ. *Θαυμάζειν* is usually followed in the N.T. by *ἐπί* with dat. (Lc. iv. 22, xx. 26, Acts iii. 12), *περὶ* with gen. (Lc. ii. 18) or an acc. of the object (Lc. vii. 9, xxiv. 12, Acts vii. 31). *Διά* with acc. points to the cause of the sensation which the Lord experienced. Cf. WM., p. 497.

6b—13. ANOTHER CIRCUIT OF GALILEE; MISSION OF THE TWELVE (Mt. ix. 35—x. 1, x. 5—xi. 1, Lc. ix. 1—6).

6b. *περιῆγεν τὰς κώμας*] Another circuit of the villages and towns (Mt. *τὰς πόλεις πάσας*) of Galilee (cf. Mc. i. 38 f.). *Κύκλῳ* does not limit the tour to the neighbourhood of Nazareth, but implies that, after passing from town to town, He came back to a point near that from which He started, i.e. the neighbourhood of the Lake; see vi. 32. *Διδάσκων*: Mt.

adds *ἐν ταῖς συναγωγαῖς αὐτῶν, καὶ κηρύσσων...καὶ θεραπεύων.* His work, as usual, included (1) Synagogue-teaching, (2) proclamation of the Kingdom in houses or by the roadside, (3) incidental miracles of healing. Unbelief no longer prevented the manifestation of His power. For *περιάγειν* intr. with *acc. loci* cf. Mt. ix. 35, xxxii. 15.

7. *προσκαλεῖται τοὺς δάδεκα*] The Twelve are now a recognised body, who can be summoned as such at the pleasure of the Head. *Προσκ.* implies authority, cf. Mc. xv. 44, Lc. xv. 26. It is, however, characteristic of our Lord that His summons is by no means limited to disciples: cf. iii. 23, *προσκ. αὐτούς*, sc. *τοὺς γραμματεῖς*: vii. 14, viii. 34, *προσκαλ. τὸν ὄχλον.* With *τοὺς δάδεκα* cf. *οἱ ἑνδεκα* 'Mc.' xvi. 14, *οἱ ἑβδομήκοντα δύο* (Lc. x. 17), *οἱ ἑπτά* (Acts xxi. 8).

*ἤρξατο αὐτ. ἀποστέλλειν*] This was the ultimate purpose of their selection (iii. 15, where see note). The time had now come for testing the results of their preparatory training.

*δύο δύο*] As in LXX., Gen. vi. 19 f., vii. 2 f., 9, 15. Vg. *binos*, in pairs = ἀνά δύο (cf. D here), a Hebraism which Delitzsch renders *כַּיִשׁ כַּיִשׁ*; cf. WM., p. 312, Blass, *Gr.*, p. 145. On the purpose of this arrangement see Latham, *Pastor p.*, p. 297 f. Thph. cites Eccl. iv. 9, *ἀγαθοὶ δύο ὑπὲρ τὸν ἔνα*. Galilee was now evangelised in six different directions. The pairs

8 πνευμάτων τῶν ἀκαθάρτων. <sup>8</sup>καὶ παρήγγειλεν αὐτοῖς  
ἴνα μηδὲν αἴρωσιν εἰς ὄδὸν εἰ μὴ ράβδον μόνον, μὴ  
9 ἄρτον, μὴ πήραν, μὴ εἰς τὴν ζώνην χαλκόν, <sup>9</sup>ἀλλὰ

8 αρωσιν NCLΔΦ 13 69 2<sup>pe</sup> al<sup>pauc</sup> | μη αρτον μη πηραν NBCLΔ 33 me aeth] μη π.  
μη α. ΑΠΣΦ al min<sup>pl</sup> latt syrr arm μητε π. μητε α. D 2<sup>pe</sup> a go 9 αλλ EFGH  
ΚΜΔΠ al<sup>pl</sup>

were probably arranged as in the Apostolic lists, as Victor suggests.

ἐδίδον αὐτοῖς ἔξονσίαν κτλ.] Cf. iii. 14. ἔχειν ἔξ. ἐκβάλλειν τὰ δαμόνια. Ἐδίδον: He was occupied in giving them their authority (imperf.), and while doing so, He charged them (aor.) etc. ἔξονσία is the note of the authorised servants, as it was that of the Master Himself, cf. i. 27, xiii. 34. Τῶν πνευμάτων: gen. of the object, cf. Jo. xvii. 2, Rom. ix. 21, 1 Cor. ix. 12; other constructions are in use, as ἐπί with acc. (Lc. ix. 1) or gen. (Apoc. ii. 26, xiv. 18, xx. 6), ἐπάνω τινός (Lc. xix. 17) or κατά τινος (Jo. xix. 11). On πν. ἀκάθαρτα see i. 23 note.

Mt., Lc. extend the commission to the healing of diseases and the preaching of the Kingdom. Both preaching and healing were in fact included, cf. Mc. v. 12.

8. παρήγγειλεν αὐτοῖς ἵνα κτλ.] Ἰνα is used after παραγγέλλω again in 2 Thess. iii. 12; after παρακαλῶ it is frequent (1 Cor. i. 10, xvi. 12, 15, 2 Cor. vii. 6, xii. 8). In all these cases the telic use of ἵνα is in the background of the thought, but the sense is hardly distinguishable from that of the ordinary construction with the inf., or from a direct imperative; cf. Lc. here (*εἰπεν...μηδὲν αἴρετε*). *Eἰς ὄδόν*, as a travelling outfit: Lc. more explicitly, *εἰς τὴν ὄδόν*, for this particular journey. For the anarthrous phrase cf. Mc. x. 17, Lc. xi. 6.

εὶ μὴ ράβδον μόνον κτλ.] Mt. (*μηδὲ ράβδον*) and Lc. (*μήτε ρ.*) exclude even this—an early exaggeration of the sternness of the command, for it is impossible to assent here to Augustine's ruling (*de cons. ev. ii. 75*)

"utrumque accipiendum est a Domino Apostolis dictum." The staff was the universal companion of the traveller, whatever else he might lack; see Gen. xxxii. 10 (11), ἐν γὰρ τῇ ράβδῳ μου διέβην τὸν Ἰορδάνην, and with the whole passage comp. Exod. xii. 11. Much forethought was ordinarily expended on a journey, cf. Tob. v. 17, and the delightful picture in Jos. ix. 10 (4) ff. Μή...μή...μή carry on the construction ἵνα μηδὲν αἴρωσιν (cf. Mt. Lc.). The order is ascensive: 'no bread, no bag to carry what they could buy, no money to buy with.' This point is missed in Lc., and in the later text of Mc. (cf. Vg. *non peram non panem*). Πήρα is a leathern bag to carry provisions, cf. 4 Regn. iv. 42 (cod. N, Compl.), Judith x. 5, xiii. 10, 15; Suidas: *πήρα* ή θήκη τῶν ἄρτων. The word is found from Homer downwards. On the significance of this direction cf. Victor: ὅστε καὶ ἀπὸ τοῦ σχήματος δεικνύαι πᾶσιν ὑμᾶς ὅσον ἀφεστήκατε χρημάτων ἐπιθυμίας. Μὴ εἰς τὴν ζώνην χαλκόν—"not a copper for your girdle," Lc. μήτε ἀργύριον 'nor a silver piece' (shekel or drachma); Mt. μὴ κτησοσθε χρυσὸν μηδὲ ἀργυρον μηδὲ χαλκόν. The girdle served as a purse for small change (cf. the classical phrase *εἰς ζώνην δίδοσθαι*), or, when secrecy was necessary, for considerable sums of money (Suet. Vitell. 16, "zona se aureorum plena circumdedit"), but on this occasion it was to be empty; much less was the messenger to carry a βαλλάντιον (Lc. x. 4).

9. ἀλλὰ ὑποδεδεμένους κτλ.] A sudden break in the construction, suggestive of the disjointed notes on

ὑποδεδεμένους σανδάλια· καὶ μὴ ἐνδύσασθε δύο χιτῶνας. ¶ ἕτοι καὶ ἔλεγεν αὐτοῖς Ὁπου ἔλην εἰσέλθητε εἰς Ιονίον

9 ενδύσασθε B\* 33 al pauet] ενδύσασθαι B<sup>2</sup>SII\* al ενδύσησθε ΝΑCΔΔΙΙΦ al min<sup>pl</sup> a me go arm ενδεδυσθαι LNΣ min<sup>mu</sup>

which the Evangelist depended. The writer, forgetting that he has used *ἴva*, falls back upon the ordinary construction of *παραγγέλλω* with the inf. (*oratio variata*, WM., p. 724, Buttmann, p. 330, Blass, *Gr.* p. 286; Bengel compares xii. 38, *θελόντων περιπατεῖν...καὶ ἀσπασμούς*); others with less probability regard ὑποδεδεμ. [εἴναι]...ἐνδύσασθαι (vv. 11.) as ‘infinitive imperatives,’ cf. Burton, § 365. If we read ἐνδύσασθε, another change follows, from the *oratio obliqua* to the *o. recta*; see other N. T. exx. in WM., p. 725. For ὑπόδ. *σανδάλια* Mt. has *μηδὲ ὑπόδηματα* (cf. Lc. x. 4). *Σανδάλιον* and *ὑπόδημα* are both used in the LXX. as equivalents of **לְעֵג** (for *σανδ.* see Jos. ix. 11 (5), Isa. xx. 2, Judith x. 4, xvi. 9); in the N. T., *σανδ.* occurs again only in Acts xii. 8; the form **לְנָדֶס** is found in Rabbinical writings (Schürer II. i. p. 44 n.). The *σανδάλιον* was in Greece part of the woman’s attire (Becker, *Charicles*, p. 447), but in the East it appears to have been used by men also, esp. perhaps in travelling. There seems to be no warrant for distinguishing *σανδ.* and *ὑπόδημα*: *σανδ.* may have been used here and in Acts l. c. (see Blass) in order to avoid writing ὑποδεδέθαι *ὑπόδηματα*. If so, Mc. is here again at issue with Mt.; see note on v. 8 (*εἰ μὴ β. μόνον*).

**δύο χιτῶνας**] One *χιτών* (η̄τη) sufficed, cf. Jo. xix. 23, τὰ ἱμάτια...δύο *χιτώνες*: to possess two was a sign of comparative wealth, cf. Lc. iii. 11. Two were however sometimes worn at the same time, esp. perhaps in travelling; see Joseph. *ant.* xvii. 5. 7, τὸν ἐντὸς χιτῶνα, ἐνεδεύκει γάρ δύο: cf. Mc. xiv. 63. It is the wearing of

two on this journey which is prohibited (*μὴ ἐνδ.*); Mt. and Lc. extend the prohibition to the possession of two (Mt. *μηδὲ δύο χιτῶνας, sc. κτήσησθε*; Lc. *μητέ δ. χ. ἔχειν*).

On the general purpose of these directions see Latham, p. 290 ff. No hardship was suffered by the Apostles in consequence (Lc. xxii. 35), while an important lesson was taught to the future Church: comp. Mt. x. 10 with 1 Tim. v. 18. For the mystical interpretation see Origen in *Jo.* t. i. 27 (25): *αὐτός ἐστιν ἡ ὁδός, ἐφ' ἣν ὁδὸν οὐδὲν αἴρειν δεῖ...αὐτάρκης γάρ ἐστι παντὸς ἐφοδίου αὐτῇ ἡ ὁδός*: ib. t. vi. 19; *de princ.* iv. 18; and cf. Bigg, *Christian Platonists*, p. 137 f.

10. καὶ ἔλεγεν αὐτοῖς κτλ.] The directions given above imply that the missionaries were to look for free entertainment. The Lord adds two general rules for their guidance in this matter: (1) ‘during your visit to any town remain in the same house,’ (2) ‘do not force yourselves on an unwilling people or quit them without solemn warning.’

**ὅπου ἔλην εἰσέλθητε κτλ.**] The house was not to be chosen at haphazard, but by a careful selection of the fittest (Mt.); Jerome in *Mt.* ix., “apostoli novam introeuntes urbem scire non poterunt quis qualis esset. ergo hospes fama eligendus est populi et indicio vicinorum.” Having made their choice, they were to be content with the fare it offered, and not to change their lodging unnecessarily (cf. Lc. x. 7). St Paul seems to have followed this rule in his mission to the Gentiles; see *Acts* xvi. 15, xvii. 5–7, xviii. 7; only during his captivity at Rome do we find him dwelling *ἐν λόγῳ μισθώματι*. Contrast the care with

II οἰκίαν, ἐκεῖ μένετε ἕως ἀν ἐξέλθητε ἐκεῖθεν. <sup>11</sup>καὶ ὃς ἀν τόπος μὴ δέξηται ὑμᾶς μηδὲ ἀκούσωσιν ὑμῶν,  
ἐκπορευόμενοι ἐκεῖθεν ἐκτινάξατε τὸν χοῦν τὸν ὑπο-  
κάτω τῶν ποδῶν ὑμῶν εἰς μαρτύριον αὐτοῖς. <sup>12</sup>καὶ  
Ι3 ἐξελθόντες ἐκήρυξαν ἵνα μετανοῶσιν, <sup>13</sup>καὶ δαιμόνια

II os av τοπος μη δεξηται NBLΔ 13 28 69 124 346 syr<sup>hel(mg)</sup> me aeth] os av μη δεξ. C\*vid I 209 syr<sup>sin</sup> οσοι εαν μη δεξωνται AC<sup>2</sup>DNIIΣΦ al min<sup>pl</sup> latt syrrbesh<sup>hel(txt)</sup> arm οσοι ου μη δεξωνται 1071 | οι τον υποκατω D 33 604 2<sup>po</sup> latt (exc c) syr<sup>sin</sup> arm aeth | αυτοις]+αμην λεγω υμιν ανεκτοτερον εσται Σοδομοις η Γομορροις εν ημερα κρισεως η τη πολει εκεινη ΑΝΠΙΣΦ al min<sup>pl</sup> a f q syrr go aeth 12 εκηρυξαν NBCDLΔ syrrbesh<sup>hel(mg)</sup> go] εκηρυσσον ΑΝΠΙΣΦ al min<sup>forte omn</sup> latt | μετανοωσιν BDL me] μετανοησωσιν ΝΑCΔΠΦ al min<sup>forte omn</sup> μετανοησουσιν ΝΣ

which the next age found it necessary to guard itself against an abuse of this privilege of the itinerant preacher; *Didache* II: *πᾶς δὲ ἀπόστολος ἐρχόμενος πρὸς ὑμᾶς δεχθήτω ὡς Κύριος· μενεῖ δὲ ἡμέραν μίαν, ἔὰν δὲ ἢ ἡ χρεία, καὶ τὴν ἄλλην τρεῖς δε ἔὰν μείνῃ, ψευδοπροφήτης ἐστίν κτλ.*

II. ὃς ἀν τόπος μὴ δέξηται κτλ.] The giving or withholding hospitality in this case was not a personal matter; it was a visible sign of acceptance or rejection of the Master and the Father Who sent Him (Mt. x. 40, Lc. x. 16), and therefore an index of the relation in which the inhabitants as a whole stood to the eternal order. Mt. extends the principle to the case of the individual householder who refuses hospitality. For δέχεσθαι in the sense of hospitable or courteous reception comp. Acts xxi. 17, 2 Cor. vii. 15, Gal. iv. 14, Col. iv. 10, Heb. xi. 31. Μηδὲ ἀκ. ὑμῶν: ‘nor will they even give you a hearing?’

ἐκπορευόμενοι ἐκεῖθεν] I.e. ἐκ τοῦ τόπου ἐκείνου. Mt. ἔξω τῆς οἰκίας ἢ τῆς πόλεως ἐκείνης: see last note. Ἐκτινάξατε τὸν χοῦν. Cf. Lc. x. 11, εἴπατε Καὶ τὸν κονιορτὸν (Mt. x. 14) τὸν κολληθέντα ἡμῖν ἐκ τῆς πόλεως ὑμῶν εἰς τοὺς πόδας ἀπομασσόμεθα, and Acts xiii. 51, where Paul and Barnabas are said to have acted upon this

precept at Pisidian Antioch. The act was understood to be a formal disavowal of fellowship, and probably also an intimation that the offender had placed himself on the level of the Gentiles, for it is a Rabbinical doctrine that the dust of a Gentile land defiles. The Israelite who rejected the Messiah became as an ἔθνικός, cf. Mt. xviii. 17. The garments were sometimes shaken with the same purpose (Acts xviii. 6).

εἰς μαρτύριον αὐτοῖς] Cf. i. 44, xiii. 9. The action just prescribed was not to be performed in a contemptuous or vindictive spirit, but with a view to its moral effect: either it would lead to reflexion and possibly repentance, or at least it would justify God’s future judgment (cf. Mt. x. 15, Lc. x. 12). The reference to Sodom and Gomorrah inserted by A and a few of the later uncials is from Mt.

12. ἐκήρυξαν ἵνα μετανοῶσιν] On this use of *ἵνα* see note on *παρήγγειλεν* ...*ἵνα* (v. 8). *Μετάνοια* was the theme of their preaching, *μετανοεῖτε* its chief summons; cf. i. 15, Lc. xxiv. 47, Acts xx. 21. Further, its aim and purpose were to produce repentance, and from this point of view *ἵνα* retains its telic force: cf. Vg. *praedicabant ut paenitentiam agerent*. The pres. *μετανοῶσιν* represents the repentance as a

πολλὰ ἐξέβαλλον, καὶ ἥλειφον ἐλαίῳ πολλοὺς ἀρρώστους καὶ ἐθεράπευον.

<sup>14§</sup> *Kai ἤκουσεν ὁ βασιλεὺς Ἡρώδης, φανερὸν γὰρ 14 § syr<sup>hier</sup>*

13 εξεβαλλον ΝΑΒΛΣΦ al min<sup>pl</sup> latt] εξεβαλον CM 33 al<sup>pau</sup> | ηλ. ελ. π. αρρ. κ. εθερ.]  
αλειφαντες ελ. π. αρρ. εθερ. D b c(g) iqr | αρρ. post εθ. transp syr<sup>sin</sup> | εθεραπευοντο  
ΝΠΣ min<sup>pau</sup> f 14 Ηρωδης] + την ακοην ἦ M 13 69 736 1071 al<sup>pau</sup>

state and not merely an act following upon the preaching.

13. δαιμόνια πολλὰ ἐξέβαλλον] They found themselves invested with the same authority over unclean spirits which had been the earliest note of the Master's mission (i. 23), and from time to time they exercised it (imperf.). But they were not invariably successful (ix. 18); and when they succeeded, it was through a believing use of the Master's Name ('Mc.' xvi. 17, Lc. ix. 49).

ἥλειφον ἐλαίῳ π. ἀρρώστους] Euth.: εἰκὸς δὲ καὶ τούτῳ παρὰ τοῦ κυρίου διδαχθῆναι τοὺς ἀποστόλους. Oil was much used in medical treatment: cf. Lc. x. 34, Joseph. B. J. i. 33. 5. Galen (cited by J. B. Mayor) calls it ἄριστον λαμάτων πάντων τοῖς ἐξηραμένοις καὶ αὐχμάδεσι σώμασιν: Isaiah (i. 6) complains, οὐκ ἔστιν μάλαγμα ἐπιθεῖναι οὔτε ἔλαιον οὔτε καταδέσμους. See also J. Lightfoot *ad loc.* and Schöttgen on James v. 14. As used by the Apostles and followed by immediate results, it was no more than a sign of healing power, but it served perhaps to differentiate their miracles from those performed by the Master, Who does not appear to have employed any symbol but His own hands or saliva. After His departure the Apostles and other disciples laid their hands upon the sick ('Mc.' xvi. 18, Acts xxviii. 8, Iren. ii. 32. 4), but the use of oil held its place at least among Jewish Christians (James, *l.c.*). Traces of a ritual use of the unction of the sick appear first among Gnostic practices of the second century (Iren. ii. 21. 5); on the later ecclesiastical

rite see the authorities cited in *D.C.A.* ii. p. 2004 f. Victor remarks: σημαίνει οὖν τὸ ἀλειφόμενον ἔλαιον καὶ τὸ παρὰ τοῦ θεοῦ ἔλεον καὶ τὴν ἴασιν τοῦ νοσήματος καὶ τῆς καρδίας τὸν φωτισμόν. ὅτι γὰρ ή εὐχὴ τὸ πᾶν ἐνήργει παντὶ που δῆλον. τὸ δὲ ἔλαιον ὡς γε οἴμαι σύμβολον τούτων ὑπῆρχε. Bede finds in this Apostolic practice a precedent for the Western use of unction with which he was familiar: "unde patet ab ipsis apostolis hunc sanctae ecclesiae morem esse traditum ut energumeni vel alii quilibet aegroti ungantur oleo pontificali benedictione consecrato."

ἐκήρυξαν...ἐξέβαλλον...ἥλειφον] The change of tense is perhaps intended to mark the incidental character of the miracles. The preaching is regarded as a whole, the miracles are mentioned as occurring from time to time during the course of the preaching. The traditional text misses this point; cf. Vg. *praedicabant...eiciebant...unguebant*.

14–16. THE FAME OF JESUS REACHES THE TETRARCH (Mt. xiv. 1–2, Lc. ix. 7–9).

14. καὶ ἤκουσεν ὁ βασιλεὺς Ἡρ.] Mt. adds τὴν ἀκοὴν Ἰησοῦ, Lc., τὰ γυνόμενα πάντα. Mt. distinctly connects this with the circuit of Galilee wh. ch began at Nazar. th (xiv. 1, ἐν ἐκείνῳ τῷ καιρῷ). It was not so much the miracles at Capernaum, as the stir throughout the entire tetrarchy (Lc. τὰ γυνόμενα πάντα) and the great diffusion of the movement caused by the mission of the Twelve, which attracted the attention of Antipas. The court, even if located at Tiberias, could regard

ἐγένετο τὸ ὄνομα αὐτοῦ, καὶ ἐλεγον ὅτι Ἰωάννης ὁ βαπτίζων ἐγήγερται ἐκ νεκρῶν, καὶ διὰ τοῦτο ἐνερ-

14 ελεγον Β (D -γοσαν) min<sub>perpaurc</sub> a b ff Aug<sup>cons</sup>] ελεγεν ΝΑCLNΔΠΙΣ al min<sup>pl</sup>  
c f i q vg syrr me arm go ειπεν τοις πασιν αυτον Φ | ο βαπτιζων] ο βαπτιστης DS 13 28  
33 69 124 346 604 (baptista a b c f i q vg) | εγηγερται ΝΒDLΔ 33 604] ηγερθη CNII<sup>mg</sup>  
ΣΦ al ανεστη AKII<sup>txt</sup>

with indifference the preaching of a local prophet, so long as it was limited to the Jewish lake-side towns; but when it was systematically carried into every part of the country, suspicion was aroused. 'Ο βασιλεύς = δ τετράρχης (Mt. Lc.). Mc. does not use the latter word, and Mt. falls back on βασιλεύς in the course of his narrative (xiv. 9); cf. Acts iv. 26, 27, Justin, *dial.* 49 (ό βασιλεύς ὑμῶν Ἡρώδης), *Ev. Petr.* 1 (‘Ηρ. ὁ βασιλεύς), *Ev. Nic.* prol. (‘Ηρώδον βασιλέως τῆς Γαλιλαίας). Victor: ὁ δὲ Μᾶρκος καὶ ἔτεροι δέ τινες ἀδιαφόρως καὶ βασιλέα καλοῦσιν εἴτε ἀπὸ τῆς τοῦ πατρὸς συνηθείας εἴτε καὶ ἀδεεστερον ἔτι τῇ φωνῇ κεχρημένοι. A tetrarch was in fact a petty king, and may have been called βασιλεύς as an act of courtesy: he possessed a jurisdiction with which the Imperial authorities were ordinarily reluctant to interfere (Lc. xxiii. 7). Yet an attempt to claim the title from Caligula led to the downfall of Antipas: Joseph. *ant.* xviii. 7. 2. On the life and character of Antipas see Schürer I. ii. 17 ff.

φανερὸν γάρ κτλ.] Notoriety was inevitable, although it was not desired; cf. iii. 12, vii. 24. Bengel: "Jesus prius non innotuit...sero aula accipit novellas spirituales." What especially arrested Herod's attention was the common report (ἐλεγον: see vv. ll. and cf. Field, *Notes*, p. 28) that the new prophet was a resuscitated John. As Elijah was thought to have reappeared in John, so John had returned to life in his successor. Origen (in Jo. t. vi. 30) suggests that the Baptist and our Lord were so like in personal appearance ὥστε διὰ τὸ κοινὸν τῆς μορφῆς Ἰωάννην τε Χριστὸν

ὑπονοεῖσθαι τυγχάνειν καὶ Ἰησοῦν Ἰωάννην: cf. however his remarks in Mt. t. x. 20. For ὁ βαπτίζων see i. 4. 'Εγήγερται, 'has risen' and is therefore alive and amongst us again: cf. i Cor. xv. 20. 'Ηγέρθη (Mt. Lc., and below, v. 16) is scarcely distinguishable in a translation (cf. xvi. 6, and see Burton, 52 f.), but the perf. concerns itself less with the historical fact and more with the result.

διὰ τοῦτο ἐνεργοῦσιν αἱ δυν. ἐν αὐτῷ] In life John did no miracle (Jo. x. 41), but John risen from the dead might well be supposed to have brought with him new and supernatural powers (ἐκ τῆς ἀναστάσεως προσέλαβε τὸ θαυματουργεῖν, Thph.). or, as Origen (in Mt. t. x. 20) suggests, the same powers turned into a new channel: φέτο ὁ Ἡρώδης τὰς ἐν Ἰωάννῃ δυνάμεις ἐν μὲν τῷ Ἰωάννῃ ἐνηργηκέναι τὰ τοῦ βαπτίσματος καὶ τῆς διδασκαλίας...ἐν δὲ τῷ Ἰησοῦ τὰς τεραστίους δυνάμεις. 'Ενεργοῦσιν, Vg. *in-operantur*, 'are operative,' intrans., as in Gal. ii. 8, Eph. ii. 2, Phil. ii. 13 (τὸ ἐνεργεῖν): cf. Sap. xv. 11, ψυχὴν ἐνεργοῦσαν. More usually ἐνεργεῖν is followed by an acc. of the thing effected, cf. i Cor. xii. 6, 11, Gal. iii. 5, Eph. i. 11, 20, while ἐνεργεῖσθαι is used intransitively, e.g. Rom. vii. 5, 2 Cor. i. 6, Eph. iii. 20, Col. i. 29; for a further distinction noticed in St Paul see Lightfoot on Gal. v. 6. On the construction ἐνεργ. ἐν τινι see Lightfoot on Gal. ii. 8, and for other instances cf. Eph. i. 20, ii. 2, 1 Thess. ii. 13. Αἱ δυνάμεις, the miraculous powers of which report spoke; for δύναμις in this sense see i Cor. xii. 10, 28, Gal. iii. 5 (Lightfoot)—more usually, the miraculous acts which the powers

γοῦσιν αἱ δυνάμεις ἐν αὐτῷ. <sup>15</sup> ἄλλοι δὲ ἔλεγον ὅτι <sup>15</sup>  
 Ἡλείας ἐστίν· ἄλλοι δὲ ἔλεγον ὅτι Προφήτης, ὡς εἰς  
 τῶν προφητῶν. <sup>16</sup> ἀκούσας δὲ ὁ Ἡρώδης ἔλεγεν Ὁν <sup>16</sup>  
 ἐγὼ ἀπεκεφάλισα Ἰωάνην, οὗτος ἦγέρθη.

<sup>17</sup> Λάζαρος γάρ ὁ Ἡρώδης ἀποστείλας ἐκράτησεν <sup>17</sup>

<sup>15</sup> om δε <sup>1°</sup> FMUV syr<sup>hel</sup> arm | om προφ. ws Dbeffi πρ. η ws ΔΦ 1 alpauw syr<sup>hel</sup> arm πρ. εστιν ws AC<sup>2</sup>Π al min<sup>pl</sup> a f q vg go | ws eis των προφ.] om a τις των αρχαιων αγεστη 33 <sup>16</sup> ελεγεν] ειπεν ΑΔΠ | ουτος Ιωαννης ηγερθη <sup>κ\*</sup> ουτος I. αυτος ηγερθη <sup>κ\*</sup> α ουτος εκ νεκρων ηγερθη D ουτος εστιν αυτος ηγ. εκ νεκρων ΑΠ(Σ)Φ al min<sup>pl</sup> b q go syr<sup>hel</sup> arm o. ε. a. ηγ. απο των γ. CN alpauw Orl+οτι ΑCΔΠ me go <sup>17</sup> αυτος γαρ o] o γαρ <sup>κε. a</sup> L me go

effect (vi. 2, Acts xix. 11, 2 Cor. xii. 12).

15. ἄλλοι δὲ ἔλεγον κτλ.] While all were agreed as to the wonder-working power of Jesus, opinions differed as to His personality. Those who saw the absurdity of identifying Him with John, took Him for Elijah, with whom John had refused to be identified (Jo. i. 21). This opinion was perhaps widely spread in Galilee, where no suspicion seems to have been as yet entertained of His Messiahship. If Elijah must come before Messiah (ix. 11), why should not this be Elijah? Cf. viii. 28, and note on ix. 11. Others again were content to say that Jesus was a prophet of the highest order, the equal of the Prophets of the O. T. canon (*οἱ προφῆται*, Tob. xiv. 4 (<sup>κ</sup>), 5, Acts iii. 21, 24 f.). *Ως εἰς τῶν προφητῶν*: cf. Jud. xvi. 7, 11 (codd. BA), *ἔσομαι ὡς εἰς τῶν ἀνθρώπων*, on a par with other men (**Μὴν οὐδὲν οὐδὲν**). In Lc. this belief takes another form: *προφήτης τις τῶν ἀρχαίων ἀνέστη* (cf. Sir. xlix. 10 (12)) — the name of Jeremiah was especially connected in the popular expectation (Mt. xvi. 14) with the hope of a revival of the prophetic order. This hope, which seems to have been based on Deut. xviii. 15, appears in the Maccabean age (1 Macc. iv. 46, xiv. 41), and was revived by the appearance of the Baptist (Jo. i. 21). Jesus Himself claimed to be a Prophet (see note on v. 4).

16. ἀκούσας δὲ ὁ Ἡρώδης κτλ.] <sup>16</sup> *Ακούσας* takes up the thread which had been dropped in v. 14, where instead of continuing *καὶ ἔλεγεν* *Οὐ κτλ.*, the Evangelist goes off into the parenthesis *φανερὸν γάρ...προφητῶν*. Herod was at first in doubt which of these conjectures to accept (Lc., *δημπόρει*), but finally decided in favour of the first. His conscience turned the scale in its favour. Lc. represents him as still sceptical (*Ιωάνην ἐγὼ ἀπεκεφάλισα· τις δὲ ἐστιν οὗτος;*); in Mc. fear has changed a reasonable doubt into credulity: 'I put John to death, and now he has risen to condemn me.' This conviction is the more remarkable since Herod's frank worldliness probably predisposed him to Sadducean views (comp. Mt. xvi. 11 with Mc. viii. 15). Euth.: *ὁ φονεύσας φοβεῖται τὸν πεφονευμένον· τοιοῦτος γάρ ὁ κακός*. For the construction *οὐ...Ιωάνην οὗτος* see WM., p. 205: for the late verb *ἀποκεφαλίζω* cf. Ps. cl. 7: Kennedy, *Sources*, p. 130. *Ὑγέρθη*: has risen (as a fact): see note on v. 14.

On the treatment of this verse in the Eusebian canons see Nestle, *Text. Crit.* p. 263 f.

17—29. EPISODE OF JOHN'S IMPRISONMENT AND DEATH (Mt. xiv. 3—12; cf. Lc. iii. 19—20).

17. *αὐτὸς γάρ κτλ.*] Mc. is here much fuller than Mt., while Lc. gives but a bare summary of the causes of

τὸν Ἰωάνην καὶ ἔδησεν αὐτὸν ἐν φυλακῇ διὰ Ἡρῳδίαδα τὴν γυναικα Φιλίππου τοῦ ἀδελφοῦ αὐτοῦ, ὅτι

17 καὶ εδ. αυτον εν φυλακῃ] εν φυλ. καὶ εδ. αυτον Α | εν φυλακῃ (εν τη φ. 5 minima vid.) και εβαλεν εις φυλακην D 13 28 69 124 346 604 a b f f f i syr<sup>hier ed</sup> arm | om την γυναικα B\* (hab B<sup>mg</sup>)

the imprisonment. Certain coincidences (comp. *vv. 17, 22, 23, 26, 28, 29* with Mt. xiv. 3, 6, 8, 9, 21, 22) point to the dependence of Mt. and Mc. on a common source which Mt.'s sense of the secondary importance of the narrative has perhaps led him to abbreviate. *Αὐτός* answers to the emphatic *ἐγώ* of *v. 16*: the first step at least had been taken by Herod himself, who had sent (to Aenon? cf. Jo. iii. 23; on the position see Tristram, *Bible Places*, p. 234) to have John arrested. For this sense of *κρατεῖν* see xii. 12, xiv. 1 ff. The events can be placed with some precision. John was still baptizing during the Lord's early ministry in Judaea, after the first Passover (Jo. iii. 23 f.). But before Jesus left Judaea (Mt. iv. 12), certainly before He began His ministry in Galilee (Mc. i. 14), the Baptist was already a prisoner. On the other hand his death had not long preceded the report of the new Prophet's successes. He was alive for some time after the beginning of the Galilean ministry (Mt. xi. 2 ff., Lc. vii. 18), and the tidings of the murder of the Baptist seem to have brought the recent circuit to an end (Mt. xiv. 12, 13). Hence, while the narrative of Mc. vi. 17, 18 carries us back to the interval which follows i. 13, Mc. vi. 21—29 is but slightly out of its chronological order. *Ἐν φυλακῇ*: cf. *ἐν τῇ φυλακῇ* (*v. 28*) and *ἐν τῷ δεσμωτηρίῳ* (Mt. xi. 2). Josephus *ant. xviii. 5. 2* gives the locality of the imprisonment: ὁ μὲν ἵποψίᾳ τῇ Ἡρῷδου δέσμιος εἰς τὸν Μαχαιρούντα πεμφθεὶς τὸ προειρημένον φρούριον ταύτη κτίνυται. For a description of this formidable fortress see *B. J.* vii. 6. 1, and for the local history and

topography see G. A. Smith, *H. G.* p. 569 f., Schürer I. ii. p. 250 f. n., Neubauer, *G. du T.* p. 40, Tristram, *Land of Moab*, p. 253 ff. Machaerus (מַחְאָרֶשׁ, *M'khawr*) overlooked the Dead Sea, perched on the wild heights opposite to the wilderness of Judaea (i. 4); the tragedy of the Baptist's death was enacted within view of the scene of his early work. The citadel stood on the summit of a cone, a small but almost impregnable circular keep, within which Tristram noticed two dungeons with "small holes still visible in the masonry where staples of wood and iron had once been fixed."

*διὰ Ἡρῳδίαδα τὴν γυναικα Φιλίππου]* Her first husband was not Philip the tetrarch (Lc. iii. 1, cf. Mc. viii. 27), but another half-brother of Antipas, son of Herod the Great by Mariamne daughter of Simon. Joseph, *ant. xviii. 5. 4*, Ἡρῳδᾶς δὲ αὐτῶν ἡ ἀδελφὴ γίνεται Ἡρῷδη Ἡρῷδου τοῦ μεγάλου παιδὶ γεγονότι ἐκ Μαριάμμης τῆς τοῦ Σίμωνος τοῦ ἀρχιερέως...καὶ αὐτοῖς Σαλώμη γίνεται μεθ' ἧς τὰς γονάς Ἡρῳδᾶς ... Ἡρῷδη (sc. τῷ Ἀντίπα) γαμεῖται, τοῦ ἀνδρὸς τῷ ὄμοπατρίῳ ἀδελφῷ διαστάσα ζώντος. From the Gospels it appears that this Herod also bore the name of Philip, and it is arbitrary to assume with Holtzmann that this is an error. Herodias herself was a granddaughter of Herod the Great (child of Aristobulus, Herod's son by the other Mariamne), and therefore niece to both Philip her first husband and Antipas.

*ὅτι αὐτὴν ἐγάμησεν]* Γαμεῖν is used here in its proper sense = *uxorem ducere*: for *γαμεῖν* = *nubere* see x. 12, 1 Cor. vii. 28, 34. Antipas so far yielded to public opinion as to divorce

αὐτὴν ἐγάμησεν.<sup>18</sup> ἔλεγεν γὰρ ὁ Ἰωάννης τῷ Ἡρώδῃ 18  
ὅτι Οὐκ ἔξεστίν σοι ἔχειν τὴν γυναῖκα τοῦ ἀδελφοῦ  
σου.<sup>19</sup> ἡ δὲ Ἡρώδιας ἐνέίχεν αὐτῷ καὶ ἤθελεν αὐτὸν 19  
ἀποκτεῖναι, καὶ οὐκ ἦδύνατο.<sup>20</sup> ὁ γὰρ Ἡρώδης ἐφο- 20  
βεῖτο τὸν Ἰωάννην, εἰδὼς αὐτὸν ἄνδρα δίκαιον καὶ

19 ηθελεν] εζητει C\* a b e d i q | αποκτειναι] απολεσαι C\*

his first wife before he married Herodias. She was a daughter of Aretas the Nabathaean king of Petra, and her father subsequently severely chastised Antipas for his faithlessness (Joseph. *ant.* xviii. 5. 1).

18. ἔλεγεν γὰρ ὁ Ἰωάννης] John was, like Elijah, no frequenter of courts (Mt. xi. 8), and the message was perhaps sent by his disciples (cf. Mt. xi. 2); see on the other hand *v.* 20, which implies some personal intercourse between Antipas and John. That the Baptist should have visited the court at Tiberias is inconceivable, but he might have shewn himself more than once at times when Herod was at Machaerus (cf. 1 Kings xvii. 1, xviii. 1 ff., xxi. 17 ff., 2 Kings i. 15).

οὐκ ἔξεστιν κτλ.] In Mt. the denunciation is general (*οὐκ ἔξιστιν* σοι ἔχειν αὐτήν); Mc. adds the principal ground on which the union is attacked. Antipas as a Jew was under the law of Lev. xviii. 16. John's conduct is a notable instance of "boldness in rebuking vice" (1549 Collect for St J. Baptist's day).

19. ἡ δὲ Ἡρώδιας ἐνέίχεν αὐτῷ] Herod silenced the Baptist by sending him down to the dungeons, and dismissed the matter from his mind. Not so Herodias; her resentment could be satisfied only by the Baptist's death. *Ἐνέίχεν*, Vg. *insidiabatur*. Wycliffe, "leide aspies to him"; Tindale, "layd wayte for him"; R.V., "set herself against him." For this intrans. use of *ἐνέίχεν* cf. Gen. xlix. 23, *ἐνέίχον αὐτῷ* (*απηθύσθη*), Ambr. *intendebant in eum*, Lyons Pent. *insidiati sunt ei* κύριοι τοξευμάτων (see

Field, *Notes*, p. 28 f.): Lc. xi. 53, *δεινῶς ἐνέχειν*, Vg. *graviter insistere*. The grammarians suggest an ellipsis of *χόλον* (Blass, *Gr.* p. 182, cf. WM., p. 742; cf. Herod. i. 118, vi. 119, viii. 27). Hesychius gives the general sense: *ἐνέχει· μητικακεῖ*. Dr Plummer (*J. Th. St.*, i., p. 619) compares the English provincialism 'to have it in with' (or 'for') 'a man,' i.e. 'to be on bad terms or have a quarrel with him.' *Αὐτῷ* may be regarded as the *dat. incommodi* (WM., p. 265). "Ἡθελεν...καὶ οὐκ ἦδύνατο—the power was wanting, not the will. The imperfects indicate the normal attitude of Herodias toward the Baptist.

20. ὁ γὰρ Ἡρώδης ἐφοβεῖτο τὸν Ἰωάννην] The tradition in Mt. is strangely different: *θέλων αὐτὸν ἀποκτεῖναι ἐφοβήθη τὸν ὄχλον* ὅτι ὡς προφήτην αὐτὸν *εἶχεν*. The end of this sentence occurs again with unimportant variations in Mt. xxi. 26, and is perhaps a reminiscence of that context. Mc.'s account has the ring of real life: Herod was awed by the purity of John's character, feared him as the bad fear the good (Bengel: "vene-  
rabilem facit sanctitas...argumentum  
verae religionis timor malorum"). The attitude of Ahab towards Elijah is remarkably similar; it is Jezebel, not Ahab, who plots Elijah's death (1 Kings xix. 2). *Ἄνδρα δίκαιον καὶ ἄγιον*, blameless in his relations to his fellow-men and to God. The order is ascensive, as in Apoc. xxii. 11; for *ἄγιος κ. δίκαιος* see Acts iii. 14, Rom. vii. 12. *Δικαιοσύνη* is also coupled with *օσιότης* (Sap. ix. 3, Lc. i. 75, Eph. iv. 24) and *εὐσέβεια* (1 Tim. vi. 11, Tit. ii. 12).

άγιον, καὶ συνετήρει αὐτόν, καὶ ἀκούσας αὐτοῦ πολλὰ  
 21 ηπόρει, καὶ ήδέως αὐτοῦ ἥκουεν. <sup>21</sup>καὶ γενομένης  
 § τοῦ ημέρας εὐκαίρου, <sup>§</sup>ότε Ἡρώδης τοῖς γενεσίοις αὐτοῦ  
 δεῖπνον ἐποίησεν τοῖς μεγιστᾶσιν αὐτοῦ καὶ τοῖς

<sup>20</sup> ηπορει & B.L. me] εποιει ACDNΔΠΣΦ al min<sup>forte omn</sup> latt syrr arm go al (a εποιει  
 13 28 69 346 556 (b) (c) (vg<sup>codd</sup>)) <sup>21</sup> γενεσίοις] γενεθλίοις D<sup>a</sup> (-χλιοις D<sup>b</sup>) | εποιησει  
 NBCDLΔ 13 28 69 124] εποιει ΑΠΣΦ al min<sup>pl</sup>

On εἰδὼς see i. 24 note. Εἶδὼς αὐτὸν δίκαιον καὶ ἄγιον = εἰδ. ὅτι δίκαιος ἦν καὶ ἄγιος.

καὶ συνετήρει αὐτόν] protected him, Vg. *custodiebat eum*, Wycliffe, “kept him,” Tindale, Cranmer, Geneva, “gave him reverence,” A.V. “observed him”: R.V. “kept him safely” (“contra Herodiadem,” Bengel). Συντηρεῖν, which belongs to the later Greek, is common in the Apocr. (Tob.<sup>2</sup> Sir.<sup>14</sup> 1, 2 Macc.<sup>11</sup>), and occurs also in Prov.<sup>(1)</sup>, Ezek.<sup>(1)</sup>, and Dan. (LXX.<sup>4</sup> Th.<sup>2</sup>), meaning ‘to keep’ (e.g. τὸν νόμον, τὰς ἐντολάς), or ‘preserve’ (e.g. Sir. xvii. 22, χάριν ... ὡς κόρην συντηρήσει). Of the former meaning there is an example in Lc. ii. 19; the latter is illustrated by Mt. ix. 17, and is clearly required here. Possibly under the circumstances Antipas regarded imprisonment as the best safeguard. From time to time during his visits to Machaerus he had the Baptist brought up from the dungeon, and gave him audience. These repeated interviews (imperf.) pleased Antipas (ήδέως ἥκουεν, cf. Lc. xxiii. 8) at the time, bracing his jaded mind as with a whiff of desert air. At the same time they perplexed him (ηπόρει), leaving behind a tangle of confused thoughts and purposes which led to no definite course of action. This psychological picture—the portrait of a δίψυχος ἀνὴρ (Bruce)—is one of great interest for the Christian teacher and the student of human nature. For πολλὰ used adverbially see i. 45, iii. 12, v. 10, 43; and for the reading πολλὰ ἐποίει (Vg. *multa faciebat*) see WH., *Notes*, p. 25; Field, *Notes*, p. 29 f.;

Nestle, *Text. Crit.*, p. 264. <sup>21</sup> Απορεῖν is less usual than ἀπορεῖσθαι, but see Sap. xi. 5, 17, and Lc. ix. 7 (δημπόρει).

21. γενομένης ημέρας εὐκαίρου] Vg. *cum dies oportunus accidisset*. Herodias found her opportunity (cf. 2 Macc. xiv. 29, εὐκαιρον ἐτήρει, Mt. xxvi. 16, ἔζητει εὐκαιρίαν: the adjective occurs again in Heb. iv. 16, εἰς εὐκαιρον βοήθειαν). It was supplied by the birthday of Antipas: cf. Gen. xl. 20 ff. In Attic Gk. τὰ γενέσια is used of commemorations of the dead, the birthday feast of a living man being τὰ γενέθλια or ή γενέθλιος ημέρα (2 Macc. vi. 7); see Lob. *Phryn.* p. 103, Rutherford, *N. Phr.*, p. 184. But the later Gk. neglects or even reverses this distinction; cf. Polyc. *mart.* 18, ἐπιτελεῖν τὴν τοῦ μαρτυρίου αὐτοῦ ημέραν γενέθλιον (see Suicer s.v. γενέθλιος); Joseph. *ant.* xii. 4. 7, ἐορτάζοντες τὴν γενέσιον ημέραν. An effort has been made in the interests of a particular scheme of chronology to interpret τὰ γενέσια as the day of Herod’s accession (Wieseler, *syn.* p. 266 ff.); on this see Schürer I. ii. p. 26 n.

τοῖς μεγιστᾶσιν κτλ.] Vg. *principibus et tribunis et primis Galilaeae.* Μεγιστᾶνες (*μεγιστάν*), freq. in the later books of the LXX., esp. 1 Esdr., Sir., Jer., Dan., in the N. T. used again Apoc. vi. 15, xviii. 23; cf. Joseph. *ant.* xi. 3. 2, *vit.* 23, 31; a word of the later Gk. (Lob. *Phryn.* p. 147, Sturz, *de dial. Mac.*, p. 182): the Vg. equivalent is usually *magnates*, but the Gk. word was taken over by later writers under the Empire (Tac̄, Suet.). Cf. Dan. v. 1 (Th.),

χιλιάρχοις καὶ τοῖς πρώτοις τῆς Γαλειλαίας, <sup>καὶ</sup> <sup>22</sup> εἰσελθούσης τῆς θυγατρὸς αὐτῆς τῆς Ἡρῳδιάδος καὶ ὄρχησταμένης, ἥρεσεν τῷ Ἡρῷδῃ καὶ τοῖς συνακειμένοις. ὁ δὲ βασιλεὺς εἶπεν τῷ κορασίῳ Λίτησόν με ὃ ἐὰν θέλῃς, καὶ δώσω σοι. <sup>καὶ</sup> <sup>23</sup> ὡμοσεν αὐτῇ <sup>¶ W</sup> Ὁτι ἐάν με αἴτησῃς δώσω σοι ἔως ήμίσους τῆς

<sup>22</sup> αυτῆς τῆς Ἡρ. ACNΓΠΣΦ al min<sup>fere omn</sup> lat<sup>vt pl</sup> vg syr<sup>hel</sup> (τῆς Ἡρ. I 118 209 b cf syri<sup>sin pesh</sup> arm me go aeth)] αυτοῦ Ἡρ. NBCΔL 2<sup>po</sup> 238 | ηρεσεν NBC<sup>L</sup> 33 c ff me arm] καὶ αρεσασης AC<sup>3</sup>DNTΠΣΦ al min<sup>pl</sup> a b f i q vg go | αιτησαι Ν (N) | ο θελεις D min<sup>pau</sup> (latt) ο εαν θελεις Ν cm syr<sup>sin</sup> | καὶ δωσω σοι ο εαν θ. ΚΠ\* κ. δ. σ. εως ημ. της βασ. μου syr<sup>sin</sup> <sup>23</sup> ωμοσεν] αιμολογησεν F | αντη] + πολλα D 2<sup>po</sup> 604 lat<sup>vt</sup> arm + μετα ορκου (ομ οτι...της βασ. μου) syr<sup>sin</sup> | οτι εαν ΒΔ 124 αιραυε] οτι ο εαν ΝΑCLΠΣΦ al min<sup>pl</sup> latt ει τι αν D | ομι με HL 13 69 αιραυε b c q vg me | αιτηση Ν | εως ημισεως S ε. ημισεος Π<sup>2</sup> ε. ημισου Κ ε. ημισυ ΛΝΔΣ και το ημισυ D και το ημ. 2<sup>po</sup>

ὁ βασιλεὺς ἐποίησεν δεῖπνον μέγα τοῖς μεγιστᾶσιν αὐτοῦ (LXX. τοῖς ἑταῖροις αὐτοῦ) = Ἰηονὴβριτόν. The χιλιάρχος (Jo. xviii. 12, Acts xxi.—xxv. *passim*; see Blass on Acts xxi. 31) was properly the *tribunus militum*, who commanded a Roman cohort; here he is doubtless the corresponding officer in the army of the tetrarch. As the μεγιστᾶνες were the highest civil dignitaries, so the χιλιάρχοι were the chief military officers of Galilee and Peraea (cf. Apoc. vi. 15, οἱ βασιλεῖς τῆς γῆς καὶ οἱ μεγιστᾶνες καὶ οἱ χιλιάρχοι). With these were invited the leading provincials, οἱ πρῶτοι τῆς Γαλ., cf. οἱ πρῶτοι τοῦ λαοῦ, τῆς πόλεως, τῆς νήσου, τῶν Ἰουδαίων (Lc. xix. 47, Acts xiii. 50, xxv. 2, xxviii. 7, 17), τῶν Φαρισαίων, τῶν Ἱεροσολυμιτῶν (Joseph. *vit.* 5, 7). The three classes are distinguished by the repetition of the article: cf. WM., p. 160.

22. εἰσελθούσης...καὶ ὄρχησταμένης] Antipas, true to the Greek tastes of his family, permits licentious dancing after the δεῖπνον (see reff. in Wetstein on Mt. xiv. 6), and the principal ὄρχηστρίς is the daughter of Herodias. Notwithstanding the weighty documentary evidence by which it is supported, the reading τῆς θυγ. αὐτοῦ

'Ἡρῳδιάδος (WH.), which represents the girl as bearing her mother's name and as the daughter of Antipas, can scarcely be anything but an error, even if a primitive one; her name was Salome and she was the granddaughter, not the daughter of Antipas (see note to v. 17, and cf. Justin, *dial.* 49, τῆς ἐξαέλφης αὐτοῦ τοῦ Ἡρῷδου). Αὐτῆς τῆς Ἡρ. yields an excellent sense, emphasising the fact that for the sake of gratifying her resentment this haughty woman, the daughter of a king and wife of a tetrarch, submitted her child to a degradation usually limited to ἑταῖραι.

ἥρεσεν τῷ Ἡρῷδῃ: the man who, in another mood, had found pleasure in the preaching of John (v. 20). Οἱ συνακειμένοι, his guests: cf. 3 Macc. v. 39, Lc. vii. 49, xiv. 10, 15.

ὁ δὲ βασιλεὺς] See note on v. 14. Τῷ κορασίῳ: cf. v. 41, 42. For κοράσιον used of a girl of marriageable age cf. Esth. ii. 9, ηρεσεν αἴτῳ τῷ κοράσιον; and see Kennedy, *Sources*, p. 154. Salome was afterwards married to Philip the tetrarch, and after his death to another member of the Herod family (Joseph. *ant.* xviii. 5. 4).

22, 23. αἴτησόν με ὃ ἐὰν θέλῃς κτλ.] Esther is still in the writer's mind;

24 βασιλείας μου. <sup>24</sup>καὶ ἐξελθοῦσα εἶπεν τῇ μητρὶ αὐτῆς Τί αἰτήσωμαι; ή δὲ εἶπεν Τὴν κεφαλὴν Ἰωάνου 25 τοῦ βαπτίζοντος. <sup>25</sup>καὶ εἰσελθοῦσα εὐθὺς μετὰ σπουδῆς πρὸς τὸν βασιλέα ἡτήσατο λέγοντα Θέλω ἵνα ἐξαυτῆς δῶς μοι ἐπὶ πίνακι τὴν κεφαλὴν Ἰωάνου

2. η δε εξελθ. ACDΓΠ a b f syrr go | αιτησωμαι ΗΑΒCDGLΝΔΣ 28 33 124 346  
al<sup>pauc</sup>] αιτησομαι ΕΦΗΚΜΣUΝΓΠΠΦ min<sup>pl</sup> | τον βαπτιζοντος ΗΒΛΔ 28 syr<sup>hel</sup> go] τον  
βαπτιστον ACDΝΤΓΠΙΣΦ al min<sup>fereomn</sup> latt al 25 om ευθυς DL min<sup>pauc</sup> a b c i l q  
me | om μετα σπουδης D a b c i q syr<sup>sin</sup> | ητησατο λεγονσα] ειπεν DΔ 1 28 al<sup>pauc</sup> a b ff  
vg syrr<sup>sin pesh</sup> arm | om θελω wa D 2<sup>pe</sup> a b ff i q | θελω wa...δως] δος D | om εξαυτης  
D min<sup>pauc</sup> c f go

cf. Esth. v. 3 f., καὶ εἶπεν ὁ βασιλεὺς Τί θέλεις, Ἐσθήρ; ... ἔως τοῦ ἡμίσους τῆς βασιλείας μου, καὶ ἔσται σοι (A adds, v. 6, τί τὸ αἴτημά σου καὶ δοθήσεται σοι). For αἰτέων τινά τι see WM., p. 284, and for ἡμίσους = ἡμίσεος, Lob. *Phryn.* p. 347; cf. Blass, *Gr.*, p. 27. "Ωμοσειν αὐτῇ": Mt. μετὰ ὄρκου ὠμοδόγησεν αὐτῇ, cf. Heb. vi. 16.

24 ἐξελθοῦσα εἶπεν...Τί αἰτήσωμαι;] Leaving the banqueting room when her part was finished, Salome joins her mother in the women's apartments and enquires eagerly 'What am I to ask for myself?' With αἰτήσωμαι (delib. conj., WM., p. 356, Burton, § 168 f.) comp. Herod's αἰτησον, αἰτήσῃς: in the girl's mind the uppermost thought is her own advantage. See James iv. 2, 1 Jo. v. 14, 15, with Mayor's and Westcott's notes; and cf. Blass, *Gr.*, p. 186. The answer of Herodias is ready: 'the head of John.' Thus, as Mt. says, in the outrage that followed the daughter was προβιβασθεῖσα ὑπὸ τῆς μητρὸς αὐτῆς—not an uncommon feature in the history of crime. The unfortunate use of this incident by Chrysostom in his quarrel with the Empress Eudoxia is familiar to students of Church History (Socr. *H. E.* vi. 18). Τοῦ βαπτίζοντος, Vg. *baptistae*; see on v. 14, and cf. τοῦ βαπτιστοῦ, v. 25.

25. εἰσελθοῦσα εὐθὺς μετὰ σπουδῆς] The girl seems to have entered at

once into the spirit of her mother's thirst for revenge, whether because she shared Herodias's aversion to the stern preacher, or rejoiced in the opportunity of shewing the power she had gained over her stepfather. Μετὰ σπουδῆς, Exod. xii. 11, Ps. lxxvii. (lxxviii.) 33, Sap. xix. 2, Ezech. vii. 11, Sus. 50 (74), 3 Macc. v. 24, Lc. i. 39; other phrases in LXX. and N. T. are ἐν σπουδῇ, κατὰ σπουδήν, ἐπὶ σπουδῆς. Θέλω ἵνα (WM., p. 422 f.) occurs again in x. 35, Jo. xvii. 24; the conjunction is often dropped (x. 36, 51, xiv. 12, xv. 9, al.), the subjunctive being in such cases perhaps simply 'deliberative'; see Burton, § 171. Ἐξαυτῆς, i.e. ἐξ αὐτῆς τῆς ὥρας, 'at once, here and now'; elsewhere limited within the N.T. to Acts<sup>(4)</sup> Paul<sup>(1)</sup>, a word of the later Gk., see Lob. *Phryn.* 47; Wetstein *ad loc.* cites exx. of its use in Philo, Josephus and Polybius. This demand for the immediate delivery of the head seems to locate the banquet at Machaerus; cf. Mt. ὧδε—a supposition surely not excluded by the presence of the πρώτοι τῆς Γαλειδαίας. Herod the Great had built a large and splendid palace at Machaerus (Joseph. *B. J.* vii. 6. 2, cf. Schürer I. ii. 27 n., Hastings, *D. B.* iii. p. 196 f.). Ἐπὶ πίνακι, Vg. *disco*: the word is used in the same sense in Lc. xi. 39, τὸ ἔξωθεν τοῦ ποτηρίου καὶ τοῦ πίνακος: for other meanings cf. 4 Macc. xvii. 7,

τοῦ βαπτιστοῦ. <sup>26</sup>καὶ περίλυπος γενόμενος ὁ βασι- 26  
λεὺς διὰ τοὺς ὄρκους καὶ τοὺς ἀνακειμένους οὐκ ἦθε-  
λησεν ἀθετῆσαι αὐτήν. <sup>27</sup>καὶ εὐθὺς ἀποστείλας ὁ 27  
βασιλεὺς σπεκουλάτορα ἐπέταξεν ἐνέγκαι τὴν κε-  
φαλὴν αὐτοῦ. <sup>28</sup>καὶ ἀπελθὼν ἀπεκεφάλισεν αὐτὸν 28  
ἐν τῇ φυλακῇ καὶ ἤνεγκεν τὴν κεφαλὴν αὐτοῦ ἐπὶ  
πίνακι καὶ ἔδωκεν αὐτὴν τῷ κορασίῳ, καὶ τὸ κοράσιον

25 βαπτιστοῦ] βαπτιζοντος L 26 ο βασιλευς]+ως ηκουσεν D c ff i | ανακειμενους  
BC\* LΔ 42] συνανακ. ΝΑC<sup>2</sup>DNΓΠΙΣΦ al min<sup>fere</sup> omn | ηθελεν II\* 1 209 1071 27 οι  
ευθυς c ff i vg syr<sup>sin</sup> | om ο βασιλευς D 1 28 60<sub>4</sub> al<sup>pauc</sup> latt syrsin hier | σπεκουλατωρα Γ  
min<sup>sat</sup> mu | ενεγκαι ΝΒCΔ] ενεχθηραι ADLNΓΠΙΣΦ [αυτου]+επι πινακι CΔ min<sup>pauc</sup> c g vg  
28 και 1<sup>o</sup>] ο δε ADΓΠ al | om αυτην 1<sup>o</sup> LΔ 1 b e q syr<sup>pesh</sup> arm

Lc. i. 63 (*πινακίδιον*). The banquet suggested the use of a plate, but this piece of grim irony was due, it may be hoped, to the older woman (cf. Mt. xiv. 8; Justin, *dial. l.c.*).

26. περίλυπος γενόμενος ὁ β.] The sense of περίλυπος is well illustrated by the following passages where it occurs: Gen. iv. 6, 1 Esdr. viii. 71 (*σύννους καὶ π.*), 72, Dan. ii. 12 (*στυγνὸς καὶ π.*, LXX.), Lc. xviii. 23. Mt. has merely λυπηθεῖς. Herod's grief was genuine, if shallow: it is unnecessary to suppose that he was dissembling (Jerome, "iustitiam praeferebat in facie, quum laetitiam haberet in mente"). Διὰ τοὺς ὄρκους: for the pl. see 2 Macc. iv. 34, vii. 24. Thph. t̄δει δὲ ἐπιορ-  
κῆσαι...οὐ πανταχοῦ γὰρ τὸ εὐορκεῖν  
καλόν. Jerome asks, "Si patris, si  
matris postulasset interitum, facturus  
fuerat an non?" Οὐκ ἦθελησεν ἀθε-  
τῆσαι αὐτήν, 'would not break faith  
with her, set aside her claims,' "dis-  
appoint her" (Field): cf. Lc. x. 16,  
1 Th. iv. 8; the word is more com-  
monly used of things than of persons,  
e.g. ἀθετεῖν τὴν ἐντολήν (Mc. vii. 9),  
τὴν χάριν (Gal. ii. 21), διαθήκην (Gal.  
iii. 15), πίστω (1 Tim. v. 12), ὄρκισμόν  
(1 Macc. vi. 62). For the sense 'to  
break faith' cf. Ps. xiv. (xv.) 4, ὁ  
ὅμνύων τῷ πλησίον καὶ οὐδὲ ἀθετῶν

(τῷ οὐλί), where the P.B. version  
renders "disappointeth him not."

27. ἀποστείλας...σπεκουλάτορα] Mt.  
πέμψας (omitting σπ.). Σπεκουλάτωρ,  
speculator or less accurately spicu-  
lator, in the later Heb. שְׂמָלָקְפָּס (J. Lightfoot and Schöttgen *ad loc.*),  
is (1) a spy or scout, (2) an officer  
attached to a legion for the purpose  
of keeping the look-out and of carrying  
dispatches; (3) since such military  
officers were frequently employed to  
carry out a sentence, an executioner  
(σπ. ὁ δῆμος λέγεται στρατιώτης,  
Thph.). The word occurs in the N.T.  
here only, but is of fairly frequent  
use in pagan and Rabbinic literature,  
and in the *Acta Martyrum*; see the  
ref. in Wetstein *ad loc.* or in Schürer  
I. ii. 62 f. n. As illustrations of the  
meaning which the word bears in  
Mc., it may be sufficient to quote  
Seneca *de ira* i. 16, "centurio supplicio  
praepositus condere gladium specula-  
torem iubet": *de benef.* iii. 25,  
"speculatoribus occurrit... cervicem  
porrexit." See the full discussion in  
Archbp Benson's *Cyprian*, p. 505 n., f.  
Ἐπέταξεν ἐνέγκαι. On the v. 1.  
ἐνεχθηραι cf. Blass, *Gr.*, p. 230.

28. ἀπελθὼν...τῇ μητρὶ αὐτῆς] For  
ἀποκεφαλίζω see v. 16: for πιναξ, v.

29 ἔδωκεν αὐτὴν τῇ μητρὶ αὐτῆς. 29 καὶ ἀκούσαντες οἱ μαθηταὶ αὐτοῦ ἦλθαν καὶ ἤραν τὸ πτῶμα αὐτοῦ καὶ ἔθηκαν αὐτὸν ἐν μνημείῳ.

30 30 Καὶ συνάγονται οἱ ἀπόστολοι πρὸς τὸν Ἰησοῦν,  
¶<sub>go</sub> καὶ ἀπήγγειλαν αὐτῷ πάντα ὅσα ἐποίησαν<sup>¶</sup> καὶ ὅσα

28 εδωκεν 2º] ηρεγκεν C 33 53<sup>ev</sup> me<sup>ed</sup> syr<sup>sin</sup> (arm) | om αυτην 2º D. 33 256 ac f1  
vg syrpesh arm aeth 29 αυτο ABCLΓΔΠΣΦ al] αυτὸν N 346 om 556 | μνημειω  
pr τω DΦ min<sup>mu</sup> 30 οσα 1º] pr και ΑΓΠΦ al min<sup>pl</sup> go syr<sup>hel</sup> | εδιδ. και εποιησαν  
ΚΠ\* εποιησεν και εδιδαξεν syr<sup>sinvid</sup> | om οσα 2º N\*C\* i alpaue latt(exc e) syr<sup>sin</sup>

25: for *κοράσιον*, v. 22. The Evangelists draw a veil over the treatment which the head received from Herodias and Salome. For the legends connected with its subsequent fate see Sozom. *H. E.* vii. 21, Papebroch, *Acta Sanctorum*. The ‘Decree of Gelasius’ mentions an anonymous writing “de inventione capitinis beati Johannis baptistae,” adding “non-nulli eas catholicorum legunt.” The Cathedral Church of Amiens claims to be in present possession of the head. In the Sarum Calendar Aug. 29 is marked *Decollatio Jo. Bapt.*; the *Inventio capitinis* was sometimes identified with the *Decollatio* (see Bede *ad loc.*), but more commonly observed on Feb. 24. On the cause of John’s martyrdom Victor quaintly remarks: *μοιχεία καὶ ὄρχησις καὶ ὄρκος τοῦ βαπτιστοῦ ἀφεῖλεν τὴν κεφαλήν, καὶ παραιτήσα γε ταῦτα τοῖς εὖ φρονοῦσιν.*

29. καὶ ἀκούσαντες...ἐν μνημείῳ] For other notices of the disciples of John see ii. 18, Jo. i. 35, iii. 25, iv. 1, Acts xix. 1 f. Τὸ πτῶμα (Mt. Mc.), the headless body, the corpse, cf. Mt. xxiv. 28, and Apoc. xii. 8, 9; πτ. is also used in this sense by the LXX., see Ps. cix. (ex.) 6 (= נִירֵי), Ezech. vi. 5 (ΑΩΓ, = נִירֵי). It was probably buried in one of the rock tombs round Machaerus (Mc. ἐν μνημείῳ); but it was believed to have been found at Sebaste (Samaria) in the time of Julian, when the bones were

burnt and the dust was scattered by the pagan party (Thdt. *H. E.* iii. 3); some portion of the remains, however, were secured by Christians, and preserved as relics (*H. R.* xxi.). Both the Baptist and our Lord received honourable burial; contrast the fate of the two Apocalyptic witnesses (Apoc. xi. 9).

Mt. (xiv. 12, 13) adds that after the burial the disciples of John made their way to Jesus with the tidings, and that the Lord’s movements were affected by what He heard from them: see note on the next verse.

30—44. RETURN TO THE SEA.  
FEEDING OF THE FIVE THOUSAND  
(Mt. xiv. 13—21; Lc. ix. 10—17; Jo. vi. 1—13).

30. καὶ συνάγονται οἱ ἀπόστολοι] The Twelve have now earned the title ἀπόστολοι which had been given to them apparently at the time of their selection (iii. 14); “apta huic loco appellatio” (Bengel). Mc. does not use it again; in the later narrative of Lc. it becomes an official name (Lc. xvii. 5, xxii. 14, xxiv. 10, Acts *passim*). See Hort, *Ecclesia*, p. 22 f. Their present mission fulfilled, they return from various parts of Galilee to headquarters, i.e. the place where the Master had probably arranged to be, and reported (Mc. ἀπήγγειλαν, Lc. διηγήσαντο) particulars (ὅσα...ὅσα) of their work and teaching. For the combination ποιεῖν (τε) καὶ διδάσκειν cf. Acts i. 1; Lc. omits ἐδίδαξαν here.

ἔσιδαξαν. <sup>τ</sup> <sup>31</sup> καὶ λέγει αὐτοῖς Δεῦτε ὑμεῖς αὐτοὶ κατ' ζήτησιν  
ἰδίαν εἰς ἔρημον τόπον, καὶ ἀναπαύσασθε δλίγον.  
ἥσαν γὰρ οἱ ἐρχόμενοι καὶ οἱ ὑπάγοντες πολλοί, καὶ  
οὐδὲ φαγεῖν εὐκαίρουν. <sup>τ</sup> <sup>32</sup> καὶ ἀπῆλθον ἐν τῷ πλοιῷ <sup>τοις</sup> <sup>τοῖς</sup>  
εἰς ἔρημον τόπον κατ' ιδίαν. <sup>τ</sup> <sup>33</sup> καὶ εἶδαν αὐτοὺς 33

τοις ιδίαις ετεν ΑΙΩΝΙΙΙ al | δεῦτε ε. a. κατ ιδίαν] σπαγγανεν D c fl i εις] επ  
καταστάσεις ABCM<sup>1</sup> minima] αναπαύσεις ΚΚΛΝΗΙΣΦ al min<sup>2</sup>] ευκαίρων  
(ην. CKMUIΦ al)] ευκαίρως (-pos D\*) ειχον D 32 και απηλθον...πλοιο] και  
απαύσασθε εις το πλοιο απ. εις ευκαίρων τόπον D lati 'εις b)

Their return seems to have synchronised with the arrival of John's disciples (Mt.), and to have helped to determine the Lord's course.

31. καὶ λέγει αὐτοῖς Δεῦτε κτλ.] 'Come apart by yourselves—away from the crowd—and rest for a while.' Two things pointed to a temporary withdrawal from public work, (1) the danger of arrest by order of Antipas, who might think it desirable to follow up his murder of John by silencing John's successor; (2) the Apostles' need of rest. Mc recognises only the latter. On δέυτε see i. 17, and on κατ' ιδίαν, iv. 34. 'Υμεῖς αὐτοί, 'ye by yourselves' (cf. Jo. vi. 15); or perhaps, 'ye yourselves'—even workers must now and again halt to take breath. Αραπάνσασθε gives the idea of the momentary rest better than the present (see v. II.); the verb is well illustrated by Exod. xxiii. 12, Job I. 20 (LXX). 'Ολίγον, of time here, as of space in ε. i. 19. For εἰς ἔρημον τόπον (Mt. Mc.), Lc. has εἰς πόλιν καλομένην Βιθσαΐα, and Jo. πέραν τῆς θαλάσσης τῆς Γαλειλαίας τῆς Τιβεριάδος. The ἔρημος τόπος may well have been in the neighbourhood of a town (see i. 35, 45); the conflate reading in Lc., εἰς τ. ἐρ. πόλεων καλομένης Βηθσ., is probably right as an interpretation. Jo.'s recollection that the spot lay across the Lake shews that Bethsaida Julias is intended; see note on v. 45.

οἱ ἐρχόμενοι καὶ οἱ οὗτοι.] The articles distinguish two distinct streams of

people: cf. xi. 9. The departures and the new arrivals left no intervals for refreshment, and not even leisure for a meal; cf. iii. 20. Εὐκαίρειν was condemned by the purists (Lob. *Phrym.*, p. 125, εὐκ. οὐ λεκτέον ἀλλ' εὐ σχολῆς ἔχειν; cf. Sturz, *dial. Alex.* p. 168 f.); it occurs again in Acts xvii. 21, i Cor. xvi. 12; cod. D substitutes εὐκαίρως ἔχειν here. The word seems to be found first in Polybius (Blass on *Acts l.c.*) and is common in Philo, but has no place in the LXX. Comp. the interesting practical reflexion in Bede: "magna temporis illius felicitas de labore docentium simul et discentium studio demonstratur: qui utinam nostro in aeo redire!"

32. ἀπῆλθον ἐν τῷ πλοιῷ] The *rendez-vous* was therefore close to the Lake, probably near Capernaum, as τῷ πλ. suggests. The boat took an easterly course and they landed perhaps a little south of Bethsaida, on the edge of the plain now known as *el-Batīhah* (Schumacher, *Jaulīn*, p. 106, *Bulaīha*, Smith, *H. G.* p. 457)—"a part of the old lake basin...sown two or three times during the year...and grazed by the buffalo herds...in its north western part...covered with ruins." For ἔρημος τόπος see i. 35, 45.

33. καὶ εἶδαν...καὶ ἔγνωσαν πολλοῖ] Many witnessed the departure; the course of the boat could be seen by all, even perhaps the landing of the party on the opposite shore. The

ὑπάγοντας καὶ ἔγνωσαν πολλοί, καὶ πεζῇ ἀπὸ πασῶν τῶν πόλεων συνέδραμον ἐκεῖ καὶ προῆλθον αὐτούς. <sup>34</sup>καὶ ἐξελθὼν εἶδεν πολὺν ὄχλον, καὶ 34 ἐσπλαγχνίσθη ἐπ' αὐτούς, ὅτι ἦσαν ὡς πρόβατα

33 οὐαγοντας]+οι οχλοι (5) 13 69 124 al<sup>nond</sup> | εγνωσαν B\*D I 118 209] επεγνωσαν ΝΑΒ<sup>2</sup>ΛΓΔΙΙΣΦ al min<sup>pl</sup>+autous ΝΑΚΛΜΝΥΔΠΣ min<sup>mu</sup> f q syrr me aeth+autou EFGHSVTΓΦ min<sup>satmu</sup> (om aut. BD I 13 28 118 131 209 al<sup>perpauc</sup> a ff vg) | εκει και προηλθον autous ΝB (προσ. ΙΔ) al<sup>perpauc</sup> vg (arm) me] και προηλθον autou εκει syr<sup>pesh</sup> εκει και συνηλθον autou D (28 604) b εκει κ. ηλθον autou 2<sup>ps</sup> (a) (d ff i r) και ηλθον εκει I om 209 al<sup>perpauc</sup> προς autous και συνηλθον προς autou 33 εκει και προηλθον autous και συνηλθον (συνεδραμον A) προς autou (A)EFGHKM(N)UV(Γ)Π(Σ)Φ min<sup>fereomn</sup> f q syr<sup>hel</sup> aeth 34 ειδεν]+ο Ιησους (A)(D)EFGHKMNS(U)VΔ(Π) al | επ autous ΝΒΔΦ min<sup>perpauc</sup>] επ autous ALΓΔΙΙΣΦ al min<sup>pl</sup> | om ws προβατα Ν\* (hab Ν\*)

Lord was recognised, and the report of His return spread rapidly (Mt. ἀκούσαντες).

πεζῇ ... συνέδραμον ... καὶ προῆλθον] The crowd went round by land—πεζῇ as contrasted with ἐν τῷ πλοίῳ—cf. Acts xx. 13, μέλλων αὐτὸς πεζεύειν, where Blass remarks, “πεζεύειν de terrestri (non necessario pedestri) itinere.” Across the Lake from *Tell Hum* or *Khan Minyeh* is scarcely more than four miles; by land the distance to the upper part of Batihah could hardly be above ten (Sanday, *Fourth Gospel*, p. 120), unless they went by road and crossed the Jordan by the bridge. If there was little wind, it would be easy to get to the place before a sailing boat. On the reading καὶ προῆλθον αὐτούς see the important discussion in WH., *Intr.*<sup>2</sup>, pp. 95 f., 327; for the construction προελθεῖν τινα cf. Lc. xxii. 47: Vg. *praeveneunt eos*. Mc. alone has preserved this interesting detail.

34. ἐξελθὼν εἶδεν πολὺν ὄχλον] It was not till He had landed (cf. v. 2; Dr Hort (*l.c.*) prefers “came out of His retirement in some sequestered nook”) that the crowd came into sight. He knew then that His effort to find a retreat had failed, yet no impatience revealed itself in His manner. On the contrary, He was

touched (ἐσπλαγχνίσθη, cf. i. 41) by their earnestness of purpose, and bade them welcome (Lc. ἀποδεξάμενος αὐτούς), as if their presence had been desired. Σπλαγχνίζεσθαι ἐπί τινα occurs also in Mt. xv. 32, Mc. viii. 2, ix. 22; other constructions are σπλ. ἐπί τινι Mt. xiv. 14, Lc. vii. 13, περί τινος Mt. ix. 36. ‘Ἐπ’ αὐτούς = ‘towards them,’ as those to whom His compassion went forth; ἐπ’ αὐτούς would represent the multitude as the object on which it rested.

ὅτι ἦσαν ὡς πρόβατα κτλ.] The ground of His compassion. The blind zeal of the common people shewed both their need of a leader and their readiness to follow one who offered them what their official teachers failed to supply. The phrase ὡς πρ. μὴ ἔχοντα ποιμένα occurs also in another context (Mt. ix. 36). It is based on the O.T. (Num. xxvii. 17, 3 Regn. xxii. 17, 2 Chron. xviii. 16, Judith xi. 19) where however בָּנָן לְהֵם רֹאשׁ אֲנָשִׁים is uniformly rendered πρ. οἰς (ποιμνιον φ<sup>3</sup>) οὐκ ἔστιν ποιμήν. The implied contrast between the false pastors and the True is worked out in Jo. x. 11—16; for other references to the pastoral character of our Lord cf. Mc. xiv. 27, Heb. xiii. 20, 1 Pet. ii. 25. Ἡρξατο διδάσκειν αὐτούς πολλά: Lc. ἐλάλει αὐτούς περὶ τῆς βασιλείας τοῦ θεοῦ,

μὴ ἔχοντα ποιμένα· καὶ ἤρξατο διδάσκειν αὐτοὺς πολλά. <sup>35</sup>καὶ ἦδη ὥρας πολλῆς γενομένης προσ- 35 ελθόντες αὐτῷ οἱ μαθηταὶ αὐτοῦ ἐλεγον ὅτι Ἐρημὸς ἐστιν ὁ τόπος, καὶ ἦδη ὥρα πολλή· <sup>36</sup>ἀπόλυσον 36 αὐτούς, ἵνα ἀπελθόντες εἰς τοὺς κύκλῳ ἀγροὺς καὶ κώμας ἀγοράσωσιν ἑαυτοῖς τί φάγωσιν. <sup>37</sup>ὁ δὲ 37 ἀποκριθεὶς εἶπεν αὐτοῖς Δότε αὐτοῖς ὑμεῖς φαγεῖν.

34 οἱ πολλὰ συρ<sup>sin</sup> 35 γενομένης ABLΓΔΠΣΦ al min<sup>forte omnī</sup>] γενομένης ΝΔ latt | προσῆλθον...λεγοντες N οἱ αὐτῷ Ν\*ADKL min<sup>pauc</sup> a b iff<sup>vid</sup> vg συρ<sup>sin</sup> arm aeth (hab Ν\*ΒΓΔΣΦ al min<sup>pl</sup> syrr me al) | ελεγον] λεγοντιν αὐτῷ 1071 36 αυτοὺς] τοὺς οχλοὺς arm | κυκλῷ εγγιστα D 604 latt | καὶ κώμας] οἱ Δ συρ<sup>sin</sup> καὶ εἰς τὰς κ. D | αγοράσωσιν pr iwa D | τι φαγωσιν B(D)ΛΔ 28 a f i συρ<sup>sin</sup> me] pr βρωματα Ν αρτούς τι γαρ φαγωσιν οὐκ εχουσιν AN (Ν φαγουσιν) ΓΠΣΦ al min<sup>pl</sup> (b) f syrr<sup>peshel</sup> (arm) aeth

adding καὶ τὸν χρεῖαν ἔχοντας θεραπεῖας λᾶτο (cf. Mt.). "Ηρξατο : 'denuo, ut si antea non docuisset'" (Bengel). Their first need was teaching—first at least in His sight; but teaching, as at other times, brought opportunities of healing disease. The Lord, as He taught, sat on the rising ground above the plain (Jo. ἀνῆλθεν εἰς τὸ ὄρος καὶ ἐκεῖ ἐκάθητο μετὰ τῶν μαθητῶν αὐτοῦ, cf. Mt. v. 1).

35. Ἠδη ὥρας πολλῆς γενομένης] Vg. cum iam hora multa fieret; Mt., δψιας δὲ γενομένης, Lc., ἡ δὲ ἡμέρα ἤρξατο κλίνειν; cf. Bede, "horam multam vespertinum tempus dicit." Mc.'s phrase ὥρα πολλή, which is repeated at the end of the verse, occurs also in Dion. Hal. ii. 54, ἐμάχοντο ἄχρι πολλῆς ὥρας, "to a late hour." That Lc.'s interpretation is right appears from v. 47. Since the passover was at hand (Jo.), it was near the time of the spring equinox, and the sun set about 6 p.m.; the miracle was probably wrought an hour or so before sunset. Προσελθόντες ἐλεγον κτλ. According to Jo. the thought of providing for the multitude had presented itself to our Lord some hours before, when He first saw them coming to Him (vi. 5, θεασάμενος ὅτι πολὺς ὅχλος ἔρχεται).

36. ἀπόλυσον αὐτούς] For ἀπολύω = 'dismiss,' see Tob. x. 12 (Ν), Mc. vi. 45, viii. 3, 9, Acts xiii. 3, xv. 30, 33, xix. 41. Εἰς τὸν κύκλῳ ἀγροὺς καὶ κώμας does not exclude the supposition that Bethsaida was near, cf. Jos. xxi. 12, τὸν ἀγρ. τῆς πόλεως καὶ τὰς κώμας αὐτῆς. The 'Western' text (WH, Notes, p. 25) substitutes ἔγιγνστα for κύκλῳ; cf. Vg. in proximas villas et ricos. Ἀγροί, villaе, are the scattered farms, cf. v. 14; for the single article in the gender of the first noun, see WM., p. 158. Τί φάγωσιν (WM., p. 210), Mt. βρώματα, Lc. ἐπισιτισμόν. Lc. adds (iwa) καταλίσσωσιν, a necessity scarcely less pressing, considering the time of year, and that the crowd contained women and children. For this our Lord provided shortly afterwards in the way proposed by the disciples (vv. 45, 46). Food was a more immediate want, and more difficult to supply.

37. δότε αὐτοῖς ὑμεῖς φαγεῖν] Mt. prefixes οὐ χρεῖαν ἔχοντας ἀπελθεῖν—an answer to ἀπελθόντες of v. 36, as the emphatic ὑμεῖς (WM., p. 190) replies to ἵνα...ἀγοράσωσιν ἑαυτοῖς. Of this conversation between our Lord and the Twelve we have two independent accounts, St Peter's (Mc., abbreviated in Mt., Lc.) and St John's.

καὶ λέγουσιν αὐτῷ Ἀπελθόντες ἀγοράσωμεν δηναρίων  
38 διακοσίων ἄρτους καὶ δώσωμεν αὐτοῖς φαγεῖν; <sup>38 ὁ</sup>  
δὲ λέγει αὐτοῖς Πόσους ἔχετε ἄρτους; ὑπάγετε,  
ἴδετε. καὶ γνόντες λέγουσιν Πέντε, καὶ δύο ἵχθυας.

37 δῶσωμεν NBD 13 33 69 124 346 2<sup>pe</sup>] δῶσομεν ALΔ al<sup>anc</sup> lat<sup>vid</sup> δῶμεν ΓΠΣ al  
min<sup>pl</sup> | φαγεῖν 2<sup>o</sup>] + ὥν εκαστος βραχὺ λαβῃ 13 69 124 346 ὥν φαγωσιν 2<sup>pe</sup>  
38 ὥστε] pr και ΑΓΔΠ al | γνοντες] ελθοντες N\* (γν. N<sup>o. a</sup>) επιγνοντες 1071 | λεγου-  
σιν] + αντω ADM<sup>mg</sup> 13 69 al | πεντε] + αρτους D 2<sup>pe</sup> a c ff syrr

A comparison shews that the words ἀπελθόντες ἀγοράσωμεν κτλ. belong in part to Philip, and πέντε καὶ δύο ἵχθυας to Andrew. On the whole “the superiority in distinctness and precision is all on the side of St John” (Sanday, *l.c.* p. 121; cf. Lightfoot, *Bibl. Essays*, p. 182). For an attempt to bring the two accounts into precise agreement see Aug. *de cons. ev.* ii. 96. With his conclusion we may heartily concur: “ex qua universa varietate verborum, rerum autem sententiarumque concordia, satis appareat salubriter nos doceri nihil quaerendum in verbis nisi loquentium voluntatem.”

ἀπελθόντες ἀγοράσωμεν κτλ.] A conflation, as appears from Jo. vi. 5—7, of the Lord’s question πόθεν ἀγοράσωμεν ἄρτους ὡν φάγωσιν οὗτοι; and Philip’s answer διακοσίων δηναρίων ἄρτοι κτλ. Δηναρίων διακοσίων, at the cost of 200 denarii, the gen. of price, WM., p. 258. On the *denarius* see Madden’s *Jewish Coinage*, p. 245 ff., Hastings, *D. B.* iii. p. 427 f.; the mean value at this time is stated to have been 9½d. It was the labourer’s daily wage (*Mt.* xx. 2 ff.): two *denarii* were sufficient to pay the expenses of a *πανδοχεῖον* for at least a day or two (*Lc.* x. 35); the costly oil of spikenard poured on the Lord by Mary of Bethany was worth three hundred or more (*Mc.* xiv. 5, note); five hundred was a typically large debt (*Lc.* vii. 41). Two hundred of these silver pieces may well have been more than the Twelve had in their γλωσσό-

κομον (Jo. xii. 6). Yet even this outlay would have been inadequate: Jo. οὐκ ἀρκοῦσιν αὐτοῖς ὡν ἐκαστος βραχὺ λάβῃ. Δῶσωμεν is possibly an aor. conj., cf. WSchm., pp. 107, 120. WH. prefer δῶσομεν, on which see Blass, *Gr.*, p. 212.

38. πόσους ἔχετε ἄρτους;] This question interprets the previous one. They were not called to imagine impracticable schemes of charitable action, but to give what they had (cf. 2 Cor. viii. 12). Bede: “non nova creat cibaria, sed acceptis eis quae habuerant discipuli.”

γνοντες λεγουσιν] The discovery was made (Jo.) by Andrew, and the supply belonged, it appears, not to the Twelve, but to a lad in the crowd (ἔστιν παιδάριον ὥδε ὁς ἔχει...). Jo. alone (Orig. in *Mt.* xi. 2) mentions that the cakes were made of barley-flour (ἄρτοι κρίθινοι), i.e. of the coarsest and cheapest kind, the food of the working man: cf. Jud. v. 8 (A), vii. 13, 4 Regn. iv. 42: for the relative cost of wheat and barley see 4 Regn. vii. 18 and Apoc. vi. 6 (χοῖνιξ σίτου δηναρίου καὶ τρεῖς χοίνικες κριθῶν δηναρίου). For ἵχθυας, Jo. has ὄψάρια (cf. Num. xi. 22, πᾶν τὸ ὄψον τῆς θαλάσσης). The fish—two to five loaves—were a mere relish, and probably pickled or cooked: for the use of cooked fish with bread see Jo. xxi. 9, 13. Taricheae at the S.W. corner of the Lake derived its name from the curing of fish. Some of the older commentators find mysteries in the numbers: e.g. Thph. πέντε ἄρτοι οἱ Μωσαικοὶ λόγοι, ἵχθυες

<sup>39</sup>καὶ ἐπέταξεν αὐτοῖς ἀνακλιθῆναι πάντας συμπόσια 39  
συμπόσια ἐπὶ τῷ χλωρῷ χόρτῳ. <sup>40</sup>καὶ ἀνέπεσαν 40  
πρασιὰὶ πρασιὰὶ κατὰ ἑκατὸν καὶ κατὰ πεντήκοντα.

39 ανακλιθηναι ΝΒ\*ΓΦ 1 13 28 64 604 1071 2<sup>pe</sup> al<sup>nonn</sup> Or] ανακλιναι ΑΒ<sup>2</sup>ΔLNΓΔΠΣΕ  
al min<sup>pl</sup> Or | συμπ. συμπ.] κατα την συνποσιαν D om a syr<sup>sinvid</sup> | επι] ev Β\*  
40 om πρασιαι 2<sup>o</sup> ΝLΔ min<sup>pauc</sup> | κατα bis ΝBD 2<sup>pe</sup> me] ανα bis ALNΓΔΠΣΦ al  
min<sup>fereomn</sup> (om ανα 2<sup>o</sup> 33 al<sup>pauc</sup> Or)

δὲ δύο, οἱ τῶν ἀλιέων λόγοι, ὁ Ἀπόστολος καὶ τὸ Εὐαγγέλιον. Similarly Aug. in Jo. tract. xxiv.

39. ἐπέταξεν αὐτοῖς ἀνακλιθῆναι] The command was given through the Twelve (Lc. κατακλίνατε αὐτούς, Jo. ποιήσατε τοὺς ἀνθρώπους ἀναπτεσέν). For ἀνακλίνεσθαι and ἀναπτίτειν used of taking places on a couch before a meal see Mt. viii. 11, Lc. xiii. 29; Lc. xi. 37, Jo. xiii. 12. Order was secured by breaking up the crowd into companies (*συμπόσια*, Mc., *κλισίας*, Lc.). In the LXX. *συμπόσιον* οἴνου = חַלְשׁוֹן יְהוָה (Esther, Sirach), but *συμπόσιον* occurs without οἴνον in the first three books of Maccabees, and apparently in the wider sense. The form preferred by D (*συμπόσια*) is also to be found in Sirach and 3 Macc.; Lc.'s more precise term occurs in 3 Macc. vi. 31. The construction *συμπόσια συμπόσια* = ἀνὰ or κατὰ *συμπόσια* is Hebraistic: cf. Exod. viii. 14 (10), συνήγαγον αὐτοὺς θιμωνὶς θιμωνὶς (Μִרְמָרִים), and *πρασιὰ πρασιά* in the next verse: see also Mc. vi. 7 (WM., pp. 312, 581, Blass, Gr. p. 145). On the construction ἀνακλ. πάντας *συμπόσια* see WM., pp. 282, 663 ff.

ἐπὶ τῷ χλωρῷ χόρτῳ] See note on v. 32. The place supplied in the early spring a natural carpet on which thousands could recline in comfort; cf. Jo. ἦν δὲ χόρτος πολὺς ἐν τῷ τόπῳ. Χλωρὸς χόρτος, *faenum viride*, is 'green food,' i.e. growing grass or crops, as contrasted with dry fodder: cf. Gen. i. 30, Isa. xv. 6, xxxvii. 27, Apoc. viii. 7. The epithet is not otiose or merely picturesque; it indi-

cates the season of the year, and thus, so far as it goes, supports the existing text of Jo. vi. 4 (cf. WH., *Notes*, p. 77 ff.).

40. ἀνέπεσαν πρασιὰὶ πρασιά] The act implies trust on the part of the crowd (Bengel: "fides populi"). The *συμπόσια* took the form of rectangular garden beds. *Πρασιά* occurs in Homer, *Od.* viii. 127, where the Sch. interprets αἱ τῶν φυτεῶν τετράγωνοι σχέσεις, and reappears in Theophrastus and in the LXX. (Sir. xxiv. 31 μεθύσω μον τὴν πρασιά): cf. Euth.: πρασιάι αἱ τετραγωνοειδεῖς [συναγωγαῖ]. τοιαῦται γὰρ αἱ τῶν κήπων πρασιά. Mc. probably uses the word to convey the notion of regularity of form, not of variety of colouring (Farrar, *Life*, i. p. 402); the *πρασιά*, unless otherwise defined (*πρ. ἀνθῶν*) is the bed of garden herbs (λαχανά, Hesych.), as its probable etymology shews. See the somewhat similar comparison, quoted from the Talmud by J. Lightfoot *ad loc.*, of Jewish scholars to the rows of vines in a vineyard, planted תִּירֹאשׁ תִּירֹאשׁ.

κατὰ ἑκατὸν καὶ κατὰ πεντήκοντα] The groups consisted roughly of fifty, in other cases of a hundred each; cf. Lc. ὥστε ἀνὰ πεντήκοντα. Mt. omits all these details—the greenness of the grass, the orderly distribution of the crowd, the size of the groups; nor do they find a place in the recollections of St John, though he remembers the number of the party as a whole (ἀνέπεσαν...ώς πεντακισχίλιοι). The purpose of the arrangement was probably to prevent a dangerous scramble for the food, or at any rate, confusion and

41 <sup>καὶ λαβὼν τοὺς πέντε ἄρτους καὶ τοὺς δύο ἰχθύας,</sup>  
<sup>ἀναβλέψας εἰς τὸν οὐρανόν, εὐλόγησεν καὶ κατέκλασεν</sup>  
<sup>τοὺς ἄρτους καὶ ἐδίδου τοῖς μαθηταῖς ἵνα παρατιθῶσιν</sup>  
 42 <sup>αὐτοῖς, καὶ τοὺς δύο ἰχθύας ἐμέρισεν πᾶσιν.</sup> <sup>42 καὶ</sup>  
 43 <sup>ἔφαγον πάντες καὶ ἔχορτάσθησαν.</sup> <sup>43 καὶ ἦραν</sup>

41 κατεκλασεν τ. α. και] κλασας τ. α. Ν\* 33 | τοις μαθ.] + αυτου ΑΔΓΠ al | παρατιθωσιν Ν\*BLM\*ΔΠ\* min<sup>pauc</sup>] παραθωσιν ΝcADM<sup>2</sup>ΝΓΠ<sup>2</sup>ΣΦ al min<sup>pl</sup> | αυτοις] κατεναντι αυτων D latt τω οχλω M\* <sup>42 om παντες I\* 33 (209\*) arm</sup>

disorder (cf. 1 Cor. xiv. 33, 40), and to secure an easy and rapid distribution: twelve men could serve fifty to one hundred companies in a comparatively short time. Incidentally the division into companies made the counting of the multitude a simple matter, and accounts for the same number being given by the four evangelists.

41. <sup>καὶ λαβὼν τοὺς πέντε ἄρτους κτλ.]</sup> The cakes and fish were brought to Him (Mt. xiv. 18), probably in a *κόφινος* (cf. v. 43), and the Lord took the basket, or one of the cakes, into His hands. The action marked Him as the Master and Host; cf. xiv. 22, Lc. xxiv. 30, Acts xxvii. 35. *'Αναβλέψας εἰς τὸν οὐρανόν* (Mc. Mt. Lc.): the attitude of prayer (vii. 34, Jo. xi. 41; for the O.T. see Job xxii. 26, and cf. 1 K. viii. 22, Ps. xxviii. 2, lxxiii. 4, cxxxiv. 2), specially characteristic of Him Who knew no sin (contrast Lc. xviii. 13). The ancient Liturgies have transferred this feature to the institution of the Eucharist (Brightman, *Liturgies*, pp. 20, 51, 133, &c.; cf. the words of the Roman canon, "elevatis oculis ad te," &c.). *Εὐλόγησεν* (Mt. Mc. Lc.) = *εὐχαριστήσας* (Jo.); a similar variation occurs in the account of the first Eucharist, where *εὐχαριστεῖν* is used of the blessing of the Bread by Lc., Paul (1 Cor. xi.), and of the blessing of the Cup by Mt., Mc., Lc.; the two verbs are practically synonymous, the blessing

being in fact in the form of a thanksgiving (cf. 1 Tim. iv. 3, 4); the Cup, in reference to which the three Synoptists use *εὐχαριστεῖν*, is called by St Paul *τὸ ποτήριον τῆς εὐλογίας ὁ εὐλογοῦμεν*. The recognised form of blessing was (Edersheim, i. p. 684): "Blessed art Thou, O Lord our God, King of the world, Who bringest forth bread from the earth." *Κατέκλασεν*: so Lc.; Mt. *κλάσας*. The simple verb is used in all our accounts of the Eucharistic fraction (cf. *ἡ κλάσις τοῦ ἄρτου*, Acts ii. 42); perhaps the compound points here to the breaking of each cake into several pieces (cf. *κατακόπτω*, v. 5). The distribution was entrusted to the Twelve: *ἐδίδου* (Mc. Lc.) may imply that they came to Him at intervals to be replenished, but is perhaps more naturally understood of the repeated action involved in the gift to each of them severally (cf. Jo. διέδωκεν). The fish was no doubt distributed in the same way, though Mc. for the sake of brevity writes *ἐμέρισεν πᾶσιν*: cf. Jo. ὅμοιως καὶ ἐκ τῶν ὀψαρίων. *"Ινα παρατιθῶσιν=*Lc. *παραθεῖναι*: for this sense of the verb cf. Lc. x. 8 *ἐσθίετε τὰ παρατιθέμενα ὑμῖν*. Cf. Origin in Jo. t. xiii. 34, *λαμβάνει δὲ τὰ βρώματα ὃ μὲν πολὺς τῶν μαθητευομένων ἀπὸ τῶν μαθητῶν Ἰησοῦ...οἱ δὲ τοῦ Ἰησοῦ μαθηταὶ ἀπ' αὐτοῦ τοῦ Ἰησοῦ*.

42. *ἔχορτάσθησαν*] Vg. *saturati sunt*. The food more than sufficed (contrast Jo. vi. 7). All had as much as they would, even of the fish (Jo.

κλάσματα δώδεκα κοφίνων πληρώματα καὶ ἀπὸ τῶν  
ἰχθύων. <sup>44</sup>καὶ ἦσαν οἱ φαγόντες τοὺς ἄρτους πεντα- 44  
κισχίλιοι ἄνδρες.

<sup>45</sup>Καὶ εὐθὺς ἤναγκασεν τοὺς μαθητὰς αὐτοῦ ἐμ- 45

43 κλασματα BLΔ] κλασματων Κ 13 69 124 209 346 το περισσευσαν των κλασματων  
604 | κοφινων πληρωματα ΚΒ 1 13 69 124 209 346] κοφινους πληρωματα ΛΔ κοφινους  
πληρεις ADΓΠΣΦ rell minpl<sup>1</sup> 44 om τοὺς ἄρτους ΚΔ 1 28 604 2<sup>pe</sup> vg (syri<sup>sin</sup>) arm |  
πεντακισχιλιοι] pr ws (vel ωσει vel ωσπερ) Κ (ws) 2<sup>pe</sup> (ωσπερ) alnonn arm 45 ευθύς]  
+ εξεγερθεις D a b c f f i q

ὅσους ἥθελον). Ἐχορτ. is common to the Synoptists; Jo. uses ἐνεπλήσθησαν. For the former word cf. Lightfoot on Phil. iv. 12, Kennedy, *Sources*, p. 82; it is fairly distributed in the N. T. (Mt.<sup>4</sup> Mc.<sup>4</sup> Lc.<sup>4</sup> Jo.<sup>1</sup> Cath.<sup>1</sup> Paul<sup>1</sup>, Apoc.<sup>1</sup>), but in the LXX. limited to Pss.<sup>9</sup>, Job<sup>1</sup>, Jer.<sup>1</sup>, Lam.<sup>1</sup> (=עַבְשׁ), Tob.<sup>1</sup>.

43. ἦραν κλάσματα] Mt. τὸ περισσεῦον τῶν κλ., Lc, τὸ περισσεύσαντα αὐτοῖς (sc. τῷ ὅχλῳ) κλ. So the Master directed: Jo. συναγάγετε τὰ περισσεύσαντα κλάσματα ἵνα μή τι ἀπόληται. For κλάσμα (ἄρτου) cf. Jud. xix. 5 (A, =ψωμὸς ἄρτου B), Ezech. xiii. 19. Δώδεκα κοφίνων πληρώματα, in apposition to κλ., 'wherewith were filled twelve hampers': cf. Mt. δ. κοφινους πλήρεις, Jo. ἔγέμισαν δ. κοφινους κλασμάτων. Mc. uses πλ. κοφ. again in viii. 20: for a discussion of πλήρωμα see note on ii. 21. Κόφινος is common to the four accounts. The word is used by Aq. in Gen. xl. 16 for a bread-basket (לֶבֶן), and by the LXX. in Jud. vi. 19 (B, =κανοῦν A) for the basket (also לֶבֶן) in which Gideon places cooked meat; in Ps. lxxx. (lxxx.) 6 it is the pot-shaped basket (לִבָּנָה) in which the Israelite during the Egyptian oppression carried his clay or bricks. A "stout wicker basket" appears to be intended, "as distinguished from the soft flexible 'frails'" (Westcott, on St John). The κόφινος is contrasted in the Gospels with the σφυρίς (viii. 19, 20), for which see note on viii. 8. In Rome

it was the characteristic appendage of the poorer class of Jews (Juv. iii. 14, vi. 542, "quorum copinus faenumque supellex"; see J. E. B. Mayor's note). The twelve κόφινοι were possibly those in which the Apostles had carried what they needed for their recent circuit of Galilee; cf. Euth., δώδεκα κόφινοι...ἵνα καὶ οἱ δώδεκα ἀπόστολοι διαβαστάσωσιν τοὺς κοφίνους. With the excess of the miraculous supply above the requirements of the people comp. 4 Regn. iv. 44, ἔφαγον καὶ κατέλιπον κατὰ τὸ ῥῆμα Κυρίου.

44. ἦσαν... πεντακισχίλιοι ἄνδρες] The number was doubtless roughly calculated by counting the συμπόστα (note on n. 39); cf. Mt. Lc. ωσει, Jo. ως, πεντ. The men perhaps alone composed the groups, but the women and children were not neglected (Mt.).

On the miracle as a whole Victor well remarks: θαυμάσιον μὲν οὖν τὸ πραχθέν...θαυμάσιον δὲ οὐκ ἔλαττον τὸ μὴ ἀεὶ τῇ ἔξουσᾳ χρῆσθαι πρὸς τὴν τῶν τροφῶν εὐπορίαν.

45—52. WALKING ON THE SEA (Mt. xiv. 22—33, Jo. vi. 16—21).

45. εὐθὺς ἤναγκασεν...εἰς τὸ πέραν] For once the Lord put a severe strain upon the loyalty of the Twelve. His command was in direct conflict with all that seemed to be reasonable and right. He had led them to the place that very day, and now required them at once to leave it. On other occasions He led the way (see x. 32,

βῆναι εἰς τὸ πλοῖον καὶ προάγειν εἰς τὸ πέραν πρὸς  
46 Βηθσαΐδαν, ἕως αὐτὸς ἀπολύει τὸν ὥχλον. <sup>46</sup>καὶ

45 om εἰς τὸ πέραν I 118 209 syr<sup>sin</sup> | πρὸς] εἰς I 28 209 2<sup>ro</sup> Or a b i q in contra a | Βηθσαΐδαν NBLIIΦ al min<sup>pl</sup> c fffq vg arm] Βηθσαΐδα Δ (Βησ.) Σ min<sup>nominative</sup> | απολυει NBDL I] απολυσει E<sup>\*</sup>KΓ 28 69 604 min<sup>nominative</sup> απολυση AE<sup>2</sup>FGHMNSUVΠΣΦ min<sup>pl</sup> | τους οχλους 1071

xiv. 28, Jo. x. 4); now He would only undertake to follow them. The Synoptists throw no light on the situation, but it is explained by St John (vi. 14, 15). The enthusiasm of the multitude was not limited to a recognition of the Lord's prophetic office: they were on the point of seizing His person and proclaiming Him King. "No malice on the part of the Scribes could have been so fatal...as their giving of a political turn to the movement...He hurried the disciples on board that they might not catch the contagion of the idea" (Latham, *Pastor p.*, p. 307). Origen in *Jo. t. xxviii. 23*: μὴ παρέχων μηδὲ τούτοις ἀφορμήν, φιλοῦσιν αὐτὸν καὶ βουληθεῖσιν ἀν μετὰ τῶν θελόντων ποιῆσαι αὐτὸν βασιλέα.

πρὸς Βηθσαΐδαν] Mt. stops short at πέραν; Jo. says, ἤρχοντο πέραν τῆς θαλάσσης εἰς Καφαρναούμ. Both Mc. and Mt. represent the Twelve as landing eventually εἰς Τεννησαρέτ (vi. 53, Mt. xiv. 34). The direction of the boat was therefore ultimately westwards, and this fact has led to a conjecture that there was a Western Bethsaida (Reland, Stanley, Tristram), which has been identified with 'Ain et-Tabigha (Tristram, *Bible Places*, p. 315); in support of this theory it has been urged that Jo. (xii. 21) mentions a Βηθσ. τῆς Γαλειλαίας (see, however, Merrill, *Galilee*, p. 27). But there is no direct evidence for the existence of two Bethsaidas on the Lake, and the Bethsaida of which Josephus speaks (*ant. xviii. 2. 1, B.J. ii. 9. 1, iii. 10. 7*) was in Philip's tetrarchy and therefore on the East bank of the Jordan. Unless Lc. has misunder-

stood his source, the starting-point of the boat was near this town (Lc. ix. 10, see note on *v. 32*), and the Lord directed the Twelve to cross to the town in the first instance (Bengel: "terminus navigationis non totius sed ex parte"). In this case τὸ πέραν is here not the Western shore, but the opposite side of the little bay which lay between the sloping ground where the miracle was wrought and Philip's new city—an alternative which presented itself to Bede (*ad l.*). Τὸ πέραν is interpreted by πρὸς Βηθσαΐδαν. Why they did not reach Bethsaida, but landed on the Western shore, appears as we proceed. On the form Βηθσαΐδαν see WH., *Notes*, p. 160, WSchm., pp. 62 f., 91; and for the question of locality, the articles in Hastings, *D.B.*, and *Encycl. Bibl.*

ἔως αὐτὸς ἀπολύει τὸν ὥχλον] 'While He for His part dismisses the multitude.' Mt. ἔως οὖν ἀπολύσῃ: see Burton, § 321 ff., esp. §§ 326, 330; Blass, *Gr. p. 219*. The shortness of the interval suggested agrees with the view that the original destination of the boat was Bethsaida Julias.

46. καὶ ἀποτάξαμενος] Mt. has ἀπολύσας. Mc. changes the word. The dismissal (*v. 36*) was friendly and courteous, if peremptory; nothing in His manner betrayed anxiety or consciousness of their intentions. Ἀποτάσσεσθαι is (in late Gk., see Lob. *Phryn.* p. 24) to bid farewell to friends; cf. Lc. ix. 61, Acts xviii. 18, 21, 2 Cor. ii. 13. It is possible that αὐτοῖς may = τοῖς μαθηταῖς αὐτοῦ, and that Mt. has misinterpreted the pronoun; but if so, Mc. omits altogether the dismissal of

ἀποταξάμενος αὐτοῖς ἀπῆλθεν εἰς τὸ ὄρος προσεύξασθαι. <sup>47</sup> καὶ § ὁψίας γενομένης ἦν τὸ πλοῖον ἐν μέσῳ <sup>47 § X</sup> τῆς θαλάσσης, καὶ αὐτὸς μόνος ἐπὶ τῆς γῆς. <sup>48</sup> καὶ 48 ἴδων αὐτοὺς βασανίζομένους ἐν τῷ ἔλαυνειν, ἦν γὰρ ὁ ἄνεμος ἐναντίος αὐτοῖς, περὶ τετάρτην φυλακὴν

<sup>46</sup> ανηλθεν ι 209                    47 καὶ οψ.] οψ. δε N | ην]+παλαι D ι 28 209 251 iam ab i | εν μεσῃ τη θαλασση D 2<sup>ρο</sup> | om μονος arm                    48 ιδων] ιδεν ΑΚΜΥΧΠ\* ειδεν EFGHS<sup>si</sup>UTΓΠ<sup>2</sup> alpl | βασ. εν τω ελαυνειν] βασ. και ελαυνοντας D 2<sup>ρο</sup> a b ff i q ελαυνοντας κ. βασ. 604 | περι τετ. φυλ. τ. νυκτος] om syr<sup>sin</sup> pr και ADXIIΠ alpl

the people, which was the next step and an important one. On the whole the Vg. is probably right in referring both ἀτολνει and ἀποταξάμενος to the crowd (*dum dimitteret populum... cum dimisisset eos*), though it misses the significant change of verb. *Προσεύξασθαι*, inf. of aim or object; cf. Blass, *Gr.* p. 223.

*ἀπῆλθεν εἰς τὸ ὄρος*] When all were gone He returned to the higher ground (cf. Jo. vi. 3, 15), partly to escape the crowd (*ἀνεχώρησεν*, Jo.), but chiefly to pray (*οἷα ἀνθρώπος*, Victor; *χρήσιμον γὰρ ταῖς προσευχαῖς καὶ τὸ ὄρος καὶ ἡ νὺξ καὶ ἡ μόνωσις*, Euth.); cf. i. 35. Another crisis had come; the way to further usefulness in Galilee seemed to be blocked, partly by the attitude of Antipas, partly by the unreasoning enthusiasm of the people; He needed counsel and strength for the immediate future.

47—48. *ὁψίας γενομένης κτλ.*] More than an hour must have passed since the conversation before the miracle (see note on v. 35), and the sun had now probably set: cf. Jo. vi. 17, *σκοτία ἤδη ἐγεγόνει*. Meanwhile a stiff breeze had sprung up, and it was against the rowers (Mc. Mt.), blowing probably from the N. or N.W. and raising so much sea (Jo.) as to distress them (*βασανίζομένους*) as well as to alter their course. The Paschal moon gave light enough to reveal the boat struggling with the waves (*βασανίζομενον* Mt.), and well out to sea (Mc.

ἐν μέσῳ τῆς θαλάσσης, Mt. σταδίους πολλοὺς ἀπὸ τῆς γῆς: for the reading of D in Mc. (ἢν πάλαι) see WH., *Notes*, p. 25). The Lord, who was now alone on the land, realised their position and, breaking off His vigil, went down to the sea and took the direction of the boat.

For *ὁψία* = the early hours of the night see Judith xiii. 1, Mc. xiv. 17, Jo. xx. 19. *Βασανίζω* has already occurred in v. 7 (q.v.); the different applications of the word in this context by Mt. and Mc. are instructive as shewing the degree of latitude which the Synoptists allowed themselves in dealing with the common tradition, even when they retained its actual terms. For a metaphorical use of the verb cf. Sir. iv. 17, 2 Pet. ii. 8. On *βασ.* ἐν τῷ ἔλ. see Blass, *Gr.* p. 237. "Ανεμος ἐναντίος, cf. Acts xxvii. 4.

48. *περὶ τετάρτην φυλακὴν κτλ.*] The Lord reached the boat about 3 a.m. (cf. WM., p. 506); Mt., more precisely, *τετάρτη φυλακῆ*. Cf. Macar. Magn. iii. 6, *τετάρτη τῆς νυκτὸς φυλακή ἐστιν ἡ δεκάτη τῆς νυκτὸς ὥρα, μεθ' ἣν ὑπολείπονται τρεῖς ὥστεραιαι ὥραι*. Mc. and Mt. count four watches in the night after the Roman system; see Mc. xiii. 35, and cf. Acts xii. 4 (Blass). Lc. on the other hand (xii. 38) seems to follow the Jewish division into three. *Φυλακή* occurs in this sense in the LXX. (Jud. vii. 19, 1 Regn. xi. 11, Ps. lxxxix. (xc.) 4, cxxix. (cxxxi.) 6, cf.

*τῆς νυκτὸς ἔρχεται πρὸς αὐτοὺς περιπατῶν ἐπὶ τῆς  
49 θαλάσσης· καὶ ἥθελεν παρελθεῖν αὐτούς.*

*ἰδόντες αὐτὸν ἐπὶ τῆς θαλάσσης περιπατοῦντα ἔδοξαν  
50 ὅτι φάντασμά ἐστιν, καὶ ἀνέκραξαν·*

*πάντες γὰρ αὐτὸν εἶδαν καὶ ἐταράχθησαν.*

48 ηθελεν] ηθελησεν D | om και ηθ. παρ. αυτους G

NBLΔ 33] φαντ. ειναι ADNXΓΠΣΦ al min<sup>pl</sup> latt me

KLMXVII\* | om και εταραχθ. syρ<sup>ειν</sup> | και ευθεως ελαλ. μ. α. ο Ιησους N

49 οτι φάντασμα εστιν

50 ειδον ΑΓΔΠ<sup>2</sup> ιδον

Thren. ii. 19). "Ἐρχεται πρὸς αὐτούς. Jo. says that when they caught sight of the Lord they had rowed ὡς σταδίους εἴκοσι πέντε ἡ τριάκοντα. Since the lake was forty stades broad (Joseph. B. J. iii. 10. 7), this agrees fairly well with Mc's ἐν μέσῳ τῆς θαλάσσης, if we allow for the tortuous course of the boat, her general direction (N.E. to S.W. by W.), and the interval between the Lord's departure from the hill and arrival at the spot where they saw Him. Περιπατῶν ἐπὶ τῆς θαλάσσης, Mc. and Jo.; Mt. π. ἐπὶ τὴν θάλασσαν. The gen. points to the apparent solidity of the water under His feet (cf. ἐπὶ τῆς γῆς, v. 47), the acc. to His progress implied in περιπατῶν; in v. 26 where the order is different Mt. also prefers the gen. The reader is left to complete the picture; the Lord must be imagined as walking on a seething sea, not upon a smooth surface (Jo. ἡ θάλασσα ...διεγείρετο: cf. Victor, τῶν ἀνέμων ἐναντία πνεόντων καὶ τῶν κυμάτων κατὰ τοῦ ἀνέμου ἐγειρομένων, ἔμενεν ἐπὶ τῶν νόδάτων βαδίζων); now on the crest of a wave, now hidden out of sight. It was the darkest hour of the night, and the moon had probably set; only the outline of a human form could be seen appearing from time to time, and approaching the boat. The conception is found in Hebrew poetry, but only in connexion with Divine prerogatives, e.g. Job xxxviii. 16, ἤλθες δὲ ἐπὶ πηγὴν θαλάσσης ἐν δὲ ἵχνεσιν ἀβύσσου περιεπάγησας; in Sir.

xxiv. 5 Wisdom says ἐν βάθει ἀβύσσων περιεπάγησα. For a mystical application see Aug. in Jo. tract. xxv.: "venit...calcans fluctus, omnes tumores mundi sub pedibus habens...quid ergo timetis, Christiani? Christus loquitur *Ego sum, nolite timere.*" Cf. serm. 75.

ἥθελεν παρελθεῖν αὐτούς] Vg. volebat praeterire eos; the imperfect is conative (Burton, p. 12); for the acc. cf. Lc. xi. 42, xv. 29, Acts xvi. 8. With the feigned purpose comp. Lc. xxiv. 28, and see Mc. v. 36, vii. 27. The purpose in each case was to try, and by trial to strengthen faith (cf. Jo. vi. 6).

49. ἔδοξαν ὅτι φάντασμά ἐστιν] Wycliffe, "thei gessiden that it were a fantum"; Tindale, "they supposed it had been a sprete." Cf. Lc. xxiv. 37, ἔδόκουν πνεῦμα θεωρεῖν. Δοκεῖν in this sense is followed almost indifferently by ὅτι or by acc. and inf.; for δ. ὅτι see Mt. vi. 7, xxvi. 53, Lc. xii. 51, xix. 11, Jo. v. 45, &c. Φάντασμα, an apparition: here only and in Mt.; cf. Job xx. 8 (A) ὁσπερ φάντασμα νυκτερινόν. Φ. ἐστιν: the present represents the thought as it took shape on their tongues: 'it is a phantom' (cf. Mt.). For earlier evidence of a popular belief in apparitions among the Hebrew people see Job iv. 15 ff., xx. 8, and esp. Sap. xvii. 4, 15. Ἀνέκραξαν: the appearance drew forth a shriek of terror: cf. i. 23.

50. πάντες γὰρ αὐτὸν εἶδαν] It was not the fancy of an individual; all

μετ' αὐτῶν, καὶ λέγει αὐτοῖς Θαρσεῖτε, ἐγώ εἰμι, μὴ φοβεῖσθε. <sup>51</sup> καὶ ἀνέβη πρὸς αὐτοὺς εἰς τὸ πλοῖον, 51 καὶ ἐκόπασεν ὁ ἄνεμος. καὶ λίαν ἐν ἑαυτοῖς ἐξίσταντο, <sup>52</sup> οὐ γὰρ συνῆκαν ἐπὶ τοῖς ἄρτοις, ἀλλ' ἦν 52 αὐτῶν ἡ καρδία πεπωρωμένη.

<sup>51</sup> λιαν] om D i 28 2<sup>o</sup> b syr<sup>sin</sup> arm + εκ περισσου (vel εκπερισσως vel περισσως) ADNXΓΠΙΣΦ al min<sup>pl</sup> syr<sup>hel</sup> arm (om ΝΒΛΔ syr<sup>pesh</sup> aeth) | εξίσταντο] εξεπλησσοντο i 118 209 + και εθαυμαζον ADNXΓΠΙΣΦ al min<sup>pl</sup> a b f q syr<sup>pesh hel</sup> arm aeth (om ΝΒΛΔ i 28 118 209 c i vg syr<sup>sin</sup> me) <sup>52</sup> τοις ἄρτοις] τοις αὐτοῖς Δ | αλλ ην ΝΒΛΜ<sup>2</sup>ΣΔ 33 al<sup>paue</sup> syr<sup>hel(mg)</sup> me] ην γαρ ADM\*NXΓΠΙΣΦ min<sup>pl</sup> latt<sup>vtp</sup> vg syr<sup>hel(txt)</sup> arm aeth

the Twelve saw the Form on the water, as all the Eleven afterwards saw the Risen Christ. The fear was momentary: it was relieved at once by the well-known voice; cf. the similar circumstances in Lc. xxiv. 37 ff., Apoc. i. 17 ff. For λαλεῖν μετά τινος cf. Jo. iv. 27, ix. 37, xiv. 30: the phrase is probably preferred here to the more usual λ. τινι or πρός τινα, as implying familiar intercourse. Μετά implies "mutual action" (WM., p. 471), and with λαλεῖν, the exchange of conversation.

Θαρσεῖτε, ἐγώ εἰμι] For this use of the imper. of θαρσεῖν (so always in the Gospels and Acts, θαρρεῖν in Epp.; WH., Notes, p. 149) cf. x. 49, Mt. ix. 2, 22, Jo. xvi. 33, Acts xxiii. 11. Ἐγώ εἰμι = 'It is I,' cf. Lc. xxiv. 39, ἐγώ εἰμι αὐτός, and the use of 'Ω, LXX. ἐγώ, in the O.T. (BDB., p. 59). In the Fourth Gospel the phrase sometimes (viii. 24, 28, 58, xiii. 19) rises to the level of its use in Deut. xxxii. 39, Isa. xlili. 10; see Westcott on Jo. viii. 24. Μή φοβεῖσθε: see Burton, § 165. Augustine points the moral of this little episode: "quomodo eos volebat praeterire quos paventes ita confirmat, nisi quia illa voluntas praetereundi ad eliciendum illum clamorem valebat cui subveniri oportebat?"

51. ἀνέβη πρὸς αὐτούς εἰς τὸ πλοῖον] Cf. Jo. vi. 21, ἥθελον οὖν λαβεῖν αὐτὸν εἰς τὸ πλοῖον (Westcott). Ἀνέβη, in-

stead of the usual ἐνέβη, perhaps to depict the climb from the hollow of the wave over the side of the boat. Mt. ἀναβάντων αὐτῶν, i.e. the Lord and Simon Peter. The latter had gone down (*kataβás*) into the water and attempted to walk on it to the Lord; Mt. (xiv. 28—31) alone relates the incident. Upon the return of Peter to the boat accompanied by the Lord the wind at once fell: cf. iv. 39 (where see note on *κοπάζειν*).

ἐν ἑαυτοῖς ἐξίσταντο] The astonishment did not express itself in words; for ἐν ἑαυτοῖς see ii. 8, v. 30. Mt., however, represents them as falling at His feet with the exclamation Ἀληθῶς θεοῦ νῦν εἰλ. If this confession is in its right place, it anticipates St Peter's (Mt. xvi. 16, Mc. viii. 29). The excitement of the moment may have given voice to a growing impression which had not yet reached the maturity of a definite judgment. Victor points out that on the previous occasion when a storm was stilled they had been content to exclaim Τίς ἄρα οὐτός ἐστιν; (iv. 41).

52. οὐ γὰρ συνῆκαν ἐπὶ τοῖς ἄρτοις] Vg. non enim intellexerant de panibus. Their amazement would have been less had they realised the wonder of the preceding miracle; "deberuerant a pane ad mare concludere" (Bengel). Somehow the miracles connected with the multiplication of food failed to impress the Twelve (cf. viii.

53

*Kai διαπεράσαντες ἐπὶ τὴν γῆν ἥλθον εἰς Γεννη-*

53 διαπερασαντες] + εκειθεν D 45 a b c f f i q | επι την γην ηλθον εις Γενν. ΝΒΛΔ 28  
33 2<sup>po</sup>] ηλθ. επι την γην Γ. ADNΠΠΣ al min<sup>pl</sup> latt syrr ηλθ. εις την γην Γενν. ΧΦ  
minpauc arm<sup>zoh</sup> om την γην me arm<sup>codd</sup> om Γενν. i | Γεννησαρετ (Γενησ. FHN 69 al<sup>nonn</sup>  
ff q vg<sup>coddalig</sup>) ΝΑΒ<sup>2</sup>ΛΜΓΔΣΦ 33 al a] Γεννησαρεθ B\*(N)XII al min<sup>pl</sup> f q vg me  
Γεννησαρ D b c (ff) syrr<sup>sin pesh</sup> pr εις 604

17 ff.); perhaps their administration of the food diverted their thoughts from the work wrought by the Lord. 'Ἐπι' 'in the matter of,' 'in reference to,' WM., p. 489, Blass, *Gr.* p. 137; συνέπαι ἐπι (but with gen. or acc.) occurs in Dan. xi. 37 (Th.); cf. σ. εἰς, Ps. xxvii. (xxviii.) 5; ἐν, 2 Esdr. xviii. (Neh. viii.) 12.

ἀλλ' ἦν αὐτῶν ἡ καρδία πεπωρωμένη] Vg. erat enim (see vv. ll.) cor illorum obcaecatum; Wycliffe, "her herte was blyndid." For πωροῦσθαι see note on iii. 5. The καρδία (ii. 6) includes the intelligence considered in its relation to the moral and spiritual life of men; cf. 2 Cor. iii. 14, ἐπωρώθη τὰ νοήματα αὐτῶν: Rom. i. 21, ἐσκοτίσθη ἡ ἀσύνετος αὐτῶν καρδία. Both σύρεσις and φρόνησις (for the distinction of these synonyms see Lightfoot on Col. i. 9) depend for their right exercise upon moral conditions.

### 53—56. MINISTRY IN THE PLAIN OF GENNESARET (Mt. xiv. 34—36).

53. διαπεράσαντες ἐπὶ τὴν γῆν ἥλθον] Jo. remembers another incident of this voyage which appears to be miraculous. When Jesus and Peter entered the boat and the wind ceased, they found themselves at once close to shore, εὐθέως ἐγένετο τὸ πλοῖον ἐπὶ τῆς γῆς εἰς ἥν ὑπῆγον: see Westcott's note; Euth. explains: πλησίον τῆς γῆς γενομένου τοῦ πλοίου. The phrase used by Mt., Mc. (διαπ. ηλθον) merely sets forth the welcome ending of a laborious and hazardous crossing. Of. Ps. cvi. (cvii.) 24 ff. 'Ἐπὶ τὴν γῆν: cf. Acts xxvii. 44.

εἰς Γεννησαρέτ] In the end they landed neither at Bethsaida (v. 45) nor at Capernaum (Jo. vi. 17), but

a few miles to the south of the latter town, on the edge of the plain from which the lake took its usual name (Lc. v. 1, τὴν λίμνην Γεννησαρέτ, i Macc. xi. 67, τὸ ὄδωρ τοῦ Γεννησάρ, Joseph. ant. xviii. 2. 1, λίμνη Γεννησαρίτις). On the form Γεννησάρ which occurs in D (Mt. Mc.), in many mss. of the Old Latin and Vg., and in the Syriac versions, see Chase, *Syro-Latin Text of the Gospels*, p. 105. Gennesaret is usually identified with the present el-Ghuweir, a semi-elliptical plain on the West shore between 'Ain-et-Tin and Mejdel, three miles long and rather more than one mile in breadth. Josephus, who is enthusiastic in praise of the fertility of this district, writes (B. J. iii. 10. 8) παρατείνει δὲ τὴν Γεννησάρ ὅμωνυμος χώρα θαυμαστὴ φύσιν τε καὶ κάλλος... μῆκος δὲ τοῦ χωρίου παρατείνει κατὰ τὸν αἰγαλὸν τῆς ὁμώνυμου λίμνης ἐπὶ σταδίους τριάκοντα καὶ εὖρος εἴκοσι. For the descriptions of recent travellers see Stanley, *S. and P.*, pp. 374, 382; Wilson, *Recovery*, p. 338; Tristram, *B. P.*, p. 313; G. A. Smith, *H. G.*, p. 443 n.; Merrill, *Galilee*, p. 32 f. The place has lost the glories which Josephus praises; towns and villages, cultivated lands and vineyards are gone. But the visitor still finds much to admire—the pearly whiteness of the shell-strewn beach, the thickets of oleander blossoming along the watercourses, the profusion of wild flowers, the fine cliffs which guard the two extremities of the plain, and then recede to join the Galilean hills. In extent el-Ghuweir corresponds very nearly to the Batihah which the Lord had just left; but

σαρέτ, § καὶ προσωριμίσθησαν. <sup>54</sup> καὶ ἐξελθόντων αὐτῶν 54 § go  
ἐκ τοῦ πλοίου εὐθὺς ἐπιγνόντες αὐτὸν <sup>55</sup> περιέδραμον 55  
ὅλην τὴν χώραν ἐκείνην, καὶ ἤρξαντο ἐπὶ τοῖς κρα-  
βάττοις τοὺς κακῶς ἔχοντας περιφέρειν ὅπου ἦκουν  
ὅτι ἔστιν. <sup>56</sup> καὶ ὅπου ἀν εἰσεπορεύετο εἰς κώμας ἥ 56

53 οἱ καὶ προσωριμίσθησαν D 1 28 209 604 a b c f f i q r syrr<sup>sin pesh</sup> arm 54 αὐτοῖς]  
+ οἱ αὐδρες τοῦ τοποῦ εκείνου (καὶ) ΑΓΔ(Φ) 1 13 28 33 (69) (604) 1071 (2<sup>pe</sup>) al<sup>nonn</sup> c  
arm (syr<sup>pesh</sup>) 55 περιδραμοντες (οἱ καὶ seq) ΑΝΧΓΠ al<sup>pl</sup> | χωραν ΝΒΛΔ 33  
me] περιχωρον ADΝΧΓΠΣΦ min<sup>pl</sup> vg syr<sup>hel</sup> arm | κραβάτους Κ κραβατοις F\*ΧΔ  
κραβατοις Β<sup>2</sup>ΕΗ | οπου ηκουν] ηκουσθη Κ περιεφερον γαρ αυτοις ο. αν ηκουσαν  
D a (b f f i q) aeth | οτι εστιν] τον ᾧ ειναι D a ff o. εκει εστιν ΑΝΧΓΠΣΦ al min<sup>pl</sup>  
syr<sup>hel</sup> me arm 56 αν ABDLNII] εαν ΝΧΓΔ

while the scene of the miracle was little more than a waste of pasture dotted with an occasional village or homestead, the plain to which He had now come was densely populated. The retirement and rest He had sought were at an end, as soon as He was seen on the beach of Gennesaret.

προσωριμίσθησαν] Vg. *adplicuerunt*; they brought the boat to her moorings, casting anchor, or lashing her to a post on the shore. The word is ἄπ. λεγ. in Biblical Greek, but both act. and mid. are classical, and there are examples of the 1st aor. pass. in a middle sense in late writers, e.g. Aelian and Dio Cassius.

54. εὐθὺς ἐπιγνόντες αὐτόν] It must have been early and hardly daylight (comp. vi. 48 with Jo. vi. 21); yet, as on the previous day when He left the neighbourhood of Capernaum (*v.* 33), there were people about who recognised Him and spread the news. For ἐπιγνώσκειν in the sense of personal recognition cf. Mt. xvii. 12, Lc. xxiv. 16, 31, Acts iv. 13.

55. περιέδραμον δλην τὴν χώραν] Mt. τὴν περιχωρον: the news was hastily carried round to all parts of the plain. Περιτρέχειν is ἄπ. λεγ. in the N. T.; but occurs in the LXX. (*Amos* viii. 12, *Jer.* v. 1, = Οψιῶ).

Here it vividly depicts the circulation of the tidings throughout the *Ghuweir*. As the result, there came from every quarter streams of people bringing their sick for healing. For περιφέρειν see 2 Cor. iv. 10. With περιέδραμον...ῆρξαντο περιφέρειν comp. Mt.'s tamer ἀπέστειλαν...προσήγεγκαν. The sick were carried on their pallets (ἐπὶ τοῖς κραβάττοις: Mc. only, see note on ii. 4); the course of the bearers was shaped by the reports that reached them from time to time as to the Lord's movements (ὅπου ἦκουν ὅτι ἔστιν). Ἐστιν, the present, as if one caught the reply of those of whom inquiry was made: 'he is here,' or 'there.'

56. ὅπου ἀν εἰσεπορεύετο κτλ.] Whenever in His progress He entered a village, He found the sick laid in the open spaces ready for His healing. In strictness ἀγορά would exist only in the towns, at Magdala and Capernaum and Chorazin and Bethsaida; but the word is apparently used here loosely to include other open spaces. Ἐν ταῖς πλατείαις (D), Vg. *in plateis*, which is followed by all the English versions except R.V., is perhaps from Acts iv. 15. Πόλεις and κώμαι are classed together in Mt. x. 11, Lc. viii. 1, xiii. 22, κώμαι and ἀγορά in vi. 36, Lc. ix. 12: the combination of the three covers every collection of dwellings large and

εἰς πόλεις ἢ εἰς ἀγροὺς ἐν ταῖς ἀγοραῖς ἐτίθεσαν τοὺς ἀσθενοῦντας, καὶ παρεκάλουν αὐτὸν ἵνα κἀν τοῦ κρα- σπέδου τοῦ ἴματίου αὐτοῦ ἄψωνται· καὶ ὅσοι ἀν ἥψαντο αὐτοῦ ἐσώζοντο.

VII 1 <sup>1</sup>*Kai συνάγονται πρὸς αὐτὸν οἱ Φαρισᾶιοι καὶ τινὲς τῶν γραμματέων ἐλθόντες ἀπὸ Ἱεροσολύμων.*  
2 <sup>2</sup>*καὶ ἰδόντες τινὰς τῶν μαθητῶν αὐτοῦ ὅτι κοινᾶις*

56 *εν ταις αγοραις]* pr η Ν *εν ταις πλαταιας* D 604 2<sup>ro</sup> b c f f i q vg go | *επιθεσαν* ΝΒΔ min<sup>pergrac</sup>] *επιθουν* A(D)ΝΧΓΠΣΦ min<sup>pl</sup> | *ἥψαντο* ΝΒΔ 1 13 28 33 69 124 346 2<sup>ro</sup> a] *ηπτοντο* ΑΝΧΓΠΣΦ min<sup>pl</sup> *tangebant latr<sup>tr</sup> pl vg* syrr *αψωνται* 604 | *εσωζοντο*] *διεσωζοντο* ΝΣ 1 69 604 al<sup>parac</sup> *διεσωθησαν* Δ *εσωθησαν* 33 2<sup>ro</sup> VII 1 *ελθοντες*] pr οι ΝΣ *qui venerant a b f (q)* 2 *ιδοντες*] *ειδοτες* D | *οτι...εσθιουσιν* ΝΒΔ 33] *εσθιοντας* ADΝΧΓΠΣΦ al min<sup>pl</sup> a go | *κοιν. χ. τ. ε. ανιπτ.*] *non lotis manibus b c* (syrr<sup>sin pesh</sup> aeth)

small. On the construction see WM., p. 384, Burton, § 315 f., Blass, *Gr.* p. 207.

*καὶ παρεκάλουν αὐτὸν κτλ.]* Again and again the entreaty was heard. The fame of the healing of the *αἰμορροοῦσα* had spread (Victor: ἡ γὰρ αἰμορροοῦσα πάντας ἐδίδαξε φιλοσοφεῖν); so simple a means of obtaining a cure appealed to the popular imagination, and under the circumstances the Lord permitted its use. Cf. Acts iv. 15, xix. 11 f. On the *κράσπεδον*, and on *κἄν*, see v. 27, 28 notes.

*ὅσοι ἀν ἥψαντο αὐτοῦ ἐσώζοντο]* For the construction see the references at the end of the last note. The aor. (see vv. ll.) points to the momentariness of the touch in each case; the imperfect which follows, to the rapid succession of the cases. Mt. again is less picturesque (*ὅσοι ἥψαντο διεσωθησαν*). For *σώζεσθαι* in reference to physical restoration see v. 28; on the orthography cf. WSchm., p. 41.

VII. 1—13. QUESTION OF CEREMONIAL WASHINGS (Mt. xv. 1—9).

1. *συνάγονται]* See iv. 1, v. 21, vi. 30. The Lord's person is the rallying-point for both friends and enemies; cf. Mt. xxv. 31, 32. Of the

Pharisees there has been no mention since iii. 6; during the interval they may have been occupied by their intrigue with the Herodians, of which perhaps we see the fruit in vi. 14. Now that Jesus has returned to the W. shore, they fall back upon their old policy of insidious questioning. The Scribes from Jerusalem (iii. 22) are still with them, unless, as *τινες...* *ἐλθόντες* suggests, these are another party, newly arrived. Mt. is less precise: *προσέρχονται τῷ Ἰ. ἀπὸ Ἱεροσ. Φαρισᾶιοι καὶ γραμματέις.* Cf. Bede: “non ad verbum audiendum...sed ad movendas solum quaestiones pugnae ad Dominum concurrunt.”

2. *ἰδόντες τινὰς...ὅτι...εσθιοντιν]* A mixture of the two constructions *ἰδόντες τινὰς...εσθιοντας* (cf. i. 10, vi. 48, 49) and *ἰδ. ὅτι ἐσθιοντιν τινες* (ii. 16, ix. 25). The opportunity probably arose during the passage of the party through the plain (vi. 56); the loaves were very possibly some of the *κλάσματα* with which their baskets had been filled the night before, and which now served them as an *ἔφόδιον*.

*κοινᾶις χερσίν, τοῦτ' ἔστιν ἀνίπτοις]* *Κοινός*, ‘polluted,’ ‘ceremonially unclean,’ occurs in i Macc. i. 47 *θύειν νεα καὶ κτήνη κοινά* (A, V: Ν\*, πολλά), ib. 62 *φαγεῖν κοινά* (for ΝΩΨ, see Guil-

*χερσίν, τοῦτ' ἔστιν ἀνίπτοις, ἐσθίουσιν τοὺς ἄρτους  
—οἱ γὰρ Φαρισαῖοι §καὶ πάντες οἱ Ἰουδαῖοι ἐὰν μὴ 3 §W<sup>a</sup>*

<sup>2</sup> *τοὺς* (om *τοὺς ΑΧΓΠ αἱ*) *ἄρτους*] + εμεμψαντο KMNSUPΣΦ al min<sup>pl</sup> κατεγνωσαν  
D vituperaverunt latt<sup>tp</sup> pl<sup>vg</sup> (syrr<sup>hcl</sup> arm)

leopard on Mt. xv. 11), cf. 4 Macc. vii. 6 γαστέρα ἐκοίνωσας (§: A, ἐκοινώησας) μιεροφαγίᾳ: in the N.T., outside this context, *κοινός* is similarly used in Acts x. 14, 28, xi. 8, Rom. xiv. 14, Heb. x. 29, Apoc. xxi. 27, and *κοινῶν* or *κοινοῦσθαι* (mid. and pass.) in Acts x. 15, xi. 9, xxi. 28, Heb. ix. 13. This use of *κοινός* corresponds to the Rabbinic נִזְבֵּחַ, נִזְבֵּחַ (Edersheim, ii. 9 n.); the *κοινόν* is the opposite of the ἄγιον or καθαρόν (Westcott on Heb. x. 29). Hence Mc.'s explanation, τ. εἰ. ἀνίπτοις, must be taken to interpret the word only in reference to the particular case; unwashed hands were, for the purpose of eating, *κοινά*. For *τοῦτ'* ἔστιν as a formula of interpretation cf. Mt. xxvii. 46, Acts i. 19, Rom. vii. 18, Heb. ii. 14; on the question whether it is to be written as two words see WSchm., p. 37, Blass, Gr., pp. 18, 77. On ἐσθίειν τοὺς ἄρτους (*τὸν ἄρτον*, v. 5) see Dalman, *Worte*, p. 92.

3—4. Another apparently editorial note. There is no trace of it in Mt. Cf. Zahn, *Einleitung*, ii. p. 241.

3. *οἱ γὰρ Φ. καὶ πάντες οἱ Ἰουδαῖοι*] Except in the phrase ὁ βασιλεὺς τῶν Ἰουδαίων (xv. 2 ff.), *οἱ Ἰουδαῖοι* is used by Mc. here only; in Mt. with the same exception it is limited to xxviii. 15, and in Lc. to vii. 3, xxxii. 51. On Jo.'s use of the term see Westcott's *St John*, Intr. p. lx.; *οἱ Ἰουδαῖοι* are in the Fourth Gospel the opposite of the ὥχλος: "as 'the multitude' reflect the spirit of Galilee, 'the Jews' reflect the spirit of Jerusalem"; they are "the representatives of the narrow finality of Judaism." In some such limited sense the term is probably used here by Mc. and Mt.; "the Jews"

who "all" hold the tradition of the Elders are not the masses, but the strict and orthodox minority who supported the Scribes. Yet ceremonial purification was usual in religious households (cf. Westcott on Jo. ii. 6), and the Lord had probably conformed to it at Nazareth; He resists merely the attempt to enforce it as an essential (Hort, *Jud. Chr.*, p. 29 f.). On the origin and extent of these practices see Schürer II. ii. p. 106 ff.

ἐὰν μὴ πυγμῇ νιψωνται τὰς χ.] Πυγμή (Exod. xxi. 18, Isa. lviii. 4, = פֶגֶן) is the closed hand, the fist—σύγκλεισις δακτύλων, Suid.; cf. Pind. *Ol.* 7. 30, πυγμῇ νικήσαντα. The word is used in late Gk. for the length of the arm between the fist and the elbow; hence Euth. and Thph. interpret here ἄχρι ἀγκῶνος, i.e. thrusting the arm into the water up to the elbow. Cf. J. Lightfoot *ad l.*, and Edersheim, who renders קְרֹפֵת הַשְׂעִיר, "to the wrist"; but it is difficult to see how πυγμῇ can be made to bear the meaning of ἔως τῆς πυγμῆς. The reading πυκνά (Vg. *crebro*, Wycliffe and the other English versions exc. R.V., "oft") may be a gloss borrowed perhaps from Lc. v. 33, if it be not due to corruption (cf. πύκμῃ, D); the rendering of the Pesh. (בְּקָרְבָּן), i.e. ἐπιμελῶς, see Lc. xv. 8) is another gloss which we have no means of verifying (see however Morrison, *St Mark*, *ad l.*); for the marginal gloss in Syr.<sup>hcl</sup> see Field (*Notes*, p. 30 f.), who renders it ἀποκλύζοντες τῷ ὕδατι τοὺς δακτύλους αὐτῶν. On the whole it is perhaps best to take πυγμῇ literally, 'with the fist,' i.e. either with the hand held out with clenched fingers while the attendant pours

*πυγμῇ νίψωνται τὰς χεῖρας οὐκ ἐσθίουσιν, κρατοῦντες  
τὴν παράδοσιν τῶν πρεσβυτέρων· καὶ ἀπ' ἄγορᾶς*

3 πυγμῇ AB (D πυκμῇ) LNW<sup>a</sup>ΧΓΠΣΦ al min<sup>omnivid</sup> pugillo effi q r (momento a subinde b primo d) arm Or] πυκναν vg me go diligenter syrr<sup>pesh hcl (txt)</sup> om Δ syr<sup>sin</sup> | οὐκ εσθο.]+(τον) αρτον D(M<sup>2</sup>) al abc ffi syr<sup>sin</sup> arm 4 απ αγορας]+οταν ελθωσιν D abc effi lqr (arm)

water over it (2 Kings iii. 11); or as Meyer-Weiss explains, "so dass sie die geballte Faust in die hohle Hand stecken, erstere in der letzteren reiben und drehen." In the first case the dat. is modal, in the second instrumental. A possible alternative is to treat *πυγμῇ* as the dat. of measure—'by elbow-length' (see above). But it must be confessed that no explanation hitherto offered is wholly satisfactory.

*Νίπτειν, νίπτεσθαι* are used of the feet (Gen. xviii. 4, 2 Regn. xi. 8, Jo. xiii. 5 ff., 1 Tim. v. 10), the hands (Exod. xxx. 19 ff., Lev. xv. 11, Ps. xxv. (xxvi.) 6), the face (Mt. vi. 17, Jo. ix. 7 ff.), in contrast to *λούεσθαι*, to bathe the whole body: cf. Jo. xiii. 10, ὁ λελουμένος οὐκ ἔχει χρέαν εἰ μὴ τοὺς πόδας νίψασθαι.

*κρατοῦντες τὴν παράδοσιν τῶν πρεσβυτέρων]* Cf. Joseph. *ant.* xiii. 10. 6, νόμιμα πολλά τινα παρέδοσαν τῷ δῆμῳ οἱ Φαρισαῖοι ἐκ πατέρων διαδοχῆς ἅπερ οὐκ ἀναγέγραπται ἐν τοῖς Μωυσέως νόμοις. The rule, at least in its details, belonged not to the Torah, but to the Qabbalah (Taylor, *Pirge Aboth*, pp. 120, 128), and to its non-canonical part (Edersheim, ii. p. 9). The Elders (*Μητροί*) are here of course not the officers of the synagogue or members of the Sanhedrin, but such great teachers as Hillel and Shammai, or the scribes of former generations (cf. Heb. xi. 2, where *οἱ πρ.* = *οἱ πατέρες*, i. 1), perhaps especially the members of the 'Great Synagogue,' see *Aboth*, i. 1 ff., and Dr Taylor's account, p. 124; the *παράδοσις τ. πρ.* is the sum of the *παραδόσεις πατρικαί* (Gal. i. 14) after-

wards embodied in the Mishnah, which every Pharisee and disciple of the Pharisees sought to keep inviolate. On St Paul's attitude with regard to tradition cf. Hort, *Jud. Chr.*, p. 118, and cf. Lightfoot on 2 Th. ii. 15. For *κρατεῖν παράδοσιν* see 2 Th. l.c., and cf. *κρατεῖν διδαχήν*, Apoc. ii. 14, 15, or with the gen., *κρ. διδαχής*, Heb. iv. 14, where see Westcott's note. The affection with which even the Egyptian Jews in the second century before Christ clung to a similar tradition is illustrated in the Sibyllines, iii. 591 sq., ἀλλὰ μὲν ἀείροντι πρὸς οὐρανὸν ὠλένας ἀγνὰς | ὅρθιοι ἐξ εὐνῆς ἀεὶ χέρας ἀγνίζοντες | ὑδατί. See J. Lightfoot on Mt. xv. 2 ff., and especially Edersheim, *Life*, ii. p. 9 ff.

4. *καὶ ἀπ' ἄγορᾶς κτλ.]* After mingling with men of all sorts in the open market, they purified the whole person before taking food. The Apostles had been ἐν ταῖς ἀγοραῖς (vi. 56), jostled by a mixed crowd, yet they had not even washed their hands. *Ἀπ' ἄγορᾶς*, Vg. *a foro*, 'after market'; a pregnant construction, see WM., p. 776 n., and cf. Theophrast. *char.* 16, *περιρρανάμενος ἀπὸ ιεροῦ*. The purification was effected by sprinkling (cf. the *ὑδωρ βαπτισμοῦ* of Num. xix. 9 ff., and the metaphorical use of the verb and substantive in Ps. l. (li.) 7, Zach. xiii. 1, Heb. x. 22, Apoc. xix. 13), or, according to the alternative reading (see vv. ll.), by dipping (cf. 4 Regn. v. 14, Judith xii. 7). But *βαπτίσωνται* suggests a standard which is Essene rather than Pharisaic, unless, as J. Lightfoot suggests, an immersion of the hands only is intended. Cf. how-

ἐὰν μὴ ῥαντίσωνται οὐκ ἐσθίουσιν, καὶ ἄλλα πολλά  
ἐστιν ἀ παρέλαβον κρατεῖν, <sup>¶</sup> βαπτισμοὺς ποτηρίων <sup>¶ N</sup>  
καὶ ξεστῶν καὶ χαλκίων. <sup>5</sup>καὶ ἐπερωτῶσιν αὐτὸν 5

4 ραντισωνται ΚΒ 40 53 71 86 237 240 244 259 Euth] βαπτισωνται (-σονται,  
-ζωνται, -ζονται) ADEFGHJKLMNSUVXΓΔΠΣΦ latt syrr arm Or | a παρελαβον] απερ  
ελαβον B | κρατειν] τηρειν D servare latt<sup>vplvg</sup> | και χαλκιων (-κειων AL min<sup>sst mu</sup>)] om  
syrr<sup>sin</sup> + και κλιων ADXΓΠΣΦ al min<sup>pl</sup> latt syrr<sup>posh hel</sup> go arm Or (om ΚΒΛΔ min<sup>perpae</sup>  
syrr<sup>sin</sup> me) 5 και ι<sup>ο</sup>] επειτα Α<sup>corr</sup>ΧΓΠΣ(Φ) al min<sup>pl</sup> syrr<sup>(sin)hel</sup> go arm επειτα και Δ

ever Justin, *dial.* 46, where Trypho mentions among ordinary Jewish practices τὸ βαπτίζεσθαι ἀψάμενόν τινος ὅν  
ἀπηγόρευται ὑπὸ Μωσέως.

ἄλλα πολλά] I.e. in the way of lustration or ceremonial purification, besides the purification of the person. For παραλαβέιν as the correlative of παραδοῦναι see I Cor. xv. 1, 3, 2 Thess. iii. 6: κρατεῖν is the inf. of purpose (Burton, § 366), cf. WM., p. 401.

βαπτισμοὺς ποτηρίων κτλ.] Cf. Heb. ix. 10, διαφόροις βαπτισμοῖς, on which see Westcott's note; the word does not occur in the O.T., but βαπτίζεσθαι ἀπὸ νεκροῦ is used in Sir. xxxi. (xxxiv.) 30 in reference to the law of Num. xix. For Talmudic directions as to the dipping of vessels see *Chagigah* (ed. Streane, p. 115 ff.). The vessels specified are (1) ποτήρια, ordinary drinking cups (cf. ix. 41, xiv. 23, Lc. xi. 39), whether of earthenware or metal (Esth. i. 7, Apoc. xvii. 4), (2) ξέσται, Vg. *urcei*, pitchers or ewers, possibly of wood (Lev. xv. 12) or of stone (Jo. ii. 6, λιθιναι ὑδρίαι), (3) χαλκία, vessels of brass or copper, as pots used in cooking (I Regn. ii. 14, 2 Chron. xxxv. 13, I Esdr. i. 12). Ξέστης (*sextarius*) occurs in two mss. of Lev. xiv. 10 (see Hastings, *D. B.* iv., art. *Weights*) and in Joseph. *ant.* viii. 2. 9 (ὅ δὲ βάτος δύναται ξέστας ἐβδομήκοντα δύο) as a measure; the word passed into Rabbinic (אַבְדָּן). The Western addition καὶ κλιῶν (vv. ll.) is interesting and possibly genuine, though βαπτισμοὺς...κλιῶν seems an incongruous

combination; the mention of κλῖναι (whether 'beds' or *triclinia*) may have been suggested by the legislation of Lev. xv. See WH., *Notes*, p. 25.

5. καὶ ἐπερωτῶσιν αὐτὸν] The sentence broken off at the end of v. 2 is resumed, but καὶ is repeated in forgetfulness that καὶ ἰδόντες remains without a finite verb. The R.T. gets rid of the anacolouthon by adding ἐμέμψαντο to v. 2 (Vg. *cum vidissent... vituperaverunt*). Ἐπερωτᾶν, *supra* v. 9; cf. vii. 17, viii. 23, &c. The word does not imply hostility, but the question itself leaves no doubt of the attitude of those who put it; cf. ii. 18, 24. The Pharisees and the Scribes (*οἱ Φ. καὶ οἱ γρ.*) are distinguished as in v. 1; they formed on this occasion two parties, distinct though allied. Περιπατεῖν, here only in the Synoptic Gospels in the ethical sense, which is fairly common in St John (viii. 12, xii. 35 bis, I Jo. i. 6, &c.), and frequent in St Paul; the idea is found in the O.T., see Gen. v. 22 (where for the LXX. εὐηρέστησεν τῷ θεῷ, Aq. renders literally περιεπάτει σὺν τῷ θ.), Prov. viii. 20, Eccl. xi. 9. For περιπ. κατά (פְּנִים) see Rom. viii. 4, xiv. 15, 2 Cor. x. 2, 3, Eph. ii. 2; κατά indicates conformity with a rule or standard, WM., p. 500. The standard maintained by the Scribes was that of the Halachah (הֲלָחָן), the rule by which men must 'walk'). Mt., less idiomatically, παραβαίνουσιν τ. παράδοσιν. For τ. παράδοσιν τ. πρ. see note on v. 3.

οἱ Φαρισαῖοι καὶ οἱ γραμματεῖς Διὰ τί οὐ περιπατοῦσιν οἱ μαθηταὶ σου κατὰ τὴν παράδοσιν τῶν πρεσβυτέρων, ἀλλὰ κοινᾶς χερσὶν ἐσθίουσιν τὸν ὄρτον; ὁ δὲ εἶπεν αὐτοῖς Καλῶς ἐπροφήτευσεν Ἡσαίας περὶ ὑμῶν τῶν ὑποκριτῶν ὡς γέγραπται ὅτι

5 ομ καὶ οἱ γραμμ. Δ | κοινᾶς Ν\*BD 1 28 33 118 209 604 2<sup>ρ</sup> a i q vg me arm] ανιπτοῖς Ν<sup>c,a</sup>ΑΛΧΓΔΠΣΦ al min<sup>pl</sup> b c fff syrr go | χερσὶν] pr ταις D 28 6 ο δε] + αποκριθεὶς ΑDXΓΠΙI al min<sup>pl</sup> latt syr<sup>hel</sup> arm go | καλως] pr οτι ΑDXΓΠΙI al min<sup>pl</sup> | επροφήτευσεν ΝΒ\*DLΔ 1 13 33 124 346 1071] προεφ. ΑΒ<sup>2</sup>ΧΓΠΣΦ al min<sup>pl</sup> | om των υποκρ. syr<sup>sin</sup> | ws γεγραπται] καὶ εἰπεν D ws εἰπεν 1 2<sup>ρ</sup> arm λεγων 604 eff i qui dixit a b | om οτι ΑDXΓΠΙI al min<sup>omnivid</sup>

ἀλλὰ κοινᾶς κτλ.] Mt. paraphrases, οὐ γάρ νίπτονται τὰς χεῖρας ὅταν ὄρτον ἐσθίωσιν. Mc., after the explanation of vv. 2, 3, is able to give the words as they were uttered. Τὸν ὄρτον = τὸν ὄρτον, v. 2; for the sing. with art. cf. Jo. vi. 23; φαγεῖν ὄρτον (Μὴ Λέγε) is usual, but the article points to what is passing before the eyes.

6. ὁ δὲ εἶπεν αὐτοῖς κτλ.] The time had come for plain speaking, for the Scribes had called attention to the very heart of the controversy between Jesus and themselves. The answer consists of two parts, (a) vv. 6—8, (b) 9—13; Mt. has both, but inverts the order—perhaps rightly, for the sharp retort διὰ τί καὶ ὑμεῖς... is lost in Mc., and the stern ὑποκριταί seems to come better after the exposure of their inconsistency than at the outset.

καλῶς ἐπροφήτη. Ἡσαίας περὶ ὑμῶν] I.e. ‘Isaiah’s denunciation of Israel in his own day is admirably adapted to your case.’ For this sense of καλῶς cf. xii. 32 (where it is followed by ἐπ’ ἀληθείας), Jo. iv. 17, viii. 48, xiii. 13, and see Schöttgen ad l.; for προφητεύειν περὶ with gen., 1 Pet. i. 10, other constructions are πρ. ἐπὶ with acc. (Am. vii. 15, 16, Jer. xxxii. 16 (xxv. 30)), πρ. τινὶ (Jude 14); on the position of the augment (ἐπροφ.) cf. WSchm., p. 102.

τῶν ὑποκριτῶν] The charge of ‘hy-

pocrisy’ is here for the first time directly laid at the door of the Scribes; yet see Mt. vi. 2, 5, 15, vii. 5. ‘Υποκριτής = Ἔγγ<sup>η</sup> occurs in Job xxxiv. 30, xxxvi. 13 (LXX.), and in Job xx. 5 (Aq.). In the Pss. of Solomon ὑπόκριτος is a charge constantly brought against the Sadducees by the Pharisaic author, e.g. iv. 7, ἔξαραι ὁ θεὸς τοὺς ἐν ὑποκρίσει ζῶντας μετὰ ὄσιων (see Ryle and James, ad l.). The Scribes may well have been startled to hear the reproach cast back upon themselves.

ὡς γέγραπται ὅτι] Cf. καθὼς γέγρ., i. 2 (note), and for ὅτι as introducing a citation see ii. 17. The passage quoted is Isa. xxix. 13. In the quotation Mt. and Mc. agree, whilst both differ from the LXX. in two points. (1) The LXX. gives (with M.T.): ἐγγίζει μοι ὁ λαὸς οὗτος ἐν τῷ στόματι αὐτοῦ καὶ ἐν τοῖς χείλεσιν αὐτῶν τιμώσιν με (B), or in the shorter text of ΝΑ, ἐγγ. μοι ὁ λ. οὗτος, ἐν τοῖς χ. αὐτῶν τιμώσιν με: in Mt., Mc. the sentence is abbreviated still further. (2) The LXX. has: διδάσκοντες ἐντάλματα ἀνθρώπων καὶ διδασκαλίας. Here there is no important variant in the MSS., yet Mt., Mc. omit καὶ and place διδασκαλίας before ἐντ., without approaching nearer to the M.T. which gives (R.V.) “their fear of me is a commandment of men which hath been taught them” (cf. Aq. Symm. Th., ἐγένετο τὸ

‘Ο λαὸς οὗτος τοῖς χείλεσίν με τιμᾷ, ἡ δὲ καρδία αὐτῶν § πόρρω ἀπέχει ἀπ’ ἐμοῦ. 7 μάτην δὲ σέβονται 7 § W<sup>a</sup> με, διδάσκοντες διδασκαλίας ἐντάλματα ἀνθρώπων.  
 8 ἀφέντες τὴν ἐντολὴν τοῦ θεοῦ κρατεῖτε τὴν παρά- 8  
 δοσιν τῶν ἀνθρώπων. 9 καὶ ἔλεγεν αὐτοῖς Καλῶς 9 ¶ W<sup>a</sup>

6 ο λαος ουτος BD b cfiq vg] ουτ. ο λ. ΝΑΛΧΓΔΠ al [ τιμα] αγαπα D a b c (cf. Clem-Al) τιμα και αγαπα aeth | απεχει] αφεστηκεν D απεστιν L 2<sup>ρο</sup> εστιν Clem-Al<sup>2</sup> est latt<sup>pl</sup> Clem-R Clem-Al<sup>1</sup> απεστη Δ 7 [ ενταλματα] pr και a c f (vg) | ανθρωπων] + βαπτισμους ξεστων και ποτηριων και αλλα παρομοια ποιειται τοιαυτα πολλα D 8 totum versum om syr<sup>sin</sup> | αφεντες] + γαρ ΑΧΓΠΣΦ al min<sup>pl</sup> f vg syrr go | ανθρωπων] + βαπτ. ξεστ. κ. ποτ. κ. αλλα (om αλλα A αλπαue) παρ. τοιαυτα πολλα ποιειτε (A)(F)(W<sup>a</sup>)ΧΓΠΣΦ al min<sup>pl</sup> f vg syrr go arm aeth 9 om και ελ. aut. 28 syr<sup>sin</sup>

φοβεῖσθαι αὐτοὺς ἐμὲ ἐντολὴ ἀνθρώπων διδακτή). St Paul (Col. ii. 22) seems to follow the LXX.; Justin has both forms (*dial.* 78, 140, see Resch, *Paralleltexte*, p. 170). The facts are perplexing, but a solution is perhaps to be sought in the direction to which reference has been made in the note on i. 2; see Hatch, *Essays*, p. 117 f. The readings of D and some of the Old Latin texts are interesting: see vv. ll.; with ἀγαπᾶ cf. Ps. lxxvii. (lxxviii.) 36. On the readings of Clement of Rome see *Intr. to O.T. in Greek*, p. 408, and on those of Clement of Alexandria, Barnard, *Biblical Text of Clement*, p. 30 f.

7. μάτην δὲ σέβονται με κτλ.] Μάτην δὲ represents γῆτη, which the LXX. read in place of M.T. 'גְּתָן; see Nestle in *Exp. T.* xi. p. 330f. The fruitlessness of the Pharisaic religion was due to its self-imposed and external character. Διδασκαλία, a rare word in Biblical Gk. (Prov.<sup>1</sup> Sir.<sup>2</sup> Rom.<sup>2</sup> Eph.<sup>1</sup> Col.<sup>1</sup>), except in the Pastoral Epp. (1 Tim.<sup>2</sup> 2 Tim.<sup>3</sup> Tit.<sup>4</sup>), is a doctrine, a definite piece or course of instruction, as contrasted with διδαχή, which is properly an act or line of teaching (i. 22, 27, iv. 2), though διδαχή sometimes (Rom. vi. 17, xvi. 17) is used in a sense scarcely distinguishable from διδασκαλία. The two words may be

studied in juxtaposition in Tit. i. 9 (see Hort, *Ecclesia*, p. 191). Ἐντάλματα is in apposition to διδ., ‘inasmuch as they teach doctrines (which are) commandments of men’; cf. vi. 43, ἦραν κλάσματα...πληρώματα (WM., p. 664 f.). The pl. perhaps points to the multiplicity of the details, and the absence of an underlying principle: contrast ἐντολὴ, v. 8 (note), and cf. Tit. i. 14, ἐντολὰς ἀνθρώπων.

8. ἀφέντες τὴν ἐντολὴν κτλ.] Perhaps a doublet of v. 9; Mt. has another form of the saying, corresponding more nearly with the next verse. The Law of God (ἡ ἐντολὴ, Ps. cxviii. (cxix.) 96, cf. 1 Tim. vi. 14, 2 Pet. ii. 21, iii. 2) is regarded as an unit; ἐντολὴ is properly a single commandment, but seems to be here used in opposition to ἐντάλματα (v. 7) for the Law as a whole, the manifold expression of the one principle of love (Rom. xiii. 8 ff., Gal. v. 14). The ἐντολὴ is here the Torah as contrasted with the Hala-chah. Τοῦ θεοῦ...τῶν ἀνθρώπων: the Elders were but Μִשְׁנָה (Isa. l.c.); the Torah was, as the Scribes themselves believed, of God. A like claim is made in the Talmud for the oral tradition (cf. Taylor, *Aboth*, p. 119 ff., Streane, *Chagigah*, p. vi.), but this does not seem to have been openly maintained in our Lord’s time.

ἀθετεῖτε τὴν ἐντολὴν τοῦ θεοῦ, ἵνα τὴν παράδοσιν  
ιούμων τηρήσητε. <sup>10</sup> Μωυσῆς γὰρ εἶπεν Τίμα τὸν  
πατέρα σου καὶ τὴν μητέρα σου· καὶ Ὁ κακολογῶν  
ΙΙ πατέρα ἢ μητέρα θανάτῳ τελευτάτῳ. <sup>11</sup> ὑμεῖς δὲ  
λέγετε Ἐὰν εἴπῃ ἄνθρωπος τῷ πατρὶ ἢ τῇ μητρὶ<sup>1</sup>  
Κορβάν (ὅ ἐστιν Δῶρον), ὃ ἐὰν ἔξ ἐμοῦ ὠφεληθῆς,

9 εντολην] βουλην Δ | τηρησητε (τηρητε B)] στησητε D I 28 209 2<sup>o</sup> statuatis lat<sup>v</sup>  
syrr<sup>sin pesh</sup> arm govid Cypr <sup>10</sup> Μωυσῆς ALXΓ al minpl <sup>11</sup> εαν] os av A 33 |  
om ανθρωπος 33 o ανθρ. 1071

9. καλῶς ἀθετεῖτε κτλ.] Καλῶς is in part ironical (cf. Jo. iv. 17), but see v. 6. For ἀθετεῖν see vi. 26; and for the sense it bears here (nullify, evacuate, reduce to a dead letter) cf. Isa. xxiv. 16 (οὐαὶ τοῖς ἀθετοῦσιν· οἱ ἀθετοῦντες τὸν νόμον), Gal. iii. 15 (ἀθ. διαθήκην), Heb. x. 28 (ἀθ. νόμον Μωυσέως). The oral law was professedly a 'fence' to the written law; in practice it took its place and even reversed its decisions. When the two were in competition, the tradition was preferred: cf. the frank saying of R. Jochanan quoted by Dr Taylor *l.c.*, "words of Soferim...are more beloved than words of Torah." With the 'Western' reading στήσητε cf. Exod. vi. 4, 2 Esdr. xix. 8, Heb. x. 9.

10. Μωυσῆς γὰρ εἶπεν κτλ.] An instance of the tendency censured in v. 9. Mt. ὁ γὰρ θεὸς εἶπεν. The first citation is from the Divine Ten Words, incorporated in 'Moses', i.e. the Pentateuch; cf. 2 Cor. iii. 15, ηνίκα ἀν ἀναγνώσκηται Μωυσῆς. The passages, which follow the LXX. with some slight variations, are from Exod. xx. 12 (Deut. v. 16), xxi. 16 (17); cf. Victor: ἐκ δύο νομίμων ἀπαιτεῖ τὴν εἰς γονέας τιμὴν κατὰ Βούλησιν θεοῦ, ἐνὸς μὲν τοῦ κελεύοντος οὕτω ποιεῖν, ἐτέρου δὲ τοῦ τιμωρούμένου τὸν ἐναντίως ποιοῦντα. In the second passage ὁ κακολογῶν (λέχεω) is scarcely (as Vg., Wycliffe, and the other English versions, exc. R.V.) 'he that curseth';

though λέχεω has this meaning (e.g. in I Regn. xvii. 43 where the LXX. renders κατηράσατο), yet in Deut. xxvii. 16, which closely corresponds with Exod. xxi. 16, πέλεχος is represented by ὁ ἀτιμάζων (cf. Guillemand on Mt. xv. 4). The correction is clearly important in view of the Lord's argument. Θανάτῳ τελευτάτῳ (Mc. Mt.) = תְּמוֹת תִּמְתָּה; so codd. AF in Exod. xxi. 16 (17), where cod. B has τελευτήσει θ.

11. ὑμεῖς δὲ λέγετε κτλ.] You (emph.) set yourselves against Moses (cf. Jo. v. 45 ff.), for your tradition (v. 9) permits, and under certain circumstances requires, a son to dis honour his parents. Ἐὰν εἴπῃ ἄνθρ., 'suppose a man shall say,' Mt. ὁς ἀν εἴπῃ. The apodosis would naturally be, as in Mt., οὐ μὴ τιμήσει (see Burton, § 260), but Mc. cuts the sentence short in order to proceed with the Lord's comment on the rule (οὐκέτε ἀφίετε κτλ., v. 12).

κορβάν (ὅ ἐστιν δῶρον)] Another Marcan Aramaism (but see Dalman, *Gr.* p. 139 n.), with its explanatory Greek; cf. v. 41. Δῶρον represents נֶבֶל Lev.<sup>35</sup>, Num.<sup>39</sup>, 2 Esdr.<sup>1</sup> (נֶבֶל); the transliteration does not occur in the LXX. or apparently in the later Gk. versions of the O.T., or again in the N.T., but cf. Joseph. *ant.* iv. 4. 4, κορβάν...δῶρον δὲ τοῦτο σημαίνει κατὰ Ἑλλήνων γλῶσσαν: c. *Ap.* i. 167, τὸν καλούμενον ὄρκον κορβάν (citing Theo-

<sup>12</sup> οὐκέτι ἀφίετε αὐτὸν οὐδὲν ποιῆσαι τῷ πατρὶ ἢ τῇ <sup>12</sup>  
μητρὶ, <sup>13</sup> ἀκυροῦντες § τὸν λόγον τοῦ θεοῦ τῇ παρα- <sup>13</sup> § n

12 οὐκέτι] pr καὶ ΑΧΓΠΣΦ al min<sup>pl</sup> f vg syrr arm go pr οὐ Ι | om τω πατρι η τη μητρι Δ | τω πατρι]+αυτου ΑΧΠ al min<sup>pl</sup> | τη μητρι]+αυτου ΑΧΓΠ al min<sup>pl</sup> 13 τον λογον] την εντολην i | τη παραδοσει υμων]+τη μωρα Da b c f f i n q syr<sup>hel(mg)</sup> δια την παραδοσιν υμ. 1071

phrastus). A *qorban* is a consecrated gift; the Temple treasury is called *κορβανᾶς* in Mt. xxvii. 6, Joseph. B. J. ii. 9. 4: cf. Cyprian, *de op. et el.* 15, “Dominicum celebrare te credis quae corban omnino non respicis?” In Syriac *ܩܼܾܒܼܾܻ* is the Eucharist itself, as the Christian offering. The Scribes held that the mere act of declaring any property to be *qorban* alienated it from the service of the person addressed; cf. Edersheim, *Life*, ii. p. 19: “it must not be thought that the pronunciation of the votive word *qorban*.. necessarily dedicated a thing to the Temple; the meaning might be that in regard to the person or persons named the thing [so] termed was to be considered as if it were *qorban*, laid on the altar and put entirely out of their reach.” A son who took this way of relieving himself from the support of a father or mother was not only justified in his unfilial conduct, but actually prohibited from returning to his duty. Victor: εἴτις ἀτιμίᾳ γονέων θυσίαν ὑπόσχοιτο, λέγων θεῷ ποιήσειν δῶρα καὶ θυσίας ἡ πατρὶ παρέχειν ὁφεῖται, τοῦτο[ν] λέγετε μηδὲ ἔξειναι τιμῆσαι τὸν πατέρα. Origen (*in Matt. t. xi. 9*) mentions a somewhat similar case which had been reported to him by a Jew: ἐσθ ὅτε, φησίν, οἱ δανεισταὶ δυστραπέλοις περιπίπτοντες χρεώστας καὶ δυναμένοις μὲν μὴ βουλομένοις δὲ ἀποδιδόναι τὸ χρέος ἀνετίθεσαν τὸ ὁφελόμενον εἰς τὸν τῶν πενήντων λόγον—a proceeding which prevented the debtor's escape. For ὁφελεῖσθαι, pass., see v. 26, Heb. xiii. 9; ἐκ points to the source of the expected profit, cf. WM., p. 458. The Vg. gives the general sense of ὁ ἐὰν ἔξ ἐμοῦ ὁφε-

ληθῆσ—quodcumque ex me tibi profuerit; cf. Euth.: ἀφιέρωται τῷ θεῷ ὁ ἀν ἔξ ἐμοῦ κερδανεῖς. The son speaks from the parent's point of view, which regards his support as practically secure: ‘the assistance which thou lookest to receive from me is now irrevocably alienated.’ For the Rabbinical *formulae* see J. Lightfoot and Schöttgen *ad l.*

12. οὐκέτι ἀφίετε κτλ.] Mt. οὐ μὴ τιμήσει: see last note. Origen: τῆς πρὸς τοὺς γονεῖς τιμῆς μέρος ἦν καὶ τὸ κοινωνεῖν αὐτοῖς τῶν βιωτικῶν χρεών. Comp. the English Ch. catechism: “my duty is...to love, honour, and succour my father and mother.” In illustration of this use of *τιμᾶν* Jerome produces i Tim. v. 3, 17; cf. Theod. Mops. *ad l.*: “honora, hoc est, diligentiam illis adhibe.” With οὐκέτι οὐδέν cf. v. 3, ix. 8, xii. 34, xiv. 25, xv. 5. The ὁ ἐὰν of v. 11 excludes in the hypothetical case all hope of material assistance from the moment the *qorban* is uttered. Ποιεῖν τί τινι, sc. ἀγαθόν, cf. v. 19, 20; the phrase may have, as in English, an opposite sense, cf. ix. 13. Thph. points out that the Scribes may have often been not disinterested in their judgement: αὐτοὶ δὲ τὰ ἀφιερωθέντα κατήσθιον (cf. xii. 40).

13. ἀκυροῦντες κτλ.] Ἀκυροῦν is stronger than ἀθετεῖν v. 9; but he who habitually ἀθετεῖ, practically ἀκυροῦ, invalidates and, so far as in him lies, repeals a law. The distinction is well seen in Gal. iii. 15, 17, κεκυρωμένην διαθήκην οὐδέλις ἀθετεῖ...νόμος οὐκ ἀκυροῖ. Cf. ἀκυρον ποιεῖν in Prov. i. 25 (=עֲמֹד), v. 7 (=רְאֵי): ἀκυροῦν occurs in i Esdr., 1, 4 Macc., and is

δόσει ὑμῶν ἥ παρεδώκατε· καὶ παρόμοια τοιαῦτα πολλὰ ποιεῖτε.

14     <sup>14</sup>Καὶ προσκαλεσάμενος πάλιν τὸν ὄχλον ἔλεγεν  
15 αὐτοῖς Ἀκούσατέ μου πάντες καὶ σύνετε. <sup>15</sup>οὐδὲν  
ἔστιν ἔξωθεν τοῦ ἀνθρώπου εἰσπορευόμενον εἰς αὐτὸν

13 οἱ η παρεδώκατε syr<sup>sin</sup> ην π. 1071     14 παλιν NBDLΔ b ffin q vg syr<sup>hel(mg)</sup>  
me aeth] παντα ΑΧΓΠΣΦ al min<sup>pl</sup> f syrr<sup>sin pesh hcl (txt)</sup> arm go | ακούσατε BDHL 2<sup>pe</sup>  
al<sup>base</sup>] ακούετε ΝΑΧΓΔΠΣΦ al min<sup>pl</sup> | om μου Δ | om παντες NLΔ al me | συνετε  
BHLΔ 238] συνιετε ΝΑΧΓΠΣΦ al min<sup>fere omn</sup>

fairly common in Aq.; in the N.T. it is limited to the context (Mc. Mt.), and Gal. *l.c.*

*τῇ παραδόσει ὑ. ἥ παρεδώκατε]* Apparently the dat. of instrument, but cf. Mt. διὰ τὴν παράδοσιν, ‘for the sake of your tradition.’ For παραδίδονται παράδοσιν see WM., p. 282, and for ἥ, WM., p. 202 f. The ‘Western’ text glosses again, adding *τῇ μωρᾷ*; see vv. ll. *Παρόμοια τοιαῦτα*, ‘such like things’; the Vg. keeps the tautology, *similia huiusmodi*. *Παρόμοιος* is ἄπ. λεγ. in Biblical Gk., though frequent in class. and late writers; for its exact meaning cf. Pollux cited by Wetstein: ὁ γὰρ παρόμοιος παρ’ ὀλίγον ὅμοιος ἔστιν. Euth. adds the wholesome reflexion: φοβηθῶμεν οὖν καὶ ἡμεῖς, ὁ τοῦ Χριστοῦ λαός, μὴ καὶ καθ’ ἡμῶν ταῦτα βῆθείη.

#### 14—23. TEACHING BASED UPON THE QUESTION (Mt. xv. 10—20).

14. *καὶ προσκαλεσάμενος πάλιν τὸν ὄχλον]* The question of v. 5 had been put and answered at a time of comparative privacy, which the Twelve had used for snatching a hasty meal. But the principle which had been asserted was too important to be dropped. It touched the heart of things, and was necessary for all. For προσκαλεῖσθαι see note on iii. 13; πάλιν (omitted by Mt.) points to an unnoticed dispersion of the Gennesaret crowd (vi. 55 f.). For ἀκούσατέ μου π. καὶ σύνετε Mt. has less pre-

cisely ἀκούετε καὶ σύνετε: cf. WM., p. 393 f., and contrast Mc. iv. 23, ix. 7, Eph. v. 17.

15. *οὐδὲν ἔστιν ἔξωθεν κτλ.]* A fundamental canon, differentiating the Kingdom of God from Pharisaic Judaism. Victor: ἐντεῦθεν ὁ καινὸς ἄρχεται νόμος ὁ κατὰ τὸ πνεῦμα. The merely external cannot defile man’s spiritual nature (Euth., οὐδὲ γὰρ ἄπτεται τῆς ψυχῆς)—the converse of the principle that the merely external cannot purify it (Mt. xxiii. 25, 26, Heb. ix. 9 ff.). For οὐδὲν ἔξωθεν Mt. substitutes the explanatory οὐ τὸ εἰσερχόμενον εἰς τὸ στόμα, ‘nothing in the way of food’; and similarly to τὰ ἐκπορευόμενα he adds ἐκ τοῦ στόματος. Even when thus limited the canon goes much further than a protest against the unwritten law of Scribism; its logical effect was to abrogate the Levitical distinction of meats clean and unclean. In defence of this distinction the Maccabean heroes had given their lives (1 Macc. i. 62 f., 4 Macc. vii. 6), and a Jewish crowd, even in Galilee, would probably have resented the principle now asserted by the Lord, had they understood it. But it was not understood even by the Apostles until long afterwards, Acts x. 14 ff.; for the time the Lord was content to drop the seed and leave it to germinate. *Κοινῶν* is used in the N.T. only in the technical sense (v. 2 note), though the Vg., which renders it *coinc-*

δὲ δύναται κοινωσαι αὐτόν· ἀλλὰ τὰ ἐκ τοῦ ἀνθρώπου  
 ἐκπορευόμενά ἔστιν τὰ κοινοῦντα τὸν ἀνθρωπον.  
<sup>17</sup> καὶ ὅτε εἰσῆλθεν εἰς οἶκον ἀπὸ τοῦ ὄχλου, ἐπη- 17  
 ρώτων αὐτὸν οἱ μαθηταὶ αὐτοῦ τὴν παραβολήν.  
<sup>18</sup> καὶ λέγει αὐτοῖς Οὕτως καὶ ὑμεῖς ἀσύνετοί ἔστε; 18  
 οὐ νοεῖτε ὅτι πᾶν τὸ ἔξωθεν εἰσπορευόμενον εἰς τὸν

<sup>15</sup> ο δυναται κοινωσαι] το κοινουν B | τα εκ του ανθρ. εκπ. ΝΒΔΛΔ 33 2<sup>ρο</sup> latt me go aeth] τα εκπ. απ αυτου ΑΧΓΠΙ al syrr pesh hel arm | εστιν 2<sup>ο</sup>] pr εκεινα ΑΔΧΓΠΣΦ al min<sup>pl</sup> latt | τον ανθρωπον]+(16) ει τις εχει (ο εχων 1071 g) ωτα ακουειν ακουετω ΑΔΧΓΔ<sup>corr</sup>ΣΦ al min<sup>pl</sup> latt syrr arm go aeth (om ΝΒΔΛ\* 28 me) 17 οικον] pr τον ΝΔ min<sup>pauc</sup> την οικιαν D 2<sup>ρο</sup> al pauc | την παραβολην] περι της παραβολης ΑΧΓΠΣΦ min<sup>pl</sup> arm go 18 ον] ουπω ΝΛΥΔ 1 604 al nonn f syr<sup>hel</sup>(mg) | om εξωθεν Δ syr<sup>sln</sup> | om εις τον ανθρ. Ν

*quinare* in Mt. xv. and on its first occurrence in Mc., retains the O.L. *communicare* (Rönsch, *Itala*, p. 354) throughout the rest of this chapter; cf. the confusion of *ἐκοινωσας*, *ἐκοινώησας* in the mss. of 4 Macc. *l.c.*

ἀλλὰ τὰ ἐκ τοῦ ἀνθρώπου κτλ.] The positive side of the canon; the source of human defilement is internal to the nature of man. ‘Ο ἀνθρωπος, as in ii. 27, Jo. ii. 25, I Cor. ii. 11, =man, i.e. men regarded as a generic unity. Τὰ κοινοῦντα: on the art. with the predicate see WM., p. 141 f. For *v.* 16 of the R.T. see vv. ll. It has been introduced as the proper sequel to *v.* 14; cf. iv. 9.

17. καὶ ὅτε εἰσῆλθεν κτλ.] A third stage in the incident. To the crowd the new law was stated in a parabolic form; to the disciples it is now interpreted (cf. iv. 10 ff., 33 f.). *Eis oikov*, whether Simon's house at Capernaum (i. 29, ii. 1, &c.), or the house of some disciple in one of the Gennesaret villages, does not appear; in either case it supplied a temporary rest. For *ἀπό* ‘away from’ see WM., p. 463. This detail is wanting in Mt., who on the other hand is alone in attributing the question of the disciples to Peter. Whether from his position (*πρῶτος*,

Mt. x. 2) or from natural readiness to speak, St Peter seems to have been the usual spokesman, cf. Mc. viii. 29 ff., ix. 5, x. 28, xi. 21, xiii. 3, Mt. xv. 15, Lc. viii. 45, xxii. 8. With *ἐπηρώτων* ...*τὴν παραβολὴν* cf. iv. 10; Mt. εἰπεν Φράσον ἡμῖν τὴν π.: the ‘parable’ is here little more than a proverbial saying, as in Lc. iv. 23. See the conversation which precedes this request in Mt. (xv. 12—14).

18. οὕτως καὶ ὑμεῖς δούνετοι ἔστε;] For οὕτως Mt. has ἀκμήν=ἔτι: οὕτως is *sic* (Vg.) or *siccine* (Field) rather than *tam*; in Gal. iii. 3, Heb. xii. 21 the juxtaposition of the adv. with the adj. decides for the latter meaning. Καὶ ὑμεῖς, ‘ye (emph.) also’ (Jo. vi. 68) as well as the crowd (cf. iv. 11). *Ασύνετος* looks back to *μὴ συνίωσιν* (Isa. vi. 9, cited Mc. iv. 12): the word occurs also in Rom. i. 21, 31, x. 19. The *ἀσύνετος* is the man who lacks the discernment (*ἡ δὲ σύνεσις κριτική*, Arist. *Eth. Nic.* vi. 11, cited by Lightfoot on Col. i. 9) which comes from the due use of the illuminated intelligence; hence he is near of kin to the *ἀνόητος* (Lc. xxiv. 25, Gal. *l.c.*; cf. Mc. viii. 17, 2 Tim. ii. 7). Thus *δούνετοι* prepares for *οὐ νοεῖτε* which immediately follows (Mt. Mc.).

19 ἀνθρωπον οὐ δύναται αὐτὸν κοινῶσαι, <sup>19</sup> ὅτι οὐκ εἰσπορεύεται αὐτοῦ εἰς τὴν καρδίαν ἀλλ' εἰς τὴν κοιλίαν, καὶ εἰς τὸν ἀφεδρῶνα ἐκπορεύεται; — καθαρίζων πάντα 20 τὰ βρώματα. <sup>20</sup> ἔλεγεν δὲ ὅτι Τὸ ἐκ τοῦ ἀνθρώπου

18 οὐ δύναται αυτον κοινωσαι] ον κοινοι τον ανθρωπον **N** **syr<sup>sin</sup>** 19 οτι ουκ] ου γαρ Dabinq | εισπορευεται] εισερχεται D | om εις τ. αφεδρωνa **syr<sup>sin</sup>** arm | αφεδρωνa οχετον D | εκπορευεται] εκβαλλεται **NΦ** min<sup>pauc</sup> **syr<sup>sin</sup>** εξερχεται D | καθαριζων **NABE** FGHLSDA 1 13 28 69 124 1071 2<sup>po</sup> al Or] καθαριζον KMUVGPIΣΦ min<sup>pl</sup> καθαριζει D go και καθαριζει z<sup>scr</sup> arm 20 το...εκπορευομενον] quae exeunt latt

18—19. οὐ δύναται...εκπορεύεται] Mc. only. The words state explicitly the principle involved in v. 15. ‘Pollution’ (*τὸ κοινοῦσθαι*) in the sense contemplated by the Scribes can be predicated only of that which affects man’s moral nature. There was no question between Christ and the Scribes as to external cleanliness, for their censure rested purely on religious grounds. It is therefore of spiritual pollution only that He speaks. The two spheres of human life, the physical and the spiritual, are here distinct; to confuse them, as the Scribes did, is to ignore the commonest facts of daily experience. ‘Αφεδρών is the class. ἄφοδος or ἀπόπτατος, Vg. *secessus*; the word occurs in Biblical Gk. only in this context (Mt. Mc.); the LXX. use ἡ ἄφεδρος in another connexion (Lev. xii. 9), employing λυτρών in this sense (4 Regn. x. 27). Cod. D substitutes ὄχετός in Mc., retaining ἄφ. in Mt.

Origen in *Mt.* t. xi. 14 has an interesting reference to the Eucharist: *καὶ τὸ ἀγιαζόμενον βρῶμα...κατ’ αὐτὸν μὲν τὸ ὑλικὸν εἰς τὴν κοιλίαν χωρεῖ, κατὰ δὲ τὴν ἐπιγινομένην αὐτῷ εὐχῆν... ὠφελιμον γίνεται...οὐχ ἡ ὑλη τοῦ ἄρτου ἀλλ’ ὁ ἐπ’ αὐτῷ εἰρημένος λόγος ἐστὶν ὁ ὠφελῶν τὸν μὴ ἀναξίως τοῦ κυρίου ἐσθίοντα αὐτόν.*

19. καθαρίζων πάντα τὰ βρώματα] A note added by a teacher or editor who has realised that in the preceding words the Lord had really abrogated

the distinction between clean and unclean food. The true reading and interpretation were known to Origen (*in Mt.* t. xi. 12, *κατὰ τὸν Μᾶρκον ἔλεγε τῶντα ὁ σωτήρ καθαρίζων πάντα τὰ βρώματα, δηλῶν ὅτι οὐ κοινούμεθα μὲν ἐσθίοντες ἡ Ιουδαῖοι φασι κτλ.*), who is followed by Gregory Thaum. and Chrysostom: see Field, *Notes*, p. 32. This interesting reference to the interpretation put upon the Lord’s words by the Apostolic age (cf. *Acts* x. 15 ἡ ὁ θεὸς ἐκαθάρισεν) is lost in the R.T. (see vv. ll.). In support of *καθαρίζων* see Scrivener-Miller, ii. p. 336 f., and for a defence of *καθαρίζον* Burges-Miller, *Causes of Corruption*, p. 61 f.; but few students of St Mark will follow Mr Miller in rejecting *καθαρίζων* on the ground that its distance from λέγει (v. 18) is inconsistent with the style of this Gospel. Field *ad loc.* rightly points to iii. 30 for another instance of a brief explanation parenthetically added by Mc. For the interpretation which the supporters of the R.T. propose to give to *καθαρίζον* cf. WM., pp. 669, 778; the view that *καθαρίζων* is a *nom. pendens* in agreement with ὁ ἀφεδρών scarcely calls for consideration.

20. τὸ ἐκ τοῦ ἀνθρώπου κτλ.] See v. 15 b. Mt. narrows the statement (*ἐκ τοῦ στόματος* for *ἐκ τοῦ ἀνθρώπου*), and anticipates the explanation (*ἐκ τῆς καρδίας ἐξέρχεται*). ‘Εκεῖνο, ‘that,’ in contrast with τὰ ἔξωθεν (v. 15); see Blass, *Gr.* p. 172.

§ ἐκπορευόμενον, ἐκεῖνο κοινοὶ τὸν ἀνθρωπὸν· <sup>21 ἔσωθεν 21 § N</sup> γὰρ ἐκ τῆς καρδίας τῶν ἀνθρώπων οἱ διαλογισμοὶ οἱ κακοὶ ἐκπορεύονται, πορνεῖαι, κλοπαί, φόνοι,

<sup>20 εκεῖνα D latt</sup>      <sup>21, 22 πορνεῖαι κλοπαὶ φονοὶ μοιχεῖαι NBLΔ 604 me aeth]</sup>

πορνεῖαι κλέμματα μοιχεῖαι φονοὶ D μοιχεῖαι πορνεῖαι φονοὶ κλοπαὶ ANXΓΠΣΦ d minpl  
f vg syrr<sup>sing</sup> μοιχ. κλοπ. πορν. φον. a b c d f f i q μοιχ. πορν. κλοπ. φον. syr<sup>posh</sup> arm

21—22. ἔσωθεν γὰρ ἐκ τῆς καρδίας κτλ.] <sup>"Εσωθεν</sup> answers to <sup>"ἔξωθεν</sup> (v. 15, 18); for the contrast in this reference see Mt. xxiii. 25, 26 (*τὸ ἐντός, τὸ ἐκτός*), Lc. xi. 39, 40, 2 Cor. iv. 16 (*ὁ ζέω ἀνθρωπὸς, ὁ ζῶων*). Bede's remark needs modification, but is just on the whole: "animaee principale non iuxta Platonem in cerebro, sed iuxta Christum in corde est." For *καρδία* see ii. 6, 8, iii. 5, vi. 52, vii. 6; the seat of the moral nature is in man the source of moral defilement. The Lord states the fact without explaining it; into the question of the origin of evil in man He does not enter. His teaching stands midway between the O.T. doctrine of sin (e.g. Ps. li. 5, Isa. liii. 6, Jer. xvii. 9, cf. Schultz, ii. p. 292 ff.), and the Pauline doctrine (cf. SH., *Romans*, p. 143 ff.). *Διαλογισμοὶ*, thoughts, elsewhere chiefly in Lc. and Paul.

The list of sins which follows is twice as full as in Mt., who, while adding *ψευδομαρτυρίᾳ*, omits *πλεονεξίᾳ, πονηρίᾳ, δόλος, ἀσέλγεια, ὄφθαλμὸς πονηρός, ὑπερηφανία, ἀφροσύνη* (Euth.: *οὐ δὲ Μᾶρκος ἀπαριθμεῖται καὶ ἔτερα, πλεονεξίαν, πονηρίαν, δόλον, ἀσέλγειαν κτλ.*). Moreover, in those which are common to both the order differs: Mt. seems to follow that of the Decalogue as arranged in the M.T. and in cod. A of the LXX., whilst Mc. is in partial accord with cod. B (*οὐ κλέψεις, οὐ φονεύσεις*). While both lists begin with the *διαλογισμοὶ*, in the specification which follows Mt. limits himself to external sins, whilst Mc. passes from these to mental acts or habits (*πλεονεξία...ἀφροσύνη*). It

is instructive to compare with both the catalogues of sins in Sap. xiv. 25 f., Rom. i. 29 ff., Gal. v. 20 f., Eph. iv. 31, v. 3 ff., Col. iii. 5 ff., *Didache* 5, Hermas *mand.* viii. 5; cf. Harnack, *T. u. U.* v. i. p. 86 f. The last two shew the influence of the Gospel lists, whilst Wisdom has possibly suggested some of its details; but in the Pauline passages we strike a new vein; such Gentile sins as *εἰδωλολατρεία, φαρμακία*, and such peculiarly Greek vices as *κώμοι, εὐτραπελία, αἰσχρολογία*, are naturally not represented in our Lord's enumeration.

21. οἱ διαλογισμοὶ οἱ κακοὶ] Mt. διαλογισμοὶ πονηροί. The commission of any sin is preceded by a deliberation, however rapid, in the mind of the sinner; cf. ii. 6 ff., Lc. v. 22, Rom. i. 21, James ii. 4. On διαλ. see Hatch, *Essays*, p. 8. Οἱ δ., such inward deliberations regarded as a class of mental acts; the addition of οἱ κακοὶ marks off a part of the class, such as are evil in themselves (*κακοὶ*), or mischievous in their effects (*πονηροὶ*)—see Trench, *syn.* xi.

πορνεῖαι κτλ.] The plurals indicate successive acts of sin, as they emerge from the inner source of human corruption; the more subtle tendencies to evil which follow are in the singular (v. 22). Cf. Gal. v. 20 *ζῆλος, θυμοὶ*, the spirit of rivalry, 'outbursts of wrath' (Lightfoot), and see WM., p. 220. *Κλοπαὶ*: cod. D, *κλέμματα*, cf. Herm. *l.c.* For this combination of sins cf. Hos. iv. 2 *φόνος καὶ κλοπὴ καὶ μοιχεία κέχυται ἐπὶ τῆς γῆς*.

22 ἡμιχεῖαι, πλεονεξίαι, πονηρίαι, δόλος, ἀσέλγεια,  
οὐφθαλμὸς πονηρός, βλασφημία, ὑπερηφανία, ἀφρο-

22 πλεονεξια δολος πονηρια D | δολοι πονηραι ασελγειαι 2<sup>o</sup> | δολοι ασελγειαι arm

22. πλεονεξίαι] Vg. *avaritiae*; rather, impulses or acts of self-seeking. Cf. Plat. *resp.* ii. 359 σ τὴν πλεονεξίαν, ὁ πάσα φύσις διώκειν πέφυκεν ὡς ἀγαθόν. This commonest corruption of human nature is not spared by our Lord (Lc. xii. 15), or by St Paul (Col. iii. 5 τὴν πλ. ἡτις ἐστὶν εἰδωλολατρία): the πλεονέκτης is classed by the latter with the πόρος (1 Cor. v. 10, 11, Eph. v. 5), the κλέπτης, the μέθυσος (1 Cor. vi. 10), as his vice is here mentioned in the same breath with φόνοι and ποιησίαι; see also 2 Pet. ii. 14.

πονηρίαι] Vg. *nequitiae*, purposes or acts of malicious wickedness, cf. Mt. xxii. 18, Lc. xi. 39; in Rom. i. 29 πονηρία is in the same company as here (*πονηρίᾳ πλεονεξίᾳ κακίᾳ*).

δόλος] A besetting sin of Orientals, repeatedly illustrated and condemned in the O.T. (e.g. Gen. xxvii. 35, Deut. xxvii. 24, Ps. ix. 28 (x. 7)), and characteristic of our Lord's opponents (Mc. xiv. 1); its absence was a note of the true Israelite and of Christ Himself (Ps. xxiii. (xxiv.) 4, xxxi. (xxxii.) 2, Jo. i. 48, 1 Pet. ii. 22). It appears in Rom. i. 29, but not in the lists of sins which occur in Epistles addressed to Churches in which Gentiles largely predominated (Gal. Eph. Col.).

ἀσέλγεια] Vg. *impudicitia*. Cf. Gal. v. 20 πορνεία ἀκαθαρτία ἀσέλγεια, on which Lightfoot remarks: "a man may be ἀκαθαρτος and hide his sin; he does not become ἀσέλγης, until he shocks public decency." The word, which is class, finds no place in the LXX. exc. in Sap. xiv. 26, 3 Macc. ii. 26, where Gentile habits are in view; in the N.T. it is used in the same connexion (Eph. iv. 19, 1 Pet. iv. 3). Here the reference is probably to the dissolute life of the Herodian court, and of the Greek cities of Galilee and

the Decapolis; if δόλος characterised the Jew, his Greek neighbour was yet more terribly branded by ἀσέλγεια.

οὐφθαλμὸς πονηρός] On the Hebrew belief in the evil eye see Lightfoot on Gal. iii. 1. The ἀνήρ βάσκανος (שָׁנָן עֲנָן Prov. xxviii. 22) was a dreaded enemy (Sir. xiv. 10, xxxiv. 13 (xxxii. 14, 15) κακὸν οὐφθαλμὸς πονηρότερον οὐφθαλμοῦ τί ἔκτισται;). Hence 'the evil eye' became a synonym for jealousy, or a jealous grudge; cf. Deut. xv. 9 קַח־בְּעֵנֶךְ בְּעֵנֶךְ רָעָה שָׁנָן, LXX., μὴ ... πονηρεύσῃται ὁ οὐφθαλμός σου τῷ ἀδελφῷ σου, i.e. 'lest thou grudge him his due'; Tob. iv. 7 (B), μὴ φθονεσάτω σου ὁ οὐφθαλμός ἐν τῷ ποιεῖν σε ἐλεγμοσύνην: cf. Mt. vi. 23, xx. 15. Οὐφθαλμός is thus akin to φθόνος, but wider in meaning; the self-seeking which, not satisfied with appropriating more than its share (πλεονεξία), grudges and, where it can, withholds, diverts, or spoils that which falls to another.

βλασφημία] Mt. βλασφημία. Slander, detraction; cf. Eph. iv. 31, Col. iii. 8, 1 Tim. vi. 4. The Lord may have had in view the slanders perpetrated against Himself (Mc. iii. 28, cf. Mt. xii. 32).

ὑπερηφανία] Theophr. *char.* 24 ἔστι δὲ ὁ καταφρόνησις τις πλὴν αὐτοῦ τῶν ἄλλων—a Pharisaic sin (Lc. xviii. 9). The noun, though common in the LXX., occurs here only in the N.T., but the ὑπερήφανος appears in company with the ὑβριστής and the ἀλαζών in Rom. i. 30, and with the ἀλαζών and the βλάσφημος in 2 Tim. iii. 2; see Trench, *syn.* xxxix., and cf. Theod. *Mops.* on 2 Tim. l.c. ἀλαζόνες, καυχώμενοι ἔχειν ἢ μὴ ἔχουσιν ὑπερήφανοι, μεγάλα φρονοῦντες ἐπὶ τοῖς οὖσιν. The sin of the latter lies not so much in exaggerating their endowments, as in claiming for themselves the merit of them. In

σύνη· <sup>23</sup>πάντα ταῦτα τὰ πονηρὰ ἐσωθεν ἐκπορεύεται 23  
καὶ κοινοὶ τὸν ἄνθρωπον.

<sup>24§</sup>Ἐκεῖθεν δὲ ἀναστὰς ἀπῆλθεν εἰς τὰ ὅρια Τύρου 24 § <sup>syr<sup>hier</sup></sup>

<sup>23</sup> om παντα L | om τα πονηρα I 604 2<sup>po</sup> alpauc | εκπορευονται GKNΔ 28 736 γε  
alpauc      24 καὶ εκεῖθεν αναστας A(D)NΧΓΠΙ al minfereomn | απῆλθεν] εξηλθεν LΔ  
ηλθεν M 28 al syr<sup>poesh</sup> arm Or | ορια ΝBDLΔ I 13 28 69 209 346 604 2<sup>po</sup> Or] μεθορια  
ΑΝΧΓΠΙΣΦ al minpl

Biblical Gk. the opposite of ὑπερήφανος is *ταπεινός* (ὢ), see Prov. iii. 34, James iv. 6, 1 Pet. v. 5.

*ἀφροσύνη*] The list culminates in a word which may seem to imply a relatively low degree of moral culpability. But *ἀφρων* like *ἀσύνετος* is a word of strong censure on the lips of Christ; see Lc. xi. 40, xii. 20 (cf. *μωρός*, Mt. v. 22, vii. 26, xxv. 2). His *ἀφρων* is the *לְבַנָּה* of Ps. xiii. (xiv.) 1, and the *לִילֵי* or *לִסְסָבָן* of Proverbs; cf. Schultz, ii. p. 284. *Ἀφροσύνη* is in its Biblical use moral and not intellectual only—the shortsightedness and wrongheadedness of unbelief and sin; “a rooted incapacity to discern moral and religious relations, leading to an intolerant repudiation in practice of the claims which they impose” (Driver, on Deut. xxii. 21). Euth. is substantially right: *ἀφρ.* δὲ *κυρίως τὸ μὴ εἰδέναι τὸν θεόν.*

23. *πάντα ταῦτα κτλ.*] These vicious acts and principles constitute a real profanation of human nature, and they come from man himself. Euth. : *ἀρχαὶ γὰρ τούτων αἱ ἐπιθυμήσεις ἡσαν η καρδία πηγάζειν εἴωθεν.* Mt. adds *τὸ δὲ ἀνίπτοις χερσὶν φαγεῖν οὐ κανοὶ τὸν ἄνθρωπον*, but it seems more after our Lord’s manner to stop abruptly when He has affirmed a great principle, than to revert to the circumstances which led Him to enunciate it.

24—30. IN THE REGION OF TYRE AND SIDON. THE DAUGHTER OF A SYROPHOENICIAN WOMAN DELIVERED FROM AN EVIL SPIRIT (Mt. xv. 21—28).

24. *ἐκεῖθεν δὲ ἀναστὰς ἀπῆλθεν]* Mt. καὶ ἐξελθὼν ἐκεῖθεν ὁ Ἰησος φασεν.

The departure was a retreat. Not only were the Pharisees scandalised (Mt. xv. 12) by His denunciation of the unwritten Law, but the discourse in the synagogue of Capernaum, which immediately followed or preceded it (Jo. vi. 59 ff.), had alienated friends, and Capernaum was again hostile and perhaps unsafe; cf. iii. 7, vi. 31. The policy of withdrawal from danger was criticised by Celsus (Orig. c. *Cels.* i. 65 = *Philoc.* p. 107); Origen replies: *διδάσκων τοὺς μαθητὰς* (Mt. x. 23) *παράδειγμα αὐτοῖς ἐγένετο εὐσταθῶντος βίου οἰκονομοῦντος μὴ εἰκῇ μηδὲ ἀκάρως καὶ ἀλόγως ὅμοστε χωρεῖν τοῖς κινδύνοις.* The earliest withdrawal, as Celsus pointed out, was during the Infancy (Mt. ii. 13 ff.); the Lord’s life was threatened from the first. If He safeguarded it, the motive was that it might be freely given in due time (Jo. x. 11, 15, 18). It was saved for the Cross.

*εἰς τὰ ὅρια Τ. καὶ Σ.]* On *ὅρια* see v. 17. The word may mean either the boundaries or borders of a district, or the territory of a city; see for the former sense Gen. x. 19, xlvi. 21, and for the latter Num. xxxv. 26, Jos. xiii. 26, and cf. BDB., s. vv. *בָּוֶן*, *בָּוֶן*. Here, if we accept the reading of ΝΑΒ, *τὰ ὅρια Τ. κ. Σ.* (cf. iii. 8) appear to be equivalent to the entire district (Mt. μέρη) dominated by the two cities, i.e. the coast of Phoenicia. Politically Phoenicia had formed part of Syria since the days of Pompey: geographically and ecclesiastically it remained distinct (Acts xi. 19, xii. 20f., xxi. 2, Blass). According to Josephus

[καὶ Σιδῶνος]. καὶ εἰσελθὼν εἰς οἰκίαν οὐδένα ἥθελεν  
 25 γνῶναι, καὶ οὐκ ἥδυνάσθη λαθεῖν· <sup>25</sup>ἀλλ’ εὐθὺς ἀκού-  
 σασα γυνὴ περὶ αὐτοῦ ἦς εἶχεν τὸ θυγάτριον αὐτῆς  
 πνεῦμα ἀκάθαρτον, ἐλθοῦσα προσέπεσεν πρὸς τοὺς  
 26 πόδας αὐτοῦ· <sup>26</sup>ἡ δὲ γυνὴ ἦν Ἐλληνίς, Σύρα Φοινίκισσα

24 om καὶ Σιδῶνος DLΔ 28 2<sup>pe</sup> a b ff i n r syr<sup>sin hier</sup> Or (hab ΝΑΒΝΧΓΠΣΦ al min<sup>pl</sup> f q vg syrr<sup>pesh hel</sup> arm go) | οικιαν] pr την DΦ al Or | ηθελησεν ΝΔ 13 69 124  
 346 2<sup>pe</sup> Or | ηδυνασθη ΝΒ] ηδυνηθη ADLNXΓ al min<sup>pl</sup> εδυνηθη ΚΔΠΣΦ min<sup>pauc</sup>  
 25 αλλ ευθυς ακουσ. γυνη (Ν)BLΔ 33 f syr<sup>hel(mg)</sup> me] γ. δε ευθεως (+ως D\*) ακουσ.  
 D syr<sup>sin</sup> arm ακουσ. γαρ γ. ANXΓΠ\*ΣΦ al min<sup>pl</sup> a n syrr<sup>pesh hel(txt)</sup> al | εν πνι ακαθαρτω  
 13 28 69 346 2<sup>pe</sup> (arm<sup>vid</sup>) | ελθονσα] εισελθονσα ΝLΔ 60<sub>4</sub> latt<sup>vtpl</sup> vg me 26 Σύρα  
 Φοινίκισσα BEFGHMS<sup>txt</sup>V<sup>txt</sup>XΓΣ 60<sub>4</sub> 1071 al<sup>mu</sup>] Σύρα Φοινισσα U min<sup>pauc</sup> a q Συροφοι-  
 νικισσα ΝΑΚ(L)S<sup>mg</sup>V<sup>mg</sup>ΔΠΦ i al<sup>mu</sup> go Συροφοινισσα min<sup>pauc vid</sup> b d f ff vg Φοινισσα (D) i

(B. J. iii. 3. 1, cf. ant. xix. 5. 6) it embraced the whole seacoast and plain—at least from Carmel northwards. Phoenicia, like the Decapolis, was frankly pagan, and the Tyrians bore a special illwill towards the Jews (Joseph. c. Ap. i. 13). In crossing the border the Lord passed into a Gentile land. Phoenicians had sought Him in Galilee (iii. 8), but He had no mission to their country; His purpose in entering it was retirement and not public work. Εἰσελθὼν εἰς οἰκίαν: cf. v. 17; on οὐδ. ἥθελεν γν., see ix. 30, and for ἥθελεν, cf. vi. 48.

καὶ οὐκ ἥδυνάσθη λαθεῖν] On the quasi-adversative sense of καὶ see WM., p. 545. Ἦδυνάσθη or ἰδυνάσθη is frequent in the LXX., cf. Gen. xxx. 8, Exod. xii. 39 (A), Jos. xv. 63, xvii. 12, Jud. i. 19, 32 (A), 2 Regn. iii. 11; in the N.T. ἥδυνάσθη occurs here (ΝΒ), and Mt. xvii. 16 (B). See WSchm., p. 208 n. Λαυθάνειν is one of the rarer words of N.T. Greek, occurring elsewhere Lc.<sup>2</sup> Heb.<sup>1</sup> 2 Pet. The aor. inf. is usual after δύνασθαι (Blass, Gr. p. 197).

25. ἀλλ’ εὐθὺς ἀκούσασα κτλ.] Cf. vi. 33, 54 f. Even in Phoenicia He was recognised. Τὸ θυγάτριον, cf. v. 23, 42: another child-applicant for healing. Children as well as adults were liable to the inroads of unclean

spirits, cf. ix. 21. The phenomena and the belief which assigned them to the agency of evil spirits were, as it appears, not limited to Jews or to the land of Israel (Acts xvi. 16 f.). On ἥσ...αυτῆς, cf. WM., p. 185; Blass, Gr. p. 175. Προσέπεσεν, see iii. 11, v. 33.

26. Ἐλληνίς, Σύρα Φοινίκισσα τῷ γένει] Mt. Χαναβαία. The woman was a Gentile (f., vg., gentilis), probably Greek-speaking, but descended from the old stock of the Phoenicians of Syria, who belonged to the Canaanites of the O.T. Ἐλλην in the Acts and Epistles is contrasted sometimes with Ἰουδαῖος (Acts xiv. 1, Rom. i. 16, ii. 9 f. &c., i Cor. i. 24, Gal. iii. 28), sometimes with βάρβαρος (Rom. i. 14), i.e. it represents either the Gentile as such, or the civilised and generally Greek-speaking Gentile (see Lightfoot's note on βάρβαρος, Col. iii. 11). In the Gospels Ἐλλην, Ἐλληνίς occur only here and in Jo. vii. 35, xii. 20, and the word must in each case be interpreted by the context. The Phoenician language may have lingered in country places round Tyre and Sidon, as the Punic tongue was still spoken in Augustine's time by descendants of the old Phoenician colony in N. Africa (Aug. ep. 209). But in Ἐλλ., Σύρα Φ. τῷ γένει there is surely an implied contrast between

τῷ γένειο καὶ ἡρώτα αὐτὸν ἵνα τὸ δαιμόνιον ἐκβάλῃ  
ἐκ τῆς θυγατρὸς αὐτῆς. <sup>27</sup> καὶ ἐλεγεν αὐτῇ Ἐφεσ 27  
πρῶτον χορτασθῆναι τὰ τέκνα· οὐ γάρ ἐστιν καλὸν  
λαβεῖν τὸν ἄρτον τῶν τέκνων καὶ τοῖς κυναρίοις

<sup>26</sup> εκ] απο D 115 e ff om L 9  
syr<sup>hel</sup> (arm) go

<sup>27</sup> καὶ ελ.] ο δε I. ειπεν ΑΝΧΓΠΣΦ min<sup>pl</sup>

Phoenician extraction and Greek speech; cf. Euth., who however partly misunderstands his text: Ἐλληνίς μὲν τὴν θρησκείαν, Σύρα δὲ τῇ διαλέκτῳ, Φοινίκισσα δὲ τῷ γένει: correct, 'Ε μ. τ. θ. καὶ τὴν διαλέκτον, Σύρα Φοιν. δὲ τ. γ. The fem. of Ἐλλην occurs again in Acts xvii. 12; cf. 2 Macc. vi. 8. Σύρα Φοινίκισσα (also Σ. Φοινίσσα, Συροφοινίκισσα, Συροφοίνισσα, see vv. ll.), an inhabitant (or as here, a descendant of the old inhabitants) of Syrian Phoenicia (ἡ Συροφοινίκη, Justin. *dial.* 78), so called in contrast to the Carthaginian seacoast (Strabo xvii. 19 ἡ τῶν Διβυφοινίκων γῆ). Συροφοίνιξ occurs in Lucian *deor. eccl.* 4, and *Syrophoenix* in Juv. *sat. viii.* 159; on the late and rare form of the fem. see WSchm., p. 135 n., Blass, *Gr.*, p. 63. The Clementines (*hom. ii.* 19, *iii.* 73) name the mother Justa, and the daughter Bernice. With τῷ γένει cf. Acts xviii. 2, 24.

ἡρώτα...ἵνα] Cf. παρεκάλει...ἵνα, v. 10. Mt. gives the words: ἐλέγον με, κύριε, νιὸς Δανεΐδ· ἡ θυγάτηρ μου κακῶς δαιμονίζεται: cf. Mt. ix. 27, xx. 30, 31 (Mc. x. 47, 48). Such a formula as νιὸς Δ. once used in public would soon become customary, but its occurrence in this narrative is remarkable; as yet, so far as we know, the title had been applied to Christ only once even in Galilee. On the contrast between this mode of addressing Him and that adopted by the δαιμόνια and, with an added ἀληθῶς, by the disciples, see Origen in *Mt.* t. xi. 17: συνάγαγε δὲ ἀπὸ τῶν εὐαγγελίων τίνες μὲν αὐτὸν καλοῦσιν νιὸν Δαβίδ...τίνες δὲ νιὸν θεοῦ...τίνες δὲ μετὰ τῆς ἀληθῶς προσ-

θήκης. καὶ γὰρ χρήσιμος, οἷμα, ἔσται σοι ἡ τούτων συναγωγὴ πρὸς τὸ ἰδεῖν τὴν διαφορὰν τῶν προσιόντων.

27. Ἐφεσ πρῶτον χορτασθῆναι τὰ τέκνα] The τέκνα are of course the Jews; cf. Isa. i. 2, Lc. xv. 31. They had the first claim, and by this principle not only the Lord's ministry, but the subsequent mission of the Church was regulated; see Mt. x. 5, 23, Acts i. 8, iii. 26, Rom. i. 16, ii. 9, 10. To Marcion, in whose Gospel this incident had no place, Tertullian (*adv. Marc.* iv. 7) well replies: "detrahe voces Christi mei, res loquuntur." The conversation with this Phoenician woman merely calls attention to a rule which is everywhere apparent. Yet if the Jew justly claimed precedence, he had no exclusive right to the Gospel; πρῶτον implies that the Gentile would find his opportunity; cf. Mt. viii. 11, Acts xiii. 46, xxviii. 28. For Ἐφεσ with the inf. cf. Mt. viii. 22, Mc. x. 14; the subjunctive follows in Mt. vii. 4, Mc. xv. 36. For χορτάζεσθαι saturari, see note on vi. 42.

Mt., who in the early part of this incident is on the whole much fuller than Mc., relates the circumstances which led to this reply (xv. 23, 24), but omits the words Ἐφεσ...τὰ τέκνα.

οὐ γάρ ἐστιν καλὸν κτλ.] So Mt., Mc. Τὰ κυνάρια are τὰ κυνίδια τῆς οἰκίας (Origen)—the housedogs (*τραπεζῆς κύνες* Hom. *Il.* xxii. 69), as the dim. possibly indicates; though not children of the house, they have a place within its walls, and are fed, if not with the children's bread. Thus the term, which on Jewish lips was

28 βαλεῖν. <sup>28</sup> ἡ δὲ ἀπεκρίθη καὶ λέγει αὐτῷ Ναί, κύριε,  
καὶ τὰ κυνάρια ὑποκάτω τῆς τραπέζης ἐσθίουσιν ἀπὸ<sup>29</sup>  
τῶν ψιχίων τῶν παιδίων. <sup>29</sup> καὶ εἶπεν αὐτῇ Διὰ  
τοῦτον τὸν λόγον ὑπαγε· ἔξελήλυθεν ἐκ τῆς θυγα-  
30 τρός σου τὸ δαιμόνιον. <sup>30</sup> καὶ ἀπελθοῦσα εἰς τὸν

28 om ναι D 13 69 604 2<sup>o</sup> b e ff i syr<sup>sin</sup> arm | και] και γαρ ALNXΓΠΣΦ al min<sup>pl</sup>  
a f n q vg syr<sup>hel</sup> go αλλα και D b c ff i r | εσθιει ANXΓΠ al | ψιχιων] ψιχιων D pr πιπ-  
τοντων 1071 | παιδιων] παιδων (D) min<sup>pauc</sup> om 1071 + και ζωσιν syr<sup>hier</sup> Tat<sup>diasparab</sup>

usually a reproach, is used by the Lord to open a door of hope through which the suppliant is not slow to enter (v. 28). On τὰ κυνάρια=τὰ ἔθη see J. Lightfoot and Schöttgen on Mt. xv., and Bp Lightfoot on Phil. iii. 1. Jerome, after observing that the relative positions of Jew and Gentile have been reversed, exclaims “O mira rerum conversio! Israel quondam filius, nos canes.” Origen suggests that the saying may have its application still: τάχα δὲ καὶ τῶν λόγων Ἰησοῦ εἰσὶ τινες ἄρτοι οὓς τοῖς λογικωτέροις ὡς τέκνοις ἔξεστι διδόναι μόνοις καὶ ἄλλοι λόγοι οἰοντεὶ ψιχία ἀπὸ τῆς μεγάλης ἐστίας...οἷς χρήσαντ’ ἂν τινες ψυχὰς ὡς κύνες. Tertullian thinks (*de orat.* 6) of the Bread of life which only the faithful can receive: “cetera enim nationes requirunt...ostendit enim quid a patre filii expectent.”

28. ἡ δὲ ἀπεκρίθη καὶ λέγει] Her saying was in the strictest sense an answer: she laid hold of Christ's word and based her plea upon it. The usual phrase in the Synoptists is ἀποκριθεὶς λέγει (*εἶπεν*), or ἀπεκρίθη λέγων, but ἀπεκρίθη καὶ εἶπεν is common in St John. Δέγει, the historic present (Hawkins, *H. S.* p. 113 ff.); on its combination with an aor. see WM., p. 350.

ναι, κύριε, καὶ τὰ κυνάρια κτλ.] ‘True, Rabbi; even (Mt. καὶ γάρ, ‘for even’) the dogs (of the house) are fed with the crumbs which the children leave.’ Mt., τῶν πιπτόντων ἀπὸ τῆς τραπέζης τῶν κυρίων αὐτῶν, ‘with the crumbs which their masters let fall’ (cf. Lc. xvi. 21).

The woman accepts and affirms the Lord's saying about the dogs; it serves her purpose; there is that in it on which she can build an argument; Euth., ἐπεὶ τοίνυν κυνάριόν εἴμι, οὐκ εἰμὶ ἀλλοτρία. For ναι see 2 Cor. i. 20, Apoc. i. 7, xiv. 13, xxii. 20; καὶ is here simply ‘even,’ as in i. 27, not ‘and yet,’ ‘yet even’; for καὶ γάρ (the reading followed by A.V.) see Bp Ellicott on 2 Th. iii. 10. ’Εσθιει ἀπό = נִנְלַבָּא, a Hebraism common in Biblical Gk. from Gen. ii. 16 onwards; cf. WM., p. 248 f. Two early variants are of interest; the Western text begins Κύριε, ἀλλὰ καὶ, *sed et*; at the end of the verse ‘Tatian’ and the earlier Syriac versions in Mt. add “and live.”

29. διὰ τοῦτον τὸν λόγον ὑπαγε κτλ.] Mt. ὃ γύναι, μεγάλη σου ἡ πίστις. γενηθήτω σοι ὡς θέλεις. Cf. Victor: ὃ μὲν οὖν Ματθαῖος τὸ τῆς πίστεως ἐστημήνατο...ό δὲ Μᾶρκος τοῦ λόγου τὴν ἀρετήν. Tatian gives both answers, placing Mt.'s first. Throughout the incident Mt. and Mc. seem to depend on different sources, the only strictly common matter being the saying οὐκ ἔστιν καλόν κτλ. On ἔξελήλυθεν τὸ δαιμόνιον Bede remarks (with a reference to the baptismal exorcism of the Latin rite): “per fidem et confessionem parentum in baptismo liberantur a diabolo parvuli.”

30. καὶ ἀπελθοῦσα κτλ.] Mt. καὶ λάθη ἡ θυγάτηρ αὐτῆς ἀπὸ τῆς ὥρας ἐκείνης. The result finds a parallel in the miracle of Jo. iv. 46 ff. Βεβλη-

οίκον αὐτῆς εὗρεν τὸ παιδίον βεβλημένον ἐπὶ τὴν κλίνην καὶ τὸ §δαιμόνιον ἔξεληλυθός.

§ Wd

<sup>31</sup> Καὶ πάλιν ἔξελθὼν ἐκ τῶν ὁρίων Τύρου ἦλθεν 31 διὰ Σιδῶνος εἰς τὴν θάλασσαν τῆς Γαλειλαίας ἀνὰ

30 ευρεν την θυγατερα βεβλημενη επι κτλ. Δ ευρεν το δαιμ. εξελ. και την θυγ. βεβλ. επι της κλινης ΑΝΧΓΠΣΦ al min<sup>pl</sup> a n syr<sup>hel</sup> arm go ευρεν την θυγ. και το δαιμ. εξελ. και αντη βεβλημενη επι τ. κλ. syr<sup>sin(vid)</sup> 31 εκ] απο 1071 | ηλθεν δια Σιδωνος ΝΒΔΛΔ 33 604 2<sup>pe</sup> lat<sup>tet(exe q) rs</sup> syr<sup>hior</sup> me aeth] και Σιδ. ηλθεν ΑΝΧΓΠΣΦ al min<sup>pl</sup> q syr<sup>sin pesk hel</sup> arm go | eis ΝΒΔΛΔ 1 33 69 124 209 282 346 604 2<sup>pe</sup>] προς ΑΝΧ ΓΠΣΦ al min<sup>pl</sup>

μένον ἐπὶ τὴν κλίνην: the exhaustion had not yet spent itself, though the foul spirit was gone; cf. ix. 26. On the place of this incident in the Ministry, see Hort, *Jud. Chr.* p. 34: "when at length the boon is granted her, nothing is said to take away from its exceptional and as it were extraneous character; it remains a crumb from the children's table." Euth. treats the incident as prefiguring the call of the Gentiles: *προ-ετύπου δὲ κατὰ ἀλληγορίαν ἡ Χαναναία αὐτῇ γυνὴ τὴν ἔξ οὐκών ἐκκλησίαν κτλ.* On the participle after *εὗρεν* see Blass, *Gr.* p. 246.

31—37. RETURN TO THE DECAPOLIS. HEALING OF A DEAF MAN WHO SPOKE WITH DIFFICULTY (Mt. xv. 29, cf. 30, 31).

31. καὶ πάλιν ἔξελθὼν κτλ.] With πάλιν ἔξελθὼν cf. ii. 13, xiv. 39, 40. The last incident took place in the neighbourhood of Tyre. The Lord now leaves the ὅρια Τύρου and following the coast-line northwards across the Leontes and perhaps through or within sight of Zarephath (*Σάρεπτα τῆς Σειδωνίας*, 3 Regn. xvii. 8, Lc. iv. 26), passes through Sidon. Σιδών, Σειδών=ṣidā, *Saida*, some 20 miles N. of Tyre on the Phoenician coast, first mentioned in Gen. x. 15: in N.T. cf. Mt. xi. 21 f.=Lc. x. 13 f., xv. 21=Mc. vii. 24, 31, Mc. iii. 8=Lc. vi. 17, Acts xxvii. 3. The traditional text avoids the reference to the Lord's passage through a Gentile city (vv.

ll.). He went through merely as a traveller *en route* (for this use of διὰ see Mc. ix. 30, Jo. iv. 2 Cor. i. 16), and in so large and busy a place may easily have escaped notice. From Sidon and the Mediterranean coast He returned to (*εἰς*, for *ἐπὶ* or *πρός*, cf. Blass, *Gr.* p. 124) the Sea of Galilee, but to its eastern shore (*ἀνὰ μέσον τῶν ὁρίων Δεκαπόλεως*). A road led from Sidon across the hills (Merrill, p. 58, G. A. Smith, p. 426); it crossed the Leontes near the modern Belfort, and climbing the ranges of the Lebanon, passed through the tetrarchy of Abilene, and eventually reached Damascus. The Lord probably left it where it skirted Hermon, and striking south kept on the east bank of the Jordan till He reached the Lake (see map). The long *détour* may have served the double purpose of defeating the immediate designs of His enemies and providing "for the Apostles the rest which He had desired to give them before" (Latham, p. 333; cf. vi. 31). *Ἄνα μέσον=Ἐπί* (Gen. i. 4, &c.); the ὅρια τῆς Δ. are the districts under the influence of the cities of the Decapolis, see note on v. 20. No mention is made of a passage through, still less of a ministry in any of them; but in the country round these cities (G. A. Smith, p. 601) preaching and the working of miracles are resumed, probably among the Jewish or mixed population prepared by the work of the released demoniac (v. 20). The

¶ n 32 μέσον τῶν ὄριων<sup>¶</sup> Δεκαπόλεως. <sup>32</sup>καὶ φέρουσιν αὐτῷ κωφὸν καὶ μογιλάλον, καὶ παρακαλοῦσιν αὐτὸν ἵνα 33 ἐπιθῆ αὐτῷ τὴν χεῖρα. <sup>33</sup>καὶ ἀπολαβόμενος αὐτὸν ἀπὸ τοῦ ὅχλου κατ’ ἴδιαν ἔβαλεν τοὺς δακτύλους

<sup>31</sup> Δεκαπολεως] pr της DW<sup>d</sup>Φ      32 ομ και 2° ALNXΓΠΙΣΦ al min<sup>fere omn</sup> syrr arm<sup>codd</sup> me go | μογγιλάλον B<sup>3</sup>EFHLNW<sup>d</sup>XΓΔ 28 33 69 157 262 346 al<sup>sat m</sup> | παρεκαλοῦν 33 arm | τας χειρας N<sup>\*</sup>NW<sup>d</sup>ΔΣ 33      33 απολαβομενος] επιλ. E<sup>\*</sup>Γ 131 271 al<sup>nonn</sup> λαβ. Δ 63<sup>cott</sup> | εβαλεν...αυτον 2°] επτυσεν eis tous δακτυλους αυτου και εβαλεν eis τα ωτα του κωφου (αυτου Tat) και ηψατο της γλωσσης του μογγιλαλου W<sup>d</sup> Tat<sup>diat arab</sup> εβ. τ. δακτ. αυτ. κ. πτυσας eis τα ω. αυτ. ηψατο τ. γλ. αυτ. syr<sup>sin</sup>

Lord is again in the land of Israel, for Gaulanitis, though the towns were Hellenised, had belonged to the tribe of Manasseh (Jos. xiii. 29 f.), and still had a predominantly Jewish population (Schürer, II. i. 3).

32. φέρουσιν αὐτῷ κωφόν κτλ.] Mt. again is, at least in part, independent of Mc.; he locates the scene of the Lord's work in the Decapolis among the hills (ἀναβὰς εἰς τὸ ὅρος ἐκάθητο ἐκεῖ: cf. Mt. v. 1), and he represents Him as surrounded by the usual crowd of applicants for relief from various disorders (ὅχλοι πολλοὶ ἔχοντες μεθ' ἑαυτῶν χωλούς, κυλλούς, τυφλούς, κωφούς, καὶ ἐτέρους πολλούς: cf. iv. 24), but describes no case in detail. The recovery of hearing by the deaf was a note of the Messianic age (Isa. xxxv. 5, xlvi. 18), and had accompanied the Ministry in Galilee (Mt. xi. 5). In this case deafness was attended by such an impediment in the speech that the man was practically dumb (v. 37 ἀλάλοος: cf. ix. 25 τὸ ἄλαλον καὶ κωφὸν πνεῦμα). Μογιλάλος (here only in N.T.) is probably from Isa. xxxv. 6 τρανὴ δὲ ἔσται γλῶσσα μογιλάλων: the word occurs also in Exod. iv. 11 (Aq., Symm., Th.=LXX. δύστκωφος), Isa. lvi. 10 (Aq., =LXX. ἐνεοί, Symm., Th., ἄλαλοι), and in each case it = Μζλ. Here the Vg. has mutum; Wycliffe follows with "a man deaf and dumbe"; Tindale prefers "one that was deffe and stambed in his speech"; "had an impediment in his speech" (A.V.,

R.V.) begins with Cranmer. The stricter meaning is supported by ἐλάλει ὁρθῶς (v. 35). The variant μογγιλάλος, found also in MSS. of the LXX. (Isa. xxxv. 6, cf. Ps. lv. (lvi.), tit., where the Quinta has τῆς περιστερᾶς τῆς μογγιλάλον), is said to be a distinct word, a compound of μογγός, 'thick-voiced' (WSchm., p. 65, see Steph.-Hase, s.v.; Exp. VII. vii. p. 566).

παρακαλοῦσιν...ἵνα ἐπιθῆ κτλ.] The Lord's ordinary sign of healing, familiar to every Jew through long use in Israel; cf. v. 23, vi. 5. For some reason which does not appear other symbols are employed in this case, such as suggest the presence of unusual difficulties. Τὴν χεῖρα, usually τὰς χεῖρας: yet see Mt. ix. 18.

33. ἀπολαβόμενος αὐτὸν...κατ’ ἴδιαν] Cf. 2 Macc. vi. 21, ἀπολαμβάνοντες αὐτὸν κατ’ ἴδιαν. Προσλαβέσθαι is used in nearly the same sense in viii. 32, cf. Acts xviii. 26; in ἀπολ. the isolation of the person who is taken comes more strongly into view. The Lord takes the μογιλάλος away with Him, because a crowd was gathered round them (ἀπὸ τοῦ ὅχλου, cf. Mt.), and He wished to be alone with the man (κατ’ ἴδιαν, iv. 34, vi. 31, 32, ix. 2, 28, xiii. 3). The miracles were usually wrought under the eyes of the crowd, but in special cases relative (v. 37) or even absolute (cf. viii. 23) privacy seems to have been necessary.

ἔβαλεν τοὺς δακτύλους κτλ.] The organs affected receive the signs of

αὐτοῦ εἰς τὰ ὡτα αὐτοῦ, καὶ πτύσας ἤψατο τῆς γλώσσης αὐτοῦ. <sup>34</sup>καὶ ἀναβλέψας εἰς τὸν οὐρανὸν 34 ἐστέναξεν, καὶ λέγει αὐτῷ Ἐφφαθά, ὃ ἐστιν Διανοίχθητι. <sup>35</sup>καὶ ἤνοιγησαν αὐτοῦ αἱ ἀκοαί, καὶ ἐλύθη 35

<sup>33</sup> om αυτον <sup>1°</sup> ΚL c i      <sup>34</sup> εστεναξεν DW<sup>d</sup>Σ 13 69 124 346 | εφφεθα  
Ν<sup>c</sup>D latt                          <sup>35</sup> και <sup>1°</sup>] +ενθεως AEFGHKMNSUVW<sup>d(mg)</sup>ΧΓΠΣΦ min<sub>frooomn</sub> f vg  
syrr<sub>pesh</sub> arm go aeth | ηνοιγησαν ΝΒΔ 1] ηνοιχθησαν L διηνοιγησαν 124 604 2<sup>pe</sup>  
διηνοιχθησαν ANW<sup>d</sup>ΧΓΠΣΦ al min<sup>pl</sup> | ελυθη] pr ενθυς ΚLΔ (aeth) pr του μογγιλαου W<sup>a</sup>

healing power; the ears are bored (*ἔβαλεν εἰς*), the tongue is touched. *Πτύσας*, see viii. 23, Jo. ix. 6 (Westcott). Saliva was regarded as remedial, but the custom of applying it with incantations seems to have led the Rabbis to denounce its use; see Wetstein and Schöttgen *ad l.* Possibly to this Decapolitan it appealed more strongly than any other symbol that could have been employed. The faith of a deaf man needed all the support that visible signs could afford. The use of the Lord's fingers and saliva emphasised the truth that the healing power proceeded from His own person (cf. v. 30). Victor: *δεικνὺς ὡς πλούτει τὴν τῆς θελας δυνάμεως ἐνέργειαν καὶ τὸ ἐνωθὲν αὐτῷ ἀπορρήτως σῶμα.* On the remarkable variants in W<sup>d</sup>, Syr.<sup>sin.</sup> see Nestle, *Introd.* p. 264 f.

34. ἀναβλέψας...ἐστέναξεν] For ἀναβλ. *εἰς τὸν οὐρανὸν* see vi. 41, Jo. xi. 41, xvii. 1; St John's phrase is *ἀτρεψ* (*ἐπτάρεψ*) *τοὺς ὄφθαλμούς*, cf. Lc. xviii. 13. ἐστέναξεν: cf. viii. 12 ἀναστενάξας τῷ πνεύματι αὐτοῦ. In both cases perhaps the vast difficulty and long delays of His remedial work were borne in upon the Lord's human spirit in an especial manner. So His Church, or His Spirit in her, inwardly groans while waiting for the redemption of the body (Rom. viii. 23, 26). Such a *στεναγμὸς ἀλάλητος* here proceeds from the Lord's humanity.

ἐφφαθά] **חִתְּפָא**, by assimilation for Aram. **חִתְּפָתָא**, the ethpeel of **חִתְּפָא** (Dalman, p. 202, 222), Syr. **عَفَافِكَ**.

The earlier Syriac versions naturally omit Mc.'s explanatory ὃ ἐστιν Διαν. (it is in Syr. <sup>hcl, hier</sup>): the Latin transliterations are *ephphetha*, *ephetha*, *effetha*, *effeta* and the like (Wordsworth and White, p. 225). For Mc.'s use of Aramaic words in the sayings of Christ, see note on v. 41. On the word as addressed to a deaf man Origen has some interesting remarks (*in Jo. t. xx. 20* (18)).

Both the word and the use of saliva passed at an early time into the Baptismal rite as practised at Milan and Rome: cf. Ambr. *de myst.*, “aperite igitur aures...quod vobis significavimus cum apertio celebrantes mysterium diceremus ‘Ephphatha quod est adaperire.’” The ceremony, which was known as *aurium apertio*, and immediately preceded the renunciation, is thus described in the ‘Gelasian’ Sacramentary (ed. Wilson, pp. 79, 115): “inde tangis (saliva oris sui cum digito tangit) et nares et aures de sputo et dicis ei ad aurem ‘Effeta, quod est adaperire, in odorem suavitatis’”; comp. the more elaborate ritual in the Sarum *ordo ad faciendum catechumenum* (Maskell, *rit.* i. 11) and the similar form in the modern Roman *Rituale*. Bede refers also to the versicle *Domine labia mea* (Ps. l. (li.) 17).

For *διανοίγειν* cf. Lc. xxiv. 31 f., 45, Acts xvi. 14.

35. ἤνοιγησαν αὐτοῦ αἱ ἀκοαί] On the late aor. *ἤνοιγην* cf. WH., *Notes*, p. 170, Deissmann, *B. St.* p. 189. It occurs again Mt. xx. 33, Acts xii. 10, Apoc. xi. 19,

οὐ δεσμὸς τῆς γλώσσης αὐτοῦ καὶ ἐλάλει ὅρθως·  
 36 καὶ διεστείλατο αὐτοῖς ἵνα μηδενὶ λέγωσιν· ὅσον  
 δὲ αὐτοῖς διεστέλλετο, αὐτοὶ μᾶλλον περισσότερον  
 37 ἐκήρυξσον. 37 καὶ ὑπερπερισσῶς ἐξεπλήσσοντο λέ-  
 γοντες Καλῶς πάντα πεποίηκεν καὶ τοὺς κωφοὺς  
 ποιεῖ ἀκούειν καὶ ἀλάλους λαλεῖν.<sup>¶</sup>

<sup>syr<sup>hier</sup></sup> 35 οἱ αὐτοῦ 2<sup>o</sup> W<sup>d</sup> 36 διεστείλατο] εἰνετείλατο Δ | μηδενὶ] + μηδεν D 28 604  
 2<sup>pe</sup> [λεγωσιν] εἰπωσιν ADNXΓΠΙ al min<sup>pl</sup> | οὐδὲ...αὐτοὶ] οἱ δὲ αὐτοὶ D\* (b c ff i) |  
 αὐτοῖς] pr αὐτοὶ EFGKMNSUVΓΠΙ al<sup>pl</sup> syrr arm go aeth | διεστείλλετο] εἰνετείλετο  
 (sic) Δ | περισσότερως DW<sup>d</sup> 61 1071 37 ὑπερεκπερισσῶς DU 1 209 435 604 οἱ  
 W<sup>d</sup> | εξεπλήσσοντο] pr παντες W<sup>d</sup> | καὶ 2<sup>o</sup>] pr ws B me | ἀλαλους] pr τοὺς ADNW<sup>d</sup>X  
 ΓΠΣΦ al min<sup>fere</sup> omn

xv. 5, but ἡνεψίθην is more frequent.  
 Ἀκοαί=ῶτα, as in 2 Macc. xv. 39; cf.  
 Lc. vii. 1, Acts xvii. 20, Heb. v. 11.

ἐλύθη ὁ δεσμὸς κτλ.] Cf. Lc. xiii.  
 16 οὐκ ἔδει λυθῆναι ἀπὸ τοῦ δεσμοῦ  
 τούτου where the reference is to an  
 infirm woman ἦν ἔδησεν ὁ σατανᾶς. It  
 belonged to the office of the Messiah  
 to release the captives of Satan (Isa.  
 xlii. 7 ἐξαγαγεῖν ἐκ δεσμῶν δεδεμένους,  
 xlix. 9 λέγοντες τοῖς ἐν δεσμῷ Ἐξέλ-  
 θατε). The phrase ἐλύθη κτλ. does not  
 perhaps necessarily imply that the man  
 was ‘tongue-tied’ (Vg. *solutum est vinculum linguae*); however caused, the  
 impediment was a bondage from which  
 he rejoiced to be set free. Ἐλύθη...  
 ἐλάλει: the momentary act of libera-  
 tion gave birth to a new faculty of  
 articulate speech.

36. καὶ διεστείλατο αὐτοῖς ἵνα κτλ.] Cf. v. 43. For some reason, special  
 perhaps to the particular case, privacy  
 was expedient after the miracle as  
 well as during the act of release. But  
 the charge seemed to defeat its own  
 end; not only was it ineffectual, but  
 its very vehemence increased the zeal  
 of those who spread the story. “Οσον  
 ...μᾶλλον: fuller forms are καθ' ὅσον  
 ...κατὰ τοσοῦτο (Heb. vii. 20 ff.); ὅσῳ  
 ...τοσούτῳ (Heb. x. 25) followed by a  
 comparative; cf. Vg. here, *quanto... tanto magis*. The imperf. (διεστέλ-  
 λετο) is apparently that of repeated

action (Burton, § 24); the charge  
 (διεστείλατο) was reiterated with the  
 effect described. Μᾶλλον περισσό-  
 τερον, cf. WM., p. 300; Vg. *magis plus*. The repetition of commands  
 which experience shewed to be ine-  
 effectual (i. 43 f.) is analogous to much  
 in the ordinary dealings of God with  
 man. Bede has the practical remark:  
 “volebat ostendere quanto studiosius  
 quantoque ferventius eum praedicare  
 debeant quibus iubet ut praedicent.”

37. ὑπερπερισσῶς] Another ἄπ.  
 λεγ.; ὑπερπερισσεύειν occurs in St  
 Paul twice (Rom. v. 20, 2 Cor. vii. 4), but for the adv. he prefers the  
 strengthened compound ὑπερεκπερισ-  
 σοῦ (-σῶς). For ἐκπλήσσεθαι see i.  
 22, vi. 2, xi. 18; it expresses the  
 normal impression produced on the  
 mass of the people by both the teach-  
 ing and the miracles. Mt., describing  
 the general effect of the miracles in  
 Decapolis, uses the milder term θαυ-  
 μάζειν.

καλῶς πάντα πεποίηκεν] Mt. (but  
 without special reference to this mi-  
 racle), ἐδόξασαν τὸν θεὸν Ἰσραὴλ. The  
 partly pagan crowd recognised in the  
 miracles of Jesus the glory of the  
 God of Israel, in Whose Name Jesus  
 came; cf. v. 19, 20. To some it re-  
 called Gen. i. 31, ἵδεν ὁ θεὸς τὰ πάντα  
 δσα ἐποίησεν καὶ ἴδου καλὰ λίαν: cf.  
 Sir. xxxix. 16. Πεποίηκεν...ποιεῖ: the

<sup>1</sup>Ἐν ἐκείναις ταῖς ἡμέραις πάλιν πολλοῦ ὄχλου Ι VIII.  
ὄντος καὶ μὴ ἔχόντων τί φάγωσιν, προσκαλεσάμενος  
τοὺς μαθητὰς λέγει αὐτοῖς <sup>2</sup>Σπλαγχνίζομαι ἐπὶ τὸν 2  
ὄχλον, ὅτι ἥδη ἡμέραι τρεῖς προσμένουσιν [μοὶ] καὶ  
οὐκ ἔχουσιν τί φάγωσιν. <sup>3</sup>καὶ ἐὰν ἀπολύσω αὐτοὺς 3

VIII Ι παλιν πολλου ΚBDGLMNΔΣΦ Ι 13 28 33 59 61 69 73 209 242 346 1071  
2<sup>pe</sup> al latt<sup>vt(exe q)</sup> vg syr<sup>sin</sup> arm me go aeth] παμπολλον ΑΕFHKΣUVW<sup>d</sup>ΧΓΠΙ 604 min<sup>pl</sup>  
q syrr<sup>(exe sin)</sup> | οντος] συναχθεντος Wd | προσκαλ.]+ο Ιησους EFGHSUVXG al<sup>pl</sup> f |  
τους μαθητας]+παλιν Δ 2 επι τον οχλον]+τουτοι Λ 1071 al<sup>pano</sup> ε. τον οχλον  
τουτοι D latt<sup>vtplvid</sup> (cf. syrr<sup>sin</sup> pesh arm) | ημεραι τρεις ΚΑLNW<sup>d</sup>ΧΓΠΣ(Φ) al min<sup>pl</sup>  
ημεραις τρισι Β ημερας τρεις Δ Ι 69 2<sup>pe</sup> al<sup>nonn</sup> | προσμενουσιν] εισιν απο ποτε ωδε εισιν D  
a b (c) d (ff) i (arm) | om μοι BD 3 και εαν...εκλυθσονται] και απολυσαι αυτους  
ηηστεις εις οικον ου θελω μη εκλυθσιν D 604 (2<sup>pe</sup>) a b ff i q

act continues in its abiding effects. The plurals *κωφούς*, *ἀλάλοντος* may include the classes represented by the case of the *μογιλάλος*, or they may refer to other miracles of the same kind on the same occasion (cf. Mt., *κωφούς λαλοῦντας*). *'Αλάλοντος λαλεῖν*, perhaps an intentional *paronomasia*; see WM., p. 793 f.; for a similar juxtaposition of *κωφός* and *ἀλαλος* cf. Ps. xxxvii. (xxxviii.) 14. *Καὶ...καὶ*, WM., p. 547; *ἀλάλοντος*, anarthr., the *ἀλαλοι* being usually identical with the *κωφοί*.

### VIII. 1—9. FEEDING OF THE FOUR THOUSAND (Mt. xv. 32—39).

I. ἐν ἐκείναις ταῖς ἡμέραις] During the period to which the preceding incident belonged (see note on i. 9), i.e. in the course of the Lord's journey through the Decapolis (vii. 31). *Πάλιν πολλοῦ κτλ.* The crowd which followed Him was so great that it reminded the disciples of the crowds on the western shore (iii. 20, iv. 1, v. 21), especially perhaps of the five thousand men who assembled near Bethsaida (vi. 34). *Παμπόλλον* (cf. vv. ll.) is probably due to a misreading of *παλινπόλλογ*; for the opposite view see Burgon-Miller, *Causes of Corruption*, p. 34. The word, though classical, is unknown to Biblical Gk. *Προσκαλεσάμενος τ. μ.*: in vi. 35 the

disciples take the first step. For *προσκαλεσθαι* see note on iii. 13.

2. *σπλαγχνίζομαι ἐπὶ τὸν ὄχλον*] The Lord had known the pangs of hunger (Mt. iv. 2). Even under ordinary circumstances there was something in the sight of an eager crowd which moved Him; see Mt. xiv. 14, Mc. vi. 34. For *σπλαγχνίζεσθαι* see note on i. 41. This crowd was suffering through its attendance upon Him: ὅτι ἥδη ἡμέραι τρεῖς προσμένουσιν μοι (Mt. Mc.). *Προσμένειν τινί*, to wait upon; see Sap. iii. 9 of *πιστοί* ἐν ἀγάπῃ προσμενούσιν αὐτῷ (sc. τῷ κυρίῳ), Acts xi. 23, xiii. 43, and cf. *προσκαρτερεῖν τινί* Mc. iii. 9 (note). The construction ἥδη ἡμέραι τρεῖς προσμ. is explained by treating ἥδη ἡ. τρ. as a parenthesis (WM., p. 704), but it is simpler to supply εἰσίν, and treat προσμένουσιν and ἔχουσιν as datives of the participle. The reading of D is an interpretation of a difficult phrase; the Vg. *iam triduo sustinent me* (q, adherent mihi) evades the difficulty; the singular reading of B appears to be a grammatical correction (cf. WM., p. 273).

οὐκ ἔχουσιν τί φάγωσιν: cf. v. 1 μὴ ἔχόντων τί φ. The supply of food was spent, for the stay had been longer than they anticipated. In the case of the Five Thousand, only a

§ 5 *νήστεις εἰς οἶκον αὐτῶν, ἐκλυθήσονται ἐν τῇ ὁδῷ καὶ τινες αὐτῶν ἀπὸ μακρόθεν εἰσίν.* <sup>4</sup>καὶ ἀπεκρίθησαν αὐτῷ οἱ μαθηταὶ αὐτοῦ ὅτι Πόθεν τούτους δυνήσεται <sup>5</sup>τις ὥδε χορτάσαι ἄρτων ἐπ' ἑρημίας; <sup>5</sup>καὶ ἡρώτα αὐτούς Πόσους ἔχετε ἄρτους; οἱ δὲ § 6 <sup>6</sup>καὶ παραγγέλλει τῷ ὥχλῳ ἀναπεσεῖν ἐπὶ τῆς γῆς,

<sup>3</sup> νηστις ΙΔ 604 al<sup>nonn</sup> | και τινες ΙBLΔ 1 13 28 33 209 q syr<sup>sin</sup> me] οτι και τ. D latt<sup>vpl</sup> τινες γαρ ANW<sup>d</sup>XGΠΣ al min<sup>pl</sup> f vg syrr(pesh)hel arm go aeth | om απο ANW<sup>d</sup>XGΠΣΦ al min<sup>pl</sup> | εισω BLΔ me] ηκασιν ΙADNΣΦ 1 28 33 69 124 al<sup>nonn</sup> ηκουσιν EFGHKMSUVW<sup>d</sup>XGΠ min<sup>pl</sup> venerunt latt similiter syrr arm go aeth <sup>4</sup> οτι] και ειπαν Ι λεγοντες 106 251 282 (c) syr<sup>hel</sup> | δυνη ut vid syr<sup>sin</sup> arm | om ωδε DH 69 1071 b cff i q go | ερημιας ΙBDLNW<sup>d</sup>XGΠ<sup>2</sup>ΣΦ al min<sup>pl</sup> latt<sup>vid</sup>] ερημιας ΑΚΔΙΠ<sup>\*</sup> min<sup>nonn</sup> <sup>5</sup> ηρωτα ΙBLΔ] επηρωτα ADNW<sup>d</sup>GΠΣΦ al min<sup>pl</sup> επηρωτησεν M 6 παραγγελλει ΙBDLΔ] παρηγγειλεν ACNW<sup>d</sup>XGΠΣΦ al min<sup>omnvid(excl)</sup> vg rell

day seems to have passed, but no provision had been made for more than a few hours' absence from home. On *τι φάγ.* see vi. 36.

3. *ἔὰν ἀπολύσω αὐτοὺς νήστεις κτλ.]* Mt. *ἀπολύσαι...οὐ θέλω μήποτε κτλ.* The Lord anticipates the proposal with which the Twelve were doubtless again ready (vi. 36 *ἀπόλυσον αὐτούς*). *Νήστεις*, a classical word, occurs here only (Mt. Mc.) in Biblical Gk. *Eis οἶκον αὐτῶν* “to their home”; for *eis οἶκον* (*ἐν οἴκῳ*) in this sense see ii. 1. For *ἔκλυεσθαι* of the faintness caused by want of food see Jud. viii. 15 A (where B has *ἔκλείπειν*), I Regn. xiv. 28, Isa. xlvi. 1, Thren. ii. 19, I Macc. iii. 7.

*καὶ τινες αὐτῶν ἀπὸ μακρόθεν εἰσίν]* Mc. only. Gamala, Hippo, Gadara were perhaps the nearest centres of population. The towns and villages of the Decapolis were fewer, and at longer distances from each other than those of the populous western shore. Nothing is said here of *κύκλῳ ἄγρῳ καὶ κόμαι* where bread could be bought. The Decopolitans, unlike the Five Thousand, were in their own country, and if dismissed would make their way home. For *ἀπὸ μακρόθεν*, Vg. *de longe*, see v. 6, note: on the variant *ηκασιν* cf. WM., p. 106.

4. *ἀπεκρίθησαν...ὅτι Πόθεν κτλ.]*

For the ‘recitative’ *ὅτι* cf. i. 15, 37, 40, ii. 12, iii. 11, 21, iv. 21, v. 23, 28, 35, vi. 4, 14, 15 bis, 18, 35, vii. 6, 20. The objection raised by the Twelve corresponds to the circumstances: at Bethsaida they had urged the want of means (*ἀγοράσωμεν δηναρίων διακοσίων ἄρτους*);—in this thinly populated region they plead the scarcity of food: cf. Mt. *πόθεν ήμῖν ἐν ἑρημίᾳ ἄρτοι τοσούτοι κτλ.* Gould’s remark, “the stupid repetition of the question is psychologically impossible,” is doubly at fault. The question is not repeated exactly, and such stupidity as it shews is in accordance with all that we know of the condition of the Apostles at this period (cf. viii. 17 ff.). For *χορτάζειν* see vi. 42, note, and for the gen. cf. Ps. cxxxii. (cxxxii.) 15, and Blass, Gr. p. 101. *Ἐπ’ ἑρημίας*, on the surface of a desert, cf. WM., p. 468. *Ἐρημία* occurs in the Gospels only in this context, and not a dozen times in Biblical Gk.; the usual phrase is *ἡ ἑρημία, ἑρημος τόπος* or *γῆ*, see i. 3, 4, 12 f., 35.

5. *πόσους...ἐπτά]* The question is the same as in vi. 38. With the loaves, as before, there were a few small fishes, as a relish (Mt. *καὶ ὀλίγα ἵχθυδια*, see below, v. 7). For the use of fish with bread see note on vi. 38.

6. *παραγγέλλει]* Mt. *παραγγέλλεις*—another trace of the dependence of

καὶ λαβὼν τοὺς ἑπτὰ ἄρτους εὐχαριστήσας ἔκλασεν καὶ ἐδίδου τοῖς μαθηταῖς αὐτοῦ ἵνα παρατιθῶσιν· καὶ παρέθηκαν τῷ ὄχλῳ. <sup>7</sup>καὶ εἶχαν ἰχθύδια ὀλίγα· καὶ <sup>7</sup> εὐλογήσας αὐτὰ ἐἰπεν καὶ ταῦτα παρατιθέναι. <sup>8</sup>καὶ <sup>8</sup> ἔφαγον καὶ ἔχορτάσθησαν, καὶ ἦραν περισσεύματα § k

<sup>6</sup> παρατιθωσιν ΒCLMΔΦ 13 33 69 346 al<sup>paue</sup>] παραθωσιν ADNW<sup>a</sup>XΓΠΣ al min<sup>pl</sup> | τῷ οὐχλῷ αυτοῖς 1071 <sup>7</sup> εὐλογησας] ευχαριστησας D q | εἰπεν καὶ ταῦτα Ν<sup>a</sup>BCLΔ 115 q] εἰπεν καὶ αυτα AEFGHKM<sup>txt</sup>SUXΓΠ al<sup>pl</sup> εἰπεν αυτα V (εἰπεν παραθεινατ αυτα 1071) καὶ αυτοὺς εκελευσεν D latt<sup>vid</sup>(exc d) (arm<sup>vid</sup>) | παρατιθεναι Ν<sup>a</sup>B(D)LM<sup>mg</sup> Δ min<sup>paue</sup> παρατεθηναι A(Φ) min<sup>paue</sup> παραθειναι GM<sup>txt</sup>NUVXΠΣ min<sup>pl</sup> <sup>8</sup> εχορτασθησαν] + παντες ΚΜ(Ν) 1 33 1071 al<sup>noiu</sup> | περισσευματα κλασματων ABLNW<sup>a</sup>XΓΠΣΦ al min<sup>fere omnes</sup>] τα π. κλ. ΝC το περισσευμα των κλ. D 2<sup>ρo</sup> το περισσευσαν των κλ. 604 περισσευσαντα κλασματα 33 om κλασματων Δk

Mt. on Mc., or of their use of a common Greek source. In the Feeding of the Five Thousand the direction is given to the Twelve; here apparently the Lord Himself addresses the crowd. No mention is made here of χλωρὸς χόρτος; the spring was now past, and the hills were bare.

λαβὼν...εὐχαριστήσας ἔκλασεν καὶ ἐδίδον] See notes on vi. 41. The insertion of καὶ παρέθηκαν τῷ ὄχλῳ here in Mc. seems to imply that the bread was blessed and distributed first—another detail which has escaped Mt. On εὐχαριστεῖν see Lob. *Phrym.* p. 18, Rutherford, *N. Phr.* p. 69.

7. καὶ εἶχαν ἰχθύδια ὀλίγα] See on v. 5. The form εἶχαν occurs again Acts xxviii. 2 (παρεῖχαν), Apoc. ix. 8 f., cf. εἴχαμεν, 2 Jo. 5, and elsewhere as a variant, see WH., *Notes*, p. 165, WSchm., p. 112. Ἰχθύδιον (Mt. also) is here a true diminutive; cf. A.V., R.V.

εὐλογήσας αὐτὰ ἐἰπεν καὶ ταῦτα παρατιθ.] The blessing was probably distinct from that of the loaves (see note on v. 6), but similar; εὐλογεῖν and εὐχαριστεῖν are practically synonymous, see Mt. xv. 36 τοὺς ἑπτὰ ἄρτους καὶ τ. ἰχθύας εὐχαριστήσας, and cf. Mc. vi. 41; see *J. Th. St.* iii. p. 163. For εἰπεν ‘bade,’ cf. v. 43, Lc. xii. 13, xix. 15; and on παρατιθέναι and its variants see Blass, *Gr.* p. 230, who chooses the

less definite παρατεθῆναι. ‘Καὶ ταῦτα, these, as well as the loaves.

8. καὶ ἔφαγον καὶ ἔχορτάσθησαν] Cf. vi. 42. Περισσεύματα κλασμάτων, Mt. τὸ περισσεῦν τῶν κλ., as in xiv. 20, where Mc. has simply κλάσματα. Περισσευμα is the opposite of ὑστέρημα (2 Cor. viii. 13, 14), that which is left or remains over when all present needs are satisfied; an active form περισσεία also occurs (Eccl.<sup>13</sup> Paul<sup>4</sup> Jas.<sup>1</sup>). Σπυρίς (in the N.T. σφυρίς, see WH., *Notes*, p. 148, WSchm., p. 63, Deissmann, *B. St.*, pp. 158, 185, a late form rejected by the Atticists, cf. Lob. *Phrym.* 43) is used by Herodotus and re-appears in comedy (Ar. *Pax* 1005) and in the later writers (Theophrastus, Epictetus, &c.). It is said to be akin to σπεῖρα, and to denote a basket of coiled or plaited materials, cord or reeds; in Ar. *I. c.* it is an eel-basket (Κωπάδων ἐλθεῖν σπυρίδας), in Athen. 365 A (δεῖπνον ἀπὸ σπυρίδος) a dinner-hamper. Sometimes baskets of this sort were of considerable size, cf. Acts ix. 25, where Saul makes his escape in a σπυρίς (=σαργάνη, 2 Cor. xi. 33). That the word is here not a mere synonym of κόφινος is clear from the distinction in v. 20, q. v. The Vg. renders σφ. by *sportas*: Wycliffe has “leepis,” reserving “coffyns” for κοφ.; ‘frails’

9 κλασμάτων ἐπτὰ σφυρίδας. 9 ἦσαν δὲ ὡς τετρακισχίλιοι. καὶ ἀπέλυσεν αὐτούς.  
 10 10 Καὶ εὐθὺς ἐμβὰς [αὐτὸς] εἰς τὸ πλοῖον μετὰ τῶν μαθητῶν αὐτοῦ ἦλθεν εἰς τὰ μέρη Δαλμανούθα.

8 σφυρίδας ΙΑ\*Δ] σπυρίδας Α<sup>2</sup>ΒCLNW<sup>d</sup>ΧΓΔΠΣΦ al min<sup>omnvid</sup>+πληρεις 13 33 69  
 1071 al<sup>nonn</sup> i 9 ησαν δε]+οι φαγούτες ACNW<sup>d</sup>ΧΓΠΣΦ al min<sup>pl</sup> latt syrr arm go al |  
 τετρακισχίλιοι]+ανδρες ΓΔ 1071 al<sup>anc</sup> a b c ff i q 10 εὐθύς] αυτος D b i k |  
 εμβας] ανεβη...και D a f g k ενεβη...και 604 2<sup>ρε</sup>+αυτος B | το πλοιον] om το Λ 1 28 33  
 69 124 209 604 al<sup>nonn</sup> | τα μερη] τα ορια D το ορος 28 syris<sup>in</sup> τα ορη N | Δαλμανούθα  
 (-νουνθα B dalmanunea arm)] Μελεγαδα D\* Μαγαδα D<sup>1</sup>vid Μαγεδα 28 2<sup>ρε</sup> Μαγδαλα  
 1 13 69 209 271 347 Magidan d Magedan a ff Magedam b i r Mageda c k Μαγεδαν  
 syris<sup>invid</sup> Magdal syrpaled(Land) Μαγδαλαν go

is the equivalent of σφ. in modern colloquial English (cf. Westcott on Jo. vi. 13), but it has not been admitted by the Revisers of the English Bible. See art. *Basket* in Hastings, *D.B.* i. p. 256. Probably the correspondence of the number of the σφυρίδες with that of the loaves is accidental, like the relation between the number of the loaves in the earlier miracle and that of the multitude (*πέντε, πεντακισχίλιοι*); to assign a σφυρίς to each pair of Apostles and the seventh to the Lord is as puerile as to infer from such a coincidence the untrustworthiness of the whole story.—‘Ἐπτὰ σφ. is in apposition to περισσεύματα (WM., p. 664); σφυρίδας is written inexactly for σφ. πλήρεις (Mt.), or σφυρίδων πληρωμάτα (*infra* v. 20).

9. ἦσαν δὲ ὡς τετρακισχίλιοι] Mt. ἦσαν τέτρ. ἄνδρες χωρὶς γυναικῶν καὶ παιδίων (as in xiv. 21). The number was probably ascertained as before by an orderly division of the crowd into συμπόσια of a certain size.

For a comparison of the details of the two miracles (Mc. vi. 35 ff., viii. 1 ff.) see Origen, Hilary, and Jerome on Mt. xv.; Jerome's quaint and terse summary may be quoted: “ibi v panes erant et ii pisces, hic vii panes et pauci pisculi; ibi super faenum discumbunt, hic super terram; ibi qui comedunt v millia sunt, hic iv millia; ibi xii cophini repletur, hic vii spor-

tae.” Each of these fathers adds a mystical interpretation of some interest.

#### 10—13. FRESH ENCOUNTER WITH THE PHARISEES NEAR DALMANUTHA (Mt. xv. 39 b—xvi. 5).

10. εὐθὺς ἐμβὰς κτλ.] After dismissing the crowd the Lord Himself at once left the neighbourhood by boat; cf. vi. 45 f. His destination was Dalmanutha or Magadan (Mc. ἦλθεν εἰς τὰ μέρη Δ.=Mt. ἦλθ. εἰς τ. ὥρια Μαγαδάν; cf. Mc. vii. 24 with Mt. xv. 21). Neither name has been definitely identified, and the geographical question is complicated by the uncertainty of the text in both Gospels: in Mt. besides Μαγαδάν (or Μαγεδάν) we have the readings Μαγδαλά, Μαγδαλάν; in Mc., for Δαλμανούθα (B, Δαλμανούθα), cod. D has Μελεγαδά (D\*), Μαγαδά (D<sup>1</sup>)—a form which appears substantially in all true O.L. texts and in the Sinaitic Syriac. Dr J. R. Harris (*Cod. Bez.* p. 178) suggests that Δαλμανούθα represents the Syriac = εἰς τὰ μέρη, and Dr Nestle inclines to a similar view (*Philol. Sacr.*, p. 17); on the other hand see Chase, *Syriac element*, &c. p. 146 n. Dalman (*Gr.* p. 133), with perhaps slightly more probability, suggests that Δαλμανούθα: cf. *Worte Jesu*, p. 52 f. Assuming that both Magadan and Dalmanutha are genuine names, we may accept as a

**καὶ ἐξῆλθον οἱ Φαρισᾶιοι καὶ ἤρξαντο συνζητεῖν ἡ αὐτῷ, ζητοῦντες παρ' αὐτοῦ σημεῖον ἀπὸ τοῦ οὐρανοῦ,**

II καὶ (1<sup>o</sup>)...ηρξ. καὶ ηρξ. οἱ Φ. 33 εκ | εξηλθοσαν Δ | αυτω] pr συν D | om γητ. παρ αυτου Δ | σημειον] pr ιδειν Ν 68 ε

working hypothesis a modification of Augustine's opinion (*cons. ev.* ii. 51 "non dubitandum est eundem locum esse sub utroque nomine"); both places must at least be sought in the same neighbourhood. Was it to another part of the eastern coast that the Lord sailed, or did He cross to the west side of the lake? Eusebius (*onomast.*), who read Μεγαδάν in Mc., adds καὶ ἔστι νῦν ἡ Μαγαδανή περὶ τὴν Γεράσαν. On the other hand it is usually assumed that Μαγαδάν is another form of Magdala, i.e. el Mejdel at the southern end of the plain of Gennesaret, and that εἰς τὸ πέραν (v. 13) implies a return from the western to the eastern shore; on the latter point cf. vi. 45. Robinson (*B.R.* iii., p. 264) and Thomson (*Land &c.*, p. 393) mention a site known as ed-Delhemiyah near the junction of the Yarmûk with the Jordan, some five miles S. of the Lake (see map); if its territory ran down to the shore (cf. v. 1), the locality is consistent with Mc.'s account. Of a Magadan however in this neighbourhood there is as yet no trace: but the form like Μαγδαλά may represent לִבְנָה, as in Jos. xv. 37 where Μαγδὰ Γάδ (B)=Μαγδὰλ Γάδ (A). On the whole question see *Encycl. Bibl.*, s.v., and Hastings, *D.B.* iii. art. *Magadan*.

II. καὶ ἐξῆλθον οἱ Φ.] Mt. adds καὶ Σαδδουκαῖοι—the only mention of the Sadducees as present at any interview with our Lord during the Galilean ministry; as the aristocratic and priestly party they resided principally at Jerusalem and in its neighbourhood. Some were possibly connected with the court of Herod (see on v. 15), residing at Tiberias. Their association with the Pharisees on this

occasion indicates the extent to which the hostility of the latter was now carried. Ἐξῆλθον, i.e. from Dalmanutha (cf. Mt. xv. 22), or possibly from the towns on the W. coast. Their appearance is an argument against locating Dalmanutha on the S. of the lake, but not perhaps an insuperable one; the journey from Capernaum to the S. end was not a serious one for men who had been watching their opportunity to retaliate.

ἥρξαντο συνζητεῖν αὐτῷ κτλ.] Bengel: "ἥρξαντο...post pausam." Their plan was to tempt Him by a leading question to commit Himself to a damaging statement of His claims. Συνζητεῖν is a favourite word with Mc. (i. 27, ix. 10, 14, 16, xii. 28), found also in Lc.<sup>ev.2</sup>, act.<sup>2</sup>; see note on i. 27.

ζητοῦντες...σημεῖον ἀπὸ τοῦ οὐρανοῦ] In Lc. xi. 16, 29 the incident occurs in another context; in Mt. it appears in both (xii. 38 f., xvi. 1 f.). The request may naturally have been repeated, but the substantial identity of the answer, especially the recurrence of the σημεῖον Ιωνᾶ, is suspicious; that the conversation is here at least in its right place is attested by the agreement of Mt. and Mc. The demand was for σημεῖα of a higher order than the miracles (Bede: "signa quaerunt quasi quae viderant signa non fuerint")—a visible or audible interposition of God (Mt. σημεῖον ἐπιδείξαι). The manna is cited in Jo. vi. 30f. as such a sign; the Bath Qol might have been regarded as another. Such wonders had more than once signalled the ministry of Elijah (1 K. xviii. 38, 2 K. i. 10 ff.). The more fruitful but more human and less startling miracles of the Gospel appealed less forcibly to a generation which was possessed by a

12 πειράζοντες αὐτόν. <sup>12</sup> καὶ ἀναστενάξας τῷ πνεύματι αὐτοῦ λέγει Τί ἡ γενεὰ αὕτη ζητεῖ σημεῖον; ἀμὴν λέγω [ὑμῖν] Εἰ δοθήσεται τῇ γενεᾷ ταύτῃ σημεῖον. 13 <sup>13</sup> καὶ ἀφεὶς αὐτοὺς πάλιν ἐμβὰς ἀπῆλθεν εἰς τὸ πέραν.

12 αναστενάξας] στεναξας M\* min<sup>pauc</sup> | αυτουν AL 1071 om DM\*Γ 1 282 b 1 | ζητει σημειον NBCDLΔ 1 28 33 118 209 604 2<sup>pe</sup>] σημειον επιζητει ANXGΠΣΦ al min<sup>pl</sup> Or | om νυν BL (hab ΝACDNXΓΠΣ al) | ει] ou Δ 5 13 69 124 346 1071 syrr<sup>sin pesh</sup> me al 13 αφεις] καταλιπων ΝΣ | εμβασ] + eis (το) πλοιον (AEFG)ΗΚ(M) Ν(S)U(VX)ΓΠ(ΣΦ) min<sup>mu</sup> lat<sup>τ(exo)</sup> vg<sup>ed</sup> syrr<sup>sin</sup>(vid) pesh hal arm me go (om NBCDLΔ ff vg<sup>coadd opt</sup>)

passion for display (i Cor. i. 22, cf. Bp Lightfoot *ad l.*). As Thph. suggests: ἐνόμικον...ὅτι οὐ δυνήσεται ἔξ οὐρανοῦ ποιῆσαι σημεῖον οὐδὲ δὴ ἐν τῷ Βεελζεβοὺλ δυνάμενος ποιεῖν τὰ ἐν τῇ γῇ μόνα σημεῖα. On the two participles without intervening copula see WM., p. 433.

πειράζοντες αὐτόν] The second part qualifies the first; the request had a purpose which did not appear on the surface of the words—it was of the nature of a test. Such a test or question may be friendly (Jo. vi. 6), or hostile (Mc. x. 2, xii. 15); in the present case the intention could scarcely have been doubtful to any who knew the men.

12. ἀναστενάξας τῷ πνεύματι] Ἀναστενάξειν, used here only in the N.T., occurs in the LXX. (Sir. xxv. 18, Thren. i. 4, 2 Macc. vi. 29; cf. Sus. 22, Th.). Like ἀνακράζειν (Mc. i. 23, vi. 49) and ἀναφωνεῖν (Lc. i. 42), it is more intense in meaning than the simple verb: the sigh seemed to come, as we say, from the bottom of the heart; the Lord's human spirit was stirred to its depths. On τῷ πνεύματι see ii. 8, note. Bede: "veram hominis naturam, veros humanae naturae circumferens affectus, super eorum dolet et ingemiscit erroribus." Obstrestance sin drew from Christ a deeper sigh than the sight of suffering (see vii. 34, and cf. Jo. xiii. 21), a sigh in which anger and sorrow both had a part (iii. 4, note).

τί ἡ γενεὰ αὕτη κτλ.] Mt. γ. πονηρὰ

καὶ μοιχαλὶς σ. ἐπιζητεῖ: on μοιχαλίς, which occurs *infra* v. 38, see Orig. in Mt. t. xii. 4. The phrase ἡ γενεὰ αὕτη is used again v. 38, (ix. 19), xiii. 30, and is frequent in Mt. and Lc.; it appears to look back to the age of the Exodus, and to point to such passages as Deut. xxxii. 5, Ps. xciv. (xciv.) 10; cf. Acts ii. 40, Phil. ii. 15. As the generation which came out of Egypt resisted Moses, so the generation to which Jesus belonged resisted its greater Deliverer; see the parallel worked out, with a slightly different reference, in Heb. iv. 7 ff. On the question whether γενεά bears in the Gospels the wider sense of γένος see xiii. 30, note. For ἀμὴν λέγω cf. iii. 28, note.

εἰ δοθήσεται κτλ.] Mt. σημεῖον οὐ δ. εἰ μὴ τὸ σημεῖον Ἰωνᾶ κτλ. Cf. Orig. in Ezech. xiv. 20: 'ἐὰν νιοὶ καὶ θυγατέρες ὑπολειφθῶσιν' ἀντὶ τοῦ 'οὐχ ὑπολειφθήσονται'...οὗτῳ καὶ ὁ κύριος ἐν τῷ κατὰ Μᾶρκον εὐαγγελίῳ 'εἰ δοθήσεται,' τοιτέστιν 'οὐ δοθήσεται.' The idiom is based on the use of εἰ to commence an imprecation which is in fact a solemn form of negation; for other exx. in the LXX., cf. Gen. xiv. 23, Deut. i. 35, 3 Regn. i. 51, Ps. lxxxviii. (lxxxix.) 36, xciv. (xciv.) 11, Isa. Ixiii. 8. This is the only ex. of its employment in the N.T., except where Ps. xciv. is cited (Heb. iii. 11, iv. 3, 5). See WM., p. 627, Burton § 272. The exception in Mt., εἰ μὴ τὸ σημεῖον Ἰωνᾶ (cf. Mt. xii. 40, Lc. xi. 30), points to the

<sup>14</sup> καὶ ἐπελάθοντο λαβεῖν ἄρτους, καὶ εἰ μὴ ἔνα <sup>14 § k</sup> ἄρτον οὐκ εἶχον μεθ' ἑαυτῶν ἐν τῷ πλοίῳ. <sup>15</sup> καὶ διε- 15 στέλλετο αὐτοῖς λέγων Ὁρᾶτε, βλέπετε ἀπὸ τῆς

14 επελαθοντο (-θεντο B\*)] + οι μαθηται (αυτοι) DUΦ 13 28 69 1071 al<sup>sat</sup> mu c q | και ει μη εν αρτον ουκ ειχον ει μη ενα a. ειχ. Da (k) ενα μονον αρτον εχοντες 1 13 28 69 209 346 604 2<sup>po</sup> (arm) nisi unum panem quem habebunt (b) (c) d ff i qr om ει μη syr<sup>sin</sup> 15 διεστελλετο (διεστειλ). EF 13 28 69 131 346 al<sup>paue</sup>] ενετειλατο Δ | opare] om D 1 118 209 2<sup>po</sup> a b ff i kr syr<sup>sin</sup> arm + και C 13 28 69 124 al<sup>paue</sup> c f | om βλεπετε Δ 604 arm<sup>vid</sup>

Resurrection as the supreme proof of the Divine mission of Jesus, and one which that generation was to receive: cf. Acts ii. 32 ff.

13. καὶ ἀφεὶς αὐτοὺς κτλ.] Mt. καὶ καταλιπὼν αὐτούς... His departure was significant, an anticipation of the end (Lc. xiii. 35); since there was no scope for His ministry among these men, He entered the boat again and crossed the Lake. Thph.: ἀφίησι τὸν Φαρισαῖον δόκιμος ὡς ἀδιορθώτος. Whether τὸ πέραν is here the western or the eastern shore, or merely a point on the same shore where He was, cannot be determined from the word (cf. iv. 35, v. 1, 21, vi. 45). The destination on this occasion was Bethsaida (v. 22); if "the parts of Dalmanutha" were near the exit of the Jordan, the boat must have traversed nearly the whole length of the lake, from S. to N.E.

14—21. THE LEAVEN OF THE PHARISEES AND THE LEAVEN OF HEROD (Mt. xvi. 5—12; cf. Lc. xii. 1).

14. καὶ ἐπελάθοντο λαβεῖν ἄρτους] Mt. alters the setting of this incident by placing it on or after the arrival (ἀλθόντες...εἰς τὸ πέραν); in Mc. the omission is discovered, as it appears, while they are crossing (cf. vv. 14, 22). Ordinarily, at least when in thinly peopled neighbourhoods, the Twelve carried the thin flat loaves of the country in their πήραι or κόφιγοι—the direction given in vi. 8 is clearly exceptional. It probably rested with Judas of Kerioth to purchase food for the party (Jo. xii. 6), but owing perhaps to the sudden departure (v. 13),

or under the impression that the fragments of the seven loaves were amply sufficient, the matter had been overlooked. When they came to search their bread baskets only one cake could be found (Mt. omits this detail). Ἐπελάθοντο is rendered by the English pluperfect in all the English versions except Wycliffe, Rheims, and R.V.; cf. Burton § 48, and see Field, *Notes*, p. 11. The form ἐπελάθεντο (B\*) is not uncommon in the best MSS. of the LXX.; see Jud. iii. 7 (A), Ps. lxxvii. (lxxviii.) II (B\*), Hos. xiii. 6, Jer. xiii. 21 (B\* &). Μεθ' ἑαυτῶν: cf. ix. 8, xiv. 7.

15. διεστελλετο] Either 'during the crossing He charged them'; or, 'He charged them more than once' (Burton §§ 21, 24; cf. vii. 36). Βλέπετε ἀπό κτλ., Mt. προσέχετε ἀπό... 'keep your eye (mind) upon it with the view of avoiding it'; cf. xii. 38 (WM., p. 280), and see Wilcken in *Archiv f. Papyrusforschung*, iv. p. 568; other constructions are βλέπειν τινά (xiii. 9, Phil. iii. 2), βλ. μή (xiii. 5, Col. ii. 8). Ζύμη is used with an ethical reference in two other contexts of the N.T., (1) in the parable of the leaven (Mt. xiii. 33, Lc. xiii. 21), (2) in the Pauline proverb μικρὰ ζ. δόλον τὸ φύραμα ζυμοῖ (1 Cor. v. 6 ff., Gal. v. 9); on both these uses see Bp Lightfoot's notes). The word represents a tendency working invisibly, and, except in the Parable of the leaven, an evil tendency, partly because ή ζ. γέγονεν ἐκ φθορᾶς (Plutarch, cited by Lightfoot), partly owing to

16 ζύμης τῶν Φαρισαίων καὶ τῆς ζύμης Ἡρώδου. ἕκατον  
διελογίζοντο πρὸς ἄλλήλους ὅτι ἄρτους οὐκ ἔχουσιν.  
17 ἕκατον γνοὺς λέγει αὐτοῖς Τί διαλογίζεσθε ὅτι ἄρτους  
οὐκ ἔχετε; οὕπω νοεῖτε οὐδὲ συνίετε; πεπωρωμένην

15 Ηρωδου] των Ηρωδιανων G 1 13 28 69 346 2<sup>ρ</sup>ο alpauc i k arm 16 προς  
αλληλους] εν εαυτοις 1071 | οτε] pr λεγοντες ACLNXΓΔΠΣΦ al min<sup>pl</sup> f vg syrr arm  
me go aeth | εχουσιν B 1 28 209 604 2<sup>ρ</sup>ο c k syr<sup>sin(vid)</sup>] ειχαν D (a b c ff q) εχομεν  
ΝΑC(K)LNXΓΔΠΣΦ min<sup>pl</sup> f vg syrr arm aeth 17 διαλογίξεσθε]+εν ταις καρδιαις  
υμων DUΦ 28 604 2<sup>ρ</sup>ο alpauc ab c ff i q syr<sup>hel</sup> arm aeth (post ίμ. add ολιγοπιστοι Φ 604  
alpauc arm)+εν αυτοις M 13 61 69 346 8<sup>ρ</sup>ο | πεπωρωμενην (πεπηρ. D\* caecatum f vg)  
syr<sup>sin(vid)</sup>] pr ετι ΑΧΓΠΦ min<sup>pl</sup> f q vg syrr

the rigid exclusion of leaven during the Passover and in certain other sacrificial rites (Lev. ii. 11 *πᾶσαν θυσίαν οὐ ποιήσετε ζυμωτόν*). In the present case the  $\zeta.$  was (Mt. xv. 12) the teaching of the Pharisees, or (acc. to Lc. xii. 1) the spirit of hypocrisy which their teaching encouraged. Once admitted into the heart or into a society, this principle would spread until it rendered the spiritual service of God impossible.

*καὶ τῆς ζύμης Ἡρώδου]* The repetition of the art. implies the distinctness of the two tendencies indicated; in Mt. this point is overlooked (*τῆς ζ. τῶν Φαρισαίων καὶ Σαδδουκαίων*). *Τῶν Σαδδουκαίων* (Mt.) appears to answer to ‘*Ἡρόδον* (Mc.). Herod was not formally a Sadducee, i.e., he did not reject the Pharisaic doctrine of a resurrection (cf. vi. 16). But the worldliness of the Herod family and of Antipas’s court was not far removed from the temper of the Sadducean aristocrats; and the supporters of the Herod dynasty were probably disposed to Sadducean rather than Pharisaic views. Mt. seems to have used *Σαδδουκαῖοι* in this passage as roughly equivalent to ‘*Ἡρῳδιανοί*’ (Mc. iii. 6, Mt. xxii. 16). ‘The leaven of Herod’ was doubtless the practical unbelief which springs from love of the world and the immoralities to which in a coarser age it led. Bede: “fermen-

tum Herodis est adulterium, homicidium, temeritas iurandi, simulatio religionis." There are occasions when this tendency can ally itself with punctilious externalism in religious practice; the two are never perhaps fundamentally at variance. Both were to be carefully shunned by the Twelve and the future Church.

16. διελογίζοντο πρὸς ἀλλήλους κτλ.] The mention of leaven led to a discussion among the Twelve as to their mistake—how it arose, who was to blame, how it could be rectified. For διελογ. cf. ii. 6, 8; with πρὸς ἀλλ. (Mt., ἐν ἑαυτοῖς) cf. πρὸς ἑαυτούς, xi. 31. "Οτι ἄρτους κτλ.: Mt., λέγοντες ὅτι "Ἄρτους οὐκ ἐλάβομεν. "Οτι is 'recitative'; their conversation turned on the omission to provide themselves with loaves.

17. *γνῶν λέγει*] When He became aware what they were saying, and what had led to it; see ii. 8, note; ix. 33. On *γνώσκειν* see iv. 13; *γνῶν* is the aor. part. of antecedent action (Burton, § 134). "Οτι may again be recitative: 'why discuss such a subject?' Mt. adds *δλιγόπιστο*, perhaps as the equivalent of what he afterwards omits (see below).

*οὐπώ νοεῖτε οὐδὲ συνίετε; ]* Have ye not yet learnt the habit of attending to and reflecting upon the facts that pass under your observation from day to day? For similar questions imply-

ἔχετε τὴν καρδίαν ὑμῶν; <sup>18</sup> ὁφθαλμοὺς ἔχοντες οὐ 18.  
 βλέπετε καὶ ὡτα ἔχοντες οὐκ ἀκούετε; καὶ οὐ μνη-  
 μονεύετε <sup>19</sup>ότε τοὺς §πέντε ἄρτους ἐκλασα εἰς τοὺς 19 §κ  
 πεντακισχιλίους, πόσους κοφίνους κλασμάτων πλήρεις  
 ἦρατε; λέγουσιν αὐτῷ Δώδεκα. <sup>20</sup>ότε τοὺς ἐπτὰ εἰς 20

<sup>18</sup> καὶ οὐ μνημονεύετε] ουδὲ μνημ. Δ ουπω νοειτε ΝΣ ουπω νοειτε ουδε μνημ. <sup>20</sup>ο  
 arm <sup>19</sup> εκλασα] pr ovs (D) 13 69 346 k om εκλ. syr<sup>sin</sup> arm <sup>20</sup> οτε BL <sup>20</sup>ο  
 + και ΙΔ vg pr και c syr<sup>peh</sup> arm + δε ADXGΠ al min<sup>feromn</sup> a ff i q syr<sup>hcl</sup> go aeth + δε  
 και CN f

ing censure comp. Mc. iv. 13, 40, vii. 18, Jo. xiv. 9; for νοεῖν see vii. 18, xiii. 14, and for συνιέναι, iv. 12, vi. 52, vii. 14. Οὐδὲ συνιέτε has no place in Mt. who passes on to καὶ οὐ (οὐδὲ) μνημονεύετε (v. 18). For the sequence οὐ...οὐδὲ see WM., p. 613.

πεπωρωμένην ἔχετε κτλ.] Wanting in Mt. On πεπωρ. (Wycliffe, Tindale, Cranmer, “blinded”) see iii. 5, vi. 52; as to the reading of D here cf. Chase, *Syro-Latin text*, p. 42. The train of thought is well explained by Bengel: “ex corde induratio manat in visum auditum et memoriam.” For the predicative use of the participle see Blass, *Gr.* p. 158.

18. ὁφθαλμοὺς ἔχοντες κτλ.] They were as men who possessed organs of sight and hearing which they could not or would not use. The words are adapted from Jer. v. 21 ὁφθαλμοὶ αὐτοῖς καὶ οὐ βλέπουσιν, ὡτα αὐτοῖς καὶ οὐκ ἀκούουσιν, Ezech. xii. 2 ἔχουσιν ὁφθαλμοὺς τοῦ βλέπειν καὶ οὐ βλέπουσιν καὶ ὡτα ἔχουσιν τοῦ ἀκούειν καὶ οὐκ ἀκούουσιν. The condition of the Twelve was perilously near to that of the judicially blinded multitude (iv. 12 note). Οὐ μνημονεύετε; the Lord blames a lapse of memory which was due to heedlessness and lack of spiritual vision. Their forgetfulness needed and found a spiritual remedy (Jo. xiv. 26 ὁ δὲ παράκλητος ...ὑπομνήσει ὑμᾶς πάντα ἣ εἶπον ὑμῖν ἐγώ). With the whole saying compare *Oxyrh. Logia* 3, 8, and see Salmon's

*Cath. and Univ. Sermons*, vii. (on ‘Colour-blindness’).

19, 20. ὅτε τοὺς πέντε ἄρτους κτλ.] Cf. vi. 41 κατέκλασεν τοὺς ἄρτους... αὐτοῖς, viii. 6 ἐκλασεν...τῷ ὄχλῳ. The ministerial action of the Twelve passes out of sight in this review of the two miracles (ἐκλασα εἰς...); the Lord's breaking of the loaves was symbolical of the munificence which fed the multitudes; cf. Isa. lviii. 7 διάθρυπτε πεινάντι τὸν ἄρτον σου. For εἰς in this reference see WM., p. 267, and esp. Deissmann, *B. St.*, p. 117 f.; κλᾶν τινι is the more obvious construction, cf. Thren. iv. 4 ὁ διακλῶν οὐκ ἔστιν αὐτοῖς (Μηλ?). Κοφίνους κλ. πλήρεις = κλάσματα...κοφίνων πληρώματα (vi. 42); σφυρίδων πληρώματα κλασμάτων = περισσεύματα κλασμάτων...σφυρίδας (viii. 8). For exx. of the double gen. σφυρίδων...κλασμάτων see WM., p. 239; in this instance the construction may perhaps be more conveniently explained by regarding σφυρίδος πλήρωμα in the light of a single noun—‘a basketful,’ on which κλασμάτων depends as the gen. of content (WM., p. 235). Lightfoot (*Colossians*, p. 326) compares Eccl. iv. 6 πλήρωμα δρακὸς ἀναπαίσεως...μόχθου, ‘a handful of rest...of toil’; Fritzsche points to Eur. *Ion* 1069 κρατήρων πληρώματα. Κοφίνους...σφυρίδων. Wycliffe, “coffyns...leepis”; cf. v. 8, note.

λέγουσιν αὐτῷ Δώδεκα...Ἐπτά] Their memory does not fail them as regards

τοὺς τετρακισχιλίους, πόσων σφυρίδων πληρώματα κλασμάτων ἤρατε; καὶ λέγουσιν [αὐτῷ] Ἐπτά.  
 21 <sup>καὶ</sup> καὶ ἔλεγεν αὐτοῖς Οὕπω συνίετε;  
 22 <sup>καὶ</sup> ἔρχονται εἰς Βηθσαΐδαν. καὶ φέρουσιν αὐτῷ

20 ποσῶν σφυρίδων πληρώματα κλασμάτων] ποσας σφυρίδας κλ. Δ ποσ. σπ. κλ. πληρεις 604 2<sup>ρ</sup>ο και ποσους κοφινους κλ. πληρεις Δ | ηρατε πληρεις 1071 | om αυτω ΙΑΔΝΧΙΓΠΣΦ min<sup>fereomn</sup> (a) b c f f i k q syrr<sup>beshhel</sup> arm (hab BCLΔ 115 vg me aeth)  
 21 ουτω ΙΑΚΛΔΠ 1 118 209 1071 al k] πως ουτω ADMNUXΣΦ min<sup>satmu</sup> a c f f i r vg syrr go πως ουν ουτω 13 69 124 346 f arm πως ου BEFGHSVT min<sup>pl</sup> b d q me aeth | συνίετε] συννοειτε D\* νοειτε BD<sup>2</sup> 22 ερχονται ΙΑc.aBCDLΔ 13 28 33 69 124 346 1071 al<sup>pao</sup> latt me arm go aeth] ερχεται ΙΑ\*ANXΓΠ al<sup>pl</sup> syrr | Βηθσαιδαν ΙΑBLNX ΓΠΦ al min<sup>pl</sup> b (-δα CΝΔ (βησσ.) Σ 1 28 33 69 al<sup>oomn</sup> c k vg syrr arm aeth)] Βηθανιαν Δ 262\* a f f f i l q r go

their own part in the transaction, so far at least as it had its immediate reward.

21. καὶ ἔλεγεν αὐτοῖς Οὕπω συνίετε; ] Even now their powers of reflexion were not in exercise. Mt. represents the Lord as anticipating their riper thoughts (*πῶς οὐ νοεῖτε δι τοῦ οὐ περὶ ἄρτων εἴπον υἱόν;* προσέχετε δὲ ἀπὸ τῆς ζύμης τῶν Φ. καὶ Σ.), and adds that upon this they understood that the teaching of the Pharisees and Saducees was the leaven of which they must beware. But Mc.'s stimulating question, which leaves the Twelve to think out the matter for themselves, is certainly more characteristic of our Lord's method of dealing with souls. Nor does the equation *ζύμη = διδαχή* at all exhaust the purpose of His reference to the two miracles of the loaves. The inability to understand a metaphor was but a part of their offence; their anxiety about the want of bread had shewn a distrust of His power to provide which the experience of baskets twice refilled ought to have made impossible. It is *ἀλιγοπιστία* and not mere want of intelligence which He censures (Mt. xvi. 8).

22—26. ARRIVAL AT BETHSAIDA. A BLIND MAN RECOVERS SIGHT. (Mc. only.)

22. ἔρχονται εἰς Βηθσαιδάν] From

Dalmanutha (viii. 10 q.v.). Bethsaida, sc. Julias; see note on vi. 45. The remarkable reading of D and some other O.L. authorities (*Βηθανίαν*) either refers to an unknown Bethany on the Lake, or has arisen from a confusion of Bethsaida with the Bethany beyond Jordan (Jo. i. 28) where John baptized; the latter locality is excluded by its inland position. Bethsaida Julias was at this time more than a *κώμη* (vv. 23, 26, cf. Jo. i. 45), but it may have kept its old style in the popular speech; or one of the villages in its territory may be intended in the sequel (cf. vi. 36).

φέρουσιν αὐτῷ τυφλόν κτλ.] A second miracle recorded only by Mc. (cf. vii. 32 ff.). There are some remarkable coincidences between the two narratives, both of language and of detail. The words φέρουσιν αὐτῷ ...καὶ παρακαλοῦσιν ἵνα...πτύσας...ἀναβλέψεις are common to both; cf. also ἐπιλαβόμενος (viii. 23) with ἀπολ. (vii. 33). Both again agree in many of the circumstances: the withdrawal from the crowd, the touching of the organs affected, the strict charge to keep the matter close. Yet there is no room for suspecting either of the two miracles. Similarity of surroundings may have led to partial similarity of circumstances; but the

τυφλὸν καὶ παρακαλοῦσιν αὐτὸν ἵνα αὐτοῦ ἀψηται.

<sup>23</sup> καὶ ἐπιλαβόμενος τῆς χειρὸς τοῦ τυφλοῦ ἐξήνεγκεν 23 αὐτὸν ἔξω τῆς κώμης, καὶ πτύσας εἰς τὰ ὄμματα αὐτοῦ, ἐπιθεὶς τὰς χεῖρας αὐτῷ, ἐπηρώτα αὐτόν Εἴ

22 τυφλοὺς] + δαιμονιζομένον Δ      23 επιλαβ. τῆς χειρὸς] λαβομένος την χειρα D | εξηνεγκεν ΝΒCL(Δ) 33] εξηγαγεν ADNXTΠΙΣΦ al min<sup>ferō</sup>own | αυτω] αυτου ΑΚΔ 28 2<sup>ρ</sup> ι7οι al<sup>pauc</sup> f1 vg (αυτον et αυτω syr<sup>hel</sup> me)

narratives are at the heart of the facts distinct.

τυφλὸν] The first mention in Mc. of blindness as an infirmity for which a cure was sought from Christ; a second case occurs in x. 46 ff.; for cases in the other Gospels see Mt. ix. 27, xi. 5, xii. 22, xv. 30, xxi. 14, Jo. ix. 1 ff. Παρακ. αὐτ. ἵνα αὐτοῦ ἀψηται: cf. i. 41, x. 13; and for the converse, iii. 10, v. 27 ff., vi. 56. Παρακαλεῖν ἵνα: cf. v. 10, 18 (note). Αὐτοῦ = τοῦ τυφλοῦ, cf. WM., p. 186. Ἀπτεσθαι=nearly ἐπιτιθέναι τὰς χεῖρας: in Job i. 12 it is the LXX. rendering of יְלַפְּשׁ: cf. Mc. i. 41, x. 13.

23. ἐπιλαβόμενος τῆς χειρὸς κτλ.] Cf. κρατήσας τῆς χειρός, i. 31, v. 41, ix. 27: ἐπιλαβέσθαι (τινός, τινά) occurs in Lc. ev. 5, act. 7, i Tim.<sup>2</sup>, Heb.<sup>2</sup>, but in the other Gospels only here and Mt. xiv. 31. Like the κωφὸς μογιλάδος the blind man is taken apart (ἀπολαβόμενος, vii. 33), but since he cannot follow, the Lord leads him by the hand (Bengel: "ipse ducebat: magna humilitas"). For the double gen. (τῆς χειρὸς τοῦ τυφλοῦ) see WM., p. 252, Blass, Gr. p. 101; as Blass observes, the reading of D is in the style neither of classical nor of N.T. Greek; R.V. rightly, "he took hold of the blind man by the hand."

ἐξήνεγκεν αὐτὸν ἔξω τῆς κώμης] 'He brought him outside the village' (Wycliffe: "out of the streete"); the appeal had evidently been made in one of the thoroughfares or open spaces where a concourse might be expected. For this use of ἔξω cf. i. 45, xi. 19. The isolation was probably for the

sake of the blind man himself. Euth. remarks: οὐ γὰρ ἥσαν οἱ τῆς κώμης ταύτης οἰκήτορες ἄξιοι θεάσασθαι γυνόμενον τὸ τοιοῦτον θάῦμα. But there is no ground for this supposition. Cf. v. 26.

πτύσας εἰς τὰ ὄμματα αὐτοῦ] Cf. vii. 33, note. The Lord condescends to use a popular remedy as a symbol of the healing power which resided in His own humanity. Suetonius ascribes a similar miracle to Vespasian: *Vesp. 7* "e plebe quidam luminibus orbatus, item aliis debili crure sedentem pro tribunali pariter adierunt... 'restituturum oculos si inspuisset, confirmaturum crus si dignaretur calce contingere'... utrumque temptavit, nec eventus defuit." See also Tac. *hist. iv. 81*. The poetical word ὄμμα is rare in Biblical Gk. (Prov.<sup>5</sup> Sap.<sup>2</sup> 4 Macc.<sup>3</sup> Mt<sup>1</sup> Mc<sup>1</sup>). Ἐπιθεὶς τὰς χεῖρας αὐτῷ: the laying on of hands is vouchsafed as an additional help to the blind man's faith. In some cases it seems to have been the only sign of healing used (vi. 5, Lc. iv. 40, xiii. 13).

ἐπηρώτα αὐτόν Εἴ τι βλέπεις;] For the imperf. cf. v. 9, viii. 27, 29. The question is regarded as a factor in a process which is passing before the reader's mind. On *el* as a direct interrogative see WM., p. 639; the traditional text softens but at the same time weakens the sentence (see vv. ll.). The Lord recognises that the recovery of sight in this case will be gradual; Victor: σημαίνων ὡς ἀτελῆς τῶν προσαγόντων ή πίστις καὶ αὐτοῦ τοῦ πεπηρωμένου τὰς ὄψεις.

24 τι βλέπεις; 24 καὶ ἀναβλέψας ἔλεγεν Βλέπω τοὺς  
25 ἀνθρώπους, ὅτι ὡς δένδρα ὄρῳ περιπατοῦντας. 25 εἰτα  
πάλιν ἔθηκεν τὰς χεῖρας ἐπὶ τοὺς ὄφθαλμοὺς αὐτοῦ,  
καὶ διέβλεψεν καὶ ἀπεκατέστη, καὶ ἐνέβλεπεν

23 βλεπεις BCD\*Δ 2<sup>ro</sup> me aethi] βλεπεις ΝABC\*LM<sup>xt</sup>ΝΧΓΔΠΣΦ al min<sup>fere omn</sup> latt syrr go arm 24 ελεγεν] ειπεν Ν\*C 1071 al<sup>pau</sup> λέγει DN | οτι ws δενδρα ορῳ περιπ. ΝABC\*LM<sup>xt</sup>ΝΧΓΔΠΣΦ min<sup>pl</sup> go] ws δ. περιπ. C<sup>2</sup>DM<sup>me</sup> i 604 1071 al<sup>nonn</sup> latt syrr arm me aeth | περιπατουντα F 225 25 om ειτα syr<sup>pesh</sup> arm | και διεβλεψεν (ΝBC\*ΛΔ i 28 209 346)] και ηρξατο αναβλεψαι D b ff i r vg και εποιησεν αυτον αναβλεψαι ΑΝΧΓΠ al<sup>fere omn</sup> a f q et uidit k syr<sup>sinuid(sic)</sup> om syr<sup>pesh</sup> κ. επ. αυτ. αναβλ. και διεβλεψεν i3 69 (arm) | απεκατεστη ΝΒCLΔ min<sup>pau</sup>] απεκατεσταθη (αποκ.) Α(D)Ν(U)ΧΓ(Π)ΣΦ al min<sup>pl</sup> | και ενεβλεπεν Ν\*BL(Δ) i3 28 69 346] κ. εβλεψεν Ν\* κ. ενεβλεψεν ACEGΓΗΣΦ al min<sup>permu</sup> κ. ανεβλεψεν FM\* min<sup>sat mu</sup> ωστε αναβλεψαι D latt

24. ἀναβλέψας ἔλεγεν κτλ.] At the question the man involuntarily raised his eyes. *'Αναβλέπειν* is either (a) to look up (vi. 41, vii. 34, xvi. 4) or (b) to recover sight (x. 51, 52); the context determines the meaning in each case. The same ambiguity appears in certain other verbs compounded with *ἀνά*, e.g. *ἀνάγειν*, *ἀναδιδόναι*, *ἀναδύεσθαι*, *ἀνακαλεῖν*. *Βλέπω τοὺς ἀνθρώπους κτλ.*, “I see men, for I perceive objects like trees walking.” As yet he can discriminate a man from a tree of the same height only by his movements; the image reflected on the retina is still indistinct; “nec caecus est nec oculos habet” (Jerome). Cf. Jud. ix. 36 τὴν σκιὰν τῶν ὄρέων σὺ βλέπεις ὡς ἄνδρας: Field compares the proverb οὐδὲ ἀνθρώπους ἔώρων τοὺς ἀνθρώπους. The reading of the R.T. which omits ὅτι and ὄρῳ—“I see men like trees, walking”—is easier, but comparatively pointless. On the distinction between *βλέπω* and *ὄρῳ* see iv. 12, note.

25. εἰτα πάλιν ἔθηκεν κτλ.] A second application of the Lord’s hand completes the cure. *Διέβλεψεν*, *ἀπεκατέστη*, *ἐνέβλεπεν*, represent the completeness of the recovery in three aspects; the man saw perfectly, his faculty of sight was from that hour restored, he was able henceforth to

examine every object and interpret the phenomena correctly. The reading of D latt. (*ηρξατο ἀναβλεψαι*), while it aims at removing a tautology, misses the point of Mc.’s description; the second imposition of hands, unlike the first, was followed by perfect restoration. *Διαβλέπειν*, to see clearly, does not occur in the LXX., but. Aq. substitutes *διάβλεψις* for *ἀνάβλεψις* in Isa. lxi. 1; in the N. T. its meaning is well illustrated by Mt. vii. 5 = Lc. vi. 42 ἔκβαλε...τὴν δοκὸν καὶ τότε διαβλέψεις ἔκβαλεῖν τὸ κάρφος, ‘thou shalt gain clearness of vision.’ *Ἐμβλέπειν*, to turn and fix the eyes upon (cf. Jud. xvi. 27 (A), i Esdr. iv. 33 (A), Mt. xix. 26, Mc. x. 21, 27, xiv. 67, Jo. i. 36, 43), implies the power to concentrate the attention on a particular object: the construction is usually *ἐμβλ.* *τινί* or *εἰς*, but *ἐμβλ.* *τινά* occurs in Jud. l.c., Isa. v. 12. *Τηλανγάσ*, ‘clearly, though at a distance’; his sight served for distant objects as well as for those near at hand, so completely was it restored; cf. Strabo xvii. 30 ἀφορῶνται δὲ ἐνθένδε τηλανγάσ αἱ πυραμίδες. The adv. is *ἄπ.* *λεγ.* in the N. T.; the LXX. use *τηλανγήσ* (Lev. xiii. 2, 4, 19, 24, Job xxxvii. 21, Ps. xviii. (xix.) 8), *τηλαύγημα* (Lev. xiii. 23), *τηλαύγησις* (Ps. xvii. (xviii.) 12). *Δηλανγάσ* (vv. ll.),

τηλαυγῶς ἄπαντα. <sup>26</sup>καὶ ἀπέστειλεν αὐτὸν εἰς οἶκον 26  
αὐτοῦ λέγων Μηδὲ εἰς τὴν κώμην εἰσέλθῃς.

<sup>27§</sup>Καὶ ἐξῆλθεν ὁ Ἰησοῦς καὶ οἱ μαθηταὶ αὐτοῦ εἰς 27 § <sup>syr<sup>hier</sup></sup>

25 τηλαυγῶς Ν<sup>c</sup>ABDNXΓΠΣΦ min<sup>fere omn</sup>] δηλαυγῶς Ν<sup>c</sup>CLΔ δηλως 33 | απαντας  
ΑC<sup>c</sup>NXΓΠΣΦ min<sup>pl</sup> go om c k παντα D 2<sup>po</sup> 26 εις τον οικον Ν<sup>c,a</sup>GMUXΔ almu  
me | μηδε εις την κωμην εισελθης Ν<sup>c</sup> (μη Ν<sup>c</sup>) BL 1 \* 209 syr<sup>sin</sup> me] μηδενι ειπης εις την  
κωμην (εν τη κωμη) (c) κ υπαγε εις τον οικον σου και μηδενι ειπης εις την κωμην D (q)  
υπαγε εις τ. ο. σ. και εαν εις την κ. εισελθης 13 (28) 69 (346) 2<sup>po</sup> et cum μηδεν ειπης  
την Φ item omisso μηδε i et omisso μηδε en τη κωμη b f ff vg υπ. εις τ. ο. σ. και μη εις  
την κ. εισελθης α μηδε εις τ. κ. εισελθης αλλα υπ. εις τ. ο. σ. και οταν εις τ. κ. εισελθης  
μηδενι ειπης εν τη κωμη αρμ μηδε εις τ. κ. εισελθης μηδε ειπης την εν τη κωμη ACEFG  
HKMNSUVXΓΔΙΣ min<sup>fere omn</sup> syrr<sup>posh hel (txt)</sup> go aeth 27 εις τας κωμας Καισαριας  
(-ρειας BKMSUTΠ) ΝACEFHLNXΔΣΦ] εις Καισαριαν D a b ff i q r

besides being a word of doubtful authority, misses an important point.

As Gould rightly remarks (in opposition to Weiss): “we have no right to argue from this single case that gradualness was the ordinary method” of the Lord’s working. On the contrary, the abnormal character of this incident is probably the cause of its being selected by the Evangelist or St Peter. Euth. is probably not far from the truth in his explanation of the slowness of the recovery: ἀτελῶς δὲ τὸν τυφλὸν τοῦτον ἐθεράπευσεν ὡς ἀτελῶς πιστεύοντα. For homiletic treatment cf. Bede: “paullatim et non statim repente curat quem uno mox verbo si vellet poterat curare, ut magnitudinem humanae caecitatis ostenderet, quae quasi pedetentim et per quosdam profectuum gradus ad lucem divinae visionis solet pervenire.”

26. εις οἶκον αὐτοῦ] Our Lord seems to have desired that those who had been recently healed should seek the retirement of their own homes, cf. ii. 11, v. 19. The house was apparently away from the town: see next note.

μηδὲ εις την κώμην εισέλθης] ‘So far from holding any conversation with the people of the village, do not even enter it for the present: go straight home.’ The reading is discussed at some length in WH., *Intr.*, § 140; a defence of the traditional

text is attempted by Burgon-Miller, *Causes of Corruption*, p. 273 f. Dr Hort points out that “the peculiar initial μηδέ has the terse force of many sayings as given by St Mark.” Μηδέ is used with the imperative in the same sense (= *ne quidem*) in Eph. v. 3, 2 Thess. iii. 10, and with the infinitive by Mc. (ii. 2, iii. 20); but there is no precise parallel in the N. T. Jerome’s mystical interpretation is curious: “vade in domum tuam, h. e. in domum fidei, h. e. in ecclesiam; ne revertaris in viculum Iudeorum.”

27—30. JOURNEY TO NEIGHBOURHOOD OF CAESAREA PHILIPPI. QUESTION AS TO THE LORD’S PERSON (Mt. xvi. 13—20, Lc. ix. 18—21).

27. καὶ ἐξῆλθεν ὁ Ἰησοῦς κτλ.] From Bethsaida the Lord and the Twelve moved northwards, following the course of the Jordan till they reached the neighbourhood of its sources; the road may have lain entirely on the E. bank, or the party may have crossed the river below the waters of Merom where the bridge known as *Jisr bendt Yakūb* joins the *Jaulān* to Galilee. The Caesarea to whose ‘villages’ they came was distinguished from that upon the coast of the Mediterranean (the Caesarea of the Acts, Κ. ἡ παράλιος, at an earlier time Στράτων πύργος) as Caesarea Philippi: it was in Philip’s tetrarchy (Lc. iii. 1), and

τὰς κώμας Καισαρίας τῆς Φιλίππου· καὶ ἐν τῇ ὁδῷ ἐπηρώτα τοὺς μαθητὰς αὐτοῦ λέγων αὐτοῖς Τίνα με 28 λέγουσιν οἱ ἄνθρωποι εἶναι; <sup>28</sup> οἱ δὲ εἶπαν αὐτῷ

27 εν τῃ οδῳ και k | τινα] τι Κ 28 ειπαν NBC<sup>\*2</sup>LΔ k syr<sup>pesh</sup> me aeth] απε-  
κριθησαν ADNXΓΠΦ al min<sup>omn</sup>vid latt<sup>vt(exc)</sup> vg syr<sup>hcl</sup> arm go | om αυτω λεγοντες  
ANXΓΠ al<sup>pl</sup> syrr go om αυτω f q arm om λεγοντες C<sup>2</sup> 33 al<sup>pauc</sup>

had been recently rebuilt in part by Philip's munificence, and named after Augustus, as Bethsaida had been renamed Julias after the daughter of the Imperator; Joseph. *ant.* xviii. 2. 1 Φίλιππος δὲ Πανεάδα τὴν πρὸς τὰς πηγαῖς τοῦ Ἰορδάνου κατασκευάσας ὀνομάζει Καισάρειαν· κάρμην δὲ Βηθσαΐδα πρὸς λίμνη τῇ Γεννησαρίτιδι πόλεως παρασχὼν ἀξιωμα... Ἰουλίᾳ θυγατρὶ τῇ Καισαρος ὁμώνυμον ἐκάλεσεν. In passing from one of Philip's new cities to the other the Lord found Himself in a more distinctly and aggressively Hellenised country. The old name of the town—Panæas, now Bâniæ—marked it as sacred to the worship of Pan; its second name connected it with the worship of the Emperor, in whose honour a temple had been erected close to the old shrine of Pan (Joseph. *ant.* xv. 10. 3). The population was chiefly Gentile (cf. Schürer II. i. 133 ff.), yet, as this context shews, not exclusively so, especially in the suburbs, to which the Lord seems to have confined Himself. The physical surroundings of Caesarea are graphically described by Stanley, *S. and P.* p. 397: "over an unwonted carpet of turf...through a park-like verdure... the pathway winds, and the snowy top of the mountain itself is gradually shut out from view by its increasing nearness, and again there is a rush of waters through deep thickets, and the ruins of an ancient town...rise on the hill side: in its situation, in its exuberance of water, its olive groves, and its view over the distant plain, almost a Syrian Tivoli"; cf. G. A. Smith, *H. G.*, p. 473 f. For the Tal-

midic name, קְסַרְיָן or קְסַרְיָה, see Neubauer, *Geogr. du Talm.*, p. 237. Αἱ κῶμαι Καισαρίας (Mt. τὰ μέρη: cf. note on vii. 24) are the villages and small towns that clustered round Caesarea, and belonged to its territory (WM., p. 234)—its 'daughter towns'; so the phrase is used repeatedly in the LXX. of Joshua and 1, 2 Chronicles.

ἐν τῇ ὁδῷ ἐπηρώτα τοὺς μαθ.] Probably one of the chief purposes of the long journey over a relatively unfrequented road was to afford opportunities for the instruction of the Twelve. The Lord begins by eliciting their views with regard to Himself. The Galilean ministry was now practically at an end; the way to the Cross was opening before Him. Thus the moment had come for testing the result upon the Twelve of what they had seen and heard, and preparing them for the future. It was felt by Jesus Himself to be a crisis of great moment, and He prepared for it by prayer (Lc. ix. 18), as He had prepared for the first circuit of Galilee (Mc. i. 35), and for the selection of the Twelve (Lc. vi. 12). For another important conversation ἐν τῇ ὁδῷ cf. x. 32.

τίνα με λέγουσιν οἱ ἄνθρωποι εἶναι;] Mt. τ. λ. οἱ ἄνθρ. εἶναι τὸν νιὸν τοῦ ἀνθρώπου; Lc. τ. με οἱ ὄχλοι λ. εἶναι; He asks for information, perhaps in order to lead them to the further question which follows, or it may have been from a desire to ascertain by the ordinary methods of human knowledge what they would have had opportunities of knowing, which were denied to Him by the circumstances of His position (cf. v. 30 b, note). Not

λέγοντες ὅτι Ἰωάνην τὸν βαπτιστήν, καὶ ἄλλοι  
Ἡλείαν, ἄλλοι δὲ ὅτι εἰς τῶν προφητῶν. <sup>29</sup>καὶ 29  
αὐτὸς ἐπηρώτα αὐτούς Ὅμεις δὲ τίνα με λέγετε  
εἶναι; ἀποκριθεὶς ὁ Πέτρος λέγει αὐτῷ Κὺ εἶ ὁ

<sup>28 οὐει εἰς ΝΒC\*L me] eva AC<sup>3</sup>ΝΧΓΔΠΣΦ al min<sup>fereo</sup>omn (k) arm ws eva D latt<sup>vt(exo k)</sup>vg  
29 επηρώτα αὐτούς ΝΒC\*DLΔ] λεγει αυτος AC<sup>2</sup>ΝΧΓΠΣ al min<sup>pl</sup> b (f) i vg (syrr) go  
arm aeth (καὶ...αὐτοις om k) | αποκριθεις]+δε ΝCDΧΓΔΠ al pr και AN 33 al | ο χριστος]  
+ ο νιος του θεου ΝL 157 (b) r syr<sup>hier</sup>+ο νι. τ. θ. του ζωντος 13 69 124 346 syr<sup>pesh</sup></sup>

even the Pharisees ventured to discuss the Master in His presence.

28. Ἰωάνην τὸν βαπτιστήν κτλ.] Sc. λέγοντις οἱ ἀνθρώποι σε εἶναι. These conjectures have already been mentioned (vi. 14, 15, where see notes). Matthew adds that some had singled out the prophet Jeremiah—possibly (Edersheim, ii. 79) on account of the denunciatory character of one side of our Lord's teaching, possibly (J. Lightfoot on Mt. xxvii. 9) because Jeremiah occupied the first place in the order traditionally assigned to the 'Latter Prophets' (cf. Ryle, *O. T. Canon*, p. 225 ff.). Cf. the references to Jeremiah in 2 Macc. ii. 5 ff., xv. 14 f.; in 4 Esdr. ii. 18 the return of both Isaiah and Jeremiah is anticipated, "mittam tibi adiutorium pueros meos Isaiam et Hieremiam"; see Weber, *Juda. Theologie*<sup>2</sup>, p. 354. Few in Galilee, it seems, had spoken of Jesus as Messiah (see however Mt. ix. 27), though in Judaea this possibility had been freely discussed (Jo. vii. 28–31, 41, ix. 22), and even in Samaria (Jo. iv. 29), and perhaps in Phoenicia (Mt. xv. 22). Perhaps the advent of a national deliverer was not so anxiously awaited in a country where members of the Herod family were in power as in Judaea under Roman sway; yet see Jo. vi. 15.

29. καὶ αὐτός] Αὐτός is not emphatic, but, like ὁ δέ, serves to shew that the previous speaker takes up the conversation again. Ὅμεις δὲ τίνα κτλ. 'but ye'—in contrast to men in general—'those without' (cf. iv.

11). Λέγετε, in your ordinary conversation, among yourselves or with others. Ἀποκριθεῖς...λεγει: an instance of the aor. part. of identical action coupled with a pres., cf. Burton, § 141; Mt., ἀποκρ. εἶπεν. All the Synoptists attribute the answer to Peter, but they report it differently. Mc.'s brief σὺ εἶ ὁ χριστός becomes in Lc. τὸν χριστὸν τοῦ θεοῦ, and in Mt., σὺ εἶ ὁ χριστός, ὁ νιὸς τοῦ θεοῦ τοῦ ζῶντος. But in each of the forms the essence of the confession is the same. In the O. T. the priest or king is God's Anointed: 1 Regn. xxvi. 9, ΙΙ χριστὸν Κυρίον (Ψήφις Ιακώβ), 2 Regn. xxiii. Ι χρ. θεοῦ Ιακώβ (בָּנֵי יִשְׂרָאֵל), and the ideal King of the Psalms is also son of God (Ps. ii. 7, lxxxix. 26, 27); cf. Enoch cv. 2, and on the import of the last ref. Stanton, *J. and Chr. M.*, p. 288. For a discussion of the title as applied to Christ in the Gospels see Dalman, *Worte*, i. p. 219 ff., and art. *Son of God* in Hastings, *D.B.* iv. The epithet ὁ ζῶν is possibly suggested by the pagan surroundings of Caesarea; for its use in the O. T. cf. Esth. vi. 13, viii. 13, Sir. xviii. 1, Dan. v. 23 (LXX.), vi. 20 (21) (Th.), and the constant phrases ζῆ Κύριος, ζῶ ἐγώ, λέγει Κύριος: in the N. T. it occurs again in Mt. xxvi. 63, Jo. vi. 57 (ὁ ζῶν πατήρ), Rom. ix. 26, 2 Cor. vi. 16, 1 Th. i. 9, 1 Tim. iii. 15, iv. 10, Heb. iii. 12, ix. 14, x. 31, xii. 22, 1 Pet. i. 23, Apoc. vii. 2, x. 6, xv. 7 (ὁ ζῶν εἰς τοὺς αἰῶνας τῶν αἰώνων).

According to Mt. xiv. 33 (ἀληθῶς

30 χριστός. <sup>30</sup> καὶ ἐπετίμησεν αὐτοῖς ἵνα μηδενὶ λέγωσιν περὶ αὐτοῦ.

31 <sup>31</sup> Καὶ ἤρξατο διδάσκειν αὐτοὺς ὅτι Δεῖ τὸν νιὸν τοῦ ἀνθρώπου πολλὰ παθεῖν καὶ ἀποδοκιμασθῆναι ὑπὸ τῶν πρεσβυτέρων καὶ τῶν ἀρχιερέων καὶ τῶν

<sup>30</sup> λέγωσιν] ειπωσιν CDG      <sup>31</sup> υπὸ ΗΒCDGKLΠΣΦ] απὸ ΑΧΓΔ al min<sup>pl</sup> | των αρχ. κ. των γρ.] om των bis AGKNΔΠΣ om των 1° FLΓ om των 2° ΧΦ

θεοῦ νιὸς εἰ), Jo. vi. 69 (σὺ εἶ ὁ ἄγιος τοῦ θεοῦ), this was not the first occasion upon which the Messiahship of the Lord had been confessed by the Twelve. Peter in particular had known who He was from the first (Jo. i. 41). But his belief is now solemnly and formally professed, and the Lord rewards this act of recognition on the part of His Apostle with a remarkable promise which Mt. alone has preserved (Mt. xvi. 17 ff., cf. Hort, *Ecclesia*, p. 10 f.). On Mc.'s omission of the reward cf. Victor: τὴν γὰρ ἀκριβεστέραν περὶ τούτου δέήγησιν παρεχώρησεν ὁ παρὼν εὐαγγελιστὴς τῷ Ματθαίῳ...ἴνα μὴ δόξῃ Πέτρῳ τῷ ἔντοῦ χαρίζεσθαι διδασκάλῳ. Eusebius (*D.E.* iii. 3) is perhaps more accurate: ταῦτα μὲν οὖν ὁ Πέτρος εἰκότως παρασιωπᾶσθαι ἡξίου· διὸ καὶ Μᾶρκος αὐτὸ παρέλιπεν.

30. καὶ ἐπετίμησεν αὐτοῖς κτλ.] Lc., ἐπιτιμήσας αὐτοῖς παρήγγελεν. On this use of ἐπιτιμᾶν cf. i. 25. The censure which the word implies belongs here only to the disobedience which the Lord has reason to anticipate (cf. i. 45, vii. 36); Vg. *comminatus est eis ne cui dicerent*. Περὶ αὐτοῦ, i.e. as Mt. explains, ὅτι αὐτός ἐστιν ὁ χριστός. The spread of such a rumour would have either precipitated the Passion, or prevented it at the cost of substituting a national and political movement for one which was spiritual and universal.

31—33. THE PASSION FORETOLD; PETER REPROVED (Mt. xvi. 21—23, Lc. ix. 22).

<sup>31.</sup> ἤρξατο διδάσκειν] Mt. ἀπὸ τότε ἤρξατο Ἰησοῦς Χριστὸς δεικνύειν. It was a new departure, beginning with the moment when by the confession of the Twelve he was acknowledged to be the Christ. The Christ must suffer (Lc. xxiv. 26, Acts xxvi. 23 παθητὸς ὁ χρ.) ; so prophecy had clearly foretold (Acts viii. 32—35). But the idea was nevertheless strange and repulsive to the Jewish mind ; see Westcott, *Study of the Gospels*, p. 141, Stanton, p. 125 ff., Schürer II. ii. p. 184 ff.; quite other thoughts were associated with the name of Messiah. The Lord therefore does not say as yet δεῖ τὸν χριστὸν πολλὰ παθεῖν, but calls Himself as heretofore τὸν νιὸν τοῦ ἀνθρώπου (Mc. Lc.). Irenaeus (iii. 16. 5) quotes this passage against the Docetic notion of an impossible Christ. For δεῖ cf. ix. 11, xiii. 7, Lc. xxiv. 26, Acts xxiii. 11, xxvii. 24, 1 Cor. xv. 25, Apoc. i. 1. Πολλὰ παθεῖν : a frequent phrase in reference to the Passion, cf. Mt. xvi. 21, Mc. ix. 12, Lc. ix. 22, xvii. 25; the Lord suffered πολλά but not πολλάκις, Heb. ix. 26.

ἀποδοκιμασθῆναι...ἀποκτανθῆναι...ἀναστῆναι] A remarkably complete outline of the Passion in its three stages : (1) the official rejection of the Messiah by the Sanhedrin, (2) His violent death, (3) His victory over death. Καὶ ἀποδοκιμασθῆναι (Mc., Lc., omitted by Mt.) looks back to Ps. cxvii. (cxviii.) 22 ; cf. xii. 10, 1 Pet. ii. 4 ff.; ἀποδοκιμάζειν (=ΔΝΩΡ Ps. l.c.) is to reject after scrutiny, and implies an official test-

γραμματέων καὶ ἀποκτανθῆναι, καὶ μετὰ τρεῖς ημέρας ἀναστῆναι. ¶ 32 καὶ παρρησίᾳ τὸν λόγον ἐλάλει. καὶ 32 ¶ <sup>syr<sup>hier</sup></sup> N

31 μετὰ τρεῖς ημερας] (εν) τη τριτη ημερα 1 (13 28) 33 69 124 2<sup>ro</sup> alpaue d g arm aeth

ing and rejection of His claims. This was to be conducted by the three factors in the national council acting together (*ὑπὸ τῶν πρ. καὶ ἄρχ. καὶ γρ.* Mt., so Lc.), but each severally responsible and consenting to the verdict (*ὑπὸ τῶν πρ. καὶ τῶν ἄρχ. καὶ τῶν γρ.*, Mc.). The words distinctly contemplate Jerusalem as the scene of the rejection, for there only could the *ἄρχιερεis* be found, or the three classes take common action. The three are mentioned together again xi. 27, xiv. 43, 53 (*οἱ ἄρχ. κ. οἱ γρ. κ. οἱ πρ.*), xv. 1 (*οἱ ἄρχ. μετὰ τῶν πρ. καὶ γρ.*). For the *γρ.* see note on i. 22; the *ἄρχιερεis* (Vg. *summi sacerdotes*, A.V. and R.V., “chief priests”) are the heads of the priestly class, High Priest and ex-High Priests, and other leading members of the sacerdotal aristocracy; cf. Acts iv. 6 *ὅσοι ἦσαν ἐκ γένους ἄρχιερατικοῦ*, and see Blass *ad l.* and Schürer II. i. p. 177 ff. The *πρεσβύτεροι* (to be distinguished of course from the elders of vii. 3, 5) appear to have been the non-professional or lay element in the Council—a survival apparently of the *γερουσία* of Maccabean times (i Macc. xii. 6, 3 Macc. i. 8) and of the primitive *לְאִישׁ-יִשְׂרָאֵל* (Exod. xvii. 5).

*καὶ ἀποκτανθῆναι]* So also Mt., Lc.; this late pass. aor. occurs in i Macc. ii. 9, and again in Mc. ix. 31 (cf. WSchm., p. 128). *Καὶ μετὰ τρεῖς ημέρας ἀναστῆναι*: Mt., Lc., *καὶ τῇ τρίτῃ ημέρᾳ ἐγερθῆναι*. *Ἐγείρομαι* is used of the Resurrection in Mc. (WH.) exclusively, in Mt. and Lc. the two verbs appear to be employed indiscriminately; in doctrinal passages *ἐγείρομαι* as a pass. in form suggests the thought of *ὁ ἐγείρεται* (Rom. iv. 24 f., viii. 11, 34, i Cor. xv. 14, 15, cf. Ign. Trall. 9), but this is hardly

present to the writers of the Gospel narrative. *Μετὰ τρ. ημ.*; so Mc. always (ix. 31, x. 34), except when he uses *διὰ τριῶν ημερῶν* (xiii. 2, v.l., xiv. 58) in reference to the saying of Jo. ii. 19. Mt. also has *μετὰ τρ. ημ.* in xxvii. 63, but elsewhere he writes *τῇ τρίτῃ ημέρᾳ* (xvi. 21, xvii. 23, xx. 19), and so Lc., ix. 22, xviii. 33 (*τῇ ημ. τῇ τρ.*), xxiv. 7, 46, Acts x. 40, and Paul (i Cor. xv. 4, *τῇ ημ. τῇ τρ.*). Mc.’s phrase occurs also, with another reference, in Acts xxv. 1; cf. *μετὰ τρεῖς μῆνας* (Acts xxviii. 11); *μετὰ τριά ἔτη* Gal. i. 18; *τῇ τρίτῃ* Acts xxvii. 19. Both phrases were perhaps suggested by Hos. vi. 2, *ἀνγάστει ημᾶς μετὰ δύο ημέρας ἐν τῇ ημέρᾳ τῇ τρίτῃ καὶ ἀναστησόμεθα*. The earliest tradition seems to have inclined to the former, modifying it however so as to retain a reference to the third day. That *μετὰ τρεῖς ημέρας* in this connexion is equivalent to *ἐν τῇ τρίτῃ ημέρᾳ* is clear from the explanatory *ἔως τῆς τρίτης ημέρας* in Mt. xxvii. 64; cf. Mt. xii. 40 where the stay of the Lord in the grave is described as “three days and three nights”; see also Field, *Notes*, p. 11. The easier phrase however soon superseded the harder, and is almost universal in early citations from the Gospels (Resch, *aussercan. Par. zu Lc.* p. 147 ff.), and in Creeds it is varied only by the equivalent *διὰ τριῶν ημερῶν* or *τριήμερον* (Caspari, *Quellen*, iii. p. 70 f.). On the singular renderings of some O. L. texts see J. R. Harris, *Codex Bezae*, p. 91. The Sinaitic Syriac substitutes ‘on the third day’ in Mc., but in Mt. xxvii. 63 retains ‘after three days’.

32. *παρρησίᾳ τὸν λόγον ἐλάλει*] He spake the saying (so probably here, but cf. i. 45) without reserve (Wycliffe, “pleynli,” “openli”), in the presence of

προσλαβόμενος ὁ Πέτρος αὐτὸν ἤρξατο ἐπιτιμᾶν  
§ n 33 αὐτῷ. <sup>33</sup> ὁ δὲ ἐπιστραφεὶς καὶ ᾧδὼν τοὺς μαθητὰς  
αὐτοῦ ἐπετίμησεν Πέτρῳ καὶ λέγει Ὅταγε ὅπιστω

<sup>32 προσλαβομενος]</sup> προσκαλεσαμενος Γ | αυτω]+ne cui illa diceret (c) k+Domine propitius esto nam hoc non erit a b n (*syr<sup>sin</sup>*) <sup>33 και id. τ. μαθ. αυτου]</sup> om k | Πετρω] pr τω ΑΧΧΓΔΠ | και λεγει] λεγων ADXGΠ al latt<sup>vtr</sup>plv<sup>g</sup> syr<sup>hel</sup> go arm

all the Twelve (Euth. φανερῶς καὶ ἀπαρακαλύπτως), and in plain, direct words. Παρησίᾳ (here only in the Synoptists) is contrasted with ἐν κρυπτῷ (Jo. vii. 4): ἐν παροιμίᾳ (Jo. xvi. 25, cf. 29). The more usual forms are μετὰ παρησίας (Prov. x. 10, Acts ii. 29), ἐν παρησίᾳ (Sap. v. 1, Jo. xvi. 29); παρησίᾳ is specially frequent in Jo. (vii. 13, 26, x. 24, xi. 14, 54, xvi. 25, xviii. 20). For the general sense and use of the word see Lightfoot on Col. ii. 15.

<sup>προσλαβόμενος ὁ Πέτρος αὐτὸν κτλ.]</sup> To Peter such frankness seemed to be indiscreet; such premonitions of failure were at variance with all his conceptions of the Christ. The Master had manifested a momentary weakness; it was his duty as senior of the Twelve to remonstrate. He took the Lord aside a little, as if to ask a question or to give some information privately, perhaps in order to spare the Master the pain of a public remonstrance, ‘as if sparing Him,’ Syr.<sup>sin</sup>. (Bede: “ne praesentibus ceteris condiscipulis magistrum videatur arguere”). Προσλαβέσθαι (Mt. Mc.) is used of the stronger or wealthier coming to the help of the weaker or poorer (Ps. xvii. (xviii.) 17 (NA), xxvi. (xxvii.) 10, Acts xviii. 26, Rom. xiv. 1, 3, xv. 7), and carries here an air of conscious superiority (cf. Hastings, *D. B.*, iii. p. 760 *a*). Something of this officiousness had shewn itself already in Simon Peter’s relations to his Master (i. 36); the tension of his recent act of faith and the exaltation of feeling which followed it probably exaggerated a fault of natural character, and led to the astounding conduct described in the next words.

ἤρξατο ἐπιτιμᾶν αὐτῷ] Mt. gives the words: Ἰλέως σοι (i Macc. ii. 21), Κύριε, οὐ μὴ ἔσται σοι τοῦτο.

33. ὁ δὲ ἐπιστραφεὶς κτλ.] The Lord turned sharply round as if to face the speaker—a characteristic act, see v. 30, Mt. ix. 22, Lc. vii. 9, 44, ix. 55, x. 23, xiv. 25, xxii. 61, xxiii. 28, Jo. i. 38; for ἐπιστρέφεσθαι (ἐπιστρέφειν) in this sense cf. v. 30, Jo. xxi. 20, Acts ix. 40, Apoc. i. 12. On this, as on a later occasion (Lc. xxii. 61), a mere look might have sufficed to bring Peter to repentance; but Jesus as He turned caught sight of the rest of the Twelve (ἴδὼν τοὺς μαθητὰς αὐτοῦ), who were probably watching the scene with interest, and perhaps shared Peter’s views. A public reproof was therefore necessary, and the Lord did not spare His first Apostle; ἐπετίμησεν Πέτρῳ, so Mc. only, apparently in reference to v. 32, ἤρξατο ἐπιτιμᾶν, cf. Bengel: “dum increpat, increpationem meretur,” a point which the Vg. misses—*coepit increpare...communitatus est*. Mc., who does not record the Lord’s commendation of Peter, accentuates the reproof.

Ὕπαγε ὅπιστω μον, Σατανᾶ] Cf. Mt. iv. 10 ὕπαγε, Σατανᾶ—the words in which the Lord before the beginning of His public work dismissed the Tempter, when he offered the kingdoms of the world on condition of receiving homage for them. This temptation was now renewed by Satan in the person of the Apostle who desired his Master to put from Him the prospect of the Cross. It is unnecessary to suppose either that Peter is here called ‘Satan’ (cf. Jo. vi. 70), or that the word is to be understood

μου, Σατανᾶ· ὅτι οὐ φρονεῖς τὰ τοῦ θεοῦ ἀλλὰ τὰ τῶν ἀνθρώπων.

<sup>34</sup> Καὶ προσκαλεσάμενος τὸν ὄχλον σὺν τοῖς μα- 34  
θηταῖς αὐτοῦ εἶπεν αὐτοῖς § Εἴ τις θέλει ὁπίσω μου § syr<sup>hict</sup>

34 εἰ τις ΧΒC\*DLΔ 604 1071 al<sup>pauic</sup> latt syrhcl(mg) arm Or] οστις AC<sup>2</sup>ΧΤΠΣΦ al  
min<sup>pl</sup> syrr me go aeth | οπίσω μου] om k

simply in its etymological sense, ‘adversary’ (Victor, δ ἐστιν ἀντικείμενε: see note on i. 13). The Lord recognises His great adversary in Peter, who for the moment acts Satan’s part. Thph.: ὁ σατανᾶς μόνος οὐ θέλει αὐτὸν παθεῖν ...Σατανᾶς ὄνομάζει τὸν Πέτρον ὡς τὰ Σατανᾶ φρονοῦντα, cf. Macar. Magn. iii. 27 οὐ Πέτρον τὸ ρῆμα ἀλλ’ ὑποβολὴ τοῦ σατανᾶ τὸ λεχθέν. ‘Υπάγειν ὁπίσω τινός (Mt., Mc. here: not in the true text of Mt. iv. 10) is interpreted by Origen in a favourable sense as =ἀκολουθεῖν ὁ. τ.: διὰ μὲν τὴν πρόθεσιν, οὐσαν δεξιάν, λέγει αὐτῷ “Υ. ὁ. μ., οἵονεὶ καταλιπόντι τὰ δι’ ὃν ἤγνοει... ἀκολουθεῖν τῷ Ἰησοῦ. But ὑπάγειν is not =ἔλθεῖν (v. 34); it implies removal, not approach, and ὁπίσω μου in this connexion represents defeat and banishment from the sight of the conqueror, not a closer attachment to the company of the Master; cf. Ps. vi. 11 (NA), ix. 4, xlxi. (l.) 17, Isa. xxxviii. 17. If Peter identified himself with Satan, he must share Satan’s repulse and exile.

ὅτι οὐ φρονεῖς κτλ.] It is not merely the officiousness of Peter which is rebuked, but the graver error which led him to interfere. His resistance to the thought of the Passion revealed a deep cleavage between his mind and the mind of God. The illumination which had enabled him to apprehend the Messiahship of Jesus (Mt. xvi. 17) left him still unable to assimilate the λόγος τοῦ σταυροῦ. On this fundamental point he was not in sympathy with the Divine order of things. Φρονεῖν τὰ τοῦ θεοῦ =φρ. τὰ τοῦ πνεύματος, the opposite of φρ. τὰ τῆς σαρκός (Rom. viii. 5) or

τὰ ἐπίγεια, τὰ ἐπὶ τῆς γῆς (Phil. iii. 19, Col. iii. 2); such conformity with the Divine Mind distinguished the Master and is the aim of the true disciple (Phil. ii. 5). It is interesting to see how this Gospel phrase reflects and expands itself in the Pauline Epistles. For earlier instances of φρονεῖν τὰ τινός cf. Esth. viii. 13, 1 Macc. x. 20, and in non-Biblical Gk., Dem, in Phil. 3 οἱ τὰ Φιλίππου φρονοῦντες, Dion. H. ii. οἱ φρονοῦντες τὰ τῆς ὀλιγαρχίας: and for a practical application of the present passage see Orig. in Mt. t. xii. 23 μὴ νομίσωμεν τοίνυν τὸ τυχὸν εἴναι ἀμάρτημα φρονεῖν τὰ τῶν ἀνθρώπων, δέον ἐν πᾶσι φρονεῖν τὰ τοῦ θεοῦ. Cf. Iren. iii. 18. 4. Mt. prefixes σκάνδαλον εἰ μου—words that reveal the reality of the temptation which such a suggestion as Peter’s presented to our Lord, and serve to explain the warmth with which he repels it.

34—ix. 1. PUBLIC TEACHING ON SELF-SACRIFICE (Mt. xvi. 24—28, Lc. ix. 23—27).

34. προσκαλεσάμενος τὸν ὄχλον κτλ.] Mt. εἶπεν τοῖς μαθηταῖς αὐτοῦ, Lc. ἔλεγεν δὲ πρὸς πάντας. Only Mc. calls attention to the unexpected presence of a crowd. Even in the villages of Caesarea the Lord was recognised and followed by the Jewish population. The prediction of the Passion was for the Twelve alone; but the crowd could share with them the great practical lessons which it suggested, and it needed them at this moment when it was pressing with too light a heart into the Kingdom of God. Bengel: “doctrina catholica.”

εἰ τις θέλει ὁπίσω μου ἔλθεῖν κτλ.] The words are identically the same in

ἐλθεῖν, ἀπαρνησάσθω ἔαυτὸν καὶ ἀράτω τὸν σταυρὸν  
35 αὐτοῦ καὶ ἀκολουθείτω μοι. <sup>35</sup> ὃς γὰρ ἐὰν θέλῃ

<sup>34</sup> ελθειν NABC<sup>2</sup>KLIIΣ min<sup>mu</sup> c g k l arm me Or] ακολουθειν C<sup>4</sup>DXΦ al 1 28 604  
al<sup>sat</sup>mu a b f ff n q vg ελθ. και ακολ. Δ | απαρνησασθω...αρατω] επαρατω Δ | αυτου] εαυτου Ι

Mt. down to ἔνεκεν ἐμοῦ, and with one exception there is no important variation in Lc. Such a saying uttered on such an occasion would naturally impress itself verbally on the Twelve, and gain currency in an identical form. The phrase ἐλθεῖν ὁπ. μου is not suggested by the ὑπαγε κτλ. of v. 33 but by the eagerness of the crowd or the presence of the Twelve: see note on i. 17. To constitute a loyal disciple three things were necessary. (1) Ἀπαρνήσασθαι ἔαυτόν, to deny, i.e. to refuse to recognise, to ignore, oneself. The verb occurs in Isa. xxxi. 7 ἀπαρνήσονται (ΜΩΝ?) οἱ ἄνθρωποι τὰ χειροποίητα αὐτῶν; in the N. T., besides this context, it is used in reference to the disciple who denies all knowledge of his master (Lc. xxii. 34), or the master who refuses to recognise the unworthy disciple (Lc. xii. 9): ἀρνεῖσθαι is similarly employed by Mt., Lc., Jo., Jude, Paul. The idea is very inadequately represented by the current notions of 'self-denial' which regard it as the abnegation of a man's property or rights rather than of himself: the true interpretation is given by St Paul, Gal. ii. 19 f. ἀπέθανον, ἵνα θεῷ ζήσω· Χριστῷ συνεσταύρωμαι, ζῶ δὲ οὐκέτι ἐγώ, ζῆ δὲ ἐν ἐμοὶ Χριστός. Cf. Thph.: τί δέ ἐστι τὸ ἀπαρν. ἔαυτὸν οὗτος ἀν μάθοιμεν ἐὰν γνῶμεν τί ἐστι τὸ ἀρνήσασθαι ἔτερον. ὁ ἀρνούμενος ἔτερον ...οὐκ ἐπιστρέφεται, οὐ συμπάσχει, ἀτε ἀπαξ ἀλλοτριωθείσ. οὗτος οὖν καὶ ἡμεῖς βούλεται τοῦ ἡμετέρου σώματος ἀφειδεῖν. Bede: "pensemus quomodo se Paulus abnegaverat qui dicebat, 'Vivo autem iam non ego.'" (2) Ἀραι τὸν σταυρὸν αὐτοῦ, to put oneself into the position of a condemned man on his way to execution, i.e. to be prepared

to face extreme forms of shame and loss. This reference to crucifixion was perhaps not new to the Twelve (Mt. x. 38); to the crowd at least it must have been deterrent in a high degree, suggesting a procession of *furciferi* headed by Jesus and consisting of His followers. Such wholesale crucifixions had occurred within memory (Schürer, II. i. p. 5) and might be expected in case of a revolt. Lc. adds καθ' ἡμέραν in view of Christian experience, which had learnt to see the Cross in ordinary trials, but the Lord's words were doubtless intended also to prepare His followers for the supreme trial of faith. (3) Ἀκολουθεῖν, to persevere in the exacting course of a personal following (cf. i. 18). Without this martyrdom itself would be insufficient; cf. Victor: ἐπειδὴ γάρ ἐστι καὶ πάσχοντα μὴ ἀκολουθεῖν ὅταν μὴ δὶ' αὐτόν τι πάθη, ἵνα μὴ νομίσης ὅτι ἀρκεῖ τῶν κινδύνων ἡ φύσις, προστίθησι καὶ τὴν ὑπόθεσιν ἵνα ταῦτα ποιῶν αὐτῷ ἀκολουθήσ. The following is to be habitual and permanent (ἀκολουθεῖτω, pres., cf. ἀπαρνησάσθω, ἀράτω).

35. ὃς γὰρ ἐὰν θέλῃ κτλ.] A saying attributed to our Lord on more than one other occasion (Mt. x. 39, Lc. xvii. 33, Jo. xii. 25). The key to its interpretation lies in the Biblical use of ψυχή. In the O. T. ψ. is the usual equivalent of ψῆψις, the conscious life of feeling and desire (Schulz, II. p. 246). The N. T. distinguishes this life from merely physical animation on the one hand (Mt. x. 28, cf. 4 Macc. xiii. 14), and from the higher life of the πνεῦμα on the other (I Cor. ii. 14, xv. 45, I Thess. v. 23, Heb. iv. 12). Thus the ψυχή holds a mediating position between σῶμα and πνεῦμα (see Ellin-

τὴν ψυχὴν αὐτοῦ σῶσαι, ἀπολέσει αὐτήν· ὃς δὲ ἀν ἀπολέσει τὴν ψυχὴν αὐτοῦ ἔνεκεν ἐμοῦ καὶ τοῦ εὐαγγελίου, σῶσει αὐτήν. <sup>36</sup>τί γάρ ὠφελεῖ ἀνθρωπον 36

35 τὴν ψυχὴν αὐτοῦ (1<sup>o</sup>)] τ. εαυτον ψ. B Or τ. ψ. εαυτον D<sup>2</sup> | os δ αν απ. τ. ψ. αυτον] om k | απολεσει 2<sup>o</sup> NBCD<sup>2</sup>ΓΔ al<sup>nonn</sup>] απολεση ALXΠ al<sup>pl</sup> | την ψυχην αυτον (2<sup>o</sup>)] τ. εαυτον ψ. C<sup>3</sup>XII al 60<sub>4</sub> al<sup>satm</sup> | εμον και τον ευαγγελιου] om εμον και D a b i m r arm aeth om και τον ευαγγ. 33 ff om και kvid syr<sup>sin vid</sup> | σωσει] pr αυτος C<sup>2</sup>EFGM<sup>ms</sup>SUVT al<sup>pl</sup> 36 ωφελει NB(L) a n q arm] ωφελησει ACDXΓΠΣΦ al min<sup>fere omn</sup> latt synch Or ωφεληθησεται 33 | (τον) ανθρωπον Nc(A)B(C\*D)KSUVΠΦ min<sup>pl</sup> go (Or)] ανθρωπος Ν\*C<sup>3</sup>EFGHLMXΓΔΣ i 33 69 al<sup>nonn</sup>

cott, *Destiny of the creature* v.; Lightfoot on 1 Thess. l.c.), and the word is used with a lower or higher reference in different contexts; for exx. of the former see Mt. ii. 20, vi. 25, Jo. x. 15 ff., Rom. xi. 3, Phil. ii. 30, and for the latter, Mt. xi. 29, Mc. xiv. 34, Jo. xii. 27, Heb. vi. 19, 1 Pet. i. 22; the English versions seek to distinguish the two uses by the double rendering 'life' and 'soul.' In the present saying both meanings are in view, and an adequate translation is perhaps impossible. We may paraphrase: 'the man whose aim in life is to secure personal safety and success, loses the higher life of which he is capable, and which is gained by those who sacrifice themselves in the service of Christ.' The immediate reference is doubtless to the alternative of martyrdom or apostasy, but the saying admits of wider application; cf. the form which it takes in Jo. xii. 25, and the variations here in Mt., Lc. All self-seeking is condemned as self-destruction, all true self-sacrifice is approved as self-preservation. Victor: ὃ δὲ λέγει τοιούτον ἔστιν οὐκ ἀφειδῶν νῦν δὲλλὰ καὶ σφόδρα φειδόμενος τῶντα ἐπιτάττω. Bede: "ac si agricolae dicatur, 'Fru-  
mentum si servas, perdis; si seminas,  
renovas.'"'

<sup>4</sup>Os δὲ ἀν ἀπολέσει (Mt., Lc., ἀπολέση) is a construction which appears occasionally in Biblical Gk., cf. Jud. xi. 24 ἀ εὖ κληρονομήσει σε (B), Jer. xlxi. (xlii.) 4 ὁ λόγος ὃν ἀν ἀποκριθήσεται;

for N. T. exx. see VII., *Notes*, p. 172, WM., p. 385, Blass, *Gr.* p. 217. ἔνεκεν ἐμοῦ (omitted in 'Western' texts) is one of those striking claims upon the absolute devotion of His followers which reveal our Lord's consciousness of a Divine right. The addition καὶ τοῦ εὐαγγελίου is characteristic of Mc.; cf. i. 1, 15, x. 29. Mc. alone of the Evangelists uses τὸ εὐαγγέλιον absolutely; cf. Salmon, *H. E.* p. 37. For the contrast of σώζειν and ἀπολλύναι comp. 1 Cor. i. 18, 2 Cor. ii. 15, James iv. 12; similarly σωτηρία is opposed to δύωλεια, Phil. i. 28. Salvation is predicated of the soul in Jas. i. 20, v. 15, 1 Pet. i. 9.

36. τί γάρ ὠφελεῖ ἀνθρωπον κτλ.] Self-sacrifice is the truest self-interest, for (γάρ) a man gains nothing by the acquisition of the whole world if the penalty is his own personal life. "The question is...between that life which consists mainly in having, and that which consists in being" (Gould). The Lord seems to have still in view the temptation described in Mt. iv. 8 (see note on v. 33). For τί ὠφελεῖ or ὠφελήσει cf. Hab. ii. 18 (לִישׁוֹתַהֲנָדֵב), Sap. v. 8, 1 Cor. xiv. 6, Heb. iv. 2; Mt., Lc., τί γάρ ὠφεληθήσεται (ὠφελεῖται); Clem. Al. strom. vi. 13, Ps.-Clem. hom. 6 τί τὸ ὄφελος: see Resch, p. 150 ff. Κερδῆσαι...ζημιωθῆναι: for the contrast cf. Phil. iii. 8. The population of the northern towns, esp. perhaps of such a town as Caesarea, was deeply occupied in the pursuit of wealth (cf. Merrill, cc. viii., xvi.), as the frequent

κερδῆσαι τὸν κόσμον ὅλον καὶ ζημιωθῆναι τὴν ψυχὴν  
 37 αὐτοῦ; <sup>37</sup>τί γὰρ δοῦ ἀνθρωπος ἀντάλλαγμα τῆς  
 38 ψυχῆς αὐτοῦ; <sup>38</sup>ὅς γὰρ ἐὰν ἐπαισχυνθῇ με καὶ τοὺς

<sup>36</sup> κερδῆσαι...ζημιωθῆναι Ι<sup>Κ</sup>BL] εαν κερδηση...ζημιωθη ACDXΓΔΠΣΦ al min<sup>omnivid</sup>  
 syrr Or <sup>37</sup> τι γαρ Ι<sup>Κ</sup>BLΔ 28 2<sup>ρ</sup> q me arm Or] η τι γαρ D\* η τι ΑΒ<sup>2</sup>ΧΓΠΦ al  
 min<sup>pl</sup> latt<sup>vt(excl)vg</sup> syrr go aeth | δοι Ι<sup>\*Κ</sup>B] δω Ι<sup>Κ</sup>L δωσει ACDXΓΠΣΦ al min<sup>omnivid</sup> latt  
 Or [ ανθρωπος] pr o B | om δοι ανθρωπος Δ | αυτου] εαυτου B αυτω C <sup>38</sup> ος γαρ  
 εαν] os εαν A os δ αν D | επαισχυνθη με] επαισχυνθησεται εμε D

references in the Gospels to wealth and worldly care suggest. The Lord saw that the penalty was too often the loss of the higher personal life (ἐαυτὸν ζημιωθεῖς, Lc.). Ζημιοῦν is properly to confiscate or fine (ι Eesdr. i. 36, viii. 24), but also to inflict a penalty of any kind (e.g. death, 2 Macc. iv. 48; loss of one's handiwork, 1 Cor. iii. 15); for ζ. τὴν ψ. cf. Prov. xix. 16 κακόφρων ἀνθρωπος ζημιωθήσεται ἐὰν δὲ λοιμεύηται, καὶ τὴν ψυχὴν αὐτοῦ προσθήσει: Philo, ebr. 3 ζημιούμενος δὲ πάντα, χρήματα, σώματα, ψυχάς. Lightfoot on Phil. l.c. cites a line from Menander which is a partial parallel to this saying of Christ: κέρδος πονηρὸν ζημιάν δεῖ φέρει. Cf. Origen in Mt. t. xii. 28 κερδαίνει τὸν κόσμον φῶ δό κόσμος οὐ σταυροῦται· φῶ δὲ κόσμος οὐ σταυροῦται ἐκείνῳ ἔσται ζημία τῆς ψυχῆς αὐτοῦ. The κόσμος is the external considered as a counter attraction to the spiritual and eternal: cf. 1 Jo. ii. 15 ff., with Westcott's notes. For an early comment on this saying of Christ see Ps.-Clem. hom. § 6.

37. τί γὰρ δοῦ κτλ.] Another link in the chain of reasoning. The man is not a gainer by his transaction, for (γάρ) the loss he has suffered is irreparable. Ἀντάλλαγμα, *commutatio*, is the price received in exchange for an article of commerce; cf. Ruth iv. 7, 3 Regn. xx. (xxi.) 2 δάσω σοι ἀργύριον ἀντάλλαγμα (A; B, ἀλλαγμα) ἀμπελῶν, Job xxviii. 15 οὐ σταθήσεται αὐτῇ (sc. τῇ σοφίᾳ) ἀργύριον ἀντάλλαγμα αὐτῆς (cf. v. 17), and esp. Sir. xxvi. 14 οὐκ ἔστιν ἀντάλλαγμα πεπαιδευμένης

ψυχῆς, "no money can purchase (i.e. there is nothing so valuable as) an instructed, disciplined soul." The saying before us carries the thought of Jesus ben Sira further: there is nothing which can take the place of the soul in any man: comp. the fine lines in Eur. *Or.* 1155 οὐκ ἔστιν οὐδὲν κρείσσον ἢ φίλος σαφής, | οὐ πλούτος, οὐ τυραννίς ἀλόγιστον δέ τι | τὸ πλῆθος ἀντάλλαγμα γενναίον φίλου. The idea of the irredeemableness of the lost soul (Wycliffe, "what chaungyng schal a man ȝeve for his soule?" Tindale, "what shall a man geve to redeeme his soule agayne?"), to which expositors usually refer, does not lie in the word, even if it is in the background of the thought; for a redemptive price Mc. uses λύτρον, see x. 45, note. On the form δοῦ = δῷ conj. cf. iv. 29, v. 43, notes.

38. ὃς γὰρ ἐὰν ἐπαισχυνθῇ κτλ.] This final γάρ carries us on to the issue of human life, and places the whole struggle between self-seeking and self-sacrifice in the light of the eternal order. The words retain their Marcan form in Lc.; in Mt. they are more general and at the same time more dogmatic (μελλει ἔρχεσθαι...καὶ τότε ἀποδώσει κτλ.). <sup>38</sup>Ος γάρ ἐὰν ἐπαισχυνθῇ corresponds to ὃς γάρ ἐὰν θελῃ...σῶσαι of v. 35; μὲ καὶ τοὺς ἐμοὺς λόγους looks back to ἔνεκεν ἐμοῦ καὶ τοῦ εὐαγγελίου. If some would lack physical courage to face death, more would fail through want of moral courage, as St Peter himself did more than once (xiv.-66 ff., Gal. ii. 11 ff.; con-

έμοις λόγους ἐν τῇ γενεᾷ ταύτῃ τῇ μοιχαλίδι καὶ ἀμαρτωλῷ, καὶ ὁ νιὸς τοῦ ἀνθρώπου ἐπαισχυνθήσεται αὐτὸν ὅταν ἔλθῃ ἐν τῇ δόξῃ τοῦ πατρὸς αὐτοῦ μετὰ τῶν ἀγγέλων τῶν ἀγίων. <sup>¶</sup> <sup>καὶ ἔλεγεν § αὐτοῖς Ἀμὴν Ι</sup> <sup>¶ syr<sup>hier</sup></sup>  
<sup>IX</sup>  
<sup>§ N</sup>

38 λογους] om k | των αγιων]+αυτον F min<sup>pau</sup> om 1 209 IX 1 τινες ωδε των εστηκοτων BD\* aff n q] ωδε τινες των εστ. (c) k syr<sup>sin</sup> τινες των ωδε εστ. ¶ (εστωτων)  
ACD<sup>2</sup>LNXΓΔΠΣΦ al min<sup>fere omn</sup> f vg syr<sup>hel</sup> go arm τινες των εστ. ωδε I syr<sup>pesh</sup> me Or  
om ωδε bir | εστ.] +μετ εμου D 2<sup>pe</sup> a b ff n q r

trast Rom. i. 16, Gal. vi. 14, 2 Tim. i. 12, 16, 1 Pet. iv. 16). On the σκάνδαλον τοῦ σταυροῦ in the first age see 1 Cor. i. 18 ff.; and for a magnificent instance of the spirit in which it could be met cf. Tert. *de carne Chr.* 5, “salvus sum si non confundar de domino meo; ‘qui mei (inquit) confusus fuerit, confundar et ego eius,’ alias non invenio materias quae me per contemptum ruboris probent bene impudentem et feliciter stultum.” For the compound ἐπαισχύνεσθαι cf. Job xxxiv. 19, Ps. cxviii. (exix.) 6 (¶\*A), Isa. i. 29 (A); it occurs also in the parallel passage of Lc., and seven times in the Pauline Epp. and Hebrews. The construction ἐπαισχ. τινά (τι) is found in Job l.c., Rom. i. 16, 2 Tim. i. 8, 16, Heb. xi. 16.

ἐν τῇ γενεᾷ ταύτῃ τῇ κτλ.] On γενεά see viii. 12, note; for μοιχαλίς, Mt. xii. 39, xvi. 4. The comparison of Israel to a μοιχαλίς is adopted from the prophets, esp. Hosea (ii. 2 (4) ff.), and Ezekiel (xvi. 32 ff.); for ἀμαρτωλός cf. Isa. i. 4 οὐαὶ ἔθνος ἀμαρτωλόν, but the word is perhaps used here as equivalent to πόρνη (Isa. i. 21, Jer. iii. 3). In either case the sin laid to the charge of the Lord's own generation is spiritual: their attitude towards the Christ was evidence of apostasy from God.

καὶ ὁ νιὸς τ. ἀ. ἐπαισχυνθήσεται] i.e. ‘shall disown him’; cf. Lc. xii. 9 ὁ δὲ ἀρνησάμενος...ἀπαρνηθήσεται, and the λόγος of 2 Tim. ii. 12, 13 εἰ ἀρνησόμεθα, κάκενος ἀρνήσεται ἡμᾶς. For the converse see Lc. xii. 8, Apoc. iii. 8ff.

ὅταν ἔλθῃ ἐν τῇ δόξῃ κτλ.] The earliest announcement of a glorious παρουσία (excepting perhaps Mt. x. 32, 33). The δόξα anticipated is clearly that of the Divine Presence, not of a temporal kingdom; there is perhaps an implied contrast to the δόξα τῶν βασιλεῶν τοῦ κόσμου (Mt. iv. 8). For τοῦ πατρὸς αὐτοῦ μετὰ τῶν ἀγγέλων τῶν ἀγίων (Mt. αὐτοῦ), Lc. substitutes αὐτοῦ καὶ τοῦ πατρὸς καὶ τῶν ἄγ. ἀγγ., perhaps a later form of the tradition (Dalman, *Worte*, i. p. 158): yet cf. Mt. xix. 28, xxv. 31, Mc. x. 37, and esp. Jo. xvii. 5, 22, 24; Bengel: “gloria...ut unigeniti.” For the angelic manifestation at the παρουσία see Mt. xiii. 41, xxiv. 31, xxv. 31, Mc. xiii. 27, 2 Thess. i. 7; and for the relation of the angels of God to the Son of Man, Jo. i. 51, Heb. i. 6, Apoc. i. 1, xxii. 16.

IX. 1. καὶ ἔλεγεν αὐτοῖς κτλ.] A separate note in Mc. (cf. iv. 21 ff.), which in Mt. and Lc. has been fused with the preceding context. The words were probably spoken to the Twelve privately after the crowd (viii. 34) had dispersed.

ἀμὴν λέγω ὑμῖν: cf. iii. 28, note. So Mt.; Lc., λέγω δὲ τοι. ἀληθῶς. Jerome: “iurat Christus: debemus Christo iuranti credere. quod enim in V.T. dicitur, ‘Vivo ego, dicit Dominus,’ in N.T. dicitur, ‘Amen amen dico vobis.’”

εἰσίν τινες ωδε τῶν ἐστηκότων κτλ.] The statement was very possibly an answer to some such enquiry, expressed

οὐ μὴ γεύσωνται θανάτου ἕως ἀν ἵδωσιν τὴν βασιλείαν τοῦ θεοῦ ἐληλυθήσαις ἐν δυνάμει.

§ W<sup>1</sup> 2      <sup>2</sup>§ *Kai μετὰ ημέρας ἔξ παραλαμβάνει ὁ Ἰησοῦς τὸν*

I γευσονται E\*HKLNXΣΦ 69 al<sup>ma</sup> Or

or anticipated, as we find in xiii. 4 (*πότε σται τὰν*). The prospect of seeing the Son of Man in His glory must have excited the liveliest hopes; the Lord at once encourages and guides this new enthusiasm by a prophecy which events alone could fully interpret. *Tuēs ὅδε τῶν ἔστ.* “some here of those that stand by”; for this use of *οἱ ἔστ.* cf. Mt. xxvi. 73, Jo. iii. 29, Acts xxii. 25. In Mt. the phrase has been changed into *τ. τῶν ὅδε ἔστ.*, whilst for *ὅδε* Lc. writes *αὐτοῦ*. For the phrase *γενέσθαι θανάτου* cf. Jo. viii. 52 (Westcott), Heb. ii. 9; the phrase is not found in the O.T., but the Talmud has the corresponding *הַנִּימַם שׁוֹת* (Schöttgen, i. p. 148), and the metaphorical use of *γενέσθαι* occurs in Job xx. 18, Ps. xxxiii. (xxxiv.) 9, Prov. xxix. 36 (xxxi. 18). Origen seeks (on Jo. l. c.) to distinguish between *γ. θανάτου* and *θεωρεῖν θάνατον* (Jo. viii. 51): ἀλλη μέν τις ἀν εἴη δρατικὴ τῆς ψυχῆς δύναμις καὶ θεωρητική, ἀλλη δὲ ἡ γνωστική καὶ ἀντιληπτικὴ τῆς ποιότητος κτλ.; but the distinction can hardly be pressed in a context where the words are not contrasted. *Ἐως ἀν ἵδωσιν κτλ.*, Vg. *donec videant* (cf. vi. 10, xii. 36, and see Burton § 322) *regnum dei veniens in virtute*; for the participle see v. 30, 36, notes; the perf. implies that the event described is at once a (potentially) realised fact, and one which, when realised, will abide; in one at least of its aspects the prayer *ἐλθάτω ἡ βασιλεία σου* will have been fulfilled.

The question remains in what sense these words were accomplished in the lifetime of any who heard them. Mt.’s substitution of *τὸν νιὸν τοῦ ἀνθρ. ἔρχόμενον* ἐν τῇ βασιλείᾳ for *τὴν βασιλείαν...ἐν δυνάμει* (cf. Lc.) perhaps

indicates that the first generation looked for a fulfilment in the *παρονοίᾳ* (cf. 1 Thess. iv. 15). When the event rendered that view untenable, it was natural to connect the promise with the vision which three of the Twelve were privileged to see a week after (v. 2 ff.). This interpretation occurs already in the *excerpta Theodoti ap. Clem. Al.* § 4 *εἰδόν οὖν καὶ ἐκοιμήθησαν ὡς τε Πέτρος καὶ Ἰάκωβος καὶ Ἰωάννης*. Origen (*in Mt. t. xii. 31 ταῦτα ἀναφέροντι τινες ἐπὶ τὴν μεθ' ἡμέρας ἔξ... ἀνάβασιν τῶν τριῶν ἀποστόλων κτλ.*) dismisses it in favour of a mystical sense which is not wholly satisfactory; but the old Gnostic explanation survives in most of the patristic interpreters (Chrys., Thph., Euth., etc.). Many post-Reformation expositors have thought of the fall of Jerusalem as the fulfilment of the Lord’s words. A more satisfactory solution is that which finds it in the coming of the Spirit and the power manifested in that triumphant march of the Gospel through the Empire which was already assured before the death of at least some of the original apostolate: cf. Jo. xiv. 18, 19, xvi. 16 ff., Acts i. 8, Rom. xv. 17 ff., Col. i. 6. Yet this view need not exclude a secondary reference to the anticipation of the Lord’s glory which was to be vouchsafed almost immediately to some of the Twelve. Mc., by detaching the saying from the previous conversation (*καὶ ἔλεγεν*), seems to suggest that it forms a link between the conversation and the event which follows.

2—8. THE TRANSFIGURATION (Mt. xvii. 1—8, Lc. ix. 28—36; cf. 2 Pet. i. 16 ff.).

2. *μετὰ ἡμέρας ἔξ]* So Mt.; Lc., *μετὰ τὸν λόγους τούτους ὥστε ἡμέραι ὀκτώ.*

Πέτρον καὶ τὸν Ἰάκωβον καὶ Ἰωάννην, καὶ ἀναφέρει  
αὐτὸὺς εἰς ὅρος ὑψηλὸν κατ’ ἴδιαν μόνους· καὶ μετε-

[*2 τον Ιακωβον*] om *τον ΧΓΔ al | Ιωανην ΑΒΝΓΔ al 1071 αι<sup>π</sup>*] pr *τον ΚCDKLUXII al | αναφερει* αναγει DW<sup>d</sup> 2<sup>pe</sup> latt | *υψηλον*] + λιαν Κ 52 124 altissimum b c f i r | om κατ ιδιαν 52 255 the | om μονους minperpaue syrisin arm me aeth | μετεμορφωθη] μεταμορφουται W<sup>d</sup> pr εν τω προσευχεσθαι αυτον (vel αυτους) (13 28 69 124) 346 826 828 2<sup>pe</sup> Or

The discrepancy is usually explained by assuming that Lc.'s formula means 'on the octave'—αὐτὴν τὴν ἡμέραν καθ' ἓν ἐφθέγξατο κάκεινην καθ' ἓν ἀνήγαγεν εἰπεν (Victor). But according to the analogy of viii. 31 Mark's μετὰ ἡμ. ἔξ should mean 'on the sixth day,' not on the eighth. Perhaps a truer explanation is to be found in Lc.'s ὥστε: limits of time were less distinctly marked in his later form of the tradition: cf. Lc. iii. 23, ix. 14, xxii. 59. The Transfiguration is usually commemorated in both Eastern and Western Calendars on Aug. 6; the Armenian Calendar however places it on the 7th Sunday after Pentecost. No inference as to the exact day or month can be drawn from the Gospels; but the circumstances point to the summer. On the relation of this event to the revelations of the preceding chapter cf. Victor: ἐπεὶ πολλὰ περὶ κυδύνων διελέχθη καὶ θανάτου καὶ τοῦ πάθους τοῦ ἑαυτοῦ...δείκνυσιν αὐτοῖς καὶ ἀποκαλύπτει ταύτην [τὴν δόξαν αὐτοῦ], ἵνα μῆτε ἐπὶ τῷ οἰκείῳ θανάτῳ μῆτε ἐπὶ τῷ τοῦ δεσπότου λοιπὸν ἀλγώσιν.

*παραλαμβάνει ὁ Ἰ. τὸν Πέτρον κτλ.]*  
For *παραλαμβάνειν* in this sense cf. iv. 36, v. 40, x. 32. The Lord takes with Him three witnesses (Tert. *adv. Marc.* iv. 22 "tres de dissentibus arbitros futurae visionis et vocis assumit..." in tribus, inquit, 'testibus stabit omne verbum'); for other instances of the choice of these three see v. 37, xiv. 33. Τὸν Ἰάκ. καὶ Ἰωάν.: the single article contrasts the two, as brothers, with Peter; for other groupings see note on v. 37. Lc.'s order Πέτρον καὶ Ἰωάννην καὶ Ἰάκωβον is that which the

three held in the light of history: comp. Acts xii. 2 with Mc. iii. 17, v. 37.

ἀναφέρει αὐτὸὺς εἰς ὅρος ὑψηλόν] For ἀναφέρειν in this sense see 1 Esdr. ii. 15, Dan. vi. 23, Lc. xxiv. 51. Lc. ἀνέβη εἰς τὸ ὅρος προσεύξασθαι. The prevalent tradition, which identifies the mountain of the Transfiguration with Tabor, is perhaps based on the singular saying in the *Gospel according to the Hebrews* cited by Orig. in *Jo. t. ii. 12*, ἄρτι ἔλαβε με ἡ μήτηρ μου τὸ ἄγων πνεύμα ἐν μιᾷ τῶν τριχῶν μου καὶ ἀπένεγκε με εἰς τὸ ὅρος τὸ μέγα Θαβώρ (cf. Resch, *Agrapha*, p. 383). The truth of this tradition is assumed by Cyril of Jerusalem *cat. xii. 16*, and by Jerome *epp. 46, 108*; and the festival of the Transfiguration is known to Eastern Christians as τὸ Θαβώριον. If the locality was suggested by Ps. lxxxviii. (lxxxix.) 13 (Θαβὼρ καὶ Ἐρμωνιεὶ τῷ ὄνόματι σου ἀγαλλιάσονται, cf. Euseb. ap. Corder. *caten. l.c.* ἐν τούτοις γὰρ οἷμαι τὰς πάραδόξας τοῦ σωτῆρος ἡμῶν γεγονέναι μεταμορφώσεις) the choice of Tabor was unfortunate; this relatively low rounded knoll (not 1000 feet above the plain) was crowned by a fortress (Joseph. *B. J. iv. 1, 8*), and at the southern end of Galilee (cf. Ps. l. c.); whilst Hermon, which rises to the height of 9200 feet, overlooked Cæsarea and offered a perfect solitude (κατ' ίδιαν μόνους, cf. iv. 34, vi. 31). One of its southern spurs became the ὅρος ἄγων of the Gospel (2 Pet. i. 18).

μετεμορφώθῃ ἔμπροσθεν αὐτῶν] Mt., Mc.; Lc., ἐγένετο ἐν τῷ προσεύχεσθαι αὐτὸν (cf. Lc. iii. 21) τὸ εἶδος τοῦ προσώπου αὐτοῦ ἐτερον. Μεταμορφοῦν

¶ W<sup>d</sup> 3 μορφώθη ἐμπροσθεντὸν αὐτῶν. <sup>3</sup>καὶ τὰ ἱμάτια αὐτοῦ ἐγένετο στίλβοντα λευκὰ λίαν οἵα γναφεὺς ἐπὶ τῆς 4 γῆς οὐ δύναται οὕτως λευκᾶναι. <sup>4</sup>καὶ ὥφθη αὐτοῖς

<sup>3 εγενοντο ADGKLNVXGII 1 1071 al<sup>nomn</sup> | λιαν]</sup> om Δ b l r go aeth Or + ws χιων  
AD(K)NXIΓ(Π)ΣΦ min<sup>pl</sup> lattv<sup>t</sup>plyg syrr<sup>sinpesh</sup> me<sup>edd</sup> go+ws το φως min<sup>pauc</sup> Or | οια  
γναφευς [κν. II\* min<sup>nomn</sup>]...λευκαναι] ws ou δυναται τις λευκαναι επι της γης D bi syrpesh  
om X a n syr<sup>sin</sup> om ουτως ADXΓΠΦ al min<sup>pl</sup> f q vg go

occurs in Ps. xxxiii. (xxxiv.) tit., Symm. (=ἀλλοιοῦν, LXX., cf. Dan. vii. 28 Th. ἡ μορφή μου ἡλλοιώθη), and is adopted by St Paul with an ethical reference (Rom. xii. 2, SH., 2 Cor. iii. 18) and in partial contrast to μετασχηματίζειν. The latter verb might perhaps have been expected here, but “μεταψημ. alone is adequate to express the completeness and significance of the change” (Lightfoot, *Philippians*, p. 129). “Was transfigured” (Vg. *transfiguratus est*) has held its place in all the English versions of Mc. from Wycliffe onwards, though ‘transformed’ is the rendering in Rom., 2 Cor. (Vg. *reformamini, transformamur*). An O.T. archetype of the Transfiguration is to be found in Exod. xxxiv. 29 δεδόξασται ἡ ὄψις τοῦ χράματος τοῦ προσώπου αὐτοῦ (sc. Μωσέως) ἐν τῷ λαλεῖν αὐτὸν αὐτῷ (cf. 2 Cor. iii. 7 ff.). “Ἐμπροσθεν αὐτῶν: cf. 2 Pet. l.c. ἐπόπται γενηθέντες τῆς ἑκίνου μεγαλειότητος. For a mystical yet practical application see Orig. in Mt. t. xii. 36 sq. διαφόρους ἔχει ὁ Δόγος μορφάς, φαινόμενος ἕκαστῳ ὡς συμφέρει τῷ βλέποντι... εἰ δὲ θέλεις τὴν μεταμόρφωσιν τοῦ Ἰησοῦ ἵδειν ἐμπροσθεν τῶν ἀναβάντων εἰς τὸ ὑψηλὸν ὅρος κατ’ ἴδιαν σὺν αὐτῷ, ἵδε μοι τὸν ἐν τοῖς εὐαγγελίοις Ἰησοῦν...θεολογούμενον...καὶ ἐν τῇ τοῦ θεοῦ μορφῇ κατὰ τὴν γνῶσιν αὐτῶν θεωρούμενον. τούτων γάρ ἐμπροσθεν μεταμορφοῦται ὁ Ἰησοῦς καὶ οὐδενὶ τῶν κάτω. Cf. Philoc. xv. ed. Robinson, p. 83 f., and Jerome tr. in Mc.: “vere enim in monte consistimus quando spiritaliter intellegimus.” On the Synoptic narrative of the Transfiguration and the significi-

ance of the event see *Biblical and Semitic Studies* (N. Y. 1901), pp. 159—210.

3. καὶ τὰ ἱμάτια αὐτοῦ ἐγένετο στίλβοντα] Cf. Dan. vii. 9 Th. τὸ ἐνδυμα αὐτοῦ ωσεὶ χιών λευκόν, Mt. xxviii. 3, Apoc. i. 13 f., xii. 1. Στίλβειν is used in the LXX. of the flashing of burnished brass or gold (1 Esdr. viii. 56, 2 Esdr. viii. 27) or steel (Nah. iii. 3) or of sunlight (1 Macc. vi. 39): cf. Joseph. *ant.* xix. 8. 2 ὁ ἄργυρος καταγασθεὶς θαυμασίως ἀπέστιλβε. In the N.T. it does not occur again; Mt.’s equivalent here is ως τὸ φῶς, Lc. substitutes ἔξαστράπτων. The reading ως χιών (vv. ll.) is attractive, especially in view of the perennial snows on the summit of Hermon; but it is probably borrowed from Dan. l.c., or from Mt. xxviii.

λευκὰ λίαν οἵα γναφεὺς κτλ.] No earthly fuller could have produced such a dazzling whiteness. On γναφεύς see ii. 21, note, and for λευκάνειν in reference to clothing, cf. Isa. i. 18, Apoc. vii. 14, whence *candidati martyres* in the ‘Te Deum.’ This is Mc.’s special contribution to the picture; he makes no direct reference to the glory of the Lord’s Face (Mt. ἔλαμψεν τὸ πρόσωπον αὐτοῦ ως ὁ ἥλιος, cf. Lc.).

4 ὥφθη αὐτοῖς Ἡλείας σὺν Μωσεῖ] The vision was for the benefit of the disciples (αὐτοῖς, cf. ἐμπρ. αὐτῶν, v. 2). “Ωφθη is used not only for angelic (Jud. vi. 12, Lc. i. 11, xxii. 43) and Divine (Gen. xii. 7, Acts vii. 2, 30) appearances, but in reference to the Lord’s self-revelations after the Resurrection (Lc. xxiv. 34, Acts ix. 17). The word does not imply either an

·*Ηλείας σὺν Μωυσῇ, καὶ ἦσαν συνλαλοῦντες τῷ Ιησοῦ.* 5 *καὶ ἀποκριθεὶς ὁ Πέτρος λέγει τῷ Ιησοῦ* 5  
·*Ραββεῖ, καλόν ἐστιν ἡμᾶς ὅδε εἶναι καὶ ποιήσωμεν*

<sup>4</sup> Ηλείας ΝΑΛΝΧΓΔΠ | Μωσ. ACEFGHLMUXΓ | ησαν συνλαλουντες] ησ. λαλούντες  
σετ<sup>ε</sup> συνλαλουν D 1 2<sup>ρ</sup> αν q 5 ποιησωμεν] (ει) θελεις ποιησω (vel ποιησωμεν) D  
(13 28 69) 604 (1071) 2<sup>ρ</sup> αλπερραιο b ff i + ωδε C 2<sup>ρ</sup> c ff

illusion or a dream; the three, acc. to Lc., had been disposed to slumber, but were thoroughly roused by the occurrence and saw everything (*διαγρηγορήσαντες δὲ εἶδαν τὴν δόξαν αὐτοῦ καὶ τὸν δύο ἄνδρας*). How the vision was impressed upon the eyes it is useless to enquire.

*·*Ηλείας σὺν Μωυσῇ*] The best supported form of the latter name is *Μωυσῆς* (-σέως, -σεΐ, -σέα), but *Μωυσῆς* and the terminations -σῆ, -σῆ, -σῆν are also found in good mss. of the LXX. and N.T.; see W.Schm., pp. 51, 94, WH., *Notes*, p. 165. Mc's order seems to be based upon Mal. iv. 4 (iii. 23) ff. *ἀποστέλλω ὑμῖν Ἡλίαν...μνήσθητε νόμου Μωυσῆ*. Elijah was expected and had been lately in their thoughts (viii. 28, ix. 11); to their surprise he was accompanied by Moses, for whom they had not looked (see however J. Lightfoot on Lc. ix. 30, and Wünsche, *neue Beiträge*, p. 394). The re-arrangement in Mt., Lc. (*Μωυσῆς καὶ Ἡλείας*, so Syrr.<sup>sin. pesh.</sup> here, and cf. v. 5) has the appearance of being an historical correction. The two men represented the Law and the Prophets (Tert. *adv. Marc.* iv. 22, Aug. *serm.* 232); both were seen to be in perfect harmony with the Gospel represented by the Christ; cf. Victor: *δηλοῖ δὲ καὶ συνάφειαν παλαιᾶς διαθήκης καὶ νέας*. Their appearance refuted the charge of law-breaking brought by the Scribes against the Master; Thphrt.: *ὁ μὲν νομοθετής ήν, ὁ δὲ ζηλωτής· οὐκ ἀνώμιλον οἱ τοιοῦτοι προφῆται τῷ τὸν νόμον λύειν δοκοῦντι εἰ μὴ ἥρεσκεν αὐτοῖς ἀ λέγειν*.*

ἡσαν συνλαλοῦντες τῷ Ιησοῦ] The

general drift of the conversation was remembered by Lc.'s informant (? St John); it was in keeping with Christ's recent teaching about the Passion: *ἔλεγον τὴν ἔξοδον αὐτοῦ ἦν ἥμελλεν πληροῦν ἐν Ἱερουσαλήμ*. Cf. Jerome, *tr. in Mc. ad l.*: “lex enim et prophetae Christi passionem adnuntiant.” *Συνλαλεῖν* is followed either by the dat., as in Mc. and Lc. here (cf. Exod. xxxiv. 35, Lc. xxii. 4), or by a prep. (*μετά τινος*, Mt. here, Acts xxv. 12; *πρός τινα*, 3 Regn. xii. 14(A), Lc. iv. 36).

5. *ἀποκριθεὶς ὁ Πέτρος κτλ.]* Apparently no word had been addressed to Peter or his companions by any of the glorified Three; yet Peter felt that some response was called for. For a similar use of *ἀποκρίνεσθαι* cf. x. 24, xi. 14, xii. 35, xv. 12; Syr.<sup>pesh.</sup> and various forms of the O.L. omit it here. The Synoptists agree in attributing the remark which follows to Peter; no Apostle found it so hard to learn the lesson *καιρὸς τοῦ σιγᾶν καὶ καιρὸς τοῦ λαλεῖν*. Acc. to Lc. the occasion was specially inopportune: *έγένετο ἐν τῷ διαχωρίζεσθαι αὐτοὺς ἀπ'* αὐτοῦ.

*·*Ραββεῖ, καλόν ἐστιν ἡμᾶς ὅδε εἶναι*] The title of *Rabbi* had been given to Jesus from the first (Jo. i. 38, 49, iii. 2), and was probably the usual name by which both disciples and others addressed Him (Mt. xxiii. 7, 8, Jo. vi. 25, xi. 8, Mc. x. 51, xi. 21, xiv. 45). Mt. translates it by *κύριε*, Lc. by *ἐπιστάτα* (cf. Lc. v. 5, viii. 24, 45, ix. 49, xvii. 13); Mc., after his manner, retains where he can the Aramaic word (cf. Dalman, *Worte*, i. pp. 269, 276). It needed no interpretation for Gentile readers; yet see the ‘Western’*

§ ψ τρεῖς σκηνάς, σοὶ μίαν § καὶ Μωυσεῖ μίαν καὶ Ἡλείᾳ μίαν. ὅφει τί ἀποκριθῆ, ἐκφοβοὶ γὰρ ἐγένοντο. 7 καὶ ἐγένετο νεφέλη ἐπισκιάζουσα αὐτοῖς, καὶ

6 ἀποκριθῆ] λαλησει (vel -ση) A(C<sup>3</sup>)DMNUΓΔΠΣΦ al min<sup>sat</sup><sub>mu</sub> loqueretur vel diceret latte<sup>exc</sup>k (syrr) arm me the aeth | εκφοβοι γαρ εγενοντο ΝΒΔΛΔΨ 33 2<sup>po</sup> latt<sup>vt</sup> plv<sup>g</sup>] ησαν γαρ εκφ. (vel εμφ.) A(K)N(U)ΧΓΠΣΦ al min<sup>pl</sup> f vg

text of x. 51. Καλόν ἔστιν κτλ. “it is good that we—the Apostles—are here,” implying ‘it were good for us to stay where we are.’ Origen: τὸ νομίζομεν τῷ Πέτρῳ καλὸν οὐ πεποίκεν ὁ Ἰησοῦς. Victor: τί οὖν ὁ Πέτρος ὁ θερμός;...ἐπιθυμεῖ ὁ μὲλλων ἀγωνίζεσθαι ἀναπαύσεως πρὸ τῶν ἀγώνων. εἰ γὰρ τοῦτο γένοιτο, φησίν, οὐκ ἀναβησόμεθα εἰς τὰ Ἱεροσόλυμα καὶ οὐκ ἀποθανεῖται.

καὶ ποιήσωμεν τρεῖς σκηνάς] Mt. εἰ θελεις, ποιήσω τρ. σκ. Σκηνάς, tents or booths: Wycliffe, “tabernaclis”= ΤΙΠΩ, as in Gen. xxxiii. 17, Lev. xix. 21, 2 Esdr. xviii. 14 ff., Ps. xxx. (xxxii.) 20. The materials would be found in the brushwood which clothes the spurs of Hermon—Jerome’s question “num quid arbores erant in monte illo?” is unnecessary—and the ideal in Peter’s mind seems to be that of the annual σκηνοπηγία (Lev. xxiii. 40 ff., 2 Esdr. xviii. 14 ff.); he would anticipate it by a week spent on this leafy height in the presence of the three greatest masters of Israel. Σοὶ μίαν καὶ Μ. μίαν καὶ Ἡλ. μίαν. Jerome: “eras, Petre...noli tria tabernacula quaerere, cum unum sit tabernaculum evangelii, in quo lex et prophetae recapitulanda sunt”; “si quando inaequales aequaliter honorantur, maioris iniuria est... non enim sciebat quid diceret cum Dominum cum servis aequaliter honoraret.” For a practical reflexion on καλόν ἔστιν κτλ. cf. Bede: “O quanta felicitas visioni Deitatis inter angelorum chorus adesse perpetuo, si tantum transfigurata Christi humanitas duorumque societas sanctorum ad punctum visa delectat.”

6. οὐ γὰρ ἥδει τί ἀποκριθῆ] Vg.

non enim sciebat quid diceret: the same phrase occurs in connexion with the Agony (xiv. 40). Lc. substitutes here μὴ εἶδὼς ὁ λέγει. The speaker was so dazed by the awfulness of the vision that he neither knew what to say (for the subjunctive see WM., p. 374), nor yet what he was saying when he spoke. Ἐκφοβοὶ γὰρ ἐγένοντο, not Peter only, but the Three, became panic-stricken, were seized with extreme alarm; cf. the abrupt ending of the Gospel, xvi. 8 ἐφοβοῦντο γάρ. For ἐκφοβος see Deut. ix. 19, Heb. xii. 21. Lc. connects this fear with the next occurrence: ἐφοβήθησαν δὲ ἐν τῷ εἰσελθεῖν αὐτὸν εἰς τὴν νεφέλην.

7. καὶ ἐγένετο νεφέλη ἐπισκιάζουσα] For this use of ἐγένετο cf. i. 4, note. Each Synoptist adopts a different construction: Mt. ίδοὺ ν. ἐπεσκίασεν, Lc. ἐγένετο ν. καὶ ἐπεσκίαζεν. The cloud occurs as the symbol of the Divine Presence in the theophanies of the Exodus (Exod. xvi. 10, xix. 9, 16, xxiv. 15 f., xxxiii. 9, Lev. xvi. 2, Num. xi. 25) and at the dedication of the first Temple (1 Kings viii. 10; cf. Ps. civ. 3, Nah. i. 3). It was expected to reappear in Messianic times (2 Macc. ii. 8 ὁ φθῆσται ἡ δόξα τοῦ κυρίου καὶ ἡ νεφέλη, ὡς ἐπὶ Μωσῆ ἐδηλούτο, ὡς καὶ ὁ Σαλωμῶν κτλ.). In the N. T. it is connected with the Transfiguration, the Ascension (Acts i. 9) and the παρουσία (Mc. xiii. 26 (cf. Dan. vii. 13), xiv. 62, Apoc. i. 7). The cloud of the Transfiguration was φωτινή (Mt., cf. Apoc. xiv. 14): when the Synoptists add that it “overshadowed” the Apostles, the refer-

ἐγένετο φωνὴ ἐκ τῆς νεφέλης Οὐτός ἐστιν ὁ νίος §μου, § W<sup>a</sup>  
 ὁ ἀγαπητός· ἀκούετε αὐτοῦ. § καὶ ἐξάπινα περιβλεψά- 8  
 μενοι οὐκέτι οὐδένα εἶδον εἰ μὴ τὸν Ἰησοῦν μόνον  
 μεθ' ἑαυτῶν.

7 εγένετο 2<sup>o</sup> ΝΒCLΔΨ] ηλθεν ADNXΓΠΣΦ al min<sup>foreomn</sup> ab fin q vg syr<sup>sin</sup> om 1  
 (c) k (sy1<sup>exw</sup>) pr ιδον 300 1071 ff | νεφελης]+λεγουσα ADLW<sup>d</sup> (sic) Ψ 1 28 33 69 124 736  
 all latt(excl) syr<sup>(excsin)</sup> arm<sup>zoh</sup> aeth | ακούετε αυτον [αυτον ακ. ANXΓΠΙ] pr ον εξε-  
 λεξαμην W<sup>a</sup> pr εν ω ευδοκησα Λ<sup>a</sup> pr ει ω ηνδ. Δ 8 εξαπινα ενθεως DW<sup>d</sup> 28 66<sup>ms</sup>  
 69 2<sup>po</sup> statim a i n r vg om b | ει μη ΝBDNΣΨ 33 61 3<sup>po</sup> alpauc latt me go aeth] αλλα  
 ACLXΓΔΠΦ al min<sup>pauc</sup> the | om μονον F | μεθ' εαυτων post ειδον B 33 c f om W<sup>a</sup>  
 61 a afflk (post μονον pos ΝACDLΣΦΨ cet b n vg arm me go aeth)

ence is to Exod. xl. 29 (35) ἐπεσκίαζεν  
 ἐπ' αὐτὴν (sc. τὴν σκηνὴν) ἡ νεφέλη,  
 where ἐπισκιάζειν = Ιωψ, to rest; cf.  
 Lc. i. 35 δύναμις ὑψιστον ἐπισκιάσει  
 σοι. The appearance was that of the Shechinah: οἷμα δὸς ὅτι τὸν Πέτρον  
 ὁ θεὸς ἀποτρέπων τοῦ ποιῆσαι τρεῖς  
 σκηνάς...δείκνυστι κρείττονα...καὶ πολλῷ  
 διαφέρουσαν σκηνὴν, τὴν νεφέλην...φω-  
 τεινὴ γάρ πατρός, νίον, καὶ τοῦ ἄγιον  
 πνεύματος νεφέλῃ ἐπισκιάζει τοὺς Ἰησοῦ  
 γηνησίους μαθητάς. (Orig. in Mt. t. xii.  
 42.) Cf. Ephrem, hom. in transf.:  
 ἔδειξεν αὐτῷ ὅτι οὐ χρήζει τῆς σκηνῆς  
 αὐτοῦ· αὐτὸς γὰρ ἦν ὁ ποιήσας τοὺς  
 πατράσιν αὐτοῦ σκηνὴν νεφέλης ἐν τῇ  
 ἐρήμῳ...βλέπεις, Σίμων, σκηνὴν ἄνευ  
 κόπου, σκηνὴν κωλύουσαν καῦμα καὶ μὴ  
 ἔχουσαν σκότος;

καὶ ἐγένετο φωνὴ ἐκ τ. ν.] See note  
 on i. 11, and cf. Dalman, *Worte*, i. pp.  
 167 f., 226 ff. It is instructive to compare  
 the four reports of this Voice. Taking Mc.'s as the standard, we  
 note that, besides variations of order,  
 Mt. and 2 Peter add ἐν φῳ (εἰς ὃν ἐγώ)  
 εὐδόκησα, 2 Peter omits ἀκούετε αὐτοῦ,  
 and Lc. substitutes ἐκλεγμένος for  
 ἀγαπητός. 'En φῳ εὐδόκησα is probably  
 from the Voice at the Baptism; Lc.'s  
 ἐκλεγμένος (cf. Lc. xxiii. 35, Enoch  
 xl. 5) is based on Isa. xlvi. 1 'יְהִי,  
 LXX. ὁ ἐκλεκτός μου (Mt. xii. 18 ὁ ἀγα-  
 πητός μου): on the interchange of these  
 two titles of the Messiah see Resch,  
 l.c., p. 164. The essential difference

between this Voice and that which  
 was heard at the Baptism is the  
 ἀκούετε αὐτοῦ or αὐτοῦ ἀκ. which the  
 three Synoptists add here. The words  
 are from Deut. xviii. 15, 19, and seem  
 to be suggested by the appearance  
 of Moses. The Prophet like unto  
 Moses is identified with the Christ,  
 the beloved or elect Son; the alle-  
 giance due to Moses is now with  
 Moses' concurrence transferred to  
 Jesus. Victor: καν σταυρωθῆναι βου-  
 ληθῆ μὴ ἀντιπέτης ὅντος γάρ ἐστι  
 περὶ σὺν λέγουσιν οὐτοι...δεῖ παθεῖν  
 ...δεῖ ἀναστῆναι. For this use of ἀκού-  
 ειν (nearly = ὑπακούειν) cf. Mt. xviii.  
 15 f., Jo. x. 8, 16, xviii. 37. The fears  
 of the three Apostles, already excited  
 by the vision (Mc.) and the bright  
 cloud (Lc.), were intensified by the  
 Voice (Mt., ἀκούσαντες οἱ μαθηταὶ ἐπε-  
 σαν ἐπὶ τὸ πρόσωπον αὐτῶν; cf. Apoc.  
 i. 17). In 2 Peter it is the Voice of  
 the Father rather than the visible  
 splendour of the Transfiguration to  
 which attention is called (φωνῆς ἐνε-  
 χθείσης αὐτῷ τοῦτο οὐπό τῆς μεγαλο-  
 πρεπούς δόξης). It was the first Voice  
 from heaven which the Apostles had  
 heard.

8. ἐξάπινα περιβλεψάμενοι κτλ.] The  
 Lord meanwhile had raised them up  
 from the ground (Mt.). When they  
 ventured to lift their eyes again  
 (Mt. ἐπάραντες δὲ τοὺς ὄφθαλμοὺς αὐ-  
 τῶν) and to look round them, the

¶ W 9      <sup>9</sup>*Καὶ καταβαινόντων αὐτῶν ἐκ τοῦ ὄρους διεστείλατο αὐτοῖς ἵνα μηδενὶ ἀεὶδον διηγήσωνται, εἰ μὴ τοῦ ὅταν ὁ νίδος τοῦ ἀνθρώπου ἐκ νεκρῶν ἀναστῇ. <sup>10</sup>καὶ τὸν λόγον ἐκράτησαν, πρὸς ἑαυτοὺς συνζητοῦντες τί*

9 εκ BDΨ 33 <sup>fser 1<sup>st</sup>er]</sup> απὸ ΚΑCLNXΓΔΙΙ αἱρῆται | διεστειλατο (-στελλετο ΣΣΦ 1)] παρηγγειλεν Δ | ειδοσαν D | διηγησονται ΗKNXΣ min<sup>nonn</sup> εξηγησ. 13 28 69 346 604 | ει μη] εως ου 604 om Κ\* (hab Ν\*)      10 και] οι δε 13 49 (69) 124 346 736 2<sup>nd</sup>οι δε και 262 300 | εκρατησαν] ετηρησαν 604 | συνζητουντες] om k | τι εστω] pr το M.

vision was gone; of the august Three Jesus alone remained (Lc. εὐρέθη Ἰησοῦς μόνος) with them on the Mount. The Transfiguration was at an end, and they saw before them only the familiar form of the Master. The words of Mc. are perhaps suggested by Exod. ii. 12 περιβλεψάμενος δὲ ὁδε καὶ ὁδε οὐχ ὥρᾳ οὐδένα: in the N.T. the word is elsewhere used only in reference to Christ (cf. iii. 5, note). Ἐξάπινα=ἐξαπίνης occurs in the LXX. about a dozen times, but in the N. T. only here, the prevalent N. T. form being ἔξαφνης, ἔξεφνης (xiii. 36, Lc. ev. 2, act. 2). Jerome brings out the spiritual significance of the disappearance of Moses and Elijah: "sic vidi Moysen, sic vidi prophetas, ut de Christo intellegerem loquentes...ut non permaneam in lege et prophetis, sed per legem et prophetas ad Christum perveniam."

9—13. CONVERSATION ABOUT ELIJAH DURING THE DESCENT (Mt. xvii. 9—13, cf. Lc. ix. 36 b).

9. καταβαινόντων αὐτῶν κτλ.] As they descended from (ἐκ, as if issuing from) the mountain (probably on, the following morning, cf. Lc. ix. 37) the Lord enjoined secrecy. For διεστείλατο (Mt. ἐνετείλατο), cf. v. 43, note, and for διηγεῖσθαι, v. 16. <sup>8</sup>Α εἰδον, Mt. τὸ ὄραμα (cf. Exod. iii. 3, Num. xii. 6). The concealment is for a limited period—εἰ μὴ ὅταν (Mt. ἔως οὗ) ὁ ν. τ. ἀ. ἐκ νεκρῶν ἀναστῇ (Mt. ἐγερθῇ). On the phrase ἀναστῆναι ἐκ νεκρῶν see WM., p. 153: ἐκ τῶν νεκρῶν occurs only in Eph. v. 14, Col. i. 18, 1 Thess. i. 10, ἀπὸ τῶν νεκρῶν in Mt. xiv. 2, xxvii. 64,

xxviii. 7; ἐκ νεκρῶν predominates also in early patristic and symbolic use (Hahn, *Symb.*, ed. 3, p. 380).

10. τὸν λόγον ἐκράτησαν κτλ.] Vg. "verbum continuerunt apud se"; Wycliffe, "thei heelden the word at hem silf." Lc. interprets: καὶ αὐτοὶ ἐστίγησαν καὶ οὐδενὶ ἀπήγγειλαν ἐν ἐκείναις ταῖς ἡμέραις οὐδὲν ὥν ἔωρακαν. For κρατεῖν =συγᾶν the commentators quote Dan. v. 12 where Th. renders ἤτιπτον by κρατούμενα. But N.T. usage is in favour of translating ἐκράτησαν 'they held fast' ("kept" R.V.), retained in their memory (cf. vii. 3, 4, 8, 2 Thess. ii. 15, Apoc. ii. 14 ff.). The λόγος in this case is not the fact of the Transfiguration, but the Lord's saying, especially what He had said about rising from the dead; they discussed this among themselves, not venturing to ask Him the meaning (τὸ ἀναστῆναι; Blass, *Gr.* p. 233 f.). So little had they realised His earlier words (viii. 31); if their attention was arrested now, it was because the Resurrection was made the limit of their silence. For πρὸς ἑαυτοὺς συνζητεῖν cf. Lc. xxii. 23. Some interpreters (cf. Lat.<sup>v.g.</sup>, Syr.<sup>pesh.</sup>) connect πρ. ἑαυτ. with ἐκράτησαν, cf. Euth.: ἐκράτησαν πρὸς ἑαυτούς, πρὸς μηδένα ἔτερον τούτον [τὸν λόγον] ἔξειπόντες. But the construction seems to be without example. Victor is probably right: τὸν μὲν λόγον ἐκράτησαν, πρὸς ἑαυτούς δὲ συνεζήτουν: so Syr.<sup>sin.</sup> During the days that preceded the Passion the matter was often discussed among the Three, or perhaps (ix. 32,

ἐστιν τὸ ἐκ νεκρῶν ἀναστῆναι. <sup>11</sup> καὶ ἐπηρώτων αὐτὸν ΙΙ ¶ πλέοντες Ὅτι λέγουσιν οἱ γραμματεῖς ὅτι Ἡλείαν δεῖ ἐλθεῖν πρῶτον; <sup>12</sup> ὁ δὲ ἔφη αὐτοῖς Ἡλείας μὲν Ι 2 ἐλθὼν πρῶτον ἀποκαθιστάνει πάντα· καὶ πῶς γέ-

10 το εκ νεκρῶν αναστῆναι ΑΒCLNXΓ(Δ)ΠΣΨ al min<sup>pl</sup> (k) q (syr<sup>hd</sup>) arm me go aeth] οταν εκ ν. αναστη D 1 13 69 118 124 209 346 a b c f n vg (syrr) tot vers om ff 11 οτι 10] πως ουν 13 69 124 346 quid ergo a f vg quid utique c om 27 60 me aeth | οι γραμμ.] pr οι Φαρισαῖοι καὶ ΝL vg (om ABCDNXΓΔΠΣΦΨ al min<sup>omn vid</sup> latt<sup>rt</sup> syrr arm me go) | om οτι 2° D 1 108 al<sup>pauc</sup> b ff i k q 12 εφη] ἀποκρίθεις εἰπεν ΑDNXΓΠΣΦ al min<sup>omn vid</sup> latt syrr<sup>sin hel</sup> arm go aeth | om μεν DLΨ 128 2<sup>ρο</sup> latt aeth | πρωτος Ν<sup>ε</sup>DNXΣΨ 107<sup>1</sup> p<sup>scr</sup> om 604 | ἀποκαθιστανει Ν<sup>ε</sup> (ἀποκαταστ.) Β<sup>2</sup> (ἀποκαταστ. Β<sup>ε</sup>Ψ) D (ut Ν<sup>ε</sup>) ΛΔ 1 33 118 2<sup>ρο</sup> 8<sup>ρο</sup>] ἀποκαθιστα Ν<sup>ε</sup>ΧΠΣΦ min<sup>pl</sup> ἀποκαταστησει C latt arm me aeth | καὶ πως ΑBCDLNXΓΣΦΨ min<sup>pl</sup> latt syrr arm me go] καθως ΑΚΜΔΠ 107<sup>1</sup> al<sup>nonn</sup> syr<sup>hel(mg)</sup> quia k

x. 34) among the Twelve. Συνζητοῦντες κτλ. is a detail peculiar to Mc.

11. καὶ ἐπηρώτων... Ὅτι λέγουσιν κτλ.] The train of thought is perhaps that suggested by Mt. (τί οὖν κτλ.). The three have been reflecting upon the vision, and it has revived and given fresh point to an old perplexity. How was Elijah's appearance at the Transfiguration to be reconciled with the official doctrine of his return? As Origen observes (*in Mt. t. xiii. 1*): ή δὲ ἐν τῷ ὄρε ὁ πτασία, καθ' ἡν δὲ Ἡλίας ἐφάνη, ἐδόκει μὴ συνάδειν τοῖς εἰρημένοις, ἐπει οὐ πρὸ τοῦ Ἰησοῦ ἐδοξεύ αὐτοῖς ἐληλυθέναι δὲ Ἡλίας ἀλλὰ μετ' αὐτόν. The first ὅτι is interrogative as in 1 Chron. xvii. 6 (=πιθή) and in Mc. ii. 16 (note), ix. 28, cf. WM., p. 208 n.; in Mc. ll. cc. the R.V. (text) treats ὅτι as a formula of citation, but the context and the corresponding words in Mt. support the other view; see Field, *Notes*, p. 33. For the *dictum* of the Scribes to which the question refers see J. Lightfoot on Mt. xvii.; it was an inference from Mal. iv. 4 (iii. 23) ἀποστέλλω ἡμῖν Ἡλίαν... πρὶν ἐλθεῖν ἡμέραν Κυρίου κτλ. In Justin *dial.* 49, Trypho urges: πάντες ἡμεῖς τὸν χριστὸν ἀνθρώπον ἔξι ἀνθρώπων προσδοκῶμεν γενήσεσθαι, καὶ τὸν Ἡλίαν χρίσαι αὐτὸν ἐλθόντα... ἐκ δὲ τοῦ

μηδὲ Ἡλίαν ἐληλυθέναι οὐδὲ τοῦτο ἀποφαίνομαι εἶναι. The Rabbinic traditions are collected by Edersheim, ii. p. 706 ff. Cf. Mc. xv. 35 f.

12. Ἡλείας μὲν ἐλθὼν πρῶτον κτλ.] 'Elijah, it is true, cometh first.' For this use of *μέν* with no following δέ see WM., p. 719 f.; the counterbalancing clause is left to be supplied from the question which succeeds. Mc. substitutes ἀποκαθιστάνει for ἀποκαταστήσει (Mt.), converting the prophecy into a proposition which may or may not have been realised; 'as a proposition it is correct to say that Elijah's coming and work precede those of the Messiah.' Πάντα (Mt., Mc.) extends the scope of the prophecy (ἀποκ. καρδίαν πατρὸς πρὸς νίδν καὶ καρδίαν ἀνθρώπου πρὸς τὸν πλησίον), including in it the ultimate purpose of the Messianic kingdom; the Forerunner restores all things by initiating the new order out of which will come in due course a true ἀποκατάστασις πάντων (Acts iii. 21). WH. print, "but with hesitation," the form ἀποκατιστάνει, on which see their *Notes*, p. 168. Ἀποκαθιστάνειν = ἀποκαθιστάναι (Job v. 18) or ἀποκαθιστᾶν (Ps. xv. (xvi.) 5) occurs again in Acts i. 6 (Blass).

καὶ πῶς γέγραπται κτλ.] Instead of solving the difficulty the Lord pro-

γραπται ἐπὶ τὸν νιὸν τοῦ ἀνθρώπου ἵνα πολλὰ πάθη  
ι 3 καὶ ἔξουδενηθῇ; <sup>13</sup> ἀλλὰ λέγω ὑμῖν ὅτι καὶ Ἡλείας  
ἐλήλυθεν, καὶ ἐποίησαν αὐτῷ ὅσα ἤθελον, καθὼς  
γέγραπται ἐπ' αὐτόν.

12 *ινα*] pr ουχ syr<sup>sin</sup> | εξουδενηθῃ BDΨ <sup>2<sup>ρε</sup></sup> εξουθενηθη Σ(Φ) εξουδενωθη ΚΑΣΧΓΔΠ  
69 al<sup>pl</sup> 13 εληλυθεν] εληλυθει Δ ηδη ηλθεν C ι δο4 al<sup>pauc</sup> figo<sup>vid</sup> | καὶ 2<sup>ο</sup>...ηθελον]  
et fecit quanta oportebat illum facere k | αυτω] pr εν ΛΠΨ 28 al<sup>pauc</sup> (syrr) | ηθελον  
ΚΒC\*DLΨ] ηθελησαν AC<sup>2</sup>ΤΠΣΦ min<sup>omn</sup>vid | επ αυτον] εν αυτω Γ επ αυτω δο4 περι  
αυτον 13 28 69 346 de eo latt<sup>vtplyg</sup>

poses another, in which however the true solution lies. He anticipates an objection which would be sure to rise in the minds of the Three. What then (*καὶ πῶς;*) do the Scriptures mean when they foretell a suffering Messiah? how can the Passion follow the Restoration? It is unnecessary to suppose that the order of Mc. has here been disturbed, the true sequence being 11, 12<sup>b</sup>, 12<sup>a</sup>, i.e., that *καὶ πῶς γέγραπται...* *ἔξουδενηθῇ* forms part of the disciples' question. The Apostles would scarcely have recognised the Scriptural basis of the Lord's prediction in viii. 31. *Γέγραπται...* *ινα*: the telic sense need not be excluded (WM., p. 577); the Scripture foretells and by foretelling determines the issue; *γέγρ.* *ὅτι* is the normal formula when a passage is merely cited, e.g. vii. 6, xi. 17. *Γέγρ.* *ἐπὶ*, 'it is written with reference to' Him (cf. *σπλαγχνίζεσθαι ἐπὶ*, vi. 34, viii. 2); the ordinary construction is *γέγρ.* *περὶ* with gen. (xiv. 21, Lc. vii. 27, &c.). *Καὶ ἔξουδενηθῇ*: cf. Ps. xxi. (xxii.) 6 *ἔγω δέ εἰμι...* *ἔξουδένημα λαοῦ*. Isa. liii. 3 Symm. *ἔξουδενωμένος καὶ ἐλάχιστος ἀνδρῶν*, Aq. (?) *ἔξουδενωμένος*, διὸ οὐκ ἐλογισάμεθα αὐτὸν. There are four forms of this verb—*ἔξουδενοῦν*, *-νεῖν*, *ἔξουθενοῦν*, *-νεῖν*; see W. Schm. p. 61, and Lob. *Phrynp.* p. 182.

13. *ἀλλὰ λέγω ὑμῖν κτλ.*] 'However (taking up the thread broken by the last question) I tell you that Elijah not only must come first, but has moreover (*καὶ*) actually come (*ἥδη*

*ἥλθεν*, Mt.); and men did not recognise him (Mt.), and did with him (Mt. *ἐν αὐτῷ = ΙΩ*) as they would.' The phrase *ποιεῖν ὅσα* (ἀ) *θέλω* (*τινί*), frequently used in the O.T. to represent irresponsible or arbitrary action (e.g. 3 Regn. ix. 1, x. 13, Ps. cxiii. 11 (cxv. 3), Dan. viii. 4 (Th.), 2 Macc. vii. 16), points with sufficient distinctness to the murder of John by Antipas.

*καθὼς γέγραπται ἐπ' αὐτόν]* So Mc. only. In this case Scripture had foretold the future not by prophecy but by a type. The fate intended for Elijah (1 Kings xix. 2, 10) had overtaken John: he had found his Jezebel in Herodias. Orig. *in Mt.* : *ἄλλος δ' ἀν εἴποι ὅτι τὸ 'ἀλλ' ἐποίησαν' κτλ. οὐκ ἐπὶ τοὺς γραμματεῖς ἀλλ' ἐπὶ τὴν Ἡρῳδίᾳ καὶ τὴν θυγατέρα αὐτῆς καὶ τὸν Ἡρῳδην ἀναφέρεται.*

The identification of Elijah with John was so evident that, as Mt. adds, it was understood by the Three at the time (Mt. *τότε συνῆκαν οἱ μαθηταὶ ὅτι περὶ Ἰωάνου τοῦ βαπτιστοῦ εἶπεν αὐτοῖς*). On another and earlier occasion, according to Mt., it had been made in express terms (Mt. xi. 14 *εἰ θέλετε δέξασθαι, αὐτὸς ἐστιν Ἡλείας ὁ μὲλλων ἔρχεσθαι*). The reference in Mal. l. c. to "the great and terrible day of the Lord" led the ancient Church to expect an appearance of Elijah himself before the end; cf. Justin *dial.* 49, Chrys. *ad loc.*, Aug. *tract. in Jo.* iv. 5, 6.

<sup>14§</sup> Καὶ ἐλθόντες πρὸς τοὺς μαθητὰς εἶδαν ὄχλον 14 § I πολὺν περὶ αὐτοὺς καὶ γραμματεῖς συνζητοῦντας πρὸς αὐτούς. <sup>15</sup> καὶ εὐθὺς πᾶς ὁ ὄχλος ἰδόντες αὐτὸν ἐξε- 15 θαυμάζησαν, καὶ προστρέχοντες ἡσπάζοντο αὐτόν.

14 ελθοντες...ειδον ΧΒ<sup>corr</sup> (ειδαν Β\*) ΛΔΨ (ιδον) k arm] ελθων...ειδεν ACDINXF ΠΣΦ al min<sup>omnivid</sup> latt<sup>vtp</sup> pl<sup>vg</sup> syrr me go aeth | περι] προς D 28 latt<sup>vtp</sup> | γραμματεις] pr τους D 1 13 38 69 124 60<sup>4</sup> 2<sup>po</sup> arm | προς αυτους] πρ. εαυτους C αυτους ADNΧΓΠΙΣΦ min<sup>pl</sup> προς αυτον Ψ 15 ιδων...εξεθαυμβηθη ΑΝΧΓΠΙΙ al<sup>pl</sup> a syrr go | προστρεχοντες (προτρ. AC)] προσχεροντες D gaudentes (b) ed ffik (cf. Tat<sup>diatarab</sup>)

AND THE SEQUEL (Mt. xvii. 14—20, Lc. ix. 37—43).

14. ἐλθόντες πρὸς τοὺς μαθητὰς κτλ.] Returning to the plain where they had left the nine (Euth.: μαθητὰς νῦν τοὺς ἐννέα λέγει), they saw that they were surrounded by a crowd of people who were listening to a discussion which was passing between the disciples and certain scribes (γραμματεῖς, anarthrous: contrast of γρ. v. 11). Mt., who throughout this narrative is much briefer than Mc., writes simply ἐλθόντων πρὸς τὸν ὄχλον and does not seem to know the cause which had brought it together. The scribes were probably Rabbis attached to the local synagogues, but as ready as the rest of their class to seize an opportunity of discrediting the disciples of Jesus before the people. The absence of the Master and the incapacity of the nine furnished what they sought. (Victor: δραξάμενοι γὰρ οἱ γραμματεῖς τῆς τοῦ σωτῆρος ἀποστίας περιέλκειν τοὺς μαθητὰς ὑπελάμβανον.) Ον εἰδαν see WH., Notes, p. 164. 'Ελθόντες...ειδαν points, as Zahn remarks (*Einl.* ii. p. 245 f.), to the narrative having originated with one of the three, doubtless Peter, who has told his story in the form 'Ελθόντες...ειδαμεν.

15. καὶ εὐθὺς πᾶς ὁ ὄχλος κτλ.] As soon as Jesus came into sight the Scribes lost the attention of the crowd. The first feeling was one of amazement, almost amounting to awe (cf. i. 27). Both θαυμάσισθαι and ἐκθαυμάσισθαι are in the N. T. peculiar to

Mc. (for the latter cf. xiv. 33, xvi. 5, 6); ἐκθαυμίσος occurs in Acts iii. 10 συνέδραμεν πᾶς ὁ λαὸς πρὸς αὐτούς... ἐκθαυμίσοι, a near parallel to the present passage. Interpreters have found it difficult to assign a cause for the θάυματος in this instance. Some (cf. Thph., Euth.) have thought of a radiance from the transfiguration still brightening the Lord's Face (Euth. εἰκὼς ἐφέλκεσθαι τινα χάριν ἐκ τῆς μεταμορφώσεως), recalling the glory on the face of Moses (Exod. xxxiv. 29 f. ὡς δὲ κατέβανεν Μωυσῆς ἐκ τοῦ ὅρους...καὶ ἦν δεδοξασμένη ἡ ὅψις τοῦ χρώματος τοῦ προσώπου αὐτοῦ). But (1) no hint of such a phenomenon is dropped by Mc. in the context, (2) it would have betrayed what the Lord desired to keep secret, (3) the result is just the opposite of that which followed the appearance of Moses; of Moses it is said ἐφοβήθησαν ἔγγισαι αὐτοῦ, of Jesus, προστρέχοντες ἡσπάζοντο αὐτόν. The alternative is to fall back upon Victor's explanation: αἰφνίδιον αὐτὸν θεασάμενοι...δ πᾶς ὁ ὄχλος ἐξεθαυμάζθη. The sudden appearance of the Lord when they thought Him far away on Hermon amazed and awed them for the moment. But the next impulse was to hasten towards Him, drawn by the irresistible attraction of His Presence. The remarkable reading of D and some O. L. texts (προσχαίροντες, gaudentes, cf. Prov. viii. 30, and see Tatian (Ciasca) ad. loc., 'hastening for joy') deserves attention, but is probably an early corruption (χερ for

§ syr<sup>hier</sup>  
¶ the 16 <sup>16§</sup> καὶ ἐπηρώτησεν αὐτούς Τί συνζητεῖτε πρὸς αὐτούς; ¶  
17 καὶ ἀπεκρίθη αὐτῷ εἰς ἐκ τοῦ ὄχλου Διδάσκαλε,  
ἥνεγκα τὸν νιόν μου πρὸς σε, ἔχοντα πνεῦμα ἄλαλον·

16 αὐτοὺς ΚΒΔΛΔΨ 1 28 209 2<sup>ρε</sup> b c f i k q vg arm me aeth] τοὺς γραμματεῖς  
ΑCΝΧΓΠΙΣΦ min<sup>pl</sup> a syrr<sup>pesh</sup> hcl go | πρὸς εαυτούς Κ<sup>\*c.a</sup>AGΜΓ 33 1071 al<sup>nonn</sup> εν υμιν D  
lati<sup>v</sup> plv<sup>g</sup> om k 17 απεκρίθη αυτῷ ΚΒΔΛΔΨ 28 33 a b (c) k q me] αποκρίθεις ειπεν  
ACINXΓΠΙ(ΣΦ) min<sup>pl</sup> f vg syrr arm go | ἄλαλον]+και κοφον (sic) 1071

ρεχ): for another instance of *προστρέχειν* in Mc. see x. 17. Ἡσπάζοντο αὐτόν: the ἀσπασμός of the crowd would be such as they were accustomed to accord to their own Rabbis (cf. xii. 38, Mt. xxvi. 49 χαῖρε, ῥαββεί = לְבָבִי).

16. ἐπηρώτησεν αὐτούς κτλ.] The question shews that the Lord had at once grasped the situation, and was prepared to meet it. He addresses the people, not noticing the Scribes; for the moment the crowd had been with the Scribes in their attack on the disciples, but already perhaps a reaction had begun. The Lord took the matter into His own hands, at once relieving the disciples and disappointing the Scribes. Τί συνζητεῖτε is a *bona fide* request for information; the human mind of Christ acquires knowledge by ordinary means; cf. viii. 27<sup>b</sup>, note. Πρὸς αὐτούς i.e. πρὸς μαθητὰς (cf. v. 14).

17. καὶ ἀπεκρίθη αὐτῷ εἰς ἐκ τοῦ ὄχλου] The crowd preserved a discreet silence (cf. v. 34); the answer came from an individual (*εἰς*) whose interest in the matter was deeper than any *συνζήτησις*. Lc. like Mc. represents the man as telling his tale from the heart of the crowd (*ἀνὴρ ἀπὸ τοῦ ὄχλου ἐβόησεν*); in Mt. he comes forward and prostrates himself before Christ (*προσῆλθεν αὐτῷ... γονυπετῶν αὐτόν*, cf. Mc. i. 40). Without undue harmonising we may perhaps accept both statements; the man began his tale in the crowd, but was presently called or pushed forward by the people to the feet of Jesus. The words of the

father are reported with more than usual independence by the three Synoptists. Mt. gives us details which are not to be gathered from Mc. and Lc., yet his account is clearly much compressed; in v. 15 he has brought together words spoken by the father at different points in the conversation (cf. Mc. vv. 17, 22). Lc. again has some particulars which are not in Mc., the prayer ἐπιβλέψαι ἐπὶ τὸν νιόν μον ὅτι μονογενῆς μοι ἐστιν, the statement that the spirit κράξει...καὶ μόγις ἀποχωρεῖ κτλ. (see however Mc., v. 26). But on the whole Mc.'s account is not only the fullest but has the most verisimilitude, and Mc. alone has preserved the undoubtedly original tradition in vv. 20—24. For details see the following notes.

διδάσκαλε] So Lc.; Mt. κύριε; both doubtless=לְבָבִי; see note on v. 5, and cf. iv. 38. The word is here simply a name of office, for the relation of teacher and taught did not yet exist between our Lord and the speaker.

ἥνεγκα τὸν νιόν μου πρὸς σε κτλ.] "Hnēgka, the historical aorist, R.V. 'I brought'; the English idiom prefers the perfect. The man had brought his boy that morning under the impression that Jesus was there, and on discovering that the Lord was on the mountain had applied to the disciples (v. 18). This feature of the story disappears in Mt., Lc.: in Mt. the father says προσήνεγκα αὐτὸν τοῖς μαθηταῖς, as if the application had been made to them in the first instance (cf. v. 18). "Εχοντα πνεῦμα ἄλαλον: cf. v. 25 τὸ ἄλ-

<sup>18</sup> καὶ ὅπου ἔαν αὐτὸν καταλάβῃ, ρήσσει αὐτόν, καὶ 18  
ἀφρίζει καὶ τρίζει τοὺς ὀδόντας καὶ ξηραίνεται· καὶ  
εἴπα τοῖς μαθηταῖς σου ἴνα αὐτὸν ἐκβάλωσιν, καὶ οὐκ  
ἰσχυσαν. <sup>19</sup> ὁ δὲ ἀποκριθεὶς αὐτοῖς λέγει Ὡ γενεὰ 19 § 2, the

18 ρῆσσει] ρασσει D 2<sup>pe</sup> applontat d allidit vel elidit latt<sup>tpl</sup> vg collidit k | om autov  
2<sup>o</sup> ΚΔ k | ισχυσαν] ηδυνηθησαν 604 + εκβαλειν αυτο D 2<sup>pe</sup> a b arm <sup>19</sup> autov  
ΝΑΒΔΛΔΠ\*Ψ min<sup>pl</sup> vg syrr<sup>sin hel (txt)</sup> arm me go] αυτω C<sup>3</sup>(N)ΧΓΠ<sup>2</sup>ΣΦ min<sup>pl</sup> q  
syrr<sup>pesh hel (mg)</sup> om C<sup>\*</sup> 13 40 60 124 (1071) alpaue k

καὶ κωφὸν πν.; for the concurrence of the two infirmities see vii. 32 ff., notes. The participle suggests the reason for which the boy had been brought. The effect produced upon the demoniac is transferred in thought to the δαιμόνιον: cf. Lc. xi. 14 δαιμόνιον...κωφόν. Mt. σεληνάζεται (cf. Mt. iv. 24), perhaps in reference to the periodical return of the attacks: see next verse. The father's trouble was the greater because the boy was μονογενὴς (Lc., cf. Lc. vii. 12, viii. 42).

18. ὅπου ἔαν αὐτὸν καταλάβῃ] Lc. πνεῦμα λαμβάνει αὐτόν. The seizures might occur anywhere, and they occurred frequently (πολλάκις Mt., Mc. v. 22). Κατάληψις, καταληπτός are used by Galen and Hippocrates in reference to fits, and persons subject to them. The effects of the seizure in the present case are described in detail: first there came a sudden scream (Lc.), then the patient was thrown upon the ground in a strong convulsion. 'Ρήσσει, Lc. σπαράσσει, cf. Lc. ix. 42 ἔρρηξεν...καὶ συνεσπάραξεν, where Mc. (v. 20) has only συνεσπάραξεν: σπαράσσειν and συνσπαράσσειν describe the actual convulsion (see note on i. 26), ρήσσειν appears to be used of the preliminary heavy fall (Euth.: ἀντὶ τοῦ 'καταβάλλει εἰς γῆν'). For this sense of the latter word cf. Sap. iv. 19 ρήξει αὐτοὺς ἀφώνους πρηγεῖς; Kuinoel cites also Artemidorus (i. 62) ρήξαι τὸν ἀντίπαλον 'to give one's adversary a throw.' In this use ρήσσειν approaches to the meaning of ράσσειν, ἀράσσειν, and cod. D,

with the apparent concurrence of the Latin versions (see vv. ll.), substitutes ράσσει for it in this place; cf. the Wycliffite "hurtlith hym doun." After being dashed to the ground the patient (1) foamed at the mouth (ἀφρίζειν, poet. and late Gk., here only in the N.T.), (2) ground his teeth (τρίζειν, another N. T. ἀπ. λεγ., used of any sharp or grating sound, is here interpreted by τοὺς ὀδ., cf. Vg. stridet dentibus: the usual phrase is βρύχειν τοὺς ὀδ., LXX., Acts vii. 54, cf. ὁ βρυγμὸς τῶν ὀδόντων, Mt. viii. 12); and (3) appeared to shrivel, or perhaps 'became rigid' (3 Regn. xiii. 4), Vg. arescit (for ξηραίνειν cf. iii. 1, note). Celsus gives a similar account of the symptoms of catalepsy: "homo subito concidit; ex ore spumae moventur...interdum tamen, cum recens est [morbus], hominem consumit (med. iii. 23, de morbo comitiali 3).

καὶ εἴπα τοῖς μαθηταῖς σου] Lc. ἐδεήθην τῶν μαθ. σ. The father expected the disciples to possess the Master's authority; possibly he knew that they had formerly used it with success (vi. 13); even the disciples of the Rabbis claimed this power (Lc. xi. 19 οἱ νιοὶ ὑμῶν...ἐκβάλλουσιν [τὰ δαιμόνια]). It was a genuine surprise to him as well as to them to find that they were powerless in this case (οὐκ ισχυσαν, Mt.; Lc. οὐκ ἡδυνήθησαν: cf. v. 3, 4).

19. ὁ δὲ ἀποκριθεὶς αὐτοῖς κτλ.] The Synoptists, in marked contrast to the freedom with which the father's words are treated by them, give the reply

ἀπιστος, ἔως πότε πρὸς ὑμᾶς ἔστομαι; ἔως πότε  
 20 ἀνέξομαι ὑμῶν; φέρετε αὐτὸν πρὸς μὲ. <sup>20</sup>καὶ ἦνεγκαν  
 αὐτὸν πρὸς αὐτόν. καὶ ἴδων αὐτὸν τὸ πνεῦμα εὐθὺς  
 συνεσπάραξεν αὐτόν, καὶ πεσὼν ἐπὶ τῆς γῆς ἐκυλίετο  
 21 ἀφρίζων. <sup>21</sup>καὶ ἐπηρώτησεν τὸν πατέρα αὐτοῦ Πόσος

19 απιστος (-στε D)] + καὶ διεστραμμενη 13 69 124 al<sup>pauc</sup> 20 καὶ ιδω...ευθυς]  
 ευθυς ουν Ψ om ευθυς D a b ff i q | ιδων] ιδον C<sup>2?3?</sup> SV min<sup>nonn</sup> | συνεσπαραξεν NBCCLΔ  
 33 conturbavit latt)] εσπαραξεν AINXΓΠΣΦΨ min<sup>pl</sup> εσταραξεν D | αυτον 4<sup>o</sup>] το παιδιον  
 13 28 69 346 2<sup>pe</sup> puerum a b c f f i k r fu 21 αυτον]+λεγων 13 28 69 124 346 2<sup>pe</sup>  
 a f arm

of Christ in nearly identical terms. To Mc.'s *ὁ γενεὰ* (vii. 12, 38) ἄπιστος Mt. and Lc. add *καὶ διεστραμένη*, a reminiscence possibly of Deut. xxxii. 5 (cf. Phil. ii. 15). The repeated *ἔως πότε* (Mt., Mc.)—the Lord's *quousque tandem*, cf. Jo. x. 24, Apoc. vi. 10, and see WM., p. 591—has the ring of originality rather than Lc.'s *ἔως π. καὶ*, and Mc.'s abrupt *φέρετε αὐτὸν πρὸς με* is superior to Lc.'s softened *προσάγαγε ὅδε τὸν νιόν σου*. But the answer is substantially the same in all, and it is the only feature in which they clearly follow the same tradition. The Lord replies to all whose feeling the father had voiced (*αὐτοῖς*); the reproof *ὦ γ. ἄπιστος* is general, perhaps purposely so, including the Scribes, the people, and the father (vv. 22, 23) so far as their faith had been at fault, and the disciples not the least (v. 29). *Πρὸς ὑμᾶς = μεθ' ὑμῶν* (Mt.), cf. vi. 3: for *\*ἀνέχεσθαι τίνος* see WM., p. 253, and cf. Isa. xlvi. 14, xlvi. 4, lxiii. 15; in the N. T., outside this context, it appears only in the Pauline Epp. and Hebrews.

20. *ἦνεγκαν αὐτόν]* Cf. Lc. *προσερχομένου αὐτοῦ*. It is implied (cf. *φέρετε αὐτὸν πρὸς με*, v. 19) that the boy was not with his father in the crowd, but in safe keeping not far off. *Ίδων αὐτὸν τὸ πνεῦμα*—not, as Winer (WM., p. 710) and Blass (*Gr.* p. 283), an anacoluthon (*ἴδων αὐτὸν [ό παις], τὸ πν. κτλ.*, cf. Syr.<sup>sin.</sup>), but a *constructio*

*ad sensum*—the gender of the noun is overlooked in view of the personal action of the spirit; cf. Jo. xvi. 13 f. *ἐκεῖνος, τὸ πνεῦμα...ἐκεῖνος*, where if the masc. pronoun is suggested by *ὁ παράκλητος* (v. 7), its repetition would be impossible but for the personal life implied in *τὸ πνεῦμα*. *Συνεσπάραξεν*, Vg. *conturbavit*; see notes on i. 26, ix. 18: Lc. *ἔρρηξεν αὐτὸν καὶ συνεσπάραξεν*. With the strengthened *συνεσπάστειν*, cf. *συνπνίγειν* (iv. 7), *συντηρεῖν* vi. 20, *συνπληροῦν* Lc. viii. 23, *συναρπάξειν* Lc. viii. 29, *συνκαλύπτειν* Lc. xii. 2. *Ἐκυλίετο* is *ἄπ.* *λεγ.* in the N. T., but *κυλισμός* occurs in 2 Pet. ii. 22; the verb, which is a later form of *κυλίνδειν*, is used freely in the LXX. (e.g. *κυλίειν λίθον*, Jos. x. 18, 1 Regn. xiv. 33, Prov. xxvi. 27, κ. *ἄρτον*, Jud. vii. 13 (A); cf. also 4 Regn. ix. 33 (of Jezebel's fall), Amos ii. 13 (of the wheels of a cart). For *ἀφρίζειν* see ix. 18.

21. *καὶ ἐπηρώτησεν τὸν πατέρα κτλ.]* Mc. only (to 25<sup>a</sup>). *Πόσος χρόνος ἔστιν ὡς... ‘how long is it that (since)...?’* Cf. Gal. iv. 1 *ἐφ’ ὅσον χρόνου*, Soph. O. T. 558 ΟΙ. *πόσον τιν’ ἥδη δῆθ’ ὁ Λάιος χρόνον* | K.P. *δέδρακε ποίον ἔργον;* ‘Ως is used elliptically for *ἀφ’ οὐ*; cf. vv. ll. *Γέγονεν*, not *ἔγένετο*—the disorder was manifestly still upon him. *Ἐκ παιδιόθεν*: ‘from a little boy,’ ‘from a mere child’; i.e. he was a *παιδίον* when it first took him: his age at the time is not mentioned, but he was

χρόνος ἐστὶν ὡς τοῦτο γέγονεν αὐτῷ; ὁ δὲ εἶπεν Ἐκ παιδιόθεν<sup>22</sup> καὶ πολλάκις καὶ εἰς πῦρ αὐτὸν ἔβαλεν<sup>22</sup> καὶ εἰς ὕδατα, ἵνα ἀπολέσῃ αὐτόν. ἀλλ' εἴ τι δύνη,  
βοήθησον ἡμῖν, σπλαγχνισθεὶς ἐφ' ἡμᾶς.<sup>¶</sup> <sup>23</sup> ὁ δὲ<sup>23</sup> Ιησοῦς εἶπεν αὐτῷ Τὸν Εἰ δύνη, πάντα δυνατὰ τῷ

<sup>21</sup> ὡς Ν<sup>a</sup>\*ΑC<sup>b</sup>ΔΧΓΠΦ al min<sup>pl</sup> go] εως B εξ ου Ν<sup>a</sup>\*C<sup>b</sup>\*ΛΔΨ 33 2<sup>po</sup> (ex quo latt similiter syrr arm me al) αφ ου ΝΣ 13 40 124 346 arm<sup>vid</sup> | εκ παιδιόθεν ΝΒCGILΝΔΣΦΨ 1 33 118 209 al<sup>panc</sup>] παιδιόθεν A(X)ΓΠ min<sup>pl</sup> εκ παιδος D 2<sup>pe</sup> 22 πυρ] pr το AEFGMVTΓΠ<sup>2</sup>Φ min<sup>sat</sup> mu | δυνη ΝBDILΔΨ 1 28 118 209] δυνασαι ACNXΓΠΣΦ min<sup>pl</sup> [ημιν]+κυριε DG (1) (262) 2<sup>pe</sup> abgiq arm (idem post δυνη add 1 post ημιν vero 262 1071) 23 om το DKNUΠΦ 13 28 69 124 131 1071 2<sup>pe</sup> al<sup>nonn</sup> hab ΝABCΛXΓΔΣΨ min<sup>pl</sup> | δυνη Ν<sup>a</sup>\*BDNΔΣ 1 28 118 209] δυνασαι Ν<sup>a</sup>\*ACLXΓΠΦΨ al min<sup>pl</sup>+πιστευσαι AC<sup>b</sup>D(EHM)NX(Γ)ΠΦΨ min<sup>pl</sup> latt<sup>exc k\*</sup> syrr go Chrys (om πιστ. ΝBC<sup>a</sup>\*ΛΔ 1 118 209 244 k\* arm me aeth)

still a *παις* (Lc. ix. 42). The Attic phrase is *ἐκ παιδίου* (cf. D) but from Xenophon downwards *παιδιόθεν* takes its place: the pleonastic *ἐκ παιδιόθεν* is a survival of Homeric usage (cf. e.g. Il. viii. 34, *ἔξ οὐρανοθέν*) which is censured by the Atticists (Lob. *Phryne*, p. 93), but found a place in late Gk.: cf. v. 6 (*ἀπὸ μακρόθεν*), and WM., p. 752 f., Blass, *Gr.* p. 59.

22. καὶ πολλάκις καὶ εἰς πῦρ κτλ.] The seizures were often accompanied by a tendency to suicidal mania. Mt. has simply (xvii. 15) *πίπτει*, but Mc.'s *αὐτὸν ἔβαλεν...ίνα ἀπολέσῃ αὐτόν* shews that in the view of the father these frequent mishaps were not accidental. Καὶ...καὶ: the spirit had tried both means of destruction. Πῦρ, ὕδατα (ΜΙΩ); Mt., τὸ πῦρ, τὸ ὕδωρ. Thph. ρίπτεται δέ τις ὑπὸ δάιμονος εἰς πῦρ, τὸ τοῦ θυμοῦ καὶ τὸ τῆς ἐπιθυμίας· καὶ εἰς ὕδωρ, τὸ τῶν βιωτικῶν πραγμάτων κλυδώμον. Εἴ τι δύνη: δύνασθαι is used absolutely as in Lc. xii. 26, 2 Cor. xiii. 8; cf. WM., p. 743. The man's faith had been shaken by the failure of the disciples; contrast the leper's *ἔλα θελγεις*, δύνασαι (i. 40). Possibly no miracle had been wrought in this neighbourhood as yet, so that in the struggle to believe the father had no experience to assist him. The form

δύνη is poetical and late (WM., p. 90); on its occurrence in the N.T. side by side with δύνασαι cf. WH., *Notes*, p. 168, WSchm., p. 123 n. For *σπλαγχνισθεὶς* see note on i. 41: *ἡμῖν, ἡμᾶς*, i.e. both father and son.

23. τὸ Εἰ δύνη, πάντα δυνατὰ τῷ πιστεύοντι] The Lord repeats the father's words and places them in contrast with the spiritual facts which he had yet to learn: 'if thou canst: for one who believes all things are possible': i.e. it is for thee rather than for Me to decide whether this thing can be done; it can be if thou believest (cf. xi. 23 f.). Thph.: οὐ τῇ οἰκείᾳ δυνάμει ἀλλὰ τῇ ἐκείνου πιστεὶ ἀνατίθησι τὴν θεραπείαν. Cf. Iren. iv. 37. 5 "omnia talia suae potestatis secundum fidem ostendunt hominem." Τὸ "εἰ δύνη" is a *nominativus absolutus* (WM., p. 226, cf. 135); for the clause preceded by an article and treated as a noun, cf. Rom. viii. 26 with SH.'s note, and Blass, *Gr.* p. 158.

From its extreme compression the sentence has given trouble to scribes and commentators. The Western text followed by a majority of the MSS. reads ὁ δὲ Ιησοῦς εἶπεν Εἰ δύνη (δύνασαι) πιστεύσαι, πάντα δυνατὰ τῷ πιστεύοντι: si potes credere, omnia possibilia credenti. Attempts have

24 πιστεύοντι. <sup>24</sup>εὐθὺς κράξας ὁ πατὴρ τοῦ παιδίου  
25 ἐλεγεν Πιστεύω. Βοήθει μου τῇ ἀπιστίᾳ. <sup>25</sup>ἰδὼν δὲ  
ὁ Ἰησοῦς ὅτι ἐπισυντρέχει ὁ χλος ἐπετίμησεν τῷ  
πνεύματι τῷ ἀκαθάρτῳ λέγων αὐτῷ Τὸν ἄλαλον καὶ  
κωφὸν πνεῦμα, ἐγὼ ἐπιτάσσω σοι, ἔξελθε ἐξ αὐτοῦ

<sup>24 ευθυς] και Ν\*C\* και ευθυς Ψ | ελεγεν]+μετα δακρυων A<sup>2</sup>C<sup>3</sup>DNXΓΠΣΦ al min<sup>pl</sup>  
a b c f i q vg syrr<sup>pesh</sup> hel go (om ΝΑ\*BC\*ΛΔΨ 28 604 k syr<sup>sin</sup> arm me aeth) | πιστεύω]  
+κυριε C<sup>3</sup>NXΓΔΠΣ al min<sup>fere omn</sup> a b c f (q) vg syr<sup>gw sin</sup> Chrys <sup>25 ιδων δε]</sup> και  
οτε ειδεν D latt<sup>(vid)</sup> | οχλος] pr o ΝALMSXΔΠΦΨ 28 33 69 124 1071 2<sup>ρο</sup> al arm (om  
BCDΝΓΣ min<sup>pl</sup>) | το αλ. και κωφ. πν.] το πν. το αλ. και κωφ. AC<sup>3</sup>NXΓΠΣΦ al min<sup>pl</sup> |  
om εγω Ν\* 33 | εξ] απ C\*Δ min<sup>pl</sup> latt<sup>vid</sup></sup>

been made, but with poor success, to extort a better sense from this reading (e.g. *εἰ δύνασαι, πίστευσαι*), or to amend it (*εἰ δ., πίστευε*). Some who accept the shorter text place a mark of interrogation after δύνῃ—“sayest thou ‘If thou canst?’?” But there is nothing in the context to suggest a question, and the English Revisers of 1881 rightly render “If thou canst! all things are possible to him that believeth,” without marginal variant.

24. εὐθὺς κράξας κτλ.] The father instantly responds to the demand for fuller trust on his part; his strength of feeling shews itself in a cry as piercing as that of the demoniac son (Lc. ix. 39). He recognises that the help he needs is in the first instance help for himself and not for his boy (*βοήθει μου τῇ ἀπ.*, cf. v. 22 *βοήθησον ἡμῖν*). He believes (*πιστεύω*), but his faith is defective, and its defect needs the Master’s succour (for this use of *βοήθειν* cf. 2 Cor. vi. 2, Heb. ii. 18, iv. 16). Wycliffe: “Lord, I billeue; help thou myn unbilleuefulnessse.” Bede: “uno eodemque tempore is qui neendum perfecte crediderat simul et credebat et incredulus erat.” Victor: ἀρξάμενος οὖν πιστεύειν ἐδέετο τοῦ σωτῆρος διὰ τῆς αὐτοῦ δυνάμεως προσθεῖναι τὸ λοιπόν. *Ἀπιστία* is perhaps suggested by γενεὰ ἀπιστος (v. 19): β. μου τῇ ἀπ. ‘help my faith where

it is ready to fail,’ nearly = μοι τῷ ἀπιστῷ. With μου τῇ ἀπ. cf. v. 30 μου τῶν ἴματων, Rom. xi. 14 μου τὴν σάρκα: the position is perhaps slightly emphatic, though WM. (p. 193) appears to doubt this. *Ἀπιστία*, cf. note on vi. 6. The reading μετὰ δακρύων (‘Western’ and Syrian, WH., Notes, p. 25) is at least an interesting gloss; for the phrase cf. Acts xx. 19, 31, Heb. v. 7, xii. 17.

25. ιδὼν δὲ ὁ Ἰησοῦς κτλ.] The conversation then was not in the presence of the crowd, but was interrupted by its arrival. The Lord had probably retired with the father and the boy to a distance from the ὁχλος, but the cries of both brought them running to the spot and privacy became impossible. This has been overlooked in the text of ΝΑ, where ὁ ὁχλος refers to vv. 15, 17. *Ἐπισυντρέχειν* is apparently ἀπ. λεγ.; cf. however *ἐπισυνάγειν* i. 33; the LXX. has also *ἐπισυνεῖναι*, *ἐπισυνέχειν*, *ἐπισυνιστάναι*, and *ἐπισυνστρέφειν*. *Συντρέχειν* is used by Mc. in vi. 33: the double compound perhaps calls attention to the return of the crowd (cf. *προστρέχοντες*, v. 15) after it had been for the time dispersed. There is no indication in Mc. of the habit of using otiose compounds (WM., p. 25 f.) which disfigures much of the later Gk.

ἐπετίμησεν τῷ πνεύματι κτλ.] Here Mt. and Lc. rejoin Mc. Mc. however

καὶ μηκέτι εἰσελθῆς εἰς αὐτόν. <sup>26</sup> καὶ κράξας καὶ πολλὰ σπαράξας ἐξῆλθεν καὶ ἐγένετο ὡσεὶ νεκρός, ὥστε τὸν πολλοὺς λέγειν ὅτι Ἀπέθανεν. <sup>27</sup> ὁ δὲ <sup>27</sup>  
Ἰησοῦς κρατήσας τῆς χειρὸς αὐτοῦ ἤγειρεν αὐτόν, καὶ ἀνέστη. <sup>28</sup> καὶ εἰσελθόντος αὐτοῦ εἰς οἶκον, οἱ μα-

<sup>26</sup> om πολλα k | κραξας, σπαραξας NBCDL(Δ)Ψ] κραξαν, σπαραξαν AC<sup>3</sup>NXΓΠΙΣΦ min<sup>pl</sup> | σπαραξας]+αυτον Ν<sup>\*c.a?</sup> AC<sup>3</sup>NXΓΠ al | εξηλθεν]+απ αυτον D latteceq | τους πολλους] om τους CDNХГПΙΣΦ min<sup>pl</sup> go <sup>27</sup> της χειρος αυτου ΝBDLΔΨ i 13 28 69 2<sup>pe</sup> αλπαue] αυτον της χ. (αυτον) A(C\*)C<sup>3</sup>NXГПΙΣΦ min<sup>pl</sup> | om και ανεστη k <sup>28</sup> εισελθοντος αυτου ΝBCDLΔ i 13 28 69 118 209 604 1071 latt] εισελθοντα αυτον ANXГПΙΦ al min<sup>pl</sup> ελθοντα αυτον Σ | οικον] pr τον AM min<sup>pauc</sup>

alone gives the words of the rebuke (for ἐπιτιμᾶν see note on i. 25). Τὸ ἄλαλον καὶ κωφὸν πνεῦμα, a nom. used as a vocative: cf. τὸ κοράσιον, v. 41, and v. 19 *supra*, and see WM, p. 327, Blass, *Gr.* p. 86. Κωφόν is a new feature in the case (*πν. ἄλαλον, v. 17*), but see note on vii. 32, and cf. Ps. xxxvii. (xxxviii.) 14 with Ps. xxxviii. (xxxix.) 3. 'Εγὼ ἐπιτάσσω σοι, 'I enjoin thee' (Euth.: ἔγὼ...ὸν οἴδας): since this spirit had refused to acknowledge the authority of the disciples, the Master emphasises His personal claim to obedience. For ἐπιτάσσειν cf. i. 27; for the emphatic ἔγώ see x. 38 f., xiv. 58, and the Fourth Gospel *passim*. "Εξελθε ἐξ αὐτοῦ ordinarily sufficed (i. 25, v. 8); in this desperate case of periodical seizures it was necessary to add καὶ μηκέτι εἰσελθῆς. For the spiritual analogy see Lc. xi. 24 ff.

<sup>26</sup> κράξας καὶ πολλὰ σπαράξας κτλ.] For the moment the only result was a fresh seizure (see on v. 20); the spirit wreaked its revenge on its victim even in the act of quitting its hold upon him. For the masc. participles cf. v. 20 ιδών...τὸ πνεῦμα. The convulsions were violent and prolonged (πολλά, cf. iii. 12, note), and when they ceased, the sufferer's strength was exhausted; a collapse followed; he lay motionless and pallid as a corpse. For ἐξῆλθεν see note on v. 29;

ἐγένετο ὡσεὶ νεκρός: contrast Apoc. i. 17. There was a general cry among the crowd (*τὸν πολλοὺς λέγειν*), 'He is dead.' Οἱ πολλοί, cf. vi. 2, xii. 37; Gregory, *prolegg.* p. 128: "Marcus ponit ὁ πολύς et οἱ πολλοί ubi πολύς et πολλοί satis videntur esse." For the aor. ἀπέθανον see Burton, § 47, and cf. v. 35, 39, Jo. viii. 52. This incident again is peculiar to Mc.; Mt. has merely ἐξῆλθεν ἀπ' αὐτοῦ τὸ δαιμόνιον, Lc. λάσατο τὸν παῖδα.

<sup>27</sup> κρατήσας τῆς χειρὸς αὐτοῦ] Cf. i. 31, v. 41. The Lord seems to have offered this help only where great exhaustion had preceded; cf. Acts ix. 41, and contrast ii. 11 f. Ἀνέστη: he rose from the ground where he had been rolling (v. 20), and afterwards lay prostrate. Lc. helps us to complete the picture: ἀπέδωκεν αὐτὸν τῷ πατρὶ αὐτοῦ (cf. Lc. vii. 15), ἐξεπλήσσοντο δὲ πάντες ἐπὶ τῇ μεγαλειότητι τοῦ θεοῦ (cf. Mc. i. 27, ii. 12, vii. 37). Mt. adds—probably in reference to the Lord's μηκέτι εἰσελθῆς—καὶ ἐθεραπεύθη ὁ παῖς ἀπὸ τῆς ὥρας ἐκείνης (cf. Mt. ix. 22, xv. 28). The epileptic fits did not return.

<sup>28</sup> εἰσελθόντος αὐτοῦ εἰς οἶκον] On the vv. ll. and construction see Blass, *Gr.* p. 251 f. The Lord went indoors, into the lodging where the party were housed (*εἰς οἶκον*, cf. iii. 20, vii. 17), to escape from the enthusiasm of the crowd, and because

θηταὶ αὐτοῦ κατ' ἰδίαν ἐπηρώτων αὐτόν "Οτι ήμεῖς  
29 οὐκ ἡδυνήθημεν ἐκβαλεῖν αὐτό; <sup>29</sup>καὶ εἰπεν αὐτοῖς  
Τοῦτο τὸ γένος ἐν οὐδενὶ δύναται ἐξελθεῖν εἰ μὴ ἐν  
προσευχῇ.

30      <sup>30</sup>Κάκειθεν ἐξελθόντες [παρ]επορεύοντο διὰ τῆς

28 κατ ἰδίαν post εισελθ. αυτου Ψ | οτι ΝΒCLNXΓΔΣΨ al min<sup>pl</sup>] δια τι ADΚΠΦ  
736 ιο71 al<sup>nonn</sup> οτι διατι U 131 238 al<sup>paue</sup> τι οτι min<sup>paue</sup> 29 εν προσευχῇ]+και (τη)  
νηστεια Ν<sup>c,b</sup>ADLNXΓ(Δ)ΠΣΦΨ min<sup>omn</sup>vid latte<sup>exc</sup> syrr<sup>(sin posh)hol</sup> (arm) (aeth) (om κ.  
νηστ. Ν<sup>\*c,a</sup>B k) 30 και εκειθεν ACNΧΓΠ al<sup>pl</sup> | παρεπορευοντο ΝΑΒ<sup>3</sup>CLNXΓΔΣΦ  
(παρευοντο) Ψ al min<sup>omn</sup>vid b d (ff) i k vg syrr arm me] επορευοντο B\*D a c f go aeth

on such occasions further teaching was impossible. He and the disciples were now in privacy (*κατ' ἰδίαν* Mt., Mc.), and the nine took occasion to seek an explanation of their failure (*ἐπηρώτων*, Mt. *προσελθόντες ...εἰπαν*), approaching Him probably (as was their wont on these occasions) by one of their number (? Andrew). "Οτι=διὰ τι, Mt. (Euth. : τὸ ὅτι ἀντὶ τοῦ διὰ τι· οὗτο γάρ εἰπεν ὁ Ματθαῖος : cf. Blass, *Gr.* p. 176); see note on *v. 11 supra*, and for the circumstances of the failure, *v. 18*.

29. τοῦτο τὸ γένος κτλ.] Either 'this class of *δαιμόνια*', or 'this kind' generally, i.e. the *δαιμόνια*; cf. Thphht.: ὃ τὸ τῶν σελημαζομένων ὃ ἀπλῶς πᾶν τὸ τῶν δαιμόνων γένος. *Γένος* is a nationality (vii. 26, Acts iv. 36), a family (Acts iv. 6, vii. 13, xiii. 26, xviii. 2, 24), or a species (Mt. xiii. 47), or class of things (1 Cor. xii. 10). Hence it is used of the spiritual affinity which associates moral beings of the same order or type of character (1 Pet. ii. 9). Similarly St Paul speaks of *πατριά* in heaven as well as on earth (Eph. iii. 15). 'Ἐν οὐδενὶ δύναται ἐξελθεῖν,' can take its departure (i.e. be cast out, *ἐξελθεῖν* being in such contexts practically the pass. of *ἐκβαλεῖν*) in the strength of no power (not as Euth. = οὐδενὶ ἔτερῳ τρόπῳ) but one, i.e. in the strength of (believing) prayer (xi. 23, 24); cf. Clem. Al. *ecl. proph.* 15. The Lord seizes on the

essential weakness of their case. They had trusted to the quasi-magical power with which they thought themselves invested; there had been on their part no preparation of heart and spirit. Spirits of such malignity were quick to discern the lack of moral power and would yield to no other. To *ἐν προσευχῇ* the 'Western' and 'Syrian' text adds *και (τη) νηστειᾳ*, but the time for fasting was not yet (ii. 19); comp. the similar gloss 1 Cor. vii. 5. Mt., who omits this answer, has the more obvious Διὰ τὴν δλιγοπιστίαν ὑμῶν, to which he adds the sayings about the grain of mustard seed and the removal of mountains which are found in other contexts (Lc. xvii. 6, Mt. xxi. 21). Tatian combines Mt.'s answer with Mc.'s, placing Mt.'s first, and connecting Mc.'s with it by a *γάρ*.

30—32. THE PASSION AGAIN FORETOLD (Mt. xvii. 22, 23; Lc. ix. 43—45).

30. κάκειθεν ἐξελθόντες κτλ.] The Lord and the Twelve now leave their retreat at the foot of Hermon and travel southwards. Their way to the North had perhaps led them through Gaulanitis and Ituraea (cf. viii. 22, 27, note), but they return διὰ τῆς Γαλειλαίας i.e. probably along the West bank of the Jordan. Mt.'s συστρεφομένων ἐν τῇ Γαλειλαίᾳ suggests that they broke up into small parties which mustered at certain points in the route (for συστρέφεσθαι cf. 2 Regn. xv. 31, 4 Regn. ix. 14, x. 9 etc.), the purpose being

Γαλειλαίας, καὶ οὐκ ἥθελεν ὴνα τις γνοῖ. 3<sup>τ</sup> ἐδίδασκεν 3<sup>τ</sup>  
γὰρ τοὺς μαθητὰς αὐτοῦ καὶ ἔλεγεν αὐτοῖς ὅτι Ὁ νιὸς  
τοῦ ἀνθρώπου παραδίδοται εἰς χεῖρας ἀνθρώπων, καὶ  
ἀποκτενοῦσιν<sup>¶</sup> αὐτόν, καὶ ἀποκτανθεὶς μετὰ τρεῖς <sup>¶ 33</sup>

3<sup>ο</sup> γνοι NBCDL] γνω ANXΓΔΣΦΨ al min<sup>omn vid</sup> 3<sup>τ</sup> οις αυτοῖς B (26<sup>ον</sup> k) |  
παραδοθῆσεται 69 δο<sub>4</sub> arm<sup>vid</sup> | ανθρωπων] ανθρωπου D ανομων Ψ<sup>salt\*</sup> + αμαρτωλων δο<sub>4</sub> |  
αποκτενουσιν D | om αποκτανθεις D min<sup>perp</sup> a c k me | μετα τρεις ημερας NBC\*D  
ΛΔΨ b c i post tertium diem a k q in tres dies d syr<sup>hel (mag)</sup> me] τη τριτη ημερα  
ACSNXΓΠΣΦ al min<sup>omn vid</sup> fr vg syrrsin pesh hel (txt) arm go aeth

perhaps to avoid attracting notice (Mc. οὐκ ἥθελεν ὴνα τις γνοῖ): cf. vii. 24 and on γνοῖ=γνῶ, v. 43, note. The reading παρεπορεύοντο, which is well supported and perhaps genuine, conveys the idea that the transit was made without unnecessary breaks: “obiter profecti sunt...intenti viae confiendiæ, non invisendis hospitibus aut instituendae plebi” (Fritzsche).

3<sup>τ</sup>. ἐδίδασκεν γάρ κτλ.] Reasons of the Lord's desire to escape recognition. He was now fully occupied with the training of the Twelve (Latham, *Pastor past.* p. 351). A journey through Upper Galilee, in which He could attach Himself now to one party of two or four Apostles and now to another, afforded an opportunity of quiet teaching which might never return. The substance of this reiterated teaching (ἐδίδασκεν...ἔλεγεν) is the same as that of the first prediction of the Passion near Caesarea (viii. 31), with one new element—a reference to the Betrayal. Lc. points out the occasion of this fresh prediction of the Passion: ἐξεπλήσσοντο δὲ πάντες ἐπὶ τῇ μεγαλειότητι τοῦ θεοῦ· πάντων δὲ θαυμαζόντων ἐπὶ πᾶσιν οἷς ἐποιεῖ εἶπεν κτλ. There was reason to fear that this new outburst of enthusiasm would lead them to forget His warning, or even frustrate His purpose.

ὁ νιὸς τοῦ ἀνθρώπου] Notwithstanding Peter's confession and the revelation of His glory on Mt. Hermon the Lord retains the old title which

asserts the truth of His humanity and His liability to suffering.

παραδίδοται εἰς χεῖρας ἀνθρώπων] Mt., Lc., μέλλει...παραδίδοσθαι. The event is regarded as imminent and indeed in process of accomplishment; cf. Mt. xxvi. 2 μετὰ δύο ημέρας...παραδίδοται: Bengel: “iam id agitur ut tradatur”; for this use of the present see W.M., p. 331 ff., Burton, § 15, who calls it (but inexactly) “the present for the future.” The instrument of the betrayal—ὅ παραδίδοντος, xiv. 42—was in the company, and the Lord could see the purpose already lying as an undeveloped thought in his heart (Jo. vi. 70 f.). On παραδίδονται see i. 14, note. Προδιδόνται *tradere* does not occur in the N. T., but its meaning is more or less imported by the circumstances into παραδίδονται, which even in class. Gk. is patient of a bad sense. Yet, as Origen (*in Mt.*) reminds us, παραδίδονται may be used with quite another purpose; in the eternal counsels of God, the Father delivered up the Son (Rom. viii. 32), and the Son delivered up Himself (Gal. ii. 20). Εἰς χεῖρας ἀνθρ. is less precise than the corresponding words in viii. 31 (ὑπὸ τῶν πρεσβυτέρων καὶ τῶν ἀρχιερέων καὶ τῶν γραμματέων). But on the other hand it is wider, and prepares the Twelve for the further revelation of x. 34 (παραδώσουσιν αὐτὸν τοῖς ἔθνεσιν: cf. xiv. 41, εἰς τ. χ. τ. ἀμαρτωλῶν. On the form ἀποκτανθῆναι, and on μετὰ τρεῖς ημέρας=τῇ τρίτῃ ημέρᾳ see viii. 31, note.

32 ἡμέρας ἀναστήσεται. <sup>32</sup>οἱ δὲ ἡγνόουν τὸ ρῆμα, καὶ ἐφοβοῦντο αὐτὸν ἐπερωτῆσαι.

33 <sup>33</sup>Καὶ ἥλθον εἰς Καφαρναούμ. καὶ ἐν τῇ οἰκίᾳ γενόμενος ἐπηρώτα αὐτούς Τί ἐν τῇ ὁδῷ διελο-

34 γίζεσθε; <sup>34</sup>οἱ δὲ ἐσιώπων, πρὸς ἄλλήλους γὰρ

<sup>31</sup> αναστησεται] εγερθησεται i 13 69 346 26<sup>ev</sup> alpaue <sup>33</sup> ἥλθον KBD (-θοσαν) i 118 209 2<sup>pe</sup> alpaue a b c k vg syr<sup>peish</sup>] ηλθεν ACLXΓΠΣΦΨ al min<sup>pl</sup>f q syrr<sup>sin hol</sup> arm me go aeth εισηλθεν 604+o 1071 | διελογιζεσθε] pr (vel add) προς εαυτους ANXΓΔ ΠΣΦ min<sup>omn vid</sup> f syrr arm go aeth <sup>34</sup> εσιωπησαν Ψ

32. οἱ δὲ ἡγνόουν τὸ ρῆμα] They remained in ignorance of the import of the Lord's words, especially of the saying about the Resurrection (cf. ix. 10), for of the Passion they had some dim and sorrowful conception (Mt., καὶ ἐλυπήθησαν σφόδρα). Lc. explains that there was a Divine purpose in their temporary ignorance: ἦν παρακεκαλυμμένον ἀπ' αὐτῶν ἵνα μὴ αἴσθωνται αὐτό. They shrank from seeking enlightenment (ἐφοβοῦντο αὐτὸν ἐπερωτῆσαι, Mc.; similarly Lc.), partly from a natural reluctance to enter upon a painful subject, partly perhaps from their recollection of the censure incurred by Peter (viii. 33). There is weight also in Bengel's remark: "de quavis re facilius interrogant Iesum quam de ipso; sic fit inter familiares." Ἀγνοεῖν in the N. T. is chiefly a Pauline word (Mc.<sup>1</sup>, Lc. ev.<sup>1</sup>, act.<sup>2</sup>, Paul.<sup>25</sup>, Heb.<sup>1</sup>, 2 Pet.<sup>1</sup>). *Ρῆμα*, a common word in the Lxx. and fairly frequent in the N.T., occurs in Mc. only here and xiv. 72.

33—37. RETURN TO CAPERNAUM. QUESTION OF PRECEDENCE (Mt. xviii. 1—5, Lc. ix. 46—48).

33. καὶ ἥλθον εἰς Καφαρναούμ] Capernaum (i. 21, ii. 1, Jo. vi. 59) had ceased to be the centre of the Ministry; but it was a convenient *terminus* to the northern journey, and starting point for a fresh field of work in the south; and Simon's or Levi's house (i. 29, ii. 15) afforded a shelter there. The Galilean Ministry

ends as it began at Capernaum. No subsequent visit to the town is mentioned in the Gospels, although after the Resurrection the Lord was seen by the shore of the lake (Jo. xxi. 1 ff.) and among the hills (Mt. xxviii. 16).

καὶ ἐν τῇ οἰκίᾳ γενόμενος κτλ.] When they had reached the privacy of the house the Lord questioned the Twelve on a discussion He had overheard during the journey (ἐν τῇ ὁδῷ, Vg. *in via*, cf. viii. 3, 27). Evidently they had not thought Him to be within earshot (cf. x. 32 ἥσαν δὲ ἐν τῇ ὁδῷ... καὶ ἦν προάγων); but He had detected angry voices and knew the cause (Lc. εἰδὼς τὸν διαλογισμὸν τῆς καρδίας αὐτῶν).

34. οἱ δὲ ἐσιώπων] Cf. iii. 4, Lc. xx. 26. Euth.: ἐσιώπων αἰσχυνθέντες, ὡς ἥδη καταγνωσθέντες. Ἐσιώπων... διελέχθησαν: the discussion was at an end and the silence which followed the Lord's question continued until it was broken by His words in v. 35. Διελέχθησαν... τίς μείζων, 'they had discussed (Burton, § 48) the question who is greater (than the rest)'; Lc., more fully, τὸ τίς ἀν εἴη μείζων αὐτῶν; Mt., who represents the Twelve as themselves propounding the question to Jesus, writes Τίς ἄρα μείζων ἐστὶν ἐν τῇ βασιλείᾳ τῶν οὐρανῶν; The comparative has practically the force of a superlative, see Blass, *Gr.* pp. 33, 141 f., and on the other hand WM., p. 305; cf. Mt. xi. 11, xxiii. 11, 1 Cor. xiii. 13. The question τίς μείζων was probably suggested by the selection of the

διελέχθησαν ἐν τῇ ὁδῷ τίς μείζων. <sup>35</sup>καὶ καθίσας 35 ἐφώνησεν τοὺς δῶδεκα καὶ λέγει αὐτοῖς Εἰ τις θέλει πρῶτος εἶναι, ἔσται πάντων ἔσχατος καὶ πάντων διάκονος. <sup>36</sup>καὶ λαβὼν παιδίον ἔστησεν αὐτὸν ἐν 36 μέσῳ αὐτῶν καὶ ἐναγκαλισάμενος αὐτὸν εἶπεν αὐτοῖς

34 διελεχθησαν] διηνεχθησαν 1 6ο+ 2<sup>ρο</sup> | ομ εν τη οδω ΑΔΔ abfiq go | τις μειζων]  
+εστιν δ τις μ. γενηται αυτων D 2<sup>ρο</sup> τις αυτ. μ. ειη 13 69 346 τις ειη μ. minraue τις  
η μ. 1071 35 ομ και λεγει αυτοις...διακονος D k | εστω Δ | διακονος] δουλος M\*  
36 παιδιον] pr το D | αναγκαλισαμενος C(DL)

Three for the mysterious ascent of Hermon, and the prominence of Peter among the three (cf. Bede). Origen: ὅτι μὲν γὰρ οὐκ ἔστιν ἴστότης τῶν ἀξιούμενών τῆς βασιλείας τῶν οὐρανῶν κατελήφεισαν (comparing Mt. v. 29). See Dalman, *Worte*, i. p. 92 f.

35. καὶ καθίσας ἐφώνησεν κτλ.] The Lord assumes the attitude of the Teacher (Mt. v. 1, xiii. 1, Lc. v. 3, 'Jo.' viii. 2), and calls the disciples ('ἐφώνησεν, cf. x. 49, Tob. v. 9, not προσεκαλέσατο, cf. iii. 13, 23, vi. 7, viii. 1, 34)—all the Twelve (*τοὺς δῶδεκα*), for the lesson He is about to give is needed by them all and by the whole future Church. How important it is appears from its repetition towards the end of the Lord's life (Lc. xxii. 24 ff., Mt. xxiii. 8 ff.; for other parallels see x. 42 ff., and the saying in x. 31). The intention of the Master is not to enact "a penal provision against seeking the mastery," but (cf. Lc. ix. 48) to point out the way to true greatness (Latham, *Pastor past.* p. 355). The spirit of service is the passport to eminence in the Kingdom of God, for it is the spirit of the Master Who Himself became διάκονος πάντων. The διάκονος is properly the attendant at table (i. 31, Lc. xxii. 27, Jo. ii. 9, xii. 2); for the later Christian history of the word see Hort, *Ecclesia*, p. 202 ff. A lower depth is sounded and a higher dignity offered in the πάντων δοῦλος of x. 44, q. v. With πρῶτος...ἔσχατος cf. x. 31. In

quite another sense the Lord is at once ὁ πρῶτος and ὁ ἔσχατος (Apoc. i. 17, ii. 6, xxii. 13).

36. λαβὼν παιδίον ἔστησεν αὐτὸν κτλ. The new rule of life just enunciated is illustrated by a visible example. A child is playing near (? Peter's: see note on i. 30; on the late tradition that the child was Ignatius of Antioch—ὁ θεόφορος read as ὁ θεόφορος—see Lightfoot, *Ignatius*, i. p. 27), and the Lord calls it to Him (προσκαλεσάμενος, Mt.), places it by His side in the middle of the group (λαβὼν...ἔστησεν αὐτὸν ἐν μέσῳ αὐτῶν, Lc. ἐπιλαβόμενος...ἔστ. αὐτ. παρ' ἑαυτῷ), and then takes it into His arms (ἐναγκαλισάμενος αὐτό, Mc. only), cf. x. 16; the verb, which belongs to the later Gk., occurs in Prov. vi. 10, xxiv. 48 (33) and the noun ἐναγκάλισμα in 4 Macc. xiii. 21 (§A, but the text is possibly corrupt); Lc. (ii. 28) prefers the paraphrase δέχεσθαι εἰς τὰς ἀγκάλας. The act was accompanied by words of which Mt. preserves the fullest account. According to Mt. the Lord began, Ἐμὴν λέγω ὑμῖν Ἐάν μὴ στραφῆτε καὶ γένησθε ὡς τὰ παιδία κτλ. (xviii. 3, 4). The words carry with them the assurance of their genuineness, answering the question τις μειζων ('the most childlike and trustful, the least self-conscious and self-sufficient') and preparing for the next sentence (ὅς ἂν ἐν τῶν τοιούτων παιδίων κτλ.), the substance of which is common to the three Synoptists.

37 <sup>37</sup><sup>a</sup> Ος ἀν ἐν τῶν τοιούτων παιδίων δέξηται ἐπὶ τῷ ὄνόματί μου, ἐμὲ δέχεται· καὶ ὃς ἀν ἐμὲ δέχηται, οὐκ ἐμὲ δέχεται ἀλλὰ τὸν ἀποστείλαντά με.

38      <sup>38</sup><sup>b</sup> Ἐφη αὐτῷ ὁ Ἰωάνης Διδάσκαλε, εἰδαμέν τινα ἐν

37 *εν]* om D<sup>X</sup>G 124 al<sup>pau</sup> εκ 13 69 346 2<sup>po</sup> ex b c ff i q unum ex a f vg similiter syr<sup>hel</sup> me go | των τοιουτων παιδ. ABDLNXΓΠΣΦ min<sup>pl</sup> latt Or] των παιδιων τουτων ΝCΔ min<sup>pau</sup> *talem puerum arm<sup>vid</sup>* (cf. k syr<sup>sin</sup>) | om εμε 1<sup>o</sup> ...δεχηται k om και os αν εμε δεχ. syr<sup>sin</sup>] δεχηται (N)BLΨ min<sup>pau</sup>] δεξηται ACDNXΓΔΠΣΦ al min<sup>pl</sup> 38 εφη ΝΒΔΨ 1071 syr<sup>posh</sup> me] απεκριθη (δε) A(D)ΝΧΓΠΣΦ αποκριθεις δε εφη C και αποκριθεις ...ειπεν (λεγευ) 69 (604) (b i k r vg syrr<sup>sin</sup> hellier arm) | ο Iωανης] om ο ADNGII al +λεγων ALNXΓΠII al<sup>pl</sup> | εν] επι U min<sup>pau</sup> om ΑΧΓΠΦ al min<sup>pl</sup>

37. ὃς ἀν ἐν τῶν τοιούτων παιδίων κτλ.] Mt. ἐν παιδίον τοιούτῳ, Lc. τοῦτο τὸ παιδίον, i.e. this child regarded as the representative of its class, or rather of the class of disciples whom it symbolises (see WM., p. 138). Cf. Orig. in Mt.: ἐὰν οὖν, ὅπερ παρὰ τὴν ἡλικίαν πάσχει τὰ παιδία...ἀπὸ λόγου, ὁ τοῦ Ἰησοῦ μαθητῆς ἐταπείνωσεν ἕατόν... μάλιστα δὲ τοὺς ὡς ὁ Λόγος ἀπέδειξε στραφέντας...ἀποδεκτέον καὶ μιμητέον κτλ. Chrys. παιδίον γάρ ἐνταῦθα τοὺς οὔτως ἀφελεῖς φησὶ καὶ ταπεινὸν καὶ ἀπερρυμένον παρὰ τοῖς πολλοῖς. He who recognises and welcomes such, because he sees in them the type of character which Christ Himself approved and exhibited (Mt. xi. 29, Phil. ii. 5 ff.), recognises and welcomes Christ Himself—is a true and loyal disciple. On δέχεσθαι see vi. 11, note, and Dalman, *Worte*, i. p. 101 f.; ἐπὶ τῷ ὄνοματί μου (cf. ix. 38 f., xiii. 6, and see 1 Regn. xxv. 5, Gal. iv. 14, Col. iv. 10, *Didache* 12 πᾶς δὲ ὁ ἐρχόμενος ἐν ὄνόματι Κυρίου δεχθήτω), ‘on the ground of My Name’, i.e. the act being based upon a recognition of his connexion with Me, cf. WM., p. 490. Other nearly equivalent phrases are διὰ τὸ ὄνομα (Jo. xv. 21, Mc. xiii. 13, Apoc. ii. 3), ὑπέρ τοῦ ὄνόματος (Acts v. 40, ix. 16, xv. 26, 3 Jo. 7); cf. ἐν τῷ ὄνόματι (Mc. ix. 38, 1 Pet. iv. 14), διὰ τοῦ ὄνόματος (Acts iv. 30), εἰς τὸ ὄνομα (Acts viii. 16). On the use of ὄνομα in the papyri cf. Deissmann, *B. St.*,

pp. 146 f., 196 f. For the absolute use of τὸ ὄνομα see Bp Westcott’s note on 3 Jo. 7, and Lightfoot on Ign. Eph. 3. Δέξηται...δέχηται: the particular act of recognition is evidence of a state of heart to which Christ Himself is a welcome guest.

καὶ ὃς ἀν ἐμὲ δέχηται κτλ.] The action passes into a region beyond that of the visible order; to receive a lowly brother in Christ’s Name is to receive Christ, and to receive Christ is to receive the Eternal Father in Whose Name He came. Cf. Mt. x. 40, Lc. x. 16, Jo. xii. 44, 45. Οἱ ἀποστέλλας με (δέ πέμψας με Jo. l.c., see Bp Westcott, Add. Note on Jo. xx. 21), sc. ὁ πατήρ, Jo. v. 36, vi. 57, x. 36, xvii. 18, xx. 21; the Son is ὁ ἀπόστολος...τῆς δύολογίας ἡμῶν (Heb. iii. 1). Other references to the Mission of the Son in the Synoptists will be found in Mt. x. 40, xv. 24, Mc. i. 38 (note), xii. 6, Lc. iv. 18, 43, ix. 48, x. 16; the idea is in the background of the whole Ministry, which rests on ἔξονσία, and supports itself by faith and prayer. On δέχεσθαι see vi. 11, note. Οὐκ...ἀλλά, not so much...as: Blass, *Gr.* p. 267, n. 2.

38—40. THE USE OF THE NAME BY A NON-DISCIPLE (Lc. ix. 49—50).

38. Ἐφη αὐτῷ ὁ Ἰωάνης] This is the only remark attributed by the Synoptists specifically to St John (cf. however x. 35 Ἰάκωβος καὶ Ἰωάνης, xiii. 3 Πέτρος καὶ Ἰάκωβος καὶ Ἰωάνης καὶ Ἀνδρέας),

τῷ ὀνόματί σου ἐκβάλλοντα δαιμόνια, καὶ ἐκωλύομεν  
αὐτόν, ὅτι οὐκ ἡκολούθει ἡμῖν. <sup>39</sup> ὁ δὲ Ἰησοῦς εἶπεν Μὴ 39  
κωλύετε αὐτόν· οὐδεὶς γάρ ἔστιν ὃς ποιήσει δύναμιν  
ἐπὶ τῷ ὀνόματί μου καὶ δυνήσεται ταχὺ κακολογῆσαι  
με. <sup>40</sup> ὃς γάρ οὐκ ἔστιν καθ' ἡμῶν ὑπὲρ ἡμῶν ἔστιν. ¶ <sup>40</sup> ¶ syr<sup>hier</sup>

<sup>38</sup> καὶ εκωλυομεν (εκωλυσαμεν ACNXΓΠ al min<sup>pl</sup>)] pr os ουκ ακολουθει ημων A(D)ΝΧΓΠΙΣ al min<sup>pl</sup> a b c f i k l q r vg syr<sup>hier</sup> go arm (om NBCΔΨ 1071 min<sup>paue</sup> f syrr<sup>sin</sup> pesh me) | om οτι ουκ ηκ. (NBD ἀκ. rell) ημων DX 1 13 28 69 604 al<sup>nonn</sup> latv<sup>t(excl)</sup> vg arm <sup>39</sup> Ιησους] αποκριθεις D 2<sup>re</sup> a b f f i k [ ουδεις] ου Γ | ποιησει] ποιει Δ arm ποιησας 1071 pr ov Ψ | επι] ev 13 69 346 al<sup>paue</sup> | om ταχυ F\* 1 28 209 a b c d f f i k r<sup>vid</sup> syr<sup>sin</sup> arm <sup>40</sup> ημων bis NBCΔΨ 1 13 69 209 al<sup>mu(vid)</sup> k syr<sup>sin</sup> arm] ημων bis ADNΓΠΣΦ min<sup>sat</sup> mu a b c f f i q vg syrr<sup>pesh hel(mg)</sup>

and it creates an impression of candour and conscientiousness not unworthy of the future *θεολόγος*. His words are in some measure a response (*ἀποκριθείσ*, Lc.; cf. Mc. ix. 5) to the teaching just received. The phrase *ἐπὶ τῷ ὀνόματί μου* had put him in mind of a recent occurrence, and he takes the opportunity of laying the facts before the Master. He and one or more of the other disciples, probably during their recent journey through northern Galilee, had prohibited a non-disciple from using the Master's Name for the purpose of exorcising demons. Ought they rather to have welcomed him as a brother? For the use of the Lord's Name by non-Christian exorcists cf. Acts xix. 13 (where see Blass's note). 'Εκωλύομεν, the 'conative' imperf., Burton § 23; for κωλύειν cf. x. 14, 1 Cor. xiv. 39. Οὐκ ἡκολούθει ἡμῖν (Lc. μεθ' ημῶν) is a frank confession of jealousy for the honour of the Apostolate. In the light of the Lord's words the action had begun to wear a different aspect to the mind of John.

39. μὴ κωλύετε αὐτὸν κτλ.] The sincerity of the speaker saves him from censure; the Lord merely corrects the error. He does not say δέχεσθε αὐτὸν, for the man's motive did not appear; but the attitude of His disciples towards such an one should have been at least neutral.

Οὐδεὶς γάρ ἔστιν κτλ. (Mc. only): whatever his intention, the man is for the time (*οὐ...*ταχύ) practically committed to a course of action which at least cannot be unfriendly. For δύναμιν ποιεῖν see vi. 5, and with οὐ δύνασθαι used in reference to a moral impossibility cf. Mt. vi. 24, Heb. vi. 4 f. To work a miracle in Christ's name was not a test of moral character or proof of spiritual affinity to Him (Mt. vii. 22, Acts xix. 13), as childlike trust and humility must always be; but it was a safeguard against open and immediate (*οὐ ταχύ*) hostility (for *κακολογεῖν* cf. vii. 10, Acts xix. 9), and might be the beginning of better things: Euth. συνεχώρει δὲ καὶ τούτοις θαυματουργεῖν ἄμα μὲν εἰς βεβαίωσιν τοῦ κηρύγματος, ἄμα δὲ καὶ εἰς βελτίωσιν αὐτῶν δὴ τῶν θαυματουργούντων. Bede's use of this incident is interesting: "itaque in haereticis ac male catholicis non sacramenta communia...sed divisiones pacis detestari et prohibere debemus."

The Lord's answer finds a partial parallel in Num. xi. 28 f.

40. ὃς γάρ οὐκ ἔστιν καθ' ἡμῶν κτλ.] The indicative expresses the assumption that such a person exists (Blass, Gr. p. 217). Lc. gives ήμῶν bis. An opposite rule appears to be laid down in Mt. xii. 30=Lc. xi. 23, ὁ μὴ ὁ μετ' ἐμοῦ κατ' ἐμοῦ ἔστιν, καὶ ὁ μὴ συνάγων

41     <sup>41<sup>o</sup></sup>*Οσ γὰρ ἀν ποτίσῃ ὑμᾶς ποτήριον ὕδατος ἐν ὄνόματι ὅτι Χριστοῦ ἔστε, ἀμὴν λέγω ὑμῖν ὅτι*  
 42 *οὐ μὴ ἀπολέση τὸν μισθὸν αὐτοῦ.*     <sup>42<sup>o</sup></sup>*καὶ ὃς ἀν*

41 *αν ποτιση]* ποτισει Ψ | *εν ονοματι* ΙΑΒC\*LNXΓΠΣΦΨ *min<sup>pl</sup>* *syr<sup>sin</sup>*] *εν τω ον.*  
 DHΜΔ *min<sup>mu</sup>* *εν τω ον.* *τουτω arm<sup>vid</sup>* + *μον* ΙC\*DXΓΔΙ<sup>2</sup> al *min<sup>pl</sup>* *latt* *syr<sup>hel(mng)</sup> hier* *me*  
*go aeth* (om *μον* ΙΑΒC\*KLNΠ\* i 1071 *alpauc* *syr<sup>sin pesh hel(txt)</sup>* *arm*) | om *οτι* 2<sup>o</sup>  
 AC<sup>3</sup>NXΓΠ al<sup>pl</sup> | *απολεσει* DE *min<sup>nonn</sup>*

*μετ' ἐμοῦ σκορπίζει.* But the two rules are in fact complementary (Gould); in the latter words the Lord refers to the relations of a man's inner life to Himself, whilst in this context He deals with outward conduct. Upon conduct, in our partial ignorance, the most hopeful construction should be put; the man who is not a declared enemy of the Christian brotherhood may be provisionally regarded as a friend. In the present case, indeed, there was presumptive evidence of something better than neutrality, since the person in question had used the Name of Christ.

41—50. THE TEACHING RESUMED : ON THE CONSEQUENCES OF CONDUCT TOWARDS BRETHREN IN CHRIST (Mt. xviii. 6—9; cf. Mt. x. 42, Lc. xvii. 1, 2, xiv. 34).

41. *ὅς γὰρ ἀν ποτίσῃ ὑμᾶς κτλ.]* The thread of the teaching, broken off at v. 38 by John's question, is now resumed. The spiritual significance of help offered to a brother for Christ's sake is independent of the material value of the gift. A cup of water may be judged worthy of an eternal recompense. Victor: *τοῦτο λέγει διὰ τὸν ἔνδειαν ἵστις προφασιζομένους.* For *ποτίζειν τινά τι* cf. Gen. xxiv. 17 *πότισόν με μικρὸν ὕδωρ,* i Regn. xxx. 11, Job xxii. 7, Jer. xvi. 7 *οὐ ποτιούσιν αὐτὸν ποτήριον.* The *ποτήριον* is the ordinary cup used both for wine and water: cf. vii. 4, Lc. xi. 39, i Cor. xi. 25. *"Ὕδατος,* Mt. (x. 42), *ψυχροῦ.*

*ἐν ὄνόματι ὅτι Χριστοῦ ἔστε]* The Vg. renders *in nomine meo, quia Christi*

*estis*; and so Wycliffe, Rheims, A.V., whilst Tindale has "for my name's sake." But *μον* has no right to a place in the text (see vv. ll.); and *ἐν ὄνόματι ὅτι κτλ.* is nearly equivalent to *διὰ τὸ Χριστοῦ εἶναι*, on the score of your being Christ's—a use of *ὄνόματι* not unknown to class. Greek, cf. e.g. Thuc. iv. 60. *Χριστοῦ εἶναι* is a Pauline phrase, Rom. viii. 9, i Cor. i. 12, iii. 23, 2 Cor. x. 7; the anarthrous *Χριστός* is unique in sayings attributed to our Lord by the Synoptists; cf. Dalman, *Worte*, i. p. 239 n. Mt.'s *εἰς ὄνομα μαθητοῦ* is perhaps nearer to the original: cf. *εἰς ὄνομα προφήτου, δικαίον* Mt. x. 41; "a later editor's hand is very probably to be seen in" the words which now stand here in Mc. (Hawkins, *Hor. Syn.*, p. 122). *Οὐ μὴ ἀπολέση τὸν μισθὸν αὐτοῦ* presents the recompense of eternity in a form appreciable by the Jewish mind, cf. Mt. v. 12, vi. 1 f., xx. 1 ff., i Cor. iii. 8 ff., Apoc. xxii. 12; for the nature and conditions of the *μισθός* see Mt. xxv. 34 ff. *κληρονομήσατε τὴν ἡτοιμασμένην ὑμῖν βασιλείαν ... ἐδίψησα καὶ ἐποτίσατέ με... ἐφ' ὅστον ἐποιήσατε ἐνὶ τούτων τῶν ἀδελφῶν μου τῶν ἐλαχίστων, ἐμοὶ ἐποιήσατε.*

42. *καὶ ὃς ἀν σκανδαλίσῃ κτλ.]* The converse is equally true. A wrong done to a disciple however insignificant will bring incalculable evil upon the evil-doer. On *σκανδαλίζειν* see iv. 17, note. It is possible to be an innocent cause of stumbling; the Lord Himself was such, cf. vi. 3, i Cor. i. 23, i Pet. ii. 8. But He was careful to abstain from placing unnecessary stumbling-blocks in men's way (see Mt. xvii. 27),

σκανδαλίσῃ ἔνα τῶν μικρῶν τούτων τῶν πιστευόντων, καλόν ἐστιν αὐτῷ μᾶλλον εἰ περίκειται μύλος ὄνικὸς περὶ τὸν τράχηλον αὐτοῦ, καὶ βέβληται εἰς

42 σκανδαλίζῃ D | των μικρων τουτων ΝΑΒC\*,<sup>2</sup> DΛΜ<sup>2</sup>ΝΔΦ 1 604 1071 alpauc  
b c iff q vg syrbeshel arm me go aeth] om τουτων EFGHKM\* SUVXΓΠΣΨ minpl  
f των μ. υμων (ut vid) a k | πιστευοντων]+eis εμε ABC<sup>2</sup>LNXΓΠΣΦΨ minpl c f q vg  
syrr<sup>sin pesh</sup> arm go al (om eis εμε ΝΔ b f i k\*) πιστω εχοντων C\*vid Da d | περιε-  
κειτο D | μυλος ονικος ΝBCDLΔΨ min<sup>nonn</sup> mola asinaria vel asinaricia latt<sup>vt(excq)vg</sup>  
syrr<sup>sin pesh</sup> arm go aeth] λιθος μυλικος ΑΝΧΓΠΣΦ minpl lapis molaris q syrbel me<sup>vid</sup>  
μυλωνικος λιθος vel λ. μυλων 13 28 69 258 346 2<sup>po</sup> | περι] επι D min<sup>perpauc</sup> a d f i vg |  
εβληθη D

ἴνα δὲ μὴ σκανδαλίσωμεν αὐτούς), and it is this scrupulous regard for the infirmities of others that He enjoins (cf. Rom. xiv. 21, 1 Cor. viii. 13, 2 Cor. xi. 29), and the wilful or heedless creation of σκάνδαλα that He condemns. Τῶν πιστευόντων at length shews how τὰ τοιαῦτα παιδία (v. 37), are to be understood: the little ones (Zach. xiii. 7, usually in contrast with οἱ μεγάλοι Apoc. xi. 18, xiii. 16, xix. 5, 18, xx. 12, or in the phrase ἀπὸ μικροῦ ἔως μεγάλου 1 Regn. v. 9 etc., Heb. viii. 11) who believe, i.e. the lowliest, whether in their own eyes or in the eyes of men, in the outward order of the Church or even in the spiritual order, cf. Mt. xi. 11, Lc. vii. 28, ὁ μικρότερος ἐν τῇ βασιλείᾳ τοῦ οὐρανοῦ (τοῦ θεοῦ): the reference is here especially to the last type of μικροί, St Paul's ἀδύνατοι (Rom. xv. 1) or ἀσθενεῖς, ἀσθενοῦντες τῇ πίστει (Rom. xiv. 1, 1 Cor. viii. 10 ff., ix. 22).

καλόν ἐστιν αὐτῷ μᾶλλον] Mt. συμφέρει αὐτῷ ἴνα, Lc. (xvii. 2) λυσιτελεῖ αὐτῷ εἰ. For καλὸν...μᾶλλον, 'it were good...by comparison,' cf. Acts xx. 35, Gal. iv. 27 (Isa. liv. 1 LXX.); and for καλὸν...εἰ, Mt. xxvi. 24; for ἐστίν we should expect ἵν, as in Mt. l.c., but the present brings the alternative before the reader more vividly: the man is seen at the moment when the weight is placed round his neck (*περίκειται*), and then lying at the bottom of the sea (*βέβληται*); even under

these circumstances he is in a better case than if he had caused the feeblest brother to stumble; cf. Rom. xiv. 13 ff., 1 Cor. viii. 9 ff. Instead of the simple εἰ βέβληται (Lc. ἔρριπται) εἰς τὴν θάλασσαν, Mt. has ἴνα καταποντισθῆ ἐν τῷ πελάγει τῆς θαλάσσης. Cod. D corrects both tenses; see Blass, Gr. p. 215. Μύλος ὄνικός Mt., Mc.; Lc. λίθος μυλικός. Μύλος in the Lxx. is the handmill (Μύλος, see Driver on Deut. xxiv. 6, and cf. Num. xi. 8) usually worked by women, especially female slaves (Exod. xi. 5, Jud. ix. 53, Mt. xxiv. 41); the upper stone is the ἐπιμύλιον (Lxx., Deut. l.c., Jud. l.c. (B), but the word is not used in the N. T.). Distinct from this handmill (*χειρομύλη*, *χειρομύλων*, Xen. al.) was the larger sort of mill, which was driven by an ass (Ovid, *fast.* vi. 318, "pumiceas versat asella molas"), the *רַמְלָה* of the Talmud (J. Lightfoot on Lc. xviii.). Since the millstone ἐπιμύλιον is also called ὄνος in classical Gk., it has been thought that μύλος ὄνικός may have the same sense here; but the conjecture is unnecessary. Cf. Origen: εἰσὶ γάρ καὶ μύλων διαφοραὶ, ὡς εἶναι τὸν μέν τινα αὐτῶν, ἵν' οὖτος ὄνομάσω, ἀνθρωπικόν, ἄλλον δὲ ὄνικόν. The stone of an 'ass-mill' would be a μύλος μέγας (Apoc. xviii. 21), and this is to the point; the stone round the neck is heavy enough to render escape impossible. Schöttgen produces a parallel from

43 τὴν θάλασσαν. <sup>43</sup>καὶ ἐὰν σκανδαλίσῃ σε ἡ χείρ σου,  
ἀπόκοψον αὐτήν· καλόν ἐστίν σε κυλλὸν εἰσελθεῖν  
εἰς τὴν ζωήν, ἢ τὰς δύο χεῖρας ἔχοντα ἀπελθεῖν

43 σκανδαλίσῃ ΚΒΛΔΨ min<sup>paue</sup> a f ff k vg] σκανδαλίζῃ (-ξει) ACDFGN rell | αυτην]  
+ et proice abs te b (arm) | σε] σοι ADNXGII al | ζωην]+αιωνιον arm | τας δυο] om  
τας DΨ | απελθειν] βληθηναι D min<sup>perpaue</sup> a f ff k

*Kiddushin*: “even though a man had a millstone round his neck yet ought he to attend to the study of the Law.” For an early instance of the use of this saying of Christ see Clem. Cor. 46: κρείττον ἦν αὐτῷ περιτεθῆναι μόλιον καὶ καταποντισθῆναι εἰς τὴν θάλασσαν ἢ ἔνα τῶν ἑκλεκτῶν μου διαστρέψαι. The form, it will be observed, does not agree with either Mt., Mc. or Lc., but comes nearest to Mt.

43. καὶ ἐὰν σκανδαλίσῃ σε ἡ χείρ σου κτλ.] “The offender of the little ones is still more an offender against himself” (Bruce). A man may place moral stumbling-blocks in his own path; the temptation may proceed not from without, but from some part of his own nature. As men submit to the loss of a bodily organ or limb in order to preserve the body as a whole, so it is their interest to sacrifice powers and functions of their spiritual nature which have been found to be inevitable occasions of sin. Better to live under a sense of partial mutilation and incompleteness than to perish in the enjoyment of all one’s powers. Origen: ὅμοιας καὶ ἐπὶ τῆς ψυχῆς καλόν καὶ μακάριον ἐπὶ τοῖς βελτίστοις χρῆσθαι τῇ δυνάμει αὐτῆς. εἰ δὲ μέλλομεν διά τινα μίαν ἀπολέσθαι, αἱρετώτερον ἀποβαλεῖν τὴν χρῆσιν αὐτῆς, ἵνα μετὰ τῶν ἄλλων δυνάμεων σωθῶμεν. The word, he adds, may be applied in various ways: to the excision of an offending member of the Christian brotherhood, or to the surrender, for Christ’s sake, of a friend or near kinsman. For ἀποκόπτειν τὴν χείρα see Deut. xxv. 12, Jud. i. 6. Καλόν ἐστιν...ἢ: see WM., p. 302, and cf. Ps. cxvii. (cxviii.)

8 f. ἀγαθὸν...ἢ, Hos. ii. 7 (9), καλῶς ἢ (וְזַבְּחַת). Ἀπελθεῖν and εἰσελθεῖν are in marked contrast; for the former cf. Mt. v. 30, xxv. 46. The issues of life are on the one hand an entrance into the higher life which is its proper end, and, on the other, a departure from it. On εἰσέρχεσθαι εἰς τ. ζωήν see Dalman, *Worte*, i. pp. 95, 127.

Κυλλός, used in class. Gk. of one who has a crushed or crippled limb, is employed here and apparently also in Mt. xv. 30 (χωλούς, κυλλούς) with special reference to the loss of a hand. Τὴν ζωήν, the higher life; the word is occasionally used in the N. T. for physical existence (Acts xvii. 25, 1 Cor. iii. 22, xv. 19 (ἡ ζ. αὐτην), 2 Pet. i. 3), but in the great majority of instances it means life in union with God (cf. Mt. vii. 14, Jo. iii. 36, v. 24, 40, vi. 53 etc., esp. 1 Jo. v. 11 f.), often more closely defined as ζωὴ αἰώνιος, ἡ δύνατος ζωῆς (1 Tim. vi. 19), ἡ ζωὴ τοῦ θεοῦ (Eph. iv. 18). In this context, it is instructive to note, ἡ ζωὴ corresponds to ἡ βασιλεία τοῦ θεοῦ (v. 47).

Γέεννα, Μάνη ἡ, Μάνατζεν ἡ, Μάνατζεν ἡ, in the LXX. φάραγξ ‘Ονόμ, ‘Εννόμ, ‘Εννώμ (Jos. xv. 8, 2 Esdr. xxi. 30 (Ν<sup>c,a</sup>)), φ. νιοῦ ‘Εννόμ (Jer. vii. 31, 32) or πολυάνδρου νιοῦ ‘Ε. (Jer. xix. 6), Γαὶ ‘Οννόμ (Jos. xviii. 16, A), Γαιβενθόμ (B) or Γαμβὲ ‘Εννόμ (A) (2 Chron. xxviii. 3), Γεβανὲ ‘Εννόμ (2 Chron. xxxiii. 6), Γαίεννα (Jos. xviii. 16, B). In the O. T. the name denotes the ravine which, starting from the N.W. of Jerusalem, sweeps round the S.W. angle of the city, and then, taking a south-easterly course, meets the

εἰς τὴν γέένναν, εἰς τὸ πῦρ τὸ ἄσβεστον. <sup>45</sup>καὶ ἐὰν 45  
ὅ πούς σου σκανδαλίζῃ σε, ἀπόκοψον αὐτόν· καλόν  
ἔστιν σε εἰσελθεῖν εἰς τὴν ζωὴν χωλόν, ή τοὺς δύο

43 om εἰς τὴν γ. syr<sup>sin</sup> | εἰς τὸ πῦρ τὸ ασβεστον] του πυρος F του π. του ασβεστον  
syphelvid (om εἰς τὸ π. το ασβ. ΝεΔΨ 6ο4 al<sup>perpare</sup> syrpesh) + (44) οπου ο σκωληξ  
αιτων ου τελευτα και το πυρ ου σβεννυται ADNXΓΠΣΦ al min<sup>pl</sup> latt<sup>vt</sup>plvg syrrpeshel (go  
aeth) (om v. 44 ΝΒCLΔ 1 28 118 251 2<sup>ρο</sup> k syr<sup>sin</sup> arm me) 45 σκανδαλιζῃ (-ζει)  
(Ν)ΑΒCDΝΓΔΠΨ al min<sup>pl</sup>] σκανδαλιση (-ει) (L) go\* | αποκοψον αυτον] εκκοψον 1071 |  
σε 2<sup>ρο</sup> ΝABCEF al<sup>pl</sup>] σοι DNM\*SUT al<sup>pl</sup> | την ζωην]+αιωνιον D (sic) latt<sup>vt</sup>plvg arm |  
χωλον] pr κυλλον η Ν

Kidron below the Pool of Siloam at the well now called Bir Eyûb (*Recovery*, p. 6). This valley is the traditional site (but see *ib.* p. 306 ff.) of the fire-worship which began in the reign of Ahaz (2 Chron. xxviii. 3, xxxiii. 6, Jer. vii. 31, xix. 2 ff.), and after its desecration by Josiah (2 Kings xxiii. 10) it became a common receptacle for the offal of the city, and, in the later development of Jewish thought, a symbol of the supposed place of future punishments (cf. Stanton, p. 325 ff.); the conception occurs already in Enoch xxvii. 1, αὗτη ἡ φάραγξ κεκατηραμένη ἔστι, cf. *ib.* xc. 24 ff., and the name is so used in the Talmud, e.g. *Aboth* i. 6, “[the sinner] desists from words of Torah, and in the end he inherits Gehinnom” (גָּהִנּוֹם, Dalman, *Gr.* p. 146, *Worte*, i. p. 131 f.; Wünsche, *neue Beiträge*, p. 596, gives other references). The N. T. form γέέννα (Mt. v. 22, 29, 30, x. 28, xviii. 9, xxiii. 15, 33, Mc. ix. 43, 45, 47, Lc. xii. 5, James iii. 6) is used exclusively in the figurative sense, and only (as the references shew) in Synoptic reports of sayings of Christ, and by St James. It appears also in the Sibyllines (i. 103, ἐσ γέένναν μαλεροῦ λάβρον πυρὸς ἀκαμάτοιο), and in the transliteration *gehenna* it occurs in the Latin version of 4 Esdr. (ii. 29, vii. 36, “clibanus gehennae ostendetur et contra eum iocunditatis paradisus”: cf. Tert. *Apol.* 47, “gehennam...quae

est ignis arcani subterraneus ad poenam thesauros...paradisum...locum divinae amoenitatis recipiendis sanctorum spiritibus destinatum”), and has established itself in the Latin Bible (O. L. and Vg.). From Anglo-Saxon times the word was rendered into English by the ambiguous “hell,” used also for ἄδης; even R.V. keeps “hell” here in the text.

τὸ πῦρ τὸ ἄσβεστον] The phrase appears to be based on Isa. lxvi. 24 (see below v. 48); cf. also 4 Regn. xxii. 17, Isa i. 31, Jer. vii. 20; the ultimate reference is perhaps to the altar-fire Lev. vi. 9 (2), τὸ πῦρ τοῦ θυσιαστηρίου...οὐ σβεσθήσεται. *Ἄσβεστος*, a revived Homeric word, occurs as a variant in Job xx. 26 (ΝεΔΨ A), and also in Mt. iii. 12 = Lc. iii. 17. Here Mt. uses αἴωνιος as its equivalent. The fire which devours sin belongs to the eternal order and burns as long as sin remains to be consumed. For the repeated article see note on iii. 29.

45. καὶ ἐὰν ὅ πούς σου σκανδαλίζῃ σε] This mention of the foot naturally follows that of the hand; if the two members are to be distinguished in the interpretation, the movements of life will be represented by the foot and its activities by the hand. On both a check may be wisely placed, if it is found that they minister to sin.

κ. ἐ. σε εἰσελθεῖν] On the readings σε, σοι cf. Blass, *Gr.* p. 240 f. Βληθῆναι is substituted in vv. 45, 47 for ἀπελθεῖν—the punishment is involun-

47 πόδας ἔχοντα βληθῆναι εἰς τὴν γέενναν. <sup>47</sup> καὶ ἐὰν ὁ ὄφθαλμός σου σκανδαλίζῃ σε, ἐκβαλε ἀυτὸν· καλόν σέ ἐστιν μονόφθαλμον εἰσελθεῖν εἰς τὴν βασιλείαν τοῦ θεοῦ, ἢ δύο ὄφθαλμοὺς ἔχοντα βληθῆναι εἰς 48 γέενναν, <sup>48</sup> ὅπου ὁ σκώληξ αὐτῶν οὐ τελευτᾶ καὶ 49 τὸ πῦρ οὐ σβέννυται. <sup>49</sup> πᾶς γάρ πυρὶ ἀλισθήσεται.

45 οἱ εἰς τὴν γέενναν 604 | γέενναν] + τοῦ πυρος F + τοῦ πυρος τοῦ ασβεστοῦ σ νγ syrhel + εἰς το πυρ το ασβεστον ADNXΓΠΣΦ min<sup>pl</sup> a f ff i go aeth + (46) οπου ο σκώληξ αυτων ου τελευτα και το πυρ εν σβεννυται ADNXΓΠΣΦ min<sup>pl</sup> latt<sup>vt pl</sup>(non k) vg syrrpesh hel (go aeth) (om v. 46 NBCΙΔ 1 28 92 118 218 251 253 2<sup>pe</sup> 19<sup>ev</sup> c<sup>scr</sup> k syrsin arm me) 47 και ο οφθ. σου ει σκανδαλιζει σε D | σε 2<sup>o</sup>] σοι ACDMNXΓΠ al<sup>pl</sup> [ μονοφθ.] quascumque parte corporis debilem k | βληθηναι] απελθειν D min<sup>pauc</sup> c i syrsin | γέενναν] + τοῦ πυρος ACNХΓΠΣΦ min<sup>pl</sup> f i lq r syrrpesh hel go aeth + εἰς το πυρ το ασβεστον F 48 οπ. το πυρ ου σβ. και ο σκ. κτλ. c k | τελευτησει i a b c ff i q | το πυρ] + αυτων Ψ 262 300 al<sup>pauc</sup> b me syrr | σβεσθησεται a b c ff i k q 49 οι πασ...αλισθησεται D 64 65\* a b c ff i | πασ...αλισθ.] omnia autem substantia consumitur k | πας γαρ] + αρτος II 230 al<sup>perpauc</sup> παν γαρ arm<sup>vid</sup> | πυρι] pr ev ΒC min<sup>pauc</sup> [ αλισθησεται] δοκιμασθησεται 46 52 g (examinantur) + και πασα (πασα γαρ) θυσια αλι αλισθησεται AC(D)NXTΓΠΣΦ al latt<sup>vt pl</sup> vg syrrpesh hel me go aeth + και πασα θυσια αναλωθησεται Ψ (cf. k) (om NBCΙΔ 1 61 73 118 604 al<sup>nonn</sup> k syrsin arm)

tary, though it has been reached through successive acts of the will.

47. καὶ ἐὰν ὁ ὄφθαλμός κτλ.] The eye is here the symbol of the lust which works through it (ἢ ἐπιθυμία τῶν ὄφθαλμῶν, I Jo. ii. 16). "Ἐκβαλε αὐτὸν: Mt. ἔξελε αὐτόν. καὶ βάλε ἀπὸ σοῦ, expanding Mc's compressed thought—'tear it out and cast it away.' Such a wrench may be necessary in the moral nature; the love of visible beauty is a true and noble element in man, but if it becomes in any individual the occasion of sin, he must put it from him; better to enter life with no eye but for the spiritual and eternal beauty than to indulge the lower taste to the loss of all. *Μονόφθαλμος*, one of the Herodotean words (Herod. iii. 16, iv. 29) revived in the κοινή but condemned by the Atticists; cf. Lob. *Phryni*. 136, *μονόφθαλμον οὐ ῥητέον ἐτερόφθαλμον δέ*. Τὴν βασιλείαν τοῦ θεοῦ answers to τὴν ζωήν (v. 43 note).

48. ὅπου ὁ σκώληξ αὐτῶν κτλ.]

Cited from Isa. lxvi. 25, ὁ γάρ σκώληξ αὐτῶν οὐ τελευτήσει (A, τελευτᾶ) καὶ τὸ πῦρ αὐτῶν οὐ σβεσθήσεται. The words have impressed themselves on more than one passage in Jewish writing outside the Canon; cf. Sir. vii. 17, ἐκδίκησις ἀσεβούς πῦρ καὶ σκώληξ: Judith xvi. 17, Κύριος...ἐκδίκησει αὐτοὺς...δοῦναι πῦρ καὶ σκώληκας εἰς σάρκας αὐτῶν. "Σκώληξ, animae" (Bengel). For the significance of such language as adopted by Christ cf. Thphpt.: αἰσθητὴν τιμωρίαν εἴπεν, ἐκφοβῶν ἡμᾶς διὰ τούτου τοῦ αἰσθητοῦ ὑποδείγματος...σκώληξ δὲ καὶ πῦρ κολάζοντα τοὺς ἀμαρτωλοὺς ἡ συνείδησίς ἐστιν ἐκάστου καὶ ἡ μνήμη τῶν πραχθέντων, ἡτις ὥσπερ σκώληξ καταδαπανᾶ καὶ ὡς πῦρ φλέγει. Like the fire, the worm is undying: "the wounds inflicted on the man himself by his sins, the degradation and deterioration of his being, have no limitations [of time]." (Gould.) The presents οὐ τελευτᾶ, οὐ σβέννυται (cf. LXX.) state simply the law or normal condition of

<sup>5°</sup>καλὸν τὸ ἄλας· ἐὰν δὲ τὸ ἄλας ἀναλον γένηται, 50  
ἐν τίνι αὐτὸ ἀρτύσετε; ἔχετε ἐν ἑαυτοῖς ἄλα, καὶ  
εἰρηνεύετε ἐν ἀλλήλοις.

50 το αλας bis Ν<sup>c,a</sup> (1<sup>o</sup>, Ν<sup>\*</sup>) ABCDNXΓΠΙΣΦΨ min<sup>omn vki]</sup> το αλα LΔ et 2<sup>o</sup>, Ν<sup>\*</sup> | γενησεται D | αρτυσεται ACDHLNΣ 126 al<sup>mu</sup> αρτυθησεται K i 14 al<sup>pau</sup> d f syrpesh arm me go aetli | εχετε] υμεις ουν εχ. i3 69 346 2<sup>o</sup> arm εχ. ουν υμεις 28 | αλα Ν<sup>\*A</sup>BDILΔ i 28 al<sup>pau</sup>] αλα Ν<sup>c,a</sup>A<sup>a</sup>CNXΓΠΣΦ min<sup>pl</sup> το αλα U 604 panem k

the σκώληξ and πῦρ. The question of the eternity of punishment does not come into sight.

The 'Western' and Syrian texts add these words as a refrain to *vv.* 43, 45; see app. crit. *supra*.

49. πᾶς γὰρ πυρὶ ἀλισθήσεται] 'Fire, I said, for with fire shall every man be salted.' The 'Western' gloss πᾶσα γὰρ (or καὶ πᾶσα) θυσίᾳ ἀλὶ ἀλισθήσεται rightly seeks an explanation in Lev. ii. 13 (πᾶν δῶρον θυσίας ὑμῶν ἀλὶ ἀλισθήσεται). The sacrificial salt was the symbol of a covenant-relation with GOD (חֵלֶב, בְּרִית, Num. xviii. 19, 2 Chron. xiii. 5). In the case of every disciple of Christ the salt of the covenant is a Divine Fire (Mt. iii. 11, αὐτὸς ὑμᾶς βαπτίσει ἐν πνεύματι ἁγίῳ καὶ πυρὶ) which purifies, preserves and consummates sacrifice—the alternative to the Fire which consumes (Mt. iii. 12, Heb. xii. 29). Cf. Euth. : πᾶς πιστὸς πυρὶ τῆς πρὸς θεὸν πίστεως ἡ τῆς πρὸς τὸν πλησίον ἁγάπης ἀλισθήσεται, ἥγουν τὴν σηπεδόνα τῆς κακίας ἀποβαλεῖ. On the reading see WH., *Intr.* p. 101, *Notes*, p. 25: the traditional text is defended by Burdon-Miller, *Causes of Corruption*, p. 275.

50. καλὸν τὸ ἄλας κτλ.] 'Good is the salt' implied in ἀλισθήσεται (*v.* 49). 'Άλας (*τό*) is the late form of ἄλς (*ό*); cf. Lev. ii. 13, Jud. ix. 45, 2 Esdr. vi. 9, vii. 22, Mt. v. 13, Lc. xiv. 34; the dat. ἄλατι occurs in Col. iv. 6; the nom. is also written ἄλα (cf. γάλα) in Sir. xxxix. 26 (B), and as a variant in each of the passages where ἄλας is found in the N. T.; cf. Blass, *Gr.* p. 27,

WH., *Notes*, p. 158. "Αναλος *insulsus* is used here only in the LXX. and N. T., but it is Aquila's rendering for לְפַתְּח in Ezech. xiii. 10, 11, 15, xxii. 28. In the parallel saying of Mt. v. 13—Lc. xiv. 34, μωρανθῆ takes the place of Mc.'s ἀναλον γένηται. 'Ἐν τίνι αὐτῷ ἀρτύσετε; Mt. ἐν τίνι ἀλισθήσεται; Ἀρτίειν ἀλατι occurs in Col. iv. 6, where see Bp Lightfoot's note; Symm. gives ἀνάρτυτος for Aq.'s ἀναλος in Ezech. II. cc., and for ἀνευ ἀλός (LXX.) in Job vi. 6.

In its immediate reference to the Apostles the passage is well explained by Mr Latham (p. 360): "if the preserving principle embodied in the Apostles, and which was to emanate from them, should itself prove corrupt [?inoperative], then where could help be found? If they, the chosen ones, became selfish, if they wrangled about who should be greatest, then the fire which our Lord had come to send upon earth was clearly not burning in them, and whence could it be kindled afresh?" For a wider application cf. Victor: εἴτις οὖν χάρτος ἀξιωθεῖς καὶ κενὴν ταύτην ποιήσει, οὗτος ὁν εἴη ἐν φῷ οἱ ἀλες ἐμωράνθησαν.

ἔχετε ἐν ἑαυτοῖς ἄλα κτλ.] 'Keep the seasoning power, the preserving sacrificial Fire, within your own hearts, and as a first condition and indication of its presence there, be at peace with your brethren.' Thus the discourse reverts to the point from which it started (*v.* 33). Disputes about precedence endangered the very existence of the new life. Εἰρηνεύειν is elsewhere in the N. T. limited to

X. I     <sup>1</sup>*Kai ἐκεῖθεν ἀναστὰς ἔρχεται εἰς τὰ ὄρια τῆς Ιουδαίας καὶ πέραν τοῦ Ἰορδάνου, καὶ συνπορεύονται πάλιν ὥχλοι πρὸς αὐτόν, καὶ ὡς εἰώθει πάλιν ἐδίδασκεν αὐτούς.*

X I κακειθεν ALNXGPI | ερχεται] ηλθεν N | και περαν NBC\* LΨ me] om και C<sup>2</sup>DGA I 13 28 69 124 209 604\* 2<sup>pe</sup> al<sup>nomn</sup> latt syrr<sup>sin</sup>pesh arm go aeth<sup>vld</sup> δια τον περαν ANXGPI al min<sup>pl</sup> τον περαν Σ | συνπορευονται (συμπ. LNXGΠΣΦΨ min<sup>pl</sup>) παλιν οχλοι συνερχεται π. ο οχλος D 2<sup>pe</sup> a b c ff i k q (r) (arm) | και ws ειωθει] ws ei. και D b ff i | om παλιν 2<sup>o</sup> k syr<sup>sin</sup> | εδιδασκεν] pr εθεραπευσεν και syr<sup>sin</sup>

St Paul (Rom. xii. 18, 2 Cor. xiii. 11, 1 Thess. v. 13).

X. I. DEPARTURE FROM GALILEE; JOURNEYS IN JUDAEA AND PERAEA (Mt. xix. 1—2).

I. καὶ ἐκεῖθεν ἀναστὰς ἔρχεται] This phrase (which corresponds to the Hebrew נִזְבֵּן [מִצְבֵּן] מִצְבֵּן, Gen. xxii. 3, Num. xxii. 14, &c.) seems to be used for the commencement of a considerable journey, cf. vii. 24. On the present occasion the Lord is finally quitting Galilee (Mt. μετῆρεν ἀπὸ τῆς Γαλειλαίας) and Capernaum (ix. 33); His face is henceforth turned towards Jerusalem (Lc. ix. 51, xvii. 11). The departure followed soon after the teaching recorded in ix. 35—50, Mt. xviii. 1—35; cf. Mt. xix. I, ὅτε ἐτέλεσεν ὁ Ἰησοῦς τὸν λόγον τούτους. The incident of the στατήρ seems also to have occurred during this interval (Mt. xvii. 24 ff.).

eis τὰ ὄρια τῆς Ιουδαίας καὶ κτλ.] These words cover the whole interval between the end of the Galilean Ministry and the final visit to Jerusalem. The time was spent partly in Judaea, partly beyond the Jordan. It seems to have included a journey to Jerusalem in September for the Feast of Tabernacles (Jo. vii. 14), and another in December for the Feast of the Dedication (Jo. x. 22), a retreat to Bethany beyond the Jordan (Jo. x. 40), a visit to Bethany on the Mount of Olives (Jo. xi. 1 ff.), a second retreat to “Ephraim” (? Ophrah)

“near the wilderness” (Jo. xi. 54), ending in the last journey through Jericho. Τὰ ὄρια τ. Ι., not the frontier only (as Origen in Mt. t. xiv. 15, οὐκ ἐπὶ τὰ μέσα, δὲλλ' οἰονεῖ τὰ ἄκρα), but the region as a whole; cf. vii. 24. Καὶ πέραν: Mt. omits καὶ, and is followed by the ‘Western’ text of Mc.; the R. T. (διὰ τοῦ π.) is perhaps an attempt to extract sense from the clause denuded of καὶ.

συνπορεύονται πάλιν ὥχλοι] As in Galilee before the departure to the North (iii. 7 f., 20, iv. 1, v. 21, vi. 33, 54 f.), and even under Mt. Hermon (ix. 14 f.). Οχλοι: Mc. uses the sing. elsewhere, but the pl. occurs repeatedly in Mt., Lc. With the return of the ὥχλος, the Lord reverted to His old methods of teaching; chiefly, no doubt, as St Luke’s account of this period (Lc. ix. 31 ff.) suggests, employing the parable as the vehicle of instruction. Ως ειώθει: cf. Lc. iv. 16, κατὰ τὸ ειώθος αὐτῷ. The Gospels reveal certain habits of thought and action which invest the Lord with a true human character. The Lord, after an interval during which He has devoted Himself to the training of the Twelve, returns to His customary teaching of the multitude. The reading of D and a few O. L. texts, which refers ὡς ειώθει to the ὥχλος, looks like a correction and renders ὡς εἰ. otiose, for it is implied in πάλιν. Εδιδασκεν (cf. vi. 34)—the teaching continued throughout the period,

<sup>2</sup> Καὶ προσελθόντες Φαρισαῖοι ἐπηρώτων αὐτὸν 2  
 Εἰ ἔξεστιν ἀνδρὶ γυναικα ἀπολῦσαι; πειράζοντες  
 αὐτόν. <sup>3</sup> ὁ δὲ ἀποκριθεὶς εἶπεν αὐτοῖς Τί υἱοῦ ἐνε- 3  
 τείλατο Μωυσῆς; <sup>4</sup> οἱ δὲ εἶπαν Ἐπέτρεψεν Μωυσῆς 4

<sup>2</sup> om προσελθοντες οι Φ. D a b k syr<sup>sin</sup> | Φαρισαιοι ABLΓΔΠΦΨ min<sup>pl</sup> c ff] om D pr οι ΝCΝVΧΣ min<sup>sat</sup> mu | επηρωτων (επηρωτησαν ΑΝΧΓΠΣΦΨ min<sup>pl</sup> q<sup>vid</sup>)] pr πειρα-  
 σοντες arm (cf. syr<sup>sin</sup> Or) | om πειρ. αυτον arm

whenever opportunities offered themselves. Mt. refers only to the miracles which incidentally accompanied the teaching (*καὶ θεράπευσεν αὐτοὺς ἐκεῖ*). As before the journey to Hermon, the teaching was doubtless chiefly parabolic.

2—12. QUESTION OF DIVORCE (Mt. xix. 3—9: cf. Mt. v. 31—32; Lc. xvi. 18).

2. προσελθόντες Φαρισαῖοι ἐπηρώτων κτλ.] With the resumption of the public teaching the Pharisees return to the attack (cf. vii. 5, viii. 11; Victor: ὡς τῆς ἀνοίας· φῶντο ἐπιστομίζειν αὐτὸν διὰ τῶν ζητημάτων, καίτοι γε ἥδη λαβόντες τεκμήριον τῆς δυνάμεως). But their present attitude marks an advance; for the first time they venture to test the Teacher's orthodoxy by a leading question (*πειράζοντες αὐτὸν*: cf. Mc. viii. 11). Φαρισαῖοι (anarthrous), individual members of the party; cf. ix. 14, γραμματεῖς. Οἱ Φ. occurs elsewhere in Mc. quite constantly, and has been substituted here in the R. T. The reference to the Pharisees is strangely omitted by D and a few good O. L. authorities.

εἰ ἔξεστιν ἀνδρὶ γυν. ἀπολῦσαι] The question appears to have been already answered during the Galilean Ministry (Mt. v. 31, 32), but possibly on an occasion when no Pharisees were present. They may have heard a rumour as to His view of the matter and wished to verify it, but it is unlikely that they hoped to draw Him in a moment of forgetfulness into a denial of His earlier teaching (Euth.: ἐνόμισαν ὅτι ἔπελάθετο...ἐὰν μὲν εἴπῃ ὅτι ἔξεστιν

ἀντιθήσουσιν ὅτι Καὶ πῶς προλαβὼν ἐδίδαξας ὅτι οὐκ ἔξεστιν; cf. Jerome in *Mt.*). Rather they expected a negative reply, and were prepared to turn it to their own purposes. It might be used to excite the anger of Antipas, who had put away his first wife and married again (cf. vi. 17, note); more probably their intention was simply to place Him in apparent opposition to Moses, who had permitted divorce. Mt.'s addition, κατὰ πᾶσαν αἵτιαν, turns the edge of the question, leaving an escape from the alternative of an unconditional 'yea' or 'nay': cf. the exception allowed in xix. 9 (*μὴ ἐπὶ πορνείᾳ*).

3. ὁ δὲ ἀποκριθεὶς εἶπεν κτλ.] The Lord anticipates the appeal to Moses, and asks for the Mosaic ruling upon the point. Since they recognised the authority of Moses, He will go to Moses in the first instance (cf. vii. 10). Mt., who seems to have missed this point, almost inverts the order of the dialogue, and places τί Μωυσῆς ἐνετείλατο in the mouth of the Pharisees, as an objection to the Lord's appeal to Gen. i. 27. For Μ. ἐνετείλατο cf. Deut. vi. 6, Jos. iv. 12.

4. ἐπέτρεψεν Μωυσῆς κτλ.] They refer to Deut. xxiv. 1 LXX, γράψει αὐτῇ βιβλίον ἀποστασίου καὶ δώσει εἰς τὰς χεῖρας αὐτῆς καὶ ἔξαποστελεῖ αὐτὴν ἐκ τῆς οἰκίας αὐτοῦ. The words, as the context shews, are simply permissive, the general purpose of the passage being to provide against a certain contingency which might follow the divorce. They recognise the validity of the husband's act, but do not

5 βιβλίον ἀποστασίου γράψαι καὶ ἀπολῦσαι. 5<sup>ό</sup>  
 δὲ Ἰησοῦς εἶπεν αὐτοῖς Πρὸς τὴν σκληροκαρδίαν  
 6 ύμῶν ἔγραψεν ύμῖν τὴν ἐντολὴν ταύτην· <sup>6</sup>ἀπὸ δὲ  
 ἀρχῆς κτίσεως ἀρσεν καὶ θῆλυ ἐποίησεν αὐτούς.

4 γράψαι] δουναι 6ι b δουναι γραψαι D dare scriptum c d ff q r<sup>vid</sup> (syr<sup>sin</sup>) |  
 απολυσαι]+αντην N 5 ο δε I.] και αποκριθεισ ο I. ADNXΓΠΣΦ min<sup>omnivid</sup>  
 lattv<sup>tp</sup> vg syrr<sup>sin pesh hcl</sup> arm go aeth | εγραψεν] επετρεψεν ΝΣΦ syr<sup>sin</sup>+Μωσης ΔΨ (90)  
 alpano (b) c (f) k syr<sup>sin</sup> Clem Al | ταντην]+απολυσαι τας γυναικας υμων aeth 6 om  
 κτισεως D min<sup>2</sup> b ff q syr<sup>sin pesh</sup> | αυτους] om D 86\* 219 b f ff k\* go aeth+o θεος  
 ADNXΓΠΣΦΨ min<sup>omnivid</sup> a b f k q vg syrr arm go aeth

create the situation. Βιβλίον ἀποστασίου (=תְּבִיבְלֵי בְּרַכָּה, Aq. β. ἀποκοπῆς, Symm. β. διακοπῆς), Vg. *libellus repudii*, “a libel of forsaking” (Wycliffe), “a testimonial of divorce-ment” (Tindale), occurs again in Isa. l. 1, Jer. iii. 8; cf. ἔγραψεν συνυγραφὴν βιβλίον συνοικήσεως (Tob. vii. 13, N). On the history of the word ἀποστ. see Kennedy, *Sources*, p. 121; unlike the Hebrew term it stamps the divorced wife as disloyal, cf. the classical ἀποστασίου δίκη (Dem. 790. 2, 940. 15). For γράψαι Mt. has δοῦναι; both acts were essential to a valid divorce. For a specimen of a Jewish ‘bill of divorce’ see J. Lightfoot on Mt. v. 31.

5. ὁ δὲ Ἰησοῦς κτλ.] The Lord does not deny that ‘Moses’ permitted divorce; command it he did not. The commandment (*τὴν ἐντολὴν ταύτην—ταύτην* is emphatic—this particular commandment) consisted of “regulations tending to limit it and preclude its abuse” (Driver). No such regulations would have been necessary but for the σκληροκαρδία which had been innate in the Hebrew people from the first (cf. Ezek. iii. 7, πᾶς ὁ οἶκος Ἰσραὴλ...σκληροκάρδιοι). The purpose of the legislation of Deut. l.c. was to check this disposition, not to give it head; and for the Pharisees to shelter themselves under the temporary recognition of a necessary evil was to confess that they had not outgrown the moral stature of

their fathers (*τὴν σκληρότητα*). Σκληροκαρδία (כְּבָלֶת תְּלִינָה), Aq. ἀκροβυστία καρδίας, Vg. *duritia cordis*, occurs in Deut. x. 16, Jer. iv. 4, Sir. xvi. 10; in ‘Mc.’ xvi. 14 it goes along with ἀπιστία. With this history the word must be taken to mean a condition of insensibility to the call of God, and not only the want of consideration for a fellow-creature which the present context suggests. But incapacity for comprehending this Divine love (Rom. ii. 4, 5) implies the absence of an unselfish love for men, and both result from the withering up of the moral nature under the power of a practical unbelief.

6. ἀπὸ δὲ ἀρχῆς κτίσεως κτλ.] From the temporary permission of divorce under the Deuteronomic law the Lord appeals to the principle enunciated in the original constitution of man. Cf. Hort, *Jud. Christianity*, p. 33; Victor: διὰ τῶν πραγμάτων ύμῖν ἐξ ἀρχῆς ὁ θεὸς ἐνομοθέτησε τὰ ἐναντία... εἰ δὲ Μωσέα προβάλλῃ, ἐγώ δὲ λέγω σοι τὸν Μωσέως δεσπότην. With ἀπὸ ἀρχῆς κτίσεως comp. xiii. 19 ἀπ' ἀρχῆς κτ. ἦν ἔκτισεν ὁ θεός, Rom. i. 20 ἀπὸ κτίσεως κόσμου, 2 Pet. iii. 4 (where the exact phrase occurs again); and see Dalman, *Worte*, i. p. 136. Κτίσις is (1) the act of creation (Rom. l. c.), (2) the totality of created things (cf. e.g. Sap. xix. 6, Judith ix. 12, xvi. 14, 3 Macc. ii. 2, 7, vi. 2, Rom. viii. 19 ff., Col. i. 15, 23 (cf. Lightfoot)),

7 ἔνεκεν τούτου καταλείψει ἄνθρωπος τὸν πατέρα 7  
αὐτοῦ καὶ τὴν μητέρα, 8 καὶ ἔσονται οἱ δύο εἰς σάρκα 8  
μίαν. ὡστε οὐκέτι εἰσὶν δύο ἀλλὰ μία σάρξ. 9 ὁ οὖν 9  
ὅ θεός συνέζευξεν ἄνθρωπος μὴ χωρίζετω. 10 καὶ εἰς 10

[7 ενεκεν] pr καὶ ειπεν DNΣ 13 28 69 124 346 1071 2<sup>pe</sup> alrauo b c ff q arm | om αυτον DM\*N | μητερα]+αυτον Η(D)Μ min<sup>pau</sup> a b c f ff syrr<sup>sin posh</sup> me go aeth (om ABCLNXΓΔΠΣΦΨ min<sup>pl</sup> k q vg syr<sup>hol</sup> arm) | ad fin vers add καὶ προσκολληθήσεται προς την γυναικα (vel τη γυναικι) αυτον (AC)D(LN)ΧΓ(Δ)Π(Σ)Φ min<sup>tere</sup> omn latte<sup>exc fort</sup> k syrr<sup>pesth hol</sup> (arm) me aeth (om ΚΒΨ 48<sup>ev</sup> syr<sup>sin</sup> go) 8 σαρξ μια ΗΑCΦΚΜ<sup>2</sup>ΥΓΠΦ  
6ο4 al<sup>nonn</sup> 9 om ουν D ff k\* 10 εις την οικιαν ΗBDLΔΨ min<sup>pau</sup> b] εν τη οικια ACNXΓΠΣΦ min<sup>pl</sup> a f ff<sup>rid</sup> k q r vg me go

(3) a creature (Rom. viii. 39), 2 Cor. v. 17 (?), Heb. iv. 13. The senses run one into the other, so that it is sometimes difficult to decide between them, but (1) appears to predominate here. On the other hand in Apoc. iii. 14, where Christ speaks of Himself as ἡ ἀρχὴ τῆς κτίσεως τοῦ θεοῦ, (2) is to be preferred.

ἀρσεν καὶ θῆλυ ἐποίησεν αὐτούς] A verbal citation from Gen. i. 27, LXX. The subject of the verb is ὁ θεός (Gen. l.c.); Mt. supplies ὁ κτίσας.

7—8. ἔνεκεν τούτου κτλ.] Another nearly verbal citation from the LXX. (Gen. ii. 24), omitting καὶ προσκολληθήσεται τῇ γυναικὶ αὐτοῦ, which however is supplied by Mt. and finds a place in a great majority of the MSS. and versions of Mc. The passage is cited again in 1 Cor. vi. 16 (partly), and in Eph. v. 31 (cf. Ps. Clem. 2 Cor. 14), where there are some interesting variants.

8. καὶ ἔσονται οἱ δύο κτλ.] On εἴναι εἰς (ἢ πιπή) see WM., p. 229; BDB., p. 226. "Ωστε with ind. introduces an actual consequence which follows from the foregoing words, as in ii. 28, Rom. vii. 12, xiii. 2, 1 Cor. iii. 7, xi. 27. Μία σάρξ: cf. 1 Cor. vi. 16, ἐν σώμα. But in the intention of the Creator the union is not carnal or corporeal only; Origen in Mt.: ὅπου γε δύμόνοις καὶ συμφωνίᾳ καὶ ἀμονίᾳ ἀνδρός ἔστι πρὸς γυναικα, τοῦ μὲν ὡς ἄρχοντος τῆς δὲ

πειθομένης τῷ Αὐτός σου κυριεύσει, δλλθῶς ἔστιν εἰπεῖν τῶν τοιούτων τό Οὐκέτι εἰσὶ δύο.

9. ὁ οὖν ὁ θεός συνέζευξεν κτλ.] Tindale: "what God hath coupled, let not man separat." In Genesis the words ἔνεκεν τούτου κτλ. are ascribed to Adam, not to the Creator (Mt. ὁ κτίσας...εἰπεν). But they point to a Divine purpose already revealed in the creation of mutually complementary sexes and in the blessing pronounced upon their union (Gen. i. 27 f.), and these constitute a Divine sanction that renders lawful wedlock indissoluble at the discretion of the individual (ἄνθρωπος, cf. Jo. iii. 4). For συνζευγνύαι cf. Ezech. i. 11, 23, Jos. ant. i. 19. 10; and for χωρίζειν in this sense, 1 Cor. vii. 10 ff. This verse was introduced into the English Form of Matrimony in 1548, but it had previously stood in the Gospel of the *Ordo sponsalium*.

For a perverse use of this passage by certain Gnostics of the second century see the letter of Ptolemaeus to Flora in Epiph. haer. 33. 3 ff.

10. καὶ εἰς τὴν οικίαν κτλ.] The incident was at an end, so far as the Pharisees were concerned; but it led afterwards to a private conversation between the Lord and the Twelve (cf. vii. 17, ix. 28). Mt. overlooks the change of surroundings, and represents the Lord as still addressing the

τὴν οἰκίαν πάλιν οἱ μαθηταὶ περὶ τούτου ἐπηρώτων  
τοῦ αὐτόν. Ἔκαὶ λέγει αὐτοῖς Ὡς ἀν ἀπολύσῃ τὴν  
γυναικα αὐτοῦ καὶ γαμήσῃ ἄλλην μοιχᾶται ἐπ' αὐτήν·

ιο οἱ μαθηταὶ + αὐτοῦ ADNXGPIΣΦ min<sup>pl</sup> b f ff<sup>vid</sup> q vg syrr go aeth + καὶ ιδιαν  
c k | περὶ τούτου ABCLMNΧΓΔΣΨ 6οι al<sup>nonn</sup> a syrr<sup>sin pesh</sup> me aeth] π. τούτων Κ π.  
τοῦ αὐτοῦ EFGHSUVIIΦ min<sup>pl</sup> b fq vg syr<sup>hel</sup> arm<sup>vid</sup> go π. τοῦ αὐτ. λογου (vel π. τούτου)  
D (c) f (ff) k om K min<sup>8</sup> | επηρωτησαν ADNXGPIΣΦ min<sup>pl</sup> latt<sup>vid</sup> II—12 ord  
verss mut syr<sup>sin</sup> II om επ Clem Al om επ αυτην i 28 2<sup>pe</sup> alpauo syrr<sup>sin pesh</sup> arm

Pharisees (λέγω δὲ ὑμῖν). Εἰς τὴν οἰκίαν, when they had entered the house (cf. ix. 33, and WM., p. 517; such a conjectural addition as εἰσελθόντα, εἰσελθόντος, or εἰσελθόντων αὐτῶν is wholly unnecessary) where they were lodging, probably in one of the villages on the road to Jerusalem (Lc. ix. 51 f., x. 38, xiii. 22); opposed as in ix. 33 to ἐν τῇ ὁδῷ understood in x. 1 f. Πάλιν ...ἐπηρώτων, they repeated the question which had been put by the Pharisees (v. 2). The answer was explicit and authoritative, as that of a Master speaking to an inner circle of disciples.

II. ὃς ἀν ἀπολύσῃ κτλ.] Of simple divorce the Lord has spoken sufficiently; it is a dissolution of a Divinely constituted union. He deals now with the case of marriage after divorce, and pronounces it to be adultery. *Μοιχᾶται* ἐπ' αὐτήν, Vg. *adulterium committit super eam*, “commits adultery in reference to her,” sc. τὴν ἀπολελυμένην (not, as Victor, ἐπὶ δευτέραν γην ἐπεισάγει). *Μοιχᾶσθαι* is used by the LXX. (Jer.<sup>6</sup> Ezech.<sup>3</sup>) absolutely or with the acc. of the object and with either of the guilty parties for subject (Jer. xxxvi. (xxix.) 23; Ezech. xvi. 32); in the N. T., outside the present context (Mt., Mc.), it is used only in Mt. v. 32<sup>b</sup>, the ordinary practice being to write *μοιχεύειν* of the man, and *μοιχεύεσθαι* (pass.) of the woman (Mt. v. 28, 32), as in class. Gk.; the LXX. uses *μοιχεύεσθαι* (mid.) of the man in Lev. xx. 10 bis. Clement of Alexandria, who reads μ. αὐτήν,

explains (*strom.* ii. 23): *τουτέστιν, ἀναγκάζει μοιχευθῆναι*. On the construction (ὅς ἂν (or ἔαν) ἀπολύσῃ... μοιχᾶται) see Burton, § 312, and for ἐπ' αὐτήν ‘in reference to her,’ and so ‘to her detriment,’ cf. vi. 34, ix. 22, xiv. 48.

In both v. 32 and xix. 9, Mt. qualifies ὃς ἀν ἀπολύσῃ τ. γ. αὐτοῦ by adding *παρεκτὸς λόγου πορνείας* or *μὴ ἐπὶ πορνείᾳ*. If we may assume (cf. v. 12, note *ad fin.*) that these words formed part of the Lord's judgement on one at least of the occasions when it was pronounced, He allows a solitary exception to the indissolubility of marriage, viz. in the case of unfaithfulness. *Πορνεία*, though it is to be distinguished from *μοιχεία* when the two are named in the same context (vii. 21), can scarcely in this connexion refer to an act of sin committed before marriage; the word is used as in Hos. ii. 5 (7) ἐξεπόρνευσεν ἡ μήτηρ αὐτῶν, Am. vii. 17 ἡ γυνὴ σου ἐν τῇ πόλει πορνεύσει. This then is the only ἀσχημον πρᾶγμα (Deut. xxiv. 1) which still justifies, under the law of Christ, the use of divorce. Whether in such a case the words added in Mt. permit or tolerate re-marriage is a question of much difficulty, which belongs to the interpretation of the first Gospel. The post-Christian history of the subject is treated by H. M. Luckock, *History of Marriage* (1894), and O. D. Watkins, *Holy Matrimony* (1895); for contemporary and later Jewish opinion upon the conditions of a lawful divorce comp. Jos. *ant.* iv,

<sup>12</sup> καὶ ἐὰν αὐτὴ ἀπολύσασα τὸν ἄνδρα αὐτῆς γαμήσῃ 12  
ἄλλον, μοιχάται.

<sup>13</sup> Καὶ προσέφερον αὐτῷ παιδία ἵνα αὐτῶν ἀψηται. 13

12 εαν αυτη...αλλον] εαν γυνη εξελθη απο του ανδρος και αλλον γαμηση D (13) 28  
(69) 124 346 (2<sup>o</sup>e) b (c ff) arm | αυτη απολυσασα] γυνη απολυση...και ΑΝΧΓΠΣΦ  
min<sup>pl</sup> f (lk) vg syrr<sup>sin pesh</sup> go | γαμηση αλλον NBC\*DLΔΨ i 13 28 69 124 346 al<sup>parac</sup>]  
γαμηθη αλλω AC<sup>2</sup>ΝΧΓΠΣΦ min<sup>pl</sup> | μοιχαται] (similiter) et qui dimissam (a viro)  
ducit moechatur (a) b f (ff g)

8. 23, J. Lightfoot on Mt. v., Edersheim, *Life*, ii., p. 332 ff., Schürer II. ii. 123, Driver on Deut. *l. c.*, and *Marriage* in Hastings, *D. B.*, and *Encycl. Bibl.*.

12. καὶ ἐὰν αὐτὴ ἀπολύσασα κτλ.]

Mc. only. For ἀπολύειν used in reference to the action of the wife see Diod. XII. 18 διωρθώθη νόμος ὁ διδοὺς ἔξοντιαν τῇ γυναικὶ ἀπολύειν τὸν ἄνδρα. Similarly in I Cor. VII. 12 f. ἀφίεναι is used indiscriminately of both parties. The divorce of the husband by the wife was possible under both Greek and Roman Law (see Plutarch, *Alc.* 8, Gaius i. 127, cited by Stanley on I Cor. VII. 13, and other reff. in Wetstein *ad loc.*); and St Paul (I Cor. *l. c.* γυνὴ...μὴ ἀφίετω τὸν ἄνδρα) distinctly recognises the legal right of Christian women at Corinth to leave their husbands on the mere point of incompatibility of religious belief, though he prohibits them from using this right. J. Lightfoot (on I Cor.) quotes a Rabbinical opinion that the same privilege was conceded to married women by Jewish custom; on the other hand Josephus (*ant.* XV. 7. 10), writing of Salome, says quite positively: πέμπει...γραμμάτιον ἀπολυομένη τὸν γάμον οὐ κατὰ τοὺς Ἰουδαίους νόμους. See however Burkitt, *G. H.* p. 99 ff. In any case it is unnecessary to regard this view as "derived from an Hellenic amplification of the tradition" (Meyer), a hypothesis which is excluded by the general character of the second Gospel. In His private instruction to the Apostles, as Peter remembered, the Lord completed His teaching by a reference to the prac-

tice of the Pagan and Hellenised circles which must have been already familiar to the Twelve, and with which they would shortly be called to deal. See Burkitt in *J. Th. St.*, v. p. 628. For the sequel see Mt. xix. 10—12.

#### 13—16. BLESSING OF CHILDREN (Mt. xix. 13—15, Lc. xviii. 15—17).

13. καὶ προσέφερον αὐτῷ παιδία] This incident follows with singular fitness after the Lord's assertions of the sanctity of married life. Mt. regards the sequence as strictly chronological (*τότε προσηρέχθησαν κτλ.*), and Mc. appears to locate the arrival of the children at the house where the Lord delivered to the Twelve His judgement on marriages after divorce (cf. x. 10, 17). Lc., whose narrative here rejoins that of Mt. and Mc., has no note of time or place, for Lc. xvii. 11 cannot be taken as a guide; but the fact that from this point the three Synoptists proceed in almost unbroken order to the history of the Passion may suggest that these events belong to the last journey from Ephraim to Jericho and Jerusalem. Προσφέρειν is repeatedly used of the ministry of friends who brought their sick to the Lord, Mt. iv. 24, viii. 16, ix. 2 (Mc. ii. 4), 32, xii. 22, xiv. 35; young children needed the same service, and now at length received it. It was a sign of the growing reverence for the great Rabbi when even infants (*καὶ τὰ βρέφη*, Lc.) were brought to Him for His blessing. Παιδίον, though used of a child twelve years old (v. 39, 42), could be applied to an infant

14 οἱ δὲ μαθηταὶ ἐπετίμησαν αὐτοῖς. <sup>14</sup> ἴδων δὲ ὁ Ἰησοῦς ἡγανάκτησεν καὶ εἶπεν αὐτοῖς Ἀφετε τὰ

<sup>13</sup> επετίμησαν ΝΒCLΔΨ] επετιμων ADNXΓΠΣΦ min<sup>omnivd</sup> latt | αυτοις ΝΒCLΔΨ  
c k me] τοις προσφερουσιν (αυτα) ADNX(Γ)ΠΣΦ min<sup>fereo omni</sup> a b f ff q vg syrr<sup>sin pesh hel</sup>  
arm go aeth 14 και]+επετιμησας 1 13 28 69 124 346 2<sup>pe</sup> syr<sup>sin hel(mg)</sup> (arm)

eight days old (Gen. xvii. 12); whilst βρέφος may be the unborn fetus (Lc. i. 41, 44), the babe in its cradle (Lc. ii. 12, 16) or at the breast (4 Macc. iv. 25), or the child who is learning his first lessons at his mother's knee (2 Tim. iii. 15). Those who were brought to Jesus were doubtless of various ages, from the infant in arms to the elder children still under the mother's care. The Lord Himself had passed through all the stages of human immaturity (Iren. ii. 22. 4), and this group of children with their friends would recall His own experience at Nazareth. The youngest were not too young for His benediction; Tertullian's "veniant ergo dum adolescant, veniant dum discant, dum quo veniant docentur" (*de bapt.* 18) strikes a false note which has been taken up and exaggerated in later times. Contrast Victor: τὸ τῆς φρονήσεως ἐνδεὲς οὐ κωλυτικὸν τῆς προσόδου.

ἴνα αὐτῶν ἀψηται] Similarly Lc. (ἀπτηται); Mt. ἵνα τὰς χεῖρας ἐπιθῇ αὐτοῖς καὶ προσεύξηται—a commentary on the briefer original. On the conjunctive cf. WM., p. 358 ff. The custom of laying on of hands with prayer upon children for the purpose of benediction (*εἰς χειροθεσίαν εὐλογίας*, Clem. Al. *paeid.* i. 12) finds its archetype in Gen. xlvi. 14, 15 (see Hastings, *D. B.* iii. p. 84 f.). Such benedictions, it seems, were commonly obtained by parents for their children from the ἀρχισυνάγωγοι (Buxtorf *de synag.* p. 138); and here was One greater than any local synagogue-ruler. But perhaps the purpose of the friends was simply to secure a blessing by contact with the wonder-working Prophet (i. 41, viii. 22, cf. iii. 10, v. 28,

vi. 56). Cf. Orig. *in Mt.*: τάχα δὲ καὶ...τὸ βούλημα τῶν προσφερόντων τοιοῦτον ἦν, διαλαβόντων ὅτι οὐχ οἶον τε ἦν, ἀψαμένου Ἰησοῦ βρεφῶν ἡ παιδίων καὶ δύναμιν διὰ τῆς ἀφῆς ἐναφιέντος αὐτοῖς, σύμπτωμα ἡ δαιμόνιον ἡ τι ἀψ-ασθαι οὖν φθάσας ὁ Ἰησοῦς ἤψατο. Bengel [ἴνα]...ἀψηται: "modestum petitum."

οἱ δὲ μαθηταὶ ἐπετίμησαν αὐτοῖς] Vg. *comm in abantur*; Wycliffe, "thretenyden to men offringe"; Tindale, "rebuked"; cf. ix. 38 f., x. 48 f. The Lord, who was in the house, was approached through the Twelve or one or more of the senior members of that body (cf. Jo. xii. 21 f.); and they discouraged the attempt as idle or, more probably, as derogatory to the Master's dignity. Victor: τίνος δὲ ἔνεκεν ἀπεσόβουν τὰ παιδία οἱ μαθηταὶ; ἀξιώματος ἔνεκεν. Thph.: νομίζοντες ἀνάξιον τοῦτο εἶναι τοῦ χριστοῦ.

14. ἴδων δὲ ὁ Ἰησοῦς κτλ.] From the house Jesus saw what was happening, and His displeasure was aroused (ἡγανάκτησεν, Mc. only). Indignation is attributed to Him on no other occasion, but it is recognised by St Paul as under certain circumstances a Christian feeling (2 Cor. vii. 11 τὸ κατὰ θεὸν λυπηθῆναι πόσην κατειργάσατο ὑμῖν...ἀγανάκτησιν); cf. 4 Macc. iv. 21, ἡγανάκτησα τὴν θείαν δίκην. That the nature of His kingdom should still be misunderstood and His work hindered by the Twelve was just cause for indignant surprise. Bengel: "ἡγα-νάκτησε[ν]... propter impedimentum amori suo a discipulis oblatum."

ἀφετε τὰ παιδία κτλ.] 'Let the children come to Me, hinder them not.' Both in Mt. (ἀφετε...καὶ μὴ κωλύετε. ἐλθεῖν) and Lc. (ἀφετε...ἔρ-

παιδία ἔρχεσθαι πρὸς μέ, μὴ κωλύετε αὐτά· τῶν γὰρ τοιούτων ἐστὶν οἱ βασιλεία τοῦ θεοῦ. <sup>15</sup> ἀμὴν λέγω 15 ὑμῖν “Ος ἀν μὴ δέξηται τὴν βασιλείαν τοῦ θεοῦ ὡς παιδίον, οὐ μὴ εἰσέλθῃ εἰς αὐτήν. <sup>16</sup> καὶ ἐναγκαλισά- 16 μενος αὐτὰ κατευλόγει, τιθεὶς τὰς χεῖρας ἐπ’ αὐτά. ¶ L

<sup>14</sup> παιδία] παιδαρια D\* | μη] pr και ΝΑCDLM<sup>2</sup> I 13 alsatmu latt syr<sup>sin pesh hel</sup> arm go aeth 15 ου μη...αυτην] ου μη εις αυτ. εισελευσεται D 16 εναγκαλισαμενος] προσκαλεσαμενος D convitans b convocans c d f ff q r syr<sup>sin</sup> | κατευλογει NBC(L)ΝΔ(Ψ) 2<sup>ρο</sup> αλμονη] ευλογει ADEHK\*MSUVX(G)ΠΣΦ min<sup>pl</sup> | τιθεις τας χειρας επ αυτα] επιθει τ. χ. επ αυτα και (ante κατευλ. vel ευλ.) D b c ff k q arm

χεσθαι...καὶ μὴ κ.) the words assume a later form; in Mc. we hear the Lord's indignant call, as it startles the disciples in the act of dismissing the party. "Αφετε...μὴ κωλύετε: "an expressive *asyndeton*" (Bruce). With μὴ κωλύετε cf. ix. 39 n. The children are regarded as themselves coming and being hindered; cf. the Office for Public Baptism: "we call upon Thee for this infant that he, coming, &c." Τῶν γὰρ τοιούτων κτλ. Cf. Dalman, *Worte*, i. p. 104. Origen: *τοιούτων ὅποια ἐστὶ τὰ παιδία*. Victor: οὐ γὰρ ‘τούτων’ εἶπεν ἀλλὰ ‘τῶν τοιούτων’, ἐπειδὴ πρόσεστι καὶ τὸ τῆς φρονήσεως ἐνδεὲ τοῖς παισίν...ἴνα τῇ προαιρέσει ταῦτα ἐργαζώμεθα ἢ τῇ φύσει τὰ παιδία ἔχει. Cf. Ambrose in *Lc.*: "non aetas praefertur aetati; alioquin obesset adolescere"; Jerome in *Mt.*: "talium, ut ostenderet non aetatem regnare sed mores." That this teaching is latent in the words the next verse shews; but it is their immediate purpose to assign a reason (*γάρ*) for the Lord's command. To exclude children from the Kingdom of God is to exclude those who of all human beings are naturally least unfitted to enter it, and whose attitude is the type of the converted life (*Mt. xviii. 3*).

15. ἀμὴν λέγω ὑμῖν κτλ.] The Lord confirms with His solemn ἀμὴν (cf. iii. 28, note) the final lesson of His ministry in Galilee. Mt., who has preserved the words on that occasion (*Mt. xviii.*

3), omits them here; but the repetition was clearly necessary under the circumstances. Δέχεσθαι elsewhere has for its object a person (ἐμέ, ὑμᾶς, ix. 37), a message (*τὸν λόγον*, *Lc. viii. 13*, *Acts xi. 1*, *Jas. i. 21*), or a gift (*2 Cor. vi. 1*, *xi. 4*); the kingdom embraces all these; to receive it is to receive Christ, the Gospel, and the grace of the Spirit. Δέξηται: Bengel, "offertur enim." For the phrase εἰσελθεῖν εἰς τὴν βασ. τ. θεοῦ cf. ix. 47, x. 23, 25, *Jo. iii. 5*; with ὡς παιδίον cf. *Ps. cxxx. (cxxxi.) 2*, ὡς ἀπογεγαλακτισμένον, and for an early Christian use of the words see Herm. *sim. ix. 29*, οἱ πιστεύσαντες...ὡς νήπια βρέφη εἰσίν, οἵς οὐδεμίᾳ κακίᾳ ἀναβαίνει ἐπὶ τὴν καρδίαν, οὐδὲ ἔγγωσαν τί ἐστι πονηρία, ἀλλὰ πάντοτε ἐν νηπιότητι διέμειναν. It is, however, not so much the innocence of young children which is in view, as their spirit of trustful simplicity.

16. ἐναγκαλισάμενος κτλ.] He had already called them to Him (*Lc. προσεκαλέσατο*), and as they came up in succession, each was taken in His arms and blessed (*κατευλόγει*). For *ἐναγκαλισάμενος* see ix. 36, note; the repetition of the characteristic act would perhaps recall to the minds of the disciples the forgotten teaching of the last days at Capernaum. *Κατευλογένιν*, ἀπ. λεγ. in the N. T., occurs in *Tob. xi. 1*, 17, and in *Plutarch*; as in *καταγελάν* (v. 40), and *καταφιλεῖν*

17 Καὶ ἐκπορευομένου αὐτοῦ εἰς ὁδὸν προσδραμὼν εἰς καὶ γονυπετήσας αὐτὸν ἐπηρώτα αὐτόν Διδάσκαλε

17 προσδραμῶν εἰς (πρ. τις 604)] ιδου τις πλουσίος προσδρ. ΑΚ(Μ)Π 13 28 69 124 736\* 1071 2<sup>ρω</sup> alnonn [syr<sup>hel(mg)</sup>] arm | γονυπετων D 28 69 124 346 | αυτον] + λεγων 13 69 124 346 2<sup>ρω</sup> alpano a b c k syrr arm me go Clem Al

(xiv. 45), the force of *κατά* seems to be intensive—He blessed them fervently, in no perfunctory way, but with emphasis, as those who were capable of a more unreserved benediction than their elders. Instead of the mere touch for which the friends had asked, He laid his hands on them (*τιθεὶς τὰς χεῖρας ἐπ' αὐτά*, Mt. ἐπιθεὶς *τὰς χ. αὐτοῖς*) with the words of blessing. “Plus fecit quam rogatus erat” (Bengel): cf. the Gelasian collect (Wilson, p. 228): “abundantia pie-tatis tuae et merita supplicum excedis et vota.”

In the N. African Church this incident seems to have been urged in support of Infant Baptism as early as the time of Tertullian (cf. v. 13, note). Mt. xix. 13 ff. occurs as the Gospel of the Baptismal Office in an *ordo* of the 12th century (Muratori, *De ant. eccl. rit.*, i. p. 44), and was used as such in the English Church until 1549, when the more impressive and suggestive narrative of Mc. was substituted by Cranmer and his colleagues.

17—22. THE RICH MAN WHO WANTED BUT ONE THING (Mt. xix. 16—22, Lc. xviii. 18—23).

17. ἐκπορευομένου αὐτοῦ εἰς ὁδὸν] Mt. (xix. 15) ἐπορεύθη ἐκεῖθεν. The incident occurred when the Lord had left the house, and was beginning His journey again. For εἰς ὁδὸν cf. vi. 8, note, and contrast εἰς τὴν ὁδὸν (xi. 8).

The text of Clement of Alexandria throughout this context has been carefully examined by P. M. Barnard, in *Texts and Studies*, v. 5, q. v.

προσδραμῶν εἰς κτλ.] He was an ἀρχων (Lc.) and yet a νεανίσκος (Mt.). “Ἀρχων is a term of some latitude; it is used by Mt. (ix. 18) for an ἀρχισυν-

άγωνος (Mc.) or ἀρχων τῆς συναγωγῆς (Lc.), and by Lc. for a chief Pharisee (xiv. 1, cf. Syr.<sup>cu</sup> in xviii. 18); in Acts iv. 5 τοὺς ἀρχοντας=τ. ἀρχιερεῖς; Jo. (e.g. iii. 1, vii. 26 ff.) apparently understands by ἀρχων any member of the great Sanhedrin. The word passed into Rabbinic (אַרְכּוֹנָם, Arkanon, Dalman, Gr. p. 148 f.) as a general term for a great man or prince (cf. Westcott on Jo. iii. 1). If it is used by Lc. here in this looser sense no difficulty arises from the youth of this ἀρχων; his large property (v. 22) sufficiently accounts for his local eminence, not to urge that νεανίσκος is a relative term which may be used of any age between boyhood and middle life (Lob., *Phryne*, p. 213; cf. Diog. Laert. 8. 10). Προσδραμῶν (Mt. προσελθών), cf. ix. 15; for εἰς (Mt., Mc.) ‘one,’=τις (Lc.) cf. Mt. viii. 19, ix. 18, Apoc. viii. 13, ix. 13, xix. 17 (WM., p. 145, BDB, s.v. ἄρχον (3)). Γονυπετήσας αὐτόν: cf. i. 40, note. The ἀρχισυνάγων (v. 22) also prostrated himself; but the homage paid by this ἀρχων is more remarkable because he is not a suppliant for material help. In his eagerness to obtain spiritual advice he shews no less zeal than if he had sought the greatest of temporal benefits.

διδάσκαλε ἀγαθέ, τί ποιήσω] Similarly Lc. (δ. ἀ, τί ποιήσας...); Mt., who throughout the story follows another tradition, changes the point of both question and answer (διδάσκαλε, τί ἀγαθὸν ποιήσω...τί με ἐρωτᾶς περὶ τοῦ ἀγαθοῦ;). Cf. Orig. in Mt. t. xv.: ὁ μὲν οὖν Ματθαῖος ὡς περὶ ἀγαθοῦ ἔργου ἐρωτηθέντος τοῦ σωτῆρος...ἀνέγραψεν· ὁ δὲ Μᾶρκος καὶ Λουκᾶς φασι τὸν σωτῆρα εἰρηκέναι Τί με λέγεις ἀγαθόν; The change may be due to the shifting

ἀγαθέ, τί ποιήσω ἵνα ζωὴν αἰώνιον κληρονομήσω;  
<sup>18</sup> ὁ δὲ Ἰησοῦς εἶπεν αὐτῷ Τί με λέγεις ἀγαθόν; οὐδεὶς 18

17 ποιησω ινα] ποιησας Ψ

of the place of the adjective in the original—הַמְבָרֵךְ has become מִבְרָךְ (cf. Delitzsch *ad loc.*, and Resch, *Paralleltexte zu Lc.*, p. 494). Resch endeavours to shew that both forms of the answer may have sprung from לִפְתָּחָה לִפְתָּחָה; see also J. T. Marshall, *Exp. III. iv.* p. 384, vi. 88, where the corresponding Aramaic is given. Ἀγαθέ is probably sincere, not a fulsome compliment, still less intended for irony. But it implies an imperfect standard of moral goodness, since the speaker regarded the Lord as a merely human teacher; cf. Ambrose: “in portione dixit bonum, non in universitate.”

ἵνα ζωὴν αἰώνιον κληρονομεῖν.] No more appropriate question could have been put to our Lord; Clem. Al. *quis dives 6 ήρώτηται...ερώτημα καταλληλότατον αὐτῷ*, ή ζωὴ περὶ ζωῆς, δ σωτῆρ περὶ σωτηρίας. It was put moreover by an earnest enquirer; contrast Lc. x. 25, where the same question is asked by a νομικός as a test of orthodoxy (*ἐκπειράζων αὐτόν*). Κληρονομεῖν (שְׁרֵךְ, sometimes לְפָנָי) τὴν γῆν (cf. Mt. v. 5) is a phrase which runs through the O.T.; but a more spiritual conception of the inheritance of the just finds a place in the later books, e.g. Sir. iv. 13 (κλ. δόξαν), xxxvii. 26 (κλ. πίστιν), Pss. Sal. xii. 8 (κλ. ἐπαγγελίας), xiv. 7 (κλ. ζωὴν ἐν εὐφροσύνῃ); cf. Philo, *quis rer. div. heres*. The use of the term ζωὴ αἰώνιος first appears in connexion with the hope of the Resurrection, cf. Dan xii. 2 (מְלֹא עַמּוֹ), Pss. Sal. iii. 16, Enoch xxxvii. 4, xl. 9, lviii. 3, 2 Macc. vii. 9. In adopting these words into its creed the Gospel transfigured their meaning; Christ had ρήματα ζωῆς αἰώνιοις (Jo. vi. 68) which

were unknown to the Pharisees. But the term itself, it is important to remember, was of O. T. growth and familiar to the Pharisaic Scribes.

18. τί με λέγεις ἀγαθόν;] The emphasis is on ἀγαθόν, not on the pronoun. The Lord begins by compelling the enquirer to consider his own words. He had used ἀγαθέ lightly, in a manner which revealed the poverty of his moral conceptions. From that word Christ accordingly starts. Clem. Al. l.c. *κληθεὶς δὲ ἀγαθός, ἀπ' αὐτοῦ πρώτου τοῦ ρήματος τούτου τὸ ἐνδόσιμον λαβὼν ἐντεῦθεν καὶ τῆς διδασκαλίας ἀρχεται, ἐπιστρέφων τὸν μαθητὴν ἐπὶ τὸν θεὸν τὸν ἀγαθὸν καὶ πρώτον καὶ μόνον ζωῆς αἰώνιον ταμίαν, ἦν δὲ δίδωσιν ήμῖν παρ' ἔκεινον λαβών*. The man is summoned to contemplate the absolute ἀγαθωσύνη which is the attribute of God, and to measure himself by that supreme standard. Viewed in this light the words are seen not to touch the question of our Lord's human sinlessness or of His oneness with the Father; on the other hand they are consistent with the humility which led Him as Man to refrain from asserting His equality with God (Phil. ii. 6); cf. Athan. c. *Arian.* iii. 7, εἰ... δὲ νιὸς οὐχ ἔαντὸν ἀλλὰ τὸν πατέρα ἐδόξασε, λέγων μὲν τῷ προσερχομένῳ Τί με λέγεις ἀγαθόν; οὐδεὶς ἀγαθὸς εἰ μὴ εἰς ὁ θεός...πολὺ ἐναντιότης; Hilary surely misreads the Lord's words when he says: “nomine bonitatis abstinuit...quod congrua in eum se-veritate iudex esset usurus.” Only the supremely Good can be the perfect Judge. To Christ both characters belong, but this was not the moment for revealing Himself in either. See next note.

οὐδεὶς ἀγαθὸς εἰ μὴ εἰς ὁ θεός] Mt. εἰς ἐστιν ὁ ἀγαθός. Justin (*dial.* 101),

19 ἀγαθὸς εἰ μὴ εἴς ὁ θεός. 19 τὰς ἐντολὰς οἶδας Μὴ φονεύσῃς, μὴ μοιχεύσῃς, μὴ κλέψῃς, μὴ ψευδομαρτυρήσῃς, μὴ ἀποστερήσῃς, τίμα τὸν πατέρα σου καὶ

18 εἰς οὐ θεος] μονος εἰς θεός D (b) solus deus a ff εἰς οὐ θεός ο πατήρ Or<sup>2</sup> arm<sup>odd</sup>  
 19 μη φον. μη μοιχ. μη κλεψ. Ν<sup>a</sup> (om μη μοιχ. Ν\*) BCΔΨ min<sup>perpau</sup> syr<sup>sin</sup> me] μη μοιχ.  
 μη φον. μη κλεψ. ΑΝΧΠΣΦ min<sup>pl</sup> a b d ff q r<sup>vid</sup> vg syr<sup>hcl</sup> arm go aeth Clem Al μη  
 μοιχ. μη κλεψ. μη φον. syr<sup>resh</sup> μη μοιχ. μη πορνευσης μη κλεψ. D k μη μοιχ. μη κλεψ.  
 μη πορν. Γ μη φον. μη μοιχ. μη πορν. μη κλεψ. e | om μη φον. I 118 209 300 f |  
 om μη αποστερ. B\*ΚΔΠΨ I 28 69\* 118 209 al<sup>nonn</sup> syr<sup>sin</sup> arm Clem Al

Marcion, the Clementines (*hom. xviii.* 3), and Ephrem (*ev. conc. exp.*), add in Mt. ὁ πατήρ (*μον*) ὁ ἐν τοῖς οὐρανοῖς, and ὁ πατήρ is read by Origen (*in Jo. t. i. 35*); see WH., *Notes*, p. 14. Ephrem's commentary is interesting: "et tu, Domine, nonne es bonus...et adventus tuus nonne erat adventus bonitatis? Sed 'ego,' ait, 'non a me ipso veni.' Et opera tua nonne sunt bona? 'Pater meus,' ait, 'qui est in me, ipse operatur haec opera.'" The Son, as Origen points out (*in Jo. t. xiii. 25, 36*), is the εἰκὼν τῆς ἀγαθότητος τοῦ πατρός, and not, *qua* Son, τὸ αὐτοάγαθον. Hence He disclaims the title ἀγαθός, when it is offered to Him without regard to His oneness with the Father, and refers it to the Source of Godhead (μὴ ἐνεγκόντι μηδὲ τὴν ἀγαθός προσηγορίαν τὴν κυρίαν καὶ ἀληθῆ καὶ τελέαν παραδέξασθαι, αὐτῷ προσφερομένην, ἀλλὰ ἀναφέροντι αὐτήν εὐχαρίστως τῷ πατρὶ). Similarly Bengel: "non in se requiescebat, sed se penitus ad Patrem referebat." On the other hand Ambrose rightly pleads: "si a Deo Filius non excipitur, utique nec a bono Christus excipitur...cum bonus Pater, utique et ille bonus qui omnia habet quae Pater habet"—"bonus ex bono," as Ephrem well says. For Gnostic perversions of this text see Iren. i. 20. 2, Hippol. *haer.* v. 7, vii. 31, Clem. *hom. l.c.*, Epiph. *haer.* 33. 7. On the relation of the doctrine of the Divine goodness to the harder facts of life see Origen *in Mt. ad loc.*

For O.T. anticipations of the Lord's saying cf. I Sam. ii. 2, Ps. cxviii. 1 ff.

19. τὰς ἐντολὰς οἶδας κτλ.] Having fixed the standard of goodness the Lord proceeds to rehearse the Divine precepts which were regarded by the Jew as the highest expression of the θελημα ἀγαθόν (Rom. xii. 2), and as the source of all that is good in man (cf. Weber, *Jüd. Theologie*, p. 20). Mt. paraphrases εἰ δὲ θελεῖς εἰς τὴν ζωὴν εἰσελθεῖν, τίρει τὰς ἐντολάς, and makes the enumeration which follows an answer to a second question (*ποιας;*). The Lord cites only the commandments which regulate man's duty to his neighbour, probably because they admit of a relatively simple application to the conduct of life. He cites these in the order vi., vii., viii., ix. (x.), v. (Mt., Mc.) or, according to Lc., vii., vi., viii., ix., v.; Mc.'s order (on the vv. II. cf. WH., *Notes*, p. 25) is that of cod. A and of the M. T. in Exod. xx. and Deut. v., whilst Lc.'s agrees with that of cod. B in placing vii. before vi. (cf. Rom. l.c., Jas. ii. 11, Philo, *de x orac.* 10, *de spec. legg.* iii. 2, and on the other hand, Jos. *ant.* iii. 5. 5; and see *Intr. to the O. T. in Gk.*, p. 234). Μὴ ἀποστερήσῃς (Mc. only) seems to be derived from Exod. xxi. 10, Deut. xxiv. 14 (A), cf. Sir. iv. 1, Jos. *ant.* iv. 8. 38; but it may be intended here to represent the tenth commandment, while summing up the sins committed against vi.—ix.; on the class. and later use of ἀποστερεῖν

τὴν μητέρα. <sup>20</sup> ὁ δὲ ἔφη αὐτῷ Διδάσκαλε, ταῦτα 20 πάντα ἐφυλαξάμην ἐκ νεότητός μου. <sup>21</sup> ὁ δὲ Ἰησοῦς 21 ἐμβλέψας αὐτῷ ἡγάπησεν αὐτὸν καὶ εἶπεν αὐτῷ

**Ι** ο μητέρα] + σου **Κ\***CFNΣ 28 124 238 al<sup>nong</sup> a b c f syrr<sup>sin pesh</sup> me go aeth . 20 ο δε εφη **ΚΣΔΨ** με] ο δε αποκριθεις ειπεν ADNXΓΣΦ min<sup>fere omni</sup> latt syrr (arm) go (Clem Al) και αποκρ. εφη C | om διδασκαλε ΚΠ 1 209 al<sup>pauc</sup> Clem Al | εφυλαξαμην **ΚΒCΝΧΓΔΠΣΦΨ**] εφυλαξα AD 28 Clem Al Or εποιησα 1 209 2<sup>po</sup> arm | μου] + τι επι νυστερω **ΚΜΝΠΣ** 13 28 69 124 346 1071 2<sup>po</sup> al<sup>nong</sup> a c syr<sup>hel</sup> arm 21 αυτω 2<sup>o</sup>] + ει θελεις τελειος ειναι **ΚΜΝΠΣ(Φ)** 13 28 69 124 346 736 2<sup>po</sup> al<sup>nong</sup> syr<sup>hel</sup> (arm) me aeth Clem Al

see Field, *Notes*, p. 33 f., and for the N.T. use cf. 1 Cor. vi. 7 f., vii. 5. The fifth commandment is reserved to the last place, possibly in order to emphasise its importance in view of its practical abrogation by the oral law (vii. 10 ff.). Mt. adds the summary of the Second Table from Lev. xix. 18 (cf. Mc. xii. 31). The form *μὴ φονεύσῃς κτλ.* (Mc., Lc.) occurs also in Jas. ii. 11; Mt.'s *οὐ φονεύσεις* follows the LXX. (Exod., Deut.).

20. *ταῦτα πάντα ἐφυλαξάμην*] Mt., Lc. *ἐφύλαξα*. In the LXX. both voices are used in this connexion, with perhaps a preference for the mid. (cf. Gen. xxvi. 5, Exod. xx. 6, Deut. xxvi. 18, 3 Regn. ii. 3, viii. 61 (act.); Lev. xviii. 4, Deut. iv. 2, 1 Chron. xxviii. 7, 2 Esdr. xx. 29 (30), Ps. cxviii. (cxix.) 4 ff. (mid.)). The N.T. elsewhere uses *φυλάσσειν* only in this sense (Lc. xi. 28, Jo. xii. 47, Acts vii. 53, xvi. 4, xxi. 24, Rom. ii. 26, Gal. vi. 13, &c.). *'Εκ νεότητός μου*: Lc., *ἐκ νεότητος*, Mt., who calls the man a *νεανίσκος*, omits these words. The phrase *ἐκ* (or *ἀπό*) *νεότητος* with or without the pronoun following is frequent in the LXX., e.g. Gen. viii. 21 (*ἐκ ν. αὐτοῦ=יְמֻנֶּה*), 1 Regn. xii. 2, Ps. lxx. (lxxi.) 17; in the N. T. it is used again in Acts xxvi. 4.

The young man is relieved by the Lord's answer. If the eternal inheritance could be secured on so simple a condition as the keeping of the Decalogue, it was his already. He had

thought perhaps (as Mt.'s *ποίας*; seems to shew) of the precepts of the Hala-chah. Something more than the letter of the Torah must surely be necessary; what was it? (Mt. *τί ἔτι ὑστερῶ;*). The deeper meaning and larger requirements of the Law were yet hidden from him.

21. *ὁ δὲ Ἰ. ἐμβλέψας αὐτῷ κτλ.*] Mc. only; Mt. has merely *ἔφη αὐτῷ*, Lc., *ἀκούσα...εἶπεν αὐτῷ*. *Ἐμβλέπειν* (viii. 25, x. 27, xiv. 67, Lc. xxii. 61) is to fix the eyes for a moment upon an object,—a characteristically searching look turned upon an individual; cf. *περιβλέπεσθαι* (iii. 5, x. 23), which describes a similar look carried round a circle. *Ηγάπησεν αὐτόν*. The look revealed that which attracted love, such as the Lord entertained for a genuine, however imperfect, disciple; cf. Jo. xiii. 1, 23, 34; xv. 9, 12. Tindale's endeavour to weaken the force of *ηγ.* by translating "Jesus... favoured him" is unnecessary; still less can we adopt the rendering "caressed him" which Field (*Notes*, p. 34), though with some hesitation, suggests; the Lord loved in the man what He saw to be good and of God. Cf. Grotius: "Amat Christus non virtutes tantum sed et semina virtutum"; Godet: "ce regard d'amour était en même temps un regard plein de pénétration par lequel Jésus discerna les bonnes et les mauvaises qualités de ce cœur, et qui lui inspira la parole suivante." On the distinction between

"Ἐν σε ὑστερεῖ ὑπαγε, ὅσα ἔχεις πώλησον καὶ δὸς

21 σε ΝΒCMΔΠ\* 28 al<sup>pauc</sup>] σοι ADNXΓΠ<sup>2</sup>ΣΦΨ min<sup>pl</sup> Clem Al Or pr ετι Κ min<sup>nonn</sup>  
me | δος] διαδος k (distribue) Clem Al

ἀγαπᾶν and φιλεῖν (Jo. xi. 3, 36, xx.  
2) see Trench, *syn.* 12, Westcott on  
Jo. v. 20, xi. 3.

ἐν σε ὑστερεῖ] Lc. ἔτι ἐν σοι λείπει. Clem. Al. *quis dives* 10: ἐν σοι λείπει. τὸ ἐν τῷ ἐμόν, τὸ ἀγαθόν, τὸ ἥδη ὑπὲρ νόμου, ὅπερ νόμος οὐδὲ δίδωσιν, ὅπερ νόμος οὐ χωρεῖ, ὃ τῶν ζωντων ἴδιόν ἐστιν (cf. Lc. x. 41). For ὑστερεῖν in this sense see Jo. ii. 3, and for the acc. of the person, cf. Ps. xxii. (xxiii.) 1 οὐδέν με ὑστερήσει (ΡΦΗΝ ΙΔ), lxxxiii. (lxxxiv.) 12; the construction ὑστερῶ τι (Sir. li. 24, Mt. xix. 20, 2 Cor. xii. 11) or τινός (Lc. xxii. 35, Rom. iii. 23, &c.) is more usual in the N. T. Mt. represents the enquirer as asking τι ἔτι ὑστερῶ; and for ἐν σε ὑστερεῖ in the Lord's reply substitutes εἰ θέλεις τέλειος εἶναι. One thing was wanting to perfect the man's fitness for the inheritance of eternal life.

ὑπαγε, ὅσα ἔχεις πώλησον κτλ.] The sale and distribution of his property were the necessary preparations in his case for the complete discipleship which admits to the Divine kingdom. Euth. : ἐπεὶ τὰ ὑπάρχοντα...ἐμπόδια ἦσαν τοῦ ἀκολουθῆσαι, κελεύει ταῦτα πωλῆσαι. The words are not a general counsel of perfection, but a test of obedience and faith which the Lord saw to be necessary in this particular case. The demand of the Divine Lover of souls varies with the spiritual condition of the individual; for one equally great see Gen. xii. 1, Heb. xi. 8 ff. Whether this precept led to the sacrifices described in Acts ii. 44 f., iv. 34 ff. cannot now be known; the *Life of St Anthony* relates its effect on the great Egyptian hermit: chancing one day to hear Mt. xix. 21 read in the Gospel for the day, ὡς δι' αὐτὸν γενομένου τοῦ ἀναγνώσματος ἐξελθὼν εὐθὺς ἐκ τοῦ κυριακοῦ τὰς μεν κτήσεις ἄσ-

εῖχον ἐκ προγόνων...ταύτας ἔχαριστα τοῖς ἀπὸ τῆς κώμης...τὰ δὲ ἀλλα ὅσα ἦν αὐτοῖς πωλήσας...δέδωκε τοῖς πτωχοῖς, τηρήσας ὀλίγα διὰ τὴν ἀδελφήν. The destitute poor (*οἱ πτωχοὶ*) were a numerous class in Palestine in the first century (cf. xii. 42, xiv. 5 ff., Lc. xvi. 20, Jo. xiii. 29, Jas. ii. 2 f.), and one for which no regular provision was made. The *Gospel acc. to the Hebrews* is eloquent on this point: "quomodo dicis, 'Legem fecisti et prophetas'...et ecce multi fratres tui, filii Abrahae, amicti sunt stercore, morientes pae fame, et domus tua plena est multis bonis et non egreditur omnino aliquid ex ea ad illos."

The self-sacrifice which the Lord imposed on this wealthy enquirer asserts in principle the duty of the rich to minister to the poor; the particular form which their ministry must take varies with the social conditions of the age. Of the form embodied in this precept it is probably safe to say 'Ο δυνάμενος χωρεῖν χωρεῖτω. See Clem. Al. *quis dives* 13 ff. for some weighty remarks upon the question of a voluntary poverty. While discouraging the abandonment of wealth in a general way, he admits that there are cases in which it may be expedient: § 24 ἀλλ' ὁρᾶς σεαυτὸν ἡττώμενον ὑπ' αὐτῶν καὶ ἀνατρεπόμενον; ἀφεις, ρίψον, μίσησον, ἀπόταξαι, φύγε (adding a reference to Mt. v. 29). Cf. *paed.* ii. 3 § 36, ἐπου τῷ θεῷ γυμνὸς ἀλαζονείας, γυμνὸς ἐπικήρου πομπῆς, τὸ σόν, τὸ ἀγαθόν, τὸ ἀναφαίρετον μόνον, τὴν εἰς τὸν θεὸν πίστιν, τὴν εἰς τὸν παθόντα ὄμολογίαν, τὴν εἰς ἀνθρώπους εὐεργεσίαν κεκτημένος, κτῆμα τιμαλ-φέστατον.

καὶ ἔξεις θησαυρὸν ἐν οὐρανῷ] In contrast with θησαυρὸν ἐπὶ τῆς γῆς (Mt. vi. 19), cf. Lc. xii. 33 f.; compare

[τοῖς] πτωχοῖς, καὶ ἔξεις θησαυρὸν ἐν οὐρανῷ· καὶ δεῦρο ἀκολούθει μοι. <sup>22</sup> ὁ δὲ στυγνάστας ἐπὶ τῷ <sup>22</sup> λόγῳ ἀπῆλθεν λυπούμενος, ἦν γὰρ ἔχων κτήματα πολλά.

<sup>23</sup> Καὶ περιβλεψάμενος ὁ Ἰησοῦς λέγει τοῖς μαθηταῖς <sup>-23</sup>

<sup>21</sup> πτωχοῖς ΑΒΝΧΓΔΣΨ 6ο<sup>4</sup> 1071 al<sup>mu</sup> arm go Clem Al] pr τοῖς ΝCDΦ 1 <sup>2p</sup> al<sup>mu</sup> | μοι] + apas τον σταυρον (σου) A(G)ΝΧΓΠΙΣΦ al<sup>pl</sup> et ante δεῦρο 1 13 28 69 al<sup>pause</sup> a syrr<sup>sin</sup>pesh aeth Ir item pro δεῦρο arm <sup>22</sup> στυγναστας] εστυγνασεν...και D b cff q | τω λογω] pr τοντω D 28 69 124 346 2<sup>pe</sup> a b e f f k q syrr<sup>sin</sup>pesh | κτηματα] χρηματα D 116 b f f k q syrr<sup>sin</sup> Clem Al | πολλα] + και αγρους b k Clem Al <sup>23</sup> λεγει] ελεγεν Ν\*C

the remarkable parallel in Mt. xiii. 44, and the imagery of Apoc. iii. 17 f.

καὶ δεῦρο ἀκολούθει μοι] See ii. 14, note. The final test of character, proposed to all candidates for eternal life; cf. Jo. x. 27, xii. 26. This essential condition is not necessarily involved in even the greatest sacrifice of outward things; cf. Jerome: "multi divitias relinquentes Dominum non sequuntur."

22. ὁ δὲ στυγνάστας ἐπὶ τῷ λόγῳ] Mc. only: Mt. ἀκούσας...τὸν λόγον τοῦτον, Lc. ἀκούσας...ταῦτα. As he heard the sentence, his brow clouded over (*στυγνός* καὶ κατήφης Clem. Al., *quis dives* 4), the lighthearted optimism of his mood broke down. *Στυγνάζειν* is used of the saddening of either the face of nature (Mt. xvi. 3, 'Western' text) or the human face (Ezech. xxvii. 35, xxviii. 19 (A), xxxii. 10); the dark and stormy night is *στυγνή* (Sap. xvii. 5); the *στυγνός* is the sombre, gloomy man who broods over unwelcome thoughts (Isa. lvii. 17, Dan. ii. 12 *στυγνὸς γενόμενος καὶ περίλυπος*, LXX.). In the last passage the effect is partly due to anger (Th. ἐν θυμῷ καὶ ὄργῃ), but usually it is the result of disappointment or grief, and that is clearly what is intended here; cf. Vg. *contristatus in verbo*; Wycliffe: "he was ful sorie in the word." The answer did not exasperate, but it gave him pain which was visible on his countenance: ἀπῆλθεν λυπούμενος

(Mt., Mc.), *περίλυπος γενόμενος* (Lc.). His hopes were dashed; the one thing he yet wanted was beyond his reach; the price was too great to pay even for eternal life. For the time the love of the world prevailed. Yet it is unnecessary with Origen and Jerome to characterise his sorrow as that of the world (2 Cor. vii. 10); rather it may have been the birth-pangs of a spirit struggling for release. His riches were indeed as thorns (Jerome) which threatened to choke the seed of the word (iv. 7, 19), but the end of the struggle is not revealed. For the time, however, he answered the Lord's δεῦρο by turning his back on Him (ἀπῆλθεν).

ἥν γὰρ ἔχων κτήματα πολλά] Probably estates, lands; cf. Acts i. 18 (*ἐκτήσατο χωρίον*), iv. 34 (*κτήτορες χωρίων ἡ οἰκιών*), v. 1, 3 (*ἐπώλησεν κτήμα, ἀπὸ τῆς τιμῆς τοῦ χωρίου*); in Acts ii. 44 *κτήματα* are apparently distinguished from the vaguer *ὑπάρχεις*. On *ἥν...ἔχων*—R.V. 'he was one that had'—see Burton, § 432. Cf. Bede: "inter pecunias habere et pecunias amare multa distantia est. multi enim habentes non amant, multi non habentes amat."

23—27. THE RICH AND THE KINGDOM OF GOD (Mt. xix. 23—26, Lc. xviii. 24—27).

23. καὶ περιβλεψάμενος κτλ.] When the man was gone the Lord's eye swept round the circle of the Twelve

ταῖς αὐτοῦ Πῶς δυσκόλως οἱ τὰ χρήματα ἔχοντες  
 24 εἰς τὴν βασιλείαν τοῦ θεοῦ εἰσελεύσονται. <sup>24</sup>οὶ δὲ  
 μαθηταὶ ἐθαμβοῦντο ἐπὶ τοῖς λόγοις αὐτοῦ. ὁ δὲ  
 Ἰησοῦς πάλιν ἀποκριθεὶς λέγει αὐτοῖς Τέκνα, πῶς  
 δύσκολόν ἐστιν εἰς τὴν βασιλείαν τοῦ θεοῦ εἰσελθεῖν.  
 25 <sup>25</sup>εὐκοπώτερόν ἐστιν κάμηλον διὰ τρυμαλιᾶς ῥαφίδος

23 οἱ τὰ χρ. εχοντες επι (? τοις) χρημασιν syr<sup>sin</sup> | τα χρ.] om τα C  
 24 tot vers post 25 transpos D 235 a b ff om γ | λεγει] ειπεν ΔΨ 1071 2<sup>ρ</sup>o alpaue | τεκνα  
 ΣBCDXΔ Clem Al τεκνα ΑΝΣΨ 1 1071 alpaue latt<sup>videxeq</sup> om EGKII min<sup>vis</sup> mu e k |  
 εστιν] + τους πεποιθοτας επι (τοις) χρημασιν AC(D)ΝΧΓΠΣΦ al min<sup>pl</sup> b f q vg  
 syrt<sup>sin</sup> pesh hel arm me<sup>odd</sup> Clem Al (om ΣΒΔ k me<sup>odd</sup>) 25 ευκοπωτερον...εισελθειν]  
 τ[αχ]ειον καμηλος δια τρυμαλιδος ρ. διελευσεται η πλουσιος εις τ. βασ. τ. θ. D (a) |  
 καμιλον bscr\* syr<sup>hel</sup> (ωλεκάκω) | τρυμαλιας (τρηματος Σ\* Clem Al q. d. § 2  
 τρυπηματος 13 69 al Clem Al str. II. 5. 22]) pr της BEGHSVXΦ min<sup>pl</sup> me Clem  
 Al | ραφιδος (βελονης 13 69 al Clem Al) pr της BEFHSVXΓΦ min<sup>pl</sup> Clem Al

(iii. 5, note), as He drew for them the lesson of the incident. So Mc. only; Lc., ιδὼν δὲ αὐτὸν εἶπεν. Πῶς δυσκόλως, Mc., Lc.; ἀμήν λέγω ὑμῖν ὅτι... δυσκόλως, Mt. Δύσκολος and δυσκόλως occur in the N. T. only in this context; the LXX. use δύσκολος in Jer. xxix. 9 (xlii. 8), δυσκολία in Job xxxiv. 30; cf. εὔκολος in 2 Regn. xv. 3. The rarity of this class of words in Biblical Gk. renders the occurrence of δυσκόλως here in the three Synoptists the more significant. With πῶς δ., 'with what difficulty,' comp. πῶς παραχρῆμα, Mt. xxi. 20, πῶς συνέχομαι, Lc. xii. 50. Οἱ τὰ χρήματα ἔχοντες, 'they who have money'; cf. v. 22 ἦν ἔχων κτήματα. The wider word which is preferred here includes all property whether in coin or convertible into it (cf. Arist. eth. iv. 1 χρήματα δὲ λέγομεν πάντα ὅσων ἡ ἀξία νομίσματι μετρεῖται); for the former sense of χρήματα cf. Job xxvii. 17 (τὰ χρ.=Ρῷα), 2 Macc. iii. 7, 4 Macc. iv. 3, Acts iv. 37 (τὸ χρῆμα), viii. 18 ff., xxiv. 26: for the latter, 2 Chron. i. 11, 12 (Μίσθιον), Sir. v. 1, 8, &c. Εἰς τ. βασιλείαν κτλ.; cf. v. 15, note. For a partial parallel to the saying see Sir. xxxiv. (xxxii.) 8, 9.

24. οἱ δὲ μαθηταὶ ἐθαμβοῦντο ἐπὶ κτλ.] Mc. only. The Twelve were thrown into consternation (for θαμβεῖσθαι see i. 27 n.) at (i. 22) the Lord's sayings (λόγοις, contrast λόγῳ, v. 22) on this occasion, but especially, no doubt, at this last remark. What manner of kingdom was this which men must become as children to enter (v. 15), and which men of substance could scarcely enter at all? Their surprise was probably expressed in words, perhaps by Peter; cf. *Ev. sec. Hebr. ap. Orig.*: "conversus dixit Simoni discipulo suo sedenti apud se 'Simon fili Ioanne, facilius est &c.'"

τέκνα, πῶς δύσκολόν ἐστιν κτλ.] For τέκνα, which occurs here only (cf. Jo. xiii. 33 τεκνία, xxi. 5 παιδία) in reference to the Twelve, see ii. 5 n. The Lord, in sympathy with their growing perplexity, adopts a tone of unusual tenderness. Yet He repeats His hard saying (πάλιν), and this time removes the qualifying reference to the rich: 'it is hard to enter in any case, though specially hard for such.' Euth.: ἐστι δὲ τὸ πῶς βεβαιωτικόν, ἀντὶ τοῦ ἀληθῶς. On the 'Western' addition, "inserted to bring the verse into closer con-

διελθεῖν ἡ πλούσιον εἰς τὴν βασιλείαν τοῦ θεοῦ εἰσελθεῖν. <sup>26</sup> οἱ δὲ περισσῶς ἐξεπλήσσοντο, λέγοντες πρὸς 26

<sup>25</sup> διελθεῖν BC(D)ΚΠ 1 69 124 1071 al<sup>sat</sup>mu b c f ff q vg syr<sup>pesh hel (text)</sup> arm me aeth] εισελθεῖν ΚΑΝΧΓΔΣΦΨ min<sup>pl</sup> a k syrr<sup>sin hel (mg)</sup> go (Clem Al) | om εισελθεῖν (D) a ff k syr<sup>sin</sup> Clem Al <sup>26</sup> om περισσως F | προς αυτον ΚΒΔΨ me] πρ. εαυτους ADM<sup>2N</sup> ΧΓΠΣΦ min<sup>fere omn</sup> latt syrr arm go aeth πρ. αλληλους M\*

nection with the context by limiting its generality," see WH., *Notes*, p. 26; and cf. Prov. xi. 28 for its probable source.

25. εὐκοπάτερόν ἔστιν κτλ.] For εὐκοπάτερόν ἔστιν see ii. 9, note. Διὰ τρυμαλίας ράφιδος: Mt. διὰ τρῆματος (al. τρυπήματος) ῥ., Lc. διὰ τρῆματος βελόνης. Τρυμαλία, a late and rare word, is a perforation, e.g. πέτρας Jud. (vi. 2), xv. 8, 11 B (A has μάνδρα, σπῆλαιον, or ὄπη), Jer. xiii. 4, xvi. 16, xxix. (xlix.) 16; τρῆμα, τρύπημα are classical words of the same general meaning. Of ράφιδος and βελόνη Phrynnichus says: β. καὶ βελονοπάλης ἀρχαῖα, ἡ δὲ ράφιδος τί ἔστιν οὐκ ἀν τις γνοίη. Nevertheless, as Rutherford shews (*N. Phr.* p. 174 f.), ράφιδος is the older word, and reappears in late Gk. In both cases Mc. has used the colloquial word; in both Lc. prefers the forms of literary Gk., while Mt. retains ράφιδος, but excludes τρυμαλία. In the mss. naturally the forms are interchanged.

Similar sayings in reference to the elephant are quoted from Rabbinical writings by J. Lightfoot and Schöttgen *ad loc.* The exact metaphor occurs in the Koran (Plummer), and in proverbs current among the Arabs (Bruce), but in these it is possibly borrowed from the Gospels. Celsus (Orig. *c. Cels.* vi. 16) held that the words ἄντικρυς ἀπὸ Πλάτωνος εἰρήσθαι, τοῦ Ἰησοῦ παραφθείραντος τὸ Πλατωνικόν, referring to Plat. *legg.* 743A ἀγαθὸν δὲ ὅντα διαφερόντως καὶ πλούσιον εἶναι διαφερόντως ἀδύνατον. The general similarity and the essential difference of the two sayings are worthy of remark. The attempts to soften the proverb which Christ

uses, either by taking κάμηλον (v. 1. κάμιλον, cf. WH., *Notes*, p. 151) for a ship's cable (schol. οὐ τὸ ξέφον λέγει ἀλλὰ τὸ παχὺ σχοινίον φέδεσμοῦσι τὰς ἀγκύρας, cf. Thph., Euth., Arm.), or explaining ράφιδος as a narrow *wady*, or a gate through which a camel can scarcely pass, misses the point of the simile, which is intended to place the impossibility in the strongest light (v. 27). To contrast the largest beast of burden known in Palestine with the smallest of artificial apertures is quite in the manner of Christ's proverbial sayings: cf. iv. 31 f., Mt. xxiii. 24. Origen in his reply to Celsus *l.c.* rightly compares with the saying as a whole Mt. vii. 14 (cf. Lc. xiii. 24) στενὴ ἡ πύλη καὶ τεθλιμμένη ἡ ὁδὸς ἡ ἀπάγουσα εἰς τὴν ζωήν. It is remarkable at how many points the present context recalls the language or the teaching of the 'Sermon on the Mount' (cf. e.g. vv. 17, 19, 21).

26. οἱ δὲ περισσῶς ἐξεπλήσσοντο κτλ.] Their astonishment now passed all bounds and broke out into a cry of despair. Ἐξεπλήσσοντο, cf. i. 22, vi. 2, vii. 37. Καὶ τίς Mc., Lc., R.V. 'then who?' = τίς ἄρα Mt., cf. τίς οὖν Clem. Al. quis dives 4; see WM., p. 345, and Holtzmann *ad loc.*: "das καὶ nimmt den Inhalt der vorhergehenden Rede auf"; another ex. may be seen in Jo. ix. 36. "Who can be saved if the rich are excluded?" The Twelve have not yet grasped the special difficulties of the rich, who seem from their position to have the first claim to admission into the Kingdom. If they are excluded, they ask, who can dare to hope? Σωθῆναι = εισελθεῖν εἰς τὴν

27 αὐτὸν Καὶ τίς δύναται σωθῆναι; <sup>27</sup> ἐμβλέψας αὐτοῖς  
οἱ Ἰησοῦς λέγει Παρὰ ἀνθρώποις ἀδύνατον, ἀλλ’ οὐ  
παρὰ θεῷ πάντα γὰρ δυνατὰ παρὰ θεῷ.

28 <sup>28</sup> Ἡρξατο λέγειν οἱ Πέτρος αὐτῷ Ἰδοὺ ημεῖς  
29 ἀφήκαμεν πάντα καὶ ἡκολουθήκαμεν σοι. <sup>29</sup> ἔφη οἱ

<sup>27</sup> αδυνατον] pr τουτο C<sup>3</sup>D<sup>1</sup>N<sup>2</sup> 1071 alpaue b c syrr<sup>sin pesh</sup> arm + εστιν D 1071 alpaue  
a b c fff k q vg arm | om αλλ ου π. θ. D r | παντα γαρ δυν. παρα θεω (τω θεω ΑΚΠΣΦ  
min<sup>mu</sup>)] παρα δε τω θεω δυνατον D 157 a ff (k) (Clem Al) om Δ 1 69 209 736\* al<sup>nonn</sup>  
1 arm<sup>zoh</sup> | γαρ] δε r <sup>28</sup> ηρξατο] pr και D min<sup>vix mu</sup> latt<sup>t+pl+vg</sup> + δε ΚΝΠΣ  
min<sup>eat mu</sup> f + ουν 736 | ηκολουθηκαμεν BCD] ηκολουθησαμεν ΝΑΝΧΓΔΠΣΦΨ min<sup>omn vid</sup>  
Clem Al | σοι] + τι αρα εσται ημιν & min<sup>2</sup> b <sup>29</sup> εφη ο Ι. ΝΒΔ me] και αποκριθεις  
(vel αποκρ. δε) ο Ι. ειπεν A(CDEFGHK)M(N)SUVXGII<sup>2</sup>ΣΦ 604 al<sup>vix mu</sup> a b c fff (k) q r  
vg syrr<sup>sin pesh (hcl)</sup> arm go (aeth) (Clem Al) εφη αυτοις Ψ

βασιλείαν τοῦ θεοῦ (vv. 24, 25), or εἰς  
ζωὴν αἰώνιον (v. 17); for this higher  
sense of σώζειν cf. viii. 35, xiii. 13,  
[xvi. 16]. On δύναται Jerome well  
remarks: “ubi difficile ponitur non  
impossibilitas praetenditur.”

27. ἐμβλέψας αὐτοῖς] Mt., Mc.;  
the second ἐμβλέψας (cf. v. 21, note)  
is wanting in Lc. In the words which  
follow His searching look, He does  
not retreat from His position, though  
He reveals the true ground of hope.  
The saying is based on Gen. xviii. 14  
ἀδυνατήσει παρὰ τῷ θεῷ ρῆμα; cf. Job  
xlii. 2, Zech. viii. 6. Παρά (dat.),  
penes, as in Mt. vi. 1, viii. 10, Rom. ii.  
11, ix. 14; in Lc. i. 37 παρὰ τοῦ θεοῦ  
introduces another thought, that the  
power proceeds from God. ‘The  
power of God converts impossibilities  
into facts.’ The Western text of Mc.  
(cf. WH., Notes, p. 26) limits the  
saying to the particular case; Lc.  
expresses its general truth in the epi-  
grammatic form τὰ ἀδύνατα παρὰ ἀν-  
θρώποις δυνατὰ παρὰ τῷ θεῷ ἐστίν. In  
Lc., as Plummer notes, an incident  
follows (xix. 1 ff.) which proves that  
the salvation of the rich is “possible  
with God.” On the apparent limitation  
of God’s power by His goodness and  
righteousness cf. the remark of Euth.:  
φασὶ δέ τινες ὅτι ἔαν πάντα δυνατὰ τῷ  
θεῷ, δυνατὸν ἄρα τῷ θεῷ καὶ τὸ κακόν.

πρὸς οὓς λέγομεν ὅτι τὸ κακὸν οὐκ ἔστι  
δυνάμεως ἀλλ’ ἀδυνατίας.

28—31. THE REWARD OF THOSE  
WHO LEAVE ALL FOR CHRIST’S SAKE  
(Mt. xix. 27—30, Lc. xviii. 28—30).

28. Ἡρξατο λέγειν οἱ Πέτρος] Mt.  
τότε ἀποκριθεις ὁ Π. εἰπεν. The con-  
versation which follows arose out of  
the previous incident (ἀποκρ., cf. ix. 5),  
yet it struck a new note. It was Peter  
who characteristically broke in with  
this fresh question (Mt., Mc., Lc.); cf.  
Clem. Al. quis dives 2 ταχέως ἥρπασε  
καὶ συνέβαλε τὸν λόγον. The call  
δεῦρο ἀκολούθει μοι reminded him  
that the sacrifice required from the  
rich man and withheld had been  
actually made by himself and his  
brother. Victor, Euth.: ποῖα πάντα,  
ὦ μακάριε Πέτρε; τὸν κάλαμον, τὸ  
δίκτυον, τὸ πλοίον, τὴν τέχνην, ταῦτά  
μοι πάντα λέγεις; ναί, φησίν, ἂ εἰχον  
καὶ ὅσα εἰχον. Ἀφήκαμεν πάντα (cf.  
i. 18, 20, ii. 14): Lc., as if to soften  
the tactless frankness of the speech,  
ἀφέντες τὰ ἴδια. Mc.’s ἡκολουθήκαμεν  
“we followed, and are following still”  
is changed into the aor. in Mt., Lc.  
It may be hoped that τι ἄρα ἔσται  
ἡμῖν; (Mt. only) was left unspoken;  
that it was in the speaker’s mind, the  
Lord’s answer shews.

29. ἔφη οἱ Ἰησοῦς] Though Peter  
only spake, the Lord addresses the

*'Ιησοῦς Ἀμὴν λέγω ὑμῖν, οὐδεὶς ἔστιν ὃς ἀφῆκεν οἰκίαν ἢ ἀδελφοὺς ἢ ἀδελφὰς ἢ μητέρα ἢ πατέρα ἢ τέκνα ἢ ἀγροὺς ἔνεκεν ἐμοῦ καὶ ἔνεκεν τοῦ εὐαγγελίου, ἢ ἔὰν μὴ λάβῃ ἐκαπονταπλασίονα νῦν ἐν τῷ καιρῷ 30*

29 οἰκιαν] οἰκιας FMΨ min<sup>2</sup> syrr<sup>sin pesh</sup> aeth om D b | om η αδελφας go | η πατερα η μητερα ΝΑΝΧΓΠΣΦΨ min<sup>pl</sup> b vg<sup>eddcdod pl</sup> syrr arm aeth | om η πατερα D aff k | η τεκνα] pr η γυναικα ACNXΓΠΣΦΨ min<sup>pl</sup> f q syrr go aeth | om η αγρους Ψ | εμον] τον ε. ονοματος arm<sup>odd</sup> | ενεκεν 2ο] om AB\* S\* min<sup>mu</sup> ο κ ενεκα D 30 εαν] os αν D os ou 28 2ρο (k) | απολαβη Ι (Clem Al) | εκαποντ.] + μετα διωγμων k | om νυν D 255 4οβ a k q syrr<sup>sin</sup>

Twelve, whose thoughts Peter had interpreted (*εἶπεν αὐτοῖς*, Mt., Lc.; *λέγω ὑμῖν*, Mt., Mc., Lc.). The first part of the answer is preserved by Mt. only (*v. 28*, cf. Lc. xxii. 28 ff.), and affects the Twelve only; the common tradition related only what was of importance to all believers.

οὐδεὶς ἔστιν ὃς ἀφῆκεν κτλ.] The sacrifices contemplated embrace all the material possessions included under the three heads of home, relatives, and property; the sacrifice in life is not at present in view, since none of the Twelve has been called to that as yet. Lc. adds *γυναῖκα* immediately after *οἰκιαν*, and omits *ἀγρούς*. Of the Twelve, as we know, Simon Peter had left house and wife (*i. 29 f.*), the sons of Zebedee their father, and Levi at least a lucrative occupation; cf. *Act. Thom.* ad fin. *ἔπιδε ἐφ' ἡμᾶς Κύριε, ὅτι τὴν ἰδίαν κτῆσιν κατελείψαμεν διὰ σέ κτλ.* Cf. Philo *de vit. cont.* p. 50 (ed. Conybeare), *καταλιπόντες ἀδελφούς, τέκνα, γυναῖκας, γονεῖς...τὰς πατρίδας.* "H... ḥ... ḥ...: cf. v. 30 καὶ...καὶ...καὶ: "quae relinquuntur disiunctive enumerantur; quae retribuuntur, copulative" (Bengel). "Ἐνεκεν ἐμοῦ καὶ ἔνεκεν τοῦ εὐαγγελίου: Mt., ἔνεκεν τοῦ ἐμοῦ ὄνόματος, Lc., ἔνεκεν τῆς βασιλείας τοῦ θεοῦ. Mc.'s phrase has already occurred in viii. 35, where Mt., Lc. have simply ἔνεκεν ἐμοῦ (Dalman, *Worte*, i. p. 84); perhaps it is an expansion of the

original ἔνεκεν ἐ. which was characteristic of Peter's Roman preaching; references to 'the Gospel,' rare in Mt. and altogether wanting in Lc., are fairly frequent in Mc. (*i. 1, 14, 15, viii. 35, x. 29, xiii. 10, xiv. 9, [xvi. 15]*). Victor: ἀδιάφορον δὲ τὸ λέγειν 'ἔνεκα τοῦ ἐμοῦ ὄνόματος,' ἢ 'ἔνεκα τοῦ εὐαγγελίου,' ὡς ὁ Μᾶρκος, ἢ 'ἔνεκα τῆς βασιλείας τοῦ θεοῦ,' ὡς ὁ Λουκᾶς τὸ γάρ ὄνομα τοῦ χριστοῦ δύναμις ἔστι τοῦ εὐαγγελίου καὶ τῆς βασιλείας.

30. ἔὰν μὴ λάβῃ κτλ.] 'Without receiving'; for the construction cf. iv. 22, and see Blass, *Gr.* p. 215. The rough but forcible phrase οὐδεὶς ἔστιν ὃς...ἔὰν μὴ λάβῃ is avoided by Mt. (*πᾶς ὅστις...λήψεται*) and corrected by Lc. (*οὐδεὶς ἔστιν ὃς...οὐχὶ μὴ λάβῃ*). 'Ἐκαπονταπλασίονα (2 Regn. xxiv. 3, Lc. viii. 8, cf. I Chr. xxi. 3 ἐκαπονταπλασίων) is softened by Mt., Lc. into *πολλαπλασίονα* (Dalman, *Worte*, i. p. 53). On the reading of D in Mt. (*ἐπταπλασίονα*) see Nestle, *Philol. sacr.*, p. 24. Νῦν ἐν τῷ καιρῷ τούτῳ: ἐν τῷ κ. τ., Lc.; Mt. omits both this and the corresponding ἐν τῷ αἰώνι τῷ ἐρχ. For *καιρός* see i. 15, note; ὁ *καιρός οὗτος* for ὁ *αἰών οὗτος* is unique, but ὁ *νῦν κ.* is a Pauline phrase (Rom. iii. 26, viii. 18, xi. 5, 2 Cor. viii. 13, cf. ὁ κ. ὁ ἐνεστηκώς, Heb. ix. 9, Westcott); here, as contrasted with ὁ *αἰών ὁ ἐρχ.*, ὁ κ. *οὗτος* seems to be the present season, the era of the Advent, the opportunity of sacrifice, beyond which

τούτῳ, οἰκίας καὶ ἀδελφῶν καὶ ἀδελφᾶς καὶ μητέρα[ς]  
καὶ τέκνα καὶ ἄγρον μετὰ διωγμῶν, καὶ ἐν τῷ αἰώνι  
§ L 31 § τῷ ἐρχομένῳ ζωὴν αἰώνιον. <sup>3<sup>τ</sup></sup> πολλοὶ δὲ ἔσονται  
πρῶτοι ἔσχατοι, καὶ οἱ ἔσχατοι πρῶτοι.

[οἰκίας] pr os δε αφῆκεν D a b ff | om οἰκίας...διωγμῶν N\* c k | καὶ μητέρας  
B E F G H (N) S U V Δ Ψ minplvid vg syr<sup>pesh</sup> arm<sup>zoh</sup> me] καὶ μητέρα N A C D minpauc (a b)  
f ff q syr<sup>sin</sup> arm<sup>codd</sup> καὶ μητέρα καὶ πατέρα N E K M X P min<sup>satmu</sup> 604 736 1 go aeth  
pr (vel add) καὶ πατέρας N Σ 736\* 1071 al<sup>nonn</sup> me<sup>codd</sup> | καὶ τέκνα] pr καὶ γυναικα 218 220  
736\* p<sup>ser</sup> | μετὰ διωγμῶν] εχειν μ. διωγμῶν εις που (sic: ? τινες -μου) Clem Al μ. διωγμον  
D (cf. Nestle, T. C. p. 265) | om καὶ 6<sup>ο</sup> D a<sup>corrvid</sup> b ff | αἰώνιον] +λημψεται D a b c ff  
κ+κληρονομήσει 1071 syr<sup>sin</sup> 31 δε] γαρ syr<sup>sin</sup> arm | οι εσχατοι] om οι N A D K L M  
V Δ Π Ψ min<sup>mu</sup> me go

spreads the yet limitless age of the realised Kingdom. Mc. alone specifies the present rewards, and he describes them in the terms of the sacrifice. Πατέρας is omitted, possibly for the reason mentioned in Mt. xxiii. 9, but καὶ μητέρας (if we accept that reading) suffices to shew that the relations enumerated in v. 30 are not to be understood literally; cf. Jo. xix. 26 f., Rom. xvi. 13. A moment's reflexion should have saved Julian from his senseless sneer (Theophylact: ὸιουλιανὸς ἐκωμόδει τάῦτα). Yet when Origen thinks only of the recompenses of "Paradise," he loses sight of a distinction which the Lord's promise certainly recognises (ἐν τῷ καιρῷ τούτῳ, ἐν τῷ αἰώνι τῷ ἐρχομένῳ); and the promise was used with still less reason by the Millenarians (Jerome in Mt.). Without doubt the relations which the Lord offers "now in this time" in place of those which have been abandoned for his sake are the spiritual affinities which bind the members of the family of God (cf. iii. 34 f.). Victor appositely quotes 1 Tim. v. 2 (he might have added Rom. xvi. 13, Gal. iv. 19): ὥσπερ γὰρ ἀδελφῶν δίδωσι τοὺς οὐκ ἀδελφοὺς καὶ γονεῖς τοὺς οὐ γονεῖς καὶ τέκνα τὰ οὐ τέκνα. In D and a few O. L. texts a new sentence begins after ἐν τῷ καιρῷ τούτῳ: ὃς δὲ ἀφῆκεν οἰκίαν καὶ ἀδελφᾶς καὶ ἀδελφῶν καὶ μητέρα καὶ

τέκνα καὶ ἄγρον μετὰ διωγμῶν, ἐν τῷ αἰώνι τῷ ἐρχομένῳ ζωὴν αἰώνιον λήμψεται. Μετὰ διωγμῶν here, it will be seen, strengthens ἀφῆκεν, and does not, like μ. διωγμῶν in our other authorities, qualify λάβῃ.

As for οἰκίαι and ἄγροι, see 1 Cor. iii. 22 f. That even in this life the compensations of sacrifice are an hundredfold was matter of common experience in the age of the confessors. Μετὰ διωγμῶν: Mc. only; but cf. iv. 17, where Mt. confirms ἡ διωγμῶν: even in the Sermon persecution is already foretold (Mt. v. 10 ff.). Not simply "in the midst of persecutions" (WM., p. 472; cf. Thph. τοντέστι διωκόμενοι), but 'accompanied by' them, cf. Blass, Gr. p. 134; μετά adds an element which was to temper the compensations of the present, and warns against dreams of unbroken peace (Bengel: "ne discipuli sperarent felicitatem externam"). The qualifying clause is entirely in the manner of Christ, cf. Jo. xv. 20, xvi. 33. 'Ο αἰών ὁ ἐρχόμενος = ὁ αἰών ὁ μέλλων, Mt. xii. 32, ὁ αἰών ἐκεῖνος, Lc. xx. 35, the age which is to follow the παρουσία. Ζωὴν αἰώνιον: cf. the question of v. 18, to which the Lord looks back; Mt. makes the reference more distinct by adding κληρονομήσει.

31. πολλοὶ δὲ ἔσονται πρῶτοι κτλ.] A saying which occurs also in Mt. xx. 16, Lc. xiii. 30; Lc. omits it here.

32<sup>ο</sup> Ἡσαν δὲ ἐν τῇ ὁδῷ ἀναβαίνοντες εἰς Ἱεροσό- 32  
λυμα, καὶ ἦν προάγων αὐτοὺς ὁ Ἰησοῦς, καὶ ἔθαμ-  
βοῦντο· οἱ δὲ ἀκολουθοῦντες ἐφοβοῦντο. §καὶ παρα-  
λαβὼν πάλιν τοὺς δώδεκα ἤρξατο αὐτοῖς λέγειν τὰ  
§ syr<sup>hier</sup>

32 οι και τη πρ. αυτ. ο I. k | προσαγων D | και εθαμ. οι δε ακ. εφοβουντο NBC\*ΛΔΨ  
2<sup>ρε</sup>] και εθαμβ. και ακ. εφοβ. ΑΝΧΓΠΙ al min<sup>pl</sup> f q vg syrr go και εθαμβ. οι ακ. και  
εφοβ. arm και εθαμβ. οι ακ. c (ff) k om 604\* om οι δε ακ. εφοβ. D min<sup>pane</sup> a b | om  
παλιν syr<sup>hier</sup> | τ. δωδεκα] + κατ ιδιαν arm<sup>via</sup>

As it stands it is a rebuke to the spirit which is impelled to the sacrifice by the mere hope of the reward. How much need there was of the warning, the experience of Judas Iscariot and of Simon Peter himself was to shew. Bede: "vide enim Iudam de Apostolo in apostamatam ver-  
sum...vide latronem in cruce factum confessorem. et quotidie videmus multos in laico habitu constitutos magnis vitae virtutibus excellere, et alios a prima aetate spiritali studio servientes, ad extrellum otio torpen-  
tes flaccescere." The Lord's words have a lesson for each successive age of the Church.

32—34. THE PASSION FORETOLD FOR THE THIRD AND LAST TIME (Mt. xx. 17—19, Lc. xviii. 31—34).

32. Ἡσαν δὲ ἐν τῇ ὁδῷ κτλ.] The issue of the journey (*v. 17*) now becomes apparent; the road leads to Jerusalem, and to the Cross. Ἀνα-  
βαίνοντες (Mt. μελλων ... ἀναβαίνειν); the verb is used of any ascent (Gen. xxxv. 3 εἰς Βαθήλ, Num. xxi. 33 ὁδὸν τὴν εἰς Βασάν, Jos. viii. 1 εἰς Γαΐ,  
3 Regn. xxii. 12 εἰς Ρεμμάθ Γαλαάδ), but especially of journeys to Jerusalem (4 Regn. xvi. 5, 2 Esdr. i. 3, 3 Macc. iii. 16, Jo. ii. 13, v. 1, xi. 55, Acts xi. 2, xxv. 1, 9, Gal. ii. 1), which stands near the highest point of the backbone of Palestine, and cannot be approached from any quarter without an ascent. Ἱεροσόλυμα: so Mc., Jo.<sup>er</sup>, Josephus always; Ἱερουσαλήμ occurs once in Mt. (xxiii. 27), thrice in the Apocalypse (iii. 12, xxi. 2, 10), and

predominates in Lc. and Paul; for the distinction which seems to regulate St Paul's choice see Lightfoot on Gal. iv. 25. Ἱερουσαλήμ is archaic, and suggests the associations of O.T. history; Ἱεροσόλυμα, the Greek equivalent, was the geographical name in common use. For the breathing see WH., *Intr.*, p. 313.

ἡν προάγων...ἐφοβοῦντο] Mc. only. For προάγων see vi. 45, x. 32, xi. 9, xiv. 28, xvi. 7; the acc. is frequent after προάγειν and προέρχεσθαι (cf. 2 Macc. x. 1, Mt. ii. 9); but the gen. with or without ἐνώπιον is also used (Judith x. 22, Lc. i. 17). The Lord walked in advance of the Twelve with a solemnity and determination which foreboded danger (cf. Lc. ix. 51 τὸ πρόσωπον ἐστήρισεν τοῦ πορεύεσθαι εἰς Ἱερουσαλήμ), "more intrepidly ducis" (Grotius); see Jo. x. 4. His manner struck awe into the minds of the Twelve, who were beginning at length to anticipate an impending disaster (ἔθαμβοῦντο, cf. i. 27, x. 24; Eccl. xii. 5 θάμβοι ἐν τῇ ὁδῷ); whilst the rest of the company (οἱ δὲ ἀκολουθοῦντες, cf. vv. ll.), the crowd who usually hung upon the Lord's footsteps (cf. x. 1, 46), or His fellow-travellers on their way to the Passover, were conscious of a vague fear (ἐφο-  
βοῦντο). There was risk of a real panic, and the Lord therefore checks His course, till the Twelve have come up to Him.

καὶ παραλαβὼν πάλιν τοὺς δ.] He admitted them again to His company; for παραλαβεῖν in this sense cf. iv. 36,

§ i 33 μέλλοντα αὐτῷ συμβαίνειν, <sup>33</sup> § ὅτι Ἰδοὺ ἀναβαίνομεν εἰς Ἱεροσόλυμα, καὶ ὁ νιὸς τοῦ ἀνθρώπου παραδοθήσεται τοῖς ἀρχιερεῦσιν καὶ τοῖς γραμματεῦσιν· καὶ κατακρινοῦσιν αὐτὸν θανάτῳ καὶ παραδώσουσιν αὐτὸν 34 τοῖς ἔθνεσιν, <sup>34</sup> καὶ ἐμπαίξουσιν αὐτῷ καὶ ἐμπτύσουσιν

33 παραδιδοται Κ | και τοις γραμμ.] om δ\* om τοις CDEFGKMNSUVXΓΠ min<sup>sat mu</sup> | θανατου Δ\* 34 και εμπαιξ. αντω κ. εμπτυσ. αντω] ad inridendum k

v. 40, ix. 2, xiv. 33. Mt. adds *κατ'* ἰδίαν—the words that follow were not intended for the crowd (*οἱ ἀκολουθοῦντες*), but for the Twelve only. Thphrt.: μυστήριον γὰρ ὃν τὸ πάθος τοῖς οἰκειοτέροις ἔδει ἀποκαλυφθῆναι. "Ηρέστη αὐτοῖς λέγειν: cf. vi. 2, note. The subject was not a new one, but it had been dropped for a while, and it was in sharp contrast to the hopes of reward which were uppermost in the minds of the Twelve (x. 28 ff.). With τὰ μέλλα αὐτῷ συμβαίνειν cf. Lc. xxiv. 14, περὶ πάντων τῶν συμβεβηκότων τούτων. The phrase is frequent in the LXX. (cf. e.g. Gen. xlvi. 4, 29, xlvi. 29, Job i. 22, Esth. vi. 13, I Macc. iv. 26).

33, 34. Ἰδοὺ ἀναβαίνομεν κτλ.] The Twelve shared the journey if not its issue; contrast Jo. xx. 17 ἀναβαίνω πρὸς τὸν πατέρα μου. Their destination was self-evident (*ἰδού*), and there was always risk involved in a journey to Jerusalem (Jo. xi. 8 ff.); but the Twelve had still to learn that this particular journey was to end in the Master's death (*καὶ ὁ νιὸς κτλ.*). The third and final prediction of the Passion which follows is far more explicit than the first or the second (Mc. viii. 31 ff., ix. 31), and indeed anticipates every important stage in the history. Six successive steps are clearly enumerated, and in their actual order—(1) the betrayal (*παραδοθήσεται τοῖς ἀρχ. κ. τοῖς γραμμ.*; the Elders, who were mentioned in viii. 31, are omitted here, as the least important factor in the Sanhedrin), (2) the sentence of the Sanhedrin (*κατακρινοῦσιν*),

(3) the handing over of the Prisoner to the Roman power (*παραδώσουσιν τοῖς ἔθνεσιν*), (4) the mockery and its details (*ἐμπαίξουσιν...ἐμπτύσουσιν...μαστιγώσουσιν*), (5) the Crucifixion (*ἀποκτενοῦσιν*, Mc., Lc.; cf. Mt. σταυρώσαι), (6) the Resurrection (*ἀναστήσεται*, Mc., Lc.; Mt. ἐγερθήσεται). The Resurrection finds a place in all three predictions; of the other details only (2), (5) are distinctly announced in the earliest prediction, and (1), (5) in the second. Lc. prefaces the whole series by a reference to the Prophets (*τελεσθήσεται πάντα τὰ γεγραμμένα διὰ τῶν προφητῶν*, cf. Lc. xxiv. 44). For the construction *κατακρίνειν θανάτῳ* cf. Dan. iv. 34<sup>a</sup> (LXX.), WM., p. 263, Blass, Gr. p. 111. Τὰ ἔθνη (or anarthr., ἔθνη) = Ἕγετοι, Wycliffe, "hethene men"; cf. Ps. ii. 1, 8, Isa. ix. 2, Ezech. iv. 13, Sir. x. 15 f., Bar. ii. 13, I Macc. ii. 18, Rom. ii. 14 (SH.), 24, Gal. i. 16, ii. 12, I Tim. iii. 16. The Lord speaks as a Jew to Jews; that He was to be delivered to a heathen power, was no small aggravation of His sentence and of the national sin (cf. xii. 8, Acts iii. 13).

34. ἐμπαίξουσιν αὐτῷ κτλ.] See xv. 19, 20, Jo. xix. 1, and cf. Isa. 1. 6, Ev. Petr. 3 ἐνέπτυνον αὐτὸν ταῖς ὄψεσι...καὶ τινες αὐτὸν ἐμάστιζον. The formidable punishment of scourging was kept by Pilate in his own hands, the mockery was left to the Procurator's soldiers, but in both cases Gentiles were the agents; over the mockery He was to sustain at the hands of the High Priest's servants (xiv. 65) and from the chief priests themselves (xv. 31).

αὐτῷ καὶ μαστιγώσουσιν αὐτὸν καὶ ἀποκτενοῦσιν,  
καὶ μετὰ τρεῖς ἡμέρας ἀναστήσεται.

<sup>35</sup> Καὶ προσπορεύονται αὐτῷ Ἰάκωβος καὶ Ἰωάνης 35  
οἱ [δύο] νιοὶ Ζεβεδαίου λέγοντες αὐτῷ Διδάσκαλε,  
θέλομεν ἴνα ὁ ἐάν αἰτήσωμέν σε ποιήσῃς ἡμῖν.

34 καὶ μαστιγ. αυτον κ. εμπτυσ. αυτω ΑΝΧΓΠΣΦ min<sup>pl</sup> syrr arm go om καὶ εμπτυσ.  
αυτω 28 min<sup>nominative</sup> om καὶ μαστ. αυτον D min<sup>paeue</sup> ff g k | αποκτενοῦσιν] crucifigent k + αυτον  
Α\*CNХГПІΨ al<sup>pl</sup> | μετα τρεις ημερας ΙBCDLΔ (a) b (c) ff i k (q) syr<sup>hel(mg)</sup> me] τη τριτη  
ημερα ΑΝΧГПΣΦ min<sup>omnivis</sup> f vg syrr<sup>sin pesh hel(txt)</sup> arm aeth Or 35 οι δυο νιοι BC me]  
om δυο ΙDEFGHLSVΓΔΠΨ min<sup>pl</sup> syr<sup>hier</sup> om οι δυο ΑΚΜΝUXΠ\*Σ min<sup>satmu</sup> go |  
om αυτω ΑΝΧГПΨ al<sup>pl</sup> | αιτησωμεν (-σομεν Ι<sup>c</sup>Α)] ερωτησωμεν D i 2<sup>pe</sup> | om σε ΧΓ al<sup>pl</sup>

the Lord mercifully draws a veil. The order of the R. T. (vv. ll.) is probably based on the supposed order of the events (cf. Jo. l.c.). *Μετὰ τρεῖς ἡμέρας = τῇ τρίτῃ ἡμέρᾳ* Mt., *τῇ ἡμ. τῇ τρ.* Lc.; see viii. 31, note. Lc. adds that this third prediction, like the second (Mc. ix. 32), failed to reach the understandings of the Twelve, notwithstanding its explicitness (*αὐτὸι οὐδὲν τούτων συνῆκαν...λίν τὸ ρῆμα κεκρυμένον...οὐκ ἔγινωσκον τὰ λεγόμενα*).

35—45. PETITION OF THE SONS OF ZEBEDEE. TEACHING BASED ON THE INCIDENT (Mt. xx. 20—28; cf. Lc. xxii. 25f.).

35. καὶ προσπορεύονται αὐτῷ κτλ.] Mt. again (cf. xix. 27) fixes the sequence by beginning the sentence with *τότε*. The occasion was peculiarly inopportune, but there is nothing psychologically improbable in this; cf. ix. 30—34. The incident is wanting in Lc. Mt. agrees with Mc. in the dialogue, but represents the mother of James and John (i.e. Salome, Mt. xxvii. 56, Mc. xv. 40) as the actual petitioner; she was in the company (Mc. l.c.), and though the sons were certainly to some extent responsible (Mt. xx. 20, 22), it is more than probable that maternal ambition prompted their application to our Lord. The recent promise of Mt. xix. 28 would have suggested it; and her near relationship to the Lord (see

Bp Westcott's note on Jo. xix. 25) may have inspired her with some hope of success. *Προσπορεύεσθαι* is ἄπ. λεγ. in the N. T., but fairly frequent in the Lxx. (cf. e.g. Exod. xxiv. 14, 1 Esdr. xx. 28 (29), Sir. xii. 14).

<sup>35</sup> Ιάκωβος καὶ Ἰωάνης] The usual order, probably that of seniority (i. 19, note); Lc. however inverts it occasionally (viii. 51, ix. 28, Acts i. 13), in view of the later pre-eminence of John. Mt. uses the phrase *οι [δύο] νιοὶ* Z. without the personal names here and in xxvi. 37, xxvii. 56; cf. Jo. xxi. 2. Of Zebedee (cf. i. 19) no notice is taken after the parting from his sons; he may have died in the interval, or remained indifferent to the new movement.

*λέγοντες αὐτῷ Διδάσκαλε κτλ.]* According to Mt., Salome approaches with her sons, prostrates herself, and intimates that she has a request to make (*προσκυνοῦσα καὶ ἀτρούσα τι δι' αὐτῶν*). Mc., who has for once lost the pictorial details, preserves the words, putting them, however, into the mouth of the sons. Both the homage offered and the terms of the petition (cf. vi. 23) suggest that the Lord is approached in the character of a King, who can gratify the desires of His subjects without limitation, as indeed in another sense He afterwards declared Himself able to do (Jo. xiv. 13, 14, xv. 16, xvi. 23, 24).

36 <sup>36</sup> ὁ δὲ εἶπεν αὐτοῖς Τί θέλετε [μὲ] ποιήσω ὑμῖν;  
 37 <sup>37</sup> οἱ δὲ εἶπαν αὐτῷ Δὸς ήμῶν ἵνα εἴς σου ἐκ δεξιῶν καὶ  
 38 εἴς ἐξ ἀριστερῶν καθίσωμεν ἐν τῇ δόξῃ σου. <sup>38</sup> ὁ δὲ  
 Ἰησοῦς εἶπεν αὐτοῖς Οὐκ οἴδατε τί αἰτεῖσθε. δύνασθε

<sup>36</sup> tot vers om k | om τι θελετε D | om θελετε a b i | με ποιησω Κ<sup>c</sup>.aΒΨ arm ποιησω  
 CD ποιησαι με ΑΝΧΓΠΣΦ min<sup>pl</sup> go με ποιησαι Κ<sup>c</sup>.bvid L ποιησαι Δ min      <sup>37</sup> αριστε-  
 ρων BLΔΨ] ευωνυμων ΗACDNXΓΠΣΦ min<sup>omn</sup>vid + (vel pr) σου (Η)AC(L)ΝΧΓΠΣΦ  
 min<sup>pl</sup> a f vg syrr me go aeth | om καθισωμεν...σου k | δοξη] βασιλεια της δοξης 13 69  
 124 346      <sup>38</sup> ειπεν] pr αποκριθεις D 1 13 28 69 124 346 2<sup>pe</sup> abffikq syr<sup>sinhier</sup>  
 arm

36. τί θέλετε [μὲ] ποιήσω ὑμῖν;] Mt. τί θέλεις; Mc. blends the two forms τί θέλετε με ποιησαι and τί θ. ποιήσω. On θέλ. ποιήσω (without ἵνα) cf. vi. 25, note, WM., p. 256. The Lord will not grant the prayer until the thing desired has been specified.

37. δὸς ήμῶν ἵνα κτλ.] Mt. εἰπὲ ἵνα καθίσωσιν ὅποι οἱ δύο νιοί μου κτλ. Δὸς ήμῶν ἵνα...καθίσωμεν: cf. WM., p. 423, Blass, Gr. p. 226. Ἐκ δεξιῶν... ἐξ ἀριστερῶν (Mt. εὐωνύμων), next to the King on either hand. The right hand was the place of honour (2 Regn. xvi. 6, 3 Regn. ii. 19, 1 Esdr. iv. 29, Ps. cix. (ex.) 1, Sir. xii. 12, Acts vii. 55 f., Rom. viii. 34); and next to it, the immediate left (Jos. ant. vi. 11. 9 παρακαθισθέντων αὐτῷ (τῷ βασιλεῖ) τοῦ μὲν παιδὸς Ἰωνάθου ἐκ δεξιῶν, Ἀβενήρου δὲ τοῦ ἀρχιστρατήγου ἐκ τῶν ἔτερων). Ἐκ in this phrase denotes the direction—‘starting from’ the right hand (or the left); WM., p. 459. The petition was a bold attempt to raise afresh the question τίς μείζων (ix. 34) which the Lord had already dismissed. Ἐν τῇ δόξῃ σου: cf. Mt. xix. 28 ἐπὶ θρόνου δόξης αὐτοῦ. Ephrem thinks that the idea was suggested by the vision of the Transfiguration in which the Lord appeared in glory between Moses and Elijah.

38. οὐκ οἴδατε τί αἰτεῖσθε] So also Mt., who agrees with Mc. (Bede) in representing the answer as addressed to the two and not to the mother. Jerome: “mater postulat et Dominus

discipulis loquitur, intelligens preces eius ex filiorum descendere voluntate.” With αἰτεῖσθε following αἰτήσωμεν (v. 35) cf. vi. 22 ff. (αἰτησον... αἰτήσῃς... αἰτήσωμαι... γῆράσατο); the middle perhaps calls attention to the self-seeking which inspired the request and was its deepest condemnation—for ή ἀγάπη οὐ ζητεῖ τὰ ξαντῆς. But the petition displayed ignorance (οὐκ οἴδατε: cf. Thph, ὑμεῖς γὰρ νομίζετε αἰσθητὴν εἶναι τὴν ἐμὴν βασιλείαν καὶ αἰσθητὴν τὴν καθέδραν αἰτεῖσθε) as well as lack of love; of the latter the Lord had already spoken at length; the former he proceeds to expose.

δύνασθε πιεῖν κτλ.] The imagery of the petition is sustained in this question. The cup belongs to the royal banquet at which the King sits between His most honoured guests, cf. Gen. xl. 11 f., 2 Regn. xii. 3, 2 Esdr. xii. 1, Esth. 1. 7. But by an easy transition the Lord passes in thought to another set of associations which connects the wine-cup with the allotted share of joy or suffering which is the portion of men and of nations in the course of their life (Ps. xxii. (xxiii.) 5, lxxiv. (lxxv.) 9, cxv. 4 (cxvi. 13), Isa. li. 17 ff., Lam. ii. 13, iv. 21, Ezech. xxiii. 31 ff.). What this cup was in the present case both the brethren afterwards learnt in Gethsemane (xiv. 36). Πίνειν ποτήριον=πιν. πόμα (1 Cor. x. 4), or ἐκ ποτηρίου (1 Cor. xi. 28); cf. 1 Cor. x. 21, xi. 26 f. <sup>4</sup>Ο ἐγώ πίνω: the drinking of the cup

πιεῖν τὸ ποτήριον ὃ ἐγὼ πίνω, ή τὸ βάπτισμα ὃ ἐγὼ  
βαπτίζομαι βαπτισθῆναι; <sup>39</sup> οἱ δὲ εἰπαν αὐτῷ Δυνά- 39  
μεθα. ὃ δὲ Ἰησοῦς εἶπεν αὐτοῖς Τὸ ποτήριον ὃ ἐγὼ  
πίνω πίεσθε, καὶ τὸ βάπτισμα ὃ ἐγὼ βαπτίζομαι

<sup>38 πειν D | η] καὶ AC<sup>3</sup>ΧΓΠΣΦ min<sup>pl</sup> syrr<sup>peesh hec(tx)</sup> go aethl | om o εγω βαπτιζομαι  
syr<sup>sin</sup> 39 ειπαν] λεγουσσι ψ | om αυτω D i 28 al<sup>paue</sup> a b c f f i k q syrr<sup>hier</sup> | δυνο-  
μεθα B\* | το μεν ποτ. AC<sup>3</sup>DNXΓΠΣΦΨ min<sup>omn vid</sup> | om o εγω βαπτ. k</sup>

was coextensive with the incarnate life on earth, but the Passion is of course chiefly in view (Mt. ὃ ἐγὼ μέλλω πίνειν). Hilary: “de calice sacramenti passionis interrogat.”

ἢ τὸ βάπτισμα...βαπτισθῆναι] Mc. only. The royal baths in which the Herods delighted may possibly be in view, though βάπτισμα and βαπτίζομαι are preferred to λοντρόν and λούομαι, in order to bring the imagery into line with the thought which is in the Lord's mind. Of a ‘baptism’ which awaited Him He had already spoken to the Twelve (Lc. xii. 50), and He now reminds the two of it. The metaphorical use of βαπτίζεσθαι is common in the later Gk., e.g. Isa. xxi. 4 ἡ ἀνομία με βαπτίζει, Jos. B. J. iv. 3. 3 ὁ δὴ (a false hope) ἐβάπτισεν τὴν πόλιν, Plut. Galb. 21 ὁ δολήμαστος βεβαπτισμένος: and the metaphor itself is among the most usual in the O. T.; the sufferer is regarded as plunged and half-drowned in his grief or loss, e.g. Ps. xviii. 16, xlii. 7, lxix. 1 ff., cxxiv. 4 f. A reference to the cleansing virtue of the Cross communicated to the soul in Baptism (Thph. : βάπτισμα, ὡς καθαρισμὸν τῶν ἄμαρτιῶν ποιησάμενον) is perhaps unnecessary; nor need we suppose an anticipation of St Paul's thought εἰς τὸν θάνατον αὐτοῦ ἐβαπτισθημεν (Rom. vi. 3). For the construction βάπτισμα ὃ βαπτίζομαι cf. Jo. xvii. 26, Apoc. xvi. 9 (WM., p. 281 f.).

39. δυνάμεθα] A lighthearted and easier reply, which reveals the absence even in a disciple like John of any clear understanding of the

Master's repeated warnings, and at the same time the loyalty of the men who were ready to share the Master's lot, whatever it might be. This trustful δυνάμεθα however falls short of the meaning of the Lord's δύνασθε, which had reference to spiritual power (ix. 23, x. 27); it is a mere profession of moral courage at the best. Contrast St Paul's πάντα ισχύω ἐν τῷ ἐνδυναμούντι με (Phil. iv. 13).

πίεσθε, βαπτισθήσεσθε] This then they shall do, since they have strength for it; they shall share the Master's cup and baptism. The promise was fulfilled in the case of both brothers, but in singularly different ways. James, as Origen already points out (*in Mt. t. xvi. 6*), fell under the sword of Herod Agrippa I. (Acts xii. 2); John was condemned by the Emperor to exile in Patmos (Apoc. i. 9). Both suffered with Christ, one as a martyr, the other as a confessor; one by an early death, the other throughout a long life. The Lord's words are thus seen to assign to these two no more than He assigns to all disciples (Mc. viii. 34, Rom. viii. 17, 2 Tim. ii. 11 ff.). Yet it was natural that in an age of persecution the words should be felt to be peculiarly applicable to martyrdom strictly so called, and this application is early and widespread; cf. Polyc. *mārt.* 14 εὐλογῶ σε ὅτι κατηξίωσάς με...τοῦ λαβεῖν με μέρος ἐν ἀριθμῷ τῶν μαρτύρων ἐν τῷ ποτηρίῳ τοῦ Χριστοῦ σου. Cyril. Hier. *cat.* iii. 10 τὸ μαρτύριον γὰρ οὐδὲ βάπτισμα καλεῖν ὃ σωτήρ, λέγων Δύνασθε κτλ. Victor: τούτεστιν 'μαρτυρίου

40 βαπτισθήσεσθε· ἁ τὸ δὲ καθίσαι ἐκ δεξιῶν μου ἥ ἐξ εὐωνύμων οὐκ ἔστιν ἐμὸν δοῦναι, ἀλλ' οἰς ἡτοίμασται.  
41 ἄτακούσαντες οἱ δέκα ἤρξαντο ἀγανάκτεῖν περὶ

40 η] καὶ ΑCNXΓΠΣΦ min<sup>pl</sup> k syrr arm aeth | ευωνυμων] + μον ψ min<sup>vix mu</sup>  
syrr<sup>sin pesh</sup> aeth | δοῦναι] om syrhier + νμν c f (k) vg<sup>edduddpl</sup> aeth | αλλοις  
a b d ff k aeth αλλω syr<sup>sin</sup> [ητοίμασται] + υπο του πατρος μον Ι\*<sup>c,b</sup> Φ 1 209 1071 alperpauc  
a syr<sup>hel(mg)</sup> + υπο του π. 604 41 οι λοιποι δέκα D a b c ff q syrhier me | ηρξαντο  
αγανάκτειν] γηανακτησαν A 1 alpauc q vg<sup>sixt</sup>

καταξιωθήσεσθε καὶ ταῦτὰ πείσεσθε ἀπέρ ἐγώ.<sup>1</sup> The passage was regarded as investing martyrdom with a baptismal character, cf. the treatise *De rebapt.* 14 “homines non solum aqua verum etiam sanguine suo proprio habere baptizari, ita ut et solo hoc baptismate baptizati fidem integrum et dignationem sinceram lavacri possint adipisci.” For examples of the abuse of the Lord’s words by Gnostic sects of the second century, see Iren. i. 21. 2, Hipp. *haer.* v. 8. The story of St John’s being compelled by Domitian to drink a cup of poison (*Tisch. act. App. apocr.*, p. 269) is possibly a realistic attempt to shew that the words received in his case a literal fulfilment. The same may perhaps be said of the statement said to be due to Papias, that St John as well as St James was slain by the Jews (see *Encycl. Bibl.* ii., p. 2509 ff.).

40. τὸ δὲ καθίσαι κτλ.] The Lord disclaims the right to dispose in an arbitrary manner of the higher rewards of the Kingdom. Cf. Thphrt.: ὠσπερανεὶ βασιλεὺς δίκαιος προεκάθητο ἀγώνος τινος, εἴτα προέλθοιεν αὐτῷ τινες φίλοι αὐτοῦ καὶ εἴποιεν Δός ήμίν τοὺς στεφάνους, εἴπεν ἀν Οὐκ ἔστιν ἐμὸν τὸ δοῦναι, ἀλλ' εἴ τις ἀγωνίστει καὶ νικήσει, ἐκείνῳ ἡτοίμασται ὁ στέφανος. Euth.: οὐκ ἔστιν ὅπερ εἴπεν ἀδυναμίας, ἀλλὰ δικαιοσύνης. Yet in some sense He could not give what was asked, seeing that it belonged to Another to determine whose it should be. Christ is indeed the appointed Distributor of all eternal rewards

(2 Tim. iv. 8, Apoc. xxii. 12), but He will distribute them in accordance with the Father’s dispositions. This, which is implied in οἰς ἡτοίμασται, is expressed by Mt., who adds ὑπὸ τοῦ πατρός μον—a form of words frequent in Mt. (vii. 21, x. 32 f., xi. 27 &c.) and Lc. (ii. 49, x. 22, xxii. 29, xxiv. 49), but not found in Mc. For ἔτοιμάζειν (*προετοιμ.*) in reference to Divine preparations see Dalman, *Worte*, i. p. 104 ff., and cf. Ps. vii. 14, xxii. (xxiii.) 5, Mt. xxv. 34, 41, Lc. ii. 31, Rom. ix. 23, 1 Cor. ii. 9, Eph. ii. 10, 2 Tim. ii. 21, Heb. xi. 16; it is used, as the exx. shew, either of persons or things, but chiefly, as here, of the latter. Οἰς ἡτοίμασται involves an ἐκλογῆ, but on what the selection turns does not appear. The ἀλλά which precedes does not contrast those to whom the Lord reserves the right of giving the reward with others to whom it is not His to give—which would have been expressed rather by εἰ μή—but those who shall receive with those who shall not; i.e. the true complement of the sentence is δοθήσεται, not ἐμόν ἔστιν δοῦναι. In the sense which is here in view the Son does not give to any. On the reading ἀλλοις, implied in some of the versions, see Nestle, *T. C.* p. 37.

41. καὶ ἀκούσαντες κτλ.] If the rest of the Twelve were not present, the report naturally reached them; and it at once revived the spirit of jealousy which had been checked by the teaching of ix. 35 ff., and went far to create a new group in the Apostolate (οἱ δέκα; Mt., Mc.). Hitherto Peter,

Ιακώβου καὶ Ἰωάνου. <sup>42</sup> καὶ προσκαλεσάμενος αὐτοὺς 42  
ὁ Ἰησοῦς λέγει αὐτοῖς Οἴδατε ὅτι οἱ δοκοῦντες ἄρχειν  
τῶν ἐθνῶν κατακυριεύουσιν αὐτῶν, καὶ οἱ μεγάλοι  
αὐτῶν κατεξουσιάζουσιν αὐτῶν. <sup>43</sup> οὐχ οὕτως δέ 43

41 Ιακ. κ. Ιωαν.] τῶν δύο αδελφῶν Α 91

minfereom | οἰδατέ] pr οὐκ 13 69 108 124 127 | κ. οἱ μεγάλοι αὐτῶν] κ. οἱ βασιλεῖς  
NC\*vid κ. οἱ μεγ. Σ om κ. οἱ μεγ. αυτ. κατεξ. αυτ. syr<sup>sin</sup>

James and John had formed a recognised triumvirate; now Peter joins and probably leads the other nine in their indignation. The bitter feeling was perhaps not expressed in the presence of the two—both Mc. and Mt. use ἀγανακτεῖν περί, not ἀγ. κατά (Sap. v. 22)—but it threatened the harmony and spiritual life of the Apostolate, and called for immediate correction. Euth. (*in Mt.*): οὗτοι πάντες ἡσαν ἀτελεῖς, μήπω τοῦ θείου πνεύματος ἐπιφοιτήσαντος αὐτοῖς.

42. καὶ προσκαλεσάμενος κτλ.] On προσκαλεῖσθαι see iii. 13, note. The Lord called the ten to him, and without referring to the circumstances, pointed out that neither ambition nor jealousy had any place in the brotherhood of the Son of Man. The tone of His words is singularly gentle; the occasion (for there had been great provocation) called for definite teaching rather than for censure.

οἶδατε ὅτι οἱ δοκοῦντες κτλ.] He begins with matters within their cognisance (cf. x. 19). They knew enough of the Gentile world to be aware that the sort of greatness which they desired was just that which the Gentiles sought. Οἱ δοκοῦντες ἄρχειν, ‘those who are regarded as rulers,’ Mt. οἱ ἄρχοντες; for Mc.’s unusual phrase cf. Gal. ii. 2, 6, 9, with Lightfoot’s note (cf. Hastings, *D. C. G.* ii. p. 538 b), and see 3 Macc. v. 6 οἱ πάσης σκέπης ἔρημοι δοκ. εἶναι, 22 τοῖς ταλαιπώροις δοκοῦσιν, 4 Macc. xiii. 14 μὴ φοβηθῶμεν τὸν δοκοῦντα ἀποκτενεῖν, and esp. Sus. 5 (LXX. and Th.) οἱ ἐδόκουν κυβερνᾶν τὸν λαόν. The Master recognised the Empire and other institutions

42 οἱ δὲ ἂς προσκ. αὐτοὺς ΑΝΧΙΓ αἱ

βασιλεῖς

43 om δε D syr<sup>sin</sup> arm

of society as facts belonging to the Divine order of things (xii. 17), but He did not admit that the power of such a ruler as Tiberius was a substantial dignity; it rested on a reputation which might be suddenly wrecked, as indeed the later history of the Empire clearly proved. Τῶν ἐθνῶν, see v. 33, note (Thph. : τὸ ἀρπάζειν τὴν τιμὴν καὶ τῶν πρωτείων ἐράνι ἐθνικὸν ἐστιν). As good Jews the disciples would shrink from following Gentile precedent (cf. Mt. vi. 32). Οἱ μεγάλοι αὐτῶν, the great men of the heathen world, the officials and other persons in authority or influence (οἱ μεγιστᾶνες, vi. 21). These Gentile magnates exercise arbitrary rule over their subjects and inferiors, whether as lords paramount (κατακυριεύουσιν, Mt., Mc., Vg. *dominantur*) or as subordinates (κατεξουσιάζουσιν, Mt., Mc.). For κατακυριεύειν see Gen. i. 28, ix. 1, Ps. ix. 26, 31 (x. 5, 10), cix. (cx.) 2, Acts xix. 16, and esp. 1 Pet. v. 3, where there is possibly a reminiscence of the Lord’s saying; of κατεξουσιάζειν no other example is quoted, but ἐξουσιάζειν occurs in Lc. xxii. 25, 1 Cor. vi. 12, vii. 4 bis, and both verbs doubtless carry the sense of ἐξουσία (‘derived authority,’ cf. i. 22, note). With κατακυριεύουσιν, κατεξουσιάζουσιν, cf. κατάρχειν in Numbers xvi. 13.

43, 44. οὐχ οὕτως δέ ἐστιν ἐν ὑμῖν]

Another order prevails in (ἐν, denoting the sphere, WM., p. 483) the new Israel, whose standards of greatness are wholly unlike those of the Gentile world. Jesus had already inaugurated these new conditions of social life—

¶ ΤΝ ἐστιν ἐν ὑμῖν· ἀλλ' ὃς τὸν θέλη μέγας γενέσθαι ἐν  
44 ὑμῖν, ἐσται ὑμῶν διάκονος,<sup>44</sup> καὶ ὃς τὸν θέλη ἐν ὑμῖν  
45 εἶναι πρῶτος, ἐσται πάντων δοῦλος.<sup>45</sup> καὶ γὰρ ὁ νίος  
τοῦ ἀνθρώπου οὐκ ἥλθεν διακονηθῆναι ἀλλὰ διακονῆσαι,  
καὶ δοῦναι τὴν ψυχὴν αὐτοῦ λύτρον ἀντὶ πολλῶν.<sup>¶</sup>

¶ syrhier 43 εστιν NBC\*DLΔΨ latt<sup>vtrplvse</sup>] εσται AC<sup>3</sup>ΝΧΓΠΣΦ min<sup>omnivid</sup> q arm me go |  
εσται] εστω ΝCΧΔ 69 2<sup>pe</sup> alpaue | νυμν διακ. 604 44 εν νυμν ειναι πρωτος ΝBCLΔ(Ψ)  
28 alpaue latt me] νυμων γενεσθαι πρ. AC<sup>3</sup>(D)ΧΓΠ(Σ)Φ min<sup>pl</sup> go aeth | εσται] εστω  
min<sup>paue</sup> | παντων] νυμων D 2<sup>pe</sup> alperpaue a aeth

the true reading is ἐστίν, not ἐσται (see app. crit.)—both by example (*v. 45*), and precept (*ix. 35*). The latter He now repeats with some amplification. Service is henceforth to precede greatness, preeminence can only be secured by a true *servus servorum Dei*. Comp. 1 Cor. ix. 19, 2 Cor. iv. 5, Clem. R. 1 Cor. 48, and for the necessary safeguard of a Christian ambition, see Gal. v. 13; the δούλεια which ennobles is that of disinterested love, based on absolute submission to God and Christ, and consistent with a true ἔλευθερία. That the Kingdom of God admits of degrees of spiritual greatness is taught also in Mt. v. 19 (ἔλαχιστος...μέγας κληρόστεται ἐν τῇ βασ. τῶν οὐρανῶν). On διάκονος...δοῦλος see ix. 35, note, and with πάντων δοῦλος cf. 1 Cor. ix. 19, 2 Cor. iv. 5.

45. καὶ γὰρ ὁ νίος] On καὶ γάρ, Vg. *nam et*, see WM., p. 560. The law of service is recommended by the example of the Head of the race; even the Son of God made its fulfilment the purpose of His life, when He took upon Him the μορφὴ δούλου and became the Son of Man. For ἥλθεν in reference to the Lord's entrance into the world cf. i. 38, ii. 17; it is used also of the Baptist (*ix. 11 ff.*, *Jo. i. 7*) regarded as a Divine messenger. The purpose of the Lord's advent was to minister (*Lc. xxii. 27*, *Rom. xv. 8*); His life as a whole was a ministry (διακονῆσαι, not διακονεῖν); if He received the services of others

(as of angels, *i. 13*, women, *xv. 41*), it was not for this end He came. Nothing could more clearly mark the contrast between the Kingdom which is not of this world (*Jo. xviii. 36*) and earthly kingdoms as they existed in the days of Christ. The pass. διακονεῖσθαι occurs again in 2 Cor. iii. 3, viii. 19 f., but in connexion with the service rendered; for its use with reference to the person who receives service cf. Blass, *Gr.* p. 184.

καὶ δοῦναι τὴν ψυχὴν κτλ.] Vg. et daret vitam suam redemptionem pro multis; Wycliffe: “and zeue his lyf azen biyng for manye” (Tindale, Crammer, &c. “for the redemption of many”; A.V., R.V., “a ransom for many”). The ministry of the Son of Man culminates in the sacrifice of His life. He had required this supreme service from His disciples (*viii. 35*), and He will be the first to render it. Yet His sacrifice is to be doubly unique. The disciple may lose his life (*ἀπολέσει τὴν ψυχὴν αὐτοῦ*), the Master only can give it in the fullest sense (*Jo. x. 18*, *Gal. i. 4*, *I Tim. ii. 6*, *Tit. ii. 14*). Further, whilst the disciple parts with his life for the sake of Christ and the Gospel, the Master gives it as a λύτρον ἀντὶ πολλῶν—His Death is to be a supreme act of service to humanity. For a full discussion of λύτρον and its cognate words see Westcott, *Hebrews*, p. 295 f. Λύτρον, which occurs in the LXX. fairly often (*Exod.*<sup>2</sup>, *Lev.*<sup>5</sup>, *Num.*<sup>8</sup>,

<sup>46</sup> Καὶ ἔρχονται εἰς Ἱερειχῶ· καὶ ἐκπορευομένου 46

46 ερχεται D min<sup>2</sup> syr<sup>sm</sup> a b ff g i r Or<sup>bis</sup> | Ιερειχω (1<sup>o</sup>) B<sup>2</sup> (om καὶ ερχ. εἰς I. B<sup>\*</sup>) CFLΨ] Ιερειχω ΝΑΔΧΓΔΠΣΦ min<sup>omnivid</sup> | εκπορευομενου...ικανον cum turba magna k

Prov.<sup>2</sup>, Is.<sup>1</sup>), and in various senses answering to בְּפַרְזֵל, בְּרִזֵל, נָגָלָה, מְחִיר, is used in the N.T. only in this context (Mt., Mc.); ἀντιλυτρον, which is a variant for λύτρωσις in Ps. xlviij. (xlii.) 2, appears in 1 Tim. ii. 6, also in reference to the sacrifice of Christ. In certain cases the Law provided λύτρα τῆς ψυχῆς (or λ. περὶ ψυχῆς), a price for a life which had been dedicated or lost (Exod. xxi. 30, xxx. 12; cf. Num. xxxv. 31 f.). The Lord contemplates a λύτρον which is ψυχὴ ἀντὶ ψυχῆς (Lev. xxiv. 18), His own ψυχὴ (xiv. 34) given as a ransom for the ψυχαί of men. The idea was not unfamiliar to the later Jews, cf. 2 Macc. vii. 37, 38, 4 Macc. i. 11, and esp. xvii. 22 ...ἀσπερ ἀντὶ ψυχον γεγονότας τῆς τοῦ ἔθνους ἀμαρτίας· καὶ διὰ τοῦ αἵματος τῶν εὐσεβῶν ἑκείνων καὶ τοῦ ἰλαστηρίου θανάτου αὐτῶν ἡ θεία πρόνοια τὸν Ἰσραὴλ προκακωθέντα διέσωσεν: something of this kind was probably in the mind of Caiaphas, Jo. xi. 50, and the disciples may have understood the Lord to say that He was about to offer himself as a victim for the redemption (Lc. ii. 38, xxiv. 21) of Israel. Ἀντὶ πολλῶν: St Paul writes ὑπὲρ πάντων (1 Tim. l.c.); St John, περὶ δόλου τοῦ κόσμου (1 Jo. ii. 2). For the present the Lord is content with the less definite statement, which if it does not involve, certainly does not exclude the other. Jerome's comment "non dixit...‘pro omnibus,’ sed ‘pro multis,’ id est, pro his qui credere voluerint" is quite unwarranted; cf. Rom. v. 12, 15, 18. Ἀντὶ belongs to the imagery of the λύτρον, cf. viii. 37 ἀντάλλαγμα τῆς ψυχῆς, and Mt. v. 38, xvii. 27; elsewhere ὑπέρ is used in this connexion (xiv. 24, Jo. xi. 50 f., xvii. 19, xviii. 14, Rom. v. 8, xiv. 15, 1 Cor. i. 13, xv. 3, 2 Cor. v.

15, Gal. i. 4, ii. 20, Eph. v. 2, 25, 1 Thess. v. 10, 1 Tim. l.c., Tit. ii. 14, Heb. ii. 9, x. 12, 1 Pet. ii. 21, iii. 18, 1 Jo. iii. 16), or even περὶ (1 Jo. ii. 2, and as a variant in several of the passages cited for ὑπέρ). For an early expansion of λύτρον ἀντὶ πολλῶν see the beautiful passage in *Ep. ad Diogn.* ix. 2.

46—52. PASSAGE THROUGH JERICHO. BLIND BARTIMAEUS RESTORED TO SIGHT (Mt. xx. 29—34, Lc. xviii. 35—43).

46. καὶ ἔρχονται εἰς Ἱερειχῶ] If the modern et-Taiyibeh is the site of Ephraim (Jo. xi. 54), the place of the Lord's last retirement (see note on x. 1), a road still "marked by Roman pavement" (G. A. Smith, *H. G.*, p. 269 n.) led straight from the spot to Jericho. The traveller from Ephraim who reached Jericho by this road would enter through a gate on the N. side of the city, and in order to proceed to Jerusalem, he would cross to the west gate: cf. ἔρχονται εἰς (Mc.), ἐκπορευομ. ἀπό (Mt., Mc.), εἰσελθὼν διήρχετο (Lc.). Jericho is mentioned in the Gospels only here and in the parable of Lc. x. 30 ff., but the Lord and His disciples had doubtless passed through it before, perhaps more than once, when journeying to Jerusalem; the journey to Bethany from Peraea (Jo. x. 40, xi. 1, 7, 17) must at least have led Him past the town. Now however He enters with a crowd of followers (Lc. xviii. 36), as a great Rabbi on His way to the Passover; and His passage through the city bears the character of an ovation. Ἔρχονται, the 'historic' present (Hawkins, *H. S.*, p. 116).

The Jericho of our Lord's time (Lxx. (B) and N.T. Ἱερειχῶ, WH.,

αὐτοῦ ἀπὸ Ἱερειχῷ καὶ τῶν μαθητῶν αὐτοῦ καὶ  
όχλου ἵκανοῦ ὁ νιὸς Τίμαιον Βαρτιμαῖος, τυφλὸς

<sup>46</sup> απὸ Ιερειχῷ ΝΒCLΨ (απὸ Ιερειχῷ ΑΧΓΔΠΣΦ min<sup>omn vid</sup>)] εκειθεν D a b f ff i q r<sup>vid</sup>  
go Or<sup>bis</sup> | καὶ 3<sup>ο</sup>] μετὰ DΨ a b f ff i l r arm go | o νιὸς] om o ΑΧΓΠΦ min<sup>pl</sup> go | om  
o νιὸς Τιμ. Βαρτ. k | Βαρτιμαῖος D (a b d ff q) | τυφλὸς ΝΒDLΔΨ 124 al<sup>pauc</sup> me go Or]  
pr o ΑΧΓΠΣΦ min<sup>pl</sup>

Notes, p. 155; Josephus, 'Ιεριχῶν or 'Ιεριχώ, gen. -ōv̄s, represented by the modern *er Riha*) was about five miles W. of the Jordan and fifteen N.E. of Jerusalem, near the mouth of the *Wady Kelt*, and more than a mile south of the site of the ancient town. The fertility of the climate and soil, described in glowing terms by Jos. *B. J.* viii. 3, attracted Herod the Great and Archelaus, who adorned it with public buildings and a palace. Under the Procurators it seems to have been held by a Roman garrison (*B. J.* ii. 18. 6). Yet the town was not given over to a Hellenistic population like the cities of the Decapolis, or the neighbouring Phasaelis; Priests and Levites from Jerusalem found their way thither (*Lc. x. 31 f.*), and the Lord, who seems never to have entered Tiberias, did not hesitate to be a guest at a house in Jericho (*Lc. xix. 5*). His arrival there marks another distinct stage in the journey to the Cross; by publicly entering Jericho He places Himself in the power of the Procurator and the Great Sanhedrin.

καὶ ἐκπορευομένου αὐτοῦ κτλ.] Similarly Mt. Both Mt. and Mc. omit the striking story of Zacchaeus (*Lc. xix. 2—10*), which appears to have had no place in the common tradition. Further, they both differ from Lc. with regard to the time and place of the miracle (*Lc. ἐν τῷ ἔγγιζεν αὐτὸν εἰς Ἱερειχώ*, cf. *xix. 1*). Augustine's suggestion (*de cons. ev. ii. 126*) "duo similia similiterque miracula fecisse Iesum" is not recommended to the modern student by the alternative "mentiri evan-

gelium"; the trustworthiness of the Gospels is now seen to be maintained and not impeached by a frank recognition of their independence in details. In the present instance the statement of Mc., which is in every way fuller and more precise, is probably to be preferred to that of Lc. "Οὐχίους ἵκανοῦ: Μτ. ἡκολούθουσεν αὐτὸν (cf. Mc. x. 32) ὄχλος πολύς. Ἰκανός=πολύς, here only in Mc., is frequent in Lc. (Ev.<sup>6</sup>, Acts<sup>10</sup>), and occurs occasionally in the later books of the Canon (Hab. ii. 13 λαὸι ἵκανοι...ζέθην πολλά, Zach. vii. 3 ζῆδη ἵκανὰ ζῆτη), especially in 1—3 Macc.; the word was used in this sense by the comic poets, and in colloquial and the later literary Greek.

ὁ νιὸς Τίμαιον Βαρτιμαῖος] Mc. only. Bengel is doubtless right in inferring: "notus apostolorum tempore Bartimaeus"; cf. Victor: ὄνομαστὶ δεδήλωκεν δὲ Μᾶρκος...ώς ἐπιφανῆ τότε οὖτα. Cf. v. 22, xiv. 3, xv. 21. The Greek name Τίμαιος, familiar as that of the interlocutor in the *Timaeus* of Plato, probably covers an Aramaic name, which also underlies the patronymic Βαρτιμαῖος. According to Jerome (*interpr. hebr. nom.*, ed. Lagarde, p. 66), the true form of the latter word is Barsenia, *filius caecus* (ܒܪܣܢܝܐ); but our existing Greek mss. lend no support to this reading. Βαρτιμαῖος suggests 'ΑΝΤΩΝΙΟΥΣ, where 'ΑΝΤΩΝΙΟΣ may be either an adjective 'unclean' or a personal name. In either case the accent ought probably to follow the analogy of Βαρθολομαῖος (Bengel's "proparoxytonon ut ipsum Τίμαιος" rests upon the assumption that Βαρτ. is compounded of Βάρ, Τίμαιος).

προσαίτης, ἐκάθητο παρὰ τὴν ὁδόν. <sup>47</sup>καὶ ἀκούσας 47  
ὅτι Ἰησοῦς ὁ Ναζαρηνός ἐστιν ἤρξατο κράζειν καὶ  
λέγειν Υἱὲ Δαυεὶδ Ἰησοῦ, ἐλέησόν με. <sup>48</sup>καὶ ἐπετί- 48

<sup>46</sup> προσαίτης ΚΒΛΔΨ κ με] προσαίτων (post οδον) AC<sup>2</sup> (om C\*) ΧΓΠΣΦ  
min<sub>fere</sub> omn επαιτων (item post οδ.) (D) 2<sup>po</sup>: mendicans a b c d fff q vg syrr go aeth  
47 εστιν ο N. B | Ναζαρηνος BLΔΨ i 118 209 a b c f k vg Or] Ναζωραιος ΚΑC(E)X  
(Γ) ΠΣΦ min<sup>pl</sup> q\* go | *τις* νιος Δ. 2<sup>po</sup> | νιε] νιος DK 69 409 Or ο νιος AM\*ΧΓΠ al  
min<sup>pl</sup> | om Ιησους Ψ

It must be admitted that we should have expected Mc. to write Βαρτιμαῖος, ὁ ἐστιν νιὸς Τίμαιον (cf. iii. 17, vii. 11, 34, xiv. 36); yet see v. 47 *νιὲ Δαυεὶδ Ἰησοῦ*. Both the Sinaitic Syriac and the Peshitta read “Timaeus son of Timaeus” (تیمایوس اب تیمایوس), as if Mc. had written Τίμαιος ὁ νιὸς Τίμαιον, but this may be due to the difficulty of rendering the Greek into Syriac exactly without iteration. On the whole question see Nestle, *Marg.* p. 83 ff., and in Hastings, *D. B.* iv., p. 762; and Schmiedel in *Encycl. Bibl.* i., s.v. *Bartimaeus*.

τνφλὸς προσαίτης] Προσαίτης is a late word (Plutarch, Lucian), found also in Jo. ix. 8; Lc. uses ἐπαιτεῖν here and in xvi. 3, and αἰτεῖν ἐλεημοσίνην in Acts iii. 2. Παρὰ τὴν ὁδόν: cf. πρὸς τὴν θύραν τοῦ ιεροῦ Acts l. c.; on παρά after a verb of rest see WM., p. 503, Blass, *Gr.* p. 138. Probably Bartimaeus had his seat on the high road just outside the wall, so as to attract the attention of all who passed in and out of the gate. Mt., who agrees with Mc. against Lc. as to the locality, differs from both in representing two men as subjects of the miracle (ἴδον δύο τνφλοι...ἀνέβλεψαν); cf. Mt. viii. 28 δύο δαιμονιζόμενοι, where Mc. has ἄνθρωπος and Lc. ἀνήρ τις; in ix. 27 Mt. records another miracle in which two blind men are healed. See note on v. 2. Thph., following Aug., suggests: ἐνδέχεται δὲ δύο μὲν εἶναι τοὺς λαθέντας, τὸν δὲ ἐπιφανέστερον αὐτῶν τοῦτον εἶναι τὸν παρὰ τῷ Μάρκῳ μημυονεύμενον.

This is possible, but in such cases the student may well be content to note the apparent discrepancy in the two traditions. If he must harmonise, he will be wise to follow Tatian (Hill, *Diatess.*, p. 167), in constructing his narrative on the basis of Mc. See the curious fusion of this narrative with that of Jo. ix. in *Ev. Nicod.* c. vi.

47. ἀκούσας ὅτι Ἰησοῦς ὁ N. ἐστιν] The tramp of many feet (Lc. ὅχλον διαπορευομένον) told him that something unusual was happening; and in answer to his enquiries (Lc. ἐπννθάνετο τι εἴη τοῦτο) he learnt that Jesus was passing (Mt. παράγει, Lc. παρέρχεται). ‘Ο Ναζαρηνός, Lc. ὁ Ναζωραῖος: on the distribution of the two forms in the N. T. see i. 24, note, and on the origin of the latter form cf. Dalman, *Gr.* p. 141 note. ἤρξατο κράζειν: Mt. ἔκραξαν, Lc. ἐβόησεν (but ἔκραζεν later on).

*νιὲ Δαυεὶδ κτλ.]* Κύριε, νιὲ Δ. Mt., Ιησοῦν, νιὲ Δ. Lc. Cf. Mt. ix. 27, xv. 22; in Mc., Lc. νιὸς Δαυεὶδ as an appellative occurs here only. Bengel: “magna fides, quod caecus filium Davidis adpellat quem ei Nazoraeum praedicabat populus.” The use of the term reminds the reader that the Lord is now on Judaean soil. Once indeed the identification of Jesus with the Son of David had been suggested in Galilee (Mt. xii. 23), but the cry does not seem to have been taken up. At Jerusalem all Jews thought of David as their father, and of Messiah as the Son of David in an especial sense (xi. 10, xii. 35, Jo. vii.

μων αὐτῷ πολλοὶ ἵνα σιωπήσῃ· ὁ δὲ πολλῷ μᾶλλον

49 ἔκραζεν Υἱὲ Δανείδ, ἐλέησόν με. <sup>49</sup> καὶ στὰς ὁ Ἰησοῦς

εἶπεν Φωνήσατε αὐτὸν. καὶ φωνοῦσι τὸν τυφλὸν

§ W<sup>ε</sup> 50 λέγοντες αὐτῷ Θάρσει, ἔγειρε· φωνεῖ σε. <sup>50</sup> ὁ δὲ

§ 7 ἀποβαλὼν τὸ ἱμάτιον αὐτοῦ ἀναπηδήσας ἤλθεν πρὸς

48 ο δε] αυτος δε Ψ 1071 49 φωνησατε αυτον NBCLΔ min<sup>pauc</sup> k syr<sup>hel(mg)</sup> me] αυτον φωνηθηναι ADXGΠΣΦ min<sup>pl</sup> latt<sup>vt</sup> pl<sup>vg</sup> (syrr<sup>pesh hel(txt)</sup> arm) aeth | και φωνουσι τον τυφλον λεγ. αυτω] οι δε λεγουσιν τω τυφλω D (2<sup>ρε</sup>) a (b ff) i q | θαρσει] θαρρων (vel θαρσ.) I 13 28 69 209 346 | εγειραι U 736 al<sup>nomn</sup> εγειρουν I 13 28 69 209 346 50 αποβαλων] αποβαλλων Δ επιβαλων 2<sup>ρε</sup> syr<sup>sin vid</sup> | αναπηδησας ΚBDLM<sup>mg</sup>ΔΨ 1071 2<sup>ρε</sup> alperpauc latt syr<sup>hel(mg)</sup> me go Or] αναστας ACM<sup>txt</sup> ΧΠΣΦΔ min<sup>pl</sup> syr<sup>sin pesh hel(txt)</sup> arm aeth om Γ | προς τ. I.] προς αυτον D min<sup>pauc</sup> latt<sup>vt</sup> pl<sup>vg</sup>

42; cf. Dalman, *Worte*, i. p. 262); for the sources of the latter belief see note on xii. 35.

The petition "O Son of David," &c. in the English Litany of 1544, had been used in some mediaeval devotions (Blunt, *Ann. PB.*, p. 234), but the corresponding versicle in the third Sarum Litany for St Mark's Day had *Fili Dei viri* and not *Fili David*. The *Kyrie eleison* of both East and West is due to the Psalter of the LXX. (Ps. vi. 2, ix. 13, &c.) and not directly to the present context; see *Intr. to the O. T. in Gk.*, p. 473.

48. ἐπετίμων αὐτῷ πολλοῖ] The remonstrance came, Lc. says, from the crowd in front (*οἱ προάγοντες*, cf. xi. 9), i.e. the man began his litany before Jesus Himself had reached the spot. The cry spoilt the harmony of the triumph. Why should this beggar force his misery on the attention of the great Prophet? Victor: οὐκ ἐπιτρέποντες τῷ τυφλῷ βοῶν, ὀσπερ ἐπὶ βασιλέως παριόντος. Cf. x. 13. The indignant *σώπα* (Mt., Mc., *σίγα* Lc.), was general (*πολλοί*, Mc., ὁ *ἄχλος*, Mt.). But it seemed only to add vigour to the reiterated *ἐλέησον* (*πολλῷ μᾶλλον ἔκραζεν* Mc., Lc., *μεῖζον ἔκραξαν*, Mt.).

49. στὰς ὁ Ι. εἶπεν Φωνήσατε] Mt. στὰς...ἔφωνησεν, Lc. σταθεὶς...ἔκελευσεν...ἀχθῆναι. On στάς, σταθείς, see

iii. 24 f. The procession was stopped, and the call was passed on to the front till it reached Bartimaeus. Reproofs were at once changed into words of encouragement, which Mc. alone has preserved in a Greek sentence, the music of which caught the fancy of Longfellow. Θάρσει, Vg. *animaequior esto*; cf. Gen. xxxv. 17, Exod. xiv. 13, xx. 20, 3 Regn. xvii. 13 (= נִירַת לְאָ), &c., Mt. ix. 2, 22, xiv. 27 (Mc. vi. 50), Jo. xvi. 33, Acts xxiii. 11. St Paul (2 Cor.<sup>5</sup>) and Heb.<sup>1</sup> write *θαρρεῖν*, and this form occurs also in Prov. i. 21 (*θαρροῦσα*), xxxi. 11 θ (θαρρεῖ), Bar. iv. 21 B (*θαρρεῖτε*), 27 B (*θαρρήσατε*), 4 Macc. xiii. 11, xvii. 4 (*θάρρει*). In view of the last four references it is precarious to lay stress on the circumstance that in the N. T. θαρσ. is limited to the imperative. Φωνεῖ σε: so the Lord's *φωνήσατε* is rightly interpreted by those who execute it. He calls through the voices of His messengers.

50. ὁ δὲ ἀποβαλὼν...ἀναπηδήσας...πρὸς τὸν Ι.] Mc. only. The *ἱμάτιον* is thrown aside in his haste; cf. 4 Regn. vii. 15 ἵδον πᾶσα ἡ ὁδὸς πλήρης ἱμάτιων...ῶν ἔρριψεν Συρία ἐν τῷ θαμβεῖσθαι αὐτούς, Heb. xii. 1 ὅγκον ἀποθέμενοι πάντα...τρέχωμεν: the point is missed in the tame *ἐπιβαλών* of the Syr.<sup>sin</sup> and one of the cursive mss. (vv. ll.). Ἀναπηδᾷν is ἄπ. λεγ. in the

τὸν Ἰησοῦν. <sup>51</sup> καὶ ἀποκριθεὶς αὐτῷ ὁ Ἰησοῦς εἶπεν 51  
 Τί σοι θέλεις ποιῆσαι; ὁ δὲ τυφλὸς εἶπεν<sup>¶</sup> αὐτῷ 52  
 ·Ραββουνέι, ἵνα ἀναβλέψω. <sup>52</sup> καὶ ὁ Ἰησοῦς εἶπεν 52  
 αὐτῷ ·Υπαγε, ἡ πίστις σου σέσωκέν σε. καὶ εὐθὺς  
 ἀνέβλεψεν, καὶ ἤκολούθει αὐτῷ ἐν τῇ ὁδῷ.

<sup>51 εἰπεν]</sup> λεγει ΑΧΓΠ<sup>mg</sup> αἱρε | ποιησω] pr ινα 604 αἱραις b c | ραββουνει B (ραβ-  
 βουνι ΝΑСЕ<sup>2</sup>FHKLMSUXΓΠΣΦΨ min<sup>mu</sup> ραββονι 604\* αἱραις f vg aeth) syr<sup>hel</sup> arm  
 (Or)] κυριε ραββει D a b ff i ραββι 38 k q syr<sup>pesh</sup> κυριε 409 <sup>52 ηκολουθησαν 121</sup>  
 346 409 al<sup>vix</sup> mu r<sup>vid</sup> ηκολουθησε 604<sup>corr</sup> | αυτω 2°] τω Ιησου M<sup>(txt et mg<sup>2</sup>)</sup> XΓΠΣΦ min<sup>pl</sup>  
 syr<sup>hel</sup>(txt) go Or | om εν τη οδω 736\*

N. T., but occurs in 1 Regn. xx. 34 (ΔΙΠ), xxv. 10, Tob.<sup>4</sup> Esth.<sup>1</sup>; cf. Acts iii. 8, ἔξαλλόμενος ἔστη. With the whole context cf. Luc. *Catapl.* 15 ἐγώ δέ...ἄσμενος ἀπορρίψας τὴν σμίλην... ἀναπηδήσας εὐθὺς ἀνυπόδητος...εἰπόμην. Acc. to Lc. the blind man was led by friendly hands (ἐκέλευσεν...ἀχθῆναι).

51. τί σοι θέλεις ποιῆσαι;] For the construction see x. 36, note, and for τί ποιῆσω cf. xv. 12; on the position of σοι see Blass, *Gr.* p. 288. Obvious as was the meaning of the ἐλέγον, the Lord will have the want specified.

ραββουνέι, ἵνα ἀναβλέψω] Mt. κύριε, ἵνα ἀνοιγῶσιν οἱ ὄφθαλμοὶ ἡμῶν, Lc. κύριε, ἵνα ἀναβλέψῃ. Mc. alone preserves the Aramaic original of the κύριε: cf. ix. 5, note. The form ραββουνέι appears again in Jo. xx. 16, where see Westcott's note, with which compare Dalman, *Worte*, i. p. 279; on the broadening of the second vowel cf. Dalman, *Gr.* p. 140 n. and *Worte*, i. p. 267. The Syriac versions have نَسَدْ (sin.), نَسَدْ (pesh.), نَسَدْ (hel.); Syr.<sup>sin.</sup> has نَسَدْ again in Jo. l.c., Syr.<sup>cu.</sup> is unfortunately wanting in both passages. The English versions before Rheims and A.V. render "Master." ἵνα ἀναβλέψω, sc. θέλω or θ. ποιήσω: cf. vi. 25, note; for ἀναβλέψειν 'to recover sight' see Tob. xi. 8 (N), xiv. 2, Isa. xlii. 18 (= hiph. of ְבָנָה), and in the N. T., Mt. xi. 5, Jo. ix. 11 ff, Acts ix. 12 ff. To give ἀνάβλεψις to the blind was a prerogative of the

Son of David (Is. Ixi. 1, Lc. iv. 18, vii. 22). To ἀναβλέψω Tatian and Syr.<sup>cu.</sup> (Mt., Lc.) add "that I may see Thee"; cf. Hill, *Dialect.*, p. 167 n.

52. ὑπαγε, ἡ πίστις σου σέσωκέν σε] Lc. ἀνάβλεψον κτλ. Mt., who omits the words, adds the customary sign: σπλαγχνισθεὶς...ἥψατο τῶν ὀμμάτων. The eulogistic ἡ π. σου κτλ. seems to have been reserved for cases of more than ordinary faith; see Mt. ix. 22, Mc. v. 34, Lc. vii. 50. In such passages σφέειν probably includes the deeper sense; see v. 34, note. All the Evangelists note that the cure was immediate (Mc. εὐθύς, Mt. εὐθέως, Lc. παραχρῆμα)—a contrast to the method employed in more than one other case of blindness (viii. 23 f., Jo. ix. 6 ff.). Ephrem: "o felicem mendicum qui manum extendens ut ab homine obolum acciperet, dignus habitus est ut donum a Deo acciperet."

καὶ ἤκολούθει κτλ.] Bartimaeus, no longer blind or a beggar, joins the crowd of followers "in the way," i.e. on the road to Jerusalem (Bengel). Lc. adds δοξάων τὸν θεόν: possibly in the words of some well-known Psalm (cf. cxlv. (cxlv.) 8), which may have been taken up by the crowd (Lc. πᾶς ὁ λαὸς ἔδωκεν αὐτὸν τῷ θεῷ). For an admirable homiletic use of the story see Orig. in Mt.: εἴθε καὶ ἡμεῖς...παρ' αὐτὴν καθεξόμενοι τῶν γραφῶν τὴν ὁδόν, ἀκούσαντες ὅτι Ἰησοῦς παράγει, διὰ τῆς ἡμετέρας ἀξιώσεως στήσαμεν αὐτόν, καὶ

XI. I      <sup>1</sup>*Kai ótē éggízouσin eis 'Ieroσólumα eis Bηθfaγή kai Bηθanίān πρὸς τὸ ὄρος τὸ 'Eλaiών, ἀποστέλλει*

XI i εγγίζουσιν] ηγγιζεν (vel ηγγισεν) DE min<sup>pauc</sup> b c ff i k q | Ιεροσολυμα] Ιερουσαλημ ΑΧΓΠΦ min<sup>pl</sup> me go + και ηλθεν 1071 (al) | eis Bηθfaγη (Bηθσφ. B<sup>3</sup>FUΓΣ 604 al<sup>nonn</sup>) και (+eis NC eis syr<sup>sin</sup>) Bηθanīān Ν(A)BC(L)ΧΓΔΠ(Σ)Φ min<sup>fere omn</sup> f q syrr<sup>(sin)</sup>pesh hel arm (me) go aeth] και eis Bηθanīān D a b ff i (k) (r) vg Or eis Bηθfaγη Ψ y<sup>scr</sup> (Bηθσφ.) the | το ελαιων B k (montem eleon) r] το καλουμενον ελ. Σ των ελαιων aeth | αποστελλει] απεστειλεν FH i αλρραις a b c f k\*\* syrr<sup>sin</sup>pesh go aeth επεμψεν C

εἴποιμεν ὅτι θέλομεν ἵνα ἀνοιγώσιν οἱ ὁφθαλμοὶ ἡμῶν [cf. Ps. cxix. 18]. ὅπερ ἐὰν εἴπωμεν ἀπὸ διαθέσεως ὄρεγομένης τοῦ βλέπειν...σπλαγχνισθήσεται ὁ σωτὴρ ἡμῶν...καὶ ἀψαμένου αὐτοῦ φεύξεται μὲν τὸ σκότος καὶ ἡ ἄγνοια, εὐθέως δὲ οὐ μόνον ἀναβλέψομεν, ἀλλὰ καὶ ἀκολούθησομεν αὐτῷ.

XI. I—II. SOLEMN ENTRY INTO THE PRECINCT OF THE TEMPLE (Mt. xxi. I—II, Lc. xix. 29—45, Jo. xii. I, 12—19).

I. εγγίζουσιν eis 'Ιεροσόλυμα] The road from Jericho (cf. Lc. x. 30) up the Wady Kelt has brought the party to the East slope of the Mount of Olives, within three miles of Jerusalem; for εγγίζειν eis cf. Tob. vi. 6, 10 (Ν), Lc. xviii. 35; the dat. is also used, Acts ix. 3, x. 9. According to Jo. the time was πρὸς ἔξη ἡμερῶν τοῦ πάσχα, i.e. probably Nisan 8, the eve of the Sabbath (cf. Lewin, *fast. sacr.* p. 230; Westcott on Jo. xii. 1).

eis Bηθfaγή και Bηθanīān] Mt. eis Bηθfaγή. More exactly, the spot they approached was not Jerusalem, but the villages nearest to the city on the Jericho road; for the repeated eis, the second limiting the first, cf. v. 11, eis 'Ι. eis τὸ iερόν. Bethphage (v. l., Bethsphage) has not been identified, but the Talmud (Neubauer, p. 147 ff.) mentions a בֵית פְנִי (or בֵית פְנִי, Dalman, Gr. p. 152) which seems to have been near Jerusalem; cf. Eus. *onom.*, Bηθφ. κώμη πρὸς τῷ ὄρει τῶν ἐλαιῶν. Bηθanīān (or Bηθanīā indecl., Lc. xix. 29, WSchm. p. 91, = בֵית חַנִּיה, Dalman, Gr. p. 143, the Talmudic בֵית

נִיר, Neubauer, p. 149 f.) is the modern el 'Azariyeh, the Lazarium of the fourth century (Silvia, p. 57: "Lazarium, id est, Bethania, est forsitan secundo miliario a civitate"). The village lies in a sheltered and fruitful hollow, of which a picturesque description will be found in Stanley, *S. and P.*, p. 186 ff. As to the meaning of the names, Jerome gives for Bethphage *domus oris vallium, vel domus bucae* or (tr. in Mc.) *d. maxillae* ("Syrum est," he says, "non Hebraeum"), and for Bethany *domus afflictionis eius vel d. oboedientiae* (בֵית נִזְעָקָה); a more usual etymology connects them respectively with the fig (בִּנְזָקָה, Cant. ii. 13, but see Buxtorf, *sub v.*) and the date, which certainly were grown in the neighbourhood.

πρὸς τὸ ὄρος τὸ 'Ελαιών] Cf. eis τὸ ὄρος, iii. 13, vi. 46, ix. 2, xiv. 26; πρὸς with the acc. expresses motion towards, as in i. 5, iv. 3, 13, 32, &c.; the Mount was the object immediately in view as they approached. The hill to the East of Jerusalem is called in the O.T. "the olive-trees" (2 Regn. xv. 30), "the mountain of the olive-trees" (Zach. xiv. 4), or simply "the mountain" (2 Esdr. xviii. 15). In the N.T. τὸ ὄρος τῶν ἐλαιῶν predominates (Mt.<sup>3</sup>, Mc.<sup>2</sup>, Lc.<sup>2</sup>); but the hill is also known as ὁ ἐλαιών, "the olive-grove" (Acts i. 12 ἀπὸ ὄρους τοῦ καλουμένου Ἐλαιώνος, where Blass corrects ἐλαιών in defiance of the MSS.); cf. Jos. *ant.* vii. 9. 2 ἀναβαίνοντος αὐτοῦ διὰ τοῦ Ἐλαιώνος ὄρους. As late as the fourth century the name Ἐλαιών seems to have lingered

δύο τῶν μαθητῶν αὐτοῦ, καὶ λέγει αὐτοῖς Ὑπάγετε 2 εἰς τὴν κώμην τὴν κατέναντι ὑμῶν, καὶ εὐθὺς εἰσπορευόμενοι εἰς αὐτὴν εὑρήσετε πῶλον δεδεμένον, ἐφ' ὃν οὐδεὶς [οὕπω] ἀνθρώπων ἐκάθισεν· λύσατε

2 οὐδεὶς οὐπω αὐθρ. BLΔΨ] οὐδ. αὐθρ. οὐπω ΝC 13 69 alpauic οὐπω οὐδ. αὐθρ. ΚΠΣΦ 604 (736) οὐδ. πωποτε αὐθρ. Α οὐδεὶς αὐθρ. DXG minpl a c g k syrrsin pesh arm aeth | κεκαθικεν A(DEM)XΓΠ(Σ)Φ minpl | λυσατε αυτ. κ. φερετε] λυσαντες αυτ. αγαγετε ΑΔΧΓΠΣΦ minpl λυσαντες αυτ. απαγαγετε 2<sup>pe</sup>

on the spot, for Silvia (p. 70) gives it as an alternative to the Latin *olivetum*, and indeed appears to prefer *Eleon*. These facts lend a high probability to the reading of B(Σ)kr in the present context, and tempt us to prefer Ἐλαιῶν to ἐλαιῶν in Lc. xix. 29, xxi. 37; cf. Deissmann, *Bible Studies*, p. 208 ff., where the objections raised by Blass (*Gr.* p. 85) are sufficiently answered. For the distance of the Mount of Olives from the city see Acts i. 12, ὅ ἐστιν ἔγγὺς Ἱερουσαλήμ σαββάτου ἔχον ὁδόν. Jo. xi. 18 ὡς ἀπὸ σταδίων δεκαπέντε. Jos. ant. xx. 8. 6, ἀπέχει στάδια πέντε. Bethphage was one of the limits of the Sabbatic zone round the city.

ἀποστέλλει κτλ.] According to Jo. (xii. 1, 12) this occurred on the morrow (*τῇ ἐπαύριον*) after the arrival at Bethany, the events of Mc. xiv. 3—9 having intervened (Jo. xii. 2—8); see note on Mc. xiv. 3. Ἀποστέλλει, ‘gives them a commission to execute’ (iii. 14 note, vi. 7). Δύο τῶν μαθητῶν, probably one of the six pairs which made up the Apostolate, cf. vi. 7, Lc. x. 1; on the other hand cf. xiv. 12, note. The Baptist also seems to have arranged his disciples in pairs, cf. Lc. vii. 19, Jo. i. 35. The minuteness of Mc.’s account suggests that Peter was one of the two selected on this occasion.

2. ὑπάγετε εἰς κτλ.] Since according to John the Lord was now on His way from Bethany to Jerusalem, the village was probably Bethphage (cf. Mt. xxi. 1), which seems to have been

on the opposite side of the ascent; for κατέναντι (ΑΠΕΛ) see Exod. xxxii. 5, Num. xvii. 4 (19), Mc. xii. 41, xiii. 3. Εὐθὺς εἰσπορευόμενοι ‘even as ye enter,’ cf. i. 10; Mt. is content with εὐθύς, Lc. with εἰσπορ.; the combination in Mc. is characteristically precise. Πῶλον δεδεμένον: so Lc.; Mt. ὅνον δεδεμένην καὶ πῶλον μετ’ αὐτῆς. Πῶλος may be the young of any animal; the Greek naturally used it for the most part of the horse, the Greek-speaking Jew of the ass; cf. Gen. xxxii. 15 (16), xl ix. 11, Jud. x. 4, xii. 14, Zech. ix. 9. Mt. who quotes Zech. l. c. (xxi. 4 ff.) fills in the picture from the prophecy; in Jo. (xii. 15) on the other hand the prophecy is slightly modified to bring it into correspondence with the event; Mc. and Lc. simply state the facts. The foal was unbroken, had never been ridden (Mc., Lc.), as befitting an animal consecrated to a sacred purpose (Num. xix. 2, Deut. xxi. 3; cf. Hor. epod. ix. 22, Verg. georg. iv. 540). The Lord was born of one who ἄνδρα οὐκ ἔγνω (Lc. i. 34), and was buried οὐ οὐκ ἦν οὐδεὶς οὕπω κείμενος (Lc. xxiii. 53). His choice of an animal not ridden by any before Him is another of those claims to uniqueness which contrast forcibly with His usual condescension to the circumstances of an ordinary human life. It is arbitrary to refer the clause ἐφ' ὃν κτλ. to the narrator (Gould). Δύσατε...καὶ φέρετε: the aorist and present imperatives are both appropriate, cf. WM., p. 393 f.

3 αὐτὸν καὶ φέρετε. <sup>3</sup>καὶ ἐάν τις ὑμῖν εἴπῃ Τί ποιεῖτε τοῦτο; εἴπατε Ὁ κύριος αὐτοῦ χρείαν ἔχει, καὶ 4 εὑθὺς αὐτὸν ἀποστέλλει πάλιν ὥδε. <sup>4</sup>καὶ ἀπῆλθον καὶ εὑρον πῶλον δεδεμένον πρὸς θύραν ἔξω ἐπὶ τοῦ

[3 τι ποιεῖτε τοῦτο] τι λυετε τον πωλον D 28 69 124 346 1071 2<sup>pe</sup> a b f ff i r arm Or τι i 109 syrsin | o κυριος] pr οτι ΙΑCDLXΓΠΣΦ min<sup>pl</sup> f q vg syrr

shcl

 arm go | αποστελλει ΙΑBCDEFHKLMSVXΓΔΣ min<sup>satmu</sup> b c l go] αποστελει GUΠΦΨ i al<sup>mu</sup> a d f ff q r<sup>vid</sup> vg arm aegg aeth Or | παλιν ΙBC\*DLΔ min<sup>pau</sup> Or<sup>bis</sup>] om AC<sup>2</sup>ХΓΠΣΦΨ min<sup>pl</sup> latt syrr arm aegg go aeth Or<sup>l</sup> | αποστ. παλιν αυτον B αυτον παλιν αποστ. C\* 4—5 om k 4 πωλον] pr τον ΙCΔ 13 28 1071 alsat<sup>mu</sup> arm the | θυραν] pr την ΙACDXΓΠΣΦ min<sup>fereomn</sup> Or<sup>l</sup> (om την BLΔ 2<sup>pevid</sup> aegg go Or<sup>bis</sup>)

3. ἐάν τις ὑμῖν εἴπῃ κτλ. The Lord provides against a possible difficulty. The proceeding seemed high-handed, and if it was witnessed by any, the objection would certainly be raised Τί ποιεῖτε τοῦτο; = Lc. διὰ τι λύετε; For answer they were instructed simply to state that the Master (ὁ κύριος, cf. Jo. xiii. 13) needed the foal (αὐτοῦ, Mt. αὐτῶν = the mother and the foal). Χρείαν ἔχειν = ΠΝΨΗ Dan. iii. 16 (LXX. and Th.); for the construction cf. ii. 17, xiv. 63, Jo. xiii. 29, Heb. v. 12, Apoc. xxi. 23, xxii. 5. Wycliffe: "seie ze that he is nedeful to the Lord." The words have reference chiefly to the didactic purpose which the Lord had in view; cf. Jerome *ad l.*, and Victor: οὐ γὰρ ἀπὸ τοῦ ὄρους τῶν ἑλαῶν εἰς Ἱερουσαλὴμ ἔξιόντι τῷ κυρίῳ χρεία τις ἐπ' ὅν τον καθέξεσθαι, ὃς τὴν Ἰουδαίαν καὶ Γαλιλαίαν ἀπασαν δύγει πεζός. Tertullian (*de coron.* 13) remarks quaintly but suggestively: "dominus tuus ubi ... Hierusalem ingredi voluit nec asinum habuit privatum."

καὶ εὑθὺς αὐτὸν ἀποστ. πάλιν ὥδε] The animal is not to be detained longer than the occasion requires; the Master will send him back to Bethphage as soon as He has reached Jerusalem. In Mt. the sentence has taken quite another turn (εὑθὺς δὲ ἀποστελεῖ αὐτούς sc. ὁ κύριος τῶν ὑποζυγίων), and the harmonisers have

imported this into Mc.'s text; see vv. ll. Field, *Notes*, p. 34 f., offers some defence of the R. T. on internal grounds which are not convincing. Mt. adds here a reference to Zech. ix. 9, in which he sees a prophecy of the present incident (cf. note on *v. 2*).

4. ἀπῆλθον καὶ εὗρον κτλ.] Lc. εὗρον καθὼς εἴπεν αὐτοῖς. For other examples of this supernatural knowledge of circumstances cf. xiv. 13, Mt. xvii. 27, Jo. i. 48. While they fall short of a logical proof of omniscience (Gore, *Dissertations*, p. 80 f.), they must be allowed due weight in any estimate of the powers of the Sacred Humanity (Mason, *Conditions*, p. 157 ff.). In Mc. the coincidences between the Lord's anticipations and the event appear in detail (vv. 4—8). The foal was tied up πρὸς θύραν ἔξω, at (here nearly = πρὸς θύρα, cf. Blass, *Gr.* p. 139) a house-door, but outside, not in the house, but in the street. For θύρα a house-door, see Gen. xix. 6, 9, Mc. i. 33, ii. 2, and for ἔξω 'out of doors,' iii. 31 f., Lc. xiii. 25, xxii. 62, Jo. xviii. 16. Ἐπὶ τοῦ ἀμφόδου, Vg. *in bivio*, whence Wycliffe "in the meeting of tweye weyes," Tindale, A.V. "in a place where two ways met"; R.V. "in the open street." Ἀμφόδον occurs in Jer. xvii. 27, xxx. 16 (lxx. 27), as the equivalent of תִּבְנַתְא, where Aq. and Symm. have βάρεις, but the Greek lexic-

ἀμφόδου, καὶ λύουσιν αὐτόν. <sup>5</sup>καὶ τινες τῶν ἐκεῖ 5  
έστηκότων ἔλεγον αὐτοῖς Τί ποιεῖτε λύοντες τὸν  
πῶλον; <sup>6</sup>οἱ δὲ εἶπαν αὐτοῖς καθὼς <sup>¶</sup> εἶπεν ὁ Ἰησοῦς· 6 ¶  
καὶ ἀφῆκαν αὐτούς. <sup>7</sup>καὶ φέρουσιν τὸν πῶλον πρὸς 7  
τὸν Ἰησοῦν, καὶ ἐπιβάλλουσιν <sup>§</sup> αὐτῷ τὰ ἵμάτια αὐτῶν· <sup>§ N</sup>  
καὶ ἐκάθισεν ἐπ’ αὐτόν. <sup>8</sup>καὶ πολλοὶ τὰ ἵμάτια 8

5 εστωτων ΜΓ 238 1071 al<sup>nominative</sup>  
syrr<sup>peash</sup> go ειρηκει D b c f i q (dixerat)

6 ειπεν] ενετειλατο ΑΧΓΠΣΦ min<sup>pl</sup> latt<sup>vta</sup> v<sup>tg</sup>

7 φερουσιν Ν<sup>¶</sup>ΒΛΔΨ 1071] αγουσιν

Ν<sup>¶</sup>C 1 13 28 69 124 346 al<sup>parus</sup> γηγαγον ΑΔΧΓΠΣ min<sup>pl</sup> | επεβαλον ΑΧΓΠΣΦ min<sup>pl</sup>  
a e f k q theb go aeth | αυτων] εαυτων B αυτου D 256 om 1 28 299 b ff i k q arm |  
εκαθισαν Ν καθιει (D) 1 28 91 209 241 299 2<sup>pe</sup> | επ αυτον] επ αυτων 2<sup>pe</sup> al<sup>nominative</sup> επ αυτω  
ΑΝΧΓΠΣ min<sup>pl</sup> latt<sup>vta</sup> v<sup>tg</sup>

graphers explain the word by ἀγνιά, δίοδος, ρύμη and the like: cf. Epiphanius cited by Wetstein: ἀμφόδων ἦτοι λαυρών ἐπιχωρίων καλουμένων ὑπὸ τῶν τὴν Ἀλεξανδρέων οἰκούντων πόλιν. "Amphodou occurs again in the D text of Acts xix. 28 (δραμόντες εἰς τὸ ἀμφόδον ἔκραζον), where see Blass's note. Λύουσιν αὐτόν: cf. v. 2, and for other examples of this use of λύειν see Lc. xiii. 15, Apoc. ix. 14 f.

5—6. τινες τῶν ἐκεῖ ἔστηκότων] Idlers hanging about the lanes in the outskirts of the village, cf. Mt. xx. 3, 6; for the phrase see ix. 1, xv. 35. According to Lc. they were the owners (*οἱ κύριοι*), which is probable enough; they had tied up the animals while they enjoyed the gossip of the street. That they were satisfied with the answer 'Ο κύριος αὐτοῦ χρ. ἔχει κτλ. need cause no surprise; the Master was well known in the neighbourhood, and His disciples had been with Him before on a memorable occasion (Jo. xi. 7 ff.). The promise to return the animal at once could be trusted; for the present it was not required by the owners, and they might well be proud that it should be used by the Prophet. So they let the two go off (ἀφῆκαν αὐτούς) with the foal. It is quite unnecessary to say with Thphrt.: *οὐκ ἀν ἐγένετο τοῖς εἰ μὴ θελα τις ἀνάγκη ἐπέκειτο τοῖς*

κυρίοις. Τί ποιεῖτε λύοντες; (=τί ποιεῖτε τοῦτο; v. 3): cf. Acts xxi. 13, with Blass's note, and WM., p. 761.

7. φέρουσιν τὸν πῶλον κτλ.] Mt. τὴν ὄνον καὶ τὸν πῶλον: see v. 2. The foal, being yet unbroken, had no trappings (Gen. xxii. 3, Num. xxii. 21, 2 Regn. xvii. 23, 3 Regn. ii. 40, xiii. 13 ff.) and as a substitute for the ἐπίσταγμα (Lev. xv. 9), some spare clothing (τὰ ἵμάτια, cf. v. 28, 30) was hastily thrown (ἐπιβάλλουσιν, Lc. ἐπιρύψαντες: Mt. ἐπέθηκαν) over him (Mt. ἐπ' αὐτῶν), and the Lord took His seat—for Lc.'s ἐπεβίβασαν τὸν Ἰησοῦν can scarcely be understood literally—the rope with which the foal had been tied serving for bridle. As Jerome remarks, Mt.'s ἐπάνω αὐτῶν cannot be taken strictly, and he seeks a solution in allegory ("cum historia vel impossibilitatem habeat vel turpitudinem, ad altiora transmittimus"). There can be little doubt that Mt.'s form of the story is coloured by the details of the prophecy which he quotes (see note on v. 2); Mc. on the other hand records the simple facts.

8. πολλοὶ τὰ ἵμάτια κτλ.] This was perhaps suggested by the use of *ἵματια* for the saddling of the foal. Other disciples, not to be outdone, stripped off their quadrangular wraps and carpeted the bridle path, and the enthusiasm spread to a crowd

αὐτῶν ἔστρωσαν εἰς τὴν ὁδόν, ἄλλοι δὲ στιβάδας,  
9 κόψαντες ἐκ τῶν ἀγρῶν. καὶ οἱ προάγοντες καὶ  
οἱ ἀκολουθοῦντες ἔκραζον Ὡσαννά· εὐλογημένος ὁ

8 εστρωσαν] εστρωνυνον D 1 28 2<sup>pe</sup> al<sup>pauc</sup> | εις την οδον ΙΒCDLXΓΔΨ min<sup>pl</sup> b ff i] ev τη οδω ΑΚΜΝΙΣ min<sup>pl</sup> a f k q vg | om αλλοι...αγρων syr<sup>sin</sup> | στοιβαδας AC(N)SVXΓΣΦ min<sup>pl</sup> | κοψαντες εκ των αγρων ΙΒ(C)ΛΔΨ the] εκοπτον εκ των δενδρων (αγρων syr<sup>hel(mg)</sup>) και εστρωνυνον εις την οδον (vel ev τη οδω) A(D)ΝΧΓΠΣΦ min<sup>omn vid</sup> latt syrr<sup>pesh hel</sup> arm go 9 εκραζον]+λεγοντες ADNXΓΠ al min<sup>pl</sup> a b f i q vg syrr arm aeth ελεγον Ψ | ωσαννα] om D b ff r<sup>vid</sup>+τω νψιστω 13 69 1071 2<sup>pe</sup> al k arm+ev νψιστω 28 al+ev νψιστοις 29 c i | om ο ερχ. X

of followers (*πολλοί*, Mt. ὁ *πλεῖστος ὄχλος*). For the construction *ἔστρωσαν εἰς τὴν ὁδόν* cf. Tob. vii. 16 (Ν) *ἔστρωσεν εἰς τὸ ταμεῖον*. Lc. represents the action as repeated along the line of progress (*πορευομένου δὲ αὐτοῦ ὑπεστρώνυνον*); cf. Mc.'s *ἔστρωνυνον infra*. All the commentators refer to Robinson, *Researches in Palestine*, i. p. 473, ii. p. 162 for an illustrative incident; an O.T. parallel will be found in 4 Regn. ix. 13.

ἄλλοι δὲ στιβάδας κτλ.] Mt. ἄλλοι δὲ ἔκοψαν κλάδους ἀπὸ τῶν δένδρων. *Στιβάδες* (from *στείβω*—the form *στοιβᾶς* (R. T.) is incorrect, see Fritzsché, though *στοιβή* occurs in the LXX.), Vulg. *frondes*, Wycliffe “bowis or braunchis,” is a litter of leaves or other green stuff from the meadows or trees; cf. the Schol. on Theocr. vii. 67 cited by Wetstein: *στ. δέ ἔστι στρωμὴ ἐπὶ τῆς γῆς ἐκ φύλλων*. Mc. uses the pl. for the materials of the litter—boughs, long grass, &c., collected from the cultivated lands (*ἀγρῶν*, cf. v. 14, vi. 36, 56, x. 29 f.) on either side of the path. The word is fairly distributed in class. and later Gk. (cf. e.g. Plato, *resp.* 372 B; Philo, *de rit. cont.*, ed. Conybeare, p. 109), but ἄπ. λεγ. in the LXX. and N.T.; Aq. uses it in Ezech. xlvi. 23 for *תִּירֵץ*, which he perhaps understands as sheepfold enclosures constructed of interwoven boughs (= *ἐπαιλέεις*). Jo.'s *Ἐλαβον τὰ βαῖα τῶν φουίκων* seems to refer to another concourse which came from

Jerusalem: see next note. The triumph of Judas Maccabaeus (1 Macc. xiii. 51) may have been in the thoughts of many.

9. οἱ προάγοντες καὶ οἱ ἀκολουθοῦντες] So Mt. For the contrast cf. x. 32 f. On this occasion the Lord seems to have been in the middle of two crowds (*οἱ...καὶ οἱ...WM.*, p. 160); see Stanley, *S. and P.*, p. 191: “two vast streams of people met on that day. The one poured out from the city...from Bethany [and Bethphage] streamed forth the crowds who had assembled there on the previous night. ...The two streams met midway. Half the vast mass turning round preceded; the other half followed.” If this suggestion is accepted, *οἱ προάγοντες* are the Galileans from Jerusalem (Jo. xii. 12, ὁ ὄχλος πολὺς ὁ ἐλθὼν εἰς τὴν ἡρότην, cf. Westcott's note), who bring with them palm leaves (ib. 13, *Ἐλαβον βαῖα τῶν φουίκων*), cut in the Kidron or on the western slope of Olivet; whilst *οἱ ἀκολουθοῦντες* are the villagers who strew the path with garments and foliage. Jerome allegorises: “qui sunt qui praecedunt? patriarchae et prophetae. qui sequuntur? apostoli et gentilium populus. sed et in praecedentibus et in sequentibus una vox Christus est; ipsum laudant, ipsum voce consona concrepant.”

ἔκραζον [*Ωσαννά*] The cry rose again and again. It began *πρὸς τὴν κατάβασιν τοῦ ὄρους*, as the ‘city of David’ came into view; see Stanley, *S.*

ἐρχόμενος ἐν ὀνόματι Κυρίου· <sup>τὸ</sup>εὐλογημένη ἡ ἐρχο- 10  
μένη βασιλεία τοῦ πατρὸς ἡμῶν Δαυείδ· ὥσταννά ἐν

9—10 εν ονοματι...βασιλεια] εις την βασιλειαν κ 10 ευλογημενη] pr και  
AD<sup>\*</sup>KMII 736 1071 | om ερχομενη Δ i αλφαις a | βασιλεια]+εν ονοματι κυριου  
ANXGPIΣΦ min<sup>pl</sup> q syr<sup>hel</sup> go aeth | ωσαννα εν τοις υψιστοις] ειρηνη εν τ. υψ. 6ο<sup>4</sup> syr<sup>sin</sup>  
ειρ. εν ουρανω και δοξα εν υψ. arm ωσ. ειρ. εν ουρ. κ. δ. εν υψ. 1 91 118 209 299 ειρ. εν  
ουρ. κ. δ. εν υψ. ωσ. εν υψ. 251 syr<sup>hel</sup>(txt)

and P., p. 190. ‘Ωσαννά represents Αὐ-πνι-शׁוּה (Ps. cxviii. 25, LXX. σῶσον δή), in the Aramaic form Αὐ-שׁוּה; see Kautzsch, p. 173, Dalman, *Gr.* p. 198, for the breathing cf. WH., *Intr.*, p. 313; other views of the derivation of the word are discussed by Cheyne in *Encycl. Bibl.* s. v.; cf. Thayer in Hastings *D.B.* ii. p. 418 f. Ps. cxviii., whether it celebrates the triumph of Judas Maccabaeus (Cheyne, *Origin of the Psalter*, p. 16), or the dedication of the Second Temple (Delitzsch, Westcott), was intimately connected in the minds of all loyal Jews with the hope of national restoration, and its liturgical use at the Feast of the Tabernacles (cf. J. Lightfoot on Mt. xxi. 9; the seventh day of the Feast is still called “the Great Hosanna,” Taylor, *Teaching*, p. 79), and at the Passover in the Hallel, rendered its words doubly familiar. It appears that the palm-branches which were carried in procession round the altar (Ps. cxviii. 27, cf. Cheyne, *Psalms*, p. 315 ff.) were waved at the words Αὐ-πνι-শׁוּה (J. Lightfoot, *l.c.*, Edersheim, *Temple*, p. 191 ff.); so that the palms of the προάγοντες may have suggested the use of this cry. The addition of τῷ νιώ Δαυείδ (Mt.), if it was made at the time, pointed to Jesus as the Messiah through whom the salvation of Israel was expected. But ωσ. τῷ νιώ Δ. was apparently an early liturgical form in Jewish-Christian churches (*Didache* 10), and may have been introduced in this way into the evangelical tradition; it is worthy of note that Mc. and Jo. agree to omit τ.

νιώ Δ. here. For an early Christian interpretation of Hosanna see Clem. Al. *paed.* i. 5 § 12 φῶς καὶ δόξα καὶ αῖνος μεθ' ἵκετηριας τῷ κυρίῳ· τούτῳ γὰρ ἐμφαίνει ἐρμηνεύμενον Ἐλλάδι φωνῇ τὸ ὥσταννά. Cf. Thayer in Hastings, *l.c.*

εὐλογημένος ὁ ἐρχόμενος κτλ.] From Ps. cxviii. 26 (LXX.); Lc. alone inserts ὁ βασιλεύς. In the Psalm the words are clearly a solemn welcome to the pilgrim, Israelite or proselyte, who comes up to worship at the Feast—the accents of the Heb. shew that הַנְּה מִשְׁבָּת is to be connected with קָרְבָּת—the blessing in the Name of the LORD (Num. vi. 27, Deut. xxi. 5) is invoked upon every such visitor (cf. Perowne *ad l.*). But the words (as the next verse will shew) are used with some perception that this Visitor is ὁ ἐρχόμενος (Αὐ-הָ) in a deeper sense; cf. Mt. xi. 3, Jo. iii. 31, xi. 27.

10. εὐλογημένη ἡ ἐρχ. βασιλεία κτλ.] This clause, preserved by Mc. only, is possibly the origin of the liturgical addition to Hosanna (see on *v.* 9), and also of Lc.’s βασιλεύς (Lc. xix. 38). It is a comment on the words of the Ps., due perhaps to a few among the crowd who realised more fully than the rest the meaning of this reception of the Galilean Prophet. Η βασιλεία may have been suggested by the Lord’s frequent phrase ἡ β. τοῦ θεοῦ, or by the knowledge that He had taught His disciples to pray ἐλθάτω ἡ β. (Mt. vi. 10); τοῦ πατρὸς ἡμῶν Δ. (not τοῦ νιών Δ.) betrays the limitations which still beset their highest hopes. To what extent the

§ 711 τοῖς ὑψίστοις. ἦκαὶ εἰσῆλθεν εἰς Ἱεροσόλυμα § εἰς

II εἰς τὸ ιερόν ΙΒCLΜΔΨ 13 28 60 69 115 225 346 1071 2<sup>pe</sup> a<sup>scr</sup>] pr καὶ  
ADNXΓΠΣΦΨ min<sup>pl</sup> q syrr<sup>sin hel</sup> go

Pharisaic conception of the Messianic kingdom admitted of spiritual ideas may be learnt from Pss. Sal. xvii., xviii. (cf. Ryle and James, *Intr.*, p. lvi. ff.).

ἀσαννά ἐν τοῖς ὑψίστοις] Τὰ ὑψίστα = διώρημα in the LXX. of Job xvi. 19, xxxi. 2, Ps. lxxi. 21, cxlviii. 1; in the N. T. ἐν (τοῖς) ὑψίστοις occurs only in this context and Lc. ii. 14, but St Paul has ἐν τοῖς ἐπουρανίοις (Eph. i. 3, vi. 12). As connected with ἀσαννά, unless the whole phrase is to be regarded simply as a shout of triumph like Ἡ παιάν, *Io triumphe* (Thayer *l.c.*), ἐν τοῖς ιψ. must be taken to mean: 'let the prayer for our deliverance be ratified in high heaven.' Cf. 3 Regn. viii. 30 σὺ εἰσακούσῃ...ἐν οὐρανῷ, Mt. xvi. 19 ἔσται δεδεμένον...λελυμένον ἐν τοῖς οὐρανοῖς. God answers in heaven, and the result appears on earth. Lc. writes ἐν οὐρανῷ εἰρήνη καὶ δόξα ἐν ὑψίστοις, blending (as it seems) the Angelic Hymn with the welcome of the multitude; comp. the similar combination in the Clementine Liturgy (Brightman, p. 24). The use of the present passage in the 'Preface' of the Liturgy is ancient and wide-spread; cf. e.g. the Liturgy of St James (*ib.* p. 51), and the Gelasian *canon actionis* (Wilson, p. 234).

St Luke adds at this point (1) a remonstrance from certain Pharisees who were present, and our Lord's reply (xix. 39, 40); (2) the magnificent lamentation over Jerusalem (xix. 41—44).

II. εἰσῆλθεν εἰς Ἱεροσ. εἰς τὸ ιερόν] On the double εἰς see note to *v.* I. The Precinct of the Temple immediately overlooked the valley of the Kidron, and the Lord entered Jeru-

salem when He passed within the great eastern gate of the ιερόν. Τὸ ιερόν in this sense occurs only in the Synoptists and in Acts; in the LXX. it is frequent, but only in the later books (chiefly in Esdras and 1—4 Macc.). On the distinction between ιερόν and ναός see Westcott on Jo. ii. 14, and Trench, *syn.* § iii., who refers to Jos. *ant.* viii. 3. 9, περιέβαλε δὲ [δοσολομῶν] τοῦ ναοῦ κύκλῳ γείσιον...τούτου δ' ἔξωθεν ιερὸν ὡκοδόμησεν ἐν τετραγώνου σχήματι. Of the Herodian ιερόν Josephus has left a description in *ant.* xv. 11. 3 f., *B. J.* vi. 5. 4; another account is to be found in the Mishna *Middoth* ii. 1. For a popular treatment of the subject see Edersheim, *The Temple, its ministry and services*; recent discoveries upon the spot are described in the *Recovery of Jerusalem* and other publications of the Palestine Exploration Fund. The Lord on entering the Precinct found Himself in the Court of the Gentiles, and probably did not go beyond it on the first day. But the report of His arrival and solemn entry spread through Jerusalem, and Mt. describes the excitement which the tidings caused (ἐσείσθη πᾶσα ἡ πόλις κτλ., xxi. 10 f.).

On the remarkable change of policy implied in this formal avowal of Messianic claims see Victor: πολλάκις ἐπέβη τῶν Ἱεροσολύμων πρότερον, ἀλλ' οὐδέποτε μετὰ τοιαύτης περιφανέας... ἐπειδὴ δὲ...ό σταυρὸς ἐπὶ θύραις ἦν μειζόνως ἐκλάμπει λοιπόν. Bede: "nunc autem ubi passurus Hierosolymam venit, non refugit eos qui se regem faciunt...non reprimit voces, regnumque quod adhuc victurus in mundo suscipere noluit, iamiam exiturus per passionem crucis de mundo non negavit suscipere."

τὸν ἱερόν· καὶ περιβλεψάμενος πάντα ὁψίας ἥδη οὔσης τῆς ὥρας ἐξῆλθεν εἰς Ἡβραίαν μετὰ τῶν δώδεκα. § 33

<sup>12</sup> Καὶ τῇ ἐπαύριον<sup>¶</sup> ἐξελθόντων αὐτῶν ἀπὸ Βηθα- 12 ¶ 7 νίας ἐπείνασεν. <sup>13</sup> καὶ ᾧδὴ συκῆν ἀπὸ μακρόθεν 13 ἔχουσαν φύλλα ἥλθεν εἰ ἄρα τι εὑρήσει ἐν αὐτῇ· καὶ

II οψίας ABDNXΓΠΙΣΦΤ̄ minpl] οψε NCLΔ Or<sup>1</sup> | ηδῃ] επι 1071 | om της ωρας B της ημερας 13 28 69 124 346 13 συκην]+μιαν ΝΚΜΠ min<sup>nomn</sup> syrr<sup>sin pesh</sup> arm | om απο M<sup>mg</sup>ΧΓΠΦ minpl | ει αρα τι ευρ.] ιδειν εαν τι εστιν D b e f i k r ws ευρησων τι 2<sup>pe</sup> a f q Or<sup>bis</sup>

περιβλεψάμενος πάντα κτλ.] Jerome: "quasi cum lucerna quaereret (Zeph. i. 12)...quaerens in templo, et nihil quod eligeretur inventit." Euth.: ὡς κύριος τοῦ τοιούτου οἴκου. On περιβλέπεσθαι see iii. 5, 34, v. 32, ix. 8, x. 23. Nothing escaped His comprehensive glance (περιβλ. πάντα), which revealed much that would call for serious work on the morrow (v. 15, note). It was too late to begin that evening. Ὁψίας ἥδη οὔσης τῆς ὥρας, towards or after sunset, i. 32, iv. 35, vi. 47, xiv. 17, xv. 42; with the reading of Ι (ὁψὲ ἥ. οὔσης) cf. v. 19, ὁψὲ ἔγένετο.

ἐξῆλθεν εἰς Βηθαίαν μ. τ. δ.] Cf. xi. 19 (Mt. xxi. 17), xiii. 1, 3. The nights of Sunday, Monday, and Tuesday before the Passion were spent at Bethany, or rather in the open air on the Mount of Olives in the neighbourhood of the village (Lc. xxi. 37; comp. Lc. xxiv. 50 with Acts i. 12). The bivouac among the hills offered comparative security against the danger of a sudden arrest; and the conditions were favourable to meditation and prayer; cf. Euth. ἐξεπορεύετο εἰς τὰ προαστεῖα διὰ τὴν ἡσυχίαν. The crowd of followers was at length dispersed, and though the days were passed in the busy Precinct, at night the Lord found Himself alone with the Twelve.

12—14. THE FIGTREE IN LEAF BUT WITHOUT FRUIT (Mt. xxi. 18—19).

12. τῇ ἐπαύριον] On the morning of the fourth day before the Passover

i.e. Monday, Nisan 11 (Jo. xii. 1, 12). Ἐξελθ. αὐτ. ἀπὸ Βηθαίας must be interpreted with the same latitude which appears to belong to ἐξῆλθεν εἰς Βηθαίαν (v. 11); Mt. more exactly, ἐπαναγαγὼν εἰς τὴν πόλιν. ἐπείνασεν: cf. Mt. iv. 2. The Lord had not broken His fast (cf. Jo. iv. 32 ff.), or the morning meal had been scanty or hurried; and it was important to recruit His strength on which the spiritual exercises of the night had perhaps drawn largely. The wayside figtree seemed to offer the necessary refreshment.

13. ᾧδὴ συκῆν ἀπὸ μακρόθεν κτλ.] The fresh green foliage caught the eye long before the tree was reached. It was a solitary tree, standing by the roadside (μιαν ἐπὶ τῆς ὁδοῦ, Mt.), a derelict perhaps of some old garden or vineyard (Lc. xiii. 6, Jo. i. 48), now offering its fruit to every passer-by. Ἀπὸ μ., cf. v. 6, note.

ἥλθεν εἰ ἄρα τι εὑρήσει κτλ.] Εἰ ἄρα, si forte, cf. Acts viii. 22 εἰ ἄρα ἀφεθήσεται, xvii. 27 εἰ ἄρα ψηλαφήσειν αὐτὸν καὶ εὑροιεν: the ἄρα reviews the circumstances already recited and infers from them the chance of success; for the constr. see Burton, § 276, and on this use of ἄρα cf. WM., p. 556, Blass, Gr. p. 250f. The direct question might have run εἰ ἄρα τι εὑρήσω: The tree was prematurely in leaf; planted in some sheltered hollow, it was already in leaf before the Passover, when other trees of its sort were

ἐλθὼν ἐπ' αὐτὴν οὐδὲν εὗρεν εἰ μὴ φύλλα· ὁ γάρ  
 Τῷ <sup>τῷ</sup> καιρὸς οὐκ ἦν σύκων<sup>¶</sup>. <sup>τῷ</sup> καὶ ἀποκριθεὶς εἶπεν αὐτῇ  
 Μηκέτι εἰς τὸν αἰῶνα ἐκ σοῦ μηδεὶς καρπὸν φάγοι.  
 καὶ ἥκουν οἱ μαθηταὶ αὐτοῦ.

13 οἱ εἰλθων επ αυτην D b c ff i k r om επ αυτην a g | ουδεν ευρεν] μηδεν ευρων  
 D (2<sup>pe</sup>) (a q) Or | φυλλα]+μονον C<sup>2</sup>NΣΦ 33 61 69 124 1071 2<sup>pe</sup> b c q aeth Or | ο γαρ  
 καιρος ουκ ην συκων NBC<sup>\*vid</sup>LΔΨ me] ou (vel ουπω) γαρ ην (o) καιρος συκων  
 AC<sup>2</sup>(D)NΧΓΠΣΦ min<sup>omn</sup><sup>vid</sup> latt go aeth Or 14 οι και το D 2<sup>pe</sup> a q Or | om απο-  
 κριθεις f q r vg syr<sup>posh</sup> | μηδεις] ουδεις min<sup>nonn</sup> | φαγη DU I 13 69 346 604<sup>corr</sup> alperaus

only beginning to bud (xiii. 28); and it was reasonable to expect a corresponding precocity in regard to the figs. But when the Lord had come up to it (*ἐπ' αὐτήν*, cf. v. 21, xv. 22, the result of motion towards, WM., p. 508), He found that the tree did not fulfil its promise. There were no figs under the leaves—not even the half-ripe figs which the peasants of Palestine ate with their bread in the fields (Edersheim ii. p. 375).

ὁ γάρ καιρὸς οὐκ ἦν σύκων] ‘For the season was not that of figs.’ (Wycliffe, “for it was no tyme of fygges.”) In Palestine the figtree yields more than one crop in the course of the summer (Smith, *D.B.*<sup>2</sup>, p. 1066), but even the early figs are not in season before May. There was then no reason to expect fruit upon this tree beyond the promise of its leaves. Premature in foliage, it proved to be not earlier than the yet leafless trees in regard to its fruit. Bengel: “propior aspectus arboris ostendit arborem non esse tamē qualem folia singulariter promittebant.” He is surely right in adding: “supersederi potuit tota quaestione de generibus ficuum arborum.” Equally unnecessary is it to suppose that the Lord expected to find a few figs left over from the previous crop; see the curious theory built on this view by Ephrem (*ev. conc. exp.* p. 182).

14. ἀποκριθεὶς εἶπεν αὐτῇ κτλ.] The answer is to the invitation which the tree by its foliage had seemed to

offer to the hungry traveller. For the address to an inanimate object, cf. iv. 39; such personifications of natural phenomena are in accordance with the genius of Hebrew poetry and prophecy, cf. Num. xx. 8, Ps. cxlviii. 3 ff., Dan. iii. 57 ff. Μηκέτι...μηδεῖς: for the (emphatic) double negative see WM., p. 625. The optative (WM., pp. 357, 627, Burton, § 175 f.) is replaced in Mt. by the subjunctive with *οὐ μὴ*, i.e. for the expression of a desire Mt. substitutes a negative which nearly amounts to a prohibition (Burton, § 167). Neither form can properly be called an imprecation or curse; contrast Gen. iii. 17, Heb. vi. 7 f., and see note on *v. 21*. Bengel: “quod Iesu Christo non servit, indignum est quod ulli mortalium serviat.”

The sentence on the fruitless fig-tree repeated in a tangible form the lesson of a parable spoken during the Lord's recent journeyings (Lc. xiii. 6 ff.). But in repeating it extends the teaching of the parable. It is not mere fruitlessness which the Lord here condemns, but fruitlessness in the midst of a display which promises fruit. Cf. Origen in *Mt.* εὗρεν ἐν αὐτῇ...μόνον ζωῆς ἔμφασιν...καὶ ἔστι εὑρέιν τοιούτους τινὰς...ἔμφήναντας ὅτι ζώσι καὶ παντελῶς εἰσι ἔνοροι· οὓς διὰ τὸ μὴ καρποφορεῖν ἔστιν ἰδεῖν καὶ ἀφιταμένους παντελῶς τοῦ λόγου καὶ ἔγραψθέντας. Bede: “arefecit Dominus arborem...ut homines...intellegent sese divino condemnandos iudicio si absque operum fructu de plausu tan-

<sup>15</sup> Καὶ ἔρχονται εἰς Ἱεροσόλυμα. καὶ εἰσελθὼν εἰς 15 τὸ ἱερὸν ἥρξατο ἐκβάλλειν τοὺς πωλοῦντας καὶ τοὺς ἀγοράζοντας ἐν τῷ ἱερῷ, καὶ τὰς τραπέζας τῶν κολλυβιστῶν καὶ τὰς καθέδρας τῶν πωλούντων τὰς

15 ερχονται] ηρχοντο C εισελθων D συγ<sup>sin</sup>+παλιν NΣ min<sup>paue</sup> (a) b f ff i | εισελθων εις τοιερον] οτε ην εν τωιερω D | εκβαλλειν]+εκειθεν D b | τους αγοραζ.] om τους DEGHSVXΓΔΦΨ min<sup>pl</sup> Or | κολλυβιστων]+εξεχεεν NΣ (εξεχεσεν) 13 28 69 124 346 2<sup>pe</sup> arm

tum sibi religiosi sermonis velut de sonitu et tegumento blandirentur viridantium foliorum." The immediate reference is doubtless to the Jewish people, so far in advance of the other nations in knowledge and the forms of worship, so nearly on a level with them in regard to spiritual religion and the love of God. Hilary: "in facie synagogae positum exemplum est"; Victor: τὴν μέλλουσαν κατὰ τὴν Ἱερουσαλὴμ κρίσιν ἐπὶ τῆς συκῆς ἔθεισεν. Thph. compares Ezekiel xvii. 9.

καὶ ἤκουον οἱ μαθ. αὐτοῦ] Mc. only. The sentence prepares the reader for the sequel, v. 20 ff. All heard, one remembered (v. 21).

15—19. SECOND DAY IN THE TEMPLE. BREAKING UP OF THE TEMPLE MARKET (Mt. xxi. 12—17, Lc. xix. 45—48).

15. ἔρχονται...εἰσελθών κτλ.] Cf. v. II. Ἡρξατο ἐκβάλλειν. He began the day's work by ejecting the traffickers, making no distinction between sellers and buyers (*τοὺς πωλ.* καὶ *τοὺς ἀγ.*). The market was within the Precinct (*ἐν τῷ ἱερῷ*), and had already attracted the attention of Jesus at the first Passover of His ministry (Jo. ii. 14, ἔντεν ἐν τῷ ἱ. τοὺς πωλοῦντας). It was a recognised institution, under the protection of the ἀρχιερεῖς and known in Rabbinical writings as *הנָן גִּזְבָּן תִּינְגָּלֶן*, the shops of the sons of Hanan, i.q. Annas (see Lightfoot on Mt. xxi. and Edersheim, *Life*, i. p. 369 ff.). The sales were limited to Temple-requisites, victims for the sacrifices (Jo. l.c. βόας καὶ πρόβατα καὶ περιστεράς),

and the wine, oil, salt, &c., used in the ritual. The purchasers were not only pilgrims from a distance, but probably all whose means enabled them to buy on the spot and thus to escape not only the trouble of bringing the animals with them, but also the official inspection which was compulsory in such cases (cf. Edersheim, l.c.).

καὶ τὰς τραπέζας τῶν κολλυβιστῶν κτλ.] Cf. Jo. l.c. εὑρεν τοὺς κέρματα στὰς καθημένους...τῶν κολλυβιστῶν ἐξέχεεν τὰ κέρματα κτλ. Κέρματα is 'small change,' κόλλυβος a small coin (Ar. *Pax* 1200, οὐδεὶς ἐπριάτ' ἀν δρέπανον κολλύβου), but the latter word acquired in practice the meaning 'rate of exchange,' so that κολλυβιστής carries with it the thought of the (often usurious) profit which the κέρματα secured. The κόλλυβος (*סִכְלָה*) of the Temple *nummularii* was a fixed sum per half-shekel, the equivalent of a third or fourth of a denarius (Edersheim, *Life*, i. p. 368, *Temple*, p. 48). Since every Israelite was required to pay his half-shekel yearly (Mt. xvii. 24, cf. Exod. xxx. 13 ff.) to the support of the Temple, and it could be paid only in the Jewish coin (cf. Madden, *Jewish coinage*, p. 43 f.), a large profit would be reaped at the approach of the Passover from the pilgrims who assembled from Gentile countries (cf. Jo. xii. 20, Acts ii. 5) and brought with them Greek or Roman money. To spill their piles of half-shekels over the floor of the Court on the eve of the Passover was to deal a blow to their traffic at a time when it was at

16 περιστερὰς κατέστρεψεν· <sup>16</sup>καὶ οὐκ ἦφιεν ἵνα τις  
17 διενέγκῃ σκεῦος διὰ τοῦ ἱεροῦ. <sup>17</sup>καὶ ἐδίδασκεν καὶ  
ἔλεγεν [αὐτοῖς] Οὐ γέγραπται ὅτι Ὁ οἶκός μου οἶκος

15 οἱ κατέστρεψεν DK syr<sup>sln</sup>

17 καὶ ελεγεν] λεγων ADNXGII al<sup>pl</sup> | om autois

BΨ 28 b syr<sup>sln</sup> | om ov D i 28 2<sup>pe</sup> b c (ff) i k q me arm | om oti CDΨ 69 al<sup>pau</sup>c e ff i k q  
arm<sup>odd</sup> aeth

its height. The history of the Temple tax will be found in Schürer II. i. p. 249 ff.; for a Rabbinical description of the traffic see J. Lightfoot, *l.c.* For τράπεζα in this connexion cp. Lc. xix. 23; the moneychanger or broker is a τραπεζίτης, Mt. xxv. 27. On the whole subject see Hastings, *D. B.* iii. p. 432 f. Origen (*in Jo.* t. x. 23) applies the passage to abuses in the Visible Church: πότε γὰρ ἐν τῇ ὄνομαζομένῃ ἐκκλησίᾳ ἡτις ἔστιν οἶκος θεοῦ ζῶντος...οὐκ εἰσί τις κερματιστὰ καθήμενοι δεόμενοι πληγῶν κτλ.

καὶ τὰς καθέδρας τῶν πωλ. τὰς περιστερὰς] The doves (Wycliffe "culueris") required by the Law for the purification of women (Lev. xii. 8, Lc. ii. 22 f.), for the ceremonial cleansing of lepers (Lev. xiv. 22), and on certain other occasions (Lev. xv. 14, 29). Every branch of the Temple trade suffered, and not only those forms which were specially offensive or aggressive; the Lord was opposed to it on principle, not on aesthetic grounds. The Fathers regard the dove-sellers as representing allegorically ecclesiastics who traffic in spiritual gifts, e.g. Jerome *ad l.*: "vere cathedra pestilentiae (Ps. i. 1) quae vendit columbas vendit gratiam Spiritus sancti. multae cathedrae sunt usque hodie quae vendunt columbas."

16. καὶ οὐκ ἦφιεν κτλ.] Mc. only; the incident, which in the midst of so much that was more stirring passed out of the recollection of the other witnesses, was remembered and related by St Peter. Persons carrying goods or implements were accustomed to pass through the Precinct, from the eastern to the western gate, or the

reverse, as a short cut between the city and the Mt of Olives. The practice appears to have been interdicted by the Jewish authorities; "what is the reverence of the Temple? that none go into the mountain of the Temple with his staff and his shoes, with his purse, and dust upon his feet; and that none make it his common thoroughfare" (J. Lightfoot *ad loc.*); cf. Jos. *c. Ap.* ii. 7 "denique nec vas aliquod portare licet in templum"; cf. Wünsche, *neue Beiträge*, p. 398; but if the interdict existed, it had become a dead letter, and the Lord did not shrink from the invidious task of putting it into execution. Ἡφιεν, see WH., *Notes*, p. 167, WSchm. pp. 102, 123; for ἀφίειν ἵνα, cf. Jo. xii. 7, Burton, § 210. Σκεῦος: cf. iii. 27, note; here probably any household goods, tools, utensils, or the like. Jerome remarks upon the whole incident: "si hoc in Iudaeis, quanto magis in nobis? si hoc in lege, quanto magis in evangelio?"

17. καὶ ἐδίδασκεν καὶ ἔλεγεν κτλ.] The Lord's action had brought a crowd together, which afforded an opportunity for continuous teaching (imperf.). As His custom was, He bases His lesson on Scripture (οὐ γέγραπται...; Mt., cf. Jo. x. 34 οὐκ ἔστι γέγραμμένον; Lc. γέγραπται, cf. Mc. vii. 6, ix. 12 f., xii. 29, 36), an authority against which no Jew could appeal. Οτι, *recitativum*; cf. WM., p. 683, note. The quotation in Mc. and Mt. is in the words of the LXX. (Isa. lvi. 7), though Mt. stops short at κληθήσεται: Lc. quotes loosely, writing ἔσται for κληθήσεται (for the Hebraism cf. Mt. v. 9, 19, Lc. i. 32, 35, Rom. ix. 7, 26),

προσευχῆς κληθήσεται πᾶσιν τοῖς ἔθνεσιν; ὑμεῖς δὲ πεποιήκατε αὐτὸν σπῆλαιον ληστῶν. <sup>18</sup> καὶ ἤκουσαν 18

17 πεποιηκατε ΒΛΔ Or] εποιησατε ΝΑCDNXΓΠΣΦ min<sup>fere orn</sup>

18 ηκουν ΔΨ

and like Mt. he omits πᾶσιν τοῖς ἔθνεσιν, which he would scarcely have done had Mc. been before him (cf. Plummer). The last words have a special appropriateness in the present context ; for the part of the ἱερόν which the Lord had just reclaimed from secular use was the Court of the Gentiles, where only within the Precinct Gentiles were at liberty to pray. So far as in them lay, the authorities had defeated the fulfilment of the prophecy ; for who could pray in a place which was at once a cattle-market and an exchange, where the lowing of oxen mingled with the clinking of silver and the chaffering and haggling of the dealers and those who came to purchase? Origen in *Mt.* : ἐποιουν δὲ τὰ ἐναντία τῇ εὐχῇ ἐν αὐτῷ. For the homiletic treatment of the incident the whole passage in Origen (t. xvi. 20 sqq.) is valuable ; see also in *Jo.* t. x. 23 (16).

ὑμεῖς δὲ πεποιήκατε κτλ.] There was worse than this ; the house of prayer had not only become an οἶκος ἐμπορίου (*Jo.* ii. 16), but a σπῆλαιον ληστῶν (on ληστής see Trench, *syn.* xliv., and cf. xiv. 48, xv. 27) ; no bandits' cave along the Jericho road (*Lc.* x. 30), by which the Lord had lately come, was the scene of such wholesale robbery as the Mountain of the House. The words are from another prophet, *Jer.* vii. 11 μὴ σπῆλαιον ληστῶν (Μִצְרָעַת גְּנֻכָּה) ὁ οἶκος μου...ἐνώπιον ὑμῶν ; 'Υμεῖς, addressed to the crowd, for in this matter all were to blame, from the High Priest to the pilgrims who encouraged the traffic by purchasing, or the townsfolk who used the Court as a thoroughfare. Πεποιήκατε is more exact than either Mt.'s ποιεῖτε or Lc.'s ἐποιήσατε—the evil had been stopped for the moment, but its

results were enduring. Neither the salesmen nor money-changers were better than λησταῖ— the pilgrims were practically at their mercy, and they did not content themselves with a fair margin of profit ; their extortion was more than mere dishonesty, it was downright robbery. The Talmudic tract on the sale of doves relates how Rabban Simeon ben Gamaliel, finding that the dealers exacted a piece of gold for each bird, insisted that they should be content with a silver piece (J. Lightfoot on *Mt. l.c.*). If this extortion was practised on poor women who came to be purified, what may not have been demanded of wealthy Jews from Rome and the provinces ?

18. καὶ ἦκ. οἱ ἀρχιερεῖς κτλ.] For the first time in the Synoptic Gospels the ἀρχιερεῖς are represented as combining with the γραμματεῖς against Jesus. Jo. mentions two earlier occasions on which this coalition existed (*Jo.* vii. 32 ff., xi. 47, 57) ; but there can be no doubt that His attack upon the Temple-market and exchange, which contributed largely to the revenues of the Temple, and was under their immediate protection, incensed the priestly aristocracy in the highest degree. Henceforth they took the lead in the conspiracy against the Galilean Prophet, and the Scribes were content to follow ; the Elders (*Lc.*, οἱ πρῶτοι τοῦ λαοῦ) were naturally guided by the two professional classes. Ἡκουσαν, the matter came to their ears ; the report seems to have been brought by some of their party who were on the spot, for Mt. adds (xxi. 15 ff.) that they saw the Lord working wonders and heard the Hosannas of the Entry repeated by children in the Temple-court. They remonstrated with Him to no purpose,

οἱ ἀρχιερεῖς καὶ οἱ γραμματεῖς, καὶ ἐζήτουν πῶς  
αὐτὸν ἀπολέσωσιν· ἐφοβοῦντο γὰρ αὐτόν, πᾶς γὰρ  
19 ὁ ὄχλος ἐξεπλήσσετο ἐπὶ τῇ διδαχῇ αὐτοῦ.<sup>19</sup> καὶ  
ὅταν ὁψὲ ἐγένετο, ἐξεπορεύοντο ἔξω τῆς πόλεως.  
20      <sup>20</sup>*Kai παραπορευόμενοι πρωὶ εἶδον τὴν συκῆν*

18 απολεσουσιν KM<sup>\*</sup>SsilΔ min<sup>mu</sup> | om αυτον 20 ΑΚΠ al<sup>nonn</sup> e ff | πας γαρ] οτι πας  
ADLNXΓΠΣ min<sup>pl</sup> Or | εξεπλησσοντο ΚΜΔ min<sup>pauo</sup> e vg<sup>edd</sup>      19 οταν ΝΒCΚΛΔΠ\*Ψ  
28 33 2<sup>po</sup> 1071 al<sup>pauo</sup>] οτε ADNXΓΠΣΦ min<sup>pl</sup> | εγωετο AE<sup>2</sup>GHV<sup>2</sup>X 69 al<sup>pauo</sup> | εξε-  
πορευοντο ABKM<sup>\*</sup>ΔΠΨ 124 2<sup>po</sup> 1071 al<sup>nonn</sup> c d r syrr<sup>posh hcl(mg)</sup> arm] εξεπορευετο  
ΝCDEGHM<sup>mg</sup>NSUVXΓΣΦ min<sup>pl</sup> a b f ff k vg syrr<sup>sin hel(txt)</sup> me go aeth      20 πρωὶ  
παραπ. ANXΓΠ om πρωι a c k

and withdrew to consider plans of revenge.

ἐζήτουν πῶς...ἐφοβοῦντο γὰρ αὐτόν]  
Cf. Acts xxi. 31. It was not easy to find the way so long as He had the ὄχλος with Him. The great majority of the people who thronged the Court were not drawn from Jerusalem, where the priestly class were paramount, but from Galilee and from Gentile countries, and a crowd so constituted might be dangerous in their present humour; death by stoning was not impossible even within the Precinct (Jo. x. 31), and might overtake the priests themselves or the Levitical guard (Lc. xx. 6, Acts v. 26, *Ev. Petr.* 10), if they attempted to arrest a popular Prophet.

πᾶς γὰρ ὁ ὄχλος κτλ.] The effect of the Lord's teaching on the populace was the same at the end as at the outset of His work, cf. i. 22. It was still a κανὴ διδαχή, never losing its freshness.

19. καὶ ὅταν ὁψὲ ἐγένετο κτλ.] Mt. mentions only the return to the Mount on Monday night (ἐξῆλθον...ηὐλίσθη); Mc. states once for all the Lord's practice on each of the first three days of Holy Week; cf. R.V. "every evening He went forth out of the city." Similarly Lc., xxi. 37. Field (*Notes*, p. 35), while regarding ὅταν...ἐγένετο as "a solecism—probably due to St Mark himself," thinks that a

single action is intended. For ὅταν with the ind. cf. iii. 11; the aor. is used in this connexion again in Apoc. viii. 1 (WM, p. 389 note). The day had begun for Jesus and the Twelve πρωὶ (Mt. xxi. 18); it ended ὁψὲ. Hunger (*v.* 12) and fatigue were forgotten in the work of God (cf. Jo. iv. 31 ff.). Only the approach of the hour for closing the gates and the melting away of the crowd in the Court (cf. Edersheim, *Temple*, p. 116 ff.) induced Him to retire for rest. Ἐξεπ. ἐξω τῆς πόλεως, cf. *v.* 11; Mc. omits εἰς Βηθανίαν here, but Mt. supplies it, adding καὶ ηὐλίσθη ἐκεῖ.

20—25. CONVERSATION ON THE WITHERING OF THE FIGTREE; THE OMNIPOTENCE OF FAITH, PRAYER, AND LOVE (Mt. xxi. 19<sup>b</sup>—22).

20. παραπορευόμενοι πρωὶ κτλ.] In the early light of the next (Tuesday) morning the figtree (xi. 13 συκῆν) by the wayside was as conspicuous for its shrivelled leaves as it had been for their freshness the day before. All saw it (*εἶδον*), and marked how the tree was blasted root and branch (*ἐκ ριζῶν*). In Mt. the entire incident belongs to the Tuesday morning, and the figtree is withered under the eyes of the Apostles (*ἐξηράνθη παραχρῆμα*), whose astonishment is at once expressed; Augustine's "alio die viderunt alio die mirati sunt" (*de cons. ev.* ii. 131) is certainly not warranted by Mt.'s

ἔξηραμμένην ἐκ ρίζῶν. <sup>21</sup> καὶ ἀναμνησθεὶς ὁ Πέτρος 21 λέγει αὐτῷ Ῥαββεί, ἴδε η̄ συκῆ η̄ν κατηράσω ἔξηρανται. <sup>22</sup> καὶ ἀποκριθεὶς ὁ Ἰησοῦς λέγει αὐτοῖς 22 § syr<sup>hier</sup> Ἐχετε πίστιν θεοῦ. <sup>23</sup> ἀμὴν λέγω ὑμῖν ὅτι ὃς ἀν 23 εἴπη τῷ ὄρει τούτῳ Ἀρθητι καὶ βλήθητι εἰς τὴν θάλασσαν καὶ μὴ διακριθῇ ἐν τῇ καρδίᾳ αὐτοῦ ἀλλὰ

21 λεγεῖ] εἰπεν Ψ | ιδου D 435 1071 alpaue | εξηρανθη DLNΔΣΨ 33 min<sup>nonn</sup>  
22 εχετε] pr ei ND 13 28 33<sup>corr</sup> 61 69 124 1071 abir syrsin arm | om θεον a ckr  
23 αμην]+γαρ ACLXΓΔΠΣΦ min<sup>pl</sup> q syrrpeshel me go | om οτι 1° ND 33 2<sup>pe</sup>  
alpaue k arm go aeth | os av ειπη] εαν ειπητε 33 syrsin

words. That the tradition has been preserved in a more accurate form by Mc. is scarcely open to doubt; cf. Victor: ἀκριβέστερον δ παρὸν εὐαγγελιστῆς ἀπομημονεύει τῆς ἱστορίας, ἐν τῇ ἐφεξῆς ημέρᾳ λέγων τεθεωρῆσθαι ὑπὸ τῶν μαθητῶν ἔξηραμμένην τὴν συκῆν. The classical phrase ἐκ ρίζῶν is ἀπ. λεγ. in the N. T., but occurs in Job xxviii. 9, xxxi. 12, Ezech. xvii. 9. With ἔξηρ. ἐκ ρίζῶν cf. Job xviii. 16 ὑποκάτωθεν αἱ ρίζαι αὐτοῦ ἔξηρανθήσονται.

21. καὶ ἀναμνησθεὶς κτλ.] The connexion between the withered tree and the Lord's words on the previous morning flashed at once on Peter's quick thought: cf. xiv. 72 ἀνεμνήσθη ὁ Πέτρος τὸ ρῆμα. Ῥαββεί: cf. ix. 5, xiv. 45, Jo. i. 39. Κατηράσω: in the light of the event the Lord's words shaped themselves into a κατάρα to the recollection of the disciple; see note on v. 14. Ἐξηράνται, not ἔξηράνθη (Mt., see WM., p. 345)—the enduring effect of the 'curse' was before the eyes of all; cf. πεποιήκατε, v. 17. For ἔξηράνεσθαι, of plants, see iv. 6, Jo. xiv. 6, Jas. i. 11, 1 Pet. i. 24.

22. καὶ ἀποκριθεὶς κτλ.] The answer is remarkable; the Lord does not explain the lesson to be learnt from the fate of the tree, but deals with a matter of more immediate importance to the Twelve, the lesson to be learnt from the prompt fulfilment of His

prayer (μηκέτι...φάγοι, v. 14). The answer is addressed not to Peter only, but to all.

ἔχετε πίστιν θεοῦ] Sc. πίστιν (τὴν) εἰς τὸν θεόν. The gen. is that of the object, as in πίστις Ἰησοῦ (Χριστοῦ), Rom. iii. 22, 26, Gal. ii. 26, &c. (cf. WM., p. 232); πίστιν is anarthrous, as being sufficiently defined by the genitive—'a faith which rests on God.' Compare Jo. xiv. 1 πιστεύετε εἰς τὸν θεόν. Elementary as the command may have seemed to be, it was necessary even for professed theists and Jews (James ii. 14 ff.). Mt. omits θεοῦ (ἐὰν ἔχητε πίστιν, cf. app. crit.).

23. ἀμὴν λέγω ὑμῖν] The solemn preface which prepares for a specially important saying (iii. 28, viii. 12, ix. 1, 41, x. 15, 29).

ὅς ἀν εἴπῃ κτλ.] The Twelve were crossing the Mt of Olives; below them, between the mountains of Judea and the mountains of Moab, lay the hollow of the Dead Sea. 'Faith, cooperating with the Divine Will, could fill yonder basin with the mass of limestone beneath their feet.' The metaphor was in use among the Rabbis; e.g. J. Lightfoot quotes from the Talmud: "he saw Resh Lachish...as if he were plucking up mountains"; a famous master in Israel was known as עקר הרים, 'a rooter up of mountains.' Of the Mt of Olives Zechariah had foretold that

24 πιστεύῃ ὅτι ὁ λαλεῖ γίνεται, ἔσται αὐτῷ. <sup>24</sup> διὰ τοῦτο λέγω ὑμῖν Πάντα ὅσα προσεύχεσθε καὶ αἱ-

23 πιστευσῃ ACDN(ΧΓ)ΠΣΦ min<sup>pl</sup> | o] a ACXΓΠΦ | λαλεῖ ΝΒ(Λ)Ν(Δ)ΣΨ 33 48<sup>ev</sup>  
 2<sup>ρο</sup> a k] λεγει ACXΓΠΦ min<sup>pl</sup> f q vg [ γινεται] εσται 2<sup>ρο</sup> | εσται αυτω]+o εαν ειπη  
 ΑΝΧΓΠΙΣΦΨ min<sup>pl</sup> a q syrr<sup>pesh helhier</sup> arm go το μελλον· o αν ειπη γενησεται D b c ff i  
 γενησεται οσα αν ειπη 2<sup>ρο</sup> 24 οσα]+av (vel εαν) A(ΚΝ)ΧΓΠΙΣΦ min<sup>pl</sup> | προσευ-  
 χεσθε και] προσευχομενοι ΑΝΧΓΠΙΣΦ min<sup>omn vid</sup> arm | αιτησθε ΓΠ i 604 al<sup>nonn</sup>

when the feet of the Lord stood upon it, the mountain should cleave asunder and the two masses be removed to the north and south (xiv. 4). Standing on Olivet, the Lord may have had this prophecy in His thoughts; but His saying had been uttered before, under the heights of Hermon (Mt. xvii. 20). For another saying of the same type, see Lc. xvii. 6. The teaching is substantially that of ix. 23 (*πάντα δυνατὰ τῷ πιστεύοντι*); for a practical application to common life see Thph. *ad loc.*: ὅρος...ἡ ὑπερήφανος γνώμη, ὑψηλὴ τις οὖσα καὶ σκληρά· δοτις οὖν ὄρα τὸ τῆς ὑπερηφανίας πάθος ἐνοχλοῦν αὐτῷ...ὅ τοιούτος ὀφείλει ἐπιτιμᾶν τῷ ὅρει τούτῳ. Victor's caution is important: δῆλον δὲ ὡς οὐκ ἀχρείον τούτων ἔκαστον ἐπαγγέλλεται Χριστός, οὐδὲ οἶον ἐπὶ θαυματουργίᾳ κενῆ...οὔτε γάρ ὅρος οὔτε δῆ κάρφος ἀχρείως μετακινθείη ἀν κατὰ δύναμιν θεοῦ, ἐπεὶ μηδὲ αὐτὸς ἀχρείως τὴν συκῆν ἐξήρανεν. "Αρθητι, βλήθητι: the aorists point to momentary effects, Burton, § 184 (98). Διακριθῇ, Vg. *hesitaverit*, 'hesitate,' 'doubt'; cf. Acts x. 20, xi. 2, Rom. iv. 20, xiv. 23, James i. 6, ii. 4; in these passages διακρίνεσθαι = *secum disceptare* = *dubitare* (Blass)—a sense "apparently confined to the N.T. and later Christian writings" (Mayor on James i. 6, q.v.), where διακρ. "appears as the proper opposite" of *πίστις*, *πιστεύω* (SH., *Romans*, p. 115). Πιστεύῃ (see vv. ll.) is more accurate than *πιστεύσῃ*: faith is regarded as the normal attitude of the heart, not a sudden emotion or isolated act. Faith contemplates the effect as potentially accompanying

its exercise (*ὁ λαλεῖ γίνεται*), though the actual fulfilment may be delayed (Mt. γενήσεται). It endows even a passing utterance (*λαλεῖ*) with a power to which there is no limit but the μέτρον πίστεως which God has bestowed (Rom. xii. 3). On the construction *ἔσται αὐτῷ* see Blass, *Gr.* p. 111 f.

St Paul, with this saying in view, recognises the need of something higher than the faith which could move mountains (1 Cor. xiii. 2 καν ἔχω πάσαν τὴν πίστιν ὥστε ὅρη μεθιστάνειν, ἀγάπην δὲ μὴ ἔχω, οὐθέν εἰμι). The Lord, however, does not overlook this higher principle, or proclaim a πίστις χωρὶς ἔργων: see v. 25.

24. διὰ τοῦτο λέγω ὑμῖν κτλ.] A practical instruction based (διὰ τοῦτο) on ὃς ἀν...πιστεύῃ ὅτι ὁ λαλεῖ γίνεται, *ἔσται αὐτῷ*. 'Since this is the criterion of success in spiritual things, let it be the constant attitude of your minds when you pray.' "Οσα προσεύχεσθε καὶ αἰτεῖσθε, Mt. οσα ἀν αἰτήσητε ἐν τῇ προσευχῇ. Προσεύχεσθαι is used absolutely, or followed by ἵνα or ὅπως with a clause expressing the desire (xiv. 38, Jas. v. 16), or by τοῦ with the inf. (Jas. v. 17); the acc. of the prayer is rare, but cf. Lc. xviii. 11 ταῦτα προσηγέρτο, Rom. viii. 26 τί προσευχώμεθα. As distinguished from αἰτεῖν or αἰτεῖσθαι, προσεύχεσθαι implies a Divine Object of prayer; a προσευχή is exclusively a religious act, an αἴτημα may be addressed either to God (Phil. iv. 6, 1 Jo. v. 15) or to man (Lc. xxiii. 24); cf. Dan. vi. 7 ὃς ἀν αἰτήσῃ αἴτημα παρὰ παντὸς θεοῦ καὶ ἀνθρώπου. On the mid. αἰτεῖσθαι see vi. 23, 24. 'Ελάβετε,

τεῖσθε, πιστεύετε ὅτι ἐλάβετε, καὶ ἔσται ὑμῖν. <sup>25</sup> καὶ 25  
ὅταν στήκετε προσευχόμενοι, ἀφίετε εἰ̄ τι ἔχετε  
κατά τινος, ἵνα καὶ ὁ πατὴρ ὑμῶν ὁ ἐν τοῖς οὐρανοῖς  
ἀφῆ ὑμῖν τὰ παραπτώματα ὑμῶν. ¶

¶ syr<sup>hior</sup>

<sup>24</sup> ελαβετε ΝΒCLΔΨ με] λαμβανετε ΑΝΧΓΠΣΦ min<sup>fere omn</sup> go λημψεσθε D I 2<sup>pe</sup>  
latt aeth 25 στηκετε ACDHLM<sup>2</sup>VXΨ I 124 al<sup>nonn</sup>] στηκητε BEGKM\* SUVΔΠ(Σ)Φ  
min<sup>pl</sup> Or στηγε Ι | αφετε C\* | αφιη Χ αφησει D min<sup>perpaue</sup> | υμων 2<sup>o</sup>] + (26) ει δε υμεις  
ουκ αφιετε ουδε ο πατηρ υμων ο εν (τοις) ουρανοις αφησει (υμιν) τα παραπτωματα υμων  
Α(CD)EF<sup>vid</sup>GH(KM)NUVΧΓΠΣΦ min<sup>pl</sup> a b c f ff i m q r vg syrr<sup>posh</sup>hcl go (om ΝBLSΔΨ  
min<sup>paue</sup> k l syr<sup>sin</sup> arm): postea add λεγω δε υμιν αιτειτε κτλ. (Mt vii. 7, 8) M min<sup>nonn</sup>

the petition was granted and potentially answered at the moment when it was offered. Πιστεύετε ὅτι ἐλάβετε καὶ = ἐὰν πιστεύητε δ. ἐλ., hypothetical imperative for protasis, Burton, § 269. Mt. omits this reference to the realising power of a successful faith, reducing the promise to πιστεύοντες λήμψεσθε. Λαμβάνειν is the correlative of αἰτεῖσθαι, cf. Mt. vii. 8, Jas. iv. 3, I Jo. iii. 22, and see Wünsche, p. 102.

25. καὶ ὅταν στήκετε προσευχόμενοι κτλ.] ‘Whenever ye stand at prayer, forgive.’ Another condition of effective prayer. The same lesson occurs in another form and setting, Mt. vi. 14; the R. T. adds here from Mt. the converse εἰ̄ δὲ ὑμεις οὐκ ἀφίετε κτλ. and a few MSS. append Mt. vii. 7 f. As the words stand in the true text of Mc., they possess an individuality which shews that they have not been imported from another context. Εἰ̄ τι ἔχετε κατά τινος: cf. Mt. v. 23 ἔχει τι κατὰ τοῦ, Col. iii. 13 ἐάν τις πρός τινα ἔχῃ μομφήν. ‘Αφίετε balances πιστεύετε; the act of prayer must be accompanied by love as well as by faith. For στήκειν see WH., Notes, p. 169; for ὅταν...στήκετε, cf. WM., p. 388, Burton, § 309, Blass, Gr. p. 218. Standing was the normal attitude in prayer (I K. viii. 14, 22, Neh. ix. 4, Ps. cxxxiv. 2, Jer. xviii. 20, Mt. vi. 5; cf. Lightfoot on Mt. l.c.); in the temple-court even the Publican stands, though afar off (Lc. xviii. 11, 13); but kneeling seems to have been preferred

on occasions of great solemnity or of distress (I K. viii. 54, Ezra ix. 5, Dan. vi. 10, Mt. xxvi. 39, Acts vii. 50, xx. 36, xxi. 5, Eph. iii. 14): cf. the story which is told of James ‘the Just,’ Eus. H. E. ii. 23. In the ancient Church kneeling was forbidden during the Great Forty Days and on Sundays (Tert. de coron. 3, can. conc. Nicaen. 20), and the Eastern Church adheres to the practice of standing at prayer (Stanley, E. C. p. 195 ff.). The Lord’s reference to the contemporary custom imposes of course no ritual order upon the future Church.

ἵνα καὶ ὁ πατὴρ ὑμῶν κτλ.] A reference to the Lord’s Prayer, or the early teaching connected with it, cf. Mt. vi. 12, 14 f. This is the only place where the phrase ὁ πατὴρ ὑμῶν [ό ἐν τοῖς οὐρανοῖς] is found in Mc.; v. 26 (R. T.) is an interpolation from Mt. Comp. however iii. 35, where the doctrine of a Divine family is implicitly taught. Παράπτωμα occurs in the Gospels only here and Mt. vi. 14 f., but it is fairly common in the later books of the LXX. (cf. e.g. Ps. xviii. (xix.) 12, Dan. vi. 4 (5) Th.) and in St Paul. The word, which is coupled with ἀμαρτία in Eph. ii. 1, means specifically a ‘false step,’ a fall from the right course, whilst ἀμαρτία is a falling short of the true end or aim; see Trench, syn. 16; παραπτ. is perhaps preferred in this context because offences against God are for the moment placed in the same category

§ F 27      27§ Καὶ ἔρχονται πάλιν εἰς Ἱεροσόλυμα. καὶ ἐν τῷ ἱερῷ περιπατοῦντος αὐτοῦ ἔρχονται πρὸς αὐτὸν οἱ ἀρχιερεῖς καὶ οἱ γραμματεῖς καὶ οἱ πρεσβύτεροι,  
28 28 καὶ ἐλεγον αὐτῷ Ἐν ποίᾳ ἔξουσίᾳ ταῦτα ποιεῖς;  
ἢ τίς σοι ἔδωκεν τὴν ἔξουσίαν ταῦτην ἵνα ταῦτα

27 ερχεται DX b c fff i (k exiit) q aeth | om παλιν FΦ | καὶ οἱ πρεσβ. ] om 1 91  
209 + τὸν λαὸν D      28 καὶ ελεγον] κ. λεγονσιν ADNXΓΠ al<sup>pl</sup> λεγοντες Ψ | om η  
τις...ποιησ D min<sup>perpau</sup> k | η τις] καὶ τις ANXΓΠΣΦ min<sup>pl</sup> lat<sup>vtpi</sup> vg syrr<sup>sin</sup> pesh hel (txt)  
arm go aeth | om ινα τ. ποιησ 2<sup>pe</sup> a b syrr<sup>sin</sup> arm

with those committed against men, to which the lighter term properly belongs.

27—33. THE AUTHORITY OF JESUS CHALLENGED BY MEMBERS OF THE SANHEDRIN (Mt. xxi. 23—27, Lc. xx. 1—8).

27. ἔρχονται πάλιν εἰς Ἰ.] A third visit to the Temple (cf. *vv. ii, 15*)—the day, apparently, Tuesday in Holy Week.

ἐν τῷ ἱερῷ περιπατοῦντος] Probably in the colonnades of the Court of the Gentiles, either in the στοὰ βασιλική on the S. side of the Court (see *Recovery*, p. 9) or in the στοὰ Σολομῶν (Jo. x. 23) on the E. side. As He passed along, or at intervals when He was stopped by the crowd, He taught (Mt. διδάσκοντι, Lc. διδάσκοντος αὐτοῦ τὸν λαὸν...καὶ εὐαγγελιζομένου). While He was teaching, members of each order in the Sanhedrin were seen to approach (Mt. προσῆλθαν, Lc. ἐπέστησαν). Mt. speaks of two orders only (*οἱ ἀρχ. καὶ οἱ πρεσβ.*), but Lc. agrees with Mc. in adding the Scribes; it is conceivable that the latter, who were our Lord's ordinary opponents, kept in the background on this occasion, since the question concerned the custodians of the Temple rather than the interpreters of the Law. The repeated article (*οἱ...καὶ οἱ...καὶ οἱ*) seems to indicate that those who came were representatives of their respective classes: cf. viii. 31, x. 33. The united action of the three bodies

was probably resolved upon in conference the night before; see *v. 18*, note.

28. ἐν ποίᾳ ἔξουσίᾳ ταῦτα ποιεῖς?] The question in itself was a reasonable one, and the men who asked it felt that they had a right to do so. The Temple was in their charge, and by forcibly ejecting the vendors whom they allowed, Jesus had laid claim to a superior jurisdiction. They now ask Him publicly to produce His credentials, to state (1) the nature of His authority, (2) the name of the person from whom He had received it. Ποίᾳ, *qualis*, τίς, *quis*; cf. 1 Pet. i. 11 τίνα ἡ ποίου καιρόν, with Hort's note, and see note on xii. 28. Ἐν π. ἔξ., in right of what authority? cf. Acts iv. 7 ἐν ποίᾳ δυνάμει ἡ ποίφ ὀνόματι. Ἰνα ταῦτα ποιῆς, Mc. only; the words further define the point at issue (Burton, § 216); even if Jesus had received some measure of authority, was it such as to justify His interference in the control of the Temple? Ταῦτα, notably the expulsion of the licensed salesmen (Euth.: *ποίᾳ*; τὸ ἐκβάλλειν τοὺς πωλοῦντας καὶ ἀγοράζοντας ἐν τῷ ἱερῷ, τὸ ἀνατρέπειν τὰς προρρηθείσας τραπέζας καὶ καθέδρας, τὸ μὴ ἀφίεναι διενεγκέν τοκένος διὰ τοῦ ἱεροῦ, καὶ τοιαῦτα); but the vagueness of the word covers a reference to the whole career of Jesus, which from their point of view had been continually in conflict with lawful authority, in Galilee as well as in Jerusalem.

ποιῆς; <sup>29</sup> ὁ δὲ Ἰησοῦς εἶπεν αὐτοῖς Ἐπερωτήσω ὑμᾶς <sup>29</sup>  
ένα λόγον, καὶ ἀποκρίθητέ μοι, καὶ ἐρῶ ὑμῖν ἐν ποίᾳ  
ἔχουσίᾳ ταῦτα ποιῶ. <sup>30</sup> τὸ βάπτισμα τὸ Ἰωάνου, ἐξ <sup>30</sup>  
οὐρανοῦ ἦν ἡ ἐξ ἀνθρώπων; ἀποκρίθητέ μοι. <sup>31</sup> καὶ <sup>31</sup>  
διελογίζοντο πρὸς ἑαυτοὺς λέγοντες Ἐὰν εἴπωμεν

<sup>29 εἰπεν]</sup> pr αποκριθεις ADNXTΓΠΣΦ min<sup>pl</sup> a b fff i q vg syrr<sup>sin hel</sup> arm go | νμας] + καγω (vel και εγω) ΙD(EFH)GMN(SUVX)ΓΣΦΨ min<sup>mu</sup> a b fff i q r vg syrr<sup>pesh hel</sup> καγω νμας ΑΚΠ 736 min<sup>pauc</sup> (syr<sup>sin</sup> arm) go aeth (om καγω BCvidΔ min<sup>perpauc</sup> k\* me) | και ερω νμαν] καγω νμιν ερω ΛΔ 33 c me και εγω λεγω νμειν D <sup>30 το βαπτισμα]</sup> pr ει Δ | το Ιωανου] om το ΝΧΓΠΣΦΨ min<sup>pl</sup> | εξ ουρ.] pr ποθεν ην ΙCΦ 33 1071 alporpauc (k) syrpesh the aeth <sup>31 διελογιζοντο Ιc.a BCDGKLMΔΠΨ al<sup>nong</sup>]</sup> προσελογιζοντο Ι<sup>\*c.b</sup> ελογιζοντο ΑΕFHNSUVXΓΣΦ min<sup>pl</sup> | προς εαυτους] εν εαυτοις 33 | εαν] pr τι ειπωμεν ΔΦ 13 28 69 124 346 2<sup>pe</sup> a b c ff i (k) (r)

29. ἐπερωτήσω ὑμᾶς ἔνα λόγον]  
Question is met by question (cf. x. 4, 18); Mt. ἐρωτήσω οὐ κάγω, ‘I also on my part have a point to raise.’ “Ἐνα λόγον, ‘just one preliminary matter for consideration’; εἰς neither contrasts the Lord’s single question with the two put by the Sanhedrin, nor is it a mere substitute for τις, but points to the simplicity of the issue; the answer to that one question will decide it.

Let them answer first (ἀποκρίθητέ μοι), as became the teachers of Israel, and He will then be prepared with His reply (καὶ ἐρῶ ὑμῖν κτλ.). Baljon’s κἀν ἀποκρίθητέ μοι is less after the style of Mc.

30. τὸ βάπτισμα τὸ Ἰωάνου κτλ.] The enquiry is pushed a stage further back. Though Jesus had not received His authority from John, John had borne public and repeated testimony to His Divine mission (Jo. i. 26 f., 29 ff., 36). The question of the Sanhedrin therefore resolved itself into a question as to the source of John’s teaching (Mt. πόθεν ἦν); Tὸ βάπτισμα τὸ Ἰωάνου: i.e. the Baptist’s work and teaching as a whole, symbolised by its visible expression, cf. Acts i. 22, xviii. 25; for the form βάπτισμα see i. 4, note. Ἐξ οὐρανοῦ, of heavenly origin (Blass, Gr. p. 147f.; cf. Wünsche, p. 398 f., Dalman, *Worte*, i. p. 178), i.e. from God, as the alternative ἐξ

ἀνθρώπων shews; cf. Acts v. 38, 39; for the phrase, cf. Jo. iii. 27. The Baptist knew himself to be personally ἐκ τῆς γῆς, and recognised the limitations of his teaching (ἐκ τῆς γῆς λαλεῖ, ib. v. 31); but his ‘baptism,’ his message and its seal, were Divine (Jo. i. 6). Ἀποκρίθητέ μοι: the Lord claims an answer, as from authorised teachers and men who were acquainted with the facts.

Dr Bruce’s use (comm. on Mt. xxi. 23 ff.) of the Lord’s question as an antidote to the “notion of church sacraments and orders depending on ordination” is entirely beside the mark. The question refers to the authority of a prophet, not to that of a regular ministry; the latter derives its powers from Christ (Jo. xx. 21) through the hands of men (2 Tim. i. 6); the former, if not directly ἐξ οὐρανοῦ, can only be ἐξ ἀνθρώπων, and is therefore futile.

31. διελογίζοντο πρὸς ἑαυτούς] Mt. δ. ἐν ἑαυτοῖς, Lc. συνελογίζαντο πρὸς έ. The Marcan phrase occurs in viii. 16, where πρὸς έ. probably = πρὸς ἀλλήλους. In the present instance conference was scarcely possible, and Mt.’s ἐν ἑαυτοῖς probably gives the true sense, cf. Mc. ii. 6, 8. The same thought flashed across the minds of all; they realised that there was no way of

Ἐξ οὐρανοῦ, ἐρεῖ Διὰ τί οὖν οὐκ ἐπιστεύσατε αὐτῷ;  
 32 ἀλλὰ εἴπωμεν Ἐξ ἀνθρώπων; ἐφοβουντό τὸν  
 ὄχλον· ἀπαντει γάρ εἰχον τὸν Ἰωάννην ὄντως ὅτι

31 ερει] λεγει υμιν (sic) D (arm<sup>vid</sup>) | om ουν AC\* LMSXΔΨ 1071 al<sup>nominative</sup> a b c d ff k q  
 syr<sup>sln</sup> 32 αλλα] εαν D min<sup>nominative</sup> g q vg + εαν min<sup>vix mu</sup> b f ff r (syrr) arm | εφοβουντο]  
 φοβουμεθα (D) ΝΣ 13 28 69 124 2<sup>pe</sup> al<sup>pae</sup> a b f ff i q vg<sup>codd</sup> arm | οχλον ΙΒCΝΣΦ 33  
 106 syr<sup>hel(mg)</sup>] λαον ADLXΓΔΠΨ min<sup>pl</sup> | ειχον] εχουσιν Σ ηδεσαν D 2<sup>pe</sup> a b c f ff i k q  
 arm | οντως οτι προφητης ην ΙcBCLΨ 13 69 346] οντως ws προφητην Δ theb οτι οντως  
 (vel αληθως) προφ. ην A(D) XΓΠΦ min<sup>pl</sup> latt<sup>vpl</sup> syr<sup>pesh hel</sup> me go om οντως Ι\*ΝΣ 1  
 28 124 2<sup>pe</sup> al<sup>pae</sup> c k syr<sup>sln</sup> arm aeth

escape but one. Bede: "viderunt quod utrumlibet horum responderint in laqueum se casuros, timentes lapidationem, sed magis timentes veritatis confessionem."

ἐάν εἴπωμεν Ἐξ οὐρανοῦ κτλ.] To acknowledge the Divine mission of John was to charge themselves with unbelief in having as a class rejected his baptism (Lc. vii. 30), and to give an advantage to their Questioner which He would not be slow to use (ἐρεῖ Διὰ τί κτλ.). They do not appear to have seen the real drift of the Lord's question, or the direct answer which the reply Ἐξ οὐρανοῦ would give to their own. For πιστεύειν with dat. cf. Gen. xv. 6 ἐπίστευσεν Ἀβράμ τῷ θεῷ, Jo. v. 46 εἰ γάρ ἐπιστεύετε Μωυσέι, xiv. 11 πιστεύετέ μοι, I Jo. v. 10 ὁ μὴ πιστεύων τῷ θεῷ ψεύστην πεποίκεν αὐτόν. As distinguished from πιστεύειν followed by ἐν, ἐπι, or εἰς, πιστεύειν τινὶ regards faith as placed in the word of another rather than in his person.

32. ἀλλὰ εἴπωμεν κτλ.] "Shall we then say 'Of men'?—they feared the crowd." The normal construction is given by Mt. (ἐάν δὲ εἴπωμεν...φοβούμεθα τ. ὅ.); in Mc. the protasis takes the form of a question, and the apodosis disappears, the Evangelist supplying its place by narrative (WM., p. 725, Blass, Gr. p. 286). On the deliberative subjunctive cf. xii. 14, and WM., p. 356. Lc. specifies the fear which was uppermost in their minds: οἱ λαὸς ἄπας καταλιθάσει ήμᾶς. From

Jo. viii. 57 it is clear that even within the Precinct the danger was a real one, if the susceptibilities of a Jewish crowd (ὄχλος, Mt., Mc.) were aroused. A denial of John's Divine mission might be treated by his adherents as blasphemy, since it would amount to an attribution to man of words which were held to be of the Holy Ghost.

ἀπαντει γάρ εἰχον κτλ.] 'For as to John, all really held that he was a prophet' (cf. WM., p. 781). Mt. has softened this rough note into ὡς προφήτην ἔχουσιν τὸν Ἰ., whilst Lc. abandons ἔχω (πεπεισμένος γάρ ἐστιν (sc. οἱ λαὸς) Ἰωάννην προφήτην εἶναι). For ἔχειν 'to regard' cf. Lc. xiv. 18, Phil. ii. 29, Blass, Gr. pp. 231, 247; D's ηδεσαν is a correction or a gloss, "Οντως οτι is not = οτι οντως (cf. ix. 1, note), but the adverb is to be taken with εἰχον—the people were seriously impressed with a conviction of John's prophetic character. His martyrdom had perhaps deepened the reverence which was entertained for him by the thousands who had received his baptism. He had seemed to fulfil a long cherished hope (cf. i. 5, note), and to suggest that the confidence of the people had been misplaced would rouse a dangerous storm. "Οντως occurs here only in Mc.; Lc. uses it twice, Jo. once, St Paul six times; in the LXX. it is rare, but well distributed (Num.<sup>1</sup>, 3 Regn.<sup>1</sup>, Sap.<sup>1</sup>, Jer.<sup>2</sup>). <sup>2</sup>Hv, 'had been': see Blass, Gr. p. 192.

προφήτης ἦν. <sup>33</sup>καὶ ἀποκριθέντες τῷ Ἰησοῦ λέ- 33  
γουσιν Οὐκ οἴδαμεν. καὶ ὁ Ἰησοῦς λέγει αὐτοῖς  
Οὐδὲ ἐγὼ λέγω ὑμῖν ἐν ποίᾳ ἔξουσίᾳ ταῦτα ποιῶ.

<sup>1</sup> Καὶ ἤρξατο αὐτοῖς ἐν παραβολαῖς λαλεῖν Ἀμ- I XII.  
πελῶνα ἄνθρωπος ἐφύτευσεν, καὶ περιέθηκεν φραγμὸν

33 ο Ἰησους]+(vel pr) αποκριθεις (AD) EFGH(KM) SUVX(II)Φ min<sup>pl</sup> b ff (i q vg)  
 syrr<sup>-sin</sup> hel arm go aeth | eis ποιαν εξουσιαν D XII 1 λαλειν ΙΒΓΛΔΨ i 13 69 118  
 124 346 d f ff i q vg syrr<sup>-sin</sup> pesh hel(mg) aegg] λεγειν ACDNXΠΣΦ min<sup>pl</sup> k syr<sup>hel</sup>(txt) go +  
 και λεγειν arm (cf. b c) | περιεθηκεν]+αυτω C<sup>2</sup>NΨ 28 2pe al

33. ἀποκριθέντες τῷ Ἰησοῦ κτλ.] They saved themselves from the dilemma by a disgraceful profession of ignorance. The Lord does not go behind their answer, or expose its disingenuousness; it was enough that it released Him from His undertaking to reply to their challenge (*v.* 29). If they could not tell, the compact had fallen through; and He refuses accordingly to fulfil His part (*οὐδὲ ἔγω λέγω ὑμῖν*). His position was unassailable, and they left Him without a word. Οὐδέ takes up οὐκ in the answer of the Sanhedrin: for a somewhat similar use cf. Mt. vi. 15, ‘*Jo.*’ viii. 11. Victor: οὐκ εἶπεν Οὐκ οἶδα, ἀλλ’ Οὐ λέγω· ἀντὶ τοῦ Οὐκ ήβουλήθητε τὸ ἀληθὲς εἰπεῖν· οὐδὲ τῆς παρ’ ἐμοῦ τεύχεσθε ἀποκρίσεως. Ἡ καὶ οὕτως· Οὐ δύνασθε οὐδὲ ὑμεῖς περὶ ἐμοῦ ἀκούειν δοτις εἰμι, ἐπει τὸν μάρτυρα οὐ δέχεσθε ὃς ηλθεν εἰς μαρτυρίαν.

XII. 1-12. THE HUSBANDMEN AND  
THE HEIR. (Mt. xxi. 33-46, Lc. xx.  
9-19.)

i. ἦρξατο...έν παραβολαῖς λαλεῖν] A new commencement was made of parabolic teaching, addressed to the Sanhedrists (*αὐτοῖς*), and intended to expose the true character of their hostility. Ἐν παραβολαῖς, cf. Ps. lxxvii. (lxxviii.) 2 (= **לְשׁוֹנָה**), Mt. xiii. 3, 10, 13, 34 f., xxii. 1, Mc. iii. 23, iv. 2, 11, Lc. viii. 10. Lc., who with Mc. relates but one parable in this context, changes the phrase (*ἦρξατο...λέγειν τὴν παραβολὴν ταύτην*): Mt. on the other hand,

who has already recorded the parable of the 'Two Sons' (*vv. 28-32*), begins *"Αλλην παραβολὴν ἀκούσατε.* On the connexion of this parable with the foregoing narrative cf. Victor: *ἡ παραβολὴ δῆλοι ὅτι μὴ μόνον περὶ τὸν ιωάννην ἡγνωμονήκασιν, ἀλλὰ καὶ περὶ αὐτὸν τὸν κύριον, ἀρξάμενοι ἀπὸ τοῦ οἰκέτου, προελθόντες δὲ ἐπὶ τὸν δεσπότην.*

ἀμπελῶνα ἄνθρωπος ἐφύτευσεν] Mt. ἀνθρ. ἦν οἰκοδεσπότης δοτις κτλ. He was not simply the owner of a vine-yard, but a master who had slaves at his command (v. 2 ff.; cf. Mt. xiii. 27, Lc. xiv. 21). The land of Israel was a land of the vine (Gen. xl ix. 11, Deut. viii. 8), and the planting of vineyards was one of the cares of the prudent householder (Deut. xxviii. 30, 39). The vineyard had become a recognised symbol of Israel itself, as the covenant people (Ps. lxxx. 8 f., Isa. v. 2 ff., Jer. ii. 21), and it was impossible for the members of the Sanhedrin or for the better-taught among the crowd to mistake the drift of the parable (see v. 12). The imagery and even the language is largely derived from Isa. l.c. (ἀμπελὸν ἔγενήθη...καὶ φραγμὸν περιέθηκα...καὶ ὠκοδόμησα πύργον...καὶ προλήνιον ὕρνξα...καὶ ἔμεινα τοῦ ποιῆσαι σταφυλῆν); cf. dial. Tim. et Ag. (ed. Conybeare, p. 93) ἐπίτεν αὐτοῖς τὴν παραβολὴν ἤντερ τότε Ἡσαίας προείπεν. Ἀμπελῶν, a word chiefly found in the later Gk., is common in the LXX., where it usually represents מִלְחָמָה. For φυτεύειν ἀμπ. ("כַּעֲמָד") see Gen. ix. 20,

καὶ ὥρυξεν ὑπολήνιον καὶ ὠκοδόμησεν πύργον, καὶ  
2 ἐξέδετο αὐτὸν γεωργοῖς, καὶ ἀπεδήμησεν. <sup>2</sup> καὶ

I ὠκοδομ.] + αυτῷ 1071 | εξεδοτο B<sup>3</sup>D(F<sup>2</sup>H)ΝΧΓΔΠΣΦΨ min<sup>fereōmn</sup>

Deut. xx. 6, xxviii. 20, 39, Am. v. 11,  
Soph. i. 13, Isa. xxxvii. 30, lxv. 21,  
Ezech. xxviii. 26, 1 Macc. iii. 56, 1 Cor.  
ix. 7; the Vg. *vineam pastinavit* is  
more realistic: “dug and trenched  
the ground (to receive the vines);”  
cf. *novellavit* (k).

*περιέθηκεν φραγμόν*] As a protection partly against human depredators, partly against wild animals (Ps. lxxix. (lxxx.) 13 f. ἵνα τί καθεῖλες τὸν φραγμὸν αὐτῆς καὶ τρυγῶσιν αὐτὴν πάντες οἱ παραπορεύομενοι; ... ἐλυμήνατο αὐτὴν σὺν ἐκ δρυμοῦ καὶ ὄνος ἄγριος κατενεμήσατο αὐτήν). For φραγμός see Num. xxii. 24 (ἔστη ἐν ταῖς αὐλαῖς τῶν ἀμπέλων φραγμὸς ἐντεῦθεν καὶ φ. ἐντ.), Lc. xiv. 23, Eph. ii. 14. Lc. omits *περιέθηκεν...πύργον*.

*ώρυξεν ὑπολήνιον*] Mt. ὥρυξεν ἐν αὐτῷ ληνόν. The ληνός, *torcular*, is properly the trough which receives the grapes, and where they are trodden (cf. Num. xviii. 30, Prov. iii. 10, Sir. xxx. 25 (xxxiii. 16), Isa. lxiii. 3, Thren. i. 15). It was usually excavated in the rock, see Moore on Jud. vi. 11 and cf. Joel i. 17. The vat was furnished with a προλήνιον (Isa. v. 2, cf. lxiii. 3) under which was the ὑπολήνιον, *lacus*, R.V. “pit for the wine-press” (Joel iii. (iv.) 13, Hagg. ii. 17 (16), Zach. xiv. 10, Isa. xvi. 10 οὐ μὴ πατήσουσιν οἶνον εἰς τὰ ὑπολήνια = Βαζόν), into which the juice ran. Mc. adheres to Isa. v. in referring to the Βαζόν, but does not follow the LXX. rendering.

*ῳκοδόμησεν πύργον*] Such towers were built in exposed places to protect cattle and vines (cf. 2 Chron. xxvi. 10, Mic. iv 8, Isa. l.c.), and for the convenience of the herdsmen and ἀμπελουργοί: similar structures may still be seen among the terraced hills about Hebron. On such traces of the former

culture of the vine in Palestine see G. A. Smith, pp. 81, 208.

The patristic interpretation of these details is not quite consistent; e.g. Hilary sees “in turri eminentiam legis...ex qua Christi speculari posset adventus,” whilst Jerome comments: “turrim, haud dubie quin templum”: cf. Thph.: φραγμὸς δὲ ὁ νόμος...πύργος δὲ ὁ ναός.

*ἐξέδετο αὐτὸν γεωργοῖς*] The owner, living at a distance, instead of employing his own slaves to work the vineyard, let it out to local cultivators, who were required to pay the rent in kind. In Palestine “such leases were given by the year or for life; sometimes the lease was even hereditary” (Edersheim, *L. and T.* ii. p. 423). This use of ἐκδίδοσθαι does not seem to occur in the LXX., but it is common in class. Gk.; for a close parallel see Plat. *legg.* 806 δ γεωργίαι δὲ ἐκδεδομέναι δούλοις ἀπαρχῆν τῶν ἐκ τῆς γῆς ἀποτελοῦσιν ἰκανὴν ἀνθρώποις ζώσι κοσμίως. On the form ἐξέδετο see WH., *Notes*, p. 167, W-Schm., p. 121. The tenants are γεωργοί here in Mt., Mc., Lc.; Lc. uses ἀμπελουργός in xiii. 7, but apparently in reference to the hired slave working under a master who is from time to time on the spot. Γεωργία as the wider word may include ἀμπελουργία, cf. Gen. ix. 20 ἤρξατο Νώε ἀνθρωπὸς γῆς, καὶ ἐφύτευσεν ἀμπελῶνα. On the other hand the words can be contrasted, as in Jer. lii. 16, where the ploughmen and the vine-dressers are regarded as two distinct classes.

*καὶ ἀπεδήμησεν*] The owner, having let his land, went into foreign parts (Vg. *peregre profectus est*); Lc. adds that his absence was a prolonged one (χρόνους ἰκανούς). Ἀποδημεῖν, ἀπόδημος in the N. T. are limited to the

ἀπέστειλεν πρὸς τοὺς γεωργοὺς τῷ καιρῷ δοῦλον,  
ἵνα παρὰ τῷ γεωργῷ λάβῃ ἀπὸ τῶν καρπῶν

*[2 ινα...αμπελωνος] ινα απο του καρπου (του καρπου etiam AX al) του αμπ. δωσονσιν αντω D lattv<sup>tp</sup>l (syr<sup>sin</sup>) | παρα των γ. λαβη] λ. παρ αντων 33 δο<sub>4</sub> 2<sup>ρο</sup> | λαβη Ψ syr<sup>peh</sup>*

Synoptists, occurring, besides this context, in Mt. xxv. 14 f., Mc. xiii. 34, Lc. xv. 13: St Paul has ἐκδημεῖν in 2 Cor. v. 6 ff., where it is contrasted with ἐνδημεῖν, as Xenophon contrasts ἀποδημεῖν with ἐπιδημεῖν (*Cyr.* vii. 5.69). The God of Israel is represented in the light of an absentee proprietor. Origen (*in Mt.*) explains: ἀποδημία τοῦ δεσπότου ὅτι Κύριος ὁ συνῶν αὐτοῖς ἐν νεφέλῃ ἡμέρας καὶ στύλῳ νυκτὸς ἔως αὐτοὺς καταφυτεύσει εἰσαγαγὼν εἰς ὅρος ἄγιον αὐτοῦ...οὐκέτι αὐτοῖς ἐπεφαίνετο. The gradual withdrawal of visible interpositions, ending in the suspension of the gift of prophecy, had borne this aspect in the eyes of the nation (cf. e.g. Jer. xiv. 8), and the absence was real in the case of the dishonest teachers and unbelieving priesthood who were now the leaders of Israel. But, however prolonged, it was as yet but an ἀποδημία, not a dereliction, not an abandonment of the Divine claim upon Israel's allegiance. Even the temporary withdrawal had a gracious purpose; comp. the remark of Jerome: "abire videtur a vinea ut vinitoribus liberum operandi arbitrium derelinquit." Cf. Bengel: "invenitur tempus divinae taciturnitatis ubi homines agunt pro arbitrio"; and see Mc. iv. 26 ff.

*2. καὶ ἀπέστειλεν κτλ.]* The demand was not made till the vintage came; Mt. ὅτε...ἥγγισεν ὁ καιρὸς τῶν καρπῶν (cf. xi. 13). Τῷ καιρῷ, dative of the point of time, cf. WM., p. 373 f. Origen: ὁ χρόνος ἦν τῶν προφητῶν ἀπαιτούντων τὸν καρπόν. On the mission of the Prophets see Isa. vi. 8, Jer. xxv. 4. The title δοῦλος Κυρίου is first given to Moses (*Jos.* xiv. 7, Ps.

civ. (cv.) 26) and Joshua (*Jos.* xxiv. 29); it is borne by David (2 Regn. iii. 18, vii. 4 ff.); and ultimately becomes the formal style and title of the prophet (Am. iii. 7, Zech. i. 6, Jer. vii. 25, xxv. 4, &c.). In Mt. groups of δοῦλοι are sent twice (*vñ.* 34, 36); in Mc. each servant receives a separate mission, and there are many such (δοῦλον...πάλιν ἄλλον δοῦλον...καὶ ἄλλον...καὶ πολλοὺς ἄλλους), whilst Lc. stops, but perhaps without any special purpose, at the third (δοῦλον...ἔτερον...τρίτον). The groups in Mt. may be taken to represent successive periods of prophetic energy, whilst the reference to individuals in Mc. and Lc. accentuates the distinctness of the message entrusted to each true prophet. Or, as Thpht. suggests, each of the successive messengers may represent a prophetic era: δοῦλον ἔνα τάχα τοὺς περὶ τὸν Ἡλίαν προφήτας...δεύτερον δὲ...τοὺς περὶ Ὁσῆα καὶ Ἡσαΐαν...τρίτον δὲ...τοὺς ἐν τῇ αἰχμαλωσίᾳ. Comp. Origen on Mt. t. xvii. 6.

*ινα...λάβῃ κτλ.]* Whatever the form of the message, its general purpose was one and the same—that the owner might receive (Mt. λαβεῖν) his due. Ἀπὸ τῶν καρπῶν, the 'fruits' being the source from which (WM., p. 463) the landlord obtained his rent. He claimed merely the portion which by agreement belonged to him (*τοὺς καρποὺς αὐτοῦ*, Mt.); under the terms of the lease (*v. 1*, note) another portion would go to the cultivators (2 Tim. ii. 6). For the interpretation see *v. 17* ἀπόδοτε...τὰ τοῦ θεοῦ τῷ θεῷ. In one sense God claims all, in another only a part; cf. Bengel: "pars fructuum colonis concessa."

3 τοῦ ἀμπελῶνος· 3 καὶ λαβόντες αὐτὸν ἔδειραν καὶ  
4 ἀπέστειλαν κενόν. 4 καὶ πάλιν ἀπέστειλεν πρὸς  
αὐτοὺς ἄλλον δοῦλον, κάκεῖνον ἐκεφαλίωσαν καὶ  
¶ 5 ἡτίμασαν. 5 καὶ ἄλλον ἀπέστειλεν· κάκεῖνον ἀπέ-  
κτειναν, καὶ πολλοὺς ἄλλους, οὓς μὲν δέροντες οὓς

3 καὶ λαβ. [οἱ δὲ λαβ. ACNX(Γ)ΠΣΦ min<sup>pl</sup> | κενον] + προς αυτον D a b ff 4 om παλιν X the | om εκεφαλιωσαν...κακεινον (v. 5) syr<sup>sin</sup> | εκεφαλιωσαν και ΝΒΛΨ εκε- φαλιωσαν και ACDΝΣΦ rell min<sup>omnvid</sup> arm κεφαλιωσαντες 1 28 91 118 299 604 2<sup>po</sup> decollaverunt k (? εκεφαλισαν) pr λιθοβολησαντες ACNXΓΠΣΦ 604 min<sup>pl</sup> syrr<sup>pesh,hel</sup> go aeth | ητιμασαν (vel ητιμησαν) ΝΒ(D)ΛΨ 33 latt aegg] απεστειλαν ητιμωμενον (vel ητιμασμενον) ACNXΓΠΣΦ min<sup>pl</sup> syrr<sup>pesh,hel</sup> arm go aeth 5 και 1<sup>o</sup>] + παλιν ΑΝΧΓΠΣΦ min<sup>pl</sup> f q vg syrr<sup>pesh,hel</sup> arm go | om ους μεν...αποκτ. k 1<sup>vid</sup> | ους μεν...ους δε ΝΒΛΔ 1 33 2<sup>po</sup> al<sup>nonn</sup>] ους μεν...αλλους δε D ους μεν...τους δε Φ τους μεν...τους δε ACNXΓΠΣ min<sup>pl</sup>

3. καὶ...ἔδειραν καὶ ἀπέστειλαν κενόν] Δέρειν in the LXX. has its original meaning “to flay,” but in the N.T. it is used only in the sense of “beating severely” or “scourging” (cf. xiii. 9, Lc. xii. 47 f., xxii. 63, Jo. xviii. 23, Acts v. 40, xvi. 37, xxii. 29), which it bears frequently in the comic poets (cf. Ar. *Vesp.* 485 ἦ δέδοκταί μοι δέρεσθαι καὶ δέρειν δί ήμέρας, *Ran.* 619 μαστιγών, δέρων, στρεβλῶν). The first slave is let go after his beating, but without that which he had come for, ‘empty-handed’; for this use of *κενός* cf. Job xxii. 9, Lc. i. 53. The repetition of λαβεῖν, ἀποστεῖλαι is remarkable; the servant, instead of taking anything, is taken; sent to receive, he is sent back empty. It is difficult to decide whether the play on these words is intentional, or due to the simplicity of the style of the common tradition; in favour of the second explanation it may be noted that this feature is most noticeable in Mc.

4. κάκεῖνον ἐκεφαλίωσαν] Ἐκεφαλίωσαν is ἀπ. λεγ. in Greek literature (cf. Lob. *Phryn.*, p. 95), but formed quite regularly from *κεφαλιον*, a diminutive which occurs in late writers; according to the analogy of γυαθῶν, ‘to hit on the cheek,’ *κεφαλιον* would be ‘to wound on the

head.’ This sense is supported by the Vg. *in capite vulneraverunt*; cf. Syrr.<sup>pesh,hel</sup> *lapidaverunt et contuderunt*, Me. *vulneraverunt*. It agrees in a general way with Mt.’s ἐλιθοβόλησαν, and Lc.’s *τραυματίσαντες*, to which Mc.’s ἐκεφ. seems to correspond, and with the requirements of the context in Mc. The first servant was beaten, the third killed; the second, though not killed, fared worse than the first, for he was knocked about the head. Ἐκεφαλίωσαν would seem to mean that he was summarily dispatched, and it is difficult to believe with Field (*Notes*, p. 35) that Mc. adopted it in the sense of ἐκεφάλωσαν, “a vox nihili.” Baljon employs the extreme remedy of conjectural emendation, admitting into his text ἐκολάφισαν (cf. xiv. 65). This gives an excellent sense, but until it finds some documentary support it is safer to adhere to the reading of ΝΒΛΨ and interpret with Euth.: ἀντὶ τοῦ ‘τὴν κεφαλὴν συνέτριψαν.’ Καὶ ητίμασαν: in this and other ways they heaped contumely upon him; for this use of ἀτιμάζειν cf. 2 Regn. x. 5, Acts v. 40, 41.

5. κάκεῖνον ἀπέκτειναν κτλ.] From insult the γεωργοί proceeded on the next occasion to murder; and so

δὲ ἀποκτενύντες. ὅτι ἔνα εἶχεν, νιὸν ἀγαπητόν· 6  
ἀπέστειλεν αὐτὸν ἐσχατον πρὸς αὐτοὺς λέγων ὅτι  
Ἐντραπήσονται τὸν νιόν μου. ἕκεῖνοι δὲ οἱ γεωργοὶ 7  
πρὸς ἑαυτοὺς εἶπαν ὅτι Οὗτός ἐστιν ὁ κληρονόμος·

5 αποκτενύντες (Nc)B(L) 150<sup>ev</sup> (minpauc)] αποκτενούτες N\*ACDE(FGHKN)UV(X)  
Γ(Π)Σ(Φ)Ψ 604 αποκτινάτε Δ αποκτενούτε minvix mu 6 ετι...εσχατον novissi-  
num misit filium k | ετι] ετι ουν ACDNXΓΠΣΦ minpl q vg syr<sup>hel</sup> υστερον δε ετι 13 28  
69 124 346 604 c<sup>sc</sup>(2<sup>pe</sup>) | νιον εχων NXΓΠΣΦ minpl | αγαπητον]+(vel pr) αυτον  
ANXΓΠΣΦ (1 13 28 69 124 299) alpl syr<sup>hel</sup> go | αυτον] pr και ACNX\*ΓΠΣΦΨ minpl  
syr<sup>hel</sup> go κακεινον D | εσχατον προς αυτους ΗΒCLΔ 13 69 alnonn] προς αυτ. εσχ.  
ANXΓΠΣΦ alpl om εσχατον 1071 syr<sup>sin</sup> om προς αυτους D 1071 affik q | οτι] om  
LNΔΣ 33 alnonn c k ιωσ minpauc a b syr<sup>sin</sup> posh arm 7 εκεινοι δε οι γ.] οι δε γ.  
D a b ff i k vg arm the aeth+ιδοντες (vel θεασαμενοι) αυτον (+ερχομενοι) ΝΣ (13 28  
69 124 604 1071 alnonn syr<sup>hel(mg)</sup> arm) | ο κληρο.] pr ο νιος αυτον (Δ) syr<sup>sin</sup>

matters went on for a long time, each servant who was sent suffering death or maltreatment at their hands. Καὶ πολλοὺς ἄλλους, sc. ἔκάκωσαν, or the like; cf. WM., p. 728 f. Οὓς μέν... οὓς δέ: cf. iv. 4, and see WM., p. 130, Blass, Gr. p. 145 f. Δέροντες: see v. 3 note. Ἀποκτενύντες is a very rare form but "probably right" here (WH., Notes, p. 169). For O. T. parallels see 1 Kings xviii. 13, xxii. 27, 2 Chron. xxiv. 20 ff., xxxvi. 15 f., Neh. ix. 26 (*τὸν προφήτας σου ἀπέκτειναν*), Jer. xliv. (xxxvii.) 15 (*ἐπάταξαν αὐτὸν*); and cf. Lc. vi. 23, xiii. 34, Acts vii. 52, 1 Thess. ii. 15, Heb. xi. 36 ff., Apoc. xvi. 6, xviii. 20 ff.

6. ἦτι ἔνα εἶχεν κτλ.] One remained whom the owner could send, and he was not a slave, but his own son. Υἱὸν ἀγαπητόν: Lc. τὸν νί. τὸν ἀγαπ., Mt. νιὸν αὐτοῦ. On ἀγαπητός see i. 11, note, ix. 7; here it seems to be undoubtedly an adjective qualifying νιός, and not an appellation. The one and only Son (*dial. Tim. et Aq.*, τὸν νιὸν αὐτοῦ τὸν μονογενῆ) is contrasted sharply with the many servants (πολλοὺς...ἔνα...ἀγαπητόν), cf. Heb. i. 1, 2, iii. 5, 6. He had been reserved to the end (*ἐσχατον*, cf. ἐπ' ἐσχάτον Heb. i. 2). The mission of the Son

marked, from the N. T. standpoint, the fulness of time (Gal. iv. 4), synchronising with the completion of the ages (Heb. ix. 26).

λέγων ὅτι Ἐντραπήσονται κτλ.] Lc. qualifies ἐντρ. by prefixing ἵστως. But to the owner any other result was inconceivable, and the parable sets forth the improbability, from the human point of view, of such an issue as the Incarnation actually had; cf. Thph.: ἐντρ., τὸ εἰκὸς λέγων, Bengel: "exprimitur quid facere debuerint." Ἐντρέπεσθαι τινα, revereri aliquem, is a late construction; classical writers use the gen. of the person who is regarded with awe (Blass, Gr. p. 89). For other exx. of the acc. cf. Sap. ii. 10, Lc. xviii. 2, Heb. xii. 9.

7. ἕκεινοι δὲ οἱ γεωργοὶ κτλ.] Ἐ-  
κεινοι (which is wanting in Mt., Lc.) points back to the picture already drawn of the men: "those husbandmen, being such as we know they were." Πρὸς ἑαυτοὺς εἶπαν, Mt. εἶπον ἐν ἑαυτοῖς, Lc. διελογίζοντο πρὸς ἀλλή-  
λους: with Mc.'s πρὸς έ. cf. xi. 31. Lc. has clearly given the general sense: when the heir was seen making his way to the vineyard at vintage time, a hurried consultation was held, and the resolution taken to destroy him.

οὗτός ἐστιν ὁ κληρονόμος] So Mt.,

δεῦτε ἀποκτείνωμεν αὐτόν, καὶ ἡμῶν ἔσται ἡ κλη-  
8 ρονομία. <sup>8</sup> καὶ λαβόντες ἀπέκτειναν αὐτόν, καὶ  
9 ἐξέβαλον αὐτὸν ἔξω τοῦ ἀμπελῶνος. <sup>9</sup> τί ποιήσει  
οὐ κύριος τοῦ ἀμπελῶνος; ἐλεύσεται καὶ ἀπολέσει

8 εξεβαλον (-λαν B) αυτον] om αυτον LXΔ al min<sup>pl</sup> b k vg arm <sup>9 τι...αμπε-</sup>  
λωνος] tunc dominus indignatus veniet k | τι] + ouv ΚΑCDΝΧΓΔΠΣΦΨ min<sup>omnivd</sup>  
a b c f i q vg syrr<sup>pesh hel</sup> arm

Mc., Lc. There is perhaps a reference to Gen. xv. 3, 4; the earlier messengers were but δοῦλοι and had no personal interest in the estate: the νιὸς ἀγαπητός is sole heir. Cf. Heb. i. 2 νιῷ δὲ ἔθηκεν κληρονόμου πάντων, where see Westcott's note. Elsewhere in the N. T. the word is used only in reference to the adopted sons of the Divine family; cf. Jas. ii. 5, Rom. iv. 13, viii. 17, Gal. iii. 29, iv. 1, 7, Tit. iii. 7, Heb. vi. 17, xi. 17; cf. the use of κληρονομεῖν supra, x. 17, and of κληρονομία in Gal. iii. 18, Eph. i. 14 &c. To the only Son belongs, however, an unique heirship based on His unique sonship: He is ὁ κληρονόμος by virtue of the Eternal Generation. Δεῦτε ἀποκτείνωμεν αὐτόν, Gen. xxxvii. 20, LXX., the words of Joseph's brethren at Dothan. The Beloved Son was the Joseph of His own generation (cf. Gen. xxxvii. 3, 4).

καὶ ἡμῶν ἔσται ἡ κληρονομία] The inheritance to which the parable refers is the vineyard, i.e. Israel (Ps. xxvii. (xxviii.) 9, xxxii. (xxxiii.) 12, &c.). If even the heathen were to be the inheritance of the Son (Ps. ii. 8), much more was Israel. He had claimed it for Himself (cf. Jo. i. 11), and even the partial response He received had awakened the jealousy of its rulers, and led to His death, which was due to a desperate effort on their part to recover their failing power over the people.

8. ἀπέκτειναν αὐτόν] The Jewish rulers were in fact His murderers, though they were compelled to leave the execution in the hands of Gentiles

(Acts ii. 23, 36, iii. 15, 1 Thess. ii. 15). Ἀπέκτειναν contemplates the Passion as already accomplished history; it was so in the purpose of the Sanhedrin and in the mind of Christ.

καὶ ἐξέβαλον αὐτὸν ἔξω τ. ἀμπ.] In Mt. and Lc. the casting out precedes the death (Mt. λαβόντες αὐτὸν ἐξέβαλον ... καὶ ἀπέκτειναν, Lc. ἐκβαλόντες...ἀπέκτειναν): in Mc. it seems to follow; but such details can scarcely be pressed. According to the imagery of the parable, casting forth from the vineyard is excommunication, formal or practical. In Jerusalem a follower of Jesus had been excommunicated some months before this (Jo. ix. 22, 34), and even if the Jerusalem synagogues had not dared to extend the sentence to the Master, He was treated as excommunicate when He was condemned as a blasphemer, and handed over for punishment to the civil power. Origin: ὅσον ἐφ' ἑαυτοῖς ἀλλότριον αὐτὸν εἶναι ἔκριναν καὶ τοῦ ἀμπελῶνος καὶ τῶν γεωργῶν, ἥρικα κατεψηφίζοντο αὐτὸν τὴν πρὸς θάνατον ψῆφον. His crucifixion outside the gate of the Holy city (Jo. xix. 17) symbolised this virtual expulsion from the community of Israel; cf. Heb. xiii. 12, 13.

9. τί ποιήσει ὁ κύριος τοῦ ἀμπελῶνος;) What is the next step which the owner (for κύριος = **לֹהֶךְ**, cf. Lc. xix. 33) will take? He has no messenger remaining; his only son is dead: his servants are dead or their efforts have failed. Will he abandon his just claims and submit besides to outrage of the grossest kind? The

*τοὺς γεωργούς, καὶ δώσει τὸν ἀμπελῶνα ἄλλοις.*  
*οὐδὲ τὴν γραφὴν ταύτην ἀνέγνωτε Λίθον ὃν ἀπει- ΙΟ  
 δοκίμασαν οἱ οἰκοδομοῦντες, οὗτος ἐγενήθη εἰς κεφαλὴν*

9 *τοὺς γεωργούς*] + *τουτούς* (vel *εκείνους*) C<sup>2</sup>(GNΣ) (1) 33 al<sup>nonn</sup> (syrr<sup>sin pesch hcl</sup> arm aeth) 10 *εγνώτε* 604

answer is clear: he will come in person to chastise and eject the men who have done this. In Mt. this answer is put into the mouth of the audience, whether the Sanhedrists or the people; in Lc. the Lord answers His own question, and voices among the audience exclaim *Μὴ γένοιτο*, betraying their consciousness of the meaning of the parable; Mc. leaves the answer unassigned, but seems to treat it as part of the Lord's own teaching. The divergence is interesting. In Mc. we probably have the nucleus from which the two later accounts have grown; certainly it is difficult to suppose that Mt. xxi. 41 can have been uttered by the audience (Euth.: *ἄκοντες προφητεύονται καὶ αὐτοὶ τὸ μέλλον*), though the words of Christ may well have awakened a response in their consciences and thus have become in a sense their own.

*εἰλεύσεται καὶ ἀπολέσει κτλ.]* Sc. ὁ κύριος τοῦ ἀμπελῶνος. The owner's coming will bring destruction upon the murderers, and the vineyard will be let (*δώσει* = *ἐκδώσεται*, Mt.) to other occupiers such as may be ready to pay him their yearly dues (Mt. only, *οἰτινες ἀποδώσουσιν αὐτῷ τὸν καρπὸν ἐν τοῖς καιροῖς αὐτῶν*). The parable at this point becomes a scarcely veiled prophecy of the Divine visitation of wrath which befell Jerusalem, the call of the Gentiles, and the fruitfulness and permanence of the Catholic Church. Origen, followed by most of the ancient interpreters, explains *ἄλλοις* as referring to the Apostles (cf. 1 Cor. iii. 6 ff.); but a wider reference seems preferable—the ‘other husbandmen’ are the rulers

and guides of the Church throughout her generations. For *ἔρχεσθαι* in reference to Divine visitations cf. Ps. xciv. (xcvi.) 13, Amos v. 17, Enoch 1. 9 (Jude 14); for another view of the substitution of the Gentile for the Jew, see Mt. viii. 11 f., xxi. 19, and esp. Rom. xi. 17 ff., where addressing Gentiles St Paul points out that their tenure of the privilege which the older Israel had for the time forfeited is conditional upon a continued response to the Divine call (vv. 21, 23); cf. Jerome in Mt.: “locata est autem nobis vinea, et locata ea conditione ut reddamus Domino fructum temporibus suis.”

*οὐδὲ τὴν γραφὴν ταύτην κτλ.]* R. V. “Have ye not read even this scripture?” For *οὐδέ* ‘not even’ in a question cf. Lc. vi. 3, xxiii. 40. Mt. has here *οὐδέποτε ἀνέγνωτε ἐν ταῖς γραφαῖς*; Lc., who takes the question as an answer to a *μὴ γένοιτο* from the crowd, *Τί οὖν ἔστιν τὸ γεγραμμένον τοῦτο;* Γραφή is a portion of Scripture, as in xv. 28, Jo. vii. 38, 42, xix. 37 (*ἔτέρα γραφή*), 2 Tim. iii. 16 (*πᾶσα γραφή*), and almost always when the sing. is used; see Lightfoot on Gal. iii. 22. The passage was one in common use—hence *οὐδέ*: could it be that these students and teachers of the Scriptures were not acquainted even with the commonplaces of Holy Writ? (cf. v. 24).

*λίθον ὃν ἀπεδοκίμασαν κτλ.]* Ps. cxvii. (cxviii.) 22, 23, an exact quotation from the LXX., which gives here a word for word rendering of the M. T. The quotation was perhaps suggested by the Hosanna verses (xi. 9, cf. 18, note) which it almost immediately precedes. In the Psalmist's view the

11 γωνίας· ἱπαρὰ Κυρίου ἐγένετο αὕτη, καὶ ἔστιν  
12 θαυμαστὴ ἐν ὀφθαλμοῖς ἡμῶν; ἱκαὶ ἐζήτουν αὐτὸν

11 om παρα Κυρίου εγεν. αυτη D

stone is Israel, and the builders are the world-powers engaged in raising the fabric of history—whether Assyria and Babylonia, or, if the Psalm be Maccabaeus, Syria represented by Epiphanes (see Cheyne, *Origin of the Psalter*, p. 16 f.). Israel had been cast aside (cf. Jer. xxviii. (l.) 26) by men in high places, but had recovered its place among the nations—had again become the κεφαλὴ γωνίας (פְּנַת שָׁנָר), the bond of unity in the fabric, by reason of its unique office of witnessing to the One Living God. In our Lord's use of the words the conditions are changed; He, as the true representative of Israel's witness to God, is the Stone which is designed to be 'head of the corner'; the builders who cast the Elect Stone aside are the present leaders of Israel (Jerome: "quos supra vinitores appellarat, nunc aedificatores"). This application of the words deeply impressed the Apostles, who reproduce it more than once after the Pentecost (Acts iv. 11, 1 Pet. ii. 4, 7) and connect with it the prophecy of Isa. xxviii. 16 (Rom. ix. 32, Eph. ii. 20, 1 Pet. ii. 6); Christ receives the title of λίθος ἀκρογωναῖος, *lapis angularis*, the bond of unity in the new Israel (Eph. l.c.). The metaphor was perhaps unduly pressed by the Greek and Latin expositors (cf. T. K. Abbott, *Ephesians*, p. 70), e.g. by Euth., who writes: καθάπερ γὰρ ἐκεῖνος [ό λίθος] ἐφ' ἑαυτῷ συνδεῖ τοίχους δύο, τὸν αὐτὸν τρόπον καὶ ὁ χριστὸς ἐφ' ἑαυτῷ συνδεσμεῖ τοὺς δύο λαούς, τὸν τε ἐξ ἐθνῶν καὶ τὸν ἐξ Ἰουδαίων. But the 'Corner Stone' clearly emphasises the cohesion of believers in the Body of Christ, as the 'Foundation Stone' (1 Cor. iii. 11) implies their dependence on His work and strength.

Jerome points out that, while the builders of Israel rejected both these purposes of the Lord's coming, the wise master-builder of the Gentile Church ("iuxta Paulum architectum") overlooked neither. The old hymn of the Sarum Dedication office boldly fuses both together: "angulare fundamentum lapis Christus missus est, | qui compage parietum in utroque nectitur, | quem Syon sancta suscepit, in quo credens permanet."

11. παρὰ Κυρίου ἐγένετο αὕτη κτλ.] A continuation of the words of Ps. cxviii., omitted by Lc. Αὕτη (פְּנַת), 'this thing,' a Hebraism (WM., pp. 39, 298, Blass, *Gr.*, p. 82), which is due to the text of the LXX. and not to the Synoptists themselves: for other exx. in the LXX. see Driver on 1 Sam. iv. 7. Attempts to explain αὕτη as referring to κεφαλὴν or to γωνίας (פְּנַת = פְּנַת) are not only unnecessary, but yield an inferior sense; see Field, *Notes*, p. 15. It is the elevation of the rejected stone into its predestined place at the head of the corner in which the Psalmist sees the hand of God (*παρὰ Κυρίου*, WM., p. 457), and which is a standing miracle in the eyes of the true Israel (*θαυμαστὴ ἐν ὀφθ. ἡμῶν*, WM., p. 482). The application of this to the Resurrection and Ascension is easy and attractive; cf. Victor: ὅτι δὴ μετὰ θάνατον ζῶν φαίνεται Χριστός, βασιλεὺς ὃν οὐρανίων τε καὶ ἐπιγείων.

Mc. omits a striking saying which follows in Lc. (πᾶς ὁ πεσὼν ἐπ' ἐκείνον τὸν λίθον κτλ.) and, after a slightly different form, in most texts of Mt.

12. ἐζήτουν αὐτὸν κρατῆσαι κτλ.] Sc. οἱ γραμματεῖς καὶ οἱ ἀρχιερεῖς, as Lc. reminds us. *Κρατῆσαι*, the inf. as object, see Burton § 387. For the second time (cf. xi. 18) the arrest

κρατῆσαι, καὶ ἐφοβήθησαν τὸν ὄχλον, ἔγνωσαν γὰρ ὅτι πρὸς αὐτοὺς τὴν παραβολὴν εἶπεν. καὶ ἀφέντες αὐτὸν ἀπῆλθαν.

<sup>13</sup> Καὶ ἀποστέλλουσιν πρὸς αὐτόν τινας τῶν 13  
Φαρισαίων καὶ τῶν Ἡρῳδιανῶν, ἵνα αὐτὸν ἀγρεύσωσιν λόγῳ. <sup>14</sup> καὶ ἐλθόντες λέγουσιν αὐτῷ Διδά- 14

<sup>12</sup> την παραβολην]+ταυτην 1071 al<sup>nonn</sup> min<sup>nomm</sup> b k vg syrr<sup>sin pesh</sup> arm 13 om πρὸς αὐτούς D a c i k q | των Φαρισαιων] των γραμματεων syr<sup>pesh</sup> pr εκ 69 346 g<sup>ser</sup> syr<sup>sin</sup> arm | αγρεύσωσιν] παγδευσωσιν D 2<sup>pe</sup> 604 14 και 1<sup>o</sup>] οι δε ΑΝΧΓΠΣΦ al min<sup>pl</sup> syrr<sup>pesh hel</sup> arm go | ελθοντες λεγ. αυτω] επηρωτων αυτον οι Φαρισαιοι D (c ff k) ελθ. ηρξαντο ερωταν αυτον εν δολω λεγοντες G 1 13 28 69 (604) al<sup>nonn</sup> (syr<sup>sin</sup>) (arm)

would have been effected in the Precinct by the στρατηγὸς τοῦ ἱεροῦ (cf. Acts iv. 1), if the people had not still been with Jesus. On ἐφοβήθησαν τὸν ὄχλον see xi. 32, note ; on καὶ in this sentence cf. WM., p. 545. Mt. adds that the crowd regarded Jesus as they had regarded His forerunner (xi. 32), in the light of a prophet. Mc. and Lc. explain the cause of the growing hostility of the Sanhedrists; they knew that the Parable of the Husbandmen was spoken in reference to them (*πρὸς αὐτούς*: cf. Lc. xii. 41, Heb. i. 7, 8, xi. 18). For the moment they had no alternative but to accept defeat and return to their council-chamber to mature their plots (*ἀφέντες αὐτὸν ἀπῆλθαν*, Mc. only). Meanwhile the Lord continued to teach in parables (Mt. xxii. 1—14), addressing Himself to His disciples and the crowd.

#### 13—17. THE PHARISEES' QUESTION (Mt. xxii. 15—22, Lc. xx. 20—26).

<sup>13.</sup> ἀποστέλλουσιν πρὸς αὐτόν κτλ.] The discomfiture which the Sanhedrin had suffered when acting in concert broke them up again into parties, each of which took action for itself. The Pharisees were the first to move (Mt. τότε πορευθέντες οἱ Φ. συμβούλιον ἔλαβον), and they decided to send certain of their disciples (Mt. τὸν μαθητὰς αὐτῶν, Mc. τινὰς τῶν Φ.) who knew how to combine the vigilance of practised dissemblers with the ap-

parent innocence of young enquirers (Lc. ἐγκαθέτους ὑποκρινομένους ἑαυτὸς δικαίους εἴναι). Their business was to entrap the Master into some remark by which He would be fatally compromised. Ἀγρεύειν (Mc.), παγδεύειν (Mt.), are both ἀπ. λεγόμενα in the N.T., but both are used by the Lxx. and in a metaphorical sense (ἀγρ., Prov. v. 22, vi. 25 f., Job x. 16; παγ., 1 Regn. xxviii. 9, Eccl. ix. 12); in ἀγρεύειν λόγῳ, the dat. is instrumental or modal; speech—a question on their side, an answer on His—was to be the means employed in the capture of their prey. Cf. Lc. xi. 54, where θηρεύειν is similarly used; in the present context Lc. prefers the simpler phrase ἐπιλαβέσθαι λόγον.

In this attempt the Pharisees associated with their own disciples “certain...of the Herodians” (Mc., Mt.). The Greek and Latin expositors generally understand by Ἡρῳδιανοί here soldiers from Herod's army, referring to Lc. xxiii. 11 : but both the form of the adj. (cf. Blass on Acts xi. 26, and Gr. p. 63) and the circumstances of its occurrence decide for the meaning ‘Herod's partisans’—scarcely, as some authorities mentioned by Victor and Ps.-Tertull. *adv. omn. haer.* 1, persons who regarded Herod as the Messiah; see iii. 6, note. These men were doubtless the Galilean Herodians who had already

**σκαλε,** οἴδαμεν ὅτι ἀληθῆς εἰ καὶ οὐ μέλει σοι περὶ οὐδενός· οὐ γάρ βλέπεις εἰς πρόσωπον ἀνθρώπων, ἀλλ' ἐπ' ἀληθείας τὴν ὁδὸν τοῦ θεοῦ διδάσκεις. ἔξεστιν δοῦναι κῆνσον Καίσαρι ἢ οὐ; δῶμεν ἢ μὴ

14 εξεστιν] pr ειπε (vel ειπον) ουν ημιν (+ ει [vel τι] σοι δοκει) (C\*<sup>2</sup>D) MNΣ(Φ) 1071  
alpace (a b ff i q) syrpeshiscorr arm [ κηνσον] επικεφαλαιον (D) 124 επικεφαλεον δ. κηνσον  
1071 2<sup>po</sup> k (capitularium) arm<sup>cod</sup> (cf. syrrsin pesh) | η ον δωμεν η μη δωμεν] η ον  
D ab effil η ον δωμεν 225 vg syr<sup>sin</sup> arm<sup>cdd</sup> go dabimus aut non k

proved themselves useful to the Pharisees, and might on the present occasion render service again.

14. διδάσκαλε, οἴδαμεν κτλ.] The preamble is skilfully arranged with the view of disarming suspicion, and at the same time preventing escape. So independent and fearless a teacher of truth could not from fear of consequences either refuse an answer to honest and perplexed enquirers, or conceal His real opinion. For οἴδαμεν ὅτι κτλ. cf. Jo. iii. 2. Ἀληθῆς, true, the opposite of ψευδῆς (I Jo. ii. 8), as ἀληθινός of ψευδώνυμος (cf. Trench, *syn.* § viii.); the use of the word by the Pharisees is an unconscious witness to the impression which Christ's life and teaching had left even upon enemies. Ἀληθῆς occurs here only in the Synoptists, but both adj. and noun are common in Jo.: truth is one of the notes of the Lord's Divine Mission as it is presented by St John (e.g. i. 17, iii. 32, v. 31 ff., vii. 18, viii. 13 ff., xiv. 6). Οὐ μέλει σοι περὶ οὐδενός. There is veiled irony in the words. He had shewn little consideration for men of learning and hierarchical rank; doubtless He would be equally indifferent to the views of the Procurator and the Emperor himself; when the truth was concerned, His independence would assert itself with fearless impartiality. For οὐ μέλει σοι cf. iv. 38, Lc. x. 40, Jo. x. 13, I Pet. v. 7.

οὐ γάρ βλέπεις κτλ.] Lc. οὐ λαμβάνεις πρόσωπον. Cf. θαυμάζειν πρόσωπα (Jude 16), προσωπολημπτεῖν (Jas.

ii. 9) and the nouns προσωπολήμπτης (Acts x. 34), προσωπολημψία (Jas. ii. 1, Rom. ii. 11, Eph. vi. 9, Col. iii. 25): the compounds are unknown to the LXX., which employs λ. πρόσωπον (Lev. xix. 15), θ. πρόσωπον (Job xiii. 10), ἐπιγνῶναι (ὑποστέλλεσθαι, αἱρετίζειν, αἰδεῖσθαι, ὄρᾶν εἰς) πρόσωπον, according to the sense of the Heb. verb. Βλέπειν (ὄρᾶν) εἰς πρ. (ΜΥΝְפִּיהָר) clearly is to pay regard to the outward appearance or the personal character or position; for the more difficult λαμβάνειν πρ. (προσωπολημπτεῖν), which answers to ΜΥΝְפִּיאָשׁ, see Lightfoot on Gal. ii. 6, and Mayor on James l.c.

ἀλλ' ἐπ' ἀληθείας κτλ.] Teaching as well as life was characterised by truth. Ἐπ' ἀληθείας (cf. Job ix. 2, Isa. xxxvii. 18, Dan. ii. 8 (LXX. and Th.), Lc. iv. 25, xxii. 59, Acts x. 34), "according to truth" (Blass, *Gr.* p. 133)—rather "with truth" (WM., p. 528). Τὴν ὁδὸν τοῦ θεοῦ, not as in i. 3 'the way along which He comes,' but 'the way which He appoints for men,' cf. Acts xviii. 25 f., also η ὁδὸς τῆς ἀληθείας (2 Pet. ii. 2), or η ὁδός simply, as a term for the Christian faith and its followers (Acts ix. 2, xix. 9, 23, xxiv. 14, 22). This use of ὁδός is a Hebraism (cf. B D B. s.v. ḥ̄d̄), of which there are frequent instances in the LXX., e.g. in Gen. vi. 12, Ps. i. 1, 6, Jer. xxi. 8; comp. the opening of the *Didache* (ὁδὸς δύο εἰσι, μία τῆς ζωῆς καὶ μία τοῦ θανάτου: Dr C. Taylor, *Teaching*, p. 7 ff.), and the Lord's words in Mt. vii. 13, 14.

ἔξεστιν δοῦναι κῆνσον κτλ.] They

δῶμεν; ἕτοι δὲ εἰδὼς αὐτῶν τὴν ὑπόκρισιν εἶπεν 15  
αὐτοῖς Τί με πειράζετε; Φέρετέ μοι δηνάριον ἵνα

15 εἰδὼς № ABCLNXΓΔΠΣΦΨ min<sup>pl</sup> a k vg syrr<sup>sin</sup> pesh<sup>hel</sup> arm aegg] ἀδων Ι\*(D) 13  
28 69 346 2<sup>ρο</sup> b c ff i q go | πειράζετε] + υποκριται FGNΣ 1 13 28 33 69 2<sup>ρα</sup> alpauc q  
syrr<sup>hel</sup> corr arm | δηναριον] + ωδε Ι\* 1 b

can no longer refrain from putting the question with which they had been charged. Mt. begins εἰπὸν οὖν ἡμῖν τί σοι δοκεῖ; but the abrupt ἔξεστιν (Mc., Lc.) is perhaps more in keeping with the impatience of these young intriguers. Ἐξεστιν, ‘does the Torah permit it?’ cf. ii. 24, 26, vi. 18, x. 2. Κῆνσον, Mt., Mc.; Lc. φόρον: the Latin word is transliterated also in Aramaic (אַנְדָּר, Dalman, *Gr.* p. 147). The *census* is the poll tax (ἐπικεφάλαιον in cod. D, Syrr.<sup>sin.</sup>, pesh.   or *tributum capitatis*, as distinguished from the *tributum agri*, and from the customs on articles of commerce (τέλη, cf. Mt. xvii. 25). The Judaean poll tax went into the Emperor’s *fiscus*, not into the *aerarium*, so that it was actually paid to “Caesar.” The payment was objectionable both as a sign of subjection to a foreign power (Mt. l.c.), and because of the Emperor’s effigy stamped on the *denarius* in which the money was paid (Madden, *Jewish Coinage*, p. 247). The copper coins struck by the Procurators were free from the *effigies*, usually bearing some device to which no objection could be taken, cornucopiae, or leaves of the olive, vine, or palm (Schürer I. ii., p. 77, Madden, p. 135); but the silver *denarius*, which was not a local coin, bore the head of the Imperator, and its compulsory use could not but increase the scruples of patriotic Jews. For Καῖσαρ see Jo. xix. 12, 15, Acts xvii. 7, xxv. 8 ff., Phil. iv. 22. A summary of Jewish opinion on the duty of Israel towards its foreign rulers is given by Weber, *Jüd. Theologie*, p. 78. \*H οὐ...ἢ μή, cf. WM., p. 595. δῶμεν ἢ μή δῶμεν;] Deliberative

subj., as in iv. 30, vi. 24, 37. They require a direct answer, ‘yes’ or ‘no,’ as if the question called for no more. A negative answer was of course desired; they hoped to hear him say Οὐκ ἔξεστιν. Such a reply, in the present temper of the crowd, might have placed Him at once at the head of a popular rebellion (Acts v. 37); at the least it would have involved Him in a charge of treason (Lc. xxiii. 2). And, as they justly said, no fear of consequences would have withheld Him from making it, if it had been true.

15. εἰδὼς αὐτῶν τὴν ὑπόκρισιν κτλ.] Mt. γνοὺς τὴν πονηρίαν αὐτῶν, Lc. κατανοήσας αὐτῶν τὴν πανουργίαν. The variations of both verb and noun are instructive. Malice (*πονηρία*) lay at the root of their conduct, unscrupulous cunning (*πανουργία*) supplied them with the means of seeking their end, whilst they sought to screen themselves under the pretence (*ὑπόκρισις*) of a desire for guidance and an admiration of fearless truthfulness. The Lord detected their true character intuitively (*εἰδώς*), He knew it by experience (*γνούς*), and He perceived it by tokens which did not escape His observation (*κατανοήσας*). Thus each Evangelist contributes to the completeness of the picture. Ὕπόκρισις occurs here only in Mc.; for ὑποκριτής see vii. 6, note; other instances of the Lord’s power of detecting hypocrisy may be found in ii. 8, iii. 1 ff., vii. 11 ff., x. 2 ff.

τί με πειράζετε;] For this use of πειράζειν see i. 13, viii. 11 (note), x. 2. Τί remonstrates, cf. ii. 7, v. 35, 39, viii. 12, 17, x. 18, xi. 3, xiii. 6. What was their object in provoking Him to

16 ἵδω. Ὡ̄οὶ δὲ ἡνεγκαν. καὶ λέγει αὐτοῖς Τίνος ἡ εἰκὼν  
αὕτη καὶ ἡ ἐπιγραφή; οἱ δὲ εἶπαν αὐτῷ Καίσαρος.  
17 Ἰησοῦς εἶπεν Τὰ Καίσαρος ἀπόδοτε Καίσαρι

16 om οι δε (2<sup>o</sup>) AD a b i q vg | ειπαν (ειπον NXGPI al)] λεγουσιν A b d i q vg  
17 ο δε I.] και αποκρθεις (vel αποκρ. δε) ο I. A(D)NXGPIΣΦ min<sup>pl</sup> (latt<sup>vt pl vg</sup>) syrr<sup>sin hcl</sup>  
arm go | ειπεν]+autois ΝΑCLNXΓΔΠΨ al min<sup>omm vid</sup> (om BD) | Καισαρος] pr τον D |  
αποδοτε]+ouν M 13 69 60<sub>4</sub> 2<sup>pe</sup> alnonn latt<sup>vt pl vg</sup> syrr<sup>hcl</sup> | Καισαρι] pr τω D 1071 2<sup>pe</sup>

deliver judgment upon a hotly contested point? The question lays bare their veiled malignity. Mt. adds ὑπόκριται, which is implied in Mc.'s ὑπόκρισιν.

φέρετέ μοι δηνάριον ἵνα ἵδω] A *denarius* (אַנְגָּר cf. Dalman, *Gr.* p. 149) was not likely to be ready at hand, since only Jewish coins were current in the Temple; they must fetch one for Him to see (*ἵνα ἵδω*); Bengel's suggestion, "Salvator tum primum videtur tetigisse et spectasse denarium," is improbable; the Lord wishes to see the *denarius* that He may use it to demonstrate His teaching. It is easy to realise the pause which followed, the fresh interest excited by the production of the coin (*οἱ δὲ ἡνεγκαν*), and the breathless silence while all waited for the momentous reply. Mt. and Lc. have missed this characteristic feature in the story, substituting ἐπιδείξατε (Lc. δείξατε). For δηνάριον Mt. has τὸ νόμοσμα (2 Esdr. viii. 36, 1 Macc. xv. 6) τοῦ κῆρυσου, the coin in which the tribute was paid (see note on v. 14).

16. τίνος ἡ εἰκὼν αὕτη καὶ ἡ ἐπιγραφή;] Vg. *cuius est imago haec et inscriptio* (*scriptio*, *superscriptio*)? See the engraving of a *denarius* of Tiberius in Madden, p. 247, or in Hastings, *D. B.* iii. pp. 424—5; the ἐπιγραφή is TI • CAESAR • DIVI • AVG •, and on the reverse, PONTIF • MAXIM •. In the Epp. εἰκὼν passes into a theological term, the meaning of which is exhaustively investigated by Lightfoot on Col. i. 15.

οἱ δὲ εἶπαν κτλ.] There was no

escape from this answer, even if they suspected the purpose it would serve. They could not in this case plead οὐκ οἴδαμεν (xi. 33), for both head and legend proclaimed the fact.

17. τὰ Καίσαρος ἀπόδοτε κτλ.] "O plenam miraculi responsionem et perfectam dicti caelestis absolutionem" (Hilary). 'Απόδοτε τὸ χρον τὴν εἰκόνα τῷ εἰκονιζομένῳ...οὐδὲν ἐμποδίζει ὑμῖν πρὸς θεοσέβειαν τὸ τελείντῳ Καίσαρι' (Thph.). The thought seems to be: 'The coin is Caesar's; let him have his own. The fact that it circulates in Judaea shews that in the ordering of God's providence Judaea is now under Roman rule; recognise facts, so long as they exist, as interpreting to you the Divine Will, and submit.' Cf. Rom. xiii. 7, 1 Pet. ii. 13 f., and see the note on *The Church and the Civil Power* in SH., *Romans*, p. 369. Contrast with the Lord's answer the teaching of another northern leader, Judas the Gaulanite, Jos. *ant.* xviii. 1. Ι τὴν ἀποτίμησιν οὐδὲν ἄλλο ἡ ἄντικρυς δουλείαν ἐπιφέρειν (cf. Origen in Mt. t. xvii. 25). Granted that payment was a badge of slavery, there are circumstances, Christ teaches, under which slavery must be borne. 'Αποδῶναι, which is substituted in the answer for δοῦναι in the question, implies that the tribute is a debt: cf. Rom. l.c., and see Mt. v. 26, xvii. 28 ff.

καὶ τὰ τοῦ θεοῦ τῷ θεῷ] The question rested on an implied incompatibility of the payment of tribute with the requirements of the Law of God; the Lord replies that there is no such incompatibility: οὐ κωλύεται τις ἀπο-

καὶ τὰ τοῦ θεοῦ τῷ θεῷ. καὶ ἐξεθαύμαζον ἐπ' αὐτῷ.

<sup>18</sup> Καὶ ἔρχονται Σαδδουκαῖοι πρὸς αὐτόν, οἵτινες 18

17 εξεθαύμαζον ΝΒΨ] εθαυμάζον D<sup>2</sup> (εθαυμάζοντο D\*) ΛΔ 1071 2<sup>ρd</sup> εθαυμασαν  
ΑСΝХГПΣΦ min<sup>pl</sup> | επ αυτῷ] επ αυτον D(Κ) 28 8<sup>ρd</sup>

δίδοντος Καίσαρι τὰ Καίσαρος ἀποδιδόνται τῷ θεῷ τὰ τοῦ θεοῦ (Origen). Debts to man and debts to God are both to be discharged, and the two spheres of duty are at once distinct and reconcileable; cf. Dalman, *Worte*, i. p. 113. Τὰ τοῦ θεοῦ in the narrower and immediate sense of the words may mean, as Jerome says, “decimas, primitias, et oblationes ac victimas”; in its wider application the term includes the best that man has to offer, his own nature, which bears the image of God (Lc. xv. 8—10): “quemadmodum Caesar a nobis exigit impressionem imaginis sui, sic et Deus ut...Deo reddatur anima” (Bede); “*Deo propria...corpus, animam, voluntatem*” (Hilary).

καὶ ἐξεθαύμαζον ἐπ' αὐτῷ] ‘They stood amazed (R. V. “wondered greatly”) at Him.’ Ἐκθαυμάζειν is ἀπ. λέγ. in the N. T., but occurs in Sir. xxvii. 23, xlvi. 18, 4 Macc. xvii. 17; compare Mc’s use of ἐκθαμβίσθαι, ἐκπεριστᾶς, ἔκφοβος. The enquirers preserved a discreet silence (Lc. ἐσίγησαν), and presently took their leave (Mt. ἀφέντες αὐτὸν ἀπῆλθαν), “infideltatem cum miraculo pariter reportantes” (Jerome). They wondered perhaps not so much at the profound truth of the words, which they could scarcely have realised, as at the absence in them of anything on which they could lay hold (Victor, θαυμάσαντες τὸ ἀληπτον τοῦ λόγου).

18—27. THE QUESTION OF THE SADDUCEES (Mt. xxii. 23—33; Lc. xx. 27—38).

18. καὶ ἔρχονται Σαδδουκαῖοι] I.e. τινὲς τῶν Σαδδουκαίων (Lc.). This party has not been mentioned by Mc. or Lc. hitherto (see however Mc. viii. 11,

note). It was nearly identified with the priestly aristocracy (Acts v. 17 ὁ ἀρχιερεὺς καὶ πάντες οἱ σὺν αὐτῷ, ἡ οὖσα ἀρεστις τῶν Σαδδουκαίων), and its headquarters were at Jerusalem, whilst the Pharisaic scribes were to be found in Galilee as well as in Judaea (Lc. v. 17); moreover, its adherents were relatively few (Jos. *ant.* xviii. 1. 4), and were not, like the Pharisees, in possession of the popular esteem (*ib.* xiii. 10. 6). The present opportunity of approaching Jesus upon the question which divided them from the Pharisees was probably the first which had offered itself; the discomfiture of the disciples of the Pharisees left the field free for their rivals.

οἵτινες λέγουσιν ἀνάστασιν μὴ εἶναι] Cf. Acts xxiii. 8 Σαδδουκαῖοι...λέγουσιν μὴ εἶναι ἀνάστασιν μήτε ἄγγελον μήτε πνεῦμα. Jos. *ant.* xviii. 1. 4 Σαδδουκαῖοι δὲ τὰς ψυχὰς ὁ λόγος συναφανίζει τοῖς σώμασι. For further information as to the party and their tenets see Schürer, II. ii. p. 29 ff., Taylor, *Sayings*, Exc. iii., and cf. Jos. *B. J.* ii. 8. 14 ψυχῆς τε τὴν διαμονὴν καὶ τὰς καθ' ἄδου τιμωρίας καὶ τιμᾶς ἀναρροῦσιν. For οἵτινες λ. cf. iv. 20, ix. 1, xv. 7, and see WM., p. 209, note, and Bp. Lightfoot on Gal. iv. 24, v. 19; the relative clause applies to the Sadducees in general, not only to the particular members of the party to whom reference has been made. Ἀνάστασις as a theological term appears first in 2 Macc. (vii. 14, xii. 43), Ps. lxv. (lxx.) tit. In the N.T., besides the present context and its synoptic parallels, it occurs Lc.<sup>ev.</sup> 2, act. 11, Jo.<sup>ev.</sup> 4, apoc. 2, Paul<sup>8</sup>, Heb.<sup>3</sup>, 1 Pet.<sup>2</sup>, usually with a qualifying gen. (δικαίων, νεκρῶν, ζωῆς, κρίσεως, Ἰησοῦ Χριστοῦ)

λέγουσιν ἀνάστασιν μὴ εἶναι, καὶ ἐπηρώτων αὐτὸν  
 19 λέγοντες <sup>19</sup> Διδάσκαλε, Μωυσῆς ἔγραψεν ἡμῖν ὅτι  
 ¶ οὐκ εἴναι τινος ἀδελφὸς ἀποθάνῃ καὶ καταλίπῃ γυναικα  
 καὶ μὴ ἀφῇ τέκνον, ἵνα λάβῃ ὁ ἀδελφὸς αὐτοῦ τὴν

18 αναστασιν μη ειναι] αναστασις ουκ εστιν 1 13 28 69 124 346 | επηρωτησαν  
 ΑΝΧΓΠΣΦ min<sup>pl</sup> 19 Μωσης ACEFGHLUVXΓΦ min<sup>pl</sup> | ομ οτι D 69 108

ινα 1071 | καταλιπη BGKLUVΔΠΣΦΨ min<sup>pl</sup>] καταλειπη (vel -πει) A(E)F(H)MSX(Γ)  
 min<sup>permu</sup> καταλειψη (vel -ψει) ΙΙ (433 c) εχη D 28 (604) a b c f f i k q syr<sup>sin</sup> | τεκνον  
 ΙΙ<sup>a</sup>BLΔΨ 1 118 241 299 a c ff k arm me] τεκνα ΙΙ<sup>c,b</sup>ACDXΓΠΣΦ min<sup>pl</sup> b i q vg  
 syrr<sup>peshel</sup> the go aeth | την γυναικα] + αυτον ΑDXΓΠΣ min<sup>pl</sup> a b c f f i q vg syrr<sup>peshel</sup>

arm

or clause (*ἥ ἐκ νεκρῶν*), but once only (Lc. ii. 34) in a non-technical sense. *Μὴ εἶναι*; this negation of the resurrection was matter of opinion, not of fact (*οὐκ εἶναι*); cf. WM., p. 604.

καὶ ἐπηρώτων αὐτόν] The question was perhaps partly tentative; they were curious to know the exact position which this teacher, who was known to be adverse to the Pharisees, would take with regard to the main point at issue between the Pharisees and themselves. But their purpose was hostile; the extreme case they offer for His opinion is clearly intended as a *reductio ad absurdum* of any view but their own.

19. διδάσκαλε] On their lips the title is purely formal; there is here no pretence of a desire to learn such as may have dictated its use by the disciples of the Pharisees (v. 14). The actual question (*ἐπηρώτων*) does not come before v. 23; but all that precedes is preamble to what they intended to ask.

Μωυσῆς ἔγραψεν ἡμῖν κτλ.] In Deut. xxv. 5 ff. The exact words are not cited by the Synoptists, nor do they agree in the form adopted; Lc. on the whole follows Mc., but Mt. changes the awkward *έάν τινος ἀδελφὸς* into *έάν τις*, and for *λάβῃ* uses the technical *ἐπιγαμβρεύσει* (LXX.<sup>10</sup>, Aq. in Deut. l.c.; *ἀπ. λεγ.* in N.T.). Josephus (*ant.* iv. 8. 23) states the law of levirate marriage thus: *τὴν ἄτεκνον*

τάνδρὸς αὐτῇ τετελευτηκότος ὁ ἀδελφὸς ἔκείνου γαμείτω καὶ τὸν παῖδα τὸν γενόμενον τῷ τοῦ τεθνεώτος καλέσας ὀνόματι τρεφέτω τοῦ κλήρου διάδοχον. On the institution as it existed in Israel see Driver, *Deuteronomy*, p. 280 ff., and for an early instance of its use, cf. Gen. xxxviii. 8 (a chapter assigned to J, Driver, *Intr.*, p. 15). For the attribution of Deut. to Moses see x. 3 f. “Οτι...ινα: a confusion of two constructions, ὅτι Ἐάν...ἀποθάνῃ...λάβη, ψεται and ινα έάν ἀποθάνῃ...λάβῃ, which Lc. avoids by omitting ὅτι. “Ἐγραψεν...ινα, i.e. γραφῇ ἐνετείλατο...ινα, cf. xiii. 34.

έάν τινος ἀδελφὸς ἀποθάνῃ] The Deuteronomic law is limited to a special case: *έάν κατοικῶσιν ἀδελφοι ἐπὶ τὸ αὐτό*. “When the members of the family were separated, the law did not apply. It was a collateral object of the institution to prevent a family inheritance from being broken up” (Driver).

καὶ μὴ ἀφῇ τέκνον] Heb. נ לא יא ב. The Sadducees interpret נ in the widest sense (cf. LXX. σπέρμα δὲ μὴ ην αὐτῷ), but the purpose of the law seems to shew that its operation is to be limited to cases where no male issue was left. Comp. Wünsche on Mt. xxii. 24. Καταλείπειν and ἀφίειν are employed indifferently in this passage in reference to the issue of the marriage (19 ἀφῇ τέκνον, 20 ἀφήκειν σπέρμα, 21 καταλιπὼν σπ., 22 ἀφήκαν

γυναῖκα καὶ ἐξαναστήσῃ σπέρμα τῷ ἀδελφῷ αὐτοῦ.

<sup>20</sup> ἐπτὰ ἀδελφοὶ ἦσαν καὶ ὁ πρῶτος ἐλαβεν γυναῖκα, <sup>21</sup> καὶ ἀποθνήσκων οὐκ ἀφῆκεν σπέρμα· <sup>22</sup> καὶ ὁ δεύτερος <sup>23</sup> ἐλαβεν αὐτὴν, καὶ ἀπέθανεν μὴ καταλιπὼν σπέρμα, καὶ ὁ τρίτος ὠσαύτως <sup>22</sup> καὶ οἱ ἐπτὰ οὐκ ἀφῆκαν <sup>23</sup> σπέρμα· ἐσχατον πάντων καὶ ἡ γυνὴ ἀπέθανεν.

<sup>23</sup> ἐν τῇ ἀναστάσει τίνος αὐτῶν ἔσται γυνή; οἱ γὰρ <sup>23</sup>

19 εξαναστησει ΑCHT min<sup>nonn</sup>

επτα αδ. Dabiq (604) (1071) επτα ουν αδ. ησαν C<sup>2</sup>MΣ min<sup>ma</sup> c vg arm aeth | αποθνησκων ουκ αφ. σπερμα] απεθανεν και ουκ αφ. σπ. D i 28 604 2<sup>pe</sup> alpae ff i syrr<sup>sin pesh hel (txt)</sup> arm priusquam generaret filium decessit et non remisit semen k mortuus est non relicto semine b q vg και απεθανεν και αποθνησκων ουκ αφ. σπ. 1071 21 ελαβεν αυτην]+ad suscitandum semen fratris sui c +resuscitare semen fratri suo k | μη καταλιπων σπερμα NBCLD 33] και ουδε αυτος αφηκεν σπερμα A(D)(X)ΓΔΠΣΦ min<sup>pl</sup> latt<sup>(v pl)</sup> vg syrr<sup>pesh hel</sup> arm go | και ο τριτος ωσαυτως om D ff i και ο τρ. ελαβεν αυτην ωσαυτως i 604 (cf. 2<sup>pe</sup>) arm 22 και ελαβον αυτην (vel ωσαυτως και) οι επτα και ουκ αφηκαν σπερμα (A)(D)M<sup>mg</sup>XΓΠΣ min<sup>pl</sup> (a) (i) (vg) syrr<sup>pesh (hel)</sup> (go) aeth | om εσχατον παντων D c k | εσχατον] εσχατη AEFMSUVXΓΦ min<sup>pl</sup> vg go | απεθανεν]+ατεκνος c k (sine filiis) 23 εν τη αναστασει NBC\*EFHLSUVXΓΔΨ al<sup>pl</sup> k q go] εν τ. ουν αναστ. AC<sup>2</sup>(DG)ΚΜΠ(Σ) (i 28 604 1071 2<sup>pe</sup>) syrr<sup>sin pesh hel (corr)</sup> arm aeth + (post αναστασει) οταν αναστωσιν ΑΧΓΠΣΦ (i 3 69 346) al<sup>pl</sup> a ff i q vg syrr<sup>sin hel</sup> arm go (aeth) (om NBCDLΔΨ) | αυτων] των επτα i 91 209 299 om Δ c k | γυνη] pr η AD\* i 3 | οι γαρ επτα] παντες γαρ i 91 299

σπ.), but καταλ. only is used of the wife (19 καταλίπη γυναῖκα); see however Mt. xxii. 25 ἀφῆκεν τὴν γ. αὐτοῦ τῷ ἀδελφῷ αὐτοῦ. On καταλείψη (ἢ) see Deissmann, *Bibl. Studies*, p. 190.

ἐξαναστήσῃ σπέρμα] So Lc.; Mt. ἀναστήσει σπ. A reminiscence of Gen. xxxviii. 8 ἀνάστησον σπέρμα τῷ ἀδελφῷ σου. Ἐξανιστάναι σπέρμα occurs in Gen. iv. 25, xix. 34, and the compound verb is common in the LXX.; in the N.T. it occurs again in Acts xv. 5 (cf. ἐξαναστασις, Phil. iii. 11).

20—22. ἐπτὰ ἀδελφοὶ ἦσαν κτλ.] Mt. writes as if they professed that the case had actually occurred: ἦσαν δὲ παρ' ἡμῖν ἐ. ἀδ. The position of ἐπτά draws attention to the number. Victor is probably right: ἐπλασαν... ἐπτά...ώστε ἐκ περιουσίας κωμῳδῆσαι τὴν ἀνάστασιν. Ἀποθνήσκων, at his death; for the connexion of this pres,

part. with ἀφῆκεν see Burton, § 122: in the next verse ἀποθνήσκων...ἀφῆκεν becomes without change of sense ἀπέθανεν...καταλιπών (Burton § 138). Ὡσαύτως καὶ—so the words are best arranged (cf. D, καὶ ὠσαύτως ἐλαβον αὐτην οἱ ζ' καὶ οὐκ ἀφῆκαν σπέρμα). For ώσ. καὶ see xiv. 31, i Cor. xi. 25, i Tím. v. 25. Οἱ ἐπτά: the ἐπτὰ ἀδελφοί mentioned above (v. 20). "Εσχατον is used adverbially as in Num. xxxi. 2, Deut. xxxi. 27, 29 (Ῥῆσης), and with πάντων in i Cor. xv. 8; Mt., Lc. substitute the more usual ὕστερον. The wife survived all the seven. She too (καὶ) was now dead (ἀπέθανεν); so that the interest of the case had passed over to the future life, if such there were.

23. ἐν τῇ ἀναστάσει κτλ.] The drift of their story at length appears; it is supposed to present a difficulty

24 ἐπτὰ ἔσχον αὐτὴν γυναῖκα. <sup>24</sup>Ἐφη αὐτοῖς ὁ Ἰησοῦς  
Οὐ διὰ τοῦτο πλανᾶσθε, μὴ εἰδότες τὰς γραφὰς μηδὲ  
25 τὴν δύναμιν τοῦ θεοῦ; <sup>25</sup>Όταν γὰρ ἐκ νεκρῶν ἀν-

24 εφη αυτοῖς ο I. ΒΒCLΔ 33 syrpesh me] καὶ αποκρίθεις (vel αποκρίθεις δε) ο I.  
ειπεν αυτοῖς Α(D)ΧΓΠΣΦ minpl b (c ff) q vg syrr<sup>(sin)</sup>hel arm go aeth | om ου Δασικ  
(syrisin?) the | μη ειδοτες] μη γυνωσκούτες D Or | τον θεον] +οιδατε D

to believers in the Resurrection. Τῇ ἀναστάσει: 'that resurrection for which, on the shewing of the Pharisees, we are to look'; for the art. cf. Lc. xiv. 14, Jo. xi. 24, Acts xvii. 18, 1 Cor. xv. 40. Mt. and Lc. insert οὖν: in Mc. the moral of the story is produced with characteristic bluntness (cf. v. 14 ἔξ-εστιν δῶναι) without conjunction or preface as in Mt. xxii. 17. Crude as the question may seem, it must have offered serious difficulties to the Pharisees, who held materialistic views as to the future state: cf. Enoch x. 17 ἔσονται γώντες ἡώς γεννήσωσιν χιλιάδας, and Sohar cited by Schöttgen on Mt. xxii. 28, "mulier illa quae duobus nupsit in hoc mundo, priori restituitur." For ἔχειν τινὰ γυναῖκα cf. Mt. iii. 9, Acts xiii. 5, Phil. iii. 17. On 'Western' readings in this verse see WH., *Notes*, p. 26.

24. οὐ διὰ τοῦτο πλανᾶσθε κτλ.] 'Is not this the reason why ye go wrong, that ye know not &c.?' The difficulty which seemed to these men insuperable was due to an error on their own part, and the error was the result of ignorance. For οὐ πλανᾶσθε; (cf. 1 Cor. xv. 33) Mt. has the direct πλανᾶσθε, but the question is characteristic of our Lord's manner; cf. οὐδὲ (οὐκ)...ἀνέγνωτε (vv. 10, 26). On διὰ τοῦτο...μὴ εἰδ. see WM., p. 201; μὴ follows δ. τ., because the ignorance is viewed relatively to the error and not simply as matter of fact (οὐκ εἰδ., cf. 1 Regn. ii. 12, Prov. vii. 23). The ignorance was twofold: (1) ignorance of Scripture, (2) ignorance of God (cf. 1 Cor. xv. 34 ἀγνωσίαν θεοῦ τινὲς ἔχοντιν); both inexcusable in members of the priesthood, as most of

these men probably were (see v. 18). The Lord deals with the second of these causes of error first, since it is fundamental. For μὴ...μηδέ cf. vi. 11, xiii. 15 (WM., p. 612 f.), and for αἱ γραφαὶ, 'the contents of the canon,' see xiv. 49, Lc. xxiv. 27, 32, 44 f.

25. Όταν γὰρ ἐκ νεκρῶν κτλ.] Mt. ἐν γὰρ τῇ ἀναστάσει. Lc. recasts the sentence: οἱ δὲ καταξιωθέντες τοῦ αἰώνος ἔκεινον τυχέιν καὶ τῆς ἀναστάσεως τῆς ἐκ νεκρῶν. The Sadducees (and the Pharisees also, so far as they connected marriage and the propagation of the race with the future life) shewed themselves incapable of conceiving a power which could produce an order entirely different from any within their experience. They assumed either that God could not raise the dead, or that He could raise them only to a life which would be a counterpart of the present, or even more replete with material pleasures. Thph.: ὑμεῖς γὰρ δοκεῖτε ὅτι πάλιν τοιαύτη κατάστασις σωματικότερα μελλεῖ εἶναι· οὐκ ἔστι δέ...ἀλλὰ θειοτέρα τις...καὶ ἀγγελική. Compare St Paul's answer to the question πῶς ἐγείρονται οἱ νεκροί, ποίως δὲ σώματι ἔρχονται; (1 Cor. xv. 35 ff.). Νεκροί is anarthrous in the phrase ἐκ νεκρῶν, with the single exception of Eph. v. 14; on the other hand we find ἀπὸ τῶν ν., Mt. xiv. 2, xxvii. 64, xxviii. 7 (ἀπὸ ν., Lc. xvi. 30, but in another connexion); μετὰ τῶν ν., Lc. xxiv. 5; περὶ τῶν ν. *infra*, v. 26; ὑπὲρ τῶν ν., 1 Cor. xv. 29. "Οταν...ἀναστῶσιν, 'when they shall have risen,' i.e. in the life which will follow the resurrection. Γαμίζεσθαι, γαμισκεσθαι (Lc. has both forms, cf. Blass, *Gr.* p. 52), of the woman,

*στῶσιν, οὐτε γαμοῦσιν οὐτε γαμίζονται, ἀλλ’ εἰσὶν ὡς ἄγγελοι [οἱ] ἐν τοῖς οὐρανοῖς. 26 περὶ δὲ τῶν νεκρῶν, 26 ὅτι ἐγείρονται, οὐκ ἀνέγνωτε ἐν τῇ βίβλῳ Μωυσέως*

25 οὐτε...οὐτε] οὐ...οὐδε D | γαμίζονται NBCGLUΔΨ i 124 209 alnonn] γαμισ-  
κονται EKMSVXΓΠΣΦ Or εκγαμισκονται AFH min<sup>nonn</sup> εκγαμιζονται min<sup>perpauc</sup> γαμι-  
ζονται D 2<sup>po</sup> | αγγελοι] pr οι B Or + θεον 33 61 69 2<sup>pe</sup> 1071 alnonn vg<sup>ed</sup> aeth | οι εν τ.  
ουρ. ABEGHHSVXΓΨ min<sup>mu</sup>] om οι NCDFKLMUΔΠΣ min<sup>satmu</sup> 26 των νεκρων]  
pr της αναστασεως 13 33 69 124 346 arm | βιβλω D | Μωσεως ACEFGHLSUVXΓΨ  
min<sup>pl</sup>

'to be given in marriage'; both are words of the later Gk.; for *γαμίζειν* cf. I Cor. vii. 38 (WSchm., p. 126). *Ταμεῖν* is used here, in its proper sense, of the man; see note on x. 11 f., and cf. Mt. xxiv. 38, Lc. xvii. 27.

ἀλλ’ εἰσὶν ὡς ἄγγελοι [οἱ] ἐν τοῖς οὐ.] Similarly Mt.; Lc., who paraphrases throughout: οὐδὲ γὰρ ἀποθανεῖν ἔτι δύνανται, ἵσταγγελοι γάρ εἰσιν, καὶ νιοί εἰσιν θεοῦ (cf. Gen. vi. 2, Heb. and LXX. cod. B) τῆς ἀναστάσεως νιοὶ ὄντες. See Dalman, *Worte*, i. p. 161. Their equality with angels consists in their deliverance from mortality and its consequences: cf. Phil. *de sacrificiis*. *Ab. et Cain* 2, 'Αβραὰμ ἐκλιπών τὰ θυητὰ προστίθεται τῷ θεῷ λαῷ καρπούμενος ἀφθαρσίαν, ἵστος ἄγγελοις γεγονός. Comp. Enoch xv. 4 ff. for the Jewish view of the freedom of Angels from the conditions which render marriage necessary for mankind. The reference to angels meets in passing another Sadducean tenet; the Lord was with the Pharisees in their maintenance of the doctrine of Angels and spirits, as well as in their belief in a future resurrection (cf. Acts xxiii. 6 ff.). On Christ's doctrine of the future life as disclosed in this passage see Latham, *Service of Angels*, pp. 40 ff., 50 ff. Even if we omit οἱ (vv. 11.), ἐν τοῖς οὐρανοῖς is to be connected with ἄγγελοι (cf. xiii. 32), not with εἰσίν.

26. περὶ δὲ τῶν νεκρῶν κτλ.] 'It is, then, possible for human life to exist under new conditions which

will remove the supposed difficulty. Now as to the general question. God can create new conditions under which a risen life may be possible. But is there reason for supposing that He will do so? The law itself, rightly understood, implies that He will.' For περὶ, *quod attinet ad*, at the head of a sentence, introducing the subject which is to be stated or discussed, see WM., p. 467. 'Ἐγείρονται,' "they rise," the 'gnomic present'; see Burton § 12, and cf. I Cor. xv. 16 εἰ γὰρ νεκροὶ οὐκ ἐγείρονται (see b. 13 εἰ δὲ ἀνάστασις νεκρῶν οὐκ ἔστιν). The appeal is now to the γραφαὶ—οὐκ ἀνέγνωτε; For the formula see ii. 25, Mt. xii. 5, xix. 4, xxi. 16, 42, Lc. vi. 3.

ἐν τῇ βίβλῳ Μωυσέως κτλ.] The Torah is elsewhere in the N.T. called νόμος Μωυσέως (Lc. xxiv. 44, Jo. i. 45, Acts xxviii. 23) or simply Μωυσῆς (Lc. xvi. 29); but βίβλος or βιβλίον M. is frequent in the LXX. (2 Chron. xxxv. 12, 1 Esdr. v. 48, vii. 6, 9, Tob. vi. 13, vii. 12 (N)); for a similar use of βίβλος in the N.T. see Lc. iii. 4 ἐν βίβλῳ λόγων Ἡσαίου, Acts vii. 42 ἐν β. τῶν προφητῶν. The Lord refers, as the Sadducees referred, to the Pentateuch, the authority of which could not be disputed by any Jewish party; on the attitude of the sect towards the later books see Dr Taylor's remarks, *Sayings*, p. 128 f. and cf. Ryle, *Canon*, p. 175. In adopting the ordinary title of the Pentateuch the Lord does not of

ἐπὶ τοῦ βάτου πῶς εἶπεν αὐτῷ ὁ θεὸς λέγων Ἐγὼ  
ὁ θεὸς Ἀβραὰμ καὶ θεὸς Ἰσαὰκ καὶ θεὸς Ἰακώβ;  
27 οὐκ ἔστιν θεὸς νεκρῶν ἀλλὰ ζώντων πολὺ πλανᾶσθε.

26 τοῦ βατου ΝΑΒCLXΓΠΦ min<sup>pl</sup>] τῆς β. ΔΜΣΨ min<sup>nonn</sup> Or | πῶς ΝΒCLUΔΨ  
min<sup>nonn</sup>] ως ΑΔΧΓΠΣ min<sup>pl</sup> Or | εἴμι ΜΜΔ min<sup>nonn</sup> latt syr<sup>pesh</sup> arm aegg go  
aeth Or<sup>2</sup> | θεος 3°, 4° BD Or<sup>bis</sup>] pr o ΝΑCLXΓΔΠΣΦΨ min<sup>omn vid</sup> Or<sup>1</sup> 27 θεος] pr o  
ΝΑCEFGHM<sup>txt</sup>SUVΓΨ min<sup>pl</sup> Or<sup>1+θεος</sup> 13 33 69 108 124 346 736 al<sup>sat mu</sup> (om  
BDKLM<sup>mg</sup>X<sup>st</sup>) ΔΠ al<sup>nonn</sup>] | ζωντων] pr θεος EGHM<sup>txt</sup>SUVΓΦ min<sup>permu</sup> q syr<sup>hel</sup> aeth |  
πολυ πλανασθε] pr υμεις ουν ΑΔΧΓΠΣΦ min<sup>omn vid</sup> latt<sup>vt pl</sup> syr<sup>pesh hel</sup> (arm) the aeth  
υμεις δε G 1 229 299 604 2<sup>pe</sup> syr<sup>sin</sup> (arm)

course dogmatically teach the Mosaic authorship of the Law or of any part of it in its existing form; see note on i. 44. ‘Ἐπὶ τοῦ βάτου,’ “on the bousche” (Wycliffe), “in the busshe” (Tindale); rather “in the place concerning the bush” (R.V.), or “at ‘the Bush,’” i.e. in the section of the Law which relates to the burning bush (Exod. iii. 1 ff., where an open *parashah* still begins); a similar indication of a “pre-Talmudic system of sections” (Ryle, p. 236) occurs in Rom. xi. 2 ἐν Ἡλείᾳ, where see SH. Βάτος is masc. in the LXX. (Exod. iii. 2 ff., Deut. xxxiii. 16), but fem. in Lc. xx. 37, Acts vii. 35 (cf. Moeris: ὁ β. ἀττικῶς· ἡ β. ἐλληνικῶς). The word belongs to the numerous class of Homeric nouns which reappear in Aristophanes and the comedians (Kennedy, *Sources*, p. 77 f.).

πῶς εἶπεν αὐτῷ ὁ θεός] For this use of πῶς cf. v. 16, Acts ix. 27, xi. 13, xx. 18. Cf. Mt., τὸ ρῆθὲν ὑμῖν ὑπὸ τοῦ θεοῦ: Lc., less exactly, Μωυσῆς ἐμήνυσεν, attributing the Divine words to the supposed author of the book. The words were addressed to Moses (*αὐτῷ* Mc.), but the revelation they contained was for the latest generation of Israel (*ὑμῖν* Mt.).

ἐγὼ ὁ θεὸς Ἀ· καὶ θεὸς Ἰσ. καὶ θεὸς Ἰακ.] Exod. iii. 6, LXX., ἐγώ εἴμι ὁ θεὸς τοῦ πατρός σου, θεὸς Ἀ· κτλ. The article is not repeated, for the Person is One; the repetition of θεός on the other hand emphasises the distinct relation in which God stands

to each individual saint. In quoting this passage the Lord argues thus: ‘In this place God reveals Himself as standing in a real relation to men who were long dead. But the living God cannot be in relation with any who have ceased to exist; therefore the patriarchs were still living in His sight at the time of the Exodus; dead to the visible world, they were alive unto God.’ Origen: ἀποπον λέγειν ὅτι ὁ θεὸς ὁ εἰπών Ο ὄν, τούτῳ μοι ἔστιν ὄνομα, τῶν οὐδαμῶς ὄντων θεός ἔστιν...ζώσιν ἄρα αἰσθανόμενοι τοῦ θεοῦ καὶ τῆς χάριτος αὐτοῦ ὁ Ἀβραὰμ καὶ ὁ Ἰσαὰκ καὶ ὁ Ἰακώβ. This argument establishes the immortality of the soul, but not, at first sight or directly, the resurrection of the body. But the resurrection of the body follows, when it is understood that the body is a true part of human nature; comp. Westcott, *Gospel of the Resurrection*, pp. 140 ff., 155 ff. God would not leave men with whom He maintained relations in an imperfect condition; the living soul must in due time recover its partner; the death of the body could only be a suspension of vital activities which in some other form would be resumed. For partial parallels in Rabbinical writings see J. Lightfoot on Mt. xxii. 32.

27. οὐκ ἔστιν θεός κτλ.] ‘He is not a God of dead men, but of living.’ Lc. adds πάντες γὰρ αὐτῷ ζώσιν. Death is a change of relation to the world and to men; it does not change our

<sup>28 §</sup> Καὶ προσελθὼν εἰς τῶν γραμματέων ἀκούστας 28 § syrbler  
αὐτῶν συνζητούντων, εἰδὼς ὅτι καλῶς ἀπεκρίθη αὐτοῖς, ἐπηρώτησεν αὐτόν Ποία ἔστιν ἐντολὴ πρώτη

28 τῶν γραμματέων] γραμματεὺς F min<sup>pseue</sup> | ἀκουστας] ακουων I 28 299 ακουοντων  
2<sup>pe</sup> | om aut. συνζ. ειδως k (syrsin) | ειδως Ν<sup>c</sup>ΑΧΓΔΨ min<sup>pl</sup> aegg] ιδων Ν<sup>\*c</sup>CDLΣΦ I 13  
28 69 60<sub>4</sub> 10<sub>7</sub> i al<sup>nonn</sup> a b c ff i q vg syrr<sup>poshcl</sup> arm | ποια] pr διδασκαλε D b c ff i k |  
πρωτη πασων εντολη M\* min<sup>mu</sup>

relation to God. There are two striking parallels in 4 Maccabees, vii. 19 oī πιστεύοντες ὅτι θεῷ οὐκ ἀποθνήσκουσιν ὁσπερ γάρ οἱ πατριάρχαι ἡμῶν Ἀβραὰμ, Ἰσαάκ, Ἰακὼβ, ἀλλὰ ζῶσιν τῷ θεῷ: xvi. 25 Ιδόντες ὅτι διὰ τὸν θεὸν ἀποθανόντες ζῶσιν τῷ θεῷ, ὁσπερ Ἀβραὰμ καὶ Ἰσαὰκ καὶ Ἰακὼβ καὶ πάντες οἱ πατριάρχαι. Lightfoot on Mt. quotes Rabbinical sayings to the same purpose. With the anarthrous νεκρῶν, ζῶντων cf. I Pet. iv. 3 κρῖναι ζῶντας καὶ νεκρούς.

πολὺν πλανᾶσθε] Mc. only. Not only were they in error, but their error was a great and far-reaching one. The priestly aristocrats submitted to the reproof in silence (Mt. ἐφίμωσεν τοὺς Σαδδουκαίους); the enthusiasm of the people rose yet higher (Mt. ἐξεπλήσσοντο). Yet it was not a logical victory which the Lord desired, but the recovery of the erring (Mt. xviii. 12 f.). Πλανᾶν, πλανᾶσθαι, are used in a moral sense by the LXX. from Deut. iv. 19 onwards, esp. in the sapiential books and the Prophets, and by the N.T. writers exclusively.

#### 28—34. THE SCRIBE'S QUESTION (Mt. xxii. 34—40).

28. προσελθὼν εἰς τῶν γραμματέων] Acc. to Mt. (xxii. 34) the discomfiture of the Sadducees led to a fresh gathering of their rivals, and the question was proposed by the scribe with a distinctly hostile purpose (ἐπηρώτησεν εἰς...πειράζων: cf. Jerome on Mt.: "non quasi discipulus sed quasi tentator accedit"). In Lc., on the other hand, some of the Scribes openly approve of the Lord's answer to the Sadducees (xx. 39), and Mc.

clearly regards the scribe who questioned the Lord as free from malicious intent (v. 34). The Greek commentators endeavour to reconcile the two traditions: cf. Victor: ἡρώησε μὲν γὰρ πειράζων παρὰ τὴν ἀρχήν, ἀπὸ δὲ τῆς ἀποκρίσεως ὥφεληθείς ἐπηγνέθη. But the attempt cannot be regarded as satisfactory. Doubtless the repulse of the Sadducees was received by the Pharisees with very mixed feelings; the majority, in whom hatred of Jesus was stronger than zeal for a dogma, were irritated by His fresh victory; a few, among whom was this scribe, were constrained to admire, even if they were willing to criticise, the Rabbi who, though not Himself a Pharisee, surpassed the Pharisees as a champion of the truth. Εἰς τῶν γρ., Mt. εἰς ἐξ αὐτῶν (sc. τῶν Φαρισαίων) νομικός (see note on ii. 6); for another instance of a solitary scribe approaching our Lord without hostile intentions see Mt. viii. 19, and cf. Jo. iii. 1 f. The Pharisees as a body were not present during the interview with the Sadducees; this man had heard the discussion (ἀκ. αὐτ. συνζητούντων, Wycliffe, "seykyng togidere"), and recognised (εἰδώς) the excellence of the Lord's answer (καλῶς ἀπεκρίθη). When they were gone he stepped forward (προσελθών), and put another question. Ἀκούσας αὐτῶν κτλ. supplies the motive of προσελθών, and through εἰδώς of ἐπηρώτησεν also (cf. Meyer). For the construction ἀκούσας αὐτῶν συνζ. cf. Acts x. 46, xi. 7 and WM., p. 434.

ποία ἔστιν ἐντολὴ πρώτη πάντων;]

29 πάντων; 29 ἀπεκρίθη ὁ Ἰησοῦς ὅτι Πρώτη ἐστίν  
"Ακουε, Ἰσραὴλ, Κύριος ὁ θεὸς ἡμῶν Κύριος εἰς  
τὸ 30 ἐστιν". 30 καὶ ἀγαπήσεις Κύριου τὸν θεόν σου ἐξ  
ὅλης [τῆς] καρδίας σου καὶ ἐξ ὅλης τῆς ψυχῆς σου καὶ  
ἐξ ὅλης τῆς διανοίας σου καὶ ἐξ ὅλης τῆς ἰσχύος σου.

28 om παντων D 604 2<sup>pe</sup> a b c f f i k syr<sup>sin</sup> arm 29 απεκριθη ο I.] ο δε I.  
 απεκριθη αυτω ACXΓΠΣΦ min<sup>pl</sup> vg syr<sup>hel</sup> go ο δε I. ειπεν αυτω 1 28 69 299 346 2<sup>pe</sup>  
 (a) k syr<sup>pesh</sup> arm αποκριθεις δε ο I. ειπεν αυτω D (604) b f f i q (syr<sup>sin</sup> the acth) | om  
 οτι D 1 28 91 209 299 2<sup>pe</sup> a b c f f i q syr<sup>sin pesh</sup> arm | om οτι πρωτη εστιν 229 k | πρωτη  
 εστιν ΚΒΛΔ me] παντων πρωτη D(X) 91 (209) (299) 2<sup>pe</sup> a b i syr<sup>sin</sup> arm πρωτον παντων  
 28 (604) πρωτη παντων εντολη ACKM\*<sup>2</sup>UΠΣΦ 33 al<sup>sat</sup> mu syr<sup>hel</sup> go πρωτη παντων (vel  
 πασων) των εντολων EFGHS(V)Γ min<sup>pl</sup> syr<sup>pesh</sup> | ημων] uμων 2<sup>pe</sup> al<sup>nonn</sup> i σου Ψ min<sup>pau</sup>  
 e me aeth | κυριος 2<sup>o</sup>] om F min<sup>pau</sup> a b k syr<sup>sin</sup> θeos vg Cypr<sup>bis</sup> 30 om της 1<sup>o</sup>,  
 2<sup>o</sup>, 3<sup>o</sup> B (om της 1<sup>o</sup> etiam D\*ΧΥ) | om και εξ ολης τ. ψυχης σου ΚΠ\* min<sup>pau</sup> k | om  
 και εξ ολης της διανοιας σου DH min<sup>pau</sup> c f k syr<sup>hier</sup> Cypr<sup>ter</sup> | σου ult]+αυτη πρωτη  
 (+ παντων) εντολη AD(KU)ΧΓ(Π)Σ(Φ) min<sup>omnivd</sup> lat<sup>exc</sup> syr<sup>sin pesh hel</sup> arm go

Mt. ποία ἐντ. μεγάλη ἐν τῷ νόμῳ; The Vg. (*interrogavit eum quod esset primum omnium mandatum*) and the R.V. “what commandment is the first of all?” overlook the distinction between *ποῖος* and *τίς* which, though faint, still exists in the N.T. (see note on xi. 28). The Lord is not asked to select one commandment out of the Ten, but to specify a class of commandments, or a particular commandment as representative of a class, to which the priority belongs; cf. Rom. iii. 27 διὰ ποίου νόμου; τῶν ἔργων; οὐχὶ, ἀλλὰ διὰ νόμου πίστεως. Πρώτη πάντων, not πασῶν: as Alford points out, *πρώτος πάντων* is treated as a single word—“first-of-all”; cf. WM., p. 222, Blass (*Gr.* p. 108), who explains the construction by “a stereotyped use of the neuter *πάντων* to intensify the superlative.” The construction is perhaps without an exact parallel in class. or contemporary Gk.; see Field, *Notes*, p. 36, who disputes Fritzsche’s reference to Ar. *Av.* 471, and seeks an example in Chrysostom.

29. *πρώτη ἐστίν "Ακούε κτλ.]* The Lord replies in the words of Deut. vi. 4 ff, part of the first clause of the Shema, which was recited daily by

every Jew and written on the miniature roll which the scribe carried in his phylactery (Schürer, II. ii. pp. 84, 113). The words had thus already been singled out by tradition as of primary importance; the Shema was regarded as including the Decalogue (Taylor, *Sayings*, pp. 52, 132); and the passage from Deut. vi. stood in the forefront of this fundamental confession of faith and duty, as if claiming by its very position the title of ἐντολὴ πρώτη πάντων: cf. Wünsche, *neue Beiträge*, p. 399. On the various renderings proposed for אֱלֹהֵינוּ מֶלֶךְ אֶחָד see Driver, *Deuteronomy* p. 89, who decides in favour of "J. our God is one J."

30. ἐξ ὅλης [τῆς] καρδίας κτλ.] The present B text of the LXX. gives ἐξ ὅλης τῆς διανοίας σου κ. ἐ. ὁ. τῆς ψυχῆς σου κ. ἐ. ὁ. τῆς δυνάμεως σου, but διανοία is a correction by the second hand, probably for καρδία, which is the reading of codd. A and F. Καρδία and διάνοια are often interchanged in the LXX. and its mss. (cf. Hatch, *Essays*, p. 104), and almost the same may be said of δύναμις and ἰσχύς. The three Heb. words מַרְדֵּךְ נֶפֶשׁ לִבְבָּשׁ together

<sup>31</sup> δευτέρα αὕτη Ἀγαπήσεις τὸν πλησίον σου ὡς 31 σεαυτόν. μείζων τούτων ἄλλη ἐντολὴ οὐκ ἔστιν.

<sup>31 δευτερα]</sup> pr καὶ A(D)ΧΠ al<sup>pl</sup> c(k) q syrr go arm aeth pr η ΔΨ | αυτῇ] ομοια  
αυτῇ ΑΧΓΠΣΦ syrr<sup>sin pesh</sup> arm ομ. ταῦτη D 69 | σεαυτον] εαυτον ΗΧΠ\*Σ min<sup>sat mu</sup> |  
μείζων...εστιν] hoc est magnum mandatum a

represent the sum of the powers which belong to the composite life of man; the first two are frequently combined, especially in Deut., where the writer desires to enforce "the devotion of the whole being to God," the 'heart' being in the psychology of the ancient Hebrews the organ of intellect, and the 'soul' of the desires and affections" (Driver, *Deuteronomy*, pp. 73, 91); the third word (used in this sense only here and in 2 Kings xxiii. 25) adds the thought of the forces which reside in these parts of human nature, and in the body through which they act. See the scholastic treatment of this subject by Thomas Aq., p. 2, q. 27, art. 5; q. 44, art. 4f.

Mt. follows the Heb. in substituting *ἐν* (?) for *ἐξ*, *ter*; on the other hand he agrees with Mc. in giving the doublet *καρδίας*, *διάνοιας*, and altogether omits the important clause *לֶבֶב מְאֻנָּקֵת*. Lc. (in another context, x. 27) combines Mt.'s presentation of the passage with Mc.'s (*ἐξ ὅλης καρδίας σου καὶ ἐν ὅλῃ τῇ ψυχῇ σου, καὶ ἐν ὅλῃ τῇ ἴσχυί σου, καὶ ἐν ὅλῃ τῇ διάνοιᾳ σου*). Regarded from one point of view, love dwells in the heart; from another, it proceeds from it, overflowing into the life of men.

On *καρδία* see ii. 6, note, iii. 5, vi. 52, vii. 19, 21; *διάνοια*, so far as it is distinguishable from *καρδία* (cf. Lc. i. 51 *διάνοιᾳ καρδίας*), is "the process of rational thought" (Westcott on 1 Jo. v. 20), or the faculty of thought itself, the mind (cf. Plat. *legg.* 916 A ἡ κατὰ τὸ σῶμα ἡ κατὰ τὴν διάνοιαν, and see Cremer s.v.); see 1 Pet. i. 13, 2 Pet. iii. 1.

'Αγαπήσεις, *diliges*, prescribes the higher love which is due to God, and

under God to man regarded as His creature (v. 31); cf. Trench, *syn.* xii. It is *ἀγάπη*, not *φιλία*, which is the sum of human duty. Neither the LXX. nor the N.T. uses *φιλεῖν* of the love due to God, in respect of His essential Being; yet cf. Prov. viii. 17, 1 Cor. xvi. 22.

31. δευτέρα αὕτη κτλ.] Mt. adds *ὅμοια*. In the question no reference has been made to a second commandment, but the Lord adds it in order to complete the summary of human duty; cf. Victor: *περὶ μᾶς ἐρωτηθεὶς οὐκ ἀπεσιώπησε τὴν ἀχώριστον αὐτῆς*. The citation is from Lev. xix. 18 LXX., *verbatim*; the passage is quoted again in Jas. ii. 8 (where see Mayor's note), Rom. xiii. 9, Gal. v. 14. As Bp Lightfoot points out (Gal. l.c.), "in the original text the word 'neighbour' is apparently restricted to the Jewish people," for *τοῖς νιοῖς τοῦ λαοῦ σου* occurs in the first member of the parallelism; that Jesus used it in the widest sense is clear from Lc. x. 29 ff. So understood the saying was a recapitulation of the second part of the Decalogue: see Rom. l.c. *τὸ γάρ Οὐ μοιχεύσεις κτλ.* (cf. note on Mc. vii. 21) *καὶ εἴ τις ἐτέρα ἐντολή, ἐν τῷ λόγῳ τούτῳ ἀνακεφαλαιοῦται*: Gal. l.c. ὁ γάρ πᾶς νόμος ἐν ἐνὶ λόγῳ πεπλήρωται. On the prominence given to it by Jewish teachers see Wünsche on Mt. xxii. 39. Acc. to Mt. the Lord added: *ἐν ταύταις ταῖς δυσὶν ἐντολαῖς ὅλος* (on *ὅλος* see Hort, *Jud. Chr.*, p. 21) *ὁ νόμος κρέμαται καὶ οἱ προφῆται*. They were the first two commandments because they revealed the ultimate principles of morality which it was the business of the Law as a whole to enforce, and on which the ripest teaching of the

32 <sup>32</sup>[καὶ] εἶπεν αὐτῷ ὁ γραμματεὺς Καλῶς, διδάσκαλε,  
 § 7 ἐπ' ἀληθείας § εἰπας ὅτι εἰς ἔστιν, καὶ οὐκ ἔστιν ἄλλος  
 33 πλὴν αὐτοῦ. <sup>33</sup>καὶ τὸ ἀγαπᾶν αὐτὸν ἐξ ὅλης [τῆς]  
 καρδίας καὶ ἐξ ὅλης τῆς συνέσεως καὶ ἐξ ὅλης τῆς  
 ἰσχύος, καὶ τὸ ἀγαπᾶν τὸν πλησίον ὡς ἑαυτὸν  
 περισσότερόν ἔστιν πάντων τῶν ὀλοκαυτωμάτων καὶ

32 καὶ ειπεν] om και B syrr<sup>sin pesh</sup> aegg | ειπες Ι\*DEFHLVXΔΠ<sup>2</sup> | eis εστιν] + (o) θeos (D)EF(G)H min<sup>sat</sup>mu a b c ff i q vg<sup>ed</sup> syrr<sup>sin hel(corr)</sup> arm aegg | om αλλος D a 33 om και το αγαπαν...εαυτον k | της καρδιας] om της BUXΨ min<sup>pau</sup>+σου ΙL min<sup>pau</sup> me | συνεσεως] δυναμεως D 2<sup>po</sup> a b i q ισχυος i 33 118 209 299 arm me+και εξ ολης της ψυχης ADXΓΠΣΦΨ min<sup>pl</sup> b c f f i q vg syrr<sup>(sin) pesh hel</sup> the go aeth | και εξ ολης της ισχυος] om D 33 b Hil εξ ολης τ. συνεσεως i 118 209 299 arm me | εαυτον BXΔ\*ΠΣΦΨ min<sup>pl</sup> a b c ff q vg] σεαυτον ΙADLSΓΔ<sup>2</sup> min<sup>pau</sup> i k | περισσοτερον ΙBLΔ 33] περισσοτερα Ψ om ABDXΓΠΨ min<sup>pl</sup> πλειον ADXΓΠΣΦΨ min<sup>fere omn</sup> | om παντων arm

Prophets depended. As to the relative importance of the commandments the Lord is content to say that these fundamental laws of human life are second to none—μείζων τούτων ἄλλη ἐντολὴ οὐκ ἔστιν.

32. [καὶ] εἶπεν αὐτῷ ὁ γραμ. κτλ.] This verse and the next two are peculiar to Mc. Καλῶς, ‘well said,’ cf. Jo. iv. 17, xiii. 13, and see note on vii. 6; for ἐπ' ἀληθείας cf. xii. 14. ’Επ' ἀλ. confirms καλῶς; the saying was truly a fine one; Wycliffe, “in truthe thou hast wel seide,” R.V. “of a truth...thou hast well said.” Tindale, followed by Cranmer and A.V., connects ἐπ' ἀλ. with εἰπας (“well, master, thou hast sayd the truthe”), but with less probability. “Οτι introduces the rehearsal of what the Lord had said, “that” (R.V.), not “for” (A.V.); οτι εἰς ἔστιν, “that He is one”; the Scribe refrains from unnecessarily repeating the Sacred Name. Οὐκ ἔστιν ἄλλος πλὴν αὐτοῦ: an O.T. phrase, cf. Exod. viii. 10 (6), Deut. iv. 35, Isa. xlvi. 21.

33. καὶ τὸ ἀγαπᾶν...καὶ τὸ ἀγαπᾶν] On ἀγαπᾶν see v. 30, note. The repetition is due to a desire to keep the two commandments sepa-

rate. The scribe substitutes σύνεσις for διάνοια and omits ψυχή. For σύνεσις see Bp Lightfoot's note on Col. i. 9, and the note on Mc. vii. 18 *supra*; according to Aristotle it represents the critical side of the intellect (*Eth. Nic.* vi. 7 ἡ δὲ σ. κριτική) which had special interest for men of this class. From the scribe's ready answer Bede gathers “inter scribas et Pharisaeos quaestionem esse versatam quod esset mandatum primum...quibusdam videlicet hostias et sacrificia laudantibus, aliis vero maiore auctoritate fidem et dilectionis opera praeferentibus.” It is to the credit of this scribe that he held the latter view. Περισσότερόν ἔστιν κτλ.: the words are based apparently on 1 Regn. xv. 22. Θυσίαι (ΘΗΣΙΑΙ) are sacrifices in general, ὀλοκαυτόματα (ΤΟΛΛΥ), eucharistic offerings, “nobilissima species sacrificiorum” (Bengel): a more complete classification of the various kinds of sacrifice is cited in Heb. x. 5, from Ps. xxxix. (xl.) 7 (see Westcott, *Hebrews*, p. 309). Περισσότερον, ‘far more,’ cf. vii. 36, xii. 40. For Rabbinical parallels to the Scribe's saying see Wünsche *ad l.*

**Θυσιῶν.** <sup>34</sup> καὶ ὁ Ἰησοῦς ἰδὼν αὐτὸν ὅτι νουνεχῶς 34 ἀπέκριθη εἰπεν αὐτῷ Οὐ μακρὰν εἶ ἀπὸ τῆς βασιλείας τοῦ θεοῦ. καὶ οὐδεὶς οὐκέτι ἐτόλμα αὐτὸν ἐπερωτήσαι.

35<sup>§</sup> **Kai** ἀποκριθεὶς ὁ Ἰησοῦς ἔλεγεν διδάσκων ἐν 35 § T<sup>a</sup>

33 θυσιῶν] pr των ΚΛΜΔ 13 28 33 69 2<sup>pe</sup> almuvid  
min<sup>pane</sup> | om αυτον 1<sup>o</sup> ΚDLΔ alnonn syr<sup>sin</sup> arm | om ει Κ<sup>a,b</sup> L | ουκετι] ουκ 61  
1071 C<sup>scr</sup>

34 ἰδὼν αὐτὸν ὅτι κτλ.] Αὐτὸν forestalls the subject of the dependent clause; cf. WM., p. 781. What the Lord observed in reference to this man was the intelligence displayed by his answer. It was shewn not only in accepting the Lord's judgement as to the two primary commandments, but in detecting and admitting the principle on which the judgement rested, viz. the superiority of moral over ritual obligations. *Nounechōs*, ἀπ. λεγ. in Biblical Gk., occurs in Aristotle and later writers, esp. Polybius, as equivalent to *nounechontos* (Lob. *Phrym.* p. 599).

οὐ μακρὰν εἴλι ἀπό κτλ.] For the phrase οὐ μακρὰν εἴναι (ἀπέχειν, ὑπάρχειν) cf. Lc. vii. 6, Jo. xxi. 8, Acts xvii. 27. Under the old theocracy of μακράν are either exiled Jews (Isa. lvii. 19), or the Gentiles (Eph. ii. 13); distance from the new Kingdom is measured neither by miles, nor by ceremonial standards, but by spiritual conditions. The man was to some extent intellectually qualified for admission to the Kingdom; certainly he had grasped one of its fundamental principles. It would be interesting to work out a comparison between this scribe and the ἄρχων of x. 17 ff. In both cases something was wanting to convert admiration into discipleship. If wealth was the bar in the one case, pride of intellect may have been fatal in the other. The mental acumen which detects and approves spiritual truth may, in the tragedy of human life, keep its possessor from entering the Kingdom of God. Bengel: "si

non procul es, intra; alias praestiterit procul fuisse."

καὶ οὐδεὶς οὐκέτι ἐτόλμα κτλ.] After this the policy of questioning Jesus was abandoned; no one was bold enough (*ἐτόλμα*, cf. Jo. xxi. 12, Jude 9) to renew the attempt, and the Lord continued His teaching for the short remainder of His ministry in the Temple without interruption. Mt. places these words after the Lord's question about David's Son, and adds οὐδεὶς ἐδύνατο ἀποκριθῆναι αὐτῷ λόγον. He had answered all their questions; a single instance was enough to shew that they could not answer His.

35—37<sup>a</sup>. THE LORD'S QUESTION (Mt. xxii. 41—45, Lc. xx. 41—44).

35. καὶ ἀποκριθεὶς ὁ Ι. ἔλεγεν] On the use of ἀποκρίνεσθαι where no question precedes see ix. 5, 6, note. The question which was now asked was in fact a final answer to all opponents. It was asked, according to Mt., in the presence of the Pharisees and was in fact addressed to them (*συνηγμένων δὲ τῶν Φ. ἐπηρώτησεν αὐτούς*): the Lord demands of them Τί νῦν δοκεῖ περὶ τοῦ χριστοῦ; and they answer "He is David's Son." Mc.'s account of the circumstances is different; the question is asked in the course of the Lord's public teaching, which is resumed after He has silenced all His adversaries (*ἔλεγεν διδάσκων ἐν τῷ ιερῷ*); and it is addressed, not to the Scribes but to the people, who are invited to consider one of the *dicta* of the Scribes (*πῶς λέγοντοι οἱ γρ. κτλ.*). Lc.'s εἰπεν δὲ πρὸς αὐτούς is perhaps ambiguous, but in the ques-

τῷ ἵερῷ Πῶς λέγουσιν οἱ γραμματεῖς ὅτι ὁ χριστὸς  
36 νίος Δανείδ ἐστιν; ἁύτος Δανείδ εἶπεν ἐν τῷ  
πνεύματι τῷ ἀγίῳ Εἶπεν Κύριος τῷ κυρίῳ μου Κάθον  
ἐκ δεξιῶν μου, ἔως ἂν θῶ τοὺς ἔχθρούς σου ὑποκάτω

36 αὐτος] + γαρ ΑΧΓΠΣΦ<sup>7</sup> min<sup>pl</sup> b i q vg syrr<sup>pesh hel</sup> go aeth και αυτος Δ e d ff syr<sup>sin</sup>  
arm the και αυτος D | τω πνευματι τω αγιω ΝBDL(T<sup>d</sup>)UΔΨ 33 2<sup>o</sup> al<sup>nonn</sup>] πνευματι  
αγιω ΑΧΓΠΣΦ<sup>7</sup> min<sup>pl</sup> | ειπεν 2<sup>o</sup>] λεγει ADEGHKM<sup>\*</sup>SVΠΦ min<sup>mu</sup> k q go | κυριος] pr o  
ΝΑΛΤ<sup>d</sup>ΧΓΔΠΠ<sup>7</sup> min<sup>fereomn</sup> (om BD c<sup>sc</sup>) | καθον] καθισον B | υποκατω BDT<sup>d</sup>Ψ 28 aegg]  
υποποδιον ΝΑΛΧΓΔΠΣΦ<sup>7</sup> min<sup>fereomn</sup> latt syrr<sup>sin pesh hel</sup> arm go aeth

tion he follows the same tradition as Mc. Πῶς λέγουσιν; ‘how do they make good their statement in view of the fact about to be mentioned?’ Cf. 1 Cor. xv. 12, 15.

ὁ χριστὸς νίος Δανείδ ἐστιν] Cf. Jo. vii. 42 οὐχ ἡ γραφὴ εἶπεν ὅτι ἐκ τοῦ σπέρματος Δανείδ... ἔρχεται ὁ χριστὸς; The inference was drawn from such passages as Ps. lxxxix. 3 ff., Is. xi. 1, Jer. xxiii. 5 (cf. Edersheim, *Life*, ii. pp. 724, 731). That the populace recognised it as a truth was made evident by their cries of ὥσταννά τῷ νίῳ Δανείδ, but their convictions were shared by the Scribes and indeed derived from them. Jesus does not on the one hand dispute the inference, or, on the other, press the identification; He contents Himself with pointing out a difficulty, in the solution of which lay the key to the whole problem of His person and mission. On ὁ χριστὸς see viii. 29, and for νίος Δ, cf. x. 47, note.

36. αὐτὸς Δανείδ εἶπεν κτλ.] The difficulty is stated. It has to do with the interpretation of a Psalm which by common confession was Messianic (Edersheim, ii. p. 720 f.). Ps. cx. is assigned to David in the title (M.T., LXX.), and the attribution was probably undisputed in the first century, and assumed by our Lord and His Apostles (Acts ii. 34) on the authority of the recognised guardians of the canon. It is possible, however, that He mentions David simply as being the reputed author of the Psalter (cf. Lc.,

Δ. ἐν βίβλῳ ψαλμῶν: Heb. iv. 7 ἐν Δανείδ λέγων, where see Westcott’s note). It cannot fairly be claimed that our Lord is committed by His hypothetical use of a current tradition to the Davidic authorship of the Psalter or of the particular Psalm: see Sanday, *Inspiration*, pp. 414, 420; Gore, *Incarnation*, p. 196 f.; Kirkpatrick, *Psalms*, pp. 662 f. His whole argument rests on the hypothesis that the prevalent view was correct. Ἐν τῷ πνεύματι τῷ ἀγίῳ, Mt. ἐν πνεύματι: cf. Acts ii. 30 προφήτης ὑπάρχων, Acts iv. 25 (ΝΑΒΕ, see WH., *Notes*, p. 92, Blass *ad l.*). On ἐν πνεύματι see i. 23, note, and on τὸ πν. τὸ ἄγιον, i. 10, note; the Psalm was θεόπνευστος (2 Tim. iii. 16), the writer was ὑπὸ πνεύματος ἄγιον φερόμενος (2 Pet. i. 21). The phrase is not otiose; it gives authority to the words on which the question turns. Ps. cx. opens with a specific claim to inspiration in a high degree (Μηδὲν γῆρας).

εἶπεν Κύριος τῷ κυρίῳ μου κτλ.] The words are cited from Ps. cix. (ex.) 1, LXX., with two verbal changes, Κύριος (Κύριοι:) for ὁ κύριος—a reading which serves to differentiate the word from τῷ κυρίῳ (τῷ κύρῳ)—and ὑποκάτω for ὑποπόδιον. Lc. restores ὑποπόδιον, and the same reading appears in Acts ii. 35, Heb. i. 13. That Mt. supports Mc.’s ὑποκάτω against both Lxx. and Heb. points to the probability that the quotation came into the Synoptic tradition from a collection of *testi-*

*τῶν ποδῶν σου.* <sup>37</sup> αὐτὸς Τ Δανειδ λέγει αὐτὸν κύριον, 37 Τ Τ  
καὶ πόθεν αὐτοῦ ἐστιν νίος;

*Καὶ ὁ πολὺς ὄχλος ἤκουεν αὐτοῦ § ήδέως.* <sup>¶</sup> <sup>38</sup> καὶ 38 §<sup>e</sup> Τ<sup>a</sup>

37 αυτος Δ.] pr ει Σ i ff syrsin arm+ouv ΑΧΓΠΙΣΦΤ minpl b vg syrrpesh hol\* arm aeth om αυτος Σ b c syrsin | Δανειδ]+εν πνευματι Ψ | λεγει] καλει M<sup>2</sup>UΦΨ 33 2<sup>pe</sup> 48<sup>ev</sup> c syrpesh | ποθεν] πως Ν\* Μ\*ΣΨ 1 13 28 33 69 107 2<sup>pe</sup> alpauo b the aeth | o πολυς] om o ΝD 604 2<sup>pe</sup> | ηκουσεν MG minpauo vg exefu

*monia:* see note on i. 2. On the form κάθον=κάθησο see WM., p. 98: it is used freely in the LXX. and in Jas. ii. 3, and occurs in the Gk. of the New Comedy (Kennedy, *Sources*, p. 162). For ἐκ δεξιῶν cf. x. 37, note. ‘Υποκάτω τῶν ποδῶν σου looks back to the scene in Josh. x. 24: as cited by our Lord the words suggest (1) the ignominious defeat of His enemies which had just been witnessed; (2) the final collapse of all opposition to His work (1 Cor. xv. 24 ff.). No other O.T. context is so frequently cited or alluded to by Apostolic and sub-apostolic writers. In the N.T. besides this context and its parallels see the direct quotations in Acts ii. 34, Heb. i. 13, v. 6, vii. 17, 21, and the references in Mc. xiv. 62 and parallels, ‘xvi. 19,’ Acts vii. 56, Rom. viii. 34, 1 Cor. xv. 24 ff., Eph. i. 20, Col. iii. 1, Heb. i. 3, viii. 1, x. 12 f., 1 Pet. iii. 22, Apoc. iii. 21. Of early patristic writings cf. esp. Barn. 12. 10 αὐτὸς προφητεύει Δανειδ... Εἶπεν Κύριος κτλ. οὐ πῶς Δανειδ λέγει αὐτὸν κύριον καὶ νίον οὐ λέγει; Clem. R. 1 Cor. 36; Justin, *ap.* i. 45, *dial.* 76, 83. On the question what our Lord, if he quoted the words in Hebrew or Aramaic, would have substituted for the Tetragrammaton, see Dalman, *Worte*, i., p. 149 f.

37. αὐτὸς Δανειδ λέγει κτλ.] See note on v. 36. *Κύριον* is here=Ἄντας, sovereign lord; cf. Symm., τῷ δεσπότῃ μου. The title does not involve Divine sovereignty, yet it was a natural inference that a descendant who was David's lord was also David's God: cf. *Did.* 10 ὡσαννὰ τῷ θεῷ Δανίδ, and

Dr C. Taylor's remarks (*Teaching*, p. 160). The Lord, however, is content to point out the superficial difficulty: καὶ πόθεν (Mt. κ. πῶς) αὐτοῦ ἐστιν νίος; whence (=how, cf. Dem. *de cor.* (242) οὐκ ἔστι ταῦτα...πόθεν;) can the Davidic sonship be maintained in the face of this inspired assertion of a lordship to which David himself submits? For λέγειν=καλεῖν cf. x. 18, Acts x. 28.

Justin (*dial.* 32, 56, 83) says that the Jews of his day sought to escape from the Christian use of Psalm cx. by applying it to Hezekiah. For the predominant Jewish interpretation of the Psalm, see Perowne, ii. p. 256 ff.; and for recent opinion on its date and purpose comp. Cheyne, *Origin of the Psalter*, p. 20 ff.

### 37<sup>b</sup>—40. DENUNCIATION OF THE SCRIBES (Mt. xxiii. 1 ff., Lc. xx. 45—47).

37. καὶ ὁ πολὺς ὄχλος κτλ.] ‘Ο π. ὄχλος, the great mass of the people, as distinguished from a relatively small minority led by the priestly and professional classes (Mt. οἱ ὄχλοι, Lc. πᾶς ὁ λαός); cf. Jo. xii. 9, 12 ὁ ὄχλος πολὺς, where however ὄχλος πολὺς is treated as a single word (cf. Westcott *ad l.*). For examples of this use of ὁ πολὺς ὄχλος see Field, *Notes*, p. 37, who cites Plutarch, Pausanias, Dio Chrys., Lucian, and Diod. Sic. At the end of the “day of questions” the Lord's popularity with the non-professional majority of His audience was unabated. Two successive days of teaching had exhausted neither His resources nor their delight. The discomfiture of the Scribes added flavour to the teaching; Euth.: ὡς ήδέως διαλεγομένου καὶ

¶ go ἐν τῇ διδαχῇ αὐτοῦ ἔλεγεν Βλέπετε ἀπὸ τῶν γραμματέων τῶν θελόντων ἐν στολαῖς περιπατεῖν καὶ 39 ἀσπασμοὺς ἐν ταῖς ἀγοραῖς <sup>39</sup>καὶ πρωτοκαθεδρίας ἐν

38 καὶ εν τη διδαχη αυτου ελεγεν Ι(Α)ΒΙ(ΧΓ)Δ(Π)Ψ 33 (al<sup>pl</sup>) c k (l q vg) aegg<sup>me(the)</sup>  
syrr<sup>pesh hel</sup> go aethl] ο δε διδασκων (+αμα) ελ. αυτοις (D) 2<sup>po</sup> (a) b d i (arm) | των  
θελοντων] καὶ των τελωνων D | στολαις] στοαις syr<sup>sin hier</sup> [ ασπασμους] pr ξητουντων Ψ pr  
φιλονυτων II 238 346 736 al<sup>nonn</sup> c syrr<sup>sin pesh</sup> [ αγοραις]+ποιεισθαι DΦ 2<sup>po</sup>

εὐχερῶς αὐτοὺς ἀνατρέποντος. For ἡ-  
δέως ἥκουεν compare vi. 20—a sugges-  
tive parallel.

38. ἐν τῇ διδαχῇ αὐτοῦ ἔλεγεν] The Lord's teaching proceeded without further interruption; the few sentences which follow are specimens of its character and manner. Mt. and Lc. help us to realise the scene; the Twelve form, as in Galilee, an inner circle round the Lord, and to them His teaching is primarily addressed, though it is not without interest or profit for the wider audience by which they are surrounded (Mt. ἐλάλησεν τοῖς ὄχλοις κ. τοῖς μαθηταῖς αὐτοῦ, Lc. ἀκούοντος δὲ παντὸς τοῦ λαοῦ εἶπεν τοῖς μαθ. αὐτοῦ). Mt. has preserved a far larger part of this teaching than Mc., who gives only a fragment; the two traditions are moreover independent; Mc. and Lc. have only three clauses in common with Mt. (καὶ ἀσπασμοὺς... δεῖπνοις, cf. Mt. xxiii. 6, 7).

βλέπετε ἀπὸ τ. γραμματέων] For the construction cf. viii. 15. In Mt. the discourse opens with a recognition of the official character of the Scribes, and of the duty of the people towards them as authorised teachers. It is their conduct only which is denounced (Mt. xxiii. 2, 3). Τῶν θελόντων...περιπατεῖν καὶ ἀσπασμούς is an instance (WM., p. 722) of the *oratio variata*, due to the use in the same sentence of the two constructions, θέλω with inf. and θέλω τι. Lc. avoids it by changing the verb (θελόντων περιπατεῖν...φιλούντων ἀσπ.). For θέλειν τι see Mt. ix. 13 (Hos. vi. 6).

Στολή, *stola*, is 'equipment,' 'apparel,' and hence esp. 'long, flowing raiment,' a *vestis talaris*. The word is much used in the LXX., chiefly as the equivalent of בְּגִימָה or שְׁבִילָה, for priestly or royal robes (e.g. Exod. xxxi. 10 τὰς στολὰς τὰς λειτουργικάς, Esth. viii. 15 τὴν βασιλικὴν στολήν, I Macc. vi. 15 ἔδωκεν αὐτῷ τὸ δάδημα καὶ τὴν στολήν), and in the N. T. for dress worn on festive or solemn occasions (e.g. Lc. xv. 22, Apoc. vii. 9). On the singular change of meaning which has led to the use of the word to describe a mere ἐπιτραχήλιον see *DCA*. ii. 1935. Syr.<sup>sin.</sup> and two mss. of Syr.<sup>hier.</sup> presuppose στοαῖς, which was also the reading before Syr.<sup>cu.</sup> in Lc. xx. 46. The variant is tempting at first sight, but besides its lack of extant Greek support, it fails to yield a quite satisfactory sense. The colonnades of the Precinct were not the resort of a privileged class of teachers only; Christ Himself and the Apostles used them freely (Jo. x. 23, Acts iii. 11, v. 12). Mt. adds other tokens of the love of display: πλατύνοντις γὰρ τὰ φυλακτήρια...μεγαλύνοντι τὰ κράσπεδα. Not the use of dignified costume is condemned by Christ, but the use of it for the sake of ostentation (θελόντων...περιπατεῖν); see note on v. 39.

καὶ ἀσπασμούς ἐν ταῖς ἀγοραῖς] Sc. θελόντων (cf. previous note). For instances of such salutations cf. ix. 15, xv. 18. Mt. adds epexegetically καὶ καλεῖσθαι ὑπὸ τῶν ἀνθρώπων Παβεῖ: other titles which the Scribes affected were *Abba* (Mt. πατέρα μὴ καλέσητε),

*ταῖς συναγωγαῖς καὶ πρωτοκλισίας ἐν τοῖς δείπνοις.*

<sup>40</sup> οἱ κατέσθοντες τὰς οἰκίας τῶν χηρῶν καὶ προφάσει 40

39 πρωτοκλητας AFHKLUXF min<sup>permu</sup>  
rell)] οἱ κατεσθιοντιν D 1 91 299 | χηρων]+και ορφανων D 13 28 69 124 346 2<sup>ps</sup>  
a b c f f i q syr<sup>hier</sup> | om και D latt<sup>exc</sup> syr<sup>in pesh</sup> arm

and *Moreh* (*ib.* μηδὲ κληθῆτε καθηγηταί); cf. J. Lightfoot on Mt. *ad l.*, Schürer, II. i. p. 316 f., Wünsche, p. 400, and on the other hand Dalman, *Worte*, i. p. 279. The Lord did not refuse such titles, which were pre-eminently due to Him (Jo. xiii. 13), but He did not demand or desire them (Jo. v. 41). *'Αγοραὶ* in Jewish towns have been mentioned in vi. 56, vii. 4; cf. Mt. xi. 16, xx. 3.

39. καὶ πρωτοκαθεδρίας...κ. πρωτοκλισίας] Sc. θελόντων. The Scribes not only received but claimed the place of honour at all gatherings, social as well as religious. The *πρωτοκαθεδρία* seems to be the bench in the synagogues in front of the ark and facing the congregation, which was reserved for officials and persons of distinction (Edersheim, *Life*, i. p. 436); the *πρωτοκλισία* is the place of the most honoured guest on the couch of the *triclinium*; cf. Lc. xiv. 8, and Jos. *ant.* xv. 2. 4 παρὰ τὰς ἑστιάσεις προκατακλίνων. Acc. to the Talmud the chief guest lay in the middle, if there were three on a couch; if there were two, he lay on the right side of the couch (Edersheim, ii. p. 207). Both *πρωτοκαθεδρία* and *πρωτοκλισία* appear to be ἀπ. λεγόμενα: Fritzsche prints τὰ πρωτοκλίσια in 2 Macc. iv. 21, but though the passage is obscure, *πρωτοκλήσια* is probably right in that context. The Vg. here resorts to a paraphrase; *in primis cathedris sedere...et primos discubitus*: similarly all the English versions.

ἐν τοῖς δείπνοις] Guests were entertained either at breakfast (Mt. xxii. 4, Lc. xi. 38, xiv. 12) or at supper, but chiefly at the evening meal (vi. 21, Lc. xiv. 16, Jo. xii. 2, &c.).

40. οἱ κατέσθοντες κτλ.] For

κατέσθ. cf. iv. 4, and for the form in -θειν, i. 6 (note). Like birds or locusts settling on the ripe crops, these men who claimed the reverence of Israel devoured the property of their brethren, even of those most deserving of consideration. *Οἰκία* is apparently used here like *οἶκος*, in the sense of τὰ ὑπάρχοντα: cf. Gen. xlvi. 18, Heb. (BDB, p. 110) and LXX, and see the example cited by Wetstein from Aelian, *V. H.* iv. 2, οἰκίαν αὐξῆσαί καὶ πλούτον: the phrase ἔσθιεν οἱ κατέσθ. *οἶκον* is frequent in the *Odyssey*, and the Latin poets have the corresponding *comedere* (*devorare*) *patrimonium, bona*, &c. As the women who were attracted by our Lord's teaching ministered to Him of their substance (xiv. 3, Lc. viii. 2, 3), so doubtless the Pharisaic Rabbis had their female followers, whose generosity they grossly abused. Widows were specially the object of their attack; Thph.: ὑπεισήρχοντο γὰρ εἰς τὰς ἀπροστατεύουσας γυναῖκας ὡς δῆθεν προστάται αὐτῶν ἔσόμενοι: for instances see Schöttgen on Mt. xxiii. 14, who shews that such a course was familiarly known as ινίσθηται, *plaga Pharisaeorum*. The practice was expressly forbidden in the Law; Exod. xxii. 22 (21) πᾶσαν χήραν καὶ ὄρφανὸν οὐ κακώσετε. Οἱ κατέσθοντες is an *asyndeton* due to the note-like form in which Mc. presents the fragments of the longer discourses which he has preserved (cf. e.g. vi. 7 ff. notes). Lc., who gives the paragraph otherwise word for word, sets the construction right (*οἱ κατέσθιοντιν...καὶ προσεύχονται*); cf. cod. D here.

καὶ προφάσει μακρὰ προσ.] Vg. *sub obtentu prolixiae orationis*; Wycliffe, "undir colour of long preier," and

μακρὰ προσευχόμενοι· οὗτοι λήμψονται περισσότερον κρίμα.¶

41     <sup>41</sup> Καὶ καθίσας κατέναντι τοῦ γαζοφυλακίου ἐθέωρει πῶς ὁ ὄχλος βάλλει χαλκὸν εἰς τὸ γαζό-

40 οὐτοὶ] + καὶ 2<sup>ρ</sup>οι οἰτινες 13 28 69     41 καθίσας] καθεῖμενος D εστως 1 13 28 69  
346 2<sup>ρ</sup>η alpaue syrrsin hel(mg) hies arm Or + o 15 ADXTII al min<sup>omn vid</sup> | κατέναντι] απεναντι  
ΒΥΨ 33 alnonn κατενωπιον 13 346 | γαζοφυλακειον BG (hiat H) MSV<sup>2</sup>XII<sup>2</sup> almu | θεωρει  
Ν\* Or<sup>1</sup> | βαλλει] εβαλλε 13 69 124 | ομ βαλλει...πλουσιον D | γαζοφυλακειον EFGM  
V\*Ψ al<sup>mu</sup>

similarly Tindale, Geneva and Rheims: A.V., R.V., "for a pretence make long prayers." Προφάσει is the opposite of ἀληθείᾳ (cf. Phil. i. 18). Men who devoured the property of widows could pray only in pretence. The word carries with it, however, the further sense of 'pretext' (Lightfoot on Phil. l.c., 1 Thess. ii. 5); under colour of a reputation for piety due to the length of their prayers (*προσχήματι εὐλαβείας*, Thph.) they insinuated themselves into the good opinion of their victims. On the whole subject see Mt. vi. 5 ff., and cf. J. Lightfoot on Mt. xxiii. 15, who quotes the Rabbinical saying "Long prayers make a long life." The Lord on certain occasions prayed long (Lc. vi. 12), but not προφάσει, or with mere πολυλογία (Mt. l.c.).

οὗτοι λήμψονται κτλ.] Religious teachers who use prayer as a means of securing opportunities for committing a crime, shall receive a sentence in excess of that which falls to the lot of the dishonest man who makes no pretension to piety; to the sentence on the robber will be added in their case the sentence on the hypocrite. Κρίμα is the definitive issue of a judicial process (*κρίσις*); for περισσότερον κρίμα cf. Jas. iii. 1 μείζον κρ. λημψόμεθα, and Lc. xii. 47 f.

41—44. THE WIDOW'S TWO MITES (Lc. xxi. 1—4).

41. καθίσας κατέναντι τ. γ.] The teaching in the Court of the Gentiles had ceased, and the Lord with the

Twelve passed within the low marble wall which fenced off the inner precinct from the intrusion of non-Israelites; and entering the Court of the Women (Edersheim, *Temple*, p. 24 ff., Geikie, *Life*, p. 408) sat down opposite to (κατέναντι, facing, cf. xi. 2, xiii. 3; for ἀπέναντι see Mt. xxvii. 24, 61) the Treasury: cf. Jos. *ant.* xix. 6. Ι τῶν ἱερῶν ἐντὸς ἀνεκρέμασεν περιβόλων ὑπὲρ τὸ γαζοφυλάκιον. A Temple Treasury (τὸ γαζοφυλάκιον, or τὰ γαζοφυλάκια) is mentioned in 2 Esdr. xx. 37, 38, xxiii. 4 f., and 2 Macc. iii. 6 ff., iv. 42, v. 18, 4 Macc. iv. 3. In the Herodian temple there were thirteen chests placed at intervals round the walls of the Court of the Women, and known from their trumpet-like form as *τόντιστρα*, each marked with the purpose to which the offerings it received were to be devoted (Edersheim, p. 26); to these, or rather to the colonnade under which they were placed, the name of 'The Treasury' seems to have been given; see Hastings, *D.B.* iv. 809. Comp. Jo. viii. 20 ἐν τῷ γαζοφυλακίῳ...ἐν τῷ ἱερῷ. Γάζα and γαζοφυλάκιον belong to the later Gk.

ἐθεώρει πῶς ὁ ὄχλος βάλλει κτλ.] The Lord's attention is attracted by the rattling of the coin down the throats of the Shopharoth. He looks up (Lc. ἀναβλέψας, cf. Lc. xix. 5, 'Jo.' viii. 7 ἀνέκυψεν) from the floor of the Court on which His eyes had been resting, and fixes them on the spectacle (ἐθεώρει, cf. v. 38, Lc. xxiii. 35, Jo. xii. 45): before Him is a study of human

**φυλάκιον.** καὶ πολλοὶ πλούσιοι ἔβαλλον πολλά·  
**καὶ ἐλθοῦσα μία χήρα πτωχὴ ἔβαλεν λεπτὰ δύο,** 42

42 χηρα] pr γυνη Κ | om πτωχη D 2<sup>re</sup> abcffikq arm | εβαλλεν Κ 13 69 124 alpauc

nature which is unique in its own way. 'Ο ὄχλος is as usual 'the masses,' and χαλκόν may therefore retain its proper meaning; though χαλκός like *aes* is used for money of all kinds (cf. vi. 8), yet the mention of the rich men's larger gifts, which immediately follows, points here to copper coins such as the *as* (*ἀστάριον*, Mt. x. 29), and the *quadrans* (*κοδράντης*, Mt. v. 26): see note on v. 42. The movement of the tenses in this context is interesting: βάλλει...ἔβαλλον...ἔβαλεν (vv. 42, 43) ...ἔβαλον, ἔβαλεν (v. 44). See Burton, §§ 14, 21, 56.

καὶ πολλοὶ πλούσιοι κτλ.] From time to time, as He watched, rich men (and not a few of them) cast in large sums; the Passover was at hand and wealthy worshippers were numerous and liberal. Lc. speaks only of the rich and the widow; Mc. distinguishes three classes.

The wealth of the temple-treasury in the time of Pompey is illustrated by Josephus (*ant. xiv.* 4. 4; 7. 1).

42. καὶ ἐλθοῦσα μία χήρα πτωχῇ] Lc. εἶδεν δέ τινα χήραν πενιχράν. With Mc.'s μία cf. συκῆν μίαν, Mt. xxi. 19. The widow stands out on the canvas, solitary and alone, in strong contrast to the πολλοὶ πλούσιοι, and is detected by the Lord's eye in the midst of the surrounding ὄχλος. It may have been the intention of the two Synoptists to compare her simple piety with the folly of the rich widows who wasted their substance on the Scribes (Victor), or she may once have been one of the latter class, and reduced to destitution by Pharisaic rapacity; at least it is worthy of notice that Mt., who does not mention this feature in the character of the Scribes, omits also the incident of the mites, whilst Mc. and Lc. have both, and in the

same order of juxtaposition. The widow was πτωχή (Mc.), πενιχρά (Lc.); the latter word is a poetical form of πένης, which occasionally takes its place in late prose, e.g. Exod. xxii. 25 (יְמִינָה), Prov. xxviii. 15, xxix. 7 (לְמִינָה). Hatch (*Essays*, p. 73 ff.) argues that πτωχός and πένης, which are contrasted in class. Gk. (e.g. Ar. *Plut.* 552 πτωχοῦ μὲν γὰρ βίος...ζῆν ἐστιν μηδὲν ἔχοντα. τοῦ δὲ πένητος ζῆν φειδόμενον), are used in Biblical Gk. for "one and the same class...the peasantry or *fellahin*." But in the N.T. at least the πτωχός is distinctly the indigent and destitute man, the pauper rather than the peasant (x. 21, xiv. 5, 7, Lc. xvi. 20), and the extreme opposite of the πλούσιος (2 Cor. vi. 10, Jas. ii. 2 ff., Apoc. xiii. 16; cf. Trench, *syn. xxxvi.*, T. K. Abbott, *Essays*, p. 78). That such was the condition of this widow is clear from the sequel.

ἔβαλεν λεπτὰ δύο κτλ.] Vg. misit duo minuta quod est quadrans (Wycliffe, "tweye minutis"; Tindale, "two mytes"). The λεπτόν (cf. Xen. *Cyrop.* i. 4. 11 τὸ λεπτότατον τοῦ χαλκοῦ νομίσματος) was half a *quadrans* (i.e. the eighth part of an *as* or the  $\frac{1}{12}$ th part of a *denarius*), as Mc. explains for the benefit of his Roman readers. It was a Greek coin, the seventh of a χαλκοῦ (Suidas), and no smaller copper coin was in circulation; cf. Lc. xii. 59 τὸ ἔσχατον λεπτόν, where D and the O.L. versions substitute the more familiar *quadrans*. Mc.'s ὁ ἔστιν κοδράντης is an explanation for Western readers; κοδράντης occurs also in Mt. v. 26, but Mt. was "familiar as a tax-gatherer with the Roman system of accounting by the lowest denomination in the Roman scale" (A. R. S. Kennedy, in Hastings, *D.B.* iii. p. 428).

43 ὁ ἐστιν κοδράντης. <sup>43</sup>καὶ προσκαλεσάμενος τοὺς μαθητὰς αὐτοῦ εἶπεν αὐτοῖς Ἐμὴν λέγω ὑμῖν ὅτι ή χήρα αὕτη ή πτωχὴ πλείον πάντων ἔβαλεν τῶν 44 βαλλόντων εἰς τὸ γαζοφυλάκιον. <sup>44</sup>πάντες γὰρ ἐκ τοῦ περισσεύοντος αὐτοῖς ἔβαλον, αὕτη δὲ ἐκ τῆς ὑστερήσεως αὐτῆς πάντα ὄσα εἶχεν ἔβαλεν, ὅλον τὸν βίον αὐτῆς. ¶

¶ syr<sup>hier</sup> +3 εβαλεν №ABDLΔ 33 al<sup>nonn</sup> Or<sup>2</sup>] βεβληκεν EFGHKM<sup>mg</sup>SUVXΓΠΦ min<sup>pl</sup> | γαζοφυλακιον (-κειον EFGMVΨ)] + τα δωρα 604 44 περισσευοντος αυτοις] περισσευ- ματος αυτων U(Γ)Δ min<sup>ma</sup> | om ολον...αυτης syr<sup>sin</sup>

On the *quadrans* see Madden, *Jewish Coinage*, p. 244 f.; Hastings, *l.c.*; and *Exp. T. x.* pp. 185, 232, 286, 336. The point of the present story lies in the circumstance that the widow's last *quadrans* was in two coins, and that she parted with both. A Rabbinic rule seems to have prohibited the offering of a single λεπτόν: "ne ponat homo perutam (חטף, the Jewish equivalent) in cistam eleemosynes" (Wetstein). On ὁ ἐστιν see Blass, *Gr.* p. 77.

43. καὶ προσκαλεσάμενος κτλ.] The Twelve, who were perhaps conversing at a little distance, are beckoned to come near (cf. iii. 13, note); here was a lesson which they had overlooked and which He would teach them. How difficult a lesson it was for them to learn, and how important to their life, appears from the use of the solemn formula ἀμήν (Lc. ἀληθώς) λέγω ὑμῖν, on which see iii. 28, note. The lesson is taught, as usual, by an example—in the concrete, not in the abstract. Η χήρα αὕτη η πτωχή: the position of the adj. calls attention to her condition (WM, p. 168); pauper as she was, she had given more than the rich, more than all. Lc. here exchanges πενιχρά for πτωχή: see note on v. 42. Euth. εἰ καὶ πτωχὴ τοῖς χρήμασιν ἦν, ἀλλὰ πλουσίᾳ τῇ γνώμῃ καθίσταται (cf. Jas. ii. 5).

44. πάντες γὰρ ἐκ τοῦ περισσεύοντος κτλ.] Justification of the paradox πλείον πάντων ἔβαλεν. Τὸ περισσεῦον, the active equivalent of τὸ περίσσευμα (comp. Mt. xiv. 20 with Mc. viii. 8)—'that which aboundeth,' abundance, rather than 'that which is left over.' Superfluity is balanced by ὑστέρησις (Aq. in Job xxx. 3, Phil. iv. 11), used here instead of the commoner word ὑστέρημα, which is the opposite of περίσσευμα (2 Cor. viii. 14). The rich cast in (on the aor. see Blass, *Gr.* p. 193) πολλά, the widow πάντα. Relatively to their respective means the gift of the latter was incomparably the greatest. The principle is stated by St Paul, 2 Cor. viii. 12: εἰ γὰρ η προθυμία πρόκειται, καθ' ὃ ἔαν ἔχῃ εὐπρόσδεκτος, οὐ καθ' ὃ οὐκ ἔχει. Cf. Arist. eth. Nic. iv. 2 κατὰ τὴν οὐσίαν η ἐλευθερίτης λέγεται· οὐ γὰρ ἐν τῷ πλήθει τῶν διδομένων τὸ ἐλευθέριον, ἀλλ' ἐν τῇ τοῦ διδόντος ἔξει· αὕτη δὲ κατὰ τὴν οὐσίαν δίδωσιν· οὐδέν δὲ κωλύει ἐλευθεριώτερον εἶναι τὸν τὰ ἐλάττῳ διδόντα, ἔαν ἀπὸ ἐλαττόνων διδῷ. See other exx. in Wetstein of the recognition of this principle by Greek and Roman pagan writers. Ολον τὸν βίον αὐτῆς, all that she had to live upon until more should be earned. For βίος, *victus*, see Lc. xv. 12, 30, 1 Jo. iii. 17. The Lord not only noticed the widow's action, which needed nothing more than close observation,

<sup>1</sup> Καὶ ἐκπορευομένου αὐτοῦ ἐκ τοῦ ἱεροῦ λέγει Ι XIII.  
αὐτῷ εἰς τῶν μαθητῶν αὐτοῦ Διδάσκαλε, ἵδε ποτα-  
ποὶ λίθοι καὶ ποταπαὶ οἰκοδομαί. <sup>2</sup> §καὶ ὁ Ἰησοῦς 2 §ε  
εἶπεν αὐτῷ Βλέπεις ταύτας τὰς μεγάλας οἰκοδομάς;

XIII. 1 εκπορευομενων αυτων Ψ | εκ] απο Ψ | των μαθητων] pr εκ ΑΔΦΧΔ 1 13 28  
604 al<sup>nomn</sup> latt | om διδασκαλε Ψ | ποδαποι, -παι D\* | οικοδομαι]+τον iερον D b c ff k l q  
2 ο Ιησους] pr αποκριθεις A(D)(EFGH)Κ(ΜΣUVXF)(ΔΠ)Σ(Φ) 1071 al<sup>pl</sup> latt arm aeth |  
αυτω] αυτοις D min<sup>pau</sup> a b eff i k q om 1 118 | βλεπεις] βλεπετε DM<sup>mg</sup> min<sup>perpau</sup>  
a b c eff i k q pr ov 2<sup>ps</sup> b c ff i k\* βλεπε syr<sup>sin</sup>vid | ταυτας τας μεγ. οικοδ.] has omnes  
magnas aedificationes vg (cf. ff i q) ista magna et aedificia vestra e omnia illa magna  
k has omnes aedificationes arm hanc aedificationem syr<sup>sin</sup>

but knew the precise circumstances under which she gave the two λεπτά.

### XIII. 1—2. DESTRUCTION OF THE TEMPLE FORETOLD (Mt. xxiv. 1—2, Lc. xxi. 5—6).

1. ἐκπορευομένου αὐτοῦ ἐκ τ. ἱεροῦ] As He left the Precinct. Mt. somewhat otherwise, ἔξελθὼν ἀπὸ τοῦ ἱεροῦ ἐπορεύετο, i.e. He had left, and was on His way (to Bethany). According to Mt. His last remark before leaving had been Ἀφίεται ὑῶν δο οἴκος ύμῶν. The disciples inwardly deprecated such a sentence upon so majestic a pile; they began talking (Lc. τινῶν λεγόντων) of its magnificence, and one of them, the spokesman of the rest (Mt. οἱ μαθηταί, Mc. εἰς τῶν μαθητῶν), bade Him turn and look at the glory of the buildings (Mt. προσῆλθον ἐπιδεῖξαι, Mc. ἵδε); “ut flecterent eum ad misericordiam loci illius, ne faceret quod facere fuerat comminatus” (Origen). The conjecture may be hazarded that the speaker was Peter, as on some other notable occasions (viii. 29, 32, x. 28, xi. 21, xiii. 3, xiv. 29). But his name is not mentioned, since in this instance nothing turned upon his personality.

ἵδε ποταποὶ λίθοι κτλ.] On ἵδε as distinguished from ἰδού see ii. 24, iii. 34, notes. Ποταπός is late Gk. for ποδα- πός (Lob. *Phryn.*, p. 56, Rutherford,

*N. Phryn.*, p. 128 f.): the word does not occur in the LXX., but it is found in this form in Mt.<sup>1</sup>, Mc.<sup>1</sup>, Lc.<sup>2</sup>, Jo.<sup>eppl</sup><sup>1</sup>, 2 Pet.<sup>1</sup>, in a sense approaching to ποῖος (*Vg. qualis*), but with a distinct note of surprise which is wanting in the latter word. As to the stones of Herod's temple see Jos. *ant.* xv. II. 3 (ῳκοδομήθη ὁ ναὸς ἐκ λίθων μὲν λευκῶν τε καὶ καρτερῶν, τὸ μέγεθος ἐκάστων περὶ πέντε καὶ εἴκοσι πηχῶν ἐπὶ μῆκος, ὅκτω δὲ ὕψος, εὖρος δὲ περὶ δώδεκα), and for the buildings, *B.J.* v. 5. 1 ff., Edersheim, *Temple*, p. 20 ff. Οἰκοδομαὶ (Mt., Mc.) is perhaps preferred to οἰκοδομή, as representing the mass of separate edifices—enclosures, colonnades, halls, sanctuaries,—by which the platform of the ἱερον was occupied. The word οἰκοδομή is post-classical (Lob. *Phryn.*, p. 481 f.), answering sometimes to οἰκοδόμησις (e.g. Rom. xiv. 19, and so generally in St Paul's metaphorical use of the term), sometimes to οἰκοδόμημα (2 Cor. v. 1, Eph. ii. 21, where see Abbott's note). Lc. refers also to the costly offerings which the buildings contained (ἀναθήμασιν κεκόσμηται).

2. βλέπεις ταύτας τὰς μ. οἰκοδ. ;] ‘Art thou looking at these great edifices?’ i.e. do they fill and satisfy the eye, shutting out other objects of vision? Cf. Lc. ταῦτα ἀ θεωρεῖτε. Mt. misses the point by a change of phrase (οὐ βλέπετε...); The disciples are

οὐ μὴ ἀφεθῆ ὡδε λίθος ἐπὶ λίθον ὃς οὐ μὴ καταλυθῆ.

§ n 3      <sup>38</sup>Καὶ καθημένου αὐτοῦ εἰς τὸ ὄρος τῶν ἔλαιων κατέναντι τοῦ ἱεροῦ ἐπηρώτα αὐτὸν κατ' ἵδιαν Πέτρος

οὐ μη] pr αμην λεγω υμιν οτι D(G)Σ (1) (13) 28 (69) 604 (2<sup>pe</sup>) al<sup>nomn</sup> a b (c) eff i k1q arm | ωδε] om AEFHKM\*SVXΓΠ min<sup>pl</sup> ff i vg in templo e k Cypr | επι λιθω ADEFHKSVΣΦ min<sup>pl</sup> | ου μη καταλυθη [ου καταλυθησetai Ι\*Ι min<sup>pauc</sup>] +και δια τριων ημερων αλλος αναστησetai ανεν χειρων D lat<sup>texco</sup> Cypr 3 εις] επι Σ | επηρωτα ΝΒΛΨ 13 28 33 69 al<sup>pauc</sup> syr<sup>hel(mg)</sup>] επηρωτων ADXΓΔΠΣΦ min<sup>pl</sup> latt syrr<sup>sin pesh hel</sup>(txt) arm the aeth | ο Πετρος ΝΔ 2<sup>pe</sup> (al<sup>pauc</sup>)

warned that the pride which as Jews they naturally felt in this grand spectacle was doomed to complete humiliation.

οὐ μὴ ἀφεθῆ κτλ.] Mt. introduces this saying with the solemn ἀμήν λέγω ὑμῖν, but Mc.'s repeated οὐ μή (Burton, § 487) is scarcely less emphatic. For the fulfilment see Jos. B. J. vii. 1. 1 κελεύει Καΐσαρ ἥδη τὴν πόλιν ἀπασαν καὶ τὸν νεὼν κατασκάπτειν. It is the more remarkable because Titus made every effort to check the conflagration (Jos. B. J. vi. 4. 6 ff.); it was only when this was found to be impossible that he permitted the work of destruction to be completed (*ib.* 5. 2). Thph. mentions that some in his day asserted that the old walls had not been completely demolished (καὶ μήν φασι τινες ὡς πολλὰ λείψαντα τῆς Ἱερονταλῆμ τῆς παλαιᾶς πόλεως), and the great bevelled stones still to be seen *in situ* at the S.E. corner of the Haram wall, and near Robinson's Arch, attest the fact; for particulars reference may be made to Hastings, *D. B.* ii. p. 596 ff. But while a part of the substructions remains, the buildings on the platform of the *ἱερόν*, to which the Lord referred, are wholly gone; not a stone there is left in its place. Ἐπὶ λίθον: so also Mt., Lc. The idea of motion which the acc. suggests (WM., p. 507 f.) is faintly present in οὐ μὴ ἀφεθῆ. See on the other hand Blass, *Gr.* p. 132. Ὡς οὐ μὴ καταλυθῆ, Mt.

ὅς οὐ καταλυθήσεται. The story subsequently circulated by the ἀρχιερεῖς (xiv. 58, xv. 29, Acts vi. 14), that Jesus had undertaken Himself to destroy the Temple, may have arisen partly from the saying of Jo. ii. 19, but perhaps also from a misconception of the present saying, which may have been reported to them by Judas. On the remarkable addition in D and the O.L. authorities, see WH., *Notes*, p. 26; it is apparently suggested by xiv. 58 (cf. Jo. ii. 19).

3—13. THE QUESTION OF THE FOUR, AND THE FIRST PART OF THE PROPHETIC ANSWER (Mt. xxiv. 3—14, Lc. xxi. 8—19).

3. καὶ καθημένου αὐτοῦ κτλ.] The very posture in which the Lord delivered His great prophecy was remembered and found a place in the earliest tradition (Mt., Mc.). He had crossed the Kedron, ascended the steep road over the Mt of Olives which led to Bethany, and was already resting and seated, when He was approached, not now by a solitary disciple (*n.* 1), but by four—the first two pairs among the Twelve, as Mc. alone appears to know (Mt. οἱ μαθηται)—the other eight, who had possibly deputed the Four to act for them, remaining at a distance (κατ' ἵδιαν). On the order of the Four see iii. 17, note, and cf. ix. 2; as on other occasions Peter is foremost—probably the spokesman (ἐπηρώτα αὐτὸν...Πέτρος). Καθημένου reminds us of the

καὶ Ἰάκωβος καὶ Ἰωάνης καὶ Ἀνδρέας<sup>¶</sup> ἐπὸν ἡμῖν 4 Τε πότε ταῦτα ἔσται, καὶ τί τὸ σημεῖον ὅταν μέλλῃ ταῦτα συντελεῖσθαι πάντα. 5 δὲ Ἰησοῦς ἤρξατο 5

3 Ιωαν. καὶ Ιακ. Ο 28 69 124 346 435 4 εἰπε ΑΧΓΔΠΣΦ min<sup>pl</sup> | om πάντα Δ 13 2<sup>po</sup> alpaue k 5 ο δε I.] + αποκριθεις A(DG)ΧΓΔΠΣΦ (13 28 69 124 604 2<sup>po</sup> alpaue latt arm) | ηρξατο λεγειν ειπεν D 2<sup>po</sup> alpaue a k n syr<sup>sin</sup> arm

Sermon on the Mount (Mt. v. 1); both the opening Instruction and the concluding Prophecy were delivered *ex cathedra*; a hill-side in each case supplied the Teacher's chair. The first discourse had set forth the principles of the new Kingdom; the last deals with its ultimate issues. Only Mc. adds that the prophecy was delivered in full view of the Precinct (κατέναντι τοῦ ἱεροῦ, cf. xii. 41). On καθ. εἰς see WM., p. 516).

4. εἰπὸν ἡμῖν κτλ.] The question is twofold, (a) as to the time when (πότε) the Temple is to perish, (b) as to the signal (τὸ σημεῖον) for its approach. Mt. expands ὅταν μέλλῃ ταῦτα συντ. πάντα (ὅ. μ. τ. γίνεσθαι, Lc.) into τῆς σῆς παροντίας καὶ συντελείας τοῦ αἰώνος, a phrase of much interest, since it reveals the principle on which the Apostolic Church after the fall of Jerusalem interpreted the following prophecy. Later opinion was much divided, cf. Victor: οἱ μὲν γὰρ περὶ τῆς συντελείας τοῦ αἰώνος εἰρήσθαι ταῦτα ὑπολαμβάνοντιν, οἱ δὲ περὶ τῆς ἐρημώσεως τῆς Ἱερουσαλήμ· καὶ τῆς μὲν προτέρας δόξης Ἀπολιωάριος καὶ Θεύδωρος ὁ Μονήσιος, τῆς δὲ δευτέρας Τίτος καὶ ὁ ἐν ἀγίοις Ἰωάνης ὁ τῆς βασιλίδος ἐπίσκοπος. The term συντέλεια (cf. Dalman, *Worte*, i. p. 126 f.) is apparently suggested by συντελεῖσθαι (Mc.), but both συντέλεια and παροντία are words peculiar to Mt. among the Synoptists (παρ., Mt. xxiv. 3, 27, 37, 39; συντ., Mt. xiii. 39, 40, 49, xxiv. 3, xxviii. 20). Συντέλεια and συντελεῖν, -λεῖσθαι, used in classical Greek chiefly in reference to contributions to the public service (so

even in the late Fayûm papyrus, Grenfell-Hunt-Hogarth, p. 120), and in later Greek also of finishing off a piece of work, are of frequent occurrence in all parts of the LXX., where they generally answer to חל and its derivatives; for συντελεῖν, συντελεῖσθαι in the N.T. cf. Lc. iv. 2, 13, Jo. ii. 3, Acts xxi. 27. Τὸ σημεῖον is common to the three accounts; a single sign seems to have been expected, probably one of portentous character.

5. δὲ Ἰησοῦς ἤρξατο λεγειν] The great Prophecy begins (Bengel: “ἤρξατο: antea non erat multum locutus his de rebus”). The Lord deals first with the second part of the question (τί τὸ σημεῖον). But the answer (ἀποκριθεὶς εἶπεν, Mt.) is not such as they expect; no one sign is mentioned, and the tone of the prediction is wholly practical.

Many recent critics hold that portions of the discourse which follows (vv. 7—8, 14—20, 24—27, possibly also 30—31) belong to a Jewish-Christian apocalypse whose *disiecta membra* were incorporated by the Synoptists or their source. This opinion is based on the belief that the excision of the verses in question restores unity to the context and removes ideas alien from the teaching of Christ. But in the entire absence of documentary evidence it scarcely calls for serious consideration here. The arguments urged in support of it may be seen in Charles, *Eschatology*, p. 325 ff.; Moffatt, *Historical N. T.*, p. 637 ff.; Schmiedel, art. *Gospels* in *Encycl. Bibl.* ii. (col. 1857).

λέγειν αὐτοῖς Βλέπετε μή τις ὑμᾶς πλανήσῃ.  
6 πολλοὶ ἐλεύσονται ἐπὶ τῷ ὄνόματί μου λέγοντες ὅτι  
7 Ἐγώ εἰμι, καὶ πολλοὺς πλανήσουσιν. ὅταν δὲ  
ἀκούσητε πολέμους καὶ ἀκοὰς πολέμων, μὴ θροεῖσθε·

5 μη τις] μηδεις Σ | πλανησει DHTΨ al<sup>nonn</sup>  
min<sup>omnivd</sup> latt syrr arm aegg | επι τω ονοματι μου] + pseudiprofetae (sic) k | om οτι  
D 33 6ο4 al<sup>pau</sup> b c ff k q | ειμι] + o χ̄ς i3 28 69 124 346 6ο4 1071 al<sup>pau</sup> b c l arm aeth  
7 ακουητε B | μη] pr ορατε Ν\* c.b(vid) 6ο4 8ρο | μη θροεισθε] μη θορυβεισθε D min<sup>pau</sup>  
nolite turbari an nolite timere vel ne timuistis b c d ff g i k l g vg

6 πολλοι]+γαρ ADXΓΔΠΣΦ

βλέπετε μή τις ὑμᾶς πλανήσῃ] Mt., Mc.; βλ. μὴ πλανηθῆτε, Lc. Cf. βλέ-  
πειν ἀπό, viii. 15, xii. 38; βλ. μή occurs again in 1 Cor. viii. 9, Gal. v. 15, Col. ii. 8, Heb. iii. 12 (with fut.), xii. 25. For πλανᾶν, πλανᾶσθαι, in reference to religious error, see xii. 24, 27, Jo. vii. 12, 47, 1 Jo. ii. 26, 2 Tim. iii. 13, Apoc. ii. 20, xii. 9; cf. the use of πλάνη, Eph. iv. 14, 2 Thess. ii. 11, 1 Jo. iv. 6, and of πλάνος in 2 Jo. 7. This warning against impostors is not inconsistent with the promise of the Spirit of truth (Jo. xvi. 13), for the Divine Spirit is not irresistible, and the spirit of error (1 Jo. iv. 6) may be the stronger in individual cases.

6. πολλοὶ ἐλεύσονται κτλ.] See v. 21 ff., notes. One such impostor is described in Acts viii. 9 Σίμων...λέγων εἶναι τινα ἁντὸν μέγαν, φῶ προσείχον πάντες ἀπὸ μικροῦ ἕως μεγάλου λέγοντες Οὐτός ἐστιν ἡ δύναμις τοῦ θεοῦ ἡ καλουμένη μεγάλη. Josephus speaks of another, ant. xx. 5. I: γόνης τις ἀνὴρ Θευδᾶς ὄνομα πείθει τὸν πλείστον ὅχλον...προφήτης γὰρ ἐλεγεν εἶναι. Cf. B.J. ii. 13. 4 πλάνοι γὰρ ἄνθρωποι καὶ ἀπατεώνεις προσχήματι θειασμοῦ νεωτερισμοὺς καὶ μεταβολὰς πραγματεύμενοι δαιμονᾶν τὸ πλῆθος ἔπειθον καὶ προήγον εἰς τὴν ἐρημίαν ὡς ἔκει τοῦ θεοῦ δείξοντος αὐτοῖς σημεῖα ἐλευθερίας. Such impostors came ἐπὶ τῷ ὄνόματι [τοῦ χριστοῦ], holding out a false Messianic hope, claiming powers which belonged to the true Christ, even if they did not assume the title.

The vague boast ἐγώ εἰμι (Soph. ii. 15) becomes in Mt. ἐγώ εἰμι ὁ χριστός, but of an actual usurpation of the name we hear nothing before Bar-cochba. For the phrase ἐπὶ τῷ ὄν. μου see ix. 39 note; for ἐγώ εἰμι in a Messianic sense, comp. note on vi. 50.

7. ὅταν δὲ ἀκούσητε κτλ.] A second warning. The Apostles are not to permit the political troubles which would surely precede the end to distract them from their proper work. Πολέμους καὶ ἀκοὰς-πολέμων, wars in actual progress, or commonly expected and on all men's tongues; unless ἀκοὰς πολέμων is simply a doublet, added to explain the difficult ἀκούειν πολέμους. For ἀκοή see i. 28 note; and for the pl. in this sense cf. Dan. xi. 44 Τ. ἀκοαὶ...ταράξουσιν αὐτόν: ἀκούειν ἀκοήν or ἀκοὰς is a LXX. phrase, occurring e.g. i Regn. ii. 24. Lc., who omits κ. ἀκοὰς πολ., adds καὶ ἀκαταστασίας, interpreting the words in the light of events. The reference is primarily, no doubt, to the disturbed state of Palestine during the interval between the Ascension and the fall of the City; we may think e.g. of the expedition of Cuspius Fadus against Theudas and of Felix against the Egyptian Jew; the riots at Jerusalem under Agrippa II.; the early movements of the last struggle which began in A.D. 66. To the early Jewish Church, which is immediately in view, the suspense which these and other outbreaks occasioned must have been unsettling and disquieting. St Paul

δεῖ γενέσθαι, ἀλλ' οὐπω τὸ τέλος. <sup>8</sup>ἐγερθήσεται 8  
γὰρ ἔθνος ἐπ' ἔθνος καὶ βασιλεία ἐπὶ βασιλείαν,

7 δει Η<sup>η</sup>ΒΨ aegg]+γαρ Η<sup>η</sup>ADLΧΓΔΠΣΦ min<sup>omnvid</sup> latt syrr 8 εγερθησetai]  
αναστησetai 604

uses the same word in deprecating the restlessness which was occasioned in a Gentile Church by the expectation of a speedy *parousia* (2 Thess. ii. 2 εἰς τὸ μὴ ταχέως σαλευθῆναι ὑμᾶς ...μηδὲ θροεῖσθαι), and the warning is doubtless necessary at all seasons of feverish unrest. Θροεῖν, in class. Gk. ‘to raise an outcry,’ is used in Biblical Gk. in the pass. only, of the alarm occasioned by a sudden cry, or of mental uneasiness in general; cf. Cant. v. 4 ή κοιλία μον ἐθροήθη ἐπ' αὐτόν, 2 Thess. ii. 2 εἰς τὸ μὴ ταχέως... θροεῖσθαι...ώς ὅτι ἐνέστηκεν ἡ ἡμέρα τοῦ κυρίου: and see Kennedy, *Sources*, p. 126. Θορυβεῖσθε is substituted here by the ‘Western’ text, and Lc. has πτοηθῆτε.

δεῖ γενέσθαι, ἀλλ' οὐπω τὸ τέλος] Mt. δεῖ γὰρ γενέσθαι ἀλλ' οὐπω ἐστὶν τὸ τ., Lc. δεῖ γὰρ ταῦτα γ. πρῶτον ἀλλ' οὐκ εὐθέως τὸ τ. The epigrammatic brevity of Mc. (Tisch. on v. 6, “abiectis coniunctionibus scribere adamat”) is specially striking in this context; cf. v. 6 πολλοὶ ἐλεύσονται (Mt., Lc. π. γὰρ ἐλ.); v. 8 ἐσονται σεισμοὶ...ζσ. λιμοὶ· ἀρχή κτλ. (Mt. καὶ ζσ. λ. κ. σ., πάντα δὲ ταῦτα ἀρχή, Lc. σεισμοὶ τε...καὶ...λιμοὶ ἐσονται). For δεῖ, ‘such is the Divine purpose,’ cf. viii. 31, ix. 11, xiii. 10, xiv. 31; the phrase δεῖ γενέσθαι is from the O.T. (Dan. ii. 28). Τὸ τέλος looks back to συντελεῖσθαι, and may therefore be presumed to refer primarily to Jerusalem. But a more distant end may also be in view; cf. I Cor. xv. 24 ἐν τῇ παρουσίᾳ αὐτοῦ· εἴτα τὸ τέλος, I Pet. iv. 7 πάντων δὲ τὸ τέλος ζγγικεν.

8. ἐγερθήσεται γὰρ ἔθνος κτλ.] Nations will rush into warfare from causes partly racial, partly political.

Cf. Isa. xix. 2 ἐπεγερθήσονται Αἰγύπτιοι ἐπ' Αἰγυπτίους...πόλις ἐπὶ πόλιν καὶ νομὸς ἐπὶ νομόν: *supra*, iii. 14 ἐὰν βασιλεία ἐφ' ἑαυτὴν μερισθῇ. Other disquieting events will mark the times —σεισμοί, λιμοί, and λοιμοί (Lc.), unless λοιμοί is a primitive error due to the confusion of λιμός and λοιμός in the source (cf. 3 Regn. viii. 37, Ezech. xxxvi. 29, vv.ll.); Field’s remark (*Notes*, p. 37) that λιμοί and λοιμοί have been connected ever since Hesiod, *op.* 242, loses its force if we assume an Aramaic original. On the addition καὶ ταραχαί see WH., *Notes*, p. 26. The commentators point out that such troubles were frequent during the period A.D. 30—70 (cf. e.g. Alford on Mt. xxiv. 7); the famine of A.D. 44 (45—46, Ramsay) is familiar to us from Acts xi. 28, and earthquakes are reported to have taken place κατὰ τόπους—in Crete and Asia Minor, and at Rome and in Italy: in Lc. κατὰ τόπους is connected with λοιμοί, but see above. Such disasters are frequently foretold by the O.T. prophets as marks of Divine visitation (e.g. Isa. viii. 21, xiii. 13, xiv. 30, xxiv. 18—20, Jer. xxiii. 19, Ezek. v. 12; cf. Apoc. vi. 8, xi. 13, xvi. 18, xviii. 8, Enoch i. 6, 4 Esdr. xvi. 36—40); they belong to the imagery of an apocalyptic passage, and while it is interesting to notice particular fulfilments in the Apostolic age, the wider reference is not to be left out of sight. Each age brings public troubles which excite disquietude, and may at times suggest the near approach of the end. Yet the end is not reached by such vicissitudes; they are but the beginning—the ἀρχή, and not the τέλος, as men may be led to suppose. “Talis et tanta creatura

τῷ 9 ὡδίνων ταῦτα. <sup>9</sup>βλέπετε δὲ ὑμεῖς ἔαυτούς παράδώσουσιν ὑμᾶς εἰς συνέδρια καὶ εἰς συναγωγὰς δαρή-

8 εσονται 1<sup>ο</sup>] pr και ΑΧΓΔΠΣΦ min<sup>pl</sup> (latt) syrr arm the aeth | εσονται 2<sup>ο</sup> Ν(\*)<sup>c,a</sup>  
 BLΨ 28 me] και D 2<sup>ο</sup> lat<sup>v1 v1 vg</sup> pr και ΑΧΓΔΠΣΦ min<sup>pl</sup> q syrr<sup>pesh hel</sup> the aeth om εσ-  
 syr<sup>sin</sup> arm | λιμοὶ + και ταραχαι ΑΧΓΠΦ min<sup>omn vid</sup> q syrr the Or<sup>int</sup> + και λοιμοι και ταρ-  
 Σ arm | om αρχη ωδ. ταῦτα Φ c | αρχαι AEFGHMS<sup>2</sup>VXTGΠ<sup>2</sup>Σ min<sup>pl</sup> | ταῦτα]<sup>+</sup> παντα  
 1071 (cf. 13 28 69 124 299 346 2<sup>ο</sup> ag n) 9 om βλεπετε...εαυτούς D 1 28 91 124  
 604 2<sup>ο</sup> aff in syr<sup>sin</sup> arm | παραδώσουσιν υμας] π. γαρ ιμ. ΝΑΧΓΔΠΣΦ min<sup>pl</sup> q vg  
 syrr<sup>pesh hel</sup> the και π. ιμ. 1 28 124 299 syr<sup>sin</sup> arm ειτα ιμ. αυτούς παραδ. D 604 2<sup>ο</sup>  
 a ff i k n | εις συναγωγας] εν ταις συναγωγαις (+αυτων) min<sup>mu</sup> (a ff k n q vg)

mundi...necessere est ante corruptionem  
ut langueat" (Origen).

ἀρχὴ ὡδίνων ταῦτα] ὥδιν is used of the sharp pangs of childbirth (Ps. xlviij. (xlviii.) 7 ἐκεὶ ὡδίνες ὡς τικτούσης, 1 Thess. v. 3 ὥσπερ ἡ ὡδὸν τῇ ἐν γαστρὶ ἔχούσῃ), or of death (Ps. xvii. (xviii.) 5, 6 ὥδίνες θανάτου, ἄδον, Acts ii. 24). Either may be thought of here: these things are the first death-throes of the old order, or the first birth-pangs of the new; but the hopefulness of Christian eschatology is in favour of the second thought being at least the more prominent; cf. Jo. xvi. 21, Rom. viii. 22, and the doctrine of the παλιν-γενεσία (Mt. xix. 28), and the ἀποκατάστασις πάντων (Acts iii. 21, 2 Pet. iii. 12 ff.). Moreover there may possibly be a reference to the Rabbinic expectation of the בְּשִׁׁירַת־לְבָדָק (J. Lightfoot ad l.; and see esp. Schürer, II. ii. p. 154 f., Weber, p. 350 f.), or rather perhaps to the O.T. language which suggested it.

9. βλέπετε δὲ ὑμεῖς ἔαυτούς] 'Look ye to yourselves,' think not only of what is coming on the nation and on the world (Bengel: "cetera nolite curare, tantum vos ipsos spectate"). The late and rare βλέπειν ἔαυτόν occurs again in 2 Jo. 8, where it is followed by ἵνα μή—here it is used absolutely, with the added force which brevity gives; Mt., who places the rest of this verse in the original charge to the Twelve (x. 17), paraphrases προσέ-

χετε δὲ ἀπὸ τῶν ἀνθρώπων. Lc. adds that the troubles will overtake the Christian community first (πρὸ τούτων πάντων); cf. 1 Pet. iv. 17 ὁ καιρὸς τοῦ ἀρξασθαι τὸ κρίμα ἀπὸ τοῦ οἴκου τοῦ θεοῦ.

παραδώσουσιν ὑμᾶς κτλ.] Their earliest sufferings would come from their own countrymen, and from the representatives of religion; 'men will hand you over to the Sanhedrins, and flog you in the synagogues.' Who the παραδοταί will be appears below v. 12. Συνέδρια...συναγωγάς: the former term includes both the Great Sanhedrin of Jerusalem (cf. Acts iv. 15, v. 21 ff., vi. 12 ff., xxii. 30, xxiii. 1 ff.), and the local courts of discipline described by Josephus (*ant. iv. 8. 14*), i.e. the elders of the synagogues assembled for the purpose of exercising disciplinary powers; see Hatch, *Organization*, p. 58. Lc.'s briefer παραδόντες εἰς τὰς συναγωγάς is correct, for the local court was attached to the synagogue, and its sentences were carried out in it (Acts ix. 2); the Lord foresees that His Apostles and disciples will be taken from the courts into the synagogues and there openly scourged—εἰς συναγωγάς δαρήσεσθε, a pregnant construction, cf. Mt. (x. 17) ἐν ταῖς συναγωγαῖς αὐτῶν μαστιγώσουσιν ὑμᾶς. On δαρήσεσθε see xii. 3, 5 (to which passage the Lord possibly refers), and cf. Acts v. 40. St Paul, who

**σεσθε, καὶ ἐπὶ ιῆγεμόνων καὶ βασιλέων σταθήσεσθε ἔνεκεν ἐμοῦ εἰς μαρτύριον αὐτοῖς.** <sup>τοῦ</sup> **καὶ εἰς πάντα τὰ ΙΟ**

9 καὶ επι βασ. σταθ. καὶ δαρ. επι γγ. syr<sup>sin</sup> | δαρησεσθε] pr καὶ 604 | ηγεμονας κ. βασιλεις 1071 | ηγεμονων] + δε ΑΚΓΠΙΨ 736 al<sup>nonn</sup> | σταθησεσθε] αχθησεσθε GU 1 13 33 al<sup>nonn</sup> the | ενεκα B

before his conversion had inflicted this punishment on Christians, underwent it himself five times (2 Cor. xi. 24, where see Schöttgen).

**καὶ ἐπὶ ιῆγεμόνων καὶ βασιλέων σταθήσεσθε]** The secular power would follow the example set by the Synagogue. ‘Ye shall be placed before high officials and kings.’ In the N.T. the ιῆγεμών is especially the Procurator of Judaea (Mt. xxvii. 2 παρέδωκαν Πειλάτῳ τῷ ιῆγεμόνι, Acts xxiii. 24 πρὸς Φήλικα τὸν ιῆγεμόνα). But the word, as contrasted with βασιλεύς, may be used of any subordinate governors; cf. 1 Pet. ii. 14 εἴτε βασιλεῖ ὡς ὑπερέχοντι, εἴτε ιῆγεμόσιν ὡς δι’ αὐτοῦ πεμπομένοις, where the Imperator and the provincial representatives of Rome, whether proconsuls, propraetors, legates, or procurators, are clearly intended; cf. Acts xvi. 20 ff., xviii. 12 ff. ‘Ἐπὶ...βασιλέων σταθ. becomes in Mt. ἐπὶ...βασιλεῖς ἀχθήσεσθε, cf. Lc. ἀπαγομένους ἐπὶ βασιλεῖς, i.e. Mt. and Lc. represent the persecuted disciples as on their way to the court, whereas in Mc. they are already there, standing before the judge. For this use of ιστασθαι comp. Mt. xxvii. 11, Acts xxiv. 20, xxv. 10. “Ενεκεν ἐμοῦ, Lc. ἔνεκεν τοῦ ὄνομάτος μου: cf. viii. 35, x. 29 ἔνεκεν ἐμοῦ καὶ [ἔνεκεν] τοῦ εὐαγγελίου, 1 Pet. iv. 16 ὡς Χριστιανός.

**εἰς μαρτύριον αὐτοῖς]** See notes on i. 44, vi. 11; the phrase occurs only in the Synoptics and in Jas. v. 3. Lc. gives here quite another turn to the clause—ἀποβήσεται ίμιν εἰς μαρτύριον, i.e. he seems to have had before him εἰς μαρτ. ίμιν. As it is presented by Mc. and Mt., the sense is that the appearance of Christians before the magistrates on a charge of loyalty to

the Name of Christ would be in itself a proclamation of the Name to those who from their social position might otherwise have failed to hear it. Mt. adds καὶ τοῖς ἔθνεσιν: the Gospel would in this way make its way into Gentile society, cf. 2 Tim. iv. 16 f.

**10. καὶ εἰς πάντα τὰ ἔθνη κτλ.]** The Lord foresees the extension of the Gospel to the whole Gentile world by the direct preaching of the word; there was a Divine necessity (δεῖ, cf. v. 7) that this should take place before the end came (πρῶτον, Mt. καὶ τότε ιξει τὸ τέλος). Cf. xi. 17, xvi. 15, Mt. xxv. 32, xxviii. 19, Lc. xxiv. 47. The work which began in Galilee with the personal Ministry of the Lord (i. 14 ἥλθεν...κηρύσσων τὸ εὐαγγέλιον, cf. Heb. ii. 3 ἀρχὴν λαβούσα λαλεῖσθαι διὰ τοῦ κυρίου) was to be carried forward by the Apostolic ministry to the ever-expanding confines of the habitable world (Mt. ἐν διῃ τῇ οἰκουμένῃ); and the execution of this purpose was perhaps the chief condition of the final issue being reached. The disclosure of this fact could not but be stimulating to the early preachers of the Gospel; they felt that it was in some sense within their power to hasten the end by extending the kingdom (2 Pet. iii. 12 σπεύδοντας τὴν παρονοίαν). Origen’s remark here is interesting: “nondum est praedicatum evangelium regni in toto orbe; non enim fertur praedicatum esse evangelium apud omnes Aethiopias...sed nec apud Seras nec apud Orientem audierunt Christianitatis sermonem. quid autem dicamus de Britannis aut Germanis?...quorum plurimi nondum audierunt evangelii verbum, audituri sunt autem in ipsa

¶ 33 ΙΙ ἔθνη πρῶτον δεῖ κηρυχθῆναι τὸ εὐαγγέλιον. ἐπὶ καὶ ὅταν ἄγωσιν ὑμᾶς παραδιδόντες, μὴ προμεριμνᾶτε τί λαλήσητε, ἀλλ' ὃ ἐὰν δοθῆ ὑμῖν ἐν ἐκείνῃ τῇ ᾧρᾳ, τοῦτο λαλεῖτε· οὐ γάρ ἔστε ὑμεῖς οἱ λαλοῦντες

ιο πρωτον]+δε min<sup>pause</sup> ad ff(k) arm the+γαρ syr<sup>sin</sup> | το ευαγγελιον]+εν πασιν τοις εθνεσιν D ff      ΙΙ και οταν] οταν δε ΑΧΓΔΠΣΦ min<sup>pl</sup> ff q syrr arm | προμεριμνατε] μεριμνατε ΜΓ 33 al<sup>nomn</sup> προμεριμνησηται ιο7ι προσμελετατε Ψ | τι λαλησητε (-σετε U al<sup>nonnn</sup>)] pr πως η 13 69 124 346 pr μηδε προμελετατε 604 (Or) pr μελετατε (vel προμελ.) (28) 299 433 604 (2<sup>pe</sup>) arm (Or) + μηδε μελετατε ΑΧΓΔΠΦ min<sup>pl</sup> syrr<sup>peshel</sup> (om ΝBDLΨ 1 33 69 al<sup>pause</sup> cff i k q vg syr<sup>sin</sup> aegg aeth)

saeculi consummatione.” For another condition cf. 2 Thess. ii. 3 ἐὰν μὴ ἔλθῃ ἡ ἀποστασία πρῶτον.

ΙΙ. καὶ ὅταν ἄγωσιν ὑμᾶς κτλ.] Verses 11—13 are placed by Mt. in the original charge to the Twelve (Mt. x. 19—22, cf. v. 9), but traces of them occur also in Mt. xxiv. (9, 13); Lc. also has reminiscences of this teaching in an earlier chapter (Lc. xii. 11 f.) as well as in the present context. Such counsels may well have been repeated.

The Lord returns to the personal trials awaiting the disciples. First of these was the fear with which inexperienced provincials would anticipate an appearance before a Roman judge, whether Proconsul or Imperator; on their way to the court (ὅταν ἄγωσιν), besides the bitter sense of being betrayed by friends and relations (*παραδιδόντες*, cf. v. 12), they would be distracted by anxiety as to their defence. The Lord provides against this: ‘the Holy Spirit will be your παράλητος, and speak by your mouths.’ Μὴ προμεριμνᾶτε: ‘be not anxious beforehand’; προμεριμνᾶν is ἀπ. λεγ. in the N. T. and perhaps in writers earlier than the close of the canon; Mt. has μεριμνᾶν, Lc. the classical προμελετᾶν, ‘to prepare a speech.’ Τί λαλήσητε: Mt. πῶς η τί λ.—neither the matter nor the words need be considered; for the construction cf. vi. 36, ix. 6 (WM., p. 373). “Ο ἐὰν δοθῇ...λαλεῖτε, Burton

§ 303. The whole passage resembles the promise to Moses, Exod. iv. 11 ff. τίς ἔδωκεν στόμα ἀνθρώπῳ; συμβιβάσω σε ὃ μέλλεις λαλῆσαι κτλ.; in Lc. this allusion to Exod. is yet more apparent (ἔγὼ γάρ δώσω ὑμῖν στόμα κτλ.). It must be borne in mind that both the command to speak ἐκ τοῦ αὐτοσχεδίου and the promise of Divine assistance in doing so are limited to an occasion when effective premeditation would be impossible.

οὐ γάρ ἔστε ὑμ. οἱ λαλοῦντες κτλ.] Wycliffe: “for ze ben not spekinge (or, the spekeris) but the Hooly Gost.” The Holy Spirit would speak for them and by their lips. For τὸ πν. τὸ ἄγ. see iii. 29, note. Mt. has τὸ πν. τοῦ πατρὸς ὑμῶν, in Lc. (see last note) the Lord represents Himself as the source of the inspiration—a noteworthy variation, with which compare Jo. xiv. 26, xv. 26. The whole passage anticipates the promise of the “other Paraclete” (Jo. xiv. 16). Mt. completes the sentence ἀλλὰ τὸ πνεῦμα...τὸ λαλοῦν ἐν ὑμῖν: compare St Paul’s doctrine of the Spirit’s agency in prayer (Rom. viii. 15, 26, Gal. iv. 6). The present passage cannot properly be used to support a theory of verbal inspiration either in the speeches or the writings of the apostolic age; the Holy Spirit does not, like the evil spirits (cf. v. 6 ff.), so identify Himself with the inspired as to destroy or even to suspend their responsibility or individuality.

ἀλλὰ τὸ πνεῦμα τὸ ἄγιον. <sup>12</sup>καὶ παραδώσει ἀδελφὸς 12  
ἀδελφὸν εἰς θάνατον καὶ πατὴρ τέκνου, καὶ ἐπανα-  
στήσονται τέκνα ἐπὶ γονεῖς καὶ θανατώσουσιν αὐτούς.  
<sup>13</sup>καὶ ἔσεσθε μισούμενοι ὑπὸ πάντων διὰ τὸ ὄνομά 13  
μονοῦ ὁ δὲ ὑπομείνας εἰς τέλος, οὗτος σωθήσεται.

<sup>12 καὶ παραδ.</sup>] παραδ. δε ΑΧΓΔΙΣΦ min fore omn ff i q vg syrr besh hcl aeth Or παραδ.  
γαρ syr<sup>sin</sup> | om καὶ πατὴρ τεκνον 1071 | επαναστησεται B

12. καὶ παραδώσει κτλ.] The note already struck in vv. 9, 11 is taken up again. The thought of treachery on the part of friends must have been uppermost in the Lord's mind; He was speaking in the presence of a traitor who had been a friend. What had befallen Himself must befall His followers. The sentence is moulded on Mic. vii. 6 *νίδος ἀτιμάζει πατέρα, θυγατὴρ ἐπαναστήσεται ἐπὶ τὴν μητέρα αὐτῆς.* Else *θάνατον, θανατώσουσιν*—the penalty of confessing Christ would be more than stripes (v. 9); the Sanhedrins might be content with these, but the civil rulers would inflict death. *Ἐπαναστήσονται*, used properly of insurgents (e.g. Dan. xi. 2, 14), but in the LXX. of revolt against any constituted authority. *Θανατώσουσιν* (so all the Synoptists here), 'shall be the cause of death' (Rheims, "shall worke their death"), rather than *ἀποκτενοῦσιν*, 'shall put them to death.' Lc. guards the sentence further by substituting *ἔξ ίμῶν* for *αὐτούς*: not all would win the crown of martyrdom. One had been already marked out for it in the Lord's foreknowledge (x. 39, cf. Acts xii. 1); another was about to be forewarned of his end yet more distinctly (Jo. xxi. 18, cf. 2 Pet. i. 14).

13. καὶ ἔσεσθε μισούμενοι κτλ.] This clause is given in identical words by the three Synoptists; it must have early passed into a commonplace among Greek-speaking Christians. No fact in the early history of the Church is more certain or more sur-

prising than that which the Lord here foretells. It is explained by Tacitus as due to a suspicion of criminality (*ann. xv. 44*, "per flagitia invisos... Christianos"), but the mere name was enough to provoke it (Justin, *apol.* i. 4 *ἔφη ζῷῶν τὸ ὄνομα ὡς ἔλεγχον λαμβάνετε*; Tert. *apol.* 2 "id solum expectatur quod odio publico necessarium est, confessio nominis"). It was in fact the name of Christ Himself (*διὰ τὸ ὄνομα μονοῦ*) which repelled the unbelieving majority (cf. Jo. iii. 20, vii. 7, xv. 23 ff.), and in this thought there was infinite comfort for the persecuted; cf. 1 Pet. iv. 14, Polyc. *Phil.* 8 *ἔπειτα πάσχωμεν διὰ τὸ ὄνομα αὐτοῦ, δοξάζωμεν αὐτόν*, and Thphht. *ad l.* τὸ γὰρ ἔνεκεν αὐτοῦ μισεῖσθαι ικανόν ἔστω πάσας ἐπικονφίσαι τὰς συμφοράς. On the causes of the unpopularity of the early Church see Ramsay, *Ch. in the Empire*, p. 346 ff., and cf. Origen in *Mt.*: "cum haec ergo contigerint mundo [the disorders foretold in vv. 7, 8] consequens est quasi dereliquentibus hominibus deorum culturam ut propter multitudinem Christianorum dicant fieri bella et fames et pestilentias." *Ἐσεσθε μισούμενοι* is not an exact equivalent of *μισηθήσεσθε*, but carries "the thought of continuance" (Burton § 71, cf. WM., p. 438).

οἱ δὲ ὑπομείνας εἰς τέλος κτλ.] So Mt. exactly, but in a somewhat different connexion; Lc. paraphrases *ἐν τῇ ὑπομονῇ ὑμῶν κτήσεσθε τὰς ψυχὰς ὑμῶν*—a valuable clue to the interpretation. Else *τέλος* does not look back to τὸ

14

14' Οταν δὲ ἴδητε τὸ βδέλυγμα τῆς ἐρημώσεως

14 το βδελ. της ερημ.) + το ρηθεν υπο Δανιηλ του προφητου ΑΧΓΔΠΣΦ minforeomn  
e (k) l syrr<sup>besh</sup> hel aeth

*τελος* (vv. 4, 7), but as in Lc. xviii. 5, Jo. xiii. 1 and in numerous passages of the LXX, it is an adverbial phrase, 'finally,' 'at last,' 'to' or 'in the end'; cf. 1 Chron. xxviii. 9 (*תְּעַדָּת*), 2 Chron. xxxi. 1 (*תְּלַבֵּד*), Ps. xlvi. (xlix.) 9, Job xx. 7 (*תְּצַדֵּק*). He who is finally victorious, who perseveres in his confession till death puts an end to the conflict, shall save his soul's life. The teaching is similar to that of viii. 35, but it strikes the note of *ὑπομονή* of which from this time forth all Christian teaching is full; cf. e.g. James i. 3 f., Rom. v. 3 f., viii. 25, 1 Thess. i. 3, 2 Thess. i. 4, iii. 5, Heb. xii. 1, Apoc. i. 9, Tertullian *de patientia*, Cyprian *de bono patientiae*; on the last two see Archbp. Benson's remarks, *Cyprian*, p. 439 ff.; and on the characteristics of Christian *ὑπομονή* comp. Trench, *syn.* liii. For the higher sense of *σωζειν* cf. viii. 35, x. 26; preservation from the destruction which overtook the Jews can hardly be in question here, or again deliverance from the sword of the persecutor; the thought is rather of a salvation which is not fully realised till death or the *παρουσία*.

14—23. TROUBLES CONNECTED CHIEFLY WITH THE FALL OF JERUSALEM (Mt. xxiv. 15—25, Lc. xxi. 20—24).

14. οταν δὲ ἴδητε κτλ.] The Lord answers the question *τί τὸ σημεῖον* in reference to the end of the City and Temple, so far as an answer was needed for practical guidance. The sign is the *βδέλυγμα τῆς ἐρημώσεως*: Mt. adds, *τὸ ρηθὲν διὰ Δανιὴλ τοῦ προφητοῦ*, a later note which is wanting in the true text of Mc. The phrase occurs in the Greek Daniel thrice: ix. 27 ἐπὶ τὸ ιερὸν βδέλυγμα τῶν ἐρημώσεων LXX., Th.

(מִמְשָׁנֶת קְנַפְתִּים מִמְשָׁנֶת שְׂמָנִים); xi. 31 βδ. ἐρημώσεως, LXX., βδ. ἡφανισμένον Th. (מִמְשָׁנֶת צִירָעָה); xii. 11 (τὸ) βδ. (τῆς) ἐρημώσεως LXX., Th. (מִמְשָׁנֶת צִירָעָה); cf. viii. 13 ἡ ἀμαρτία ἐρημώσεως LXX., Th. (מִמְשָׁנֶת עֲשָׂרָה). Difficulties connected with the Heb. text (see Bevan, *Daniel*, ad ll., esp. p. 192 f.; Driver, *Daniel*, pp. 151, 188, and in Hastings, *D.B.* i. p. 11) do not directly concern us here; if the Lord cited it, He did so doubtless in the sense which the Greek translations had long impressed upon the passage. The Greek phrase βδ. ἐρημώσεως occurs also in 1 Maccabees, where it is applied to the altar of Zeus erected in the Temple by Antiochus, B.C. 168 (1 Macc. i. 54, cf. v. 59, vi. 7). *Βδέλυγμα* is a frequent LXX. rendering of *גְּנַעַת* or *צִירָעָה* in the sense of an idol, cf. Deut. xxix. 17 (16), or a false god (Ezech. vii. 20), but as the passages just cited from 1 Macc. shew, it is not limited to an object of idolatrous worship; any symbol of heathenism which outraged the religious feelings of the Jewish people might be so described. The defining genitive *ἐρημώσεως* limits us to an outrage which was the prelude of national ruin, a crisis corresponding in effect if not in circumstances with the invasion of Antiochus. What this new βδ. ἐρημώσεως was St Luke, taught by the event, plainly tells us, for instead of οταν ἴδητε τὸ βδ. κτλ. (Mt., Mc.) he writes οταν ἴδ. κυκλουμένην ὑπὸ στρατοπέδων Ἱερουσαλήμ. The presence of the Roman army round the Holy City was itself a βδέλυγμα of the worst kind, and one which foreboded coming ruin. The words of Daniel seemed to find a second fulfilment; Rome had taken the place of Syria. Cf. Jos. *ant.* x.

ἐστηκότα ὅπου οὐ δεῖ—οἱ ἀναγινώσκων νοείτω—τότε

14 εστηκοτα ΝΒΛ] εστηκος ΔΨ 28 εστος ΑΕFG(ΚΜ)SUV(ΧΓ)ΔΠΣΦ 2<sup>ρρ</sup> min<sup>βι</sup>  
στηκον 1 13 28 69 91 299 346 | οπου] pr εν τοπω 1071 εν τοπω αγιω aeth<sup>vid</sup> | νοειτω]  
+τι αναγεινωσκει D a (n)

II. 7 καὶ δὴ ταῦτα ἡμῶν συνέβη παθεῖν  
τῷ ἔθνει ὑπὸ Ἀντιόχου τοῦ Ἐπιφα-  
νοῦς...τὸν αὐτὸν δὲ τρόπον ὁ Δανιήλος  
καὶ περὶ τῆς Ῥωμαίων ἡγεμονίας ἀνέ-  
γραψε καὶ ὅτι ὑπ' αὐτῶν ἐρημωθήσεται.

The patristic interpreters thought of Pilate's attempt to introduce the effigy of the emperor into the city (*B. J.* ii. 9. 2), or of similar insults offered to the Jewish faith by Hadrian (Jerome: “potest...acci...aut de imagine Caesaris quam Pilatus posuit in templo aut de Hadriani equestri statua quae in ipso sancto sanctorum usque in praesentem diem stetit”) or of acts committed at the time of the capture of the city (Victor: βδ. τινές φασι τοὺς στρατιώτας τοὺς εἰσελθόντας τῷ ιερῷ, τινὲς δὲ τὸν ἀνδριάντα τοῦ τότε τὴν πόλιν ἐλόντος), or of the Roman standards, which bore the figure of the eagle (*Ephrem*).

ἐστηκότα ὅπου οὐ δεῖ] A *constructio ad sensum* (WM., p. 176); the βδέλνυμα is personified, or regarded as personal: ‘when ye see...him standing where he ought not’; cf. 2 Thess. ii. 6 f. τὸ κατέχον...οἱ κατέχων. Mt. prefers ἐστός, and interprets ὅπου οὐ δεῖ as ἐν τόπῳ ἀγίῳ—a phrase which has confirmed the impression, based on 1 Macc. l.c., that the sign must be sought within the sacred precinct. But his anarthrous τόπος ἀγίος is perhaps not equivalent to ὁ ἄ. τόπος (2 Macc. viii. 17, Acts vi. 13) or ὁ τόπος (Jo. xi. 48), οἱ τ. οὐτος (Acts xxi. 28). All Palestine, but especially Jerusalem (ἡ ἀγία γῆ, ἡ ἀγία πόλις, 2 Macc. i. 7, iii. 1) was to a Jew holy ground, where the Gentile had no right to be. On ὅπου οὐ δεῖ cf. Bengel: “sermo ad hominem; Judaei putabant non oportere, et non oportebat quatenus locus erat sanctus.”

οἱ ἀναγινώσκων νοείτω] This parenthesis finds a place both in Mt. and Mc., and probably belonged to a common source. The words may be either those of the Lord directing attention to the passages in Daniel, or those of the writer of a document on which both Mc. and Mt. drew, directing attention to the Lord's words in this place. But the former supposition is almost excluded by the fact that in Mc.—the earlier narrative—no mention is made of Daniel or any prophetic writing. If οἱ ἀναγινώσκων is the reader (Apoc. i. 3) of the document on which Mc. here depends, we are carried back to days before the first investment of Jerusalem (A.D. 66) when the sign yet needed interpretation: “the time has not yet come...but it is near at hand” (Sanday, *Inspiration*, p. 292).

τότε οἱ ἐν τῇ Ἰουδαίᾳ κτλ.] Not the Apostles themselves, but other Jewish Christians who remained in the country. Cf. Thphnt.: καλῶς εἶπεν Οἱ ἐν τῇ Ἰουδαίᾳ· οἱ γὰρ ἀπόστολοι οὐκ ἥσαν ἐν τῇ Ἰουδαίᾳ, ἀλλὰ...πρὸ τοῦ πολέμου ἐδώλαθησαν ἀπὸ τῆς Ἱερουσαλήμ, μᾶλλον δὲ ἐξῆλθον αὐτοῖ. So Mt., Mc., Lc.; Lc. adds a special warning to those who should be in Jerusalem itself or its neighbourhood (καὶ οἱ ἐν μέσῳ αὐτῆς κτλ.). Acc. to Eus. *H. E.* iii. 5. 3 the Christians of Jerusalem were warned before the war broke out by a prophetic revelation (κατά τινα χρησμὸν τοῖς αὐτόθι δοκίμοις δὲ ἀποκαλύψεως ἐκδοθέντα πρὸ τοῦ πολέμου) to leave the city and retire to Pella in Peraea; Epiphanius (*de pond. et mens.* 15) has nearly the same story, but attributes the revelation to an angel. Pella (Jos. *B. J.* iii. 3. 3, G. A. Smith, p. 593 ff., Merrill, *East of the Jordan*,

15 οἱ ἐν τῇ Ἰουδαίᾳ φευγέτωσαν εἰς τὰ ὄρη. <sup>15</sup> ὁ ἐπὶ τοῦ δώματος μὴ καταβάτω μηδὲ εἰσελθάτω τι ἄραι 16 ἐκ τῆς οἰκίας αὐτοῦ, <sup>16</sup> καὶ ὁ εἰς τὸν ἀγρὸν μὴ ἐπι-  
§ go στρεψάτω εἰς τὰ ὄπιστα ἄραι <sup>§</sup> τὸ ἴματιον αὐτοῦ.  
17 <sup>17</sup>οὐαὶ δὲ ταῖς ἐν γαστρὶ ἔχουσαις καὶ ταῖς θηλα-

14 εἰς] επὶ U 604 2<sup>o</sup> al<sup>pauc</sup>

ΓΔΠΙΣΦΨ min<sup>fere omn</sup> syr<sup>hel</sup> καὶ ο επὶ D 604 2<sup>o</sup> syr<sup>sin</sup> arm aff knq vg | καταβατῶ] + εἰς τῆς οικιαν ADXΓΔΠΣΦ min<sup>pl</sup> aff in q vg syr<sup>sin hel</sup> arm aeth (om NBL ck aegg syr<sup>pesh</sup>)

16 ο εἰς τὸν αγρον] + ων ΑΧΓΠΣΦ min<sup>pl</sup> | εἰς τα ὄπιστα] om εἰς τα ND min<sup>pauc</sup>  
17 om δε D | θηλαζομεναις D 28

15 ο επὶ BFH aegg] ο δε επὶ ΙΑΕΓΚΛΜΣUVX

p. 184 ff.) lay between Gerasa and Hippos on the edge of the table-land, scarcely among the mountains; but the way to it from Judaea led across both the Judaean and the Moabite hills, so that *εἰς τὰ ὄρη* is a sufficient index of the direction which the flight was to take. Details as to the precise locality would be more appropriately given through one of the 'prophets' of the Church of Jerusalem (cf. Acts xi. 27 f., xxi. 10) when the time drew near.

15, 16. ὁ ἐπὶ τοῦ δώματος κτλ.] When the signal is given, not a moment may be lost; the citizen who is resting or praying on his roof must not stop to collect his property, or the countryman who is at work to go after the clothing he has left in another part of the field. Men went up to the flat roofs of their houses to sleep (1 Sam. ix. 25), to worship (Jer. xix. 13, Zeph. i. 5, Acts x. 9), to watch (Isa. xxii. 1), to proclaim tidings good or bad (Isa. xv. 3, Mt. x. 27), to spend the Feast of Tabernacles (Neh. viii. 16), and doubtless for many other purposes; so usual a place of resort was the roof that the law required it to be fenced with a parapet (Deut. xxii. 8) as a protection against accidental falls. The roof was accessible from without (ii. 4, note, cf. Lc. v. 19) by a staircase, or ladder, so that the man on the roof might escape with-

out entering his house. 'Ο εἰς τὸν ἀγρόν, he who is at work on the farm; *εἰς* calls attention to the movement which attends labour—the man has gone out to his plot of ground (for ἀγρός see v. 14, vi. 36, 56, xi. 8, xv. 21, Lc. xv. 15), and while there, is moving from place to place; for this use of *εἰς* cf. ii. 1 (v.l.), Acts viii. 40, Blass, *Gr.*, p. 122 f. Meanwhile his outer garment (*τὸ ἴματιον*) is left behind (*εἰς τὰ ὄπιστα*) at home, or at the entrance of the field; he is working *γυμνός* (Jo. xxi. 7) or *μονοχίτων*, and he must be content to make his escape as he is. *Εἰς τὰ ὄπιστα* is a frequent phrase in the LXX. (usually = ἸΠΝ); for the N. T. cf. Lc. ix. 62, Jo. vi. 66, xviii. 6, xx. 14. The passage as a whole recalls Lot's escape from Sodom (Gen. xix. 17 μὴ περιβλέψῃς εἰς τὰ ὄπιστα...εἰς τὸ ὄπος σφέον). Lc. has these verses in another connexion, where the allusion to Sodom is clear (Lc. xvii. 28 ff.).

17. οὐαὶ δὲ ταῖς κτλ.] Alas for mothers with children at the breast, and those who are soon to become mothers, for whom a hasty flight is impossible, who cannot leave their burden. The horrors of the siege would convert the joy of maternity into a woe: cf. Lc. xxiii. 28 f. Οὐαὶ has the true ring of apocalyptic prophecy; both the O. T. prophets and the Apocalypse use it abundantly; Mc. has it only here and in xiv. 21,

ζούσαις ἐν ἐκείναις ταῖς ημέραις. <sup>18</sup> προσεύχεσθε δὲ 18  
ἴνα μὴ γένηται χειμῶνος. <sup>19</sup> § ἔσονται § γάρ αἱ ημέραι 19 § b  
ἐκεῖναι θλίψις οὐαὶ οὐ γέγονεν τοιαύτη ἀπ' ἀρχῆς <sup>§ C</sup>  
κτίσεως ἡνὸν ἔκτισεν ὁ θεὸς ἕως τοῦ νῦν, καὶ οὐ μὴ

18 om δε Ψ και προσ. D a in | γενηται Ν<sup>a</sup>\*c. B (D) (L) (13) (28) al<sup>mu</sup> c (d) ff1 vg  
arm] + η φυγη υμων Ν<sup>c,b</sup>ΑΧΓΔΠΣΦΨ min<sup>pl</sup> k syrr<sup>in pesh</sup> aegg go aeth | χειμωνος] +η  
σαββατον (-των, -τω, εν σαββατω) L min<sup>nonn</sup> k (aut sabbato)+μηδε σαββατον Σ+μ.  
σαββατω 1071 +μ. εν σαββατω 736 19 εσονται γαρ αι ημ. εκειναι] εσται γαρ εν ταις  
ημεραις εκειναις Γ (a b d k n q) syrr<sup>in pesh</sup> | θλιψις οια ου γεγονεν τοιαυτη] θλιψις οιαι ουκ  
εγενοντο (vel ου γεγονασι) τοιαυται D 299 (2<sup>pe</sup>) (γ<sup>scw</sup>) latt arm θλιψις οιαι ου γεγοναν  
ουδεποτε τοιαυται Φ θλιψις οιαι ου γεγονασι ποτε τ. 2<sup>pe</sup> θλιψις οιαι ου γεγονε ποτε  
τοιαυτη 604 om τοιαυτη Ψ | om κτισεως 28 299 arm<sup>cod</sup> | om ην εκτ. ο θεος D 27 2<sup>pe</sup>  
a c ff k n arm | ην NBC<sup>\*</sup>LΨ 28] ης AC<sup>2</sup>ΧΓΔΠΦ min<sup>foroomn</sup> | om εως του νυν Σ | και  
ου μη] ουδε μη D ουδ ου μη FGΣ 1 13 69 157 253 346 2<sup>pe</sup>

but it is frequent in Mt., Lc. Θηλάζειν is used of the mother (Gen. xxi. 7, Exod. ii. 9, I Regn. i. 23, 2 Macc. vii. 27), as well as of the child (3 Regn. iii. 25, Ps. viii. 2, Joel ii. 16, Jer. li. (xliiv.) 7, Lc. xi. 27)—a fact which appears to have been overlooked by the ‘Western’ corrector who wrote θηλαζομέναις for θηλαζόνταις (cf. vv.ll.). ‘Εν γαστρὶ ἔχειν is a Herodotean phrase revived in late Greek; in the LXX. it is the usual equivalent of ἔχειν.

18. προσεύχεσθε δὲ ἵνα μὴ γένηται] Mt. supplies η φυγή from φενγέτωσαν v. 16, but the reference may well be wider—‘pray that this sign and all that must follow its appearance come not to pass during the winter, when the hardships of flight and privation will be greater.’ For the gen. of time see WM., p. 258, and cf. νυκτός, I Thess. v. 7. Mt. has the interesting addition μηδὲ σαββάτῳ ‘nor yet (at whatever season) on a sabbath,’ when many Jews, even Christian Jews (cf. Acts xxi. 20 f.), would be hindered by their scruples from escaping beyond the immediate vicinity of Jerusalem (Acts i. 12); in the Maccabean wars such scruples had borne deadly fruit (I Macc. ii. 32 ff.), and their influence was now perhaps

stronger than ever through the teaching of the Scribes. Mc.’s omission of this point has been commonly explained by the fact that he wrote for Gentile readers, to whom the strength of Jewish feeling on the subject would be unintelligible. But it is quite possible that μηδὲ σαββάτῳ had no place in the common tradition, though it had clung to the memory or had been added by the zeal of the Palestinian Church. For προσεύχεσθαι ἵνα (ὅπως) cf. xiv. 35, 38; Phil. i. 9, Jas. v. 16; for other constructions see Lc. xxii. 40, Jas. v. 17.

19. ἔσονται γὰρ αἱ ημέραι κτλ.] ‘Those days shall be straitness the like of which hath not come to pass,’ &c. Mt. softens the harshness of Mc.’s sentence, but at the same time lessens its force (ἔσται γὰρ τότε θλιψις μεγάλη οἴα οὐ γέγονεν). The Book of Daniel is again in view: cf. Dan. xii. i LXX. ἐκείνη η ημέρα θλίψεως οἴα οὐκ ἐγενήθη ἀφ’ οὗ ἐγενήθησαν ἔως τῆς ημέρας ἐκείνης=Th. ἔσται καιρὸς θλίψεως, θλιψις οἴα οὐ γέγονεν ἀφ’ ης γεγένηται ἔθνος κτλ. Θλιψις is here (see iv. 17, note, and cf. Lc.’s ἀνάγκη) used almost in its literal sense for the daily tightening of the meshes of the siege; cf. Deut. xxviii. 53 (which is also perhaps in the Lord’s thoughts),

¶ n 20 γένηται. ¶ Ὅκαὶ εἰ μὴ ἐκολόβωσεν Κύριος τὰς ἡμέρας, οὐκ ἀν ἐσώθη πᾶσα σάρξ· ἀλλὰ διὰ τοὺς ἐκλεκτοὺς

19 γενωνται D 2<sup>re</sup> lat<sup>texek</sup> 20 κυριος] ο θεος Ψ 13 28 69 299 1071 al<sup>nonn</sup> arm  
the | τας ἡμερας]+εκεινας EFGMΔΨ 1 13 69 736 al<sup>nonn</sup> cg\* syrr<sup>sin pesh</sup> arm aegg aeth  
+δια τους εκλεκτους αυτον D ab ffi q arm

ἐν τῇ στενοχωρίᾳ σου καὶ ἐν τῇ θλίψει σου ὡς θλίψει σε ὁ ἔχθρός σου, reproduced in Jer. xix. 9, where the LXX. has ἐν τῇ περιοχῇ καὶ πολιορκίᾳ ὡς πολιορκήσουσιν αὐτοὺς οἱ ἔχθροι αὐτῶν. Οὐα...τουαντη for τουαντη οἴα is perhaps unique; the passages quoted in Grimm-Thayer (1 Cor. xv. 48, 2 Cor. x. 11) are not exact parallels. Γέγονεν represents the fact as standing in its completeness on the page of history: ‘no such event has ever occurred’; comp. Jos. B. J. prooem. 4 τὰ γοῦν πάντων ἀπ' αἰώνος ἀτυχήματα πρὸς τὰ Ἰουδαίων ἡττήσθαι δοκῶ κατὰ σύγκρισιν. ‘Απ' ἀρχῆς κτίσεως κτλ.: cf. x. 6, note; similar phrases occur in Exod. ix. 18, Deut. iv. 32; with ἦν ἔκτισεν ὁ θεός, cf. οὓς ἔξελέξατο (v. 20). “Ἐως τοῦ νῦν, cf. ἄχρι τοῦ νῦν, Rom. viii. 22, Phil. i. 5; ἀπὸ τοῦ νῦν, Lc. xxii. 18, 69, Acts xviii. 6, 2 Cor. v. 16.

Lc. adds (xxi. 23<sup>b</sup>, 24) some remarkable words, based partly on Zach. xii. 3, partly anticipating the Pauline view of the relation between the fall of Israel and the conversion of the Gentile world (Rom. xi. 25 ff.).

20. εἰ μὴ ἐκολόβωσεν Κύριος κτλ.] Mt. εἰ μὴ ἐκολοβώθησαν αἱ ἡμέραι ἐκεῖναι. Mc's form of the sentence has a note of greater originality—the use of the anarthrous Κύριος=Π.Π.; which is limited in the N.T. to O.T. quotations and phrases, and a few passages where a Hebrew or Aramaic original seems to be directly in view (e.g. Lc. i. 5—ii. 52, where it occurs eight times). Κολοβοῦν is properly to ‘amputate’ (cf. 2 Regn. iv. 12 κολοβοῦσιν τὰς χεῖρας αὐτῶν καὶ τοὺς πόδας αὐτῶν, and cf. the epithet κολοβοδάκτυλος applied to St Mark, p. xxvi f.); hence to ‘curtail,’ ‘cut short,’ Vg. (Mt., Mc.) breviare.

With the thought of a Divine curtailment of time comp. Barnabas 4. 3 εἰς τοῦτο γὰρ ὁ δεσπότης συντέτμηκεν τοὺς καιροὺς καὶ τὰς ἡμέρας, ἵνα ταχύη ὁ ἥγαπημένος αὐτοῦ καὶ ἐπὶ τὴν κληρονομίαν αὐτοῦ ᾧξῃ: but the purpose in Barn. is different, and the reference is to Dan. ix. 24 συνετεμήθησαν, and not to the Gospels. On the construction εἰ μὴ ἐκολόβωσεν...οὐκ ἀν ἐσώθη see WM., p. 382.

οὐκ ἀν ἐσώθη πᾶσα σάρξ] үүшнүүлэл (Delitzsch). Two Heb. idioms are combined here—the use of לְבַשׂ for ‘all men’ (Gen. vi. 12), and the use of לֹא...לְבַשׂ for ‘none’ (Gen. ix. 11); cf. Blass, Gr. pp. 162, 178, WM., p. 214 f. For the construction see WM., p. 382. Not a soul could have escaped from Jerusalem, had not the hand of God brought the siege to a speedy end. It lasted five months, from the Passover (Jos. B. J. v. 3. 1) to September (*ib.* vi. 8. 4), when Titus entered the city; but the investment was not complete before May. Notwithstanding the horrors of the time the survivors were incredibly numerous, 97,000 acc. to Josephus (B. J. vi. 9. 3). For the causes which “combined to shorten the siege” see Alford on Mt. xxiv. 22.

διὰ τοὺς ἐκλεκτούς κτλ.] In the O.T. the ἐκλεκτοί (קִדְשָׁה) are the covenant people (Ps. civ. (cv.) 6, Isa. xlivi. 20), but more especially Israel idealised and responding to God's choice (Isa. xlvi. 1, lxv. 9 ff.). In Enoch the term is used for the righteous in Israel (En. i. 1 εὐλόγησεν ἐκλεκτούς δικαιούς) for whom the Messianic Kingdom is reserved. The Gospels retain this general sense, transferring

οὐς ἐξελέξατο ἐκολόβωσεν τὰς ἡμέρας. <sup>21</sup> καὶ τότε 21 § W<sup>b</sup>  
 ἔάν τις ὑμῖν εἴπη "Ιδε ὁδε ὁ χριστός, οὗτος ἐκεῖ, μὴ  
 πιστεύετε." <sup>22</sup> ἐγερθήσονται γάρ ψευδόχριστοι καὶ 22

21 ιδε (1<sup>o</sup>) ΝΒΔΛ] ιδου ΑCDΧΓΔΠΣΦ min<sup>omn vid</sup> | ιδε (2<sup>o</sup>) ΝΒΔΛ 28 2<sup>pe</sup>] ιδου  
 AW<sup>b</sup>ΧΓΔΠΣΦ min<sup>pl</sup> om C 63 me pr καὶ B the pr η Α(С)DXΓΔΠΣΦ min<sup>sat mu</sup> a b eff i q  
 syr<sup>hel</sup> arm (me) go aeth | πιστεύσητε GKMSUW<sup>b</sup>ΧΓΠΣΦ 22 γαρ ΑΒΔΛΦ] δε  
 ΝC | om ψευδοχριστοι καὶ D 124 ik

the word to those of the *κλητοί* who answer to the call and prove themselves worthy of it (Mt. xxii. 14, cf. Lightfoot on Col. iii. 12). Here the elect, for whose sake the siege was shortened, are probably the faithful members of the Church of Jerusalem, the *ἄλλας τῆς γῆς*, whose intercession or whose presence secured this privilege, though it did not avail to save the city (Gen. xviii. 32); Thphpt. would include those of the Jews who should afterwards be brought to the faith, *τοὺς ἐξ Ἐβραίων... ὕστερον μέλλοντας πιστεύειν*. Οὐς ἐξελέξατο is omitted by Mt.; cf. v. 19 *τῆς κτίσεως ἦν ἔκτισεν ὁ θεός*, where Mt. has merely *τοῦ κόσμου*.

21. καὶ τότε ἔάν τις ὑμῖν εἴπη κτλ.] The warning of v. 6 is resumed, with special reference to the circumstances of the last days of Jerusalem. Such a crisis would be sure to call up a host of pretenders to Messiahship, whether the title were used or not (see note to v. 6). <sup>"</sup>Ιδε ὁδε... οὗτος ἐκεῖ : Mt. expands this : *ἔαν οὖν εἴπωσιν ὑμῖν Ιδού ἐν τῇ ἐρήμῳ ἐστίν, μὴ ἐξέλθῃτε.* Ιδού ἐν τοῖς ταμείοις, μὴ πιστεύσητε. Too little is known of the life of the Church at Pella to enable us to say whether it was disturbed by such reports. But the tidings of the siege which reached the refugees from time to time would have predisposed them to accept any stories which chimed in with their growing belief that the *παρουσία* was at hand. Μὴ πιστεύετε : incredulity is sometimes a Christian duty. On the pres. imperative see Burton § 1656.

22. ψευδόχριστοι καὶ ψευδοπρο-

φῆται] The *ψευδοπροφήτης* is known to the LXX. (Zach. xiii. 2, Jer.<sup>9</sup>=**נִבְנֵי**), for there were such under the old covenant (2 Pet. ii. 1, cf. Deut. xiii. 1 ff.); and the Lord had at the outset of the Ministry warned His disciples against this class of men (Mt. vii. 15), for the return of a true prophecy would bring back the spurious imitations. One such appears in Acts xiii. 6; many such were abroad before the end of the Apostolic age (1 Jo. iv. 1, see Westcott's note ; cf. Apoc. xix. 20, xx. 10); they were familiar to the writer of the *Didache* (II πᾶς δὲ προφήτης διδάσκων τὴν ἀλήθειαν, εἰ ἀ διδάσκει οὐ ποιεῖ, ψευδοπροφήτης ἐστίν). The *ψευδόχριστος* is necessarily a far less common character, and the word is probably a creation of the Evangelists or their Greek source. St John's *ἀντίχριστος* (1 Jo. ii. 22, iv. 3, 2 Jo. 7) presents a different conception ; the Antichrist opposes Christ, the Pseudochrist is merely a "pretender to the Messianic office" (Westcott on 1 Jo. ii. 22, cf. Trench, *syn.* xxx.). The pretended Messiahs were scarcely a source of serious danger to the Church, after the end of the Jewish polity, and it is to these only that the Lord's words directly refer. Even the earlier Church writers however do not always observe this distinction ; cf. Hegesippus *ap.* Eus. *H. E.* iv. 22 ἀπὸ τούτων (he has named various early heretical sects) *ψευδόχριστοι... ὄτινες ἐμέρισαν τὴν ἔνωσιν τῆς ἐκκλησίας φθοριμάοις λόγοις κατὰ τοῦ θεοῦ καὶ κατὰ τοῦ χριστοῦ αὐτοῦ*. Similarly Justin (*dial.* 82)

ψευδοπροφῆται καὶ δώσουσιν σημεῖα καὶ τέρατα πρὸς τὸ ἀποπλανᾶν εἰ δυνατὸν τοὺς ἐκλεκτούς.

23 <sup>22</sup> ὑμεῖς δὲ βλέπετε προείρηκα ὑμῖν πάντα.

§ e 24      <sup>24</sup> Ἀλλὰ ἐν ἔκείναις ταῖς ἡμέραις μετὰ τὴν θλί-

22 δωσουσιν] ποιησουσιν D 13 28 69 91 124 299 346 2<sup>re</sup> ad | τοὺς εκλεκτούς] pr καὶ  
ACLW<sup>b</sup>ΧΓΔΠΣΦ min<sup>omnvid</sup> latt syrr arm aegg go aeth om τοὺς Ψ      23 προείρηκα  
pr ιδον ΝACDW<sup>b</sup>ΧΓΔΠΣΦ min<sup>fereo</sup> omn latt<sup>exc</sup> syrr arm go Cypr

quotes the present context with the remark ὅπερ καὶ ἔστι πολλοὶ γάρ ἄθεα καὶ βλάσφημα καὶ ἄδικα ἐν ὄντος αὐτοῦ παραχαράσσοντες ἐδίδαξαν. But these are the ἀντίχριστοι of 1, 2 Jo. rather than the ψευδόχριστοι of the Gospels.

δωσουσιν σημεῖα καὶ τέρατα] The words look back to Exod. vii. 11, 22, and are based on Deut. xiii. 1 (2) ἐάν... προφήτης...δῷ σοι σημεῖον ἢ τέρας (Ἰητοῦς τοῦ Ιοῦ τοῦ Χριστοῦ) κτλ. The combination σημεῖα καὶ τέρατα is common in the O.T. (e.g. Deut. xxviii. 46, xxix. 3 (4), xxxiv. 11, 2 Esdr. xix. 10, Ps. cxxxiv. (cxxxv.) 9, Isa. viii. 18; what Dr Driver (*Deut.* p. 75) says of the corresponding Heb. words is true of the Greek—σημεῖον is “a sign, i.e. something, ordinary or extraordinary, as the case may be, regarded as significant of a truth beyond itself,” whilst τέρας is “a portent, an occurrence regarded merely as something extraordinary”; cf. Trench, *syn.* xli. The Gospels prefer σημεῖον and δύναμις in reference to the miracles of Jesus; the Jews sought for startling τέρατα (Jo. iv. 48), but the Lord’s work did not usually assume this form; the latter word, however, is used freely in the Acts (ii. 22, 43, iv. 30, v. 12, vi. 8, xiv. 3, xv. 12), and occasionally by St Paul (Rom. xv. 19, 2 Cor. xii. 12), to describe the effect which the Christian miracles produced, rather than their actual character or their purpose. To exhibit portents belongs especially to the false prophet or false Christ, whose ambition it is to startle and

excite admiration. But his τέρατα are as false as his pretensions (2 Thess. ii. 9 τ. ψευδῶν).

πρὸς τὸ ἀποπλανᾶν κτλ.] ‘With the view of misleading’; cf. WM., p. 505. Ἀποπλανᾶν, ‘to lead astray by diverting from the right path,’ used absolutely (2 Chron. xxi. 11, Prov. vii. 21, Sir.<sup>3</sup>, 2 Macc. ii. 2), or followed by ἀπό and a gen. (1 Tim. vi. 10 ἀπεπλανήθησαν ἀπὸ τῆς πίστεως). Τοὺς ἐκλεκτούς, cf. v. 20, note; Mt. emphasises the boldness of the aim by prefixing καὶ. Εἰ δυνατόν, sc. ἔστιν, si potest fieri, R. V. “if possible”; the phrase leaves the possibility undetermined, cf. xiv. 35, Rom. xii. 18.

23. ὑμεῖς δὲ βλέπετε] ‘But ye, for your part, be on your guard’; cf. vv. 5, 9; βλ. is used absolutely again in v. 33. Προείρηκα ὑμῖν πάντα: ‘all that is necessary to direct your conduct’; if the prediction was not full or exact enough to gratify curiosity, it was sufficient to create responsibility and supply practical guidance. Προεπεῖν is used of prophetic announcements; cf. Acts i. 16 προεἶπε τὸ πνεῦμα τὸ ἄγιον, Rom. ix. 29 προείρηκεν Ἡσαΐας.

24—27. THE END OF THE DISPENSATION FORETOLD (Mt. xxiv. 29—31, Lc. xxi. 25—28).

24. ἀλλὰ ἐν ἔκείναις ταῖς ἡμέραις μετά κτλ.] ‘But (ἀλλά) there is more to follow; in those days, &c.’ The prophecy now carries us beyond the fall of the city (μετὰ τὴν θλίψιν ἔκείνην, cf. v. 19). Ἐν ἔκείναις ταῖς ἡμέραις is indefinite (i. 9, note), merely connecting

ψιν<sup>¶</sup> ἐκείνην ὁ ἥλιος σκοτισθήσεται, καὶ οἱ σελήνη οὐ δώσει τὸ φέγγος αὐτῆς, <sup>25</sup> καὶ οἱ ἀστέρες ἔσονται ἐκ 25 τοῦ οὐρανοῦ πίπτοντες, καὶ αἱ δυνάμεις αἱ ἐν τοῖς

<sup>24 εκεινην]</sup> τῶν ημερῶν εκεινῶν Σ 11 69 346 1071 alnnon arm<sup>cod</sup> <sup>25 εσονται εκ τοις ουρ. πιπτοντες]</sup> οἱ εκ του ουρ. εσ. πιπτ. D c ff (q) του ουρ. εσ. πιπτ. (vel εκπιπτ.) L(W<sup>b</sup>XΓΔΠ<sup>2</sup>ΣΦ) min<sup>rl</sup> (εκπιπτ. etiam Λ vg) πεσονται εκ των ουρανων 604 | αἱ εν τοις ουρ.] των ουρανων DK 115 a c ff g i syrr<sup>sin pesh</sup> arm<sup>codd</sup> me aeth

the sequel with what has gone before, so that the destruction of the Jewish polity is regarded as the starting point of the era which will be ended by the παρουσία. Mt., interpreting the Lord's words by the conviction which possessed the first generation, prefixes εὐθέως, with which compare the ταχύ of Apoc. xxii. 20; the original form of the sentence, as we see it in Mc., leaves the interval uncertain. The Lord merely foretells that His personal coming will follow the capture of Jerusalem, and not precede and prevent it, as many might be tempted to expect (v. 21 f.). Lc. has lost the note of time altogether.

ὁ ἥλιος σκοτισθήσεται κτλ.] The symbolical description which follows is gathered from O.T. predictions of the ruin of nations hostile to Israel; cf. Isa. xiii. 10 (of Babylon) οἱ γὰρ ἀστέρες τοῦ οὐρανοῦ...τὸ φῶς οὐ δώσουσιν, καὶ σκοτισθήσεται τοῦ ἥλιού ἀνατέλλοντος, καὶ η σελήνη οὐ δώσει τὸ φῶς αὐτῆς: ib. xxxiv. 4 (of Edom) τακήσονται πᾶσαι αἱ δυνάμεις τῶν οὐρανῶν...καὶ πάντα τὰ ἀστρα πεσεῖται: Ezech. xxxii. 7 (of Egypt) ἥλιον ἐν νεφέλῃ καλύψω, καὶ σελήνη οὐ μὴ φάγη τὸ φῶς αὐτῆς. Joel (ii. 30=iii. 3) connects similar portents with the dispensation of the Spirit (cf. Acts ii. 17 ff.). In all these cases physical phenomena are used to describe the upheaval of dynasties, or great moral and spiritual changes; and it is unnecessary to exact any other meaning from the words when they are adopted by Christ. The centuries which followed the fall of Jerusalem were destined to witness

dynastic and social revolutions greater and wider than any which swept over Babylon and Egypt, and to these portents of Christian history the Lord's words may reasonably be referred. On the other hand they do not exclude, perhaps they even suggest, a collapse of the present order of Nature immediately before the παρουσία (2 Pet. iii. 12). One of the phenomena described accompanied the Crucifixion (Lc. xxiii. 45); the Return may well be signalled by greater disturbances of the visible order. Φέγγος is used specially, though not invariably, of the 'lights that govern the night'; see Trench, *syn. clxxxvii.*, and cf. Joel ii. 10, iii. (iv.) 15; this word is stronger than φῶς, the brightness or lustre of light; cf. Hab. iii. 4 φέγγος αὐτοῦ ὡς φῶς ἔσται.

25. οἱ ἀστέρες ἔσονται...πίπτοντες] The conception is that of individual stars (not τὰ ἀστρα as in Lc. xxi. 25) falling at various times: cf. Apoc. vi. 13, viii. 10, ix. 1. For the periphrasis ἔσονται...π. cf. v. 13 ἔσεσθε μισούμενοι. Mt. has πεσονται, but it is unsafe to infer (W.M., p. 437) that Mc.'s expression is a simple substitute for the future; as usual, Mc. is more precise in his descriptive language than Mt. Σαλευθήσονται on the other hand is equally accurate, for the disturbance is in this case regarded as final (Heb. xii. 26). The "powers in heaven" (Mt. 'of heaven') are the מִלְאָכָלֶת of Isa. xxxiv. 4; the heavenly bodies in general. Σαλεύεσθαι (used here by the three Synoptists) is frequently employed by the LXX. for earthquake

26 οὐρανοῖς σαλευθήσονται. <sup>26</sup>καὶ τότε ὄψονται τὸν  
νιὸν τοῦ ἀνθρώπου ἐρχόμενον ἐν νεφέλαις μετὰ δυνά-  
27 μεως πολλῆς καὶ δόξης. <sup>27</sup>καὶ τότε ἀποστελεῖ τοὺς

[26 εν νεφέλαις] επι των νεφελων D syr<sup>sin vid</sup> μετα τ. νεφελων (ut vid) adffiq om X  
e g | δυν. και δοξης πολλης ΑΜΔΠ min<sup>satmu</sup> syr<sup>hel</sup> arm aeth 27 om τοτε Σ |  
αποστελλει H<sup>vid</sup> LΔΣ min<sup>pauc</sup> | τους αγγελους] + αυτον ΝΑCWB<sup>b</sup>ΧΓΔΠΣΦΨ min<sup>omnivd</sup> vg  
syrr arm aegg go aeth Or<sup>int</sup> (om αυτον BDL aeffikq)

(Ps. xvii. (xviii.) 8, xlvi. (xlvi.) 7, lxxvi. (lxxvii.) 19, lxxxii. (lxxxii.) 5 &c.), with special reference to the scene of the Law-giving; here the movement is extended to heaven and the heavenly hosts, as in Hagg. ii. 6 (Heb. l.c.). Lc. adds a striking description of the distress which these extraordinary phenomena will produce on earth (καὶ ἐπὶ γῆς συνοχὴ ἔθνῶν κτλ.).

26. καὶ τότε ὄψονται κτλ.] This time of unrest and fear will culminate in the Vision of the Son of Man foreshadowed by Daniel (vii. 13 LXX. ἔθεώρουν ἐν ὄράματι τῆς νυκτὸς, καὶ ἤδον ἐπὶ μετά, Th.) τῶν νεφελῶν τοῦ οὐρανοῦ ὡς νὺὸς ἀνθρώπου ἥρχετο (ἐρχόμενος, Th.)). In Daniel the Man (שֶׁנָּאָרְבָּ) who comes in the clouds represents the kingdom of saints which is to supersede the heathen empires indicated by the Four Beasts (cf. Stanton, *J. and Chr. Messiah*, p. 109; Bevan, *Daniel*, p. 118; Driver, *Daniel*, p. 102 ff.). The Lord had from the beginning of His Ministry assumed the title of the Son of Man (ii. 10, where see note), and now at length He identifies Himself with the object of Daniel's vision; in Him the kingdom of regenerate humanity will find its Head, and His manifestation in that capacity is to be the crowning revelation of the future (cf. xiv. 62, Apoc. i. 7, xiv. 14). "Οψονται, 'men shall see,' cf. v. 9; the Apocalypse (i. 7) paraphrases ὄψεται αὐτὸν πᾶς ὄφθαλμός. On ἐν νεφέλαις see Dalman, *Worte*, i. p. 198.

Mt. prefixes καὶ τότε φανήσεται τὸ σημεῖον τοῦ νιὸν τοῦ ἀνθρώπου ἐν οὐρα-

νῷ. Cf. *Didache* 16: τότε φανήσεται τὰ σημεῖα τῆς ἀληθείας· πρῶτον, σημεῖον ἐκπετάσεως ἐν οὐρανῷ. Cyril. *Hier. cat.* xv. 22: σημεῖον δὲ ἀληθῶς ἰδικὸν τοῦ χριστοῦ ἐπιν ὁ σταυρός· φωτοειδὲς σταυροῦ σημεῖον προάγει τὸν βασιλέα: P.W., *Sarum Breviary, Sanct.*, p. 278 "hoc signum crucis erit in caelo cum Dominus ad iudicandum venerit." But the meaning may be simply "the sign which is the Son of Man" (Bruce); the Vision of the Christ will itself be the signal for the συντέλεια (v. 4). Μετὰ δυνάμεως πολλῆς καὶ δόξης, cf. viii. 38, Mt. xxv. 31; the conception is based on Dan. vii. 14 (ἐδόθη αὐτῷ... τιμῇ βασιλικῇ κτλ.).

27. καὶ τότε ἀποστελεῖ κτλ.] Another link in the chain of events (cf. καὶ τότε, v. 26). "The Son of Man shall send the Angels"—"His Angels," Mt. (cf. Mt. xiii. 41, Heb. i. 6, and see Mc. i. 13, viii. 38); Mt. adds μετὰ σάλπιγγος μεγάλης, with a reference to the scene of the Law-giving (Exod. xix. 16; cf. 1 Cor. xv. 52, 1 Thess. iv. 16)—"and shall assemble (Mt. ἐπισυνάξοντιν, sc. οἱ ἄγγελοι, cf. xiii. 41 συλλέξοντιν) His elect." Such a gathering of men into a true and lasting brotherhood had proved to be impossible under the conditions of Judaism (Mt. xxiii. 37 ποσάκις ἥθελησα ἐπισυναγαγεῖν τὰ τέκνα σου), but would be realised in the Israel of God, at the παρουσία; cf. 2 Thess. ii. 1 ἡμῶν ἐπισυναγωγῆς ἐπ' αὐτόν. Ἐπισυναγωγή is suggestively used for the ordinary gatherings of the Church, which are anticipations of the great assembling at the Lord's Return

ἀγγέλους καὶ ἐπισυνάξει τοὺς ἐκλεκτοὺς αὐτοῦ ἐκ τῶν τεσσάρων ἀνέμων ἀπ' ἄκρου γῆς ἕως ἄκρου οὐρανοῦ. ¶

¶ e

<sup>28</sup> Ἀπὸ δὲ τῆς συκῆς μάθετε τὴν παραβολήν. ὅταν 28

27 τοὺς εκλεκτοὺς αὐτοῦ] om αυτον DLΨ i 28 91 299 2<sup>pe</sup> acff ik Or<sup>int</sup> | ακρου 1°] ακρων D min<sup>pauc</sup> (a) aeth | της γης U i 13 28 69 736 2<sup>pl</sup> alnomn | ακρου 2°] ακρων i alpauc aeth | του ουρανου UΨ i 13 28 69 736\* 2<sup>pe</sup> alnomn

(Heb. x. 25). Both noun and verb are employed by the LXX. in passages where the reassembling of the scattered tribes of Israel into the Messianic kingdom is in view: see Deut. xxx. 4 (*συνάξει*), Tob. xiii. 13, xiv. 7 (¶), Ps. cv. (cvii.) 47, cxlvii. (cxlvii.) 2, Zach. ii. 6 (*συνάξω*), 2 Macc. ii. 7. Τοὺς ἐκλεκτοὺς αὐτοῦ. The Father elects (*v.* 20), but in the Son (Eph. i. 4); and the elect belong to the Son by the Father's gift (Jo. x. 27, xvii. 6, 10).

ἐκ τῶν τεσσάρων ἀνέμων κτλ.] From Zach. ii. 6 (10) ἐκ τῶν τεσσάρων ἀνέμων τοῦ οὐρανοῦ συνάξω ὑμᾶς, and Deut. xxx. 4 εἴαν γέ ἡ διασπορά σου ἀπ' ἄκρου τοῦ οὐρανοῦ ἕως ἄκρου τοῦ οὐρανοῦ, ἐκείθεν συνάξει σε Κύριος: cf. also Deut. iv. 32; Deissmann (*B. St.* p. 248) quotes ἐκ τεσσάρων ἀνέμων from a Fayûm papyrus. ‘The four winds’ (cf. Apoc. vii. 1) stand for the four points of the compass. The Lord's thought is still dwelling on the new Israel, in which are to be fulfilled the O.T. anticipations of the reassembling of the tribes. Mc.'s phrase ἀπ' ἄκρου γῆς ἕως ἄκρου οὐρανοῦ is unusual and difficult; the LXX. has ἀπ' ἄκρου τῆς γῆς ἕως ἀ. τ. γ. (Deut. xiii. 7 (8), Jer. xii. 12), as well as ἀπ' ἀ. τ. οὐρ. ἕως ἀ. τ. οὐρ. (Deut. xxx. 4, Ps. xviii. (xix.) 7), and even speaks of τέσσαρα ἄκρα τοῦ οὐρανοῦ (Jer. xxv. 16 (xlix. 36)), but the contrast of the ἄκρου γῆς and the ἄκρου οὐρανοῦ appears only here; the sense seems to be, “from any one to any other opposite meeting-point of earth and sky” (Bengel: “ab extremo caeli et

terrae in oriente usque ad extremum caeli et terrae in occidente”), i.e. round the whole horizon of the world. But the phrase is perhaps colloquial rather than exact, and intended only to convey the impression that no spot on the surface of the earth where any of the elect may be will be overlooked.

28—29. THE LESSON OF THE BUD-DING FIG-TREE (Mt. xxiv. 32—33, Lc. xxi. 29—31).

28. ἀπὸ δὲ τῆς συκῆς κτλ.] ‘From the fig-tree learn the parable (it offers),’ i.e., the analogy which will serve to illustrate this particular point. The first article is generic (W.M., p. 132), the second possessive (W.M., p. 135). On παραβολή see iii. 23. The illustration is not worked out in the customary form ὅμοια ἔστιν ἡ βασιλεία τοῦ θεοῦ συκῆ κτλ., or the like, but is merely suggested in passing; nevertheless the essence of the ‘parable’ is here. With μάθετε (the Master's call to the μαθηταῖ) cf. Mt. ix. 13, xi. 29. Under Christ's guidance teaching may be extracted from (ἀπό) the most familiar of natural objects. The fig-tree was among the commonest products of the neighbourhood of Jerusalem; yet twice within two days it furnished Him with materials of instruction (cf. xi. 13 ff.). Lc. lessens the interest of the passage by adding καὶ πάντα τὰ δένδρα.

ὅταν ἥδη ὁ κλάδος κτλ.] The tree is not yet in full leaf like the precocious specimen of xi. 13 (ἔχουσαν φύλλα); at the Passover the leaves would be just escaping from their sheaths. ‘Απαλός is used of young vegetation in Lev. ii.

ἡδη ὁ κλάδος αὐτῆς ἀπαλὸς γένηται καὶ ἐκφύη  
τὰ φύλλα, γινώσκετε ὅτι ἐγγὺς τὸ θέρος ἐστίν  
29<sup>29</sup> οὕτως καὶ ὑμεῖς, ὅταν ἴδητε ταῦτα γινόμενα,  
¶ go γινώσκετε ὅτι ἐγγὺς ἐστιν<sup>¶</sup> ἐπὶ θύραις.

28 εκφύη FSUTΓΨ<sup>vii</sup> min<sup>mu</sup> a (procreaverit) k (germinaverit) syr<sup>hel</sup> me aeth<sup>li</sup>] εκφύη  
EGKMWV<sup>bII</sup> min<sup>permu</sup> diq vg (nata fuerint) ff (nascuntur) syr<sup>sin pesh</sup> arm the |  
φύλλα] + ev αυτη D 28 91 124 604 2<sup>po</sup> alpauc q arm | γινώσκετε NB\*CEFGHKMSUV  
W<sup>b</sup>XΓΠΣΦ min<sup>pl</sup> affik q vg (cognoscitis) syrr arm the go] γινώσκεται AB<sup>3</sup>DLΔ  
min<sup>mu</sup> aeth | θερος] τελος K 29 ταντα] pr παντα D 36<sup>er</sup> (eff)i(q) arm (aeth) |  
θύραις] + το τελος k (finis) + η βασιλεια τον θεον l (regnum dei)

14. Aq. ἀπαλὰ λάχανα, cf. Ezech. xvii.  
4 τὰ ἄκρα τῆς ἀπαλότητος [sc. τῆς κέδρου]; here it denotes the result of the softening of the external coverings of the stem, as it grows succulent under the moisture and sunshine of spring. This stage has been already (ἥδη) reached; and it is succeeded by another, ὅταν ἐκφύη τὰ φύλλα: the branch puts forth its leaves. The Latin versions and the Sinaitic and Peshitta Syriac support ἐκφύη (see vv. ll.), which might certainly stand (WSchm., p. 110); but φύειν trans. occurs in Cant. v. 13, Sir. xiv. 19, and ἐκφύειν trans. in Ps. ciii. (civ.) 14 Symm., and there is no sufficient reason for changing the subject here. Field's argument that if the transitive were used "we should have expected the aor. ἐκφύση" overlooks the fact that the parable represents vegetation as still in its first stage. The bursting of the fig-tree into leaf is the earliest sign of the approach of summer; cf. Cant. ii. 11 ff. For θέρος, the season of summer, cf. Gen. viii. 22, Ps. lxxiii. (Ixxiv.) 17, Jer. viii. 20; the noun is elsewhere anarthrous, and the article, which occurs here in all the accounts, is perhaps emphatic—"the summer," as contrasted with the leafless winter. Meyer's identification of θέρος in this place with θερισμός is out of keeping with the context; though the παροντία is elsewhere regarded as the harvest time of the world (Mt. xiii. 30, 39,

Apoc. xiv. 15), another train of ideas prevails here: cf. Origen: "unusquisque eorum qui salvantur...in se absconditam habet vitalem virtutem; Christo autem inspirante,...quae sunt abscondita in iis progrediuntur in folia aestate instantē." Thphht.: [ἥ] τοῦ χριστοῦ παροντία...θέρος τῷ ὅντι τοῖς δικαίοις ἀπὸ χειμῶνος. Γινώσκετε, indic., not imper., Vg. cognoscitis; 'experience tells you.' On the reading γινώσκεται—a common itacism—see Field, Notes, p. 37 f.

29. οὕτως καὶ ὑμεῖς κτλ.] The lesson of the parable enforced. οὕτως καὶ, 'so in like manner' (WM., p. 548); ὑμεῖς, 'ye disciples,' as distinguished from the rest of men. As all men (and you among them) recognise the signs of approaching summer, so ye, with your special opportunities, ought to recognise (γινώσκετε, imper.; Vg. scitole) the premonitions of the παροντία. Ἐγγὺς ἐστιν ἐπὶ θύραις: Lc. ἐγγὺς ἐ. ἡ βασιλεία τοῦ θεοῦ. If we are to supply a subject in Mt. and Mc., ἡ συντέλεια or τὸ τέλος will naturally suggest itself; but the impersonal ἐγγὺς ἐ. is in better accord with the mysterious vagueness of an apocalypse; on the phrase see Dalman, Worte, i. p. 87. Ἐπὶ θύραις: with foot already firmly set upon the door-step; cf. Prov. ix. 14 ἐκάθισεν ἐπὶ θύραις τοῦ ἑαυτῆς οἴκου ἐπὶ δίφρον, Sap. xix. 17 ἐπὶ ταῖς τοῦ δικαίου θ. (cf. Gen. xix. 11 τοὺς ὅντας ἐπὶ τῆς

<sup>30</sup> Ἄμην λέγω ὑμῖν ὅτι οὐ μὴ παρέλθῃ ἡ γενεὰ τοῦ αἵτη μέχρις οὗ ταῦτα πάντα γένηται. <sup>31</sup> ὁ οὐρανὸς καὶ ἡ γῆ παρελεύσονται, οἱ δὲ λόγοι μου οὐ [μὴ]

<sup>30 μεχρις ου]</sup> μ. οτου Β μεχρι **κ** εως ου D min<sup>pauo</sup> εως αν I 13 28 69 124 al<sup>pauo</sup> εως  
<sup>2<sup>ρε</sup> | om ταῦτα 1071</sup> 31 παρελευσονται <sup>1<sup>ρ</sup> ΝΒΔΥΧΓΠ i al<sup>pl</sup> c ff g il q vg]</sup> παρε-  
 λευσεται AC<sup>vīd</sup> EFGHLMSVW<sup>b</sup> XΔΣΦ min<sup>sat mu</sup> a k | om μη BD\* (hab ΝΑCL rell)

θύρας τοῦ οἴκου [Λώτ]; James v. 9 δὲ κριτής πρὸ τῶν θυρῶν ἔστηκεν is perhaps a reminiscence of this saying; cf. also Phil. iv. 5, Apoc. i. 3, xxii. 10, and the Aramaic watchword μαρὰν ἀθά in 1 Cor. xvi. 22, *Didache* 10.

30—32. THE EVENT CERTAIN; THE EXACT TIME KNOWN TO NONE BUT THE FATHER (Mt. xxiv. 34—36, Lc. xxi. 32—33).

30. Ἄμην λέγω ὑμῖν ὅτι κτλ.] Having answered the question τί τὸ σημεῖον the Lord addresses Himself to the other point raised in *v. 4*, πότε ταῦτα ἔσται. An introductory Ἄμην λέγω ὑμῖν demands serious attention (cf. xii. 43). The difficult saying which follows is given in nearly identical words by the three Synoptists. Ἡ γενεὰ αὕτη is frequent in the Gospels (cf. e.g. viii. 12 (note), 38, Mt. xi. 16, xii. 41 ff., xxiii. 36, Lc. xvii. 25), referring apparently in every instance to the generation to which the Lord Himself belonged. In the LXX. γενεά (=γῆ) occasionally means ‘a class of men,’ with an ethical significance (Victor: οὐκ ἀπὸ χρόνων...μόνον, ἀλλὰ καὶ ἀπὸ τρόπου); cf. Ps. xi. (xii.) 8 (where see Dr Kirkpatrick’s note), xiii. (xiv.) 5, xxiii. (xxiv.) 6; and there are passages in the N. T. where this use of the word comes into sight (e.g. Mt. xvii. 17, Mc. ix. 19, Acts ii. 40, Phil. ii. 15). In the present context it is certainly more natural to take γενεά in its normal signification; the passage is similar to Mt. xxiii. 36, where there can be no doubt as to the meaning. Men who were then alive would see

the fulfilment of the sentence pronounced upon Jerusalem (*v. 2*). If ταῦτα πάντα be held to include, as the words are probably meant to include, the συντέλεια and παρονοίᾳ, γενεά must be widened accordingly: cf. e.g. Theod. Mops. ap. Victor: γενεὰν λέγει ποντηρὰν τῷ τρόπῳ καὶ οὐ τοῖς προσώποις: Jerome: “aut genus hominum significat, aut specialiter Iudeorum”; Thphlt.: ἡ γενεὰ αὕτη, τοιτέστι τῶν πιστῶν. It is possible that a word was purposely employed which was capable of being understood in a narrower or a wider sense, according to the interpretation assigned to the passage by the hearer or reader. On οὐ μὴ παρέλθῃ see Burton, § 172: in *v. 31* the future is used without change of meaning.

31. ὁ οὐρανὸς καὶ ἡ γῆ κτλ.] The disturbances of Nature and Society foretold in *vv. 24 ff.* would leave the great revelation of the Father’s Love and Will unshaken (cf. Isa. li. 6, Heb. xii. 25 ff.). The Lord claims for the Gospel a permanence even more absolute than that which at the outset of His Ministry He had claimed for the Law (Mt. v. 18, Lc. xvi. 17, cf. Hort, *Jud. Chr.* p. 16). Οἱ λόγοι μου, not this particular apocalypse only (οἱ λόγοι οὐτοι, Mt. vii. 24, Lc. ix. 28), but Christ’s teaching as a whole (οἱ ἐμοὶ λόγοι, viii. 38=οἱ ἐμὸς λόγος, Jo. viii. 31 ff.). Οἱ οὐρ. καὶ ἡ γῆ παρελεύσονται: cf. 2 Pet. iii. 10 οἱ οὐρανοὶ βούζηδὸν παρελεύσονται: Apoc. xxi. 1 ὁ γὰρ πρῶτος οὐρανὸς καὶ ἡ πρώτη γῆ ἀπῆλθαν, καὶ ἡ θάλασσα οὐκ ἔστιν ἔτι.

§ f 32 παρελεύσονται. <sup>32§</sup>περὶ δὲ τῆς ἡμέρας ἐκείνης ἡ τῆς ὥρας οὐδεὶς οἶδεν, οὐδὲ οἱ ἄγγελοι ἐν οὐρανῷ οὐδὲ ὁ νιός, εἰ μὴ ὁ πατήρ.

§ e 33 <sup>33§</sup>Βλέπετε, ἀγρυπνεῖτε· οὐκ οἴδατε γὰρ πότε

<sup>31</sup> παρελευσονται 2<sup>o</sup> NBL min<sup>pau</sup>] παρελθωσιν ACDW<sup>b</sup>XΓΔΠΣΦ min<sup>pl</sup> 32 η ABCEGHKLMS<sup>2</sup>UVW<sup>b</sup>XΓΔΠΨ 107<sub>1</sub> al<sup>mn</sup>] καὶ NDFS\* 1 13 28 69 124 al<sup>sat mn</sup> agikq syrr<sup>sin pesh</sup> arm aegg aeth | της ωρας] om της AEFGHSVV<sup>b</sup>XΦ min<sup>sat mn</sup> ωρας εκεινης Σ syrr<sup>sin pesh</sup> | οι αγγελοι] αγγελοι B | ev ουρανω] pr οι ACEFGHK<sup>2</sup>MSVXΓΔΠΦ(Ψ) min<sup>pl</sup> syr<sup>hel</sup> the των ουρανων UΣ 28 107<sub>1</sub> al<sup>nonn</sup> a g syrpesh aeth | om ουδε ο νιος X (cf. Ambr. de file v. 16) | ο πατηρ] μονος ο π. Δ c (solus pater) ο π. μονος Φ 13 61 124 238 107<sub>1</sub> 2<sup>o</sup> al<sup>pau</sup> a k arm<sup>odd</sup> the aeth 33 βλεπετε] om syr<sup>sin</sup>+ou D (c) ff i q +δε και 13 28 69 299 346 2<sup>o</sup> (k) aeth | αγρυπνειτε]+και προσευχεσθε NACLW<sup>b</sup>XΓΔΠ(Σ)ΦΨ min<sup>fere omn</sup> f fi q vg syrr arm aegg aeth (om BD 122 a c k)

32. περὶ δὲ τῆς ἡμέρας ἐκείνης κτλ.] ‘H ἡμέρα ἐκείνη is here apparently (cf. xiv. 25, Lc. xxi. 34, 2 Thess. i. 10, 2 Tim. i. 18) the day of the final Return in which “those days” (vv. 17, 19, 24) will find their issue; elsewhere described as ἡ ἐσχάτη ἡμ. (Jo., *passim*), ἡ ἡμ. τοῦ κυρίου [I. X.] (Paul), or simply ἡ ἡμέρα (Mt. xxv. 13, 1 Thess. v. 4). The end is assured, it belongs to Revelation; but the time has not been revealed, and shall not be. Οὐδεὶς...οὐδὲ...οὐδέ, ‘no one...not even (*ne quidem*)...nor yet’: for the sequence cf. Mt. vi. 26, Apoc. v. 3, and for οὐδέ *ne quidem*, vi. 31. Οὐδὲ οἱ ἄγγελοι, who are to be employed in the work of ‘that day,’ cf. v. 27. Comp. the Rabbinical parallels cited by Wünsche, p. 404; and for other references to the limitations of angelic knowledge see Eph. iii. 10, 1 Pet. i. 12. Οὐδὲ ὁ νιός. Not ὁ νιός τοῦ ἀνθρώπου, but ὁ νιός absolutely, as contrasted with ὁ πατήρ: cf. Mt. xi. 27, Lc. x. 22, Jo. v. 19 ff., vi. 40, xvii. 1, 1 Jo. ii. 22 &c. By the Father’s gift all things that the Father hath are the Son’s (Jo. v. 20, xvi. 15), and as the Eternal Word it would seem that He cannot be ignorant of this or any other mystery of the Divine Will (Mt. xi. 27, Jo. i. 18). But the time of the predestined end is one of those things

which the Father has “set within His own authority” (Acts i. 7), and the Son had no knowledge of it in His human consciousness, and no power to reveal it (Jo. viii. 26, 40, xiv. 24, xv. 15). See upon the whole context Mason, *Conditions*, p. 120 ff.

The patristic treatment of the passage is fully examined by Bp Gore, *Dissertations*, p. 111 ff. Irenaeus (ii. 28. 6) is content to call attention to the practical reproof which the Lord’s words administer to idle curiosity. In Origen (*in Mt. ad l.*) the exegetical difficulty comes into view, and he offers alternative explanations; the ignorance of which the Lord speaks belongs either to His human nature, or to the Church, as whose Head He speaks. Later expositors, influenced by a just indignation at the Arian argument εἰ ἡν ἀδίως ὑπάρχων ὁ νιός πρὸς τὸν θεόν, οὐκ ἀν ἡγνόστε περὶ τῆς ἡμέρας, regarded the ignorance as ‘economic’ only; whilst others understood εἰ μὴ ὁ πατήρ as nearly equivalent to χωρὶς τοῦ πατρός: cf. Basil, *ep. 236. 2 τουτέστιν, η αλτία τοῦ εἰδέναι τὸν νιόν παρὰ τοῦ πατρός· οὐδ’ ἀν ὁ νιός ἔγνω, εἰ μὴ ὁ πατήρ.*

That the day is known to God was taught in Zech. xiv. 7; cf. Pss. Sol. xvii. 23 εἰς τὸν καιρὸν ὃν οἶδας σύ, ὁ θεός (Dalman, *Worte*, i. p. 235).

ο καιρός ἐστιν. <sup>34</sup> ὡς ἄνθρωπος ἀπόδημος ἀφεὶς <sup>34</sup> § w<sup>t</sup>  
τὴν οἰκίαν αὐτοῦ καὶ δοὺς τοῖς δούλοις αὐτοῦ τὴν  
ἔξουσίαν, ἔκάστῳ τὸ ἔργον αὐτοῦ, καὶ τῷ θυρωρῷ

33 ποτε ο καιρος εστιν] ποτε ο καιρος Da τον καιρον (ut vid) c syr<sup>sin</sup> 34 ως]  
ωσπερ Σ 1 13 28 69 124 al<sup>nonn</sup> | αποδημων DX 1 28 209 245 299 2<sup>po</sup> cscr | αυτον 1<sup>o</sup>, 2<sup>o</sup>  
εαυτον B | εκαστω NBC\*DLΨ 238 248 2<sup>po</sup> 8<sup>pe</sup> a c ff me aeth] pr και AC<sup>2</sup>W<sup>b</sup>ΧΓΔΠΣΦ  
min<sup>pl</sup> i syrr<sup>posh bel</sup> arm

33—37. THE FINAL WARNING,  
BASED ON THE UNCERTAINTY OF THE  
TIME (Mt. xxiv. 42 ff., Lc. xxi. 36).

33. *Βλέπετε, ἀγρυπνεῖτε κτλ.]* Wycliffe: “se ʒe wake ʒe and preie ʒe.” For *βλέπετε* cf. v. 5, 9, 23; it is the keynote of the discourse. ‘Αγρυπνεῖτε, ‘do not permit yourselves to sleep’; cf. 1 Esdr. viii. 58 ἀγρυπνεῖτε καὶ φυλάσσετε, Ps. cxxvi. (cxxxvii.) 1 ήγρύπνησεν δ φυλάσσων, Cant. v. 2 ἐγώ καθεύδω καὶ ή καρδία μου ἀγρυπνεῖ. In the Epistles the verb is used in reference to prayer (Eph. vi. 18) and spiritual work (Heb. xiii. 17): cf. Lc. ἀγρυπνεῖτε δὲ ἐν παντὶ καιρῷ δεόμενοι. Bede mentions other forms of spiritual ἀγρυπνία: “vigilat autem qui ad adspectum veri luminis mentis oculos apertos tenet, vigilat qui servat operando quod credit, vigilat qui se torporis et negligentiae tenebras repellit.” Οὐκ οἴδατε γὰρ πότε κτλ. If the Master Himself does not know, the disciples must not only acquiesce in their ignorance, but regard it as a wholesome stimulus to exertion (*γάρ*). On ο καιρός see i. 15; each appointed time of Divine visitation is a καιρός, occurring at the moment predestined for it in the ordering of events.

34. ὡς ἄνθρωπος ἀπόδημος κτλ.] Another παραβολή (v. 28), and as appears from Mt. xxiv. 43 ff., xxv., one of a series delivered at this time. With ἄνθρ. ἀπόδημος ‘a man on his travels’ (Wycliffe, “a man the which gon far in pilgrimage”), comp. xii. 1 ἄνθρ. ἀπεδημησεν, and Mt. xxv. 14 ἄνθρ. ἀποδημῶν (cf. xiii. 45 ἄνθρ. ἔμ-

πορος). The traveller is here and in Mt. l.c. the Son of Man, and the journey is His return to the Father (Jo. xiv. 3). ‘Ως, “it is as if,” cf. ωσπερ, Mt. xxv. 14 (Blass, Gr., p. 270, cf. WM., p. 578 n.). The construction of the sentence which follows is broken by the intrusion of καὶ before ἐνετείλατο; the reader desiderates either ἀφεὶς...καὶ δοὺς...ἐνετείλατο or ἀφεὶς...ἔδωκεν...καὶ ἐνετ., or ἀφεὶς...καὶ δοὺς...καὶ ἐντειλάμενος (Vg. qui peregre profectus...relinquit...et dedit...et praecipiat, v.l. praeceperit; see Wordsworth-White ad l.); Fritzsche’s and Meyer’s expedient of taking the last καὶ as = *etiam* (WM., p. 578) is adopted by R.V., but seems to be unnecessary in view of other indications of grammatical laxity in Mc.’s style.

τοῖς δούλοις...τὴν ἔξουσίαν, ἔκάστῳ τὸ ἔργον] The authority is committed to the servants collectively (Bengel: “hanc dedit servis coniunctim”), the task is assigned individually. On ἔξουσία see i. 22, vi. 7, notes; for δοῦλος in this reference cf. xii. 2, Jo. xiii. 16, xv. 15, 20; the Apostolic writers glory in the title Ἰησοῦ Χριστοῦ δοῦλος (James i. 1, Jude 1, Apoc. i. 1, Rom. i. 1, Phil. i. 1; cf. δοῦλος θεοῦ Tit. i. 1, 1 Pet. ii. 16). Here apparently the δοῦλοι are the disciples in general, the θυρωρός is the Apostolate and the ministry (cf. Jo. x. 3 τούτῳ δ θυρωρὸς ἀνοίγει), to whom especially belongs the responsibility of guarding the house and of being ready to open the door to the Master at His return (Lc. xii. 36, cf. Ezek. xxxiii. 2 ff.). Bede: “ordini pastorum ac rectorum ecclesiae curam

35 ἐνετείλατο ὥνα γρηγορῆ. <sup>35</sup> γρηγορεῖτε οὖν, οὐκ  
οἴδατε γὰρ πότε ὁ κύριος τῆς οἰκίας ἔρχεται, ἢ ὁψὲ  
36 ἢ μεσονύκτιον ἢ ἀλεκτοροφωνίας ἢ πρωΐ· <sup>36</sup> μὴ ἐλθὼν  
Τε 37 ἐξαίφνης εὕρη ύμᾶς καθεύδοντας. <sup>¶</sup> <sup>37</sup> ὁ δὲ ύμῖν λέγω  
πᾶσιν λέγω Γρηγορεῖτε.

34 γρηγορῆ] αγρυπνη Γ                    35 ομ η 1° ADW<sup>b</sup>ΧΓΠΣΦ min<sup>omnivid lat<sup>vt</sup>plvg</sup>  
syrr<sup>sin pesh hel (txt)</sup> arm | μεσονύκτιον ADW<sup>b</sup>ΧΓΠΦ μεσονύκτιω Σ 6οι<sup>τ</sup> αλπέρραυς | αλεκτο-  
ροφωνιον D αλεκτοροφωνια Δ            36 ελθων] εξελθων ΔΓ min<sup>paue</sup> | εξαιφνης ABEFG  
MSUW<sup>b</sup>ΧΠΣΦ] εξεφνης ΝCDKLUTΓΔ al | ευρησει 238 300 1071 c<sup>scor</sup>            37 ο] a  
AW<sup>b</sup>ΓΠ<sup>2</sup>ΣΦ min<sup>pl</sup> q syr<sup>hel</sup> | ο δε νμ. λ. πασιν λ.] εγω δε λ. νμιν D (2<sup>pe</sup>) a (cf. ff i) quod  
autem uni dixi omnibus vobis dico (ομ γρηγ.) k

solerti observantia iubet impendere,” adding, however, “vigilare praecipimur universi ianuas cordium.” <sup>1</sup> *Iva γρηγορῆ*: γρηγορεῖν, a late formation from *ἐγρήγορα*, condemned by the Atticists (Lob. *Phryn.* p. 118, cf. Rutherford, p. 200 f., WSchm., p. 104 n.), is found in the later books of the LXX. (2 Esdr.<sup>1</sup> Jer.<sup>2</sup> Bar.<sup>1</sup> Thren.<sup>1</sup> Dan. (Th.<sup>1</sup>) 1 Macc.<sup>1</sup>), and in the N. T. (Syn.<sup>14</sup> Acts<sup>1</sup> Paul<sup>4</sup> 1 Pet.<sup>1</sup> Apoc.<sup>3</sup>). The passage in 1 Macc. (xii. 27) is an interesting illustration of its use here: ἐπέταξεν Ἰωαθάν τοῖς παρ’ αὐτοῦ γρηγορεῖν...δι’ ὅλης τῆς νυκτός. For early Christian use cf. Ign. *Polyc.* 1 γρηγορεῖ, ἀκοίμητον πνεῦμα κεκτημένος.

35. γρηγορεῖτε οὖν κτλ.] Ὁ κύριος τῆς οἰκίας ἔρχεται answers here to ὁ καιρός ἐστιν in v. 33 and explains its ultimate meaning (cf. Mt. xxiv. 3 τῆς σῆς παρουσίας). With the phrase ὁ κ. τῆς οἰκίας = ὁ οἰκοδεσπότης cf. Mt. x. 25, xx. 1 ff., Lc. xiii. 25, and esp. Heb. iii. 5 Χριστὸς δὲ ὡς νιὸς ἐπὶ τὸν οἶκον αὐτοῦ. Mt. (xxiv. 42) substitutes ὁ κύριος ύμῶν, cf. Heb. iii. 6 οὐ οἶκός ἐσμεν ἡμεῖς.

ἢ ὁψὲ ἢ μεσονύκτιον κτλ.] In any one of the four watches of the night; cf. Lc. xii. 38 κἄν ἐν τῇ δευτέρᾳ κἄν ἐν τῇ τρίτῃ φυλακῇ ἐλθῃ. A three-fold division of the night is mentioned in the O. T., cf. Jud. vii. 19 τῆς φυλακῆς μέσης (τῆς μεσούσης, A): the

first two Gospels speak of a fourth watch (Mt. xiv. 25, Mc. vi. 48, where see note; cf. Jos. *ant.* v. 6. 5 κατὰ τετάρτην μάλιστα φυλακὴν προσῆγε τὴν ἑαυτοῦ στρατιάν: *Berachoth*, cited by Wetstein, “quatuor vigiliae fuerunt noctis”—a Roman arrangement (Blass on Acts xii. 4), but not unknown in classical Greece (*Eur. Rhes.* 5, cited by Kypke: τετράμοιρον νυκτὸς φρονρά). The watches were distinguished as *vigilia prima, secunda, &c.*; ὁψέ, μεσονύκτιον, κτλ. are popular equivalents, not to be too strictly interpreted. For ὁψέ see xi. 11, 19; for μεσονύκτιον, Jud. xvi. 3, Ps. cxviii. (cxix.) 62, Isa. lix. 10 (where it is the opposite of μεσημβρία), Lc. xi. 5, Acts xvi. 25, xx. 7; ἀλεκτοροφωνία, ἄπ. λεγ. in biblical Gk. (but cf. 3 Macc. v. 23, 24), is used in Aesop, *fab.* 44: πρωΐ corresponds to the φυλακὴ ἑωθινὴ of Exod. xiv. 24, 1 Regn. xi. 11 (Α, πρωινή), or φ. πρωία of Ps. cxxix. (cxxxi.) 6. On the acc. μεσονύκτιον see WM., p. 288.

36. μὴ ἐλθὼν ἐξαίφνης κτλ.] See Mt. xxv. 5, Rom. xiii. 11, 1 Thess. v. 6; the need of the caution was soon to be forcibly illustrated (xiv. 37 ff.). For the orthography of ἐξαίφνης see WH., *Notes*, p. 151, and cf. ix. 8, note; for the ethical import cf. Lc. xii. 40 ἢ ὥρᾳ οὐ δοκεῖτε: the suddenness is not due to caprice on the part of the Master, but to

<sup>13</sup> Ην δὲ τὸ πάσχα καὶ τὰ ἄζυμα μετὰ δύο ἡμέρας. Ι XIV.  
καὶ ἐζήτουν οἱ ἀρχιερεῖς καὶ οἱ γραμματεῖς πῶς αὐτὸν

XIV ι το πασχα και τα αξ.] τα αξ. και το πασχα Ψ om και τα αξ. D pascha azu-morum k (cf. syrr<sup>sin pesh</sup>) | πως] οπως MX το πως Σ

neglect of duty on that of the servant.

37. ὃ δὲ ὑμῖν λέγω πᾶσιν λέγω] Comp. Peter's question in Lc. xii. 41, which here receives a direct answer. Watching was not to be limited to the θυρωρός, all must keep vigil till He returned; priest and people, the man of the world as well as the recluse; cf. Thphpt.: πᾶσι δὲ ταῦτα παραγγέλλει ὁ κύριος, καὶ τοῖς κοσμικωτέροις καὶ τοῖς ἀναχωρηταῖς. The early Church expressed her sense of the importance of this charge by the institution of the πανυκχίδες or *vigiliae*; see Batiffol, *hist. du breviaire Romain*, p. 2 ff.

XIV. 1—2. THE DAY BEFORE THE PASCHAL MEAL. DESIGNS OF THE PRIESTS AND SCRIBES (Mt. xxvi. 1—5, Lc. xxii. 1—2).

1. ἦν δὲ τὸ πάσχα κτλ.] Πάσχα (Aram. אֶסְדֵּרֶךְ, אֶסְדֵּרֶב, cf. Dalman, *Gr.* pp. 107, 126) is the prevalent transliteration of Πέθ in the LXX. (Pent.<sup>20</sup> Jos.<sup>1</sup> 4 Regn.<sup>3</sup> 1 Esdr.<sup>14</sup> 2 Esdr.<sup>3</sup> Ezech.<sup>1</sup>), the alternative form φάσεκ or φάσεχ occurring only in 2 Chron. (xxx.<sup>3</sup> xxxv.<sup>12</sup>), Jer. xxxviii. (xxxii.) 8; in the N. T. πάσχα is used uniformly (Mt.<sup>4</sup> Mc.<sup>5</sup> Lc.<sup>7</sup> Jo.<sup>9</sup> Acts<sup>1</sup> Paul<sup>1</sup> Heb.<sup>1</sup>). Philo also has πάσχα (e.g. *de decal.* ἦν Ἐβραῖοι πατρίῳ γλώστῃ πάσχα προσαγορεύοντον); in Josephus the mss. vary between πάσχα and φάσκα (see Niese's text and app. crit. *ant.* v. 1. 4, xiv. 2. 1, xvii. 9. 3, *B. J.* ii. 1. 3). Τὸ πάσχα is either (a) the lamb (Exod. xii. 11, 21, &c.), or (b) the feast at which it was eaten, or (c) the Paschal festival as a whole (Jos. *ant.* xvii. 9. 3 φάσκα δ' ἡ ἔορτὴ καλεῖται, Lc. ἡ ἔορτὴ τῶν ἄζυμων ἡ λεγομένη πάσχα); for (a) see v. 12; in the present passage (b) seems

to be intended, since τὸ π. is distinguished from τὰ ἄζυμα, the opening meal from the period of abstinence from leaven. Τὰ ἄξ., "the azymes" (תִּנְשַׁמְּנָה), are properly the ἄρτοι ἄζυμοι or λάγανα ἄζυμα (Lev. ii. 4) which were eaten throughout the Paschal week, but here = 'the Feast of Azymes,' ἡ ἔορτὴ τῶν ἄζυμων (Exod. xxxiv. 18) or αἱ ἡμέραι τῶν ἄξ. (Acts xii. 3, xx. 6). The word lends itself easily to this sense, the neut. pl. being commonly employed for the names of festivals, cf. τὰ ἐγκαίνια, Jo. x. 22 and the class. τὰ Διονύσια, τὰ Παναθήναια (Blass, *Gr.* p. 84 f.).

ἦν...μετὰ δύο ἡμέρας] Lc. less precisely, ἥγιεν: Mt. represents the Lord as calling attention to the approach of the Feast (*εἰπεν...* Οἴδατε στὶ μετὰ δύο ἡμέρας τὸ πάσχα γίνεται). Mc.'s ἦν=ἡμελλεν εἶναι is noticeable; the Evangelist looks back on the event as past. Μετὰ δύο ἡμέρας=τῇ ἔχομένη ἡμέρᾳ, if we are to follow the analogy of μετὰ τρεῖς ἡμ. (viii. 31, note); cf. Hos. vi. 2 where μετὰ δύο ἡμέρας is distinguished from ἐν τῇ ἡμέρᾳ τῇ τρίτῃ and, as Field points out (on Mt. xvi. 21), is equivalent to ἐν τῇ ἡμέρᾳ τῇ δευτέρᾳ.... The day will thus, on the Synoptic reckoning, be Wednesday, Nisan 13; cf. Exod. xii. 6. Thphpt.: τῇ τετράdi τὸ συμβούλιον (v. *infra*) συνέστη, καὶ διὰ τοῦτο νηστεύομεν καὶ ἡμεῖς τὰς τετράδας (see *Did.* 8, *Ap. Const.* v. 15).

καὶ ἐζήτουν οἱ ἀρχιερεῖς κτλ.] Cf. xi. 18, xii. 12. The plot was now under discussion at a meeting consisting of representatives of each order in the Sanhedrin: Mc., Lc. οἱ ἀρχ. καὶ οἱ γρ., Mt. συνήθησαν οἱ ἀρχ. καὶ οἱ πρεσβύτεροι τοῦ λαοῦ (cf. Mc. xi. 27). Mt. adds that the meeting was held in the

2 ἐν δόλῳ κρατήσαντες ἀποκτείνωσιν· ἔλεγον γάρ Μή  
ἐν τῇ ἑορτῇ, μή ποτε ἔσται θόρυβος τοῦ λαοῦ.  
3      <sup>3</sup>*Kai* ὄντος αὐτοῦ ἐν Βηθανίᾳ ἐν τῇ οἰκίᾳ Σίμωνος

2 γαρ NBC\*DLΨ a c f f i k l q syrr<sup>sin hel(mg)</sup> me] δε AC<sup>2</sup>W<sup>b</sup>XΓΔΠΣΦ min<sup>omn vid</sup> vg<sup>ed</sup>  
syrr<sup>(pesh)hel (txt)</sup> arm the aeth | μη...μη ποτε] μη ποτε εν τη εορτῃ D a (c) ff i (k) q  
3 αυτου] του Ιησου D c f f i q the | τη οικια] om τη Ν\*Φ ii 106 229 238 604 2<sup>de</sup> alpauc

house of Caiaphas, who for some time had advocated the policy of sacrificing Jesus to the Roman power (Jo. xi. 49 f.). There was no division of opinion now as to the principle, or as to the character of the means to be employed for the arrest (*ἐν δόλῳ*, Mc., *δόλῳ*, Mt.; cf. Mc. vii. 22); only the opportunity (*πώς*) was still wanting. On the subj. after *πώς* see WM., p. 373 f.; in direct discourse the question would run Πῶς αὐτὸν...ἀποκτείνωμεν; and the mood is retained notwithstanding the tense of *ἔζητον* (WM., p. 374).

2. *ἔλεγον γάρ Μή κτλ.*] An echo from the council chamber which reached the Apostles and found its place in the traditions of the Church. Voices were heard deprecating an arrest after the Paschal week had well begun (*ἐν τῇ ἑορτῇ*); it must be made during the next few hours, or postponed till after the Feast. Μή, used elliptically, cf. Blass, *Gr.* p. 293 f., and Lightfoot on Gal. v. 13; if we are to supply a verb, the previous words suggest *κρατήσωμεν αὐτόν*. Μή ποτε *ἔσται*, more vivid than Mt.'s *ἴνα μὴ γένηται*; the use of *ἴνα* and the ind. fut. represents the danger as real and imminent, and adds force to the deprecation: cf. Lightfoot on Col. ii. 8, Westcott on Heb. iii. 12, and Field, *Notes*, p. 38. The Sanhedrists lived in fear of their own people (Lc. *ἔφοβούντο γάρ τὸν λαόν*: cf. xi. 18, note, xii. 12). Θόρυβος τοῦ λαοῦ, not merely "clamour," "uproar" (v. 28), but as Vg. *tumultus*, a riot, or its precursor, an outbreak of disorder (Acts xx. 1, xxiv. 18).

3—9. THE EPISODE OF THE ANOINT-

ING AT BETHANY (Mt. xxvi. 6—13, Jo. xii. 2—8).

3. *καὶ ὄντος αὐτοῦ ἐν Βηθανίᾳ*] There is nothing either in Mc. or Mt. to raise a doubt as to the historical sequence; indeed Mt.'s *γενομένου* following upon *ὅτε ἔτέλεσεν κτλ.* (v. 1) may seem to suggest that the supper occurred immediately after the Lord's arrival at Bethany on the evening of the "Day of questions." St John, however, places it before the Triumphal Entry (Jo. xii. 1 ff., 12; see Mc. xi. 1, note); and his order has been generally accepted from the time of Tatian (cf. Hill, p. 196 f.). Augustine (*de cons. ev.* ii. 78) rightly points out that the two Synoptists do not definitely contradict the Fourth Gospel: at the same time it may be questioned whether either of them consciously connected the event with the first day at Bethany ("recapitulando ergo ad illum diem redeunt in Bethaniam qui erat ante sex dies paschae"). For some reason which does not lie upon the surface (cf. *vv.* 4, 10, notes) this episode had been dislodged from its historical order in the tradition to which Mc. and Mt. were indebted for their account. On the whole question and the history of opinion upon it see Hastings, *D.B.* iii. p. 279 ff. "*Οντος αὐτοῦ...ἀνακειμένου αὐτοῦ*: the double gen. absolute accords with Mc.'s often disjointed style.

*ἐν τῇ οἰκίᾳ Σίμωνος κτλ.*] Tatian rightly limits himself here to Mt. Mc. Jo., placing Lc. vii. 36 ff. in another and much earlier connexion (Hill, p. 100 ff.), and this view was held at a later time by Apollinaris and Theo-

τοῦ λεπροῦ κατακειμένου αὐτοῦ ἥλθεν γυνὴ ἔχουσα ἀλάβαστρον μύρου νάρδου πιστικῆς πολυτελοῦς.

3 ηλθεν] προσηλθεν αυτω 13 69 124 346 | om ναρδου πιστ. πολυτ. D | πιστικης  
spicati c ff q r<sup>vid</sup> vg optimi a | πολυτελous] πολυτιμου AGM<sup>mg</sup> I 13 28 69 1071 2<sup>lo</sup> alnom

dore of Mopsuestia (Victor). Origen, however, speaks of the two narratives as commonly confused in his time (*in Mt. ad l.* “multi quidem existimant de una eademque muliere quatuor evangelistas exposuisse”). There are points of resemblance—the name of the host, and the use of an ἀλάβαστρος, to which Jo. adds the anointing of the Feet, and the wiping them with the hair—but, as Origen points out, there is an essential difference in the persons whose act is described (“non enim credibile est ut Maria quam diligebat Iesus...peccatrix in civitate dicatur”). That the circumstances were intentionally modified by Lc. (Holtzmann, see Plummer *ad l.*) is scarcely less incredible in view of Lc.’s own statement of his historical principles (i. 3).

According to Jo. the supper at Bethany was given in the house of Martha (ἡ Μάρθα διηκόνει, cf. Lc. x. 38 ff. and Mc. i. 31). It is not necessary to regard the reference to Simon in Mt. and Mc. as due to the influence of Lc.’s story. Simon the leper (on the commonness of the name see i. 16, note) may have been Martha’s husband, now dead or parted from her by his disease, or the father of the family (Thphl.: φασὶ τινες καὶ πατέρα εἶναι τοῦ Λαζάρου, ὃν ἀπὸ τῆς λέπρας καθαρίσας εἰσπιάτο παρ’ αὐτῷ). The epithet ὁ λεπρός may have clung to the leper after his recovery; Jerome, who compares Μαθθαῖος ὁ τελώνης (Mt. x. 3), remarks: “sic et leprosus Simon iste vocatur antiquo nomine, ut ostendatur a Domino fuisse curatus.” The suggestion of Ephrem (*ev. conc. exp.* p. 205) is improbable: “quomodo lepra in corpore Simonis permanere poterat, qui purificatorem leprae in domo sua recumbentem

vidit? forsitan...pro sua hospitalitate mercedem accepit purificationem.” That Simon was the actual host and present at the feast cannot be inferred from ἐν οἰκίᾳ Σίμωνος.

ἥλθεν γυνὴ κτλ. Jo. ἡ οὖν Μαράμ (cf. Jo. xi. 2): her anonymity in the Synoptists is perhaps due to the Galilean origin of the synoptic tradition. In the cycle of events hitherto described by Mc. Mary of Bethany had no place; Lc.’s reference to her (x. 38 ff.) comes from another source. “Ἐχουσα ἀλάβαστρον μύρου: so Mt.; Jo., λαβούσα λίτραν μύρου. On the gen. see WM., p. 235. Ἀλάβαστρος (so Mc., cf. τὴν ἀλ., *infra*; also ὁ ἀλ. (B) and τὸ ἀλάβαστρον (A) 4 Regn. xxi. 4) is an alabaster flask such as was commonly used for preserving precious unguents; cf. Herod. iii. 20 δῶρα φέροντας...μύρον ἀλάβαστρον; Plin. *H. N.* xiii. 2 “unguenta optume servantur in alabastris.” This ‘alabaster’ held a λίτρα (i.e. a Roman *libra*) of fragrant oil of the most costly kind (Mt. βαρυτίμον, Jo. πολυτίμον)—for πολυτελής cf. Prov. i. 13 (κτῆσις), xxxi. 10 (λίθος), Sap. ii. 7 (οἶνος), 1 Tim. ii. 9 (ἱματισμός). On the genitives μύρου νάρδου see WM., pp. 235, 238; the first expresses the local relation of the μύρον to the ἀλάβαστρος, the second defines the former as of the particular kind known as νάρδος πιστική. Νάρδος (Heb. נָרְדָה, from a Sanscrit root), a product of the *Nardostachys nardus jatamansi*, a native of the Himalayas (Tristram, *N. H. of the Bible*, p. 485), was used by luxurious Israelites (Cant. i. 12, iv. 13 f., cf. Driver *Intr.*, p. 422, note 2; Enoch xxxii. 1), and at a later time by the Greeks (Athen. xv. 691 Β ναρδίνου δὲ μύρον μέμνηται

συντρίψασα τὴν ἀλάβαστρον κατέχεεν αὐτοῦ τῆς  
§ go 4 κεφαλῆς. 4 § ἦσαν δέ τινες ἀγανακτοῦντες πρὸς ἑαυτούς

3 συντρίψασα ΝΒΛΨ me] pr και ACDW<sup>b</sup>ΧΓΔΠΣΦ min<sup>omnvid</sup> latt syrr arm θραυσασα D 2<sup>pe</sup> | την αλαβ. Ν<sup>e</sup>ΒCLΔ] τον αλαβ. Ν<sup>\*</sup>ΑDEFHKSUVW<sup>b</sup>ΧΓΠ 1071 al<sup>pl</sup> το αλαβ. GMΦ 1 13 69 | της κεφαλης] pr κατα AW<sup>b</sup>ΧΓΠΣΦ min<sup>pl</sup> pr επι D 20<sup>ev</sup> (et ut vid a ff q vg) τη κεφαλη Ψ 4 ησαν δε τινες...εαυτους] οι δε μαθηται αυτου διεπονουντο D 2<sup>pe</sup> a ff i (arm) om προς εαυτους c k

Ménavaros) and Romans (Plin. *H. N.* xiii. 5, Hor. *Od.* ii. 11, iv. 12, Ov. *de arte am.* iii. 443, Tib. ii. 2. 7, iii. 6. 9). The epithet *πιστική* (Mc., Jo.) is not without difficulty. *Πιστικός* occurs in the sense of ‘trustworthy,’ ‘genuine,’ in late writers, e.g. Artemid. *Onir.* 2. 32 γυναικά πιστικὴν καὶ οἰκοῦρον, and *πιστικώς* is found nearly in the sense of *πιστῶς*. The epithet has therefore been taken to mean that the nard was genuine, not a cheap imitation; cf. Thph. : τὴν ἄδολον γάρδον καὶ μετὰ πίστεως κατασκευασθεῖσαν, Plin. *H. N.* xii. 12 adulteratur et pseudonardi herba...sincerum quidem levitate deprehenditur et colore rufo odorisque suavitate.” Jerome (*tr. in Mc.*) plays lightly on this meaning of the word: “ideo vos vocati estis ‘pistici,’ fideles: ecclesia... dona sua offert...fidem credentium.” Something however may be said for the alternative offered by Thph., εἶδος νάρδον οὐτω λεγόμενον. The word is transliterated in the Syriac (መስቀመጥ ሃገኘ), and in some O.L. texts (e.g. *nardi piscicæ* (sic), *k*; n. *pistici*, *d*), whilst the Vg. *nardi spicati* suggests that *πιστικός* may be an attempt to represent *spicatus*; cf. Galen cited in Wetstein: ἐπὶ δὲ τῶν πλουσίων γυναικῶν καὶ τὸ καλούμενον ὃν<sup>π</sup> αὐτῶν...σπίκατον προσφέρουσι. For *πιστικός* *potabilis*, i.e. liquid, there is no good authority. Πολυτελούς: cf. v. 5, note. Clem. Al. *paed.* ii. 8 § 61 ὅπερ ἥγειτο τὸ κάλλιστον εἴναι παρ' αὐτῇ, τὸ μύρον, τούτῳ τετίμηκε τὸν δεσπότην. συντρίψασα τὴν ἀλ.] A detail peculiar to Mc. Vg. *fracto alabastro*; she crushed or knocked off the head of

the thin alabaster flask; it had served its purpose and would not be used again. Renan (*Vie*, p. 385) gives another reason: “selon un vieil usage qui consistait à briser la vaisselle dont on s’était servi pour traiter un étranger de distinction,” adding “j’ai vu cet usage se pratiquer encore à Sour.” For this use of *συντρίβειν* cf. Ps. ii. 9 (ὡς σκεύος κεραμέως συντρίψεις, cf. Apoc. ii. 27), Sir. xxi. 14 (ὡς ἄγγιον συντετριμένον).

κατέχεεν αὐτοῦ τῆς κεφαλῆς] Mt. ἐπὶ τῆς κεφ. αὐτοῦ ἀνακειμένου. Mc. has already represented the Lord as lying on the *triclinium* (κατακειμένου αὐτῷ); the woman is standing behind and over Him. The gen. κεφαλῆ answers to the downward direction of the fluid, expressed in *κατέχεεν*, cf. WM., pp. 477, 537 n.; Blass, *Gr.* p. 106; and see Gen. xxxix. 21, Ps. lxxxviii. (lxxxix.) 46. Such an act was not an unusual attention to a guest; cf. Ps. xxii. (xxiii.) 5, Cant. i. 12, and the passages from Roman poets cited above; and add Plat. *resp.* iii. 398 Α μύρον κατὰ τῆς κεφαλῆς καταχέαντες. Acc. to Jo. the Feet were anointed—a reminiscence, possibly, of the earlier anointing described by Lc. The woman may, however, as Aug. supposes, have performed both acts, though we cannot unreservedly admit his canon, “ubi singuli evangelistæ singula commemorant, utrumque factum intelligere [oportet].” To anoint the feet of a recumbent guest would have been possible (see note on v. 18), but less easy and usual, and on this occasion perhaps less appropriate.

4. ἦσαν δέ τινες κτλ.] Mt. ιδόντες

*Εἰς τί ἡ ἀπώλεια αὕτη τοῦ μύρου γέγονεν;* <sup>5</sup> ήδύνατο 5  
*γὰρ τοῦτο τὸ μύρον πραθῆναι ἐπάνω δηναρίων τρια-*  
*κοσίων καὶ δοθῆναι τοῖς πτωχοῖς· καὶ ἐνεβριμῶντο*

<sup>4</sup> εἰς τι Ψ] pr καὶ λεγοντες AC<sup>2</sup>W<sup>b</sup>X<sup>1</sup>ΔΠΣΦ min<sup>fere omn</sup> latt<sup>vt pl vg</sup> pr καὶ ελεγον D 2<sup>pe</sup>  
 syrr<sup>sin pesh</sup> arm aeth | αυτῇ τοντον k syrr<sup>pesh</sup> arm | om τον μυρον min<sup>pau</sup> a cl | om  
 γεγονεν D 64 a ff i 5 om γαρ D k arm aeth | τοντο το μυρον] om τοντο Ι om  
 το μυρον EFGHMSVXΓ min<sup>pau</sup> c k syrr<sup>sin pesh</sup> me | ενεβριμουντο ΙC\* c<sup>scr</sup>

δὲ οἱ μαθηταὶ ἡγανάκτησαν, Ιο. λέγει δὲ  
 'Ιούδας ὁ Ἰσκαριώτης. The indefiniteness of Mc.'s statement may be an indication of the early date of his source; personal considerations still had weight in dictating reserve under such circumstances. Cf. xiv. 47 εἰς δὲ  
 τις τῶν παρεστηκότων, where again Jo. supplies the name. The feeling expressed aloud by Judas may have been shared by others in the Apostolic body; as men unaccustomed to luxury they might naturally resent the apparent waste. <sup>7</sup>Ησαν ἄγ. πρὸς ἑαυτούς, not as Vg., erant indignae ferentes intra  
 semet ipsos, but rather as R.V. "had indignation among themselves," i.e. exchanged remarks or looks which betrayed their sympathy with Judas. For ἦσαν ἄγαρ, see WM., p. 438, and for πρὸς ἑαυτούς ad invicem, cf. xvi. 3, and the nearly equivalent πρὸς ἀλλή-  
 λους in iv. 41, viii. 16.

εἰς τι ἡ ἀπώλεια αὕτη κτλ.] 'What end can it have served?'—the plausible *cui bono* of a shortsighted utilitarianism. For εἰς τι cf. xv. 34, Mt. xiv. 31, and esp. Sir. xxxix. 17 (26) οὐκ ἔστιν  
 εἰπεῖν Τί τοῦτο; εἰς τι τοῦτο; (ἢ πῶ?)  
 'Απώλεια in the active sense of wasting (Vg. *perditio*) is perhaps unique in Biblical Gk.; the commentators refer to Polyb. vi. 59. 5, where ἀπ. is contrasted with τήρησις. For ἀπόλλυσθαι 'to be wasted' cf. ii. 22. Γέγονεν: the perfect calls attention to the act as complete and still abiding in its sensible effects; cf. v. 33, ix. 21.

5. ήδύνατο γὰρ τοῦτο τὸ μύρον κτλ.]

The unguent might well be said to have been wasted, in view of (*γάρ*) the good which the owner might have done with it. Δηναρίων τριακοσίων is not governed by ἐπάνω (WM., p. 313), but is the gen. of price (WM., p. 258, cf. Jo. xii. 5); as to the amount see Pliny *H.N.* xiii. 4, who speaks of certain unguents which "excedunt quadragenos denarios librae." Mt.'s πολλοῦ seems to indicate a fading interest in such details. On τοῖς πτωχοῖς see x. 21, note, and cf. Gal. ii. 10. The Passover was perhaps a time when alms of this kind were specially demanded; cf. Jo. xiii. 29. How many of the poor of Jerusalem might have been relieved and gladdened by the money wasted on an extravagance! The force of the remark becomes apparent when it is remembered that the labourer's daily wage was a denarius (Mt. xx. 2) and that two denarii sufficed for the inn-keeper's payment in Lc. x. 35, whilst two hundred (Mc. vi. 37) would have gone some way to feed a multitude.

On ήδύνατο without *ἄν* see WM., p. 352, and on the augment, WSchm., p. 99. Ἐνεβριμῶντο αὐτῇ, Mc. only. The remarks were directed against the woman, for no one ventured to complain of the Lord's acceptance of the offering. For ἐμβριμᾶσθαι see note on i. 43; the word takes its note whether of strictness or harshness from the occasion. Here the Vg. rendering is doubtless right: *fremebant in eam.* Cf. Thpl.: ἐνεβριμῶντο αὐτῇ· τοντέστιν, ἡγανάκτουν, ὕβριζον, ἐπεπλήκτουν αὐτῇ.

6 αὐτῇ. ὁ δὲ Ἰησοῦς εἶπεν Ἀφετε αὐτήν· τί αὐτῇ κόπους παρέχετε; καλὸν ἔργον ἡργάσατο ἐν ἑμοι· 7 πάντοτε γὰρ τοὺς πτωχούς ἔχετε μεθ' ἑαυτῶν, καὶ ὅταν θέλητε δύνασθε αὐτοῖς [πάντοτε] εὖ ποιῆσαι· ἐμὲ

5 αὐτῇ] pr *ev* D\*      6 εἰπεν] + αυτοις D 238 2<sup>pe</sup> a eff ik q syr<sup>sin</sup> arm aegg | αφεις k | καλον] + γαρ ΝG 13 28 69 2<sup>pe</sup> al<sup>paue</sup> c syr<sup>sin</sup> arm | ηργασατο Ν\*Β\*Δ 69 150<sup>ev</sup> ειργ. Ν\*AB<sup>3</sup>CLW<sup>b</sup>ΧΓΔΠΣΦ<sup>3</sup> min<sup>pl</sup> | εν εμοι] εις εμε 5 min<sup>paue</sup>      7 μεθ εαυτων] μεθ υμων D 91 299 | αυτοις ΑΧΠΣΦ min<sup>pl</sup> | om παντοτε 2<sup>o</sup> Ν\*ACDUΧΓΔΣΦ min<sup>pl</sup> latt syrr arm (hab Ν<sup>c,a</sup> BL aegg) | ποιειν D\*ΔΨ min<sup>paue</sup>

6. ὁ δὲ Ἰησοῦς εἶπεν Ἀφετε αὐτήν κτλ.] "Αφετε αὐτήν is "let her alone" (R.V.) rather than "suffer ye her" (Vg., Wycliffe), as the next words shew. *Κόπους* (*κόπον*) *παρέχειν* occurs again in Lc. xi. 7, xviii. 5, Gal. vi. 17, and is found in Aristotle; but as Wetstein points out, class. writers prefer *παρέχειν πράγματα* [or *πόνον, όχλον*]. The interference was unreasonable (*τι;*), and the woman should rather have been commended; her act was a *καλὸν ἔργον*, one which possessed true moral beauty; cf. Jo. x. 32 (Westcott), 1 Tim. v. 10<sup>a</sup>, 25, vi. 18, Tit. iii. 8, 14, Heb. x. 24; the more usual phrase is *ἔργον ἀγαθόν* (Acts ix. 36, Rom. xiii. 3, Eph. ii. 10, 1 Tim. v. 10<sup>b</sup>, 2 Tim. iii. 17). Mc.'s *ἐν ἑμοι* becomes *εἰς ἐμέ* in Mt. —both perhaps answering to Τ. The goodness of the act lay in the grateful love which it displayed (cf. Lc. vii. 47 *ἡγάπησεν πολὺ*); no sacrifice was too costly to offer to One who had restored her brother to life. The Lord's tacit acceptance of supreme devotion as His due is not less remarkable than Mary's readiness to render it; cf. viii. 35, Mt. xxv. 40 (*ἐμοὶ ἐποίησατε*), Jo. xxi. 15 ff. (*ἀγαπᾶς...δ' γαπᾶς...φιλεῖς με;*). The beauty of a good act varies according to the relation in which it stands to Christ.

7. πάντοτε γὰρ τοὺς πτωχούς κτλ.] Cf. Deut. xv. 11 οὐ γὰρ μὴ ἐκλίπη ἐνδεής ἀπὸ τῆς γῆς. The first and third clauses of this saying of Christ are preserved in almost identical words by Mt., Mc.,

Jo., but Mc. alone has καὶ ὅταν θέλητε... εὖ ποιῆσαι. There was no intention on the Lord's part to contrast services rendered to Himself in person with services rendered to the poor for His sake—the two are in His sight equivalents (Mt. xxv. 40, 45); His purpose is to point out that the former would very soon be impossible, whilst opportunities for the latter would abound to the end of time. "Οταν θέλητε: the will was not wanting to the Apostolic Church (Rom. xv. 26, Gal. ii. 10, 2 Cor. viii. 1 ff.); the faith of Christ yielded a new ground of sympathy with the needy (*δι' ὑμᾶς ἐπτρώχευσεν*) which in all ages has made the Church a refuge of the destitute. As to the power to execute this goodwill see 2 Cor. viii. 3, and for the juxtaposition of will and power cf. i. 40. Ἐμὲ οὐ πάντοτε *ἔχετε* is true in the sense in which it was said (cf. Jo. xvii. 11 οὐκέτι εἰμὶ ἐν τῷ κόσμῳ), although in another sense the Lord could teach Ἐγώ μεθ ὑμῶν εἰμι πάσας τὰς ἡμέρας. Jerome: "videtur in hoc loco de praesentia dicere corporali." Εὖ ποιεῖν (not εὐποιεῖν) occurs here only in the N.T., though fairly frequent in the LXX., where it usually stands for בְּנִי; the acc. commonly follows (e.g. Gen. xxxii. 9 (10) εὐ σε ποιήσω), but the dat. is also found, cf. Sir. xii. 1 f. ἐὰν εὖ ποιῆσ, γνῶθι τίνι ποιεῖς...εὖ ποίησον εὐσεβεῖ, καὶ εὐρήσεις ἀνταπόδομα, where the whole context is instructive as to the Jewish conception of εὐποίᾳ.

δὲ οὐ πάντοτε ἔχετε. <sup>8</sup> ὁ ἐσχεν ἐποίησεν προέλαβεν 8 μυρίσαι τὸ σῶμά μου εἰς τὸν ἐνταφιασμόν. <sup>9</sup> ἀμὴν 9 δὲ λέγω ὑμῖν Ὅπου ἐὰν κηρυχθῇ τὸ εὐαγγέλιον εἰς

8 εσχεν] ειχεν Φ min<sup>nonn</sup> γαρ syr<sup>sin</sup> | εποιησεν NBLΨ i 13 28 69 209 346 2<sup>po</sup> a me syrb<sup>al</sup> pr (vel+) αυτη ACDW<sup>b</sup>ΧΓ(Δ)ΠΣΦ min<sup>pl</sup> offfi q vg om k<sup>vid</sup> 9 om δε ACFHMXUX min<sup>pl</sup> f ffi i k q vg syrr<sup>sin hel</sup> arm aegg go aeth | οπου] pr οτι 124 604 a cdflik | το εναγγ.] + τουτο ACW<sup>b</sup>ΧΓΔΠΣΦΨ min<sup>pl</sup> (c f) q vg syrr<sup>pesh hel</sup> arm aegg go

8. ὁ ἐσχεν ἐποίησεν] Mc. only.  
Ἐσχεν sc. ποιῆσαι. For this use of ἔχειν cf. Mt. xviii. 25 (Lc. vii. 42), Lc. xii. 4, xiv. 14, 'Jo.' viii. 6, Acts iv. 14, Heb. vi. 13; the infinitive is not always expressed, as Kypke shews, quoting e.g. Dion. Hal. ant. vii. p. 467 οὐκ ἔχον δὲ ὅτι ἀν ἄλλο ποιῶσιν. For the general sense see 2 Cor. viii. 12 καθὸ ἐὰν ἔχῃ εὐπρόσδεκτος, οὐκ καθὸ οὐκ ἔχει. Mary could not prevent the Lord's Death; what she did He accounts as a supreme effort to do honour to His dead body. Προέλαβεν μυρίσαι, *prae-venit ungere*: Mt. πρὸς τὸ ἐνταφίασαι με ἐποίησεν. Προλαμβάνειν 'anticipate' is used in class. writers with a case, or absolutely; for the inf. see Kypke *ad l.* and Blass, *Gr.* p. 227, who compare Jos. ant. xviii. 7 προλαβὼν ἀνελεῖν and Ps. Clem. 2 Cor. viii. 2 ἐὰν δὲ προφθάσῃ...βαλεῖν. Μυρίζειν is ἀπ. λεγ. in Biblical Gk., but occurs in Herodotus and the comic poets. Fragrant unguents were used for anointing the dead body after it had been washed (Lucian *de luct.* II λούσαντες αὐτὸν... καὶ μύρῳ τῷ καλλιστῷ χρίσαντες τὸ σῶμα)—a process to be distinguished from embalming, which, as we see from Jo. xix. 39, consisted of laying myrrh and aloes in the folds of the grave clothes. Acc. to *Ev. Petr.* 6 the Lord's Body was washed, and Mc. (xvi. 1) relates how on Saturday night the women ἡγόρασαν ἀρώματα ἵνα ἀλείψωσιν αὐτόν. But the Resurrection prevented the fulfilment of their design, and thus as it seems the only anointing which the Lord received was this anticipatory one at Bethany

a week before He lay in the tomb. Εἰς τὸν ἐνταφιασμόν 'with a view to its preparation for burial.' Ἐνταφίαζειν (Ὦῃ), ἐνταφιαστής (Ὀῃ) occur in Gen. 1. 2 (LXX.) in connexion with the embalming of Jacob, and ἐνταφιαστής is found in the papyri in this sense (Deissmann, *B. St.*, p. 120 f.). But words derived from ἐντάφιος may be used to include everything belonging to the preparation of a dead body for the grave; cf. *Test. xii. patr. Iud.* 26 μηδεὶς με ἐνταφίασῃ πολυτελεῖ ἐσθῆτι.

St John follows another tradition in his report of this saying: ἄφες αὐτήν, ἵνα εἰς τὴν ἡμέραν τοῦ ἐνταφιασμοῦ μον τηρήσῃ αὐτό (NBD), or acc. to an easier but less strongly supported reading, ἄφες αὐτήν εἰς τ. ἡμ. τ. ἐντ. μον τετήρηκεν αὐτό. Mt. confirms Mc.'s account, but in other terms (βαλούσα γάρ αὐτη τὸ μύρον τοῦτο ἐπὶ τοῦ σώματός μον πρὸς τὸ ἐνταφίασαι με ἐποίησεν). The obscurity of the words may have led to these variations. For their general meaning comp. Euth.: καθάπερ προφητεύοντα τὸν πλησιάζοντα μον θάνατον.

9. ἀμὴν δὲ λέγω ὑμῖν κτλ.] Omitted by Jo., but reported by Mt., Mc., in almost identical words. For τὸ εὐαγγέλιον see i. 1, 14 f., viii. 35. The world-wide proclamation of the Gospel is explicitly foretold in xiii. 10; on this earlier occasion it is assumed, as if it were a matter of course. Εἰς δόλον τὸν κόσμον (Mt. ἐν ὅλῳ τῷ κόσμῳ) is new, as an equivalent for εἰς πάντα τὰ ἔθνη, but see Mt. v. 14, xiii. 38, and for the phrase, Mc. viii. 36. The thought of the κόσμος as the field of

όλον τὸν κόσμον, καὶ ὁ ἐποίησεν αὐτῇ λαληθήσεται εἰς μνημόσυνον αὐτῆς.

10      <sup>τὸ</sup> Καὶ Ἰούδας Ἰσκαριώθ ὁ εἰς τῶν δώδεκα ἀπῆλθεν

10 Ιούδας] pr. ιδον 13 63 64 69 124 alforte pr. o FGHKSUVX alpl | Ισκαριώθ  
Ν\*BC\*vidLΨ (o Ισκ.) (a f i Scarioth)] (o) Ισκαριωτης Ν\*AC<sup>c</sup>LW<sup>b</sup>ΧΓΔΠΣΦ min<sup>omn</sup>vid  
Or Eus Σκαριωτης D (c) (f) k l q Scariota syrr arm | om o eis τ. δωδ. A | o eis  
ΝBC\*vidLMΨ] om o C<sup>c</sup>W<sup>b</sup>ΧΓΔΠΣΦ min<sup>omn</sup>vid Or Eus eis ek D 2<sup>po</sup> latt<sup>vid</sup>

the activities of Christ and the Church, though much more abundant and more fully developed in the Fourth Gospel, is present in the oldest Synoptic sources. For κηρύσσειν εἰς cf. i. 39, i Thess. ii. 9, and see Blass, *Gr.* p. 124.

καὶ ὁ ἐποίησεν αὐτῇ κτλ.] This second prediction (Thph. : δόν προφητείας, ὅτι τε τὸ εὐαγγέλιον κηρυχθήσεται...καὶ ὅτι τὸ ἔργον τῆς γυναικὸς συγκηρυχθήσεται) secured its own fulfilment; an incident marked by so striking a comment was naturally enshrined in the earliest tradition, and became the property of the Catholic Church in the Gospels of Mt. and Mc. That the saying has not been reported by Lc. and Jo. is an interesting indication of the independence of those Evangelists. Καὶ ὁ ἐπ., together with the preaching of the Gospel this story shall also be told, and become a commonplace of Christian tradition. Εἰς μνημόσυνον αὐτῆς, cf. Acts x. 4 εἰς μνημόσυνον ἐνώπιον τοῦ θεοῦ. The word μνημ., which is of frequent occurrence in the Lxx. as the equivalent of ζήτει, or ζητᾷ, is also found in early and late class. Gk., especially in the pl. (cf. τὰ εὐαγγέλια, i. 1, note). The Lord erects a memorial for all time to her who had done her best to honour Him (i Regn. ii. 30 τοὺς δοξάζοντάς με δοξάσω). He who received not glory from men (Jo. v. 41) knew how to appreciate to the full the homage of a sincere love. Victor: ἐγὼ γάρ (φησί) τοσούτον ἀπέχω τοῦ καταδικάσαι αὐτὴν ὡς κακῶς πεποιηκύιαν...ὅτι οὐδὲ ἀφῆσω λαθεῖν τὸ γεγενημένον, ἀλλ' ὁ

κόσμος εἴσεται τὸ ἐν οἰκίᾳ εἰργασμένον καὶ ἐν κρυπτῷ· καὶ γὰρ μεγάλης διανοίας ἦν τὸ γεγενημένον καὶ πολλῆς τεκμήριου πίστεως.

10—11. INTERVIEW OF JUDAS WITH THE PRIESTS (Mt. xxvi. 14—16, Lc. xxii. 3—6).

10. καὶ Ἰούδας Ἰσκαριώθ κτλ.] Judas Iscariot is mentioned by Mc. only in this chapter (vv. 10, 43), and in the Apostolic list (iii. 19); for Ἰσκαριώθ—the only form of that name used by Mc.—see the note on the latter passage. As to the sequence, Mc. as usual connects by a simple καὶ, while Mt. uses τότε, and thus appears to place the application of Judas to the Priests immediately after the supper at Bethany. Some reason there must have been for this early grouping; if Jo. is right as to the date of the supper (see note on v. 3), the sequence in Mt. Mc. is probably ethical; its purpose may be either (a) to place in sharp contrast the piety of Mary and the baseness of Judas (Thph. : ἵνα δείξῃ τὴν ἀναίδειαν τοῦ Ἰούδα), or (b) to indicate that the latter incident arose in some way out of the former; whether it was that the Lord's persistent reference to His death drove Judas to despair, or that he resented the expenditure of money which might have found its way into his own hands (Jo. xii. 4), or that the Lord's look or manner convinced him that his habit of pilfering and his treacherous intentions were known. Or (c) the arrangement of the narrative may be chiefly due to a desire to bring together the Lord's words about His approaching

*πρὸς τοὺς ἀρχιερεῖς, ἵνα αὐτὸν παραδοῖ αὐτοῖς. ἦτοι οἱ  
δὲ ἀκούσαντες ἔχαρησαν, καὶ ἐπηγγείλαντο αὐτῷ*

10 παραδοῖ B (-δω ΚΑΛΨ rell exc C de quo non liq)] προδοῖ D (*proderet i k vg*) |  
om αυτοῖς D 28 91 299 2<sup>pe</sup> a effik syr<sup>sin</sup> Or Eus      11 om ακούσαντες D a effik  
Eus | επηγγείλαν Ψ

burial, and the story of the treachery which precipitated the end. The last solution is perhaps the best, as being the simplest; but it does not necessarily exclude the first two; the first at least may have been also present to the thoughts of those who originally drew up the common tradition.

'Ο εἰς τῶν δώδεκα : Mt. εἰς τ. δ., Lc. ὄντα ἐκ τοῦ ἀριθμοῦ τῶν δ. This reference to the position held by Judas in the Apostolate is not without meaning: cf. Thphr. : οὐ γάρ ἀπλῶς κείται τὸ 'εἰς τῶν δώδεκα,' ἀλλ' ἵνα δείξῃ ὅτι εἰς τῶν προκρίτων, ἐκλεκτὸς καὶ αὐτὸς ὁν. The art. is difficult to explain, especially as there is no trace of it in vv. 20, 43. 'Ο εἰς naturally implies a contrast to ὁ ἔτερος (cf. e.g. Lc. vii. 41, xvii. 34 f.); here, if it is to stand, the contrast is apparently with οἱ λοιποί, 'that one, the only one, of the Twelve who proved a traitor or was capable of the act,' or 'the notorious member of the body,' as opposed to εἰς τις, an unknown individual; unless ὁ εἰς = εἰς ὁν, cf. ὁ εἰς τῶν ἀγίων ἀγγέλων in Enoch xx. ff. Another explanation, however, has been suggested which deserves consideration. Since Judas is frequently described in the Gospels as εἰς τῶν δώδεκα (Mt. xxvi. 47, Mc. xiv. 10, 20, 43, Lc. xxii. 47 (cf. 3), Jo. vi. 71), the article may be intended to mark the words as a familiar designation of the traitor—'that One of the Twelve' who is notorious. 'Απῆλθεν πρὸς τοὺς ἀρχιερεῖς. He realised that in Jerusalem it was with this class rather than with the Scribes that the issue lay. Probably they were still sitting in the palace of Caiaphas (v. 1); with them were the heads of the Levitical Temple

police (Lc. συνελάλησεν τοῖς ἀρχ. καὶ στρατηγοῖς, sc. τοῦ ἵεροῦ, cf. Acts iv. 1, v. 24). His business with them was to arrange the terms of the Betrayal (ἀπῆλθεν...ἵνα παραδοῖ); cf. Bede: "ostendit eum non a principibus invitatum, non ulla necessitate constrictum, sed sponte propria sceleratae mentis inesse consilium." On the form παραδοῖ see iv. 29, note. Even at this climax παραδοῦναι is preferred by the Evangelists to προδοῦναι : cf. i. 14, iii. 19, ix. 31, notes.

II. οἱ δὲ ἀκούσαντες ἔχαρησαν κτλ.] The proposal came from Judas, not from the Priests, but it was received by them with more delight than they would care to shew—ἔχαρησαν, not ἡγαλλιάσαντο : cf. Mt. v. 12, Apoc. xix. 7; both words may be used of interior joy (Lc. i. 47, Jo. xvi. 22), but the former is the more suggestive of the inward feeling, the latter of its audible or visible expression. 'Ἐπηγγείλαντο αὐτῷ : the promise was a response to a direct question from Judas (Mt. εἶπεν Τί θέλετε μοι δοῦναι;). Mt. alone mentions the amount promised, which was therefore not a matter of common tradition; probably he was struck by its agreement with the sum named in Zach. xi. 12 ff. The ἀργύριον (τριάκοντα ἀργύρια Mt., τρ. ἀργυρῶν sc. σίκλους, Zach.) was doubtless paid in shekels or the equivalent tetradrachms which were current (Mt. xvii. 24, cf. Madden, p. 240, Hastings, D.B., iii. 428). For the loss of the 300 denarii Judas consoled himself by a compact which yielded 30 staters (perhaps two-fifths of what Mary had spent on the spikenard; see Jos. ant. iii. 8. 2, Madden, p. 246). Jerome: "infelix

ἀργύριον δοῦναι. καὶ ἐζήτει πῶς αὐτὸν εὐκαίρως παραδοῖ.

12     <sup>12</sup>Καὶ τὴν πρώτην ἡμέραν τῶν ἀξύμων, ὅτε τὸ πάσχα ἔθυον, λέγουσιν αὐτῷ οἱ μαθηταὶ αὐτοῦ Ποῦ θέλεις

ii αργυρία ΑΚΥΤΠΣ min<sup>sat</sup>mu syr<sup>ch</sup> Eus | παραδοῖ BD (-δω ΝΑΛΨ rell ut vid)] + αυτοῖς Δ min<sup>pau</sup> the     12 εθυον] ησθιον syr<sup>sin</sup> vid | om αυτον D a ff<sup>vid</sup> vg arm

Judas damnum quod ex effusione unguenti se fecisse credebat vult Magistri pretio compensare." Small as this sum was, Judas seems to have been satisfied, the more so perhaps because it was paid on the spot (Mt. ἔστησαν αὐτῷ). He went back to the Master and the Eleven with the price of blood in his girdle.

καὶ ἐζήτει πῶς κτλ.] The Priests had transferred their anxieties to the traitor (cf. xii. 12, xiv. 1); it was for him now to contrive and plot. They had sought an opportunity of arresting an enemy; it was the business of Judas to seek an opportunity of betraying a friend. Πῶς αὐτὸν εὐκαίρως παραδοῖ Mc.; Mt. ἐζήτει εὐκαίριαν (so also Lc.) ἵνα αὐτὸν παραδῷ. For εὐκαίρως cf. 2 Tim. iv. 2 ἐπίστρθι εὐκαίρως ἀκαίρως, and see Mc. vi. 21, note. The problem which presented itself to Judas was the same which had perplexed the Priests—how to elude the crowd of Galileans and other visitors at the Feast who were still with Jesus (Lc. τὸν παραδοῦναι αὐτὸν ἀτερ ὄχλον). But his position in the inner circle of disciples clearly gave him an advantage in dealing with it, which the Priests did not possess.

12—16. PREPARATIONS FOR THE PASCHAL MEAL (Mt. xxvi. 17—19, Lc. xxii. 7—13).

12. τὴν πρώτην ἡμέραν τῶν ἀξύμων] See v. 1, note. Lc. calls it ἡ ἡμέρα τῶν ἀξύμων, and in both Mc. and Lc. it is further defined as the day on which the Paschal lamb was killed (Mc. ὅτε τὸ πάσχα ἔθυον = Lc. ἡ ἔδει θύεσθαι τὸ π.). Euth.: πρώτην δὲ τῶν ἀξ. τὴν πρὸ τοῦ πάσχα φασὶν ἡμέραν, τὴν τρισκαι-

δεκάτην μὲν τοῦ μηνός, πέμπτην δὲ τῆς ἑβδομάδος. The lamb was killed and eaten on Nisan 14 (Exod. xii. 6, Lev. xxiii. 5, Num. ix. 3, 5, 11, xxviii. 16, 2 Chron. xxx. 2, 15, 1 Esdr. i. 1, vii. 10, 2 Esdr. vi. 19 f., Ezech. xlvi. 21), and though the ἑορτὴ τῶν ἀξύμων began on Nisan 15 (Lev. xxiii. 6, Num. xxviii. 17), yet unleavened bread was eaten from the evening of Nisan 14 (Exod. xii. 18), and by custom from noon on that day (J. Lightfoot *ad l.*, Edersheim, *Temple*, p. 189). Later Jewish usage identified the first day of unleavened bread (חֲנִילָה) with Nisan 15, but it is precarious on this ground to charge the Synoptists with inconsistency (*J. Th. St.* iii., p. 359). The phrase θύειν τὸ π. is from the Lxx. (Exod. xii. 21 (ΜΝΣ), Deut. xvi. 2 (ΠΒΣ) &c.); cf. 1 Cor. v. 7 τὸ π. ἥμαν ἐτύθη Χριστός. Θύειν does not necessarily convey the idea of sacrifice (cf. Lc. xv. 23, Jo. x. 10), yet the slaying of the πάσχα was a sacrificial act performed in the Court of the Priests, normally by the head of the household (Exod. xii. 6), but on occasions by Levites (2 Chron. xxx. 15 ff., xxxv. 3 ff., Ezr. vi. 19); see the ceremonial described in Edersheim, *Temple*, p. 190 ff. "Εθυον 'it was customary to kill'; imperf. of repeated action (Burton, § 24).

λέγουσιν αὐτῷ οἱ μαθ. αὐτοῦ] They approached Jesus (Mt. προσῆλθον), perhaps under the impression that He had overlooked the necessity for immediate preparation; Lc. seems to represent the Lord as taking the initiative. Ποῦ θέλεις...έτοιμάσθωμεν;

ἀπελθόντες ἐτοιμάσωμεν ἵνα φάγης τὸ πάσχα; <sup>13</sup> καὶ 13  
ἀποστέλλει δύο τῶν μαθητῶν αὐτοῦ καὶ λέγει § αὐτοῖς § P  
· Υπάγετε εἰς τὴν πόλιν, καὶ ἀπαντήσει ὑμῖν ἄνθρωπος  
κεράμιον ὕδατος βαστάζων· ἀκολουθήσατε αὐτῷ.  
<sup>14</sup> καὶ ὅπου ἔαν εἰσέλθῃ εἴπατε τῷ οἰκοδεσπότῃ ὅτι 14

12 ετοιμασωμεν]+σοι ΔΔ 2<sup>ρ</sup> αlpau<sup>c</sup> c f g i k l q v g syr pesh Or<sup>int</sup> 13 των μαθ.]  
pr εκ D latt Or<sup>int</sup> | και λεγει αυτοις] λεγων D 604 1071 2<sup>ρ</sup> a ff i q the Or<sup>int</sup> | και 3<sup>ρ</sup>]  
+εισελθοντων υμων εις την πολιν Σ 13 28 69 91 124 299 346 2<sup>ρ</sup> arm Or<sup>int</sup> 14 om  
οτι Σ 604

cf. WM., p. 356, Burton, § 171, and see x. 36, 51, xv. 9; for ἐτοιμάξειν ἵνα φάγης τὸ π. Mt. has ἐτ. σοι φαγεῖν τὸ π.: so the three Synoptists below, ἐτ. τὸ πάσχα; the harsher ἐτ. ἵνα appears again in Apoc. viii. 6.

13. ἀποστέλλει δύο] Mt. does not specify the number; Lc. on the other hand gives their names—ἀπέστειλεν Πέτρον καὶ Ἰωάννην, a grouping which is frequent in the early chapters of the Acts, iii. 1 ff., iv. 13 ff., viii. 14. Edersheim (*Life*, p. 487, *Temple*, p. 190) supposes that the two were entrusted with the purchase and sacrifice of the lamb; but the directions which the Lord gives relate only to the room and its arrangement. If the meal was (as the Synoptists imply) the Paschal supper, it seems possible that the lamb was provided by the οἰκοδεσπότης (v. 14), i.e. that the Lord and the Twelve shared the one which he had provided; if the household was a small one, such an arrangement would have been in accordance with the spirit of Exod. xii. 4 (cf. Edersheim, *Life*, ii. p. 483).

ὑπάγετε εἰς τὴν πόλιν] The Lord was therefore still outside, probably at or near Bethany. The two are sent into Jerusalem πρὸς τὸν δεῖνα (Mt.; Thph. : πρὸς ἄνθρωπον ἀγνώριστον, cf. Euth. : παρεσιώπησε μὲν τὸν ἀνδρὸς τὴν κλῆσιν, δπως μὴ μαθὼν τὴν οἰκίαν) Ιούδας ἐκδράμη πρὸς τὸν ἐπειθούλους καὶ εἰσαγάγη τούτους αὐτῷ πρὸ τοῦ παραδοῦναι τὸ μυστικὸν δεῖπνον

τοῖς μαθηταῖς). Mc. and Lc. add the remarkable direction ἀπαντήσει (Lc. συν.) ὑμῖν ἄνθρωπος κτλ. The man was probably a servant (Deut. xxix. 11 (10), Jos. ix. 27, 29, 33 (21, 23, 27)): he had been sent to fetch a supply of water, probably from Siloam or *Bir Eyâb* (*Recovery*, p. 10 ff., D. B.<sup>2</sup> p. 1590 ff.) and for use at the Feast (cf. Jo. ii. 6, xiii. 4 ff.), and entering the city on his return by a gate at the S.E. corner (cf. Neh. ii. 14 יְמִינַת־בְּשָׁמֶן), he crossed the path of the two, who were coming in from Bethany. Κεράμιον ὕδατος, an earthen pitcher filled with water; see WM., p. 235, and cf. κ. οἴνον Jer. xlvi. (xxxv.) 5; for βαστάζειν see Jo. xix. 17 β. τὸν σταυρόν, Gal. vi. 2, 5 β. βάρη, φορτίον. The man would act as an unconscious guide through the network of narrow and unfamiliar streets to the appointed place; the two were to follow in silence, and enter the house into which they saw him pass (Lc. ἀκ. αὐτῷ εἰς τὴν οἰκίαν).

Tertullian sees in the pitcher of water a prophecy of the great baptismal rite which signalled the approach of Easter in the ancient Church (*de bapt.* 19: “diem solemniores pascha praestat... nec incongruenter ad figuram interpretabitur quod... Dominus... paschae celebranda locum de signo aquae ostendit”).

14. εἴπατε τῷ οἰκοδεσπότῃ κτλ.] The message is not for the servant whose part is fulfilled when he had led them

‘Ο διδάσκαλος λέγει Ποῦ ἔστιν τὸ κατάλυμά μου  
ὅπου τὸ πάσχα μετὰ τῶν μαθητῶν μου φάγω;  
15 <sup>τις</sup> καὶ αὐτὸς ὑμῖν δείξει ἀνάγαιον μέγα ἐστρωμένον  
16 ἔτοιμον, καὶ ἐκεῖ ἔτοιμάσατε ὑμῖν. <sup>τις</sup> καὶ ἐξῆλθον

<sup>14 ο διδ.</sup>] + ημων syr<sup>sin</sup>(vid) pesh k | πον] pr o καιρος μου εγγυς εστιν syr<sup>sin</sup> | om μου 10  
APW<sup>b</sup>ΧΓΠΦ min<sup>pl</sup> a ffi k syr<sup>sin</sup> pesh hel (txt) arm go aeth Or<sup>int</sup> (hab NBCDLΔΨ 1 13  
28 69 1071 al<sup>nonn</sup> a f1 q vg the syr hel ms Or<sup>int</sup>) | φαγομαι Dgr 13 (28) 69 124 209 346  
15 αναγαιον B<sup>3</sup>MSUX(ΓΣΨ) min<sup>nonn</sup> οικον arm<sup>cod</sup> | μεγα εστρωμ.] οικον εστρωμ. μεγαν  
Dgr | om ετοιμον AM<sup>\*</sup>Δ min<sup>nonn</sup> a vg arm | και εκει BCL 346 1071 (κακει ND 2<sup>re</sup>)]  
om και APW<sup>b</sup>ΧΓΔΠΣΦ min<sup>pl</sup> a ffi k q syrr arm the 16 εξηλθον]+ετοιμασαι  
124 2<sup>re</sup> arm+ετ. αυτω 1071

to the house, but for the head of the house. Its terms are remarkable: ὁ διδάσκαλος λέγει (cf. λέγει Ἰησοῦς in the Oxyrhynchus fragment, Lc. λέγει σοι ὁ δ.), and seem to imply that Jesus was known, and His character as a Rabbi acknowledged by the οἰκοδεσπότης. The conjecture which makes him the father of Mark (cf. Acts xii. 12; Edersheim, *Life*, ii. p. 485) is interesting, but unsupported by any evidence beyond the faint clue offered by Acts xii. 12. On ὁ διδ. see iv. 38, note.

ποῦ ἔστιν τὸ κατάλυμά μου κτλ.] *Katályma*, Vg. *refectio*, better, as some O. L. authorities, *refectorium* or *diverseorium*: the word belongs to the κοινή (Moeris: καταγώγιον καὶ κατάγεσθαι Ἀττικῶς, κατάλυμα καὶ καταλύειν ‘Ελληνικῶς), but the verb at least is used by good authors in a kindred sense (e.g. Plat. *Gorg.* 447 *β παρ’ ἐμοὶ γὰρ Γοργίας καταλύει*). For *κατάλυμα*, ‘guest-room,’ in Biblical Gk. cf. 1 Regn. i. 18 (where see Driver’s note), ix. 22 (*παζשׁ?*), Sir. xiv. 25; in Exod. iv. 24 (*וְלִילָה*), Lc. ii. 7, it is used in the wider sense (=πανδοχεῖον Lc. x. 34). Here the meaning is defined by v. 15. *Mou* (Mc. only) claims perhaps right of use rather than ownership, ‘the room for Me,’ which for the time is to be Mine. Even so, the language is remarkable, though not unique (cf. xi. 3); and Mt. softens it into *πρὸς*

οὲ ποιῶ τὸ πάσχα. The Lord’s manner is changed in this last week; He is now the revealed King of Israel (see xi. 7 ff., notes). For ὅπου...φάγω see Burton, § 318 f., Blass, *Gr.* p. 217.

15. καὶ αὐτὸς ὑμῖν δείξει κτλ.] The man will take you to the room; αὐτός (Lc. κάκείνος) is perhaps not emphatic (cf. viii. 29, note), but it implies the readiness of the οἰκοδεσπότης to render personal service. Ἀνάγαιον μέγα ἐστρωμένον, Mc. Lc.; Mt. is relatively vague throughout this section. On the form ἀνάγαιον see Lob. *Phrym.* p. 297, WSchm., pp. 47, 51, and cf. what Rutherford says as to κατάγαιον (*N. Phrym.*, p. 357); ἀνάγαιον is ἄπ. λεγ. in Biblical Gk., the usual word being ὑπερφῶν (=παζשׁ?, see Moore on Jud. iii. 20), cf. Acts i. 13, ix. 37, 39, xx. 8. Each of these passages implies a room spacious enough for a considerable gathering, but the size varied of course with the character of the house. This upper room was ἐστρωμένον, i.e. carpeted (xi. 8), or more strictly perhaps provided with carpeted divans, see Smith’s *B. D.*<sup>2</sup>, p. 1406 f.; cf. Ezech. xxiii. 41 ἐκάθον ἐπὶ κλίνης ἐστρωμένης, Xen. *Cyrop.* viii. 2. 6 κλίνη στρώννυσι, τράπεζαν κοσμεῖ, Aristoph. *Ach.* 1089 τὰ δ’ ἄλλα πάντα ἐστὶν παρεσκευασμένα, | κλίναι, τράπεζαι, προσκεφάλαια, στρώματα (cited by Field, *Notes*, p. 39, q. v.). ‘Ημῖν, ‘for Me and you’; the Lord does not often use the pl. in this inclusive way,

οἱ μαθηταὶ καὶ ἥλθον εἰς τὴν πόλιν, καὶ εὗρον καθὼς ἔπειν αὐτοῖς· καὶ ἤτοί μασαν τὸ πάσχα.

<sup>17</sup> Καὶ ὁψίας γενομένης ἐρχεται μετὰ τῶν δώδεκα. 17  
<sup>18</sup> καὶ ἀνακειμένων αὐτῶν καὶ ἐσθιόντων ὁ Ἰησοῦς 18

16 οἱ μαθ.] + αὐτοῦ ACDPW<sup>b</sup>ΧΓΠΣΦ min<sup>pl</sup> latt syrr arm aeth | ευρον] εποιησαν D ac ffi q arm<sup>cod</sup> 18 ο Ιησοῦς ειπεν] λεγει ο I. D 2<sup>pe</sup>

but cf. ix. 39. The keeping of the Paschal festival was absolutely common to Master and disciples.

16. ἔξῆλθον...ἥλθον...εὗρον] The minute explicitness of one who had part in the transaction shews itself here: contrast Lc. ἀπελθόντες...εὗρον, Mt. ἐποίησαν. Καθὼς εἶπεν αὐτοῖς: all the particulars were as the Master foretold—the servant with the pitcher, the οἰκοδεσπότης ready to oblige, the large divan-spread upper room; cf. xi. 1 ff. For the second time in that week the Lord had shewn a super-human knowledge of circumstances as yet unrealised; see Mason, *Conditions*, p. 159.

ἡτοίμασαν τὸ πάσχα] Supposing the lamb to have been already slain and returned to the house, there still remained much to be done: the roasting of the lamb, the provision of the unleavened cakes, the bitter herbs, the *Charoseth* (see below), and the four cups of wine, the preparation of the room and the lamps; and in the preparation of the food there were many ritual niceties to be observed (cf. e.g. Edersheim, *Temple*, pp. 199, 204). *Tὸ πάσχα* is here apparently the paschal meal (cf. v. 1, note), but it implies the provision of the paschal lamb.

17—21. THE PASCHAL SUPPER: THE TRAITOR INDICATED (Mt. xxvi. 20—25; Lc. xxii. 14, 21—23; Jo. xiii. 2, 21—30).

17. ὁψίας γενομένης] So Mt.; Lc. more vaguely ὅτε ἐγένετο ἡ ὥρα. On ὁψίας see i. 32, vi. 47, xiii. 35, notes. The lambs were not slain in the Precinct till after the offering of the Evening Sacrifice (*Temple*, p. 190 f.;

cf. Exod. xii. 6 πρὸς ἐσπέραν, יְמִינֵם (בְּשַׂעַר), and though the latter was on this occasion offered an hour earlier than usual, the subsequent ceremonial must have lasted till late in the afternoon. The meal was in its original associations nocturnal (Exod. xii. 8 φάγονται τὰ κρέα τῇ νυκτὶ ταύτῃ), and motives of prudence would probably have prevented the Master from making His way through the city before sunset. <sup>7</sup>Ἐρχεται μετὰ τῶν δώδεκα: unless οἱ δώδεκα is here used loosely for οἱ μαθηταὶ, the two had returned to report that all was ready, and to guide the party to the place.

18. ἀνακειμένων αὐτῶν καὶ ἐσθιόντων] The meal has now begun (Jo. δείπνου γινομένου). We see the Twelve and the Lord reclining on the divans which were ready for their use (v. 15). For ἀνακείσθαι see ii. 15, note, vi. 26; Lc. uses here the correlative ἀναπίτεω. It seems to have been part of the original ritual of the Passover to eat standing (cf. Exod. xii. 11), but the recumbent posture had become customary, and was interpreted as a sign of the freedom from slavery which had been inaugurated by the Exodus (*Temple*, p. 201). The guests lay on their left side with their feet resting on the ground, and the couches seem to have been grouped in sets of two or three; when these were placed together, the central position was that of greatest dignity; see J. Lightfoot on Mt. xxvi., and cf. Jo. xiii. 23 ff., from which it appears that the Lord reclined between St Peter and St John. On this occasion the arrangement was

εἰπεν Ἀμὴν λέγω ὑμῖν ὅτι εἰς ἐξ ὑμῶν παραδώσει με,  
 το γ 19 ὁ ἐσθίων μετ' ἐμοῦ. <sup>19</sup> ἥρξαντο λυπεῖσθαι καὶ λέγειν  
 20 αὐτῷ εἰς κατὰ εἰς Μῆτι ἔγώ; <sup>20</sup> ὁ δὲ εἶπεν αὐτοῖς Εἰς

18 ο εσθιων] των εσθιοντων B aegg 19 ηρξαντο ΝBLΨ me] pr οι δε ADPW<sup>b</sup>X  
 ΓΔΠΣΦ min<sup>pl</sup> latt syrr arm pr και C 238 | λυπεισθαι] + και αδημονει 1071 | εις κατα  
 εις ΝBLΔΨ (εις καθ εις ADPW<sup>b</sup>ΧΓΠΣΦ min<sup>omn vid</sup>)] εις εκαστος C om k | μητι εγω]  
 + ειμι ραββει Α+ειμι Σ 13 28 69 alpac+και αλλος μητι εγω ADW<sup>b</sup>ΧΓΠ(Σ)Φ min<sup>pl</sup>  
 a(c) fff i(k) q syr<sup>hel(mng)</sup> (arm) Or (om ΝBCLPΔ vg aegg syrr<sup>sin pesh hel(txt)</sup> arm aeth)  
 20 ο δε] + αποκρθεις ΑPW<sup>b</sup>ΧΓΔΠΣΦ min<sup>omn vid</sup> k syr<sup>hel</sup> arm aeth | ειπεν] λεγει ΔΨ  
 2<sup>re</sup> dicit k ait affiq vg | εις των δωδεκα ΝBCLΨ min<sup>pauc</sup>] εις εκ τ. δ. ADPW<sup>b</sup>X  
 ΓΔΠΣΦ min<sup>pl</sup> om M k

possibly  $3+3+3+2+2$ , or it may have been that there was but one set of three, that in which the Lord was. 'Εσθιόντων: the meal had proceeded some way and the *pedilavium* had already taken place (see Jo. xii. 2 ff.); in Lc. the institution of the Eucharist also precedes the revelation of the traitor, but the order of the older Gospels is here almost certainly to be preferred, as Tatian already saw (Hill, p. 221).

ἀμὴν λέγω ὑμῖν ὅτι εἰς κτλ.] Hitherto they had known only that He should be delivered into the hands of His enemies (ix. 31, x. 33), and probably no suspicion had been entertained of Judas; even Jo. vi. 70 is indefinite, and the event alone shewed its significance. It is difficult to remember this in view of the repeated reference to the treachery of Judas wherever his name is mentioned in the Gospel history (cf. iii. 19, note). Εἰς ἐξ ὑμῶν revealed a new feature in the history of the Passion which was more intolerable than any, involving the Twelve in a horrible charge from which they could only escape when the traitor was made known. Jerome: "mittit crimen in numero ut conscient agat paenitentiam." Ο ἐσθίων μετ' ἐμοῦ is peculiar to Mc.: the words probably refer to Ps. xl. (xli.) 10, which the Lord quoted (Jo. xiii. 18); cf. Lc. ή χεὶρ τοῦ παραδιδόντος με μετ' ἐμοῦ ἐπὶ τῆς τραπέζης.

19. ἥρξαντο λυπεῖσθαι] The omis-

sion of the copula adds to the dramatic power of the narrative. Gloom fell at once on the company (cf. x. 22, Mt. xvii. 23). Mt. adds σφόδρα, but the simple λυπεῖσθαι tells us enough; cf. St Paul's account of a λύπη κατὰ θεόν, 2 Cor. vii. 11. The ἀπολογία came at once in the question which went round, Μῆτι ἔγώ; is it—yet surely it cannot be—I? (cf. iv. 21, note). On εἰς κατὰ εἰς (Mt. εἰς ἔκαστος) see WM., p. 512, Blass, Gr. pp. 145, 179; cf. Apoc. xxi. 21 ἀνὰ εἰς ἔκαστος. Καθ' εἰς appears in the LXX. (Lev. xxv. 10 (A), 1 Esdr. i. 31, Isa. xxvii. 12 (κατὰ ἔνα), 3 Macc. v. 34, 4 Macc. xv. 12, 14); in such phrases the prep. appears to be used adverbially. See the discussion in Deissmann, B. St. p. 138 ff.

20. ὁ δὲ εἶπεν αὐτοῖς κτλ.] The Fourth Gospel fills in the picture. The question addressed to the Lord (αὐτῷ v. 19, Mt. κύριε) was followed by a perplexed and perhaps suspicious look at one another (Jo. xiii. 22). When the Lord's answer came, it was given to John, and perhaps not audible beyond the neighbourhood of the divan on which He reclined between Peter and John. The form of the reply in Jo. is so distinct from that in Mt. Mc., that Tatian gives them separately, placing the Synoptic tradition first; but it seems clear that an answer to the whole party would have rendered Peter's enquiry (Jo. v. 23 f.) superfluous. John's account is probably the more precise, since it

τῶν δώδεκα, ὁ ἐμβαπτόμενος μετ' ἐμοῦ εἰς τὸ [ἐν]  
τρύβλιον. <sup>21</sup> ὅτι ὁ μὲν νιὸς τοῦ ἀνθρώπου ὑπάγει <sup>21</sup>  
καθὼς γέγραπται περὶ αὐτοῦ, οὐαὶ δὲ τῷ ἀνθρώπῳ

<sup>20 εμβαπτομενος]</sup> ενβαπτιζομενος D εμβαψας Σ | μετ εμου]+την χειρα A ac fff q  
vg<sup>codicilli</sup> ed aegg | om ev ΝΑC<sup>D\*</sup>2LPΨ rell (hab BC<sup>\*vid</sup>) <sup>21</sup> om οτι ACDPW<sup>B</sup>X  
ΓΔΠΣΦ min<sup>omnvid</sup>a arm (hab ΝBLΨ aegg) | υπαγει] παραδιδοται D aci <sup>21</sup> γε-  
γραπται] εστιν γεγραμμενον D

was he who received the answer directly from the Lord.

ὁ ἐμβαπτόμενος κτλ.] The reference is probably to the sauce *τηρόπη*, “a compound of dates, raisins, &c., and vinegar” (*Temple*, pp. 204, 208), into which at a certain moment the master of the house dipped pieces of the unleavened cake with bitter herbs between them, which were then distributed to the company (*J. Lightfoot on Mt.*). The sign consisted in the singling out of Judas to receive the ‘sop’ from the Master’s hands (*Jo. ἐγώ βάψω τὸ ψωμίον καὶ δώσω αὐτῷ*). Commentators who deny that the meal described in *Jo. xiii.* is the paschal supper regard the *ψωμίον* as the “‘tid-bit’ which an Oriental host is accustomed to offer to any favourite guest” (*Dr M. Dods on Jo. xiii. 25*; cf. *Bp Westcott ad l.*). In *Mt. Mc.*, where the paschal meal is clearly in view, it is natural to connect the sign with the *Charoseth*. ‘Ο ἐμβαπτόμενος, present “used to describe vividly a future event,” *Burton* §§ 15, 130; the middle marks the act as that of Judas himself (*Mt. ἐμβάψα...τὴν χεῖρα*). *Τρύβλιον* is perhaps a bowl (cf. *Ar. Ach.* 278 *εἰρήνης βοφῆσει τρ., Plut.* 1108 *ἐς ταῦτὸν ὑμᾶς συγκυκῆσας τρ.*) rather than a dish (*Vg. catinus*; *Wycliffe*, *Tindale*, “plater,” “platter”; *A.V.*, *R.V.*, “dish”; *Euth.*: *ἔστιν εἶδος πίνακος*); on the accent see *Chandler* § 350. *Μετ’ ἐμοῦ εἰς τὸ ἐν τρ.* The act is difficult to realise under the circumstances of the paschal feast, and in connexion with the *Charoseth*; but the words, esp. in *Mc.*, who alone has *ἐν*, point to the baseness of the

treachery which sacrificed an intimate friend. To dip into the same dish was a token of intimacy, cf. *Ruth* ii. 14 *βάψεις τὸν ψωμόν σου* [*ἐν*] *τῷ ὅξει*.

<sup>21. ὅτι ὁ μὲν νιὸς τοῦ ἀνθρώπου κτλ.]</sup> This weighty saying is given in identical words by *Mt. Mc.*, and in a shorter form by *Lc.* ‘Υπάγει, ‘goeth His way,’ used frequently in *Jo.* of the Lord’s Death (viii. 14, 21 f., xiii. 3, 33 ff., xiv. 4 ff.) as beginning His return to the Father (vii. 33, xiv. 6, xvi. 10, 17); cf. *Thphht.* ὠσανεὶ γὰρ ἀποδημίᾳ ἦν ὁ θάνατος τοῦ χριστοῦ, οὐχὶ θάνατος. *Lc.’s πορεύεται* (= *Ἴη* in reference to the last journey of death, e.g. 2 *Regn.* xii. 23, cf. *BDB.*, p. 234) partly misses this point. *Καθὼς γέγραπται περὶ αὐτοῦ*: *Lc. κατὰ τὸ ὄρισμένον*, acc. to the Divine purpose expressed in the symbolism and predictions of the O.T.; cf. *Mc. ix. 13*. The saying has no flavour of Pharisaic fatalism; it is not a blind *ἀνάγκη*, but a Personal Will, long revealed and accepted, which the Son of Man consciously obeys (*Phil. ii. 8*). *Περὶ αὐτοῦ*: cf. *ix. 12 γεγρ.* *ἐπὶ τὸν νιὸν τοῦ ἀνθρώπου*, and see the note there.

*Οὐαὶ δὲ τῷ ἀνθρώπῳ ἐκείνῳ κτλ.]* The Divine purpose does not palliate the traitor’s sin or relieve him of responsibility in any degree. *Οὐαὶ* is not vindictive, or of the nature of a curse; it reveals a misery which Love itself could not prevent (cf. *xiii. 17*); cf. *Ephrem, ev. conc. exp.*: “quibus verbis iniquum hunc proditorem in caritate deplorabat.” *Δι’ οὐ...παραδίδοται*: the traitor was the last link in the chain which connected purpose and result, so that *διά* in this context

ἐκείνῳ δι' οὐ ὁ νιὸς τοῦ ἀνθρώπου παραδίδοται· καλὸν αὐτῷ εἰ οὐκ ἐγεννήθη ὁ ἀνθρωπός ἐκεῖνος.

§ n 22      §<sup>22</sup> *Kai ἐσθιόντων αὐτῶν λαβὼν ἄρτον εὐλογήσας ἔκλασεν καὶ ἔδωκεν αὐτοῖς καὶ εἶπεν Λάβετε, τοῦτο*

21 om o νιὸς τοῦ ανθρ. (2<sup>o</sup>) D 604 a | καλον] + ην ΙΑCDPW<sup>b</sup>ΧΓΔΠΣΦΨ min<sup>omn vid</sup>  
(om BL)      22 λαβων] + o Ιησους Ι<sup>\*c</sup>ACLPW<sup>b</sup>ΧΓΔΠΣΨ min<sup>fere omn</sup> f q vg syrr<sup>pesh hel</sup>  
arm me aeth (om o I. Ι<sup>a</sup>BD 2<sup>pe</sup> affik syr<sup>sin</sup> the) | αρτον] pr τον ΜΣ min<sup>nonn</sup> |  
ευλογησας (ευλογησεν και D)] ευχαριστησας Ο pr και Π 1071 al<sup>nonn</sup> | εδωκεν] εδιδον i  
13 69 124 209 346 | αυτοις] + και εφαγον εξ αυτου παντες k<sup>vid</sup> | λαβετε] om k+φαγετε  
EFHM<sup>2</sup>SVW<sup>b</sup>ΧΓΣ min<sup>pl</sup> ff

(Mt. Mc. Lc.) is more exact than *ὑπό* or *ἀπό* would have been; besides the good Will of God which decreed the Passion and of which he had no knowledge, there was behind his act the instigation of Satan (Lc. xxii. 3, Jo. xiii. 2) working on his passions. Origen in *Mt.*: “non dixit...a quo traditur, sed per quem traditur, ostendens...Iudam ministrum esse traditionis.” Yet his intervention was deliberate, and his responsibility therefore complete. The Divine necessity for the Passion was no excuse for the free agent who brought it about: “non et malum oportuerit esse. nam et Dominum tradi oportebat, sed vae traditori” (*Tert. praescr.* 30).

καλὸν αὐτῷ εἰ οὐκ κτλ.] Mt. supplies *ην* with *καλόν*: in the apodosis of a conditional clause where the supposition is contrary to fact, *ἄν* is sometimes omitted; cf. WM., p. 383, Burton, § 249, and on *εἰ οὐν* for *εἰ μή* in the protasis, cf. Burton § 469 r., Blass, Gr. p. 254; for *καλὸν...εἰ* cf. ix. 42 ff., notes. The blessing of birth is turned into a curse by a sin which leaves no hope of a true repentance. Jerome: “simpliciter dictum est multo melius esse non subsistere quam male subsistere.” The form of the saying is Rabbinical, cf. *Chagigah* ed. Streane, p. 55 “it were better for him that he had not come into the world.” A somewhat similar saying, but less severe, is attributed to the Lord in

ix. 42; the two are brought together by Clem. R., i *Cor.* 46.

22—25. INSTITUTION OF THE EUCHARIST (Mt. xxvi. 26—29, Lc. xxii. 17—20; cf. i *Cor.* xi. 23—25).

22. *ἐσθιόντων αὐτῶν*] Cf. v. 18. Another stage in the Paschal meal has been reached. The eating of the lamb seems to have been by custom reserved to the end (Edersheim, *Temple*, p. 208—9); the food up to this point consisted only of the unleavened cakes and bitter herbs, and possibly the *Chagigah* (see Edersheim, *op. cit.*, p. 186, Streane, *Chag.*, p. 35 f., notes).

λαβὼν ἄρτον κτλ.] Jerome: “ad verum paschae transgreditur sacramentum.” The Lord took one of the cakes (for *ἄρτος* a bread-cake, cf. viii. 14) which were placed before Him as president, and gave thanks (εὐλογήσας Mt. Mc. = εὐχαριστήσας, Lc. Paul, cf. vi. 41, note, and see *J. Th. St.* iii. p. 163), probably in the customary form; fraction (cf. Acts ii. 46, xx. 7, 11, i *Cor.* x. 16, xi. 24, Ign. *Eph.* 20) accompanied or immediately followed (vi. 41) the benediction (cf. Burton § 141—3), and then distribution. Cf. i *Regn.* ix. 13 εὐλογεῖ τὴν θυσίαν καὶ μετὰ ταῦτα ἐσθίουσιν οἱ ξένοι. The procedure as a whole corresponded to the preliminaries of the two miracles of the loaves, but on this occasion the broken bread was given to the disciples primarily for their own use; they

ἐστιν τὸ σῶμά μου. <sup>23</sup>καὶ λαβὼν ποτήριον εὐχαρι- 23  
στῆσας ἔδωκεν αὐτοῖς, καὶ ἐπιον ἐξ αὐτοῦ πάντες.  
<sup>24</sup>καὶ εἶπεν αὐτοῖς Τοῦτό ἐστιν τὸ αἷμά μου 24

*22 τὸ σῶμα μου] + quod pro multis confringitur in remissionem peccatorum a 23 ποτηρίον] pr το ΑΡΓΠΦ min<sup>pl</sup> | om πάντες syr<sup>sln</sup>* 24 om αυτοῖς B

must first 'take and eat' before they gave to the multitude (contrast vi. l.c., viii. 6). *Λάβετε* Mt. Mc.; Mt. adds φάγετε, Lc. and Paul omit both directions. Comp. Cant. v. 1 φάγετε, πλησίοι, καὶ πίετε...ἀδελφοί.

*τοῦτό ἐστιν τὸ σῶμά μου]* So Mt. Mc. Lc.; Paul (cf. Lc.), *τοῦτό μού ἐστιν τὸ σῶμα τὸ ὑπὲρ ὑμῶν*. The words would have recalled those spoken at the supper at Bethany six days before (xiv. 8), and perhaps also the teaching at Capernaum just before the previous Passover (Jo. vi. 48 ff.). The bread which is now given (*τοῦτο*) is identified with (*ἐστίν*) the Body of His Flesh (Col. i. 22); to eat it is to partake in the great Sacrifice (*τὸ ὑπέρ ὑμῶν*, cf. x. 45). St Paul adds (and the words have found their way into all but the 'Western' texts of Lc., see WH., *Notes*, p. 63): *τοῦτο ποιεῖτε εἰς τὴν ἐμὴν ἀνάμνησιν*. But, for whatever reason, this clause had no place in the primitive tradition.

*23. καὶ λαβὼν ποτήριον]* R. V. rightly, "He took a cup." So Mt. Mc.; Paul (cf. Lc.) identifies the cup with that which followed the meal (*τὸ ποτήριον μετὰ τὸ δειπνῆσαι*). The Talmud prescribes four cups at the Paschal feast (J. Lightfoot on Mt. xxvi. 27); the third was known as the *כָּבֵד בְּרִיךְ בָּשָׂר* or "cup of blessing" (cf. i Cor. x. 16), and it has been usual to regard this as the Cup of the Eucharist. If with WH. (*Notes*, p. 64) we hold that Lc. xxii. 19<sup>b</sup>, 20 was "absent from the original text of Lc.," it seems to follow that acc. to Lc.'s tradition the blessing of the Cup preceded that of the Bread (cf. *Didache* 9 πρῶτον περὶ τοῦ ποτηρίου, and see J. Th. St. iii. p. 362),

and on this hypothesis the Eucharistic Cup must probably be placed at an earlier stage. But Lc.'s order in this narrative is somewhat discredited by the fact that he places the institution of the Eucharist before the detection of the traitor (see note on v. 18); and St Paul's *μετὰ τὸ δειπνῆσαι*, written in A.D. 57, or acc. to Harnack in A.D. 53, must be held to be decisive. On εὐχαριστήσας see last note. The gift of the Cup had been foreshadowed in the discourse at Capernaum (Jo. vi. 55 *τὸ αἷμά μου ἀληθής ἐστι πόσις*).

*καὶ ἐπιον ἐξ αὐτοῦ πάντες]* Mt., whose account adheres generally to Mc.'s, shapes these words into the command *πίετε ἐξ αὐτοῦ πάντες*, corresponding to *λάβετε, φάγετε*. *Πάντες*: no such inclusive direction is given in the case of the Bread, which represents a gift equally necessary to the life of the soul (Jo. vi. 53). The R. C. commentator Knabenbauer suggests that *πάντες* was added "quoniam quidem alias non unum poculum omnibus destinabatur," but the ritual of the Paschal meal (cf. Edersheim, *Temple*, p. 204) renders this explanation improbable. Perhaps the solution is to be sought in the words which accompanied the gift of the Cup (see v. 24, note).

*24. καὶ εἶπεν αὐτοῖς]* There is no reason to regard Mc.'s *εἶπεν* as differing in substance from Mt.'s *λέγων*. Mc. does not say that the words followed the delivery or the drinking of the cup, although the insertion of *καὶ ἐπιον κτλ.* compels him to detach the words from the gift.

*τοῦτό ἐστιν τὸ αἷμά μου τῆς διαθήκης].* So Mt., Mc.; Paul (cf. Lc.): *τοῦτο τὸ ποτήριον ἡ καὶν διαθήκη ἐστὶν ἐν τῷ*

¶ P 25 τῆς διαθήκης τὸ ἐκχυννόμενον ὑπὲρ πολλῶν. ¶ 25 ἀμὴν

24 τῆς διαθῆκης] τῆς καυνῆς διαθ. APW<sup>b</sup>ΧΓΔΠΣΦ min<sup>fereo omn</sup> a f q vg syrr arm aeth pr το AD\*FHKMPUSUTΔΠΣΦ | εκχυννόμενον EFHKMSVW<sup>b</sup>ΧΓΠ<sup>c</sup>ΦΨ min<sup>pl</sup> + εις αφεσιν αμαρτιῶν 9 13 18 69 1071 13<sup>ev</sup> c<sup>scr</sup> a me | υπερ] περι APW<sup>b</sup>ΧΓΠΣΦ min<sup>pl</sup>

ἐμῷ αἴματι. The original words are clearly based on Exod. xxiv. 8 οἶδον τὸ αἷμα τῆς διαθῆκης ἣν διέθετο Κύριος πρὸς ὑμᾶς περὶ τούτων τῶν λόγων, i.e. the blood which ratified the 'Book of the Covenant' (see Westcott on Heb. ix. 20). A new covenant (Jer. xxxviii. (xxxii.) 31 ff.) was on the point of being ratified by the Blood of a better Sacrifice with a greater Israel, whose representatives all drank of it, as the whole congregation (Heb. ix. 19) had been sprinkled with the blood shed under the mountain of the Lawgiving. On the Biblical sense of διαθήκη see Westcott, *Hebrews*, p. 298 ff.; the present context excepted, it is used in the N.T. with a distinct reference to the Christian dispensation only in 2 Cor. iii. 6, 14 (δ. καυνή), and Hebrews vii. 22, viii. 6 (δ. κρείττων), ix. 15 (δ. καυνή), xii. 24 (δ. νέα), xiii. 20 (δ. αἰώνιος). The two genitives (*μου*, τῆς διαθῆκης), both dependent on αἷμα, indicate different relations (WM., p. 239); the Blood is Christ's, and in another sense it is that of the Covenant which it seals and executes. For the comparison of wine to blood cf. Gen. xlix. 11, Isa. lxiii. 1 ff.; the Blood of the Covenant was the fruit of "the holy Vine of David" (*Did.* 9, ed. Taylor, p. 69).

τὸ ἐκχυννόμενον ὑπὲρ πολλῶν] "Which is being shed on behalf of many"; the shedding is imminent and regarded as already present (Burton, § 131). The O. L. and many MSS. of the Vulgate render *effundetur*, and the future still stands in the canon of the Roman mass. On the form χύννειν see Blass, *Gr.* p. 41, WSchm., p. 132; for ὑπὲρ πολλῶν, cf. x. 45, note: Mt. adds here εἰς ἄφεσιν ἀμαρτιῶν, a result which is elsewhere connected with repentance and bap-

tism (Mc. i. 4, Lc. xxiv. 47, Acts ii. 38, v. 31), but ultimately rests on the Covenant ratified by the Sacrifice of Christ (Eph. i. 7, Col. i. 14, Heb. ix. 22).

The Gospels (if we except the doubtfully genuine words in Lc.) shew no trace of the direction τοῦτο ποιεῖτε εἰς τὴν ἐμὴν ἀνάμνησιν (1 Cor. xi. 24, 25). While the theory of a Pauline origin of the Eucharist (Hastings, *D. B.* ii. p. 638) is excluded by the position assigned to the institution in the early Jewish-Christian sources on which Mc. and Mt. drew, it is possible that the command which secures the permanence of the Eucharist may belong to the special revelation bestowed on St Paul (consult, but with caution, M<sup>o</sup>Giffert, *Apostolic Age*, p. 68, note).

For an Apostolic interpretation of the words τοῦτο ἔστιν τὸ σῶμα, τὸ αἷμά μου, see 1 Cor. x. 15, 16, xi. 27, 29; the belief of the second century is perhaps most characteristically expressed in *Did.* 9 ff.; Ignatius, *Smyrn.* 6, *Philad.* 4, *Trall.* 8, *Rom.* 7; Justin, *apol.* i. 66, *dial.* 70, 117; Iren. iv. 18. 4 f., 33. 2, v. 2. 2 f. A true note is struck by Euth.: χρὴ μὴ πρὸς τὴν φύσιν τῶν προκειμένων ὄρᾶν, ἀλλὰ πρὸς τὴν δύναμιν αὐτῶν: and by Hooker, *E.P.*, v. 67. 13 "this Bread hath in it more than the substance which our eyes behold, this Cup...availeth to the endless life and welfare both of soul and body...to me which take them they are the Body and Blood of Christ; His promise in witness hereof sufficeth, His word He knoweth which way to accomplish." For a catena of patristic teaching on the subject see Pusey, *Doctrine of the Real Presence*, p. 315 ff.; the ante-Nicene teaching is collected in *J. Th. St.* iii. p. 161 ff.

§λέγω ὑμῖν ὅτι [οὐκέτι] οὐ μὴ πίω ἐκ τοῦ γενήματος      § N  
 τῆς ἀμπέλου ἔως τῆς § ἡμέρας ἐκείνης ὅταν αὐτὸς πίνω      § G  
 καινὸν ἐν τῇ βασιλείᾳ τοῦ θεοῦ.

<sup>26</sup> Καὶ ὑμήσαντες ἐξῆλθον εἰς τὸ ὄρος τῶν ἐλαιῶν. ¶ 26 ¶ the

25 om οὐκέτι & CDL b<sup>scr\*</sup> acfk me aeth (hab ABNW<sup>b</sup>XGΠΨ min<sup>fere omn</sup> iff gily vg syrr arm the) | ou μη πιω] ou μη προσθω πειν D (2<sup>pe</sup>) a f arm | γεννηματος DKNTΦ min<sup>ma</sup>

25. ἀμὴν λέγω ὑμῖν ὅτι οὐκέτι κτλ.] A mysterious saying not to be lightly dismissed as a “poetic utterance” (Bruce). The Lord solemnly foretells that this shall be His last Passover, His last meal. But his prophecy looks beyond His Death to a day of reassembling round another board (ἔως τῆς ἡμέρας ἐκείνης ὅταν κτλ.). The saying recalls the parables of Lc. xiv. 16 ff., Mt. xxii. 1 ff.; in Lc. (xxii. 29 f.) it is expanded into the form διατίθεμαι ὑμῖν...βασιλείαν ἵνα ἔσθητε καὶ πίνητε ἐπὶ τῆς τραπέζης μου ἐν τῇ βασιλείᾳ μου. The Messianic Kingdom is a banquet at which Christ and His elect will drink in a new and glorious way of the fruit of the mystical Vine (Jo. xv. 1 ff.); for illustrations from Jewish sources see Wünsche, p. 334. Καινότης (see ii. 21, note) is the characteristic mark of all that belongs to the kingdom of God (cf. Trench, *syn. x.*); the καινὴ διαθήκη inaugurates a καινὴ κτίσις, in which at length all things are to become new (Apoc. xxi. 5). The saying has a partial fulfilment in the Eucharists of the universal Church; its ultimate accomplishment belongs to the risen life, for which the Bridegroom has “kept the good wine” (cf. Apoc. xix. 9). Origen: “imblebitur in regno Dei hoc pascha et manducabit [panem] Jesus cum discipulis suis et bibet...veram escam et verum potum manducabimus et bibemus in regno Dei, aedificantes per ea et confortantes verisimilam illam vitam.” The reading of D οὐ μὴ προσθῶ πειν is noteworthy. Γένημα, as distinguished from γέννημα

(Mt. iii. 7), is ‘a fruit of the earth’; see WH, *Notes*, p. 148, WSchm., p. 55 f., Deissmann, *B. St.*, p. 184; this use of the word is non-Attic, but not limited to Biblical Gk. (cf. Rutherford, p. 348, Deissmann (*B. St.*, p. 109, who cites τὰ γενήματα τῶν ἴπαρχόντων μοι παραδείσων from a papyrus of B.C. 230). Τὸ γένημα τῆς ἀμπέλου is an O.T. phrase for wine (cf. Num. vi. 4, Hab. iii. 17, Isa. xxxii. 12), and as such it is suitable to a rite which was based on the law of the O.T.; moreover it occurred in the ordinary form for the benediction of the cup, “blessed be He that created the fruit of the vine” (J. Lightfoot on Mt. xxvi.).

26—31. DEPARTURE TO THE MOUNT OF OLIVES. THE DESERTION AND DENIAL FORETOLD. (Mt. xxvi. 30—35, Lc. xxii. 31—39; cf. Jo. xiii. 36—38, xiv. 31, xviii. 1.)

26. καὶ ὑμήσαντες] The singing of Psalms followed the meal; Wycliffe: “the ympne seid,” Tindale: “when they had sayd grace”; cf. Victor: ηὐχαριστησαν μετά τὸ λαβεῖν καὶ ὑμησαν, ἵνα καὶ ἡμεῖς αὐτὸς τούτῳ ποιῶμεν. For this use of ὕμνειν, ὕμνος cf. Ps. lxxi. (lxxii.) 20 ἔξειτον οἱ ὕμνοι Δαυείδ, 2 Chron. vii. 6 ἐν ὕμνοις Δ., 2 Macc. i. 30 οἱ δὲ ἱερεῖς ἐπέψαλλον τοὺς ὕμνους, Jos. ant. vii. 12. 3 ὁ Δανίδης...ὕμνους συνετάξατο. The Psalms which were sung at the end of the Paschal supper, after the filling of the fourth cup, were probably those which formed the second part of the ‘Hallel,’ viz.: Pss. cxv.—cxviii.; see Edersheim, *Temple*, p. 210, J. Lightfoot *ad l.*, Schöttgen i., p. 231, Schürer, II. i. p. 291,

27 καὶ λέγει αὐτοῖς ὁ Ἰησοῦς ὅτι Πάντες σκανδαλίσθησθε, ὅτι γέγραπται Πατάξω τὸν ποιμένα, καὶ

27 καὶ ι<sup>ο</sup>] τοτε Deff om syr<sup>sin</sup> | παντες] + νμεις D 13 69 124 alpaue affik q vg syrr<sup>sin pesh</sup>  
the | σκανδαλισθησθε NBC\*DHLSVW<sup>b</sup>XΓΔΠ<sup>2</sup>Ψ min<sup>sat mu</sup> ff q] + εν εμοι GΨcorr  
min<sup>perpaue</sup> a f i k l syr<sup>sin</sup> + εν τη νυκτι τανη min<sup>paue</sup> vg<sup>eodd</sup> + εν εμοι εν τη ν. τ.  
AC<sup>2</sup>EFKMNUII<sup>\*3</sup> min<sup>pl</sup> vg<sup>ed</sup> aegg syrr<sup>pesh hel</sup> arm aeth | οτι γεγρ.] γεγρ. γαρ ΝΣ

note. Others suppose that Ps. cxxxvi. is intended. Bede thinks of the intercessory prayer of Jo. xvii. For an interesting but grotesque attempt to place an original hymn in the lips of Christ and the Eleven, see *Acta Joh.* (*Apocr. anecd.*, ed. James, ii. p. 10). That the Gospels contained a reference to this Paschal hymn is mentioned by Justin (*dial.* 106 μετ' αὐτῶν διάγων ὑμησης τὸν θεόν, ὡς καὶ ἐν τοῖς ἀπομημονεύμασι τῶν ἀποστόλων δηλοῦται γεγενημένον), who finds in it a fulfilment of Ps. xxi. (xxii.) 23.

ἐξῆλθον εἰς τὸ ὅρος τῶν ἀλαῶν] This movement seems to correspond to that of Jo. xiv. 31 ἐγείρεσθε, ἄγωμεν ἐντεῦθεν (so Tatian, Hill, p. 226); the discourses of Jo. xv., xvi., and the prayer of Jo. xvii. were uttered either on the way to the Kidron or possibly in the Precinct (cf. Westcott on Jo. xv. 1, 2). On τὸ ὅρος τ. ἀλ. see xi. 1, note; on ἐξῆλθον, see xi. 11. Lc. adds κατὰ τὸ ἔθος. The nightly departure for the Mount had become habitual, and the Eleven felt no surprise when they were summoned to leave the κατάλυμα: no provision had been made for spending the night in Jerusalem.

27. καὶ λέγει αὐτοῖς ὁ Ἰ. κτλ.] Mt. τότε λέγει (see note on x. 13); Lc. and Jo. appear to place the conversation in the supper-room, but the three traditions (Mt.-Mc. Lc. Jo.) are distinct and independent. The Fayûm fragment (acc. to Zahn's reconstruction, *Kanon*, ii. p. 785) leaves the point open: [ὑμησάντων δὲ αὐτῶν μετὰ τὸ φαγεῖν ὡς ἔξ ἔθους πά[λιν εἴπε Ταύτη] κτλ. Πάντες σκανδαλισθησθε, Mt. π. ὑμείς σκ. ἐν ἐμοὶ ἐν τῇ νυκτὶ ταύτῃ]. The frequent warnings against

σκάνδαλα (iv. 17, ix. 42 ff., cf. Mt. xxiv. 10, Lc. vii. 23, Jo. xvi. 1) gave to this prophecy a terrible significance. Moreover, hitherto this fate had overtaken only the enemies of Jesus (vi. 3, Mt. xv. 12), or disloyal followers (Jo. vi. 61); but now the Apostles themselves are warned that they will fall without exception, and that very night.

ὅτι γέγραπται κτλ.] The Lord confirms His prophecy by a quotation from the O.T.: cf. ix. 12 f., xiv. 21. The words which are cited differ materially from the B text of Zach. xiii. 7 πατάξατε τοὺς ποιμένας, καὶ ἐκσπάσατε τὰ πρόβατα (cf. Tert. *de fug.* II "evelite oves"); the A text comes nearer with πάταξον τὸν ποιμένα, καὶ διασκορπισθήσονται τὰ πρ. τῆς ποιμῆς (cf. Mt.), and it has on the whole the support of Justin (*dial.* 53 πάταξον τὸν ποιμένα καὶ διασκ. τὰ πρόβατα αὐτοῦ), while the loose reference in Barn. 5. 13 (ὅταν πατάξωσιν τὸν ποιμένα ἑαυτῶν τότε ἀπολέσται τὰ πρόβατα τῆς ποιμῆς) seems to blend B's πατάξατε with A's conclusion. But all known forms of the Greek text agree with the M.T. in beginning the clause with an imperative, whilst Mt. and Mc. concur in πατάξω. The latter reading is possibly due to a collection of *testimonia* from which the common tradition drew (cf. i. 2, note); it is noteworthy that it is found not only in Mt. Mc., but in the Fayûm fragment, which gives [κατὰ] τὸ γραφέν Πατάξω τὸν [ποιμένα καὶ τὰ] πρόβατα διασκορπισθήσονται]. On the import of the prophecy see Kirkpatrick, *Doctrine of the Prophets*, p. 465. The general law was to find its most terrible ful-

τὰ πρόβατα διασκορπισθήσονται. <sup>28</sup> ἀλλὰ μετὰ τὸ 28  
 ἐγερθῆναι με προάξω ὑμᾶς εἰς τὴν Γαλειλαίαν. <sup>29</sup> ὁ δὲ 29 § 7<sup>12</sup>  
 Πέτρος ἔφη αὐτῷ Εἱ καὶ πάντες σκανδαλισθήσονται,  
 ἀλλ’ οὐκ ἐγώ. <sup>30</sup> καὶ λέγει αὐτῷ ὁ Ἰησοῦς Ἐμὴν 30 ¶ W  
 λέγω σοι ὅτι [σὺ] σήμερον ταύτη τῇ νυκτὶ πρὶν [ἢ δὶς]

27 τα προβ.] + της ποιμνης EFKMP<sup>\*</sup> 736<sup>\*vid</sup> 1071 al<sup>nominative</sup> a c | διασκορπισθήσεται EHMSUVW<sup>b</sup>XGΠΦ min<sup>pl</sup> 28 αλλα μετα] και μ. C μ. δε min<sup>nominative</sup> 29 εφη]  
 λεγει ΔΨ αποκριθεις λ. I 13 69 124 209 346 604 2<sup>pe</sup> (ck) arm | ει και NBCGLΨ  
 I 13 69 1071 al<sup>pasc</sup> arm] και ει AEFHKMNSUVW<sup>b</sup>XGΔΠΣΦ al<sup>pl</sup> και εαν D καν 604  
 2<sup>pe</sup> | εγω]+ον σκανδαλισθησουαι Dffq aeth 30 om συ ΝCΔ min<sup>mv</sup> a fffilq |  
 om σημερον DS 604 2<sup>pe</sup> afffiq arm | ταυτη τη νυκτι] εν τη ν. ταυτη ANW<sup>b</sup>XGΔΗΣΦ  
 min<sup>pl</sup> om S | οη ΗD 69 238 604 2<sup>pe</sup> al<sup>pasc</sup> | om δις ΝC\*D 238 150<sup>ev</sup> aeffik arm  
 aeth (hab ABC<sup>2</sup>LNW<sup>b</sup>XGΔΠΣΦΨ min<sup>pl</sup> fq vg aegg syrr)

filment in the dispersion of the flock (Lc. xii. 32) of the Good Shepherd.

28. ἀλλὰ μετὰ τὸ ἐγερθῆναι κτλ.] Ἀλλά contrasts the hope of the Resurrection with the deepening gloom of the Passion; the Lord rarely mentions the one without the other (cf. viii. 31, ix. 31, x. 34). Euth.: προειπὼν τὰ λυπηρά, προλέγει καὶ τὰ παραμυθούμενα. On μετά with the inf. see Burton § 406—7. With the promise προάξω ὑμᾶς εἰς τὴν Γ. cf. xvi. 7, Mt. xxviii. 10, 16, Ev. Petr. 12; it was natural that the Eleven should return to Galilee after the Passover, and the Lord reassures them by promising to be there before them. Of this return to the North Lc. says nothing, whilst Mc. (so far as we can judge from his unfinished work) and Mt. are equally silent as to appearances in Jerusalem subsequent to the day of the Resurrection. But their silence is not unnatural in view of the Galilean character of their record, which is abandoned only in the case of the narrative of the Passion and Resurrection. On προάγειν τινά see x. 32, note.

29. ὁ δὲ Πέτρος ἔφη αὐτῷ κτλ.] Peter is stung to the quick by the suggestion of disloyalty, and repudiates it for himself. His speech is

well characterised by Euth.: ὁ δὲ τρία δύον πταίει· πρῶτον ὅτι ἀντεῖπε— he ought rather to have prayed ‘Lord help me’—δεύτερον, ὅτι τῶν ἄλλων ἔαυτὸν προέθηκε...τρίτον, ὅτι ἔαυτῷ μόνῳ καὶ οὐ τῇ βοηθείᾳ τοῦ θεοῦ τεθάρηκε. Εἰ καὶ, “even admitting that it is true”; the Fayûm fragment has καὶ εἰ, which emphasises the improbability (Burton § 280). At all events there will be one exception to the rule—ἀλλ’ οὐκ ἐγώ. For ἀλλά beginning the apodosis see WM., p. 552; on the ellipse cf. Blass, Gr. p. 291. The expansion of this characteristic saying in Mt. is instructive. In Lc., whose report however may relate to another occasion, Peter says Κύριε, μετὰ σοῦ ἔτοιμός εἰμι καὶ εἰς φιλακὴν καὶ εἰς θάνατον πορεύεσθαι, cf. Jo. τὴν ψυχήν μου ὑπὲρ σοῦ θήσω. Tatian brings the three sayings into one (Hill, p. 223 f.).

30. καὶ λέγει αὐτῷ ὁ Ἰησοῦς κτλ.] Peter's boast is turned into the prophecy of a greater downfall: “promissio eius audax...facta est ei causa ut non solum scandalizaretur, verum etiam ter denegaret” (Origen). “Thou (emphatic σύ, answering to Peter's ἐγώ) to-day, in this night, before the morning watch, shalt deny me not once but thrice.” According to the Jewish reckoning the day of the

31 ἀλέκτορα φωνῆσαι τρίς με ἀπαρνήσῃ. <sup>31. ὁ δὲ ἐκπε-</sup>  
ρισσῶς ἐλάλει Ἐὰν δέη με συναποθανεῖν σοι, οὐ μή  
σε ἀπαρνήσομαι. ὡσαύτως δὲ καὶ πάντες ἐλεγον.

32 <sup>32</sup>Καὶ ἔρχονται εἰς χωρίον οὗ τὸ ὄνομα Γεθσημανεῖ,

31 ο δε] + Πετρος ACGMNSU al<sup>nonn</sup> syrhel arm aeth+μαλλον 1 13 69 (? arm) |  
εκπερισσως ΝBCDΨ min<sup>perpauc</sup>] εκ περισσου ΑW<sup>b</sup>ΧΓΠΣΦ min<sup>pl</sup> περισσως L 13 69  
124 346 2<sup>nd</sup> εκ περισσας (sic) Δ | ελαλει ΝBDLΨ loquebatur fff i k q r vg] ελεγεν  
ACNW<sup>b</sup>ΧΓΔΠΣΦ min<sup>omn</sup>vid dicebat a syrr me+μαλλον ANW<sup>b</sup>ΧΓΔΠΣΦ min<sup>fere omn</sup>  
(c ff) k (om μ. ΝBCDL 2<sup>nd</sup> a fi q vg syrhel aegg) | συναποθανειν σοι] συν σοι αποθανειν  
L 1 115 1071 2<sup>nd</sup> al<sup>perpauc</sup> | απαρνησομαι ABCDHLNW<sup>b</sup>ΔΠ\*Ψ al] απαρνησωμαι  
ΝΕFGKMSUVΧΓΠ<sup>2</sup> min<sup>satmu</sup> | om ωσαντως...ελεγον Ψ | ωσαντως] ομοιως Ν\* | om δε  
B 1 209 al<sup>pauc</sup> a c ff k | om και D min<sup>perpauc</sup> 32 ερχεται 2<sup>nd</sup> | ou] ω C 282  
lattvtpivg | Γεθσημανει ΝΑΒ<sup>3</sup>CKLMNSUVΓΔΠ min<sup>pl</sup> (Γεθσημ. B\* Γησαμ. D arm<sup>codd vtt</sup>  
Γεσημ. EFGHXΣ min<sup>mu</sup>)] Γεθσημανη Φ min<sup>nonn</sup> syrhel Γεσημανη Ψ

Passion has already begun (*σήμερον*); it commenced with the night of the Paschal Supper. *Δις* (cf. v. 72) is peculiar to Mc. among the canonical Gospels, but it is supported by the Fayûm papyrus. The word is suggestive, cf. Bengel: “valde notabilis circumstantia primo cantu Petrum se non collecturum esse.” The papyrus substitutes ἀλεκτρωών for the old poetical form ἀλέκτωρ (cf. Rutherford, *N. Phryn.*, p. 307 f.; ἀλέκτωρ occur in another papyrus of c. A.D. 100 (*Fayûm Towns*, p. 275), and κοκκύζειν (*Theocr.* vii. 48) for φωνεῖν: [ἔφη Πρὸν] ὁ ἀλεκτρωών δις κοκκύζει σήμερον, σὺ τρίς με ἀπαρν[ήσῃ] (*Zahn, l.c.*). Comp. 3 Macc. v. 23 ἅρτι δὲ ἀλεκτρωών ἐκέραγεν ὅρθριος, and see the references to the second cockcrowing in Ar. *Eccl.* 390, Juv. ix. 106: for the time indicated, see the note on ἀλεκτοροφωνία (*supra*, xiii. 35). Οὐ ἀπαρνήσῃ cf. viii. 34 note; on πρὶν η̄ with the inf. see Burton § 380 f.

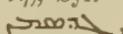
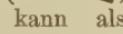
31. ὁ δὲ ἐκπερισσως ἐλάλει] Peter's profession of confidence is intensified by his mortification: he continued to talk (*ἐλάλει*, cf. vv. ll.) with excessive vehemence (cf. ὑπερπερισσῶς, vii. 37); Euth.: δσον διαβεβαιοῦται ὁ Χριστός, τοσοῦτον ὁ Πέτρος ἀντισχυρίζεται. Unconsciously, no doubt, yet in point of fact, as Origen says, he gave the

lie to the Master: “dominum nostrum profitebatur facere mendacem per ea quae sibi confidens dicebat.” The protest was probably uttered more than once (*ἐλάλει*), as passionate remarks are apt to be. *Ἐὰν δέη κτλ.*, “though it be necessary”; Mt.'s κάν suggests the improbability of this contingency (Burton § 281). The idea of sharing the Lord's Death had originated, as it seems, with the less demonstrative Thomas (Jo. xi. 16); it was afterwards to pass in St Paul's writings into the language of theology (Rom. vi. 2 ff., Col. ii. 12, iii. 1 ff.); the word συναποθ. occurs in the λόγος cited in 2 Tim. ii. 11). Both συνθανεῖν and συναποθανεῖν are classical forms; for the latter cf. Plat. *Phaed.* 88 τοῦ ἀποθανόντος οὐ συναποθήσκει ή ψυχή, Sir. xix. 10 ἀκήκοας λόγον; συναποθανέτω σοι. Οὐ μή σε ἀπαρν.: on this future see Blass, *Gr.*, p. 204 f. ‘Ωσαύτως δὲ καὶ πάντες ἐλεγον. All had been included in the first prophecy of impending failure, and Peter's passionate protest stirred the rest to similar (Mt. ὅμοιως) professions of loyalty. In Lc. and Jo. Peter only is warned and the other ten do not appear.

32—42. THE AGONY IN GETHSEMANE (Mt. xxvi. 36—46, Lc. xxii. 40—46: cf. Jo. xviii. 1 ff.).

καὶ λέγει τοῖς μαθηταῖς αὐτοῦ Καθίσατε ὥδε ἔως προσεύξωμαι. <sup>33</sup>καὶ παραλαμβάνει τὸν Πέτρον καὶ 33

<sup>32 τοὺς μαθ. αυτοὺς]</sup> οἱ αὐτοῦ Α δὲ ἀριτσαὶ Δ α | καθισαὶ Δ | ωδε] οἱ Β\* αὐτοῦ  
I 209 | προσεύξωμαι (-ξομαι ΔΗΧΓΨ 1071 al<sup>nominative</sup>)] pr απελθων ΜΝΥΣ min<sup>nominative</sup> aeth  
33 τὸν Πέτρον] οἱ τὸν Ν\* αἴρας

32. ἔρχονται εἰς χωρίον...Γεθσημανεῖ] The name is not given by Lc. (*γενόμενος* δὲ ἐπὶ τοῦ τόπου) or Jo., but the latter mentions that the place was a garden which lay on the further side of the Kidron (*πέραν τοῦ χειμάρρου τοῦ Κέδρων...* κῆπος). Γεθσημανεῖ (R.T. -νή), Syr.<sup>sin.</sup>  <sup>תְּנַסְׁסָן</sup>, Syr. pesh.  “nichts Anderes sein kann als *תְּנַסְׁסָן*” (Dalman, *Gr.*, p. 152; see his note on the lengthening of the second vowel); cf. Γεθσημάνων (Jos. xxi. 24), Γεθχόβερ (4 Regn. xiv. 25). On the other hand the forms Γησαμανεῖ, Γεσημανεῖ, suggest *תְּנַסְׁסָן* (Encycl. Bibl. s.v.). As the name in its more usual spelling denotes the estate (*χωρίον, praedium, villa*, cf. 2 Chron. xxvii. 27 ἐν τοῖς χωρίοις τοῦ οἴνου, Acts iv. 34 κτήτορες χωρίων ἡ οἰκιών) may at one time have had an oil press upon it, but it was now apparently one of the private gardens which were to be found in the outskirts of Jerusalem (cf. Jo. xix. 41), and (doubtless by the favour of its owner) it had been a favourite resort of Jesus (Jo. πολλάκις συνήχθη Ἡ ἐκεῖ μετὰ τῶν μαθητῶν αὐτοῦ). There is no reason to doubt that the enclosure still known as the Latin Gethsemane occupies the site of that which was already identified with the Garden of the Agony in the fourth century; cf. Eus. *onom.* s. v. ἐν φι καὶ νῦν τὰς εὐχὰς οἱ πιστοὶ ποιεῖσθαι σπουδάζουσιν: Jerome, *lib. interpr.* “est autem ad radices montis Oliveti nunc ecclesia desuper aedificata”: Silvia, *peregr.* p. 62, describes in detail the Holy-Week procession to Gethsemane, the reading of the

Gospel on the spot, the wailing and weeping of the excited crowd of pilgrims. The church has disappeared, but the traditional spot is marked by olive trees of venerable age, whether planted by Christian hands, or sprung from the roots of those which Titus cut down (Jos. *B. J.* vi. 1. 1).

καὶ λέγει...Καθίσατε ὥδε κτλ.] All appear to have entered the garden (Jo. εἰσῆλθεν αὐτὸς καὶ οἱ μαθηταὶ αὐτοῦ), but eight of the Eleven were bidden to rest near the entrance, that the Master might retire for prayer. In this there was probably nothing unusual; cf. i. 35, vi. 46. On ἔως (Mt. ἐ. οὐ) προσεύξωμαι see Burton, § 321 ff., who translates, “while I pray”; so A. V., R. V., though both render the parallel ἔως φάγω καὶ πίω in Lc. xvii. 8 “till I have eaten and drunken.” The Vg. has *donec orem*, on which see Madvig, §§ 339. 2 b, 360. 1. In Mt. we see the Lord pointing to the spot which He will make His oratory (*ἀπελθὼν ἐκεῖ*). It is such a detail as might have been expected in Mc., who however omits it.

33. καὶ παραλαμβάνει κτλ.] This again was not an entirely new step: the eight would remember the Transfiguration, when, as now, the purpose of the retirement was to pray (Lc. ix. 28); Thphrt.: παραλ. δὲ τοὺς τρεῖς μόνους...ἴνα οἱ ἰδόντες τὰ ἔνδοξα ἴδωσι καὶ τὰ σκυνθρωπά. Οἱ παραλαμβάνει see iv. 36, v. 40, ix. 2, x. 32, notes; on the order of the names (Πέτρος, Ἰάκωβος, Ἰωάννης) cf. iii. 17, v. 37, ix. 2, notes, and, on the repetition of the article, the notes on

τὸν Ἰάκωβον καὶ τὸν Ἰωάνην μετ' αὐτοῦ, καὶ ἤρξατο  
§ the 34 ἐκθαμβεῖσθαι καὶ ἀδημονεῖν· <sup>34</sup> § καὶ λέγει αὐτοῖς Περί-

33 τὸν Ἰακώβον] om τὸν NCDEFGHMNSUVW<sup>b</sup>XΓΔ al | τὸν Ἰωάνην] om τὸν NCDEFGHLMNSUVW<sup>b</sup>XΓΔ al | μετ' αυτοὺς] μεθ' εαυτοῦ ALNW<sup>b</sup>XΓΔΠΣΦΨ min<sup>pl</sup> om syr<sup>sin</sup> | ηρξαντο LS | εκθαμβεῖσθαι] λυπεῖσθαι I 118 syr<sup>sin pesh</sup> arm | αδημονεῖν] ακηδεμονεῖν D\* (ακηδημ. D<sup>corr</sup>) ακηδιαν σ<sup>scr</sup> taediari ed ffiq taedere f taedium pati k acediarri et deficere a 34 καὶ 1°] τοτε D 13 69 124 346 604 2<sup>po</sup> a arm | λεγειν Ψ

v. 37, ix. 2. Mc. sets each individuality before the mind separately, while Mt. (τὸν Πέτρον καὶ τὸν δύο viouς Ζεβεδαίου) brings Peter prominently into the foreground.

καὶ ἤρξατο ἐκθαμβεῖσθαι καὶ ἀδημονεῖν] Wycliffe : "began for to drede and to henge." The shadow of death begins to fall upon Him as He passes with the Three into the depths of the olive-grove. Mt. writes ἤρξ. λυπεῖσθαι: Mc.'s ἐκθαμβεῖσθαι—the word is peculiarly Marcan, see note on ix. 15—strikes another note, that of amazed awe. It is unnecessary either to abandon in this place the proper sense of θάμβος, or to find with Meyer a truer psychology in Mt.'s λυπεῖσθαι. The Lord was overwhelmed with sorrow (see next verse), but His first feeling was one of terrified surprise. Long as He had foreseen the Passion, when it came clearly into view its terrors exceeded His anticipations. His human soul received a new experience—ἔμαθεν ἀφ' ὅν ἔπαθεν, and the last lesson of obedience began with a sensation of inconceivable awe. With this there came another, that of overpowering mental distress —ἤρξατο...ἀδημονεῖν (Mt., Mc.). The verb occurs only once again in the N. T. (Phil. ii. 26 ἐπιποθῶν καὶ ἀδημονῶν, where see Lightfoot's full note), and does not appear in the LXX., but it is used by Aquila (Job xviii. 20, LXX. στενάζειν) and Symmachus (Ps. lx.=lxi. 3, LXX. ἀκηδιάν, exv. 2=exvi. 11, LXX. ἐν τῇ ἐκστάσει, Eccl. vii. 17 (16), LXX. ἐκπλαγῆναι, Ezech. iii. 15, LXX. ἀναστρεφόμενος, Th. θαυμάζων). Plato couples ἀδημονεῖν with ἀπορεῖν more

than once; see esp. *Phaedr.* 251 D: ἀδημονεῖ τε τῇ ἀποπίᾳ τοῦ πάθους καὶ ἀποροῦσα λυττᾶ. These references shew that ἀδημονεῖν forms a natural sequel to ἐκθαμβεῖσθαι, representing the distress which follows a great shock, "the confused, restless, half-distracted state" (Lightfoot) which may be worse than the sharp pain of a fully realised sorrow. Bede: "timet Christus, cum Petrus non timeat." The reading of D seems to have arisen from a confusion of ἀδημονεῖν with ἀκηδιάν, unless ἀκηδεμονεῖν is a true form meaning 'to be listless, the reverse of a κηδεμών.'

34. καὶ λέγει αὐτοῖς Περίλυπος κτλ.] The Lord reveals to His three witnesses a part of His distress. His words recall Ps. xli. (xlii.) 6, 12, xlii. (xliii.) 5 ἵνα τί περίλυπος εἴλ, ἡ ψυχή—in an earlier utterance of the Holy Week He had referred to the rest of the refrain (ἵνα τί συνταράσσεις με, cf. Jo. xii. 27; see Kirkpatrick on Ps. xlii.). But His sorrow exceeds the Psalmist's; it is ἔως θανάτου, a sorrow which well-nigh kills. Comp. Jon. iv. 9 σφόδρα λελύπημαι ἔως θανάτου (τὸν θνήτον). As for the cause of this overwhelming grief, Jerome's remark, "contristatur... anima... non propter mortem, sed usque mortem," is doubtless true, but the narrative does not encourage the view which prevails in many patristic commentaries, that the Lord's sorrow and prayers were only for the sins and woes of men (cf. e.g. Ambr. in *Lc.* "cum in se nihil haberet quod doleret nostris tamen angebatur aerumnis"). His human

λυπός ἐστιν ἡ ψυχή μου ἔως θανάτου· μείνατε ὅδε καὶ γρηγορεῖτε. <sup>35</sup>καὶ προελθὼν μικρὸν ἐπιπτεν ἐπὶ 35 τῆς γῆς, καὶ προσηύχετο ἵνα εἰ δυνατόν ἐστιν παρέλθῃ

34 οἱ μεινατε ω. κ. γρηγ. syr<sup>sin</sup> | γρηγορειτε]+μετ εμου G 1 28 alpauo qr the  
35 προελθων ΚΒFKMNP\*<sup>3</sup>Φ min<sup>mu</sup> latt<sup>tpivg</sup> syr<sup>sin</sup>] προσελθων ACDEGH\*LSUV  
W<sup>b</sup>XΓΔΙΙ<sup>2</sup>ΣΨ min<sup>pl</sup> ff syrr<sup>pseshcl</sup> | επιπτεν ΚΒLΨ] επεσεν ACDNW<sup>b</sup>XΓΔΙΙΣΦ min<sup>omn</sup> vid  
latt<sup>vid</sup>+επι προσωπον DGΣ 1 13 69 124 346 60<sub>4</sub> 2<sup>pe</sup> alpauo k syr<sup>sin</sup> arm | επι την γην  
13 69 124 346 60<sub>4</sub> 2<sup>pe</sup> alpauo

soul shrank from the Cross, and the fact adds to our sense of the greatness of His sacrifice.

Though the Gospels yield abundant evidence of the presence of human emotions in our Lord (e.g. iii. 5, vi. 6, x. 14, Jo. xi. 33), this direct mention of His 'soul' has no parallel in them if we except Jo. xii. 27; for in such passages as x. 45, Jo. x. 11 ψυχή is the individual life (see Cremer s.v.) rather than the seat of the emotions. The present passage was from the first eagerly used for polemical purposes both by Christians (Iren. i. 8. 2, iii. 22, 2) and unbelievers (Orig. c. Cels. ii. 24).

*μείνατε ὅδε καὶ γρηγορεῖτε]* The Three are placed where they can see and hear (cf. v. 35), for they are to be witnesses of the Agony. For the same reason they are to keep themselves awake (cf. Lc. ix. 32); but *γρηγορεῖτε* (Mt. γρ. μετ' ἐμοῦ) has besides an ethical meaning, as in xiii. 35 ff.; a great crisis was near, which demanded a wakeful spirit (v. 38). Origen: "maneamus ubi praecepit Jesus (i Cor. vii. 20)...ut cum eo pariter vigilemus qui non dormit neque dormitat custodiens Israel." On the tenses see Blass, *Gr.* p. 196.

35. *καὶ προελθὼν μικρὸν κτλ.]* The Lord went forward (for *προελθ.*, cf. vi. 33, Acts xii. 10) into the olive-grove, as if to isolate Himself from the Three, who could not share His present sorrow; comp. the noteworthy parallel in Gen. xxii. 5. *Μικρόν* (Lc.,

ώσει λίθου βολήν) is more frequently used of time than of space (cf. Cant. iii. 4 ὡς μικρὸν ὅτε παρῆλθον, Hos. i. 4 ἔτι μικρόν, Jo. vii. 33, xii. 35 ἔτι χρόνον μ., ἔτι μ. χρ.), but Meyer cites from Xenophon μικρὸν πορεύεσθαι, προπέμπειν. There He fell upon His face (Mt. ἐπὶ πρόσωπον αὐτοῦ, cf. Gen. xvii. 3, 17, Lc. v. 12, xvii. 16) on the earth (Mc. only; cf. Jud. xiii. 20 ἐπεσαν...ἔπι τὴν γῆν, and for the gen. see WM., p. 470); the imperf. *ἐπιπτεν* (Mt. ἐπεσεν) describes the prostration as taking place under the eyes of the narrator (cf. WM., p. 226). Lc. speaks only of kneeling (*θεῖς τὰ γόνατα*), a not infrequent attitude in prayer (cf. Acts vii. 60, ix. 40, xx. 36, xxi. 5; see note on xi. 25).

*προσηύχετο ἵνα κτλ.]* The Lord's habit of prayer has already been noticed in i. 35, vi. 46 (see notes): on the prayers of the Agony comp. Heb. v. 7 with Westcott's notes. *"Ἴνα...ἢ ὥρα* is a note peculiar to Mc., summarising and interpreting the prayers which follow. For *προσεύχεσθαι ἵνα*, cf. xiii. 18, note; *ἢ ὥρα*, the appointed time (v. 41, Jo. xvii. 1), cf. *ἢ ὥρα αὐτοῦ* Jo. vii. 30, viii. 20, *ἢ ὥρα αὐτῆς* Jo. xii. 23, *ἢ ὥρα αὐτῆς* ib. 27 bis, *ἢ ὥρα μεταβῆ* Jo. xiii. 1; comp. the phrase *ὥρα (τῆς) συντελείας* in Dan. xi. 40, 45 (LXX.), and Jo. xvi. 4 *ἢ ὥρα αὐτῶν* sc. ὥν λελάληκα, 21 *ἢ ὥρα αὐτῆς* sc. τικτούσης. *Παρέλθῃ*, 'may pass by without bringing its allotted suffering.' *Ἐλ δυνατόν ἐστιν*, cf. xiii. 22, note, and see note on next verse,

36 ἀπ' αὐτοῦ ἡ ὥρα. <sup>36</sup>καὶ ἔλεγεν Ἐββὰ ὁ πατήρ,  
τι πάντα δυνατά σοι· <sup>¶</sup> παρένεγκε τὸ ποτήριον τοῦτο  
37 ἀπ' ἐμοῦ· ἀλλ' οὐ τί ἐγὼ θέλω ἀλλὰ τί σύ. <sup>37</sup>καὶ

35—36 om απ αυτου...παρενεγκε k      36 αββα ο πατηρ] πατερ μου <sup>syr<sub>sin</sub> vidi</sup> |  
δυναται Ψ | παρενεγκαι ΝΑΚΚW<sup>b</sup>H\* min<sup>mu</sup> | αλλ] pr πλην N πλην Or | ou τι]  
ουχ ο D 70 ου το Σ ουχ ws 13 346 2<sup>po</sup> c d ff | θελω] λεγω a (dico) | αλλα τι] αλλ ο  
D 70 αλλ ws 13 69 346 2<sup>po</sup> c d ff αλλ οτι GΣ i alp<sup>anc</sup> αλλ ει τι CUΦΨ min<sup>nonn</sup> | συ]+  
θελεις D a c fff q arm aegg aeth

36. καὶ ἔλεγεν Ἐββὰ ὁ πατήρ] The words of the prayer are given with minor variations by the three Synoptists. Mt. begins πάτερ μου, Lc. πάτερ, Mc., as in v. 41, vii. 34, preserves the Aramaic word uttered by Jesus (ΝΕΞ, Dalman, *Gr.* p. 157; *Worte*, i. p. 257). 'Ο πατήρ is either (1) an interpretative note due to the Evangelist or his source, and nearly equivalent to ὁ ἐστιν πατήρ, or (2) a part of the original prayer, cf. SH. on Rom. viii. 15 ("it seems better to suppose that our Lord Himself, using familiarly both languages ... found Himself impelled spontaneously to repeat the word"), and Schöttgen *ad loc.*, who quotes instances of a similar duplication, e.g. מִרְיָם בַּרְיָם (where the second word represents the Galilean pronunciation of κύριε), and ναί, ἀμήν, Apoc. i. 7, cf. xxii. 20. Or, accepting Schöttgen's explanation, we may regard Ἐββὰ ὁ πατήρ as (3) a formula familiar to the bilingual Palestinian Church, which naturally found its way in place of the simple Ἐββά or ὁ πατήρ into the earliest cycle of oral teaching, and thence into this Gospel. Dr Chase (*Lord's Prayer in the Early Church*, p. 24) suggests that the words were the current equivalent of the initial Πάτερ of the Lord's Prayer in its shorter form (Lc. xi. 2), and that they are used with a reference to that Prayer both by Mc. and in Rom. Lc., Gal. iv. 6.

πάντα δυνατά σοι] Mt. εἰ δυνατόν  
ἐστιν (cf. v. 35), Lc. εἰ βούλει. Comp.  
x. 27. The Lord realises in His own

case the truth He had impressed on the Twelve. Seeing that nothing is *per se* impossible to the Father, He can pray, even on the eve of the Passion, that it may be averted. In perfect faith He believes that even now it is possible to defeat Judas and the Sanhedrin (Mt. xxvi. 53), to resist Pilate and the power of Rome (Jo. xix. 11), even to defy death (Jo. x. 17, 18); and He asks (but with a reservation which will immediately appear) for deliverance in whatever way. Παρένεγκε, 'carry past,' i.e. cause it to pass by; so Lc., Mt., παρελθάτω: cf. Jud. vi. 5, Α τὰς σκηνὰς αὐτῶν παρέφερον, where B has αἱ σκηναὶ αὐτῶν παρεγίνοντο, and see the illustrations from Plutarch in Field, *Notes*, p. 39. Τὸ ποτήριον τοῦτο: cf. x. 38, note; in Jo. the reference to the Cup of the Passion comes further on, in the incident of Simon and Malchus (Jo. xviii. 11). The Cup corresponds to 'the hour' in v. 35.

ἀλλ' οὐ τί ἐγὼ θέλω κτλ.] For ἀλλά Mt. has πλὴν here, see Blass, *Gr.* p. 268. On this use of τι where a classical writer would have written ὁ τι see WM., p. 210, and Blass, *Gr.* p. 175, who cites a saying of Euergetus in Ath. x. 438 ε τίνι ή τύχη δίδωσι, λαβέτω (cf. his comm. on Acts xiii. 25). The interrogative sense of τι in such cases does not perhaps wholly disappear; we may paraphrase: 'however, the question is not (οὐ, not μή) what is My will,' &c. Mt. (πλὴν οὐχ ως... ἀλλ' ως...) and Lc. (πλὴν μὴ τὸ θέλημά μου ἀλλὰ τὸ σὸν γινέσθω) avoid the

ἐρχεται καὶ εὐρίσκει αὐτοὺς καθεύδοντας, καὶ λέγει τῷ Πέτρῳ Σίμων, καθεύδεις; οὐκ ἵσχυσας μίαν ὥραν γρηγορῆσαι; <sup>38</sup> γρηγορεῖτε, καὶ προσεύχεσθε ἴνα μὴ 38

37 ἐρχεται] + προς τους μαθητας 1071 | ισχυσατε D 1 69 124 209 346 al<sup>nominative</sup> ff k | γρηγορησαι] + μετ εμου F min<sup>pause</sup> + ουν 1071      38 ιω...πειρασμον] ut transeat a vobis (vos) temptatio cff i(k) | om ιω D

colloquial *τί*, regarding it perhaps as unsuitable in a solemn prayer. The words, as a whole, seem to look back to the Lord's Prayer as given by Mt. (*γενηθήτω τὸ θέλημά σου*), and in Lc. and Mt.'s second version of them (*v. 42*) the resemblance is closer. The Divine Will, which is the expression of the Divine righteousness and love, limits the exercise of the Divine power, and therefore supplies a necessary check to the expectations which might otherwise arise from belief in the omnipotence of God; cf. 1 Jo. v. 14. The practical teaching of this passage is well stated by Origen: “quare proprium est omnis hominis fidelis primum quidem nolle pati aliquid doloris, maxime quod dicit usque ad mortem; si autem sic voluerit Deus, acquiescere etiam contra voluntatem suam.” The words occupy an important place in the history of the doctrine of the Person of Christ. The Church found in Christ's *οὐ τί ἐγώ θέλω ἀλλὰ τί σύ* conclusive evidence of the existence in our Lord of a true human will, distinct from the Divine Will, although even in this supreme crisis absolutely submissive to it; for a catena of the patristic passages see Petav. *de Incarn.* ix. 6. 4 sqq., and comp. esp. John of Damascus, *de fide orth.* iii. 18 εἰχε μὲν οὖν φυσικῶς καὶ ὡς θεὸς καὶ ὡς ἀνθρωπος τὸ θέλειν. εἴπετο δὲ καὶ συνετάσσετο τῷ αὐτοῦ θελήματι τὸ ἀνθρώπινον...ταῦτα θέλον ἢ τὸ θεῖον αὐτοῦ ἥθελε θέλημα...αὐτεξουσίως δὲ ἥθελε τῷ θείῳ καὶ ἀνθρωπίνῳ θελήματι ...ῶστε ἥθελε μὲν αὐτεξουσίως κινούμενη τοῦ κυρίου ψυχῇ, ἀλλ' ἔκεινα αὐτεξουσίως ἥθελεν ἢ ἡ θεία αὐτοῦ θέλησις ἥθελε θέλειν αὐτήν. On the difficult

questions connected with the personality of the Lord's human nature the student may consult Dorner (E. T. II. i, p. 201 ff.), and Westcott on Jo. i. 14. Ἐγώ θέλω identifies the Person of Christ with the action of His human will, but does not necessarily affirm that the personality resides in His humanity.

37. καὶ ἐρχεται καὶ εὐρίσκει κτλ.] The Lord rises again (Lc. ἀναστὰς ἀπὸ τῆς προσευχῆς), and returning to the Three finds that His warning (*v. 34*) has been in vain; all are asleep (cf. xiii. 36). Lc. explains their sleep as resulting ἀπὸ τῆς λύπης, i.e. from the exhaustion produced by their deepening realisation of the Passion (cf. *v. 19*, Jo. xvi. 20). Peter is addressed as the first of the Three; but the rebuke is partly personal, as Mc. at least is aware (*Σίμων, καθεύδεις; οὐκ ἵσχυσας...*; cf. Mt., οὐκ ἵσχύσατε...). Mc. has not used the personal name Σίμων since Peter's call to the Apostolate (iii. 16), and its appearance here is certainly suggestive; cf. Jo. xxi. 15 ff. Σίμων Ἰωάννου, where the reference to natural, perhaps hereditary, character is still more plainly emphasised. For the time he is ‘Peter’ no more; the new character which he owes to association with Jesus is in abeyance. He who was ready to die with the Master (*v. 31*) has been proved not to possess the strength of will (*οὐκ ἵσχυσας*) requisite for resisting sleep during the third part of a single watch (*μίαν ὥραν*); cf. Euth.: σὺν ἐμοὶ ἀποθανεῖν ἐπηγγείλασθε, καὶ οὐκ ἵσχύσατε μίαν ὥραν γρηγορῆσαι μετ' ἐμού.

38. γρηγορεῖτε, καὶ προσεύχεσθε

ἐλθητε εἰς πειρασμόν· τὸ μὲν πνεῦμα πρόθυμον, ἡ δὲ

38 ελθητε Ι\*Β 346 q] εισελθητε Ι<sup>o</sup>ACDLNW<sup>b</sup>ΧΓΔΠΣΦΨ min<sup>fere omn</sup> a f vg

κτλ.] "Watch ye, and pray that" &c. (R.V. mg.). The Lord now addresses the Three and not Simon only. He reveals the deeper purpose of His injunction; wakefulness of spirit was chiefly important as necessary to prayer; cf. 1 Pet. iv. 7 νήψατε εἰς προσευχάς, v. 8 ν., γρηγορήσατε. Already, as they took their places in Gethsemane, He had said γρηγορέτε (v. 34), and προσεύχεσθε μὴ εἰσελθεῖν εἰς πειρασμόν (Lc. xxii. 40); He repeats this now, for there was still time. "Ινα μὴ ἐλθητε κτλ.: another reference to the Lord's Prayer. Dr Chase (*Lord's Prayer*, p. 61 f.) points out that the Syriac versions use the same verb in different conjugations for εἰσφέρειν in Mt. vi. 13, Lc. xi. 4, and ἐρχεσθαι here. Similarly, no doubt, one root would have been used in the Hebrew or Aramaic originals of both passages (cf. Delitzsch, *נִיחַבְתָּא* = μὴ εἰσενέγκης, *בְּבִזְבֵּחַ* = μὴ ἐλθητε). Πειρασμός is used in the O.T. "of the trying or proving of God by man, but more commonly of the trying or proving of man by God" (Hatch, *Essays*, p. 71); and since God tries men by affliction, the word acquires the latter meaning (e.g. Sir. ii. 1 ἔτοιμασον τὴν ψυχήν σου εἰς πειρασμόν). The N.T. writers also employ it with this connotation (cf. Lc. xxii. 28, Acts xx. 19, Gal. iv. 14, 1 Pet. i. 6, and see Mayor's note on Jas. i. 2), but not exclusively, for the Gospel reveals another form of temptation which does not come from God (James i. 13), and is not limited to the infliction of suffering. Πειράζεσθαι ὑπὸ τοῦ σατανᾶ (i. 13, note) is 'to be solicited to commit sin' (cf. Jas. i. 13 f.), and the context shews that this sense predominates here and in the Lord's Prayer. With ἐλθεῖν εἰς π. comp. περιπεσεῖν (Jas. i. 2), ἐμπίπτειν (1 Tim.

vi. 9); the present phrase implies that the temptation may be escaped by an act of the will (cf. 1 Cor. x. 13, Jas. v. 7). Jerome, Bede: "non ait...ne tentemini sed ne intretis in tentationem, hoc est, ne tentatio vos supererit et intra suos casses teneat."

τὸ μὲν πνεῦμα πρόθυμον κτλ.] So Mt. A saying of peculiar interest, especially as finding a place in the older Synoptists, since it anticipates the teaching of St Paul and St John. It is quoted already by Polycarp (*Phil.* 7), whether from the Gospels or from current tradition. On the contrast πνεῦμα, σάρξ, see Westcott on Jo. iii. 6, and SH. on Rom. viii. 9. It begins in the O.T. (see e.g. Num. xvi. 22, xxvii. 16, Isa. xxxi. 3), where 'the flesh' is man "as belonging to the sphere of material life," under the limitations of a corporeal nature, frail, mortal, and in fact impure (Gen. vi. 12); and 'the spirit' is the vital force (Gen. vi. 17) which in man is directly dependent on the Spirit of God (Gen. ii. 7) and the organ of communication with God and the spiritual world; cf. Schultz, *O. T. Theology*, E. T., II. p. 242 ff. In the Eleven the human spirit was already under the influence of the Spirit of God through their intercourse with Christ (Jo. xiv. 17, see Westcott's note). It was therefore πρόθυμον (cf. 2 Chron. xxix. 31 πρόθυμος τῇ καρδίᾳ, 2 Cor. viii. 11, ἡ προθυμία τοῦ θέλειν), willing and eager (cf. Lc. xxii. 33 ἔτοιμός εἴμι), through the energy of the Holy Spirit (Ps. li. 14). But its προθυμία was not a match for the *vis inertiae* of its colleague, the frail flesh (cf. Rom. vi. 19 διὰ τὴν ἀσθένειαν τῆς σαρκός ὑμῶν, viii. 3 τὸ ἀδύνατον τοῦ νόμου ἐν φῷ ησθένει διὰ τῆς σαρκός). In the Epp. the 'flesh' is regarded as not merely weak and impotent, but actively op-

σὰρξ ἀσθενής. <sup>39</sup>καὶ πάλιν ἀπελθὼν προσηύξατο 39 τὸν αὐτὸν λόγον εἰπών. <sup>40</sup>καὶ πάλιν ἐλθὼν εὗρεν 40 αὐτοὺς καθεύδοντας, ἥσαν γὰρ αὐτῶν οἱ ὄφθαλμοὶ καταβαρυνόμενοι, καὶ οὐκ ἤδεισαν τί ἀποκριθῶσιν αὐτῷ. <sup>41</sup>καὶ ἔρχεται τὸ τρίτον καὶ λέγει αὐτοῖς 41

<sup>39</sup> οἱ τὸν αὐτὸν λόγον εἰπων D ac fffk (q me) om παλιν D ac fffk υποστρέψας ευρ. αυτ. παλιν AC(N)W<sup>b</sup>(X)ΓΔΠΣΦ al min<sup>omnivid</sup> f 1 vg syrr arm aeth | καταβαρυνομενοι Ν<sup>c</sup>ABKLNΔΠ<sup>\*</sup>ΣΨ 1 11 13 69 al<sup>sat mū</sup>] καταβαρουμενοι D 238 253 καταβεβαρημενοι Ν<sup>\*</sup> βεβαρημενοι CEFGHSVV<sup>b</sup>XΓΠΦ min<sup>pl</sup> βαρυνομενοι M 56 <sup>40</sup> παλιν ελθων ευρεν αυτους ΝBLΨ

41 λεγει] pr ubi adoravit k

posed to the ‘spirit,’ Gal. v. 17 ff., the seat of the lower *ἐπιθυμίαι* which wage war upon the true life of men (1 Pet. ii. 11); the contrast between the two has become sharper and deeper through the mission of the Holy Spirit, Who gives new force and a new direction to the spiritual side of human nature (Rom. viii. 9 ff.).

39. καὶ πάλιν ἀπελθὼν προσηύξατο κτλ.] The injunction to pray is again confirmed by example. The Lord's second prayer was substantially a repetition of the first (*τὸν αὐτὸν λόγον εἰπών*), yet not identical with it, ‘the same petition’ rather than “the same words”; the answer to the first prayer seems to have been vouchsafed in a growing consciousness of the Father's Will, and the second prayer assumes the form *Ἐλ οὐ δύναται τοῦτο παρελθεῖν ἐὰν μὴ αὐτὸ πίω, γενηθήτω τὸ θέλημά σου* (Mt.). The last clause is taken verbally from Mt. vi. 10; cf. Acts xxi. 14. On *τὸ θέλημα* (*τοῦ θεοῦ*) see iii. 35, note : Lightfoot, *Revision*, p. 106. *Προσηύξατο...εἰπών*: part. of identical action, Burton, § 139.

40. καὶ πάλιν ἐλθὼν κτλ.] Returning to the Three He again finds them asleep, their eyes weighed down with slumber (*καταβαρυνόμενοι*, Mt. *βεβαρημένοι*, sc. *ὑπνῷ* (Lc. ix. 32); cf. Joel ii. 8 *καταβαρυνόμενοι ἐπὶ τοῖς ὅπλοις αὐτῶν πορεύονται*, Gen. xlvi. 10 οἱ δὲ ὄφθαλμοὶ *Ἰσραὴλ ἐβαρυπησαν*). During the Transfiguration (Lc. l. c.) the Three

had experienced the same overpowering drowsiness and the same inability to give expression to their thoughts ; with οὐκ ἤδεισαν τί ἀποκρ. αὐτῷ comp. ix. 6 οὐκ ἤδει τί ἀποκριθῇ (note). They were as men in a dream who could not say what they would. On the earlier occasion these were the effects of fear (Mc. l. c. *ἔκφοβοι γὰρ ἐγένοντο*) ; in Gethsemane the cause was grief (see note on v. 37).

41. καὶ ἔρχεται τὸ τρίτον κτλ.] A third interval of prayer had intervened (Mt. *προσηύξατο ἐκ τρίτου τὸν αὐτὸν λόγον εἰπών*). Tatian connects with this third prayer the narrative of the Bloody Sweat, guided perhaps by its position in the third Gospel. But the inference from position is precarious, for (1) St Luke recognises only one prayer in Gethsemane, and (2) the narrative in question, though a precious and probably genuine relic of primitive tradition, seems to have had no place in the original Lc. (cf. WH, *Notes*, p. 66 f.).

καὶ λέγει...Καθεύδετε κτλ.] The time for watchfulness and prayer has gone by, and the injunction is not repeated : in place of it comes a permission to sleep. The permission is surely ironical : ‘sleep then, since it is your will to do so ; rest, if you can’; cf. Thph.: *εἰρωνεύμενος δὲ τοῦτο λέγει πρὸς αὐτούς...ἐπιγελῶν τῷ ὑπνῷ αὐτῶν*. Euth. : *ἐντρέπων αὐτοὺς...καὶ καθαπτόμενος...ἐπεὶ μέχρι τοῦ νῦν οὐκ ἐγρηγο-*

Καθεύδετε τὸ λοιπὸν καὶ ἀναπάνεσθε. ἀπέχει· ἥλθεν  
 § go οἱ ὄρα, § ἵδοὺ παραδίδοται ὁ νιὸς τοῦ ἀνθρώπου εἰς  
 42 τὰς χεῖρας τῶν ἀμαρτωλῶν. 42 ἐγείρεσθε, ἄγωμεν·  
 ἵδοὺ ὁ παραδίδούς με ἥγγικεν.

41 τὸ λοιπὸν] om τὸ ACDEFLSV<sup>2</sup>ΧΨ min<sup>sat</sup><sub>tau</sub> om τὸ λοιπὸν Syr<sup>sin</sup> 41—42 καὶ  
 αναπάνεσθε...ηγγικεν] ecce adpropinquavit qui me tradit. et post pusillum excitavit  
 illos et dixit iam ora est ecce traditur filius hominis in manu peccatorum surgite  
 eamus k 41 om απέχει Ψ | απέχει...ωρα] απέχει τὸ τέλος καὶ η ωρα D 1071  
 (c) q απ. τὸ τέλος (καὶ) ηλθεν η ωρα Φ a f (ff) syrr<sub>peshel</sub> arm | ωρα]+ηγγικεν τὸ τέλος  
 Syr<sup>sin vid</sup> | τὰς χειρας] om τὰς AFKNUW<sup>b</sup>ΠΣ i ii 69 604 2<sup>pe</sup> al<sup>nomn</sup> | των αμ.] om των  
 i3 69 435 604 42 παραδίδων D | με] μου 1071 | ηγγικεν ABDLNΣΦ rell]  
 ηγγισεν NC

ῥήσατε, τὸ λοιπὸν καθ. καὶ ἀναπ., εἰ δύνασθε.' The Lord did not hesitate to use irony (cf. vii. 9) when there was occasion for it; exhortation and reproof had in this instance failed, and no other means of rousing the Three to a sense of duty remained. As Augustine (*de cons. ev.* iii. 11) admits, "recte fieret, si esset necesse"; but who can say that the necessity did not exist? Τὸ λοιπόν, 'in future,' 'henceforth,' cf. i Cor. vii. 29, Heb. x. 13=εἰς τὸ λ., εἰς τὰ λοιπά, 2 Macc. xi. 19, xii. 31. 'Ye shall not be interrupted by any further call to prayer.'

ἀπέχει· ἥλθεν ή ὄρα κτλ.] His irony has produced the desired effect, the Apostles are roused, and the Lord at once reverts to His customary tone of serious direction. 'Απέχει (Mc. only) marks the transition. 'Απέχει is frequently used in the papyri in forms of receipt (see Deissmann, *B. St.* p. 229; *Fayūm Towns*, general index s.v.; Herwerden, *lex. supplet. et dial.* s.v.); cf. Mt. vi. 2 ff., Lc. vi. 24, Phil. iv. 18. The impersonal ἀπέχει is peculiar to Mc., and only one other ex. has been discovered (Ps.-Anacr. xv. 33 ἀπέχει· βλέπω γὰρ αὐτὸν), cf. Num. xvi. 3 ἐχέτω ὑμῖν=מְכֻל בָּנִים). But the sense is doubtless correctly given by the Vg. *sufficit*, 'enough!' see Field, *Notes*, p. 39. The question remains whether ἀπέχει refers to the

sleep of the Apostles, or to the ironical reproof. The latter seems the better interpretation; the Lord breaks off the momentary play of irony—it is as if He would say, 'this is no time for a lengthened exposure of the faults of friends; the enemy is at the gate.' The 'Western' text seeks to interpret ἀπέχει by adding τὸ τέλος from Lc. xxii. 37; see WH., *Notes*, p. 26 f., and cf. Euth. ἀπέχει τὰ κατ' ἔμε· ἥγουν πέρας ἔχει. 'Η ὄρα, cf. v. 35, note; on ἥλθεν, 'is come,' see Burton § 52 (p. 26 f.). Παραδίδοται ὁ νιὸς τοῦ ἀνθρώπου: the present is used even in ix. 31 (note) as the equivalent of παραδοθήσεται (x. 33), so vivid was the Lord's anticipation of the event; here it points to the event as now imminent, as in xiv. 21. Εἰς τὰς χ. τῶν ἀμαρτωλῶν, cf. εἰς χ. ἀνθρώπων (ix. 31), τοῖς ἔθνεσσι (x. 33); on ἀμαρτωλοῖ see ii. 15, viii. 38; the word may be used technically, or in its deeper sense. In this context it would mean to the disciples 'the Gentiles,' i.e. the Roman officials; but in the Lord's own thought the Scribes and Priests were doubtless included. He had sought the company of sinners who were willing to receive Him, for He came to call them (ii. 16, 17); but to be delivered to the will of sinners who refused His call was one of the bitterest ingredients of His Cup.

42. ἐγείρεσθε, ἄγωμεν κτλ.] 'Rise

<sup>43</sup> Καὶ εὐθὺς ἔτι αὐτοῦ λαλοῦντος παραγίνεται [ό] 43  
Ἰούδας εἰς τῶν δώδεκα καὶ μετ' αὐτοῦ ὄχλος μετὰ  
μαχαιρῶν καὶ ξύλων παρὰ τῶν ἀρχιερέων καὶ τῶν

43 om ευθυς DΣ I 13 69 346 604 2<sup>o</sup> latv<sup>v</sup>plv<sup>g</sup> syrr<sup>sin pesh</sup> arm | o Ιουδας AB] Ιουδας  
NCDLNW<sup>b</sup>XΓΔΠΨ min<sup>fere omni</sup>+o Ισκαριωτης A(D)KMUW<sup>b</sup>ΠΦ min<sup>sat mu</sup> latt syrr<sup>pesh hel</sup>  
arm aeth Or (om NBCEGHLSVXTΔΣΨ min<sup>pl</sup> syrsin aegg go) | eis]+ων EFGHM  
VΧΓ I alplvid+εκ Δ min<sup>pauc</sup> | οχλος]+πολυς ACDNW<sup>b</sup>XΓΔΠΣΦ min<sup>pl</sup> k vg syrr<sup>sin pesh</sup>  
Or | παρα] απο B pr απεσταλμενοι i alnomin c ff the | των γραμμ.] om των ACKMNΔ  
min<sup>nomin</sup> pr απο D

ye, let us go.' They were still lying on the ground; He was standing by. At this moment the traitor and his party are seen to be approaching (on ἦγγικεν see i. 14, note). 'Ο παραδόους points back to the revelation of the supper-chamber (xiv. 18 ff.), which Peter and John at least had understood. The call to 'go' ends the scene in Gethsemane, but cannot be intended to suggest flight, for the Lord had always reserved Himself for this 'hour,' and had now finally embraced the Divine Will concerning it; cf. Euth.: οὐκέτι εἴη στάσις ἀναγκαῖα, ἀλλὰ καὶ εἰς ἀπάντησιν αὐτῶν ἔξειναι παρασκευάζεται. On the arrival of Judas the Lord went forth to meet him (Jo. xviii. 4), and called the Three to accompany Him.

43—50. ARRIVAL OF THE TRAITOR.  
ARREST OF JESUS (Mt. xxvi. 47—56,  
Lc. xxii. 47—53, Jo. xviii. 2—12).

43. καὶ εὐθὺς ἔτι αὐτοῦ λαλοῦντος κτλ.] The words *Ιδού...* ἦγγικεν had hardly left the Lord's lips (cf. v. 35, note), when Judas arrived (*παραγίνεται, venit*, cf. Mt. iii. 1, Jo. iii. 23; in the LXX. the verb is with rare exceptions an equivalent of ΣΙΕ). Lc. adopts the original phrase *ἔτι αὐτ. λαλ.* (Mt. Mc.), but seems to connect it with another saying (cf. Lc. xxii. 46 with Mt. xxvi. 41, Mc. xiv. 38). Jo. explains how it came to pass that Judas sought the Master in Gethsemane (*ἥδει...τὸν τόπον, διτι πολλάκις συνήχθη Ἰησοῦς ἐκεῖ μετὰ τῶν μαθητῶν αὐτοῦ*). Possibly it was matter of notoriety among the

Twelve that the garden would be visited after the Paschal meal. Εἰς τῶν δώδεκα, cf. vv. 10, 20; Jo. vi. 71; the phrase appears to belong in this place to the original tradition, for it is common to the three Synoptists; "the literary reflection of the chronic horror of the Apostolic Church that such a thing should be possible" (Bruce). There is force in the remark of Euth.: οὐκέτι επαισχύνονται τοῦτο γράφοντες οἱ εὐαγγελισταί, πανταχοῦ γὰρ τῆς ἀληθείας φροντίζουσιν. Cf. Origen, *c. Cels.* ii. 15.

καὶ μετ' αὐτοῦ ὄχλος κτλ.] Judas came first, as guide to the party (*προΐρχετο αὐτούς*, Lc., Acts i. 16), but was closely followed (*μετ' αὐτοῦ*) by an armed crowd. Their arms (*ὅπλα*, Jo.) consisted only of *μάχαιραι* (used here probably in the stricter sense), short swords or knives, such as even private persons carried (*infra*, v. 47, Lc. xxii. 36, 38; cf. Gen. xxii. 6, 10, Jud. iii. 16 ff., where see Moore's note), and *ξύλα*, stout sticks (cf. Jos. *B. J.* ii. 9. 4), or perhaps clubs, such as the fullers of Jerusalem used in their work (cf. Hegesippus *ap.* Eus. *H. E.* ii. 23)—such weapons in fact as could be hastily collected by an irregular body of men called out to deal e.g. with a brigand (v. 48, *ως ἐπὶ ληστήν*). But the men who followed Judas did not belong to the *ὄχλος* who thronged Jesus in the temple courts; they came from (WM., p. 457) the Sanhedrists (*παρὰ τῶν ἀρχ. κ. τ. γραμμ. κ. τ. πρεσβ.* =Mt. *ἀπὸ τῶν ἀρχ.* καὶ *πρεσβ.* =Jo.

44 γραμματέων καὶ τῶν πρεσβυτέρων. ἀδεδώκει δὲ ὁ παραδιδούς αὐτὸν σύσσημον αὐτοῖς λέγων Ὁν ἀν φιλήσω αὐτός ἐστιν· κρατήσατε αὐτὸν καὶ ἀπάγετε

43 των πρεσβ.] om των Κ\*AU 1 69 346 604 alpau<sup>c</sup> 44 δεδώκει] εδώκει D | συσσημον (συνσ. ΚΔ συν. FL)] σημειον D 2<sup>po</sup> alpau<sup>c</sup> | om αυτοις D 2<sup>po</sup> acff kq arm | αυτος] ουτος Ψ | και απ. ασφαλως] ασφ. και απ. syrr<sup>sin pesh vid</sup> | απαγετε ΚBDL 604 alpau<sup>c</sup>] απαγαγετε ACEGHKMNSUVW<sup>b</sup>XΓΔΠΣΦΨ min<sup>pl</sup> αγαγετε F min<sup>pau</sup>

ἐκ τῶν ἀρχ. καὶ ἐκ τῶν Φαρισαίων ὑπηρέτας: each of the orders is regarded as separately responsible). These ὑπηρέται were probably members of the temple police (Jo. vii. 32, Acts v. 26; see Schürer, II. i. p. 264 f., Edersheim, *Temple*, p. 119); if the νυκτοφύλακες could not be withdrawn from the Precinct, the ἡμεροφύλακες were doubtless available in emergencies. With them were regular troops from the Antonia, whose assistance had doubtless been secured through the influence of the High Priest (Jo. λαβὼν τὴν σπείραν, ‘the maniple,’ or perhaps ‘the cohort,’ under its tribune (*χιλίαρχος*), see Westcott on Jo. xviii. 3, 12); but of these the Synoptists seem to know nothing. The ὄχλος included personal servants of the High Priest (*v.* 47) and individuals who were attracted by curiosity or some other interest (*v.* 51); Lc. adds that members of the Sanhedrin were also present (xxii. 52). Mc. mentions the three orders in the Sanhedrin separately (*τῶν ἀρχ. καὶ τῶν γρ. καὶ τῶν πρ.*, cf. Jo.), for their action was due to a concurrence of class interests rather than to a formal vote of the whole body; cf. viii. 31, x. 33, xi. 18, 27, xiv. 1, xv. 1. Renan goes beyond the evidence when he writes (*Vie*, p. 305) “le mandat d’arrestation émanait ... du Sanhédrin.”

44. δεδώκει δὲ ὁ παραδιδούς κτλ.] Such details might have been arranged after the departure of Judas from the supper. Σύσσημον is a word condemned by Phrynicus, who classes

it with κίβδηλα ἀμαθῆ (Rutherford, p. 493); but in the later prose style it is used freely (e.g. Diod. Sic. xx. 52 τὸ συγκείμενον πρὸς μάχην σύσσημον), and it occurs in the LXX. (Jud. xx. 38, 40, B, Isa. v. 26, xlix. 22, lxii. 10, cf. Ign. Smyrn. 1); more precisely than σημεῖον, which Mt. has here, it denotes a signal or token agreed upon between two parties, a *tessera*. It was Judas again (cf. *v.* 10, note) who took the initiative; the token was of his proposing. On the omission of the augment in the plup. δεδώκει see WM., p. 85, Blass, *Gr.* p. 37.

The σύσσημον was a kiss, the customary mode of saluting a Rabbi; see Wünsche, p. 339. Φιλεῖν osculari is frequent in the LXX. (e.g. Gen. xxvii. 26, xlvi. 10, Prov. vii. 13, Cant. i. 2, viii. 1), as in class. Gk., but the N. T. uses it only in this context; φίλημα, however, occurs in the Epistles (Paul<sup>4</sup>, 1 Pet.<sup>1</sup>), where the kiss consecrated by the Gospel becomes the σύσσημον of brotherly love (φ. ἄγιον, ἄγαπης).

Αὐτός ἐστιν, ‘he is the man’; cf. Blass, *Gr.* p. 264.

κρατήσατε αὐτὸν κτλ.] The undertaking of Judas was fulfilled by the kiss, which betrayed the Lord to His enemies; the rest belonged to the agents of the Sanhedrists. Yet he volunteers advice: ‘seize and carry Him off securely.’ The words reveal the interest which Judas, when committed to the scheme, had learnt to take in its success. It might even now be frustrated by the escape of Jesus before there was time to arrest Him, or by a rescue on the way to the city or

ἀσφαλῶς. <sup>45</sup> καὶ ἐλθὼν εὐθὺς προσελθὼν αὐτῷ 45 λέγει· Ραββεί, καὶ κατεφίλησεν αὐτόν. ¶ <sup>46</sup> οἱ δὲ 46 ¶ <sup>¶ 12</sup> ἐπέβαλαν τὰς χεῖρας αὐτῷ καὶ ἐκράτησαν αὐτόν.

45 om ελθων D 1 al<sup>nonn</sup> a c ff k q syrr<sup>sin(vid) pesh</sup> arm | om ευθυς D 251 604 2<sup>pe</sup> a c ff k q | προσελθων] pr και θ\* min<sup>perpau</sup> | ραββει] + ραββει (-βι) AEFGHKNSUVW<sup>b</sup>XΓΠΣ syrr<sup>pesh hel(txt)</sup> arm go pr χαιρε C<sup>2</sup>Φ 1 13 69 124 346 2<sup>po</sup> al<sup>nonn</sup> a c vg<sup>ed</sup> syr<sup>hel(mg)</sup> the 46 επεβαλαν ΝΒ] επεβαλον ACDLNΣΨΦ rell | τας χειρας αυτω Ν<sup>c</sup>BDL 1 11 13 69 118 346 604 1071 2<sup>po</sup> a k q syrr arm τας χ. αυτων θ\* ΚΔΣ επ αυτον τας χ. M<sup>\*S</sup> min<sup>pau</sup> τας χ. επ αυτον Ψ επ. αυτον τ. χ. αυτων (A)EF<sup>2</sup>GH(K)M<sup>2</sup>UVW<sup>b</sup>XΓ(Π)Φ min<sup>pl</sup> | εκρα- τησαν] εδησαν k<sup>vid</sup>

in the streets; hence the double direction. For *κρατεῖν* ‘to arrest,’ cf. vi. 17; for *ἀπάγειν* ‘to carry off in custody,’ see xiv. 53, xv. 16, Mt. xxvii. 31, Acts xii. 19. ‘Ασφαλῶς *caute*, Tindale “warely”’ (Acts xvi. 23), cf. *ἀσφαλίζεσθαι*, Acts xvi. 24, Jos. B. J. iii. 8. 8 φρουρέιν μετὰ πάσης ἀσφαλείας. There must be no risk of miscarriage, and Jesus had often shewn a supernatural power of eluding His enemies; “tamquam si dicat, ‘nisi diligenter eum tenentes abduxeritis, cum voluerit effugiet vos.’” (Origen.)

45. καὶ ἐλθὼν εὐθὺς προσελθὼν κτλ.] No sooner had Judas reached the spot than he approached Jesus; not a moment was lost. Mt.’s εὐθέως προσελθών is comparatively tame. He uttered the name of attachment by which he had so long been used to accost Jesus (ix. 5, note), and sealed it by a fervent kiss (*κατεφίλησεν*, Mt. Mc.). *Καταφιλέν* is frequent in the LXX. where, like φιλέν *osculari*, it usually represents ψήν, and perhaps implies no particular vehemence or fervour. But the proper force of the compound verb (cf. Xen. *mem.* ii. 6. 33 τὸν δὲ ἀγαθὸν καταφιλήσοντος) is apparent in N. T. usage, cf. Lc. vii. 38, 45, xv. 20, Acts xx. 37; comp. v. 40 note. The kiss was not repeated; contrast Lc. vii. 38, 45 *κατεφίλει*, οὐ διέλυτεν καταφιλοῦσα, Acts l.c. *κατεφίλουν*. Lc., as if he shrank from realising the scene, contents himself by saying ηγγισεν τῷ Ἰησοῦ φιλῆσαι

αὐτόν. There is much difficulty in harmonising the accounts of our Lord’s answer. Acc. to Mt. He replied ‘Ἐταῖρε, ἐφ’ ὃ πάρει (‘do the work for which thou art here,’ cf. Jo. xiii. 27); acc. to Lc., ‘Ιούδα, φιλήματι τὸν νίδην τοῦ ἀνθρώπου παραδίδως; acc. to Jo., who omits the incident of the kiss, the Lord comes forward and asks the party τίνα ἤγρέιτε; Both Tatian and Augustine (*de cons. ev.* iii. 15) place these evidently distinct sayings in the order Lc., Mt., Jo., but a satisfactory adjustment is hardly possible without fuller knowledge. Such a moment of surprise and terror would naturally leave different impressions on the minds of the witnesses. If Mc. represents Peter’s testimony, his silence at this point is suggestive. That Apostle, we may imagine, was torn by a conflict of feelings which left his memory a blank in reference to the Master’s words; the treachery of Judas, the arrest of Jesus, filled his thoughts.

46. οἱ δὲ ἐπέβαλαν κτλ.] The arrest was effected without resistance on the Master’s part. For ἐπιβάλλειν τὰς χεῖρας (τὴν χεῖρα) in a hostile sense see Jo. vii. 30, 44, Acts iv. 3, v. 18, xii. 1, xxi. 27; in the LXX. the phrase is used for נִלְשֵׁ (Gen. xxii. 12, 2 Regn. xviii. 12) with ἐπι (בְּ) followed by the acc., which is also the usual construction in the N. T.;

47 ἐīs δὲ [τὶς] τῶν παρεστηκότων σπασάμενος τὴν μάχαιραν ἔπαισεν τὸν δοῦλον τοῦ ἀρχιερέως καὶ 48 ἀφεῖλεν αὐτοῦ τὸ ὡτάριον. <sup>48</sup>καὶ ἀποκριθεὶς ὁ Ἰησοῦς εἶπεν αὐτοῖς Ὡς ἐπὶ ληστὴν ἐξήλθατε μετὰ μαχαιρῶν

47 εἰς δὲ τὶς BCEFGHKNSUVXΓΔΠΣΦ min<sup>pl</sup> a vg syr<sup>hel</sup> go] εἰς δὲ ΝΑΛΜΨ 604 al<sup>paue</sup> c fff k q aegg aeth καὶ τὶς D | om των παρεστ. D a | τ. αρχιερεως]+Καιαφα Ψ | ωταριον ΝΒΔΦΨ i syr<sup>hel</sup> mg] ωτιον ACLNW<sup>b</sup>XΓΔΠΣ min<sup>forsome</sup>+το δεξιον go 48 καὶ αποκρ. o I.] o δε I. D aff q o δε I. αποκρ. 604 (2<sup>pe</sup>) k | om ws D | εξηλθετε FKMSU VV<sup>b</sup>ΓΠ al<sup>pl</sup>

see however Esth. vi. 2 ἐπιβαλεῖν χεῖρας Ἀρταξέρξη, and the frequent ἐπιβαλεῖν τινι (e.g. Esth. i. 1). On the form ἐπέβαλαν cf. WH., Notes, p. 165.

47. εἰς δέ τὶς τῶν παρεστ. κτλ.] Mc.'s vague phrase (cf. xiv. 69 f., xv. 35, Jo. xviii. 22) becomes in Mt. εἰς τῶν μετὰ Ἰησοῦ, and in Lc. εἰς τὶς τῶν ἐξ αὐτῶν, Jo. only supplying the name (*Σίμων Πέτρος*). On εἰς τὶς see Blass, *Gr.* pp. 144, 178. During the early days of the Church of Jerusalem when the evangelical tradition was being formed, prudential reasons (cf. Jo. xviii. 26) may have suggested reticence as to the name of the offender and even the fact of his connexion with the Christian body. In the Gospels we see the reserve gradually breaking down, and finally abandoned when the danger had ceased. Σπασάμενος τὴν μάχαιραν (cf. Acts xvi. 27), 'having drawn his knife' (see v. 43, note; the art. connects the weapon with the subject of the verb, cf. Mt. τὴν μ. αὐτοῦ) 'out of its sheath' (*θήκη*, Jo. xviii. 11). The verb is used both in act. and mid., and with reference to μάχαιρα or ρομφαία, cf. Jud. ix. 54 (B, A), Ps. xxxvi. (xxxvii.) 14, cl. 7; Mt. has here ἀπέσπασεν. The Apostles, who had a couple of knives at hand (Lc. xxii. 38), when they saw violence offered to the Master eagerly asked, Κύριε, εἰ πατάξομεν ἐν μαχαίρᾳ (Lc.); Peter, true to his impetuous nature, did not wait for the answer; to draw his knife and strike at the

nearest of the party was the work of a moment.

ἔπαισεν τὸν δοῦλον κτλ.] The blow fell on the High Priest's slave (δοῦλον, Mt. Mc. Le. Jo.; to own no slaves was a peculiarity of the Essenes, Jos. ant. xviii. 1. 5). The sufferer was a Malchus (Jo.), Μάλχος, or Μάλιχος i.e. Ἰλλιχ (Dalman, p. 104)—a common name, for Josephus mentions five persons who bore it (see Niese's index). He was doubtless foremost in the business of the arrest, and thus provoked his punishment. Lc. and Jo. mention that the ear which was 'taken off' (ἀφεῖλεν Mt. Mc. Le., ἀπέκοψεν Jo.) was the right one. Ὥταριον Mc. Jo. (ωτίον Mt. Lc.) is a dim. of the New Comedy, which had perhaps become colloquial; cf. γυναικάριον (2 Tim. iii. 6), κυνάριον (Mc. vii. 27), παιδάριον (Jo. vi. 9); Blass, *Gr.* p. 63 f. For the Lord's remonstrance with Peter, which Mc. omits, see Mt. xxvi. 52—54, Lc. xxii. 51, Jo. xviii. 11; the substance is well given by Ephrem: "cuius verbum gladius est gladium non indiget." Lc. alone adds ἀψάμενος τοῦ ὡτιού λάσατο αὐτόν.

48. ὡς ἐπὶ ληστὴν κτλ.] The Lord remonstrates not against the arrest, but against the manner in which it was effected. Why this armed multitude? He was not a ληστής (cf. Jo. xviii. 14), but a religious teacher. Why this nocturnal sally (ἐξήλθατε)? If His teaching or conduct merited punishment, He had given them

καὶ ἔνδων § συλλαβεῖν με; <sup>49</sup> καθ' ἡμέραν ἥμην πρὸς 49 § P  
ἥμᾶς ἐν τῷ ἱερῷ διδάσκων, καὶ οὐκ ἐκρατήσατέ με.  
ἀλλ' ἵνα πληρωθῶσιν αἱ γραφαί. <sup>50</sup> καὶ ἀφέντες 50  
αὐτὸν ἔφυγον πάντες.

49 οὐκ ἐκρατήσατέ] οὐκ ἐκρατεῖ (sic) B οὐ κρατησατε (sic) L | αἱ γραφαι] + των προφητων NΦ 13 69 124 346 2<sup>pe</sup> alpaue syr<sup>hel</sup> arm the 50 και] τοτε οι μαθηται N(Σ) 13 69 124 346 alpaue c vg syrr<sup>(sin)pesh</sup> hel arm the aeth | εφυγον παντες NBCLΔΨ 61 258 435 me go] παντες εφ. ADPWbΧΓΠ al<sup>pl</sup> latt syr<sup>hel</sup> al | εφυγον] pr οι μαθηται 1071 | om παντες N 13 124 346 al<sup>noun</sup> syr<sup>pesh</sup>

abundant opportunities of arresting Him publicly in the Precinct. For other exx. in Biblical Greek of the class. συλλαβεῖν, ‘to arrest,’ cf. Jer. xlivi. (xxxvi.) 26, xliv. (xxxvii.) 13, Jo. xviii. 12, Acts i. 16, xii. 3.

It is possible that the *σπείρα* (see note on v. 43) had been obtained from the Procurator on the plea that Jesus was a dangerous insurgent (cf. Lc. xxiii. 2), and robbery and other outrages would readily be associated with the career of such a leader (Lc. xxiii. 19, Jo. xviii. 40; cf. Polyc. mart. 7 ἐξῆλθον διωγμῖται καὶ ἵππεῖς μετὰ τῶν συνηθῶν αὐτοῖς ὅπλων ὡς ἐπὶ ληστὴν τρέχοντες).

49. καθ' ἡμέραν κτλ.] Cf. Acts ii. 46 f., iii. 2; the Lord had visited the Precinct on three consecutive days in that week alone. “Ημην πρὸς ὅμᾶς, eram apud vos; Lc. ὅντος μου μεθ' ὅμῶν: on πρὸς with acc., *apud*, see WM., p. 504, and cf. ix. 19, note. This familiar intercourse, this daily presence in the Precinct, was now a thing of the past (ἥμην: on the form see WM., p. 95 f.). Καὶ οὐκ ἐκρατήσατέ με, Vg. *et non me tenuistis*; the *καὶ* is not really adversative, see note on vii. 24. The Lord does not upbraid them with the cowardice which had been at the root of their inaction during the earlier days of the Holy Week; their own consciences would supply the reproof; cf. xii. 12. Ἀλλ' ἵνα κτλ. The treachery of Judas, the secrecy

of the arrest, belonged to the order of events foreshadowed by the Spirit of prophecy. Mt. supplies the ellipse: τοῦτο δὲ ὄλον γέγονεν ἵνα κτλ.; in Mc. the context suggests ἀλλ' ἐξῆλθατε, or ἀλλ' οὐκ ἐκρατήσατέ με. For similar exx. of the elliptic ἀλλ' ἵνα see Jo. i. 8, ix. 3, xiii. 18; it is akin to the use of *ἵνα* in v. 23, but there the word mentally supplied gives the dependent clause the force of an imperative, which is not to be thought of here. Αἱ γραφαι, cf. xii. 24, Lc. xxiv. 27 ff., Jo. v. 39, Acts xvii. 2 ff., 2 Pet. iii. 16. Mt. adds τῶν προφητῶν, but perhaps without intending to limit the reference to the prophetic books of the Canon.

50. καὶ ἀφέντες αὐτὸν ἔφυγον πάντες] Sc. οι μαθηται (Mt.), both the three in Gethsemane and the eight without. The sheep were scattered (v. 27), the Shepherd was left alone (Jo. xvi. 32); cf. Bede: “impletur sermo Domini quem dixerat quod omnes discipuli scandalizarentur in illo in ipsa nocte.” “Εφυγον πάντες: the position of πάντες calls attention to the fulfilment of Christ's warning (v. 27): not even Peter formed an exception to the general desertion. All fled. Yet two at least recovered themselves so far as to follow afterwards, if at a safe distance (v. 54, Jo. xviii. 15).

51—52. THE YOUNG MAN WHO FOLLOWED. (Mc. only.)

51     <sup>51</sup> Καὶ νεανίσκος τις συνηκολούθει αὐτῷ περιβεβλημένος σινδόνα ἐπὶ γυμνοῦ, καὶ κρατοῦσιν αὐτόν·  
 ¶ 52     <sup>52</sup> ὁ δὲ καταλιπὼν τὴν σινδόνα γυμνὸς ἔφυγεν.<sup>¶</sup>  
 53     <sup>53</sup> Καὶ ἀπήγαγον τὸν Ἰησοῦν πρὸς τὸν ἀρχιερέα,  
 καὶ συνέρχονται [αὐτῷ] πάντες οἱ ἀρχιερεῖς καὶ οἱ

<sup>51</sup> νεανίσκος τις NBC(D)LΨ] εἰς τις ν. AEGFGHKMNSUVW<sup>b</sup>XΓΔΠΣΦ min<sup>fereomn</sup>  
 (cf. Nestle T. C. p. 265) | συνηκολούθει NBCCLΨ] ηκολούθει ΔΦ I al<sup>mu</sup> ηκολούθησεν  
 ANPΧΓΔΠΣ min<sup>pl</sup> συνηκολούθησεν Δ | αυτῶν] αυτούς D 42 ff | επὶ γυμνοῦ] γυμνός 13  
 69 346 2<sup>pe</sup> om I 118 209 ek syr<sup>sin</sup> the | κρατοῦσιν αυτοὺς NBC\*DLΔΨ a cf k l me]  
 + οἱ νεανίσκοι AC<sup>2</sup>NPW<sup>b</sup>XΓΠΣΦ min<sup>pl</sup> q syr<sup>hel</sup> arm go aeth οἱ δὲ ν. κρατοῦσιν αυτοὺς I  
 13 (69) 124 (209) 346 604 2<sup>pe</sup> the 52 εφυγεν] + απ αυτων ADNPΧΓΔΠΣΦ min<sup>omnvid</sup>  
 a f q r vg syrr<sup>sin hel</sup> arm go 53 τὸν ἀρχιερεα] + (vel pr) Καιαφαν ΑΚΜΙΙ 11 13 69  
 124 604 736<sup>\* vid</sup> 107I 2<sup>pe</sup> al<sup>nonn</sup> syrr<sup>(pesh)</sup>hel arm (Or) | αυτω ΑΒΝΡΧΓΠΣΦΨ min<sup>pl</sup>  
 (ad eum syr<sup>sin (?) pesh</sup> arm)] προς αυτον C αυτον I 209 om ΝDLΔ 13 64 69 124 346 2<sup>pe</sup>  
 latt aeth | om παντες C ff | οἱ πρ. καὶ οἱ γρ. NBCCLNPW<sup>b</sup>XΓΔΨ min<sup>pl</sup> syr<sup>hel</sup> me go]  
 οἱ γρ. καὶ οἱ πρ. Α(D)ΚΠ 604 2<sup>pe</sup> al<sup>perpano</sup> latt syr<sup>pesh</sup> arm aeth Or

51. καὶ νεανίσκος τις συνηκολούθει κτλ.] One there was, not an Apostle, who followed boldly and at once, going along with the Lord (συνηκολούθει αὐτῷ, cf. 2 Macc. ii. 4, 6, Mc. v. 37, Lc. xxiii. 49) until he was seized by the ὑπηρέται. His attire would excite attention, a σινδών ἐπὶ γυμνοῦ i.e. a linen garment or wrap, see J. Lightfoot ad l. and Moore on Jud. xiv. 12, 13; cf. Prov. xxix. 42 (xxxii. 24), where the γυνὴ ἀνδρεῖα makes σινδόνες (ἱπποτῆς) for sale; I Macc. x 64 (A) περιβεβλημένον αὐτὸν σινδόνα. In the present case the σινδών was either a light summer ‘square’ hastily caught up, or, possibly, a night-dress; cf. Galen cited by Wetstein, μὴ γυμνὸς κοιμίζεσθαι ἀλλὰ περιβεβλημένος σινδόνα, and Field, Notes, p. 40. In either case Bengel’s inference is just: “locuples igitur erat.” ’Επὶ γυμνοῦ is in this case ‘on the naked body’; for a more restricted sense of γυμνός see Tob. i. 16, Isa. xx. 2 ff., 2 Macc. xi. 12.

52. καταλιπὼν τὴν σινδόνα] The incident recalls Joseph’s flight from the wife of Potiphar (Gen. xxxix. 12 ff.). The σινδών, if of the nature of an ἱμάτιον, a rectangular wrap and not a

close-fitting garment, could easily be detached.

The νεανίσκος has been identified with St John (Ambr., Chrys., Bede), James the brother of the Lord (Epiph. haer. lxxviii.), a resident in the house where the Lord had eaten the Pass-over (Thph.), or the Evangelist himself (many recent commentators). The last two views are not incompatible, if John Mark was the son of the οἰκοδεσπότης (v. 14, note). It has also been suggested that Gethsemane was the property of his mother Mary (Exp. iv. iii. p. 225). That the incident was drawn by Mark from his own recollection or from his stores of local knowledge may be regarded as certain; it formed no part of the common tradition or (as we may assume) of St Peter’s preaching.

53—65. TRIAL BEFORE THE HIGH PRIEST (Mt. xxvi. 57—68, Lc. xxii. 54<sup>a</sup>, 63—71; cf. Jo. xviii. 12—14, 19—24).

53. καὶ ἀπήγαγον τὸν Ἰησοῦν κτλ.] They followed the traitor’s advice (v. 44), and for greater security bound their Prisoner first (Jo. ἔδησαν αὐτὸν καὶ ἤγαγον). He was taken from

πρεσβύτεροι καὶ οἱ γραμματεῖς. <sup>54</sup>καὶ ὁ Πέτρος ἀπὸ 54  
μακρόθεν ἡκολούθησεν αὐτῷ ὡς ἐσω εἰς τὴν αὐλὴν  
τοῦ ἀρχιερέως· καὶ ἦν συνκαθήμενος μετὰ τῶν ¶ F

54 οἱ απὸ L<sup>vid</sup> ΔΨ | ηκολουθεῖ GΨ 1 13 69 604 | οἱ εἰσω D 1 209 alpaue syr<sup>sin</sup> | εἰς  
τὴν αὐλὴν] τῆς αὐλῆς 1 209 alpaue | καθημενος D lat<sup>yt</sup> pl vgid

Gethsemane direct to the house of the High Priest (*πρὸς τὸν ἄρχ.*, Lc. *εἰς τὴν οἰκίαν* (Mc. *infra*, Jo. *εἰς τὴν αὐλὴν*) *τοῦ ἀρχιερέως*), who that year was Caiaphas (Mt. Jo.); acc. to Jo., they led Him first to Annas, who as an ex-High Priest and father-in-law of Caiaphas (Jo.) was possibly still an inmate of the official residence (see Westcott on Jo. xviii. 15). Annas (Ἄννας, "Annas, Jos. Ἀνάνιος") had been High Priest A.D. 7—14; Joseph Caiaphas (Νεφᾶς, Dalman, p. 127, Ἰώσηπος ὁ καὶ Καΐφας, Jos. *ant.* xviii. 2. 2) held the office A.D. 18—36. At the house of the latter, notwithstanding the early hour, the whole hierarchy (Mc. πάντες οἱ ἀρχιερέis, cf. Acts iv. 6) were assembled, and with them were members of the other orders which composed the Sanhedrin. Mc. pictures the assembly as flocking together (*συνέρχονται*) to the palace (cf. Field, *Notes*, p. 40), Mt. represents them as already in session when Jesus arrived (*συνίκθησαν*); all were probably on or near the spot, awaiting the result of Judas's mission. With *συνέρχ.* αὐτῷ cf. Jo. xi. 33, and see WM., p. 269, and Field, *l.c.*

54. καὶ ὁ Πέτρος ἀπὸ μακρόθεν κτλ.] Peter's flight (*v. 50*) was checked perhaps by the recollection of his boast, and he followed the party, but at a safe distance (*ἀπὸ μακρ., v. 6, note, viii. 3, xi. 13, xv. 40*). On arriving at the High Priest's house Peter passed into the *αὐλή* (Vg. *atrium*), i.e. the open court round which the chambers were built, and which was entered through a *προαύλιον* (*infra v. 68*) opening into the street; *αὐλή* is con-

stantly used in the LXX. for the *γένη* or court of the Tabernacle (Exod. xxvii. 9) or Temple (3 Regn. vi. 36), but also in reference to a large private house (2 Regn. xvii. 18, 4 Regn. xx. 4, Dan. ii. 49 (ΥΓΡ.), 3 Macc. v. 10, 46). He gained admission through the influence of St John, who was an acquaintance of the High Priest (Jo. xviii. 15 ff.), and had entered with Jesus (*συνεισῆλθεν τῷ Ἰησοῦ*, Jo.). His purpose was to see how the trial would end (*ἰδεῖν τὸ τέλος*, Mt.); meanwhile he took up his place with the members of the Levitical guard (*μετὰ τῶν ὑπηρετῶν*, see note on *v. 43*) who had been engaged in the arrest, and were warming themselves over a charcoal fire (*ἀνθρακιὰν πεποιηκότες* Jo.) in the court (*ἐν μέσῳ τῆς αὐλῆς* Lc.). Peter sat (Mt. Mc. Lc.) or stood (Jo.) among them, glad of the heat after his long exposure to the night air, but forgetful that the blaze lit up his features (*πρὸς τὸ φῶς*, so Mc. Lc.), and exposed him to the scrutiny of enemies; cf. Bengel: "saepe sub cura corporis neglegitur anima." The altitude of Jerusalem causes the nights to be cold; the mean annual temperature is variously given as 66° or 62°, and the two or three hours which precede sunrise are everywhere the coldest. For other Biblical references to the use of fires in Jerusalem for the purpose of giving warmth see Isa. xliv. 16 *θερμανθεῖς εἰπεν* "Ἡδύ μοι δτι ἔθερμάνθην καὶ εἴδον πῦρ, Jer. xlivi. (xxxvi.) 22 ἐκάθητο ἐν οἴκῳ χειμεριῶ καὶ ἐσχάρα πυρὸς κατὰ πρόσωπον αὐτοῦ. For the form *ἦν συνκαθ.* see WM., p. 438.

55 ὑπηρετῶν καὶ θερμαινόμενος πρὸς τὸ φῶς. <sup>55</sup>οἱ δὲ ἀρχιερεῖς καὶ ὄλον τὸ συνέδριον ἔζήτουν κατὰ τοῦ Ἰησοῦ μαρτυρίαν εἰς τὸ θανατώσαι αὐτόν, καὶ οὐχ 56 ηὔρισκον. <sup>56</sup>πολλοὶ γὰρ ἐψευδομαρτύρουν κατ’ αὐτοῦ, 57 καὶ ἴσαι αἱ μαρτυρίαι οὐκ ἥσαν. <sup>57</sup>καὶ τινες ἀναστάντες ¶<sup>r</sup> 58 ἐψευδομαρτύρουν κατ’ αὐτοῦ λέγοντες ὅτι<sup>¶</sup> <sup>58</sup>· Ήμεῖς

<sup>54</sup> καὶ θερμ. μετα τ. ν. Σ | om προς το φως I alpau<sup>s</sup> syr<sup>sin</sup> 55 μαρτυριαν] ψευδομαρτυριαν AS\* minpauc k the | eis το θανατωσαι] iwa θανατωσουσι D (2<sup>pe</sup>) et ut vid syrr arm iwa αυτον θανατωσουσι 1071 | ευρισκον ΝΑCNW<sup>b</sup>ΧΓΠ minpl 56 εψευδομαρτυρουν]+ και ελεγον D | αυτον] του Ιησου Ψ 57 και τινες] και αλλοι D affk q Or<sup>int</sup> αλλοι δε 13 69 124 346 604 c alii arm | εψευδ. κατ αυτον λεγοντες εψευδ. και ελεγον κατ αυτον D (k) 58 οτι ημεις ηκουσ. αυτον λεγοντος] οτι ειπεν Κ hic dixit c k

55. *oi δὲ ἀρχιερεῖς κτλ.]* While Peter sits in the *αὐλῇ*, the Lord is standing in one of the chambers above (v. 66) before His judges. It was a full (*ὅλον*) if informal meeting of the Sanhedrin (Edersheim, *Life*, ii. p. 553). For the word *συνέδριον* see xiii. 9: here and in xv. 1 it is used in an exclusive sense of the national council (cf. Acts iv. 15, v. 21 ff., vi. 12 ff., xxii. 30, xxiii. 1 ff.), the *סְנִינוֹת* of the Talmud, on the history and character of which see Schürer, II. i. 163 ff. As a first step Caiaphas appears to have examined Jesus as to His disciples and teaching (Jo. xviii. 19ff.). The day had begun to dawn (Lc. xxii. 66), when the actual trial took place. Witnesses had meanwhile been brought together, but when they came to give their evidence, the result was disappointing, indeed practically nothing (*ἔζήτουν... μαρτυριαν...* καὶ οὐχ ηὔρισκον); it failed to establish a capital offence, which was the purpose in view (*eis τὸ θανατώσαι αὐτόν*, Mt. ὅπως αὐτ. *θανατώσωσιν=הַמְּתַבֵּל*), or indeed any offence at all; “sic omnia irreprehensibiliter et dixit et fecit ut nullam verisimilitudinem reprehensionis invenirent in eo” (Origen). On *θανατοῦν* see xiii. 12, note. Οὐχ ηὔρισκον: such was the

situation at the moment to which the narrative refers.

56. *πολλοὶ γὰρ ἐψευδομαρτύρουν κτλ.]* Of witnesses there was no lack, but their evidence was palpably false; they contradicted one another. *ἴσαι αἱ μαρτυρίαι οὐκ ἥσαν*, Vg. *convenientia testimonia non erant*, they did not correspond; see J. Lightfoot *ad l.* No two witnesses could be found to bear the joint testimony which was legally requisite to justify a capital sentence (Deut. xix. 15). The proposal to render *ἴσος* ‘adequate’ (Erasmus, Grotius) is unnecessary, and without support. On *καὶ* in this sequence see on v. 49.

57—58. *καὶ τινες ἀναστάντες κτλ.]* Mt. *ὑστερον* δὲ *προσελθόντες δύο*. The conditions seemed to be satisfied at last; the scene recalls 3 Regn. xx. 13 καὶ ἡλθον δύο ἄνδρες οἱ νιοὶ παρανόμων καὶ ... κατεμαρτύρησαν αὐτοῦ. The Lord had been heard to say that He would overthrow the Temple. Similarly Stephen was charged with having affirmed that He would do so (Acts vi. 14 ἀκηκόαμεν γὰρ αὐτοῦ λέγοντος ὅτι Ἰησοῦς ὁ Ναζωραῖος οὗτος καταλύσει τὸν τόπον τοῦτον). The question arises how this idea impressed itself on the Jews. Did the words

ἡκούσαμεν αὐτοῦ λέγοντος ὅτι Ἐγὼ καταλύσω τὸν ναὸν τοῦτον τὸν χειροποίητον, καὶ διὰ τριῶν ἡμερῶν ἄλλον ἀχειροποίητον § οἰκοδομήσω.<sup>59</sup> καὶ οὐδὲ οὕτως 59 §<sub>I</sub> ἵση ἦν ἡ μαρτυρία αὐτῶν.<sup>60</sup> καὶ ἀναστὰς ὁ ἀρχιερεὺς 60 εἰς μέσον ἐπηρώτησεν τὸν Ἰησοῦν λέγων Οὐκ ἀποκρίνῃ

58 καταλυω ΑΠ\* 2 vg<sup>codi</sup> | om τουτον D k syr<sup>sin</sup> | οικοδομησω] αναστησω D a eff k  
60 εις το μεσον DMΨ min<sup>ma</sup> pr εστη Ψ

spoken at the first Passover of the Ministry (Jo. ii. 19) rankle in the minds of the hearers till they were used as evidence against Him three years afterwards? Or were they repeated in a fuller form during the teaching of the Holy Week? or did the witnesses base their testimony on a distorted report by Judas of words spoken to the Twelve on the Mount of Olives (xiii. 2, note)? Mt. gives the testimony in the simpler form Οὗτος ἔφη Δύναμαι καταλῦσαι τὸν ναὸν τοῦ θεοῦ καὶ διὰ τριῶν ἡμερῶν οἰκοδομῆσαι. It has been suggested (Bruce) that this "comes nearest to what the witnesses actually said," and that Mc. "puts into their mouths, to a certain extent, the sense" afterwards attached to the saying of Christ. But this is not after Mc.'s manner; when he repeats a saying in a longer form, there is reason to regard the longer form as original. Some such saying as this is possibly behind the words of Stephen (Acts vii. 48 οὐχ ὁ ὑψιστος ἐν χειροποίητοις κατοικεῖ) and St Paul (Acts xvii. 24; cf. 2 Cor. v. 1, Heb. ix. 11, 24). On the history and meaning of χειροποίητος, ἀχειροποίητος, see Lightfoot's note on Col. ii. 11.

If the Lord said the words as they stand in Mc., He said what the event has proved to be true; His death destroyed the old order, and His resurrection created the new. In this case the ψευδομαρτυρία consisted in wresting the *logion* from its context and giving it a meaning which His character and manner of life

proved to be impossible; cf. Jerome in *Mt.*: "falsus testis est, qui non in eodem sensu dicta intellegit quo dicuntur." On διὰ τρ. ἡμερῶν see ii. 1 and viii. 31, note; and with οἰκοδομῆσω cf. Mt. xvi. 18; the Western ἀναστῆσω recalls the ἐγέρω of Jo. ii. 19.

59. καὶ οὐδὲ οὕτως κτλ.] Mt. omits this verse; in Mc. it looks back to v. 56, and expresses the disappointment felt by the Sanhedrists when even this last resource failed them. For οὐδὲ οὕτως cf. Isa. lviii. 5, 1 Cor. xiv. 21: 'not even under these circumstances' (οὐδὲ as in v. 3, vi. 31, xii. 10, xiii. 32, xvi. 13). Mc. does not explain the nature of the ἀνισότης; possibly the witnesses broke down under examination or contradicted one another as to matters of detail.

60. καὶ ἀναστὰς ὁ ἀρχιερεὺς κτλ.] Caiaphas rose, for greater solemnity, in the assembly (cf. iii. 3 εἰς τὸ μέσον), and endeavoured to extort a statement from Jesus, urging that His silence suggested that He had no answer to make and that the witness was true. The rendering of the Vg. and several of the O.L. authorities (*ff*, *q*; cf. *a*, *c*, *k*), which brings the two questions into one ("non respondes quicquam ad ea quae tibi obiciuntur ab his?"), is, as Blass points out (*Gr.* p. 176 n.), impossible, since it would require ἀποκρ. πρὸς ἄ (cf. Mt. xxvii. 14). Οὐκ...οὐδέν, a combination which intensifies the negation; cf. iii. 27 and see Blass, *Gr.* p. 256. Τί = τί ἔστιν ὁ (Blass, p. 177 n.), what is

§ 33 οὐδέν; § τί οὗτοί σου καταμαρτυροῦσιν; ὁ δὲ ἐσιώπα  
 καὶ οὐκ ἀπεκρίνατο οὐδέν. πάλιν ὁ ἀρχιερεὺς ἐπηρώτα  
 αὐτὸν καὶ λέγει αὐτῷ Κὐ εἰ ὁ χριστός, ὁ νιὸς τοῦ

60 τοῦ] οτι ΛΨ (k) 61 ο δε] ο δε Ιησους ΝΑ min<sup>nominative</sup> syr<sup>pesh</sup> aeth ekeinos δε  
 D | ουκ απεκρινατο ουδεν ΝΒCLΨ 33 1071] ουδεν απεκρινατο (vel απεκριθη) A(D)IN  
 PW<sup>b</sup>ΧΓΔΠΣΦ min<sup>pl</sup> Or om k | επηρωτα αυτον] επηρωτησεν αυτ. FIΦ 604 2<sup>ro</sup> al<sup>mu</sup>  
 Or+εκ δευτερον Φ 13 69 124 346 604 2<sup>ro</sup> syr<sup>sin</sup> arm Or | και λεγει αυτω λεγων Φ  
 346 2<sup>ro</sup> (arm) Or+ο αρχιερευς D q | om ο χριστος Γ k | του ευλογητου] του θεου Ν\*  
 (του ειλ. Ν\*) του θ. του ειλ. ΑΚΠ 346 al<sup>nominative</sup> vg arm<sup>soh</sup> του ευλογημενου Ψ

the value of this testimony? what construction is to be put upon it? *Katamaṛturess*: frequent in the Ora-tors and used by the LXX. (3 Regn. xx. (xxi.) 10, Job xv. 6, Prov. xxv. 18, Dan. vi. 24 (25)); in the N. T. only in the Synoptic accounts of the Passion (Mt. xxvi. 62 = Mc. xiv. 60; Mt. xxvii. 13).

61. ὁ δὲ ἐσιώπα κτλ.] The Lord refused the opportunity of either denying the charge, or justifying the words if they were His. This was not the time for serious instruction, nor were these the men to whom it could be profitably addressed; nor could He admit the authority of an assembly which was following up an unjust arrest by the employment of perjured witnesses. It was a *καιρὸς τοῦ σιγᾶν*, and He kept silence (*ἐσιώπα, imperf.*) accordingly. Cf. Origen in *Mt.*: “discimus ex hoc loco contemnere calumniantium et falsorum testium voces ut nec responsione nostra dignos eos habeamus, nec defendere nosmetipsos ubi non sunt convenientia quae dicuntur adversus nos.” The Lord’s silence before His judges afterwards recalled to the minds of the disciples Isa. liii. 7; cf. Acts viii. 32 ff., 1 Pet. ii. 23. The classical *ἀπεκρινάμην* occurs in the LXX. and N. T. but rarely (LXX.<sup>5</sup>, Mt.<sup>1</sup>, Mc.<sup>1</sup>, Lc.<sup>ev. 2, act. 1</sup>, Jo.<sup>2</sup>), *ἀπεκρίθην* elsewhere taking its place; *ἀπεκρινάμην* itself was a substitute for the earlier *ἡμειψάμην, ἀπημειψάμην* (Rutherford, p. 186 f.).

πάλιν ὁ ἀρχιερεὺς κτλ.] A second

and successful attempt to obtain an answer; to the direct question “Art Thou the Christ?” solemnly put to Him on oath (Mt. ἔξορκίζω σε κατὰ τὸν θεοῦ τοῦ ζῶντος ἵνα ἡμῖν εἴπῃς εἰ σὺ εἶ ὁ χρ.) by the ecclesiastical head of the nation, Jesus at once replies. Thph.: ἵνα μὴ ἔχωσιν ὑστερον λέγειν ὅτι ‘ἔὰν σαφῶς εἰπόντος αὐτοῦ ἡκούσαμεν, ἐπιστεύσαμεν ἄν.’ Σὺ εἰ, ‘art Thou?’ as in xv. 2; cf. Rom. xiv. 4, Jas. iv. 12; ὁ χριστός, see notes on viii. 29, xii. 35. Τοῦ εὐλογητοῦ, Mt. τοῦ θεοῦ: the title is based on the doxology Νא (Aram. בָּרוּךְ בָּרוּךְ קָדוֹשׁ אֱלֹהִים (cf. Schöttgen on Rom. ix. 5, Dalman, i. p. 163 f., Burkitt in *J. Th. St.*, v. p. 453). The High Priest admits the Divine Sonship of Messiah; the Christ was the Son of God, since He inherited the promises made to David (2 Sam. vii. 14, Ps. ii. 7, lxxxix. 26 f.). The alternative to this inference is that Caiaphas is quoting words which were attributed to Jesus (cf. Mt. xxvii. 43) and demanding that He should either admit or deny them; but the form of the sentence favours the view that Caiaphas himself identified the Messiah with the Son. In the Psalms of Solomon the *χριστὸς κύριος* is merely Son of David (cf. James and Ryle, p. liv. ff.); but Enoch cv. 2 and 4 Esdr. vii. 28 f., xiv. 9 recognise His Divine Sonship, and the idea seems to have been familiar during the Lord’s lifetime; see Jo. i. 49, xi. 27, Mt. xvi. 16 (cf. Mc. viii. 29). The Messianic Sonship was perhaps not regarded as specifically different

εὐλογητοῦ; <sup>62</sup> ὁ δὲ Ἰησοῦς εἶπεν Ἐγώ τι εἰμί· καὶ <sup>62</sup> ὅτι Φ  
ὅψεσθε τὸν νιὸν τοῦ ἀνθρώπου ἐκ δεξιῶν καθήμενον  
τῆς δυνάμεως καὶ ἐρχόμενον μετὰ τῶν νεφελῶν τοῦ  
οὐρανοῦ. <sup>63</sup> ὁ δὲ ἀρχιερεὺς διαρήξας τοὺς χιτῶνας <sup>63</sup>

<sup>62</sup> ο δε I.] + αποκριθεις DG 1 13 69 124 346 1071 2<sup>po</sup> aff kq syrsin arm the |  
εγω ειμι] pr συ ειπας οτι 13 69 124 346 604 1071 2<sup>po</sup> arm Or | om και ερχομενον D |  
μετα] επι G 1 11 28 33 al<sup>nonn</sup> a syrr<sup>sin posh</sup> the 63 διαρηξas (B\*N)] + ενθεως 124 604  
2<sup>po</sup> a arm Or | τον χιτωνα S syrpesh arm<sup>cod</sup>

from the Sonship of Israel; see the Rabbinical references in Edersheim, *Life*, ii. pp. 716, 719, Weber, *Jüd. Theol.*, p. 153, and on the whole subject consult Schürer, II. ii. p. 158 ff.; Hastings, *D.B.* iv. p. 570 ff.

62. ὁ δὲ Ἰησοῦς εἶπεν Ἐγώ εἰμι] Cf Lc.: ίμεις λέγετε ὅτι ἐγώ εἰμι. The phrase σὺ εἶπας (Mt. xxvi. 25, 64), or σὺ λέγεις (Mt. xxvii. 11 = Mc. xv. 2 = Lc. xxiii. 3 = Jo. xviii. 37), has since Erasmus usually been regarded as an idiomatic affirmative, on the strength of certain classical and Rabbinical parallels; but it has been shewn by Dr Thayer (in the *Journal of Bibl. Literature*, xiii. p. 40 ff.) that the balance of ancient opinion is against this view, and that the words mean simply what they say, while the context, the tone, and the circumstances must in each case determine the exact inference which is to be drawn from them. Mc. has seen in this Σὺ εἶπας a direct affirmation, and interprets it accordingly; but it is possible that the Lord purposely preferred the vaguer form; cf. Origen in *Mt.* (cited by Thayer): "quia non erat dignus princeps ille sacerdotum Christi doctrina, propterea non eum docet, nec dicit quia *Ego sum*, sed verbum oris eius accipiens in redargutionem ipsius convertit dicens *Tu dixisti*, ut eo modo videretur argui non doceri."

καὶ ὅψεσθε τὸν νιὸν κτλ.] The words point to Dan. vii. 13 Th. ίδον μετὰ (LXX. ἐπί, cf. Mt.) τῶν νεφελῶν τοῦ οὐρανοῦ ὡς νιὸς ἀνθρώπου ἐρχόμενος (cf. xiii. 26, note), and Ps. cix. (cx.) 1,

κάθον ἐκ δεξιῶν μου. Both passages seem to have been regarded by the Jews as Messianic (cf. xii. 36, note, and for Dan. l.c. see Edersheim, *Life*, ii. p. 733 f.), and to claim that they would be fulfilled in Himself was equivalent to an assertion of His Messiahship. But the words of Jesus are also a solemn warning that His position and that of His judges would one day be reversed, and a final but ineffectual summons to repentance and faith; cf. Victor: ἐπιφέρει δὲ τὸ τῆς κρίσεως, ἀπειλῶν ὅτι ὑψονται αὐτὸν ἐν τῇ οὐρανῷ δόξῃ φαινόμενον...ἀλλ' ὅμως ἀκούσαντες οὐκ ἐφυλάξαντο...τὸν λόγον...οὕτως οὐκ εἰς ὠφέλειαν τοῖς ἀνηκόοις αἱ τῶν μυστηρίων ἀποκαλύψει, ἀλλ' εἰς κατάκρισιν. Mt. prefixes ἀπ' ἄρτι to ὅψεσθε, and Lc. ἀπὸ τοῦ νῦν: the vision of the Son of Man sitting on the Right Hand of the Power of God (τῆς δυνάμεως τοῦ θεοῦ Lc.; η δύναμις = **גָּדוֹלָה**, which was technically used for God, cf. Thph., δύναμις γὰρ ἐνθάδε τὸν πατέρα φησίν, and see Dalman, *Worte*, i. p. 164 f.) began from the year of the Crucifixion (cf. Acts ii. 33 f., vii. 55, Rom. viii. 34, Heb. i. 3 f., 1 Pet. iii. 22, Apoc. ii. 21, xii. 5, 'Mc.' xvi. 19), and is to be followed in due course by the vision which all must see of His Return (Apoc. i. 7). The Jewish leaders by their rejection of His Messiahship secured His exaltation (Phil. ii. 9) and their own ultimate confusion.

63. ὁ δὲ ἀρχιερεὺς διαρήξας κτλ.] This old sign of mourning or horror is mentioned first in Gen. xxxvii. 29;

64 αὐτοῦ λέγει Τί ἔτι χρείαν ἔχομεν μαρτύρων; <sup>64</sup> ἡκούσαις της βλασφημίας τί νῦν φαίνεται; οἱ δὲ 65 πάντες κατέκριναν αὐτὸν ἔνοχον εἶναι θανάτου. <sup>65</sup> καὶ

64 ηκούσατε] pr. ιδε νῦν Ν (min<sub>perpau</sub> syrr<sub>sin pesh</sub> arm) + πάντες GNΣ 1 124 2<sup>pe</sup> al<sub>nonn</sub> syrr<sub>sin</sub> arm | της βλασφημίας] την βλασφημιαν ADG 1 13 2<sup>pe</sup> al<sub>pau</sub>+αυτου DGINS min<sub>nonn</sub> q syrr<sub>sin</sub> go aeth+του στοματος αυτου 13 61 69 (124) 346 (2<sup>pe</sup>) syrr<sub>pesh hcl(mg)</sub> arm | φαίνεται] δοκει DNS 28 2<sup>pe</sup>

the phrase is usually διαρρηγνύναι τὰ ιμάτια (cf. Mt., and so more than forty times in the LXX.), but τοὺς χιτῶνας occurs in Judith xiv. 19, Ep. Jer. 31, 2 Macc. iv. 38, and is strictly accurate in the present case: cf. Maimonides *ap.* Buxtorf: “laceratio non fit in interula seu indusio linteo nec in pallio exteriori; in reliquis vestibus... omnibus fit.” What was originally a natural act of passionate grief is reduced in the Talmud to minute and stringent rules: “laceratio fit stando (v. 60), a collo anterius non posterius, non ad latus neque ad fimbrias...longitudo rupturae palmus est.” The law forbade the High Priest to rend his garment in private troubles (Lev. x. 6, xxi. 10), but when acting as a judge, he was required by custom to express in this way his horror of any blasphemy uttered in his presence (cf. J. Lightfoot on Mt.). On the form διαρήξας see WH., *Notes*, p. 163, WSchm., p. 56; on χιτῶνες pl., see vi. 9, note.

τί ἔτι χρείαν ἔχομεν μαρτύρων;] The relief of the embarrassed judge is manifest. If trustworthy evidence was not forthcoming, the necessity for it had now been superseded; the Prisoner had incriminated Himself. On χρείαν ἔχειν τινός see ii. 17, xi. 3, notes.

64. ἡκούσατε της βλασφημίας] WH. places a mark of interrogation after βλασφ., but perhaps unnecessarily; cf. Mt. Ιδε νῦν ἡκ. την βλασφημιαν. The gen. *rei* after ἀκούειν is on the whole less usual than the acc., but cf. Lc. xv. 25, Acts vii. 34; in Acts xxii. 1 both person and thing are in the gen. (ἀκούσατέ μου τῆς...ἀπολογίας): the gen. is perhaps more realistic than

the acc. (cf. Buttmann, *Gr.* p. 144 f.). On βλασφημία see iii. 28, vii. 22, notes. The blasphemy in this case is the claim to Messianic honours and powers, which is assumed to be groundless.

τί νῦν φαίνεται;] ‘What is your view?’ (Mt. τί ν. δοκεῖ;), cf. Ar. *Eccl.* 875 ὁρθῶς ἔμοιγε φαίνεται (*me iudice*). The formula as prescribed in *Sanhedrin* iii. 7 (see Edersheim, *Life* ii. p. 561 note) is סברִ מְרֻנָּה, to which the answer is either either לחיים (for life) or למוות (for death) as the case may be. On this occasion the conclusion was foregone; no one proposed to test the claim of Jesus before condemning it as blasphemous; all condemned Him to be worthy of death. Κατέκρ. αὐτὸν ἔνοχον εἶναι θανάτου is under the circumstances more exact than κατέκριναν θανάτῳ (x. 33); the court could not pass a capital sentence (see on xv. 1). On ἔνοχος θανάτου cf. iii. 29, note. Death was the legal penalty of blasphemy (Lev. xxiv. 16, 1 Kings xxi. 10 ff.), and stoning the manner of execution in such cases (1 K. *l.c.*, Jo. x. 30 ff., Acts vii. 55 ff.). Πάντες, i.e. all who were present (πάντας γὰρ ἐπεσπάσατο διὰ τὸ ρῆξαι τὸν χιτωνίσκον, Victor); those who, like Joseph (Lc. xxiii. 51) and Nicodemus (Jo. vii. 50 ff.), were opposed to the whole plot against Jesus would not have been summoned to this meeting.

65. καὶ ἤρξαντό τινες ἐμπτύειν αὐτῷ κτλ.] Mt. abridges: τότε ἐνέπτυσαν εἰς τὸ πρόσωπον αὐτοῦ, omitting the covering of the Lord’s Face; Lc., who retains the latter particular, substitutes ἐνέπαιξαν for ἐνέπτυον. The prophecy

ἵρξαντό τινες ἐμπτύειν αὐτῷ καὶ περικαλύπτειν αὐτοῦ τὸ πρόσωπον καὶ κολαφίζειν αὐτὸν καὶ λέγειν αὐτῷ Προφήτευσον· καὶ οἱ ὑπηρέται ράπίσμασιν αὐτὸν ἔλαβον.

65 εμπτυειν (ενπτ. ΔΔ)] + τω προσωπω αυτον D (604) af syr<sup>posh</sup> arm aegg go | om και περικαλ. αυτου το πρ. D af syr<sup>sin</sup> και περικ. αυτου το πρ. 1071 | κολαφιζειν και λεγειν] εκολαφιζον και ελεγον D ac velantes faciem eius clarificabant (sic) eum k | προφητευσον]+υν G 1 118+ημν Ψ k+υνη μην 1071 syr<sup>sin</sup>+ημν χε τις εστιν ο παισας σε ΙΧΔΣ (13) 33 (69) 108 124 604 736<sup>corr</sup> 1071 2<sup>pe</sup> al<sup>nonn</sup> syr<sup>hel</sup> arm aegg aeth | om οι υπηρεται D c (k) | ελαβον ΝΑΒCIKLNSVΓΔΠΨ min<sup>nonn</sup>] ελαμβανον DG 1 13 69 2<sup>pe</sup> al<sup>nonn</sup> syr<sup>hel</sup> me εβαλλον HW<sup>b</sup>Σ min<sup>permu</sup> εβαλον EMUW<sup>b</sup>X 33 604 min<sup>satmu</sup>

of x. 34 includes both indignities (*ἐμπαιξονσιν* και *ἐμπτύονσιν*) among those which Jesus would receive at the hands of the Gentiles, and it was fulfilled by the Procurator's soldiers (xv. 19, 20); but certain of the Sanhedrists anticipated this pagan outrage. In *Ev. Petr.* 4 the Jews are unjustly charged with the subsequent mockery: [ο Πειλάτος] παρέδωκεν αὐτὸν τῷ λαῷ... καὶ τις αὐτῶν ἔνεγκεν στέφανον ἀκάνθινον... καὶ ἔτεροι ἔστωτες ἐνέπτυνον αὐτὸν τὰς ὄψεις. See the remarkable parallel cited by Wetstein from Seneca *de consol.* 13: "ducebatur Athenis ad supplicium Aristides, cui quisquis occurrerat deiciebat oculos et ingemiscerebat... tanquam in ipsam iustitiam animadvertisentes; inventus est tamen qui in faciem eius inspueret." *'Εμπτύειν conspuere* is a late equivalent in the LXX. (Num. xii. 14, Deut. xxv. 9) and N. T. of the Attic *καταπτύειν*; cf. Rutherford, *N. Phrym.*, p. 66. *Περικαλύπτειν* (Exod. xxviii. 20, 3 Regn. vii. 17): with reference, perhaps, to the Roman practice of covering the heads of the condemned (Cic. *pro Rabir.* (ed. Heitland) iv. 13 "i lictor, ... caput obnubito, arbori infelici suspendito"; *ib.* v. 16 "obductio capitis et nomen ipsum crucis absit"), as well as for the purpose of concealing from Him the persons of His tormentors.

καὶ κολαφίζειν αὐτὸν κτλ.] So Mt.; Lc. δέροντες (cf. Mc. xii. 3, xiii. 9).

Κολαφίζειν is specific: the blows were inflicted with the fist (κόλαφος, Att. κόνδυλος; cf. Ter. *Adelph.* ii. 2. 36 "colaphis tuber est totum caput"). Προφήτευσον as it stands alone in Mc. is scarcely intelligible; Mt. gives a clue to its meaning (προφ. ἡμῖν, χριστέ, τις ἔστιν ὁ παίσας σε); 'use Thy supernatural powers, Messiah, to detect the offender.' Our Lord was not the first prophet in Israel who had been smitten on the face; cf. 1 Kings xxii. 24, Mic. v. 1. On the Jewish conception of Messiah as a Prophet see Stanton, *J. and Chr. Messiah*, p. 126 ff., and cf. vi. 4, note.

καὶ οἱ ὑπηρέται κτλ.] Mt. also distinguishes this class of offenders (*οι δὲ ἐράπισαν*), but without identifying them. They were the members of the Temple guard who had effected the arrest (v. 43, note), and were still in charge of their Prisoner (cf. Lc. οι ἄνδρες οι συνέχοντες αὐτὸν). Emboldened by the conduct of their superiors, they added their own form of insult. For *ράπισειν*, *ράπισμα* see Lobeck, *Phrym.*, p. 175, and Rutherford's important discussion (*N. Phrym.*, p. 257ff.); the words are used in reference to blows delivered by a stick (*ράπις*), or by the palm of the open hand; in the latter case the Attic form was *ἐπὶ κόρρης πατάξαι*, but later writers, beginning with Plutarch, use *ἐπὶ κ. ράπιζειν*. In two at least of the three LXX.

66     <sup>66</sup>*Καὶ ὄντος τοῦ Πέτρου κάτω ἐν τῇ αὐλῇ ἔρχεται*  
 67 *μία τῶν παιδισκῶν τοῦ ἀρχιερέως, <sup>67</sup>καὶ ἰδοῦσα τὸν*  
*Πέτρον θερμαινόμενον ἐμβλέψασα αὐτῷ λέγει Καὶ*

66 om κατω DIΨ i 69 2<sup>o</sup> alpac ac ff q syr<sup>sin(via)</sup> aegg | αυλη] + του αρχιερεως  
 syr<sup>sin</sup> | ερχεται] om syr<sup>sin</sup>+προς αυτον D | μα παιδισκη NC syr<sup>sin posh</sup> arm      67 om  
 και 2<sup>o</sup> D

instances of *ῥαπίζειν*, it refers to a blow on the face by the hand of another person (i Esdr. iv. 30, Hos. xi. 4), and *ῥάπτισμα* is used in the same sense in Isa. 1. 6 *τὰς δὲ σταγόνας μον* [ἔδωκα] *εἰς ράπτισματα*. The Vg. adopts this meaning here (*alapis eum caedebant*); the English versions vary (Wycliffe, “beaten him with strokis or boffatis”; Tindale, Cranmer, “boffeted him on the face”; Geneva, “smote him with their rods of office”; R.V. offers the alternative “blows of their hands” (text), “strokes of rods” (marg.)). Cf. Field, *Notes*, p. 105 (on Jo. xviii. 22). The difficult phrase *ἔλαβον ράπτισμασιν* has been changed in many secondary uncials and cursives into *ἔβαλλον* or *ἔβαλον* (see *app. crit.*); the confusion of *βαλεῖν* and *λαβεῖν* is one of the commonest in mss. Field (*Notes*, p. 40) supports the latter reading by arguments which deserve consideration, but the harder *ἔλαβον* (or *ἔλαμβανον*, cf. Nestle, *T. C.* p. 266), supported as it is by the great majority of the older and better authorities, claims preference; and it finds a parallel in a papyrus of the first century which has the phrase *κονδύλιοις λαβεῖν τινα* (Blass, *Gr.* p. 118). Moreover, ‘they caught Him with blows’ is more realistic than ‘they struck Him,’ and therefore more true to Mc.’s usual manner. Cf. Origen in *Mt.*: “et nunc qui iniuriant unum aliquem de ecclesia et faciunt ei haec, in faciem expsuunt Christi, et Christum colaphis caedentes castigant et pugnis.”

66—72. PETER DENIES THE MASTER THRICE (Mt. xxvi. 69—75, Lc. xxii. 56—62, Jo. xviii. 17, 25—27).

66, 67. *ὄντος τοῦ Π. κάτω ἐν τῇ αὐλῇ κτλ.]* The story of Peter’s adventure in the court of the High Priest’s official residence (cf. v. 54, note), which had been interrupted by the account of the trial, is now resumed. He is *κάτω* (Mc.), *ἔξω* (Mt.), outside the council chamber, and below it, in the open area beneath the room where the Sanhedrin had met, and he sat there (v. 54) by the charcoal fire. While he is there a servant maid (*μία παιδίσκη*, Mt., *π. τις*, Lc.), one of the High Priest’s domestics (Mc.), comes to the fire (*ἔρχεται*); she notices Peter sitting in the firelight (*ἰδοῦσα τὸν Π. θερμαινόμενον*, Lc. *καθήμενον πρὸς τὸ φῶς*; cf. v. 54), and after gazing at him intently for a moment (*ἐμβλέψασα αὐτῷ*), she crosses to the place where he is sitting (*προσῆλθεν αὐτῷ*, Mt.) and charges him with belonging to the party of Jesus. *Παιδίσκη* is a slave-girl employed in domestic service (Gen. xii. 16, xvi. 1ff., Lc. xii. 45, Acts xii. 13, xvi. 16), the female equivalent of *παῖς* in the sense of *δοῦλος* (Ps. cxv. 7 (cxvi. 16), Eccl. ii. 7, Sap. ix. 5, Esth. vii. 4 = ΠΗΓΕΨ); the wider meaning (= *κόρη*, *νεᾶν*) disappears in Biblical Gk., see Lightfoot on Gal. iv. 22. For *ἐμβλέπειν* cf. viii. 25, x. 21, 27, notes. The first glance revealed the presence of a stranger; closer attention enabled her to recognise Peter. St John tells us why—she was the portress who at his desire had let Peter in (*ἡ παιδίσκη ἡ θυρωρός*, cf. Acts xii. 13). For *Ναζαρηνός*, the less common form which Mc. uniformly adopts, see i. 24, note. The order *τοῦ Ναζαρηνοῦ...τοῦ Ἰησοῦ* suits an excited,

σὺ μετὰ τοῦ Ναζαρηνοῦ ἦσθα τοῦ Ἰησοῦ.<sup>¶</sup> <sup>68</sup> ὁ δὲ 68 Π W<sup>b</sup>  
ἡρνήσατο λέγων Ούτε οἶδα οὔτε ἐπίσταμαι σὺ  
τί λέγεις· καὶ ἔξηλθεν ἔξω εἰς τὸ προαύλιον.

67 μετα του Ναζ. ησθα του Ι. BCLΨ] μετα του Ι. ησθα του Ν. Η syrr<sup>sin pesh</sup> μετα του Ι. του Ν. ησθα ΔΔ min<sup>pau</sup> latt syr<sup>hel</sup> arm go aeth Eus μετα του Ν. Ι. ησθα ΑΝΧΓΠΙΣ min<sup>pl</sup> | Ναζωραιον Δ 238 ff Eus (cf. Ναζορηνο D Nazoreno k 1<sup>st</sup> q) 68 ουτε οιδα ουτε επισταμαι ΝBDL 1071 2<sup>po</sup> Eus] ουκ οιδα ουτε (vel ουδε) επ. (A)CE GH(KMNU)V(ΧΓ)Δ(ΠΣ) min<sup>permu</sup> ουκ οιδα k syrpesh | συ τι ΗBCLNUΔΣΨ i 33 108 209 1071 2<sup>po</sup>] τι συ ΑΙΧΓΠI min<sup>pl</sup> τι D min<sup>pau</sup> latt | εξω εις το προαυλιον] εξω εις την προαυλην D εις το εξω προαυλιον 2<sup>po</sup> εις την εξω αυλην (vel προαυλην) i (13 69) 209 (604) k<sup>vid</sup> (in exteriorem atrii locum) syrr<sup>sin</sup> arm+και αλεκτωρ εφωνησεν ACDINΧΓΔΠΣ min<sup>frooomn</sup> a fff k q vg syrr<sup>peshel</sup> arm go aeth (om κ. αλ. εφ. ΝBLΨ 17<sup>ev</sup> ε syrr<sup>sin</sup> me)

hurried, utterance; ‘that Nazarene... Jesus.’ <sup>7</sup>Ησθα μετὰ τοῦ Ἰησοῦ gives an exact description of Peter’s relation to the Lord (iii. 14, cf. Acts iv. 13); on ησθα see WM., p. 96. All the Evangelists give the words of the παιδίσκη, but with much variation (Mt. καὶ σὺ ἦσθα μετὰ Ι. τοῦ Γαλειδαίου, Lc. καὶ οὗτος σὺν αὐτῷ ἦν, Jo. μὴ καὶ σὺ ἐκ τῶν μαθητῶν εἴ τοῦ ἀνθρώπου τούτου;).

68. ὁ δὲ ἡρνήσατο κτλ.] Cf. v. 30 f. Had Peter been called to go with the Master to judgement and death, probably he would gladly have done so. The trial came in an unexpected form, and discovered a weak point—his lack of moral courage (cf. Gal. ii. 11 ff.). Ούτε οἶδα οὔτε ἐπίσταμαι σὺ τί λέγεις. Again the Gospels vary, Mt. being nearest to Mc., and Jo. most remote (Mt. οὐκ οἶδα τί λέγεις, Lc. οὐκ οἶδα αὐτόν, γύναι, Jo. οὐκ εἰμι, sc. ἐκ τῶν μαθητῶν αὐτοῦ), and again the words as given by Mc. seem specially appropriate; the eager repetition οὔτε οἶδα οὔτε ἐπ. betrays the effort to hide embarrassment, and the order of the words σὺ τί λ. suggests unusual emotion (unless we punctuate with WH. marg., οὔτε ἐπίσταμαι· σὺ τί λέγεις). Οἶδα and ἐπίσταμαι differ as novi and scio, though the Vg. reverses the distinction here: ‘I neither know nor understand what you are saying,’ i.e.

I am neither conscious of the fact, nor is the statement intelligible to me. Or οἶδα may refer to the Master as in Lc. οὐκ οἶδα αὐτόν. Ἐπίσταμαι occurs here only in the Gospels, and rarely in the Epistles (Paul<sup>1</sup>, Heb<sup>1</sup>, Jas<sup>1</sup>, Jude<sup>1</sup>), but is frequent in the Acts, where it appears in connexion and partial contrast with γινώσκω (Acts xix. 15); οἶδα and ἐπίσταμαι appear together again in Jude 10. Blass (*Gr.* p. 265) rejects οὔτε...οὔτε as inadmissible in the case of ‘two perfectly synonymous’ verbs, but the objection disappears when their meanings are seen to be distinct.

καὶ ἔξηλθεν ἔξω εἰς τὸ προαύλιον] Mt. ἔξελθόντα δὲ εἰς τὸν πυλώνα. The πυλών is properly the gateway of a mansion (Gen. xlili. 19, Lc. xvi. 20, Acts xii. 13 f.), a temple (3 Regn. vi. 8), or a city (3 Regn. xvii. 10, Apoc. xxi. 12 ff., xxii. 14); the προαύλιον (ἄπ. λεγ.) is doubtless the vestibule by which access was gained to the αὐλή, and which was contiguous to the πυλών. Peter left the fire, and retreated into the comparative darkness of the vestibule, but only to fall again into the hands of his persecutor. Jo., who apparently connects the first denial with the moment of Peter’s admission to the αὐλή, places the second at the fire (v. 25).

69 <sup>69</sup>καὶ ἡ παιδίσκη ὲδοῦσα αὐτὸν ἤρξατο πάλιν λέγειν  
70 τοῖς παρεστῶσιν ὅτι Οὗτος ἐξ αὐτῶν ἐστιν· <sup>70</sup>οὐδὲ  
πάλιν ἡρνεῖτο. καὶ μετὰ μικρὸν <sup>¶</sup> πάλιν οἱ παρεστῶτες  
τι ἔλεγον τῷ Πέτρῳ Ἀληθῶς ἐξ αὐτῶν <sup>¶</sup> εἰ, καὶ γὰρ

69 καὶ η παιδ. ιδ. αυτον ηρξ. παλιν ΙΙΙΔΨ 108 127] καὶ η παιδ. ιδ. αυτον παλιν ηρξ. ΑΙΝΧΓΙΙΣ min<sup>pl</sup> παλιν δε (ε)ιδ. αυτον η παιδ. Δ 604 2<sup>ρο</sup> c f (k) q vg syr<sup>sin</sup> arm Eus om παλιν BM 50 f aegg aeth | ηρξατο...λεγειν] ειπεν B aegg aeth | παρεστηκοσιν ADNΧΓΠ<sup>2</sup>Σ min<sup>pl</sup> | ouros] καὶ αυτος D και ουτος 13 59 69 106 124 251 346 604 2<sup>ρο</sup> a c ff syrr<sup>sin pesh</sup> arm aeth 70 ηρνησατο (D)FGMNΧΔΣ 1 13 69 124 604 2<sup>ρο</sup> alnom Eus | παρεστωτες (-στηκοτες D)] περιεστωτες G 1

69. καὶ ἡ παιδίσκη ὲδοῦσα αὐτόν κτλ.] The portress (cf. v. 66, note), who has returned to her post, recognises and points Peter out to the idlers in the vestibule. Mt. ἀλλη, another maid, not the portress; cf. Thphrt.: Ματθαῖος μὲν ἀλλην ταῦτην λέγει, Μᾶρκος δὲ τὴν αὐτήν, οὐδὲν δὲ ἡμῖν τοῦτο πρὸς τὴν ἀλήθειαν τοῦ εὐαγγελίου μὴ γὰρ ἐν μεγάλῳ τινὶ καὶ συνεκτικῷ τῆς σωτηρίας ἡμῖν διαφωνούσι; Augustine, in order to harmonise Mc. with Jo., suggests that the maid was at the fire, and that Peter, overhearing her remark, turned to defend himself: "rediens et rursus ad ignem stans resistebat negando verbis eorum." Aug. adds: "liquido...colligitur collatis de hac re omnibus evangelistarum testimoniis non ante ianuam secundo Petrum negasse sed intra in atrio ad ignem; Matthaeum autem et Marcum ... regressum eius brevitätis causa tacuisse." He does not feel the difficulty of reconciling Mt.'s ἀλλη with Mc.'s ἡ παιδίσκη, which in his Latin codex is simply *ancilla*; and Lc.'s ἔτερος is taken to be one of the bystanders who joins in the attack on Peter. The last supposition, which is supported by Jo.'s εἶπον, is not improbable; the loquacity of the maid would naturally communicate itself to some of the company. Mc.'s account places Peter's conduct in the least favourable light; if the remark came only from the maid to whom he had already replied, and was ad-

dressed to those about her and not to the Apostle, his second denial was without excuse.

70. οὐδὲ πάλιν ἡρνεῖτο] Mt. adds μετὰ ὄρκου (cf. xxvi. 63), and gives the words of the denial: οὐκ οἶδα τὸν ἄνθρωπον (Lc. Jo. οὐκ εἴμι). Thphrt.: ἐπιλαθόμενος τοῦ λόγου οὐ εἶπεν ὁ κύριος ὅτι τὸν ἀρνησάμενόν με...ἀρνήσομαι κάγω.

καὶ μετὰ μικρὸν πάλιν κτλ.] So Mt.; Lc. διαστάσης ώστε ὥρας μᾶς, and for οἱ παρεστῶτες, ἄλλος τις. During the interval Peter's Galilean accent had attracted attention and confirmed the suspicions of the bystanders. At length they accosted Peter (*προσελθόντες*, Mt.), or, according to Lc., one of them affirmed (*δισχυρίζετο*) in his presence that he was assuredly what he had denied himself to be. Καὶ γὰρ (Vg. *nam et*, cf. Ellicott on 2 Thess. iii. 10) Γαλειλαῖος εἰ, Mc. (Lc.), 'for, besides other considerations, thou art from Galilee'; Mt. καὶ γὰρ ἡ λαλιά σου δῆλόν σε ποιεῖ: for the form which these words assume in some MSS. of Mc. see the *app. crit.* On the dialectic peculiarities of Galilean Aramaic comp. Neubauer, *géogr. du Talmud*, p. 184 f., *Dialects of Palestine* in *Stud. Bibl.* i. p. 49 ff.; Dalman, *Gr.* p. 4 f., 31 ff., 42 ff., *Worte*, i. p. 64, and the older literature mentioned by Schürer II. i. p. 10, note; and for an earlier reference to local differences of pronunciation in Palestine see Jud. xii. 8. Jo., whose acquaintance with

Γαλειλαῖος εἰ· ἦ δὲ ἥρξατο ἀναθεματίζειν καὶ ὄμνύναι 71  
ὅτι Οὐκ οἶδα τὸν ἄνθρωπον τοῦτον ὃν λέγετε. 72 καὶ 72  
εὐθὺς ἐκ δευτέρου ἀλέκτωρ ἐφώνησεν καὶ ἀνεμνήσθη  
ὁ Πέτρος τὸ ρῆμα, ὡς εἶπεν αὐτῷ ὁ Ἰησοῦς ὅτι Πρὶν

70 Γαλειλαῖος εἰ· καὶ η λαλια σου ομοιαῖεν ΑΧΓΔΠ min<sup>pl</sup> q syrr<sup>pesh hel</sup> arm go +  
καὶ η λ. σου δηλοι ΝΣ (33) . 71 ομνυναι BEHLSUVXΓ min<sup>satmu</sup>] ομνυειν  
ΝΑCГКМНДПΣΨ min<sup>perma</sup> Eus+και λεγειν D (a) q arm | om τοῦτον ον λεγετε Η  
om τοῦτον DKNΣ arm om ον λ. k 72 om ευθυς ACNXГДПΣΨ min<sup>pl</sup> syrr<sup>sin hel</sup>  
aegg go | om εκ δευτέρου ΝL c | το ρῆμα ως] το ρ. o DNХГПΣ min<sup>satmu</sup> του ρῆματος  
ον M 69 al<sup>vixmu</sup> | το ρῆμα...Ιησ.] του ρῆματος του Ιησου ειποντος i 209 syrr<sup>pesh hel (txt)</sup>  
arm<sup>codd</sup> aeth | om οτι...απαρηση D 142\* a

the High Priest gave him special opportunities of knowing the fact, states that at this crisis a slave of Caiaphas who was a relative of Malchus, clinched the charge with the question Οὐκ ἔγω σε εἶδον ἐν τῷ κῆπῳ μετ' αὐτοῦ;

71. ὁ δὲ ἥρξατο ἀναθεματίζειν κτλ.] Peter, growing desperate as he sees the meshes closing round him, invokes an anathema on himself if his denials are false. 'Ανάθεμα, ἀναθεματίζειν are LXX. equivalents for מְגַדֵּל, מִגְדָּל, cf. e.g. Num. xviii. 14, xxi. 3f., Deut. xiii. 15 (16) ff.; an ἀνάθεμα (a late collateral form of ἀνάθημα as εὔρεμα of εὔρημα, cf. H. H. A. Kennedy, *Sources*, p. 117, and SH. on Rom. ix. 3) is an object devoted to destruction; see the discussion in Driver's *Deuteronomy*, p. 98 f. and the interesting illustration which he cites from the Moabite stone, and cf. Lightfoot on Gal. i. 8, 9. The practice of laying oneself under a conditional anathema is exemplified in Acts xxiii. 12 (*ἀνεθεμάτισαν ἑαυτούς*). In Mt., Mc., the verb is used absolutely; cf. Vg. *coepit anathematizare*, English versions from Wycliffe onwards, "he began to curse"; but the usage of the words shews that the imprecation was directed against himself. Mt. employs the stronger καταθεματίζειν (cf. κατάθεμα, Apoc. xxii. 3). On the alternative forms ὄμνύναι, ὄμνυειν (Mt.), see WH., *Notes*, p. 168 f.,

WSchm. p. 123, Blass, *Gr.* p. 47 f. Οὐκ οἶδα τὸν ἄνθρωπον τοῦτον ὃν λέγετε: the indirect denial of the Lord has grown into the direct: 'I am not one of His' into 'I know Him not'; the former, indeed, involved the latter: "negavit ipsum cum se negavit eius esse discipulum" (Bede). Ον λέγετε, nearly=περὶ οὐ λ.; cf. Jo. vi. 71 ἔλεγεν δὲ τὸν Ἰουδαν, i Cor. x. 29 συνείδησιν δὲ λέγω.

72. καὶ εὐθὺς ἐκ δευτέρου ἀλέκτωρ ἐφώνησεν] 'That moment, as he spake (Lc. παραχρῆμα, ἔτι λαλοῦντος αὐτοῦ), for the second time a cock crew.' Ἐκ δευτέρου (Jos. v. 2, Mt. xxvi. 42, Jo. ix. 24, Acts x. 15, Heb. ix. 28, a non-classical phrase = (τὸ) δεύτερον, cf. Blass on *Acts*, l.c.) is here peculiar to Mc., corresponding to δι's in v. 30 and below in this verse (72<sup>b</sup>). On the textual history of the passage see WH., *Intr.*<sup>2</sup> pp. 243, 330, *Notes*, p. 27; on ἀλέκτωρ, φωνεῖν, cf. v. 30, note.

καὶ ἀνεμνήσθη ὁ Πέτρος κτλ.] Mt. ἀνεμνήσθη τοῦ ρῆματος, Lc. ὑπεμνήσθη τοῦ ρ. The second cock crowing recalled to Peter's mind the forgotten saying. Mc., according to the best text (see v. 68, *app. crit.*), has not referred to an earlier cock crowing; Peter may not have noticed the first, but from the lapse of time he would recognise that this was the second—the ἀλέκτοροφωνία of the third watch

ἀλέκτορα [δὶς] φωνῆσαι τρίς με ἀπαρνήσῃ. καὶ ἐπιβαλὼν ἔκλαιεν.

XV. 1      <sup>1</sup>*Kai eúthūs πρωὶ συμβούλιον ποιήσαντες οἱ ἀρχι-*

72 δἰς φωνῆσαι B 2<sup>pe</sup> k aegg] φ. δἰς AC<sup>2</sup>LNXΓΔΨ al<sup>pl</sup> om δἰς ΚC<sup>\*vid</sup> Δ 251 efflq aeth | καὶ επιβαλὼν (επιλαβων Δ 247) εκλαίεν (εκλαυσεν ΚC)] καὶ ηρξατο κλαίειν D latt syrr<sup>sin pesh hec</sup> arm the go καὶ εκλαίεν (? εκλαυσεν) aeth<sup>vid</sup> XV 1 πρωὶ] pr επι το (vel τω) A(E)N(S)ΧΓΔΠΣ min<sup>fereomn</sup> | ποιησαντες AB(D)ΝΧΓΔΠΣΨ min<sup>pl</sup> (afflkq) vg syrr arm go (aeth) Or ετομασαντες ΚCL

(xiii. 35). For *ρῆμα* of a particular saying of Jesus cf. ix. 32, Lc. ii. 50, Jo. v. 47. It is instructive to note that in quoting the saying Mc. does not quite verbally reproduce his own report of it (v. 30). On ἀναμιμνήσκεσθαι τι see WM., p. 256, Blass, *Gr. p. 102.*

καὶ ἐπιβαλὼν ἔκλαιεν] Mt., Lc. καὶ ἔξελθὼν ἔξω ἔκλαυσεν πικρῶς. From the second century onwards Mc.'s ἐπιβαλὼν has been felt to be a difficulty. (a) The 'Western' text substitutes καὶ ἤρξατο κλαίειν (Vg. *et coepit flere*), cf. Thphht, Euth., ἐπιβάντι τοῦ 'ἀρξάμενος' (for the part. cf. Acts xi. 4 ἀρξάμενος ἔξετίθετο). (b) Thphht's alternative ἡ ἐπικαλυψάμενος τὴν κεφαλήν is supported with great learning by Dr Field (*Notes*, p. 41 ff.), but he fails to produce any instance in which ἐπιβάλλειν is used in this sense without *ἰμάτιον* (cf. e.g. Lev. xix. 19 *ἰμάτιον... κιβδηλον οὐκ ἐπιβαλεῖς σταυρῷ*) or some explanatory word. (c) There is more to be said for the interpretation adopted by the A.V. and R.V. (text): "when he thought thereon." Wetstein cites from Galen the phrase ἐπιβάλλειν τινὶ τὴν διάνοιαν, and the analogy of *προσέχειν*, *ἐπέχειν*, *ἐνέχειν* (vi. 19) affords some justification for understanding ἐπιβαλὼν in this sense. (d) The word is used by late writers intransitively in such phrases as ἐπιβαλὼν φησι, ἐπιβάρωται, with the meaning *sermonem excipiens*, and Mc. may have employed it here in some such sense; Peter's weeping was his answer to the Lord's words

recalled to his memory by the second cockerowing. On the whole it must be confessed that the word remains one of the unsolved enigmas of Mc.'s vocabulary; but of current interpretations the choice seems to lie between (c) and (d). ἔκλαιεν, the weeping continued some while; Mt.'s and Lc.'s ἔκλαυσεν, even with the added πικρῶς, is less suggestive.

XV. 1—15. THE TRIAL BEFORE THE PROCURATOR (Mt. xxvii. 1—26, Lc. xxiii. 1—3, 18—25, Jo. xviii. 28—40, xix. 4—16).

1. *εύθὺς πρωὶ*] At daybreak, as soon as it was morning; Mt. *πρωὶς γενομένης* (cf. ἄμα *πρωὶ*, Mt. xx. 1). For *εύθὺς* in this sense cf. i. 10, 21, 23. The precise meaning of *πρωὶ* must be determined by the context; in this case, since the second cockerowing was past and the Crucifixion followed at the third hour (v. 25), it is natural to understand the hour of daybreak—from 5 to 6 a.m.

*συμβούλιον ποιήσαντες κτλ.*] Vg. *consilium facientes*, R.V. "held a consultation." Mommsen (cited by Deissmann, *B. St.* p. 238) shews that the late and rare word *συμβούλιον* was used as a technical term to represent the Latin *consilium*; cf. Plut. *Rom.* 14 *κωνσιλιον γὰρ ἔτι νῦν τὸ συμβούλιον καλοῦσι*. Deissmann quotes from an Egyptian inscription of the time of Antoninus Pius *καθημένων ἐν συμβούλῳ ἐν τῷ πραιτωρίῳ*. In Biblical Greek the word occurs only in 4 Macc. xvii. 17 *ὅλον τὸ συμβούλιον* (ΚV, *συνέδριον* Α), Mt. xii. 14, xxii. 15,

ερεῖς μετὰ τῶν πρεσβυτέρων καὶ γραμματέων καὶ ὄλον τὸ συνέδριον δῆσαντες τὸν Ἰησοῦν ἀπήνεγκαν

<sup>1 γραμματεω] pr των Ν(С)D 1 2<sup>ρ</sup> aegg Or | απηνεγκαν] απηγαγον CDGNΣ 1 124  
604 2<sup>ρ</sup> alpauo Or+eis την αλην D in atrium a c ff q +in praetorium k</sup>

xxvii. 1, 7, xxviii. 12, Mc. iii. 6, xv. 1, Acts xxv. 12; in the first and last of these passages (see Blass on *Acts l.c.*) it answers to *concilium*, but in the rest the abstract sense is to be preferred. Mc.'s *ποιεῖν συμβ.* is equivalent to Mt.'s *λαβεῖν συμβ.* This seems not to have been realised by the (?Alexandrian) correctors, who have changed *ποιήσαντες* into *έτοιμάσαντες* (cf. *app. crit.*).

The consultation was held between the hierarchy on the one hand, and the rest of the Sanhedrin on the other (*μετὰ τῶν πρ. καὶ γρ.*; contrast xiv. 53); the priesthood led by Caiaphas now openly take the lead, as they have done in fact since the affair of the Temple market. The purpose of their deliberations would be to resolve on a way of giving effect to the judgement of the Sanhedrin (xiv. 64); cf. Mt. *κατὰ τοῦ Ἰησοῦ ὅστε θανατῶσαι αὐτόν.* Καὶ ὄλον τὸ συνέδριον. Mt. *πάντες*: the three orders were agreed, the result was practically the act of the whole Sanhedrin, though there were individuals who held aloof from the proceedings (Lc. xxiii. 51, Jo. xix. 39, cf. vii. 50 f.). On the irregular and informal character of the whole trial see Edersheim, *Life*, ii. p. 553 ff.

*δῆσαντες...παρέδωκαν Πειλάτῳ]* The Sanhedrists' resolve was immediately followed by action. There was no time to be lost; the Feast had begun (cf. xiv. 2), and the multitudes would presently assemble; they must place the Lord in the hands of the Procurator before a rescue could be attempted. *Δῆσαντες* Mt., Mc. He had been bound on His arrest (Jo. xviii. 12), but the manacles or cords

had probably been removed while He was in the High Priest's house; now that the streets had to be traversed again, they were replaced. Origen: "Christus ... volens tradidit se ad vincula, seponens in se divinitatis virtutem." *Παρέδωκαν.* The nemesis which overtook these betrayers was swift and precise: *παρέδωκαν οἱ Ἰουδαῖοι τοῖς Ρωμαίοις τὸν κύριον παρεδόθησαν δὲ αὐτοὶ ὑπὸ Κυρίου τῶν Ρωμαίων χερσί* (Thph.). *Πειλάτῳ*: Mt. adds *τῷ ἡγεμόνι* (cf. Tac. *ann.* xv. 44), Jo. substitutes *eis τὸ πρατώριον* (cf. v. 16 *infra*).

Since the fall of Archelaus in A.D. 6 Judea had been under a *procurator* (*ἐπίτροπος*) who governed it subject to the supervision of the *legatus* of Syria; cf. Jos. *ant.* xvii. 13. 5, xviii. 1. 1, *B. J.* ii. 8. i, and compare Marquardt, *Staatsverwaltung*, i. p. 250 ff., Schürer I. ii. p. 44 ff. Pontius Pilatus—Mc. uses only the *cognomen*—(Lc. iii. 1, Acts iv. 27, 1 Tim. vi. 13; cf. Tac. *ann.* xv. 44 "Christus Tiberio imperante per procuratorem Pontium Pilatum supplicio affectus erat"), the fifth Procurator, entered upon his office in A.D. 25—6, and held it for ten years. A fortunate accident enables us to compare with the portrait which the Gospels draw of this man the estimates formed by Josephus and Philo; cf. Jos. *ant.* xviii. *passim*, *B. J.* ii. 9. 2 ff.; Phil. *de leg.* 38. The latter cites a letter of Agrippa I. in which Pilate is described as *τὴν φύσιν ἀκαπτῆς καὶ μετὰ τοῦ αὐθάδους ἀμείλικτος*, and a terrible picture is drawn of the blots upon his official life, *τὰς δωροδοκίας, τὰς ὑβρεῖς, τὰς ἀρπαγάς, τὰς αἰκίας, τὰς ἐπηρείας, τοὺς ἀκρίτους καὶ ἐπαλλήλους φόνους, τὴν ἀνήνυτον καὶ*

¶ 2 καὶ παρέδωκαν Πειλάτῳ. <sup>¶</sup> 2 καὶ ἐπηρώτησεν αὐτὸν ὁ Πειλάτος Σὺ εἰ ὁ βασιλεὺς τῶν Ἰουδαίων; ὁ δὲ ἀπο-  
3 κριθεὶς αὐτῷ λέγει Σὺ λέγεις. <sup>3</sup> καὶ κατηγόρουν αὐτοῦ  
4 οἱ ἀρχιερεῖς πολλά. <sup>4</sup> ὁ δὲ Πειλάτος πάλιν ἐπηρώτα αὐτὸν λέγων Οὐκ ἀποκρίνῃ οὐδέν; ἵδε πόσα σου

1 Πιλατ. CLNGΔΠΣΨ min<sup>omnvid</sup> (Πειλ. ΝΑΒΔ) 2 ο Πειλ.] + λεγων 13 69 124  
346 556 c k arm the | αυτω λεγει] ειπεν αυτω ΑΝΧ<sup>vid</sup>ΓΔΠΣ min<sup>pl</sup> 3 κατηγορουσιν  
D | πολλα] + αυτος δε ουδεν απεκρινατο ΝUΔΨ 13 33 69 124 1071 al<sup>sat</sup>mu a c syrr<sup>sin hel</sup>  
arm aeth Or 4 επηρωτα BU 13 33 69 124 2<sup>pe</sup> al<sup>nonn</sup> a k syrr<sup>hel(mg)</sup> arm]  
επηρωτησεν ΝACDNXΓΔΠΣ min<sup>pl</sup> ff q vg syrr<sup>posh hel(txt)</sup> | om λεγων Ν\* 1 209 2<sup>pe</sup>  
a arm the | om ουδεν B\*

ἀργαλεωτάτην ὡμότητα. This last feature of his administration is well illustrated by Lc. xiii. 1. But the picture is perhaps overdrawn; see Renan, *Vie*, p. 413 ff. The Pilate of the Gospels is not altogether wanting in the sense of justice which characterised the better class of Roman officials; and if he is compared with the Jewish leaders, the result is distinctly in his favour.

The Procurator resided at Caesarea by the sea (Acts xxiii. 23 ff., Jos. *B. J.* ii. 9. 2), but he spent the Paschal week in Jerusalem, where his presence might be needed in case of an outbreak of fanaticism; cf. Jos. *B. J.* ii. 14. 8, 15. 5. As to the quarters he occupied at Jerusalem see xv. 16, note.

2. καὶ ἐπηρώτησεν αὐτὸν ὁ Π. κτλ.] The preliminaries are related by Jo. The Sanhedrists are too punctilious to enter the pagan Procurator's house during the Paschal season, and the interview takes place outside. He asks the nature of the charge, and gathers from their answer that the Prisoner is accused of a capital offence. Then he calls Jesus into the *praetorium*; the Lord stands before him (Mt.), and the Procurator enquires, Σὺ εἰ κτλ. (Mt. Mc. Lc. Jo.). Many causes may have cooperated to suggest this question—the tradition of the coming of the Magi (Mt. ii. 1 ff.), the report of the Lord's preach-

ing concerning the Kingdom of God, the cries raised at the Triumphal Entry; or it may refer simply to His claim of Messiahship, for ὁ βασιλεὺς τῶν Ἰουδαίων is merely ὁ χριστός interpreted from the standpoint of a Roman official. According to Lc. the Priests had already accused Jesus of sedition (ἥρξαντο κατηγορεῖν αὐτοῦ λέγοντες Τοῦτον εὑραμεν διαστρέφοντα τὸ ἔθνος ἥμῶν...λέγοντα ἕατὸν χριστὸν βασιλέα εἶναι), but the words are possibly intended to express at the outset the substance of the charge upon which He was tried before the Procurator. On οι Ἰουδαῖοι see vii. 3, note; the term is appropriate on the lips of an alien; to the Priests and Scribes the Christ is ὁ βασιλεὺς Ἰσραὴλ (*infra*, v. 32). “The form of the sentence (*σὺ εἰ...*) suggests a feeling of surprise in the questioner” (Westcott); see however xiv. 61, Lc. vii. 19 f., where the pronoun appears merely to emphasise the identity: ‘art thou the person...?’

ὁ δὲ ἀποκριθεὶς αὐτῷ κτλ.] The answer is given more fully by Jo. (*σὺ λέγεις ὅτι βασιλεὺς εἶμι*), who narrates the whole conversation between Jesus and Pilate. Σὺ λέγεις neither affirms nor denies (cf. xiv. 62, note; Thph.: ἀμφίβολον ἀπόκρισιν δίδωσι), but leaves the matter to Pilate's judgement (see, however, Blass, *Gr.* p. 260). But according to Jo., the Lord pro-

κατηγοροῦσιν. <sup>5</sup>ό δὲ Ἰησοῦς οὐκέτι οὐδὲν ἀπεκρίθη, 5 Τῷ  
ἄστε θαυμάζειν τὸν Πειλάτον. <sup>6</sup>κατὰ δὲ ἑορτὴν 6 §F

4 κατηγορουσιν ΣBCDΨ i 604 48<sup>vid</sup> latt<sup>vid</sup> me aeth] καταμαρτυρουσιν AEGHΚΜ  
ΝSUVXΓΔΠΣ min<sup>pl</sup> syrr arm the go 5 απεκρινατο G i 13 69 al<sup>raue</sup> | τον Π.] + λιαν  
arm<sup>vid</sup> 6 την εορτ. D

ceeded to reveal the sense in which He claimed kingship (ἥ βασιλεία ή ἐμή οὐκ ἔστιν ἐκ τοῦ κόσμου τούτου...πᾶς δὲ ὁ ὥν ἐκ τῆς ἀληθείας ἀκούει μου τῆς φωνῆς). The contrast between His reply to Pilate and that to Caiaphas (xiv. 62) is of great interest; in dealing with Pilate He appeals to conscience only, and makes no reference to the Messianic hopes raised by the O.T.

3—5. καὶ κατηγόρουν αὐτοῦ κτλ.] Pilate and Jesus are now again standing outside the Praetorium (cf. Jo. xviii. 38); the Priests and other members of the Sanhedrin (Mt. καὶ πρεσβυτέρων) are still there, and the crowd has begun to assemble (Lc. καὶ τοὺς ὄχλους). Pilate, satisfied of the innocence of Jesus, announces, Οὐδὲν εὑρίσκω αἴτιον ἐν τῷ ἀνθρώπῳ τούτῳ (Lc., cf. Jo.). He is answered by a storm of fresh accusations (*πολλά*), which are audaciously contrary to fact (cf. Lc. xxiii. 2, 5). The Lord preserves a strict silence, as He had done when false witnesses gave contradictory evidence before Caiaphas (xiv. 60, 61, notes). To Pilate this self-restraint was incomprehensible; he invited answers from the Prisoner, and, when He remained silent, expressed great astonishment (*θαυμάζειν...λιαν*, Mt.); cf. Victor: ἐθαύμασεν δὲ Πειλάτος πῶς δὲ λογιώτατος διδάσκαλος...οὐκ ἀπολογεῖται. Οὐδέν...πόσα: the charges were many—πόσα answers to *πολλά*, v. 3,—and to not one of them did the Lord vouchsafe a reply. His reserve was the more remarkable, because He had answered Pilate before; but now His lips were sealed (*οὐκέτι οὐδὲν ἀπεκρίθη*, Vg. *amplius nihil respondit*). Cf. Origen: “nec enim erat dignum respondere ut

dubitanti utrum debeat adversus accusations eorum falsas respondere”; see also his remarks in *c. Cels. praef.* (ad init.). Ambrose: “bene facet qui defensione non indiget.”

6. κατὰ δὲ ἑορτὴν κτλ.] ‘At (the) feast’ = at the Passover, Vg. *per diem festum*, Wycliffe, “by a solemn day”; cf. Ps. xciv. (xcv.) 8 κατὰ τὴν ἡμέραν τοῦ πειρασμοῦ, and Westcott’s note on Heb. iii. 8: κατὰ τὴν ἑορτὴν occurs in Jos. ant. xx. 9. 3. The alternative rendering (Fritzsche) ‘feast by feast’ (cf. καθ’ ἡμέραν, κατ’ ἔνιαυτόν) is perhaps less probable, notwithstanding the absence of the article; the Passover was so clearly in view that ἑορτή required no definition. Of the custom (Mt. εἰώθει δὲ ἡγεμών, Jo. ἔστιν δὲ συνήθεια ἡμῖν) there seems to be no other evidence than that which the Gospels furnish. Mc.’s ἀπέλνεν (cf. ἐποίει, v. 8) does not compel us to look further back than Pilate’s own term of office for the origin of the custom; a precedent of the kind would ripen into a claim almost at once. The commentators find a partial parallel in Livy’s account of the *lectisternium* (v. 13 “vincitis quoque demta in eos dies vincula”—a passage which shews at least that the practice was not foreign to Roman feeling. “Ον παρητοῦντο, ‘for whose life (or liberty) they begged.’ Παραιτεῖσθαι is usually to deprecate censure or punishment, cf. 4 Macc. xi. 2 οὐ μέλλω, τύραννε, πρὸς τὸν...βασανισμὸν παραιτεῖσθαι, Acts xxv. 11 οὐ παραιτοῦμαι τὸ ἀποθανεῖν, or with an acc. of the person addressed, Esth. vii. 7 παρητεῖτο τὴν βασιλισσαν. Here it is followed by an acc. of the object desired (WM.,

7 ἀπέλυεν αὐτοῖς ἔνα δέσμιον ὃν παρητοῦντο. 7 ἦν δὲ ὁ λεγόμενος Βαραββᾶς μετὰ τῶν στασιαστῶν δεδε-

6 απελυεν] απελυσεν 1071 ειωθει ο γηεμων απολυεν 13 69 124 346 (solebat dimittere a (c) ff vg consueverat remittere k: cf. syrpesh) | om δεσμον 604 | ov παρητουντο ΙΙ\*AB\*(Δ) et ut vid k syrpesh aegg] οντερη ητουντο ΙΙ\*BCNХГПΣΨ min<sup>pl</sup> ov αν ητ. DG 2<sup>ρο</sup> 13 69 alpac ov ητ. I quemcunque petissent ac ff k vg 7 Βαβαρραβας (sic) Δ | στασιαστων ΙΙBCDKNΨ i 13 69 min<sup>nonn</sup>] συνστασιαστων (συστ.) A(E)GH (MSU)V(ΧΓ)Δ(Π)Σ min<sup>ma</sup>

p. 284), like the uncompounded verb; cf. Lc. xxiii. 25 ὃν ἤτοῦντο, Acts iii. 14 ἤτησασθε ἄνδρα φονέα χαρισθῆναι ἡμῖν. Mt.'s ήθελον colours the fact by suggesting that the request implied a choice. The alternative reading ὅπερ ἤτοῦντο (see *app. crit.*) is defended by Field, *Notes*, p. 43, cf. Burgon-Miller, *Causes*, p. 32. "Οσπερ occurs nowhere else in the N.T. (Blass, *Gr.* p. 36, who on grammatical grounds prefers (p. 207) the reading of D).

7. ἦν δὲ ὁ λεγόμενος Βαραββᾶς κτλ.] The form of the sentence is remarkable, when it is compared with the notices of Barabbas in the other Gospels: "there was the man known as B." &c., not ἦν δὲ δέσμιός τις λεγ. B. as one might have here expected. When the Marcan tradition was being formed the name of Barabbas was still perhaps remembered at Jerusalem as that of a once formidable person (Mt. δ. ἐπίσημον). The name was probably secondary, a surname, or, as the form suggests, a patronymic (for ὁ λεγόμενος in this connexion see Mt. i. 16, ix. 9; on the other hand cf. Lc. xxii. 47, Jo. ix. 11, where the personal name follows); the man was commonly called ΒΑΒΑΡΒΑ (Dalman, p. 142), "a very usual name in the Talmudists" (J. Lightfoot on Mt. xxvii. 16) and borne by two Rabbis, R. Samuel Bar Abba, and R. Nathan Bar Abba. According to Jerome in *Mt.*, "in evangelio quod scribitur iuxta Hebraeos filius magistri eorum interpretatur"; cf. the schol. in cod. S (cited by Tischendorf on Mt. xxvii. 17) ὁ Βαραββᾶς, ὅπερ ἐρμηνεύεται διδασκάλου

νίος. The conclusion has been drawn that another tradition gave the name as Bar-Rabba (Renan, *Vie*, p. 419, cf. Hilgenfeld, *ev. sec. Hebr.* etc., p. 28, WH., *Notes*, p. 20, Resch, p. 339, Nestle, *T. C.* p. 259). According to some, apparently most, of the copies of Mt. known to Origen (*in Mt. l.c.*), the personal name of Bar-Abba was the same as our Lord's, and the reading Ἰησοῦν τὸν Βαραββᾶν survives in four cursive mss. of Mt., and in the Sinaitic Syriac and the Armenian versions of Mt.; but it probably originated in an early error (see WH. *l.c.* and the supplementary note in WH.<sup>2</sup> p. 144). Nothing is actually known of this Bar-Abba beyond the facts mentioned in the Gospels. He was a ληστής (Jo.) who had been engaged with others in a notable disturbance of the peace within the city (Lc. γενομένην ἐν τῇ πόλει) in which blood had been shed, and who was now in custody with his comrades on the double charge of faction and murder (διὰ στάσιν καὶ φόνον, Lc.). Στάσις is either 'standing,' 'posture' (LXX., Heb. ix. 8), or 'faction,' 'disturbance' (Acts xv. 2, xix. 40, xxiii. 7, 10, xxiv. 5); the latter meaning exclusively appears in στασιάζειν (Judith vii. 15, 2 Macc. iv. 30, xiv. 6) and its derivative στασιαστής. Στασιαστής (ἀπ. λεγ. in Biblical Gk.) occurs also in Josephus, but is non-classical; cf. Moeris: στασιατής Ἀττικώς, στασιαστής Ἐλληνικώς. Οἵτινες (cf. Lc. δοτις) characterises the men: they were such desperate characters that they had gone to the length of

μένος οἵτινες ἐν τῇ στάσει φόνον πεποιήκεισαν. <sup>8</sup> καὶ 8  
§ ἀναβὰς ὁ ὄχλος ἤρξατο αἰτεῖσθαι καθὼς ἐποίει αὐτοῖς. <sup>§ r</sup>  
9 ὁ δὲ Πειλᾶτος ἀπεκρίθη αὐτοῖς λέγων Θέλετε 9  
ἀπολύσω ὑμῖν τὸν βασιλέα τῶν Ἰουδαίων; <sup>10</sup> ἐγίνω- 10  
σκεν γὰρ ὅτι διὰ φθόνον παραδεδώκεισαν αὐτὸν [οἱ

7 πεποιηκασιν Ψ 8 αναβας NBD a ff vg aegg go] αναβοησας Νe.bACNXGPIΣΨ  
min<sup>omnivd</sup> syrr<sup>vid</sup> arm om k | o οχλος] pr olos D ak go | αιτεισθαι]+αυτον D k | εποιει  
αυτοις] pr αει ACDNXGHIΣ min<sup>omnivd</sup> a ff r syr<sup>hel</sup> go + καθ εορτην c k εθος ην αυτοις ινα  
τον Βαραββαν απολυση αυτοις 6ο4 (arm): cf. k 9 αποκριθεις λεγει αυτοις D 2<sup>pe</sup>  
a ff | om υμιν D ff 10 εγινωσκεν] επεγινωσκεν ΑΚΠI min<sup>pauc</sup> εγινωκει Ν\* ηδει D  
1 13 69 346 6ο4 2<sup>pe</sup> | παραδεδωκεισαν (παρεδωκεισ. AEGNVXΔΣ min<sup>mū</sup>) παρεδωκαν  
DHS 1 13 69 al<sup>pauc</sup> | om οι αρχιερεις B 1 13<sup>ev</sup> 47<sup>ev</sup> (k) syr<sup>sin</sup> me

murder. Πεποιήκεισαν: cf. δεδώκει xiv. 44, παραδεδώκεισαν, v. 10; see WSchm. p. 99. For φόνον ποιεῖν, *facere homicidium*, cf. Deut. xxii. 8.

8. καὶ ἀναβὰς ὁ ὄχλος κτλ.] The crowd, which had begun to assemble before the visit to Antipas (*v. 3, note*), now forced its way up to the headquarters of the Procurator (cf. Acts xxi. 35 ὅτε δὲ ἐγένετο ἐπὶ τοὺς ἀναβαθμούς... ἡκολούθει τὸ πλῆθος τοῦ λαοῦ), and demanded the release of a prisoner according to Pilate's usual practice at the Passover (ἐποίει = εἰώθει ποιεῖν, cf. ἀπέλινει, *v. 6, note*). Another tradition represents the Procurator as taking the initiative by reminding the crowd of the custom (*Jo. xviii. 39 ἔστιν δὲ συνήθεια ὑμῖν ἵνα ἔνα ἀπολύσω κτλ.*); Mc. alone suggests that he was influenced by their attitude and cries. 'Αναβοησας (see *app. crit.*) is a *scriptio proclivis* which falls in readily with the context (cf. *vv. 13, 14*), but misses a feature in the story which is of some importance; the advance of the crowd was no less menacing than their shouts. 'Αναβοῆν, ἀναβῆναι are liable to be confused in mss., see Fritzsche *ad l.*, who refers to 2 Regn. xxiii. 9, 4 Regn. iii. 21, Hos. viii. 9.

9. ὁ δὲ Πειλᾶτος ἀπεκρίθη κτλ.] Pilate's proposal was an answer to the demands of the populace, who seem to have been animated by the

desire of claiming a right, rather than by any special goodwill towards Jesus. Possibly the majority consisted of citizens, and not of the Galileans who had welcomed their Prophet in the Temple courts. Θέλετε ἀπολύσω: for the construction see vi. 25, x. 36, notes. The full form of the question is given by Mt. (*τίνα θ. ἀ. ὑμῖν, τὸν Βαραββᾶν ἢ Ἰησοῦν*), but *τὸν βασιλέα τῶν Ἰουδαίων* (Mc., Jo.) is doubtless original; the cynicism of the Roman finds pleasure in connecting that title with this harmless dreamer, as he considers Jesus to be.

10. ἐγίνωσκεν γὰρ ὅτι διὰ φθόνον κτλ.] A note belonging to the earliest tradition (Mc., Mt.), added to explain Pilate's motive. From the first he was aware of the feeling which lay at the root of the Sanhedrists' animosity to Jesus, and this knowledge was partly intuitive, partly due to impressions left on Pilate by their conduct (*ἐγίνωσκεν, Mt. γέδει*). The pretence of loyalty to the Emperor was too flimsy to deceive a man of the world, and he detected under this disguise the vulgar vice of envy. The Prophet of Galilee had earned a reputation, and gained a hold upon the conscience of the nation which the priestly rulers at Jerusalem failed to secure, and His success explained their resentment. But the people were free from the

τι ἀρχιερεῖς]. <sup>11</sup>οἱ δὲ ἀρχιερεῖς ἀνέστεισαν τὸν ὄχλον <sup>12</sup>ἵνα μᾶλλον τὸν Βαραββᾶν ἀπολύσῃ αὐτοῖς. <sup>13</sup>ό δὲ

Πειλάτος πάλιν ἀποκριθεὶς ἐλεγεν αὐτοῖς Τί οὖν  
§ P 13 ποιήσω ὃν λέγετε τὸν βασιλέα τῶν Ἰουδαίων; <sup>14</sup>οἱ δὲ πάλιν ἔκραξαν Σταύρωσον αὐτόν. <sup>15</sup>ό δὲ Πει-

<sup>11</sup> οἱ δὲ ἀρχιερεῖς καὶ δοῦλοι αρμ | ανεστεισαν] επεισαν Δ ανεπεισαν Γ min<sup>nonn</sup>  
(similiter a c ff k r syrrsin hel arm the) <sup>12</sup> ελεγεν αυτοις] ειπεν αυτ. ADNΧΔΠΣΨ  
min<sup>fere omni</sup> αυτ. λεγει Γ απεκριθη αυτ. δοῦλοι 2<sup>ρε</sup> | ποιησω] pr θελετε ADNΧΤΠΣ min<sup>pl</sup>  
latt syrr arm go aeth | om ον λεγετε AD 1 13 69 118 δοῦλοι 2<sup>ρε</sup> al<sup>perpaue</sup> latt arm the om  
ον B | τον βασιλεα] om τον ΝΧΓΠΣ min<sup>pl</sup> go βασιλει D\* (τω β. D<sup>corr</sup>) <sup>13</sup> εκραξαν]  
εκραζον G 1 13 69 al<sup>paue</sup> arm εκραγασαν δοῦλοι (2<sup>ρε</sup>) c<sup>scer</sup>+λεγοντες ADKΜΠ δοῦλοι al<sup>nonn</sup>  
a c ff aeth + αναστομενοι υπο των αρχιερεων και ελεγον G 13 69 124 346 556 c<sup>scer</sup>  
syr<sup>hel(mg)</sup> (arm)

prejudices of the hierarchy, and might be trusted to demand the release of Jesus, especially when the alternative was such as Pilate proposed. Διὰ φθόνον: cf. Sap. ii. 24, 3 Macc. vi. 7, Phil. i. 15. On the pluperfect after ἔγινωσκεν see Blass, *Gr.* p. 200.

11. οἱ δὲ ἀρχιερεῖς ἀνέστεισαν τὸν ὄχλον κτλ.] An interval followed during which the hierarchy brought their influence to bear upon a crowd already perhaps divided upon the personal question submitted to them. What arguments were used to lead them to prefer Barabbas (μᾶλλον τὸν Β.) is matter for conjecture; if Barabbas was a Jerusalemit, and the crowd consisted largely of his follow-towns-men, an appeal may have been made to local prejudice; but there may have been also a lurking sympathy with the στασιασταί, which the Sanhedrists knew how to evoke. They would pose as advocates of Barabbas rather than as enemies of Jesus; to obtain the release of the one was to condemn the other (Mt. τὸν δὲ Ἰησοῦν ἀπολέσωσιν). With them were the elders (Mt.), who represented the people, and whose influence perhaps secured the triumph of the less popular Sadducean aristocracy. Ἀναστέιν in the metaphorical sense (=ἀναπείθειν, Hesych.), a word of the later Gk. which occurs again Lc. xxiii. 5 and is occasionally

used by Aq. and Symm., though not by the LXX.

12. ο δὲ Πειλάτος πάλιν ἀποκριθεὶς κτλ.] After a space Pilate put the question again and received the answer "Barabbas" (Mt.). His next move was to test the popular feeling with regard to Jesus: τί οὖν ποιήσω; (deliberative subjunctive, cf. Burton, § 168), 'what in that case would you have me do with Him,' &c. For the construction ποιεῖν τινά τι see Blass, *Gr.* p. 90; the more usual phrase is ποιεῖν τινί (ἐν τινι, μετά των) τι. <sup>16</sup>Ον λέγετε τὸν βασιλέα τῶν Ἰουδαίων: see note on v. 9. Mt. has in both instances τὸν λεγόμενον Χριστόν.

13. οἱ δὲ πάλιν ἔκραξαν Σταύρωσον αὐτόν] There was now no hesitation: again the Procurator was answered by a shout in which all joined (Mt.). Perhaps the crowd were nettled by Pilate's imputation (ὅν λέγετε κτλ.), perhaps they resented his desire to dictate their answer, and with the fickle cruelty of an irresponsible multitude they clamoured for the death of one whose release they had a few minutes before been disposed to demand (v. 8). Lc. represents the cry as repeated again and again (ἐπεφώνουν λέγοντες Σταύρουν σταύρουν; cf. Jo. xix. 6, 15). Σταυροῦν in class. Gk. is 'to fence with a palisade,' ἀνασταυροῦν being reserved from Herodotus downwards for the

λάτος ἔλεγεν αὐτοῖς Τί γὰρ ἐποίησεν κακόν; οἱ δὲ περισσῶς ἔκραξαν Σταύρωσον αὐτόν. <sup>15</sup>ό δὲ 15 Πειλάτος<sup>¶</sup> βουλόμενος τῷ ὅχλῳ τὸ ἵκανὸν ποιῆσαι <sup>¶</sup> απέλυσεν αὐτοῖς τὸν Βαραββᾶν, καὶ παρέδωκεν τὸν Ἰησοῦν φραγελλώσας ἵνα σταυρωθῇ.

<sup>14</sup> om. *autois Ψ | περισσως]* περισσοτερως ENPSUVXGII<sup>mgS</sup> min<sup>pl</sup> | *εκραξαν*] εκραξον ADGKMPH\* 1 69 346 alnom latt syr<sup>besh</sup> arm me εκραυγαζον 1071 2<sup>po</sup>  
<sup>15</sup> om. βουλομενος...ποιησαι D ff k | ποιειν B 1071 | φλαγελλωσας D\*

punishment of impaling; but *σταροῦν* is used in Esth. vii. 9, viii. 13 for πλῆθ (cf. Deut. xxi. 23, Gal. iii. 13), and in the later sense by Polybius.

14. ὁ δὲ Πειλάτος ἔλεγεν αὐτοῖς κτλ.] Pilate, still reluctant, condescends to expostulate. Τί γὰρ ἐποίησεν κακόν; Vg. *quid enim mali fecit?* where γὰρ (WM., p. 559) looks back to *σταύρωσον*, and invites an explanation: ‘what evil has he done?—for that there has been wrongdoing is implied in your demand for punishment.’ But a mob has no reasons to give beyond its own will, and the only answer is a louder and wilder clamour (*περισσῶς*, cf. x. 26, xiv. 31; Lc. ἐπέκειντο φωναῖς μεγάλαις).

15. ὁ δὲ Πειλάτος βουλόμενος κτλ.] Pilate’s choice is made at last; his scruples, though quickened by his wife’s message (Mt. xxvii. 19), are overruled by the immediate necessity of pacifying the mob. Βούλεσθαι, a rare word in the Gospels (Mt.<sup>2</sup>, Mc.<sup>1</sup>, Lc.<sup>2</sup>, Jo.<sup>1</sup>), implies more strongly than θέλειν the deliberate exercise of volition; see Lightfoot on Philem. 13. Τὸ ἵκανὸν ποιῆσαι, *satisfacere*; a Latinism which occurs in Polybius, Appian, and Diogenes Laertius, and once in the LXX. (Jer. xxxi. (xlviii.) 30 οὐχὶ τὸ ἵκανὸν αὐτῷ οὐχ οὗτος ἐποίησεν; unless the passage should be punctuated οὐχὶ τὸ ἵκ. αὐτῷ; οὐχ κτλ.); cf. Acts xvii. 9 λαβόντες τὸ ἵκανόν, with Blass’s note. Either at this juncture or just before the final surrender (see next note) Pilate went

through the ceremony of washing his hands (Mt. xxvii. 24, *Er. Petr.* 1, where see note).

ἀπέλυσεν...παρέδωκεν κτλ.] In St John’s circumstantial account (xix. 1—16) we can see the order of the events which followed. Pilate seems to have pronounced no formal sentence (see Westcott on Jo. xix. 16; Lc.’s ἐπέκρινεν should probably be taken as expressing the substantial result of his decision), and even made a last effort to save Jesus by an appeal *ad misericordiam*. The scourging was perhaps intended to be a compromise; comp. Lc. παιδεύσας...αὐτὸν ἀπολύσω. But the Procurator’s *ecce homo* had no further effect than to elicit from the Priests the real charge: *νιὸν θεοῦ ἔαντὸν ἐποίησεν*. A second private interview between Pilate and Jesus followed, and then another attempt on Pilate’s part to escape from his false position. It was frustrated by the menace Ἐὰν τοῦτον ἀπολύσῃς οὐκ εἰ φίλος τοῦ Καίσαρος, upon which Pilate finally gave way.

φραγελλώσας] ‘When he had scourged Him’: aor. of antecedent action, Burton § 134; cf. Vg. *tradidit Iesum flagellis caesum*. Φραγέλλον, *flagellare*, a Latinism which has found its way also into Mt.; Jo. uses μαστιγοῦν, *Er. Petr.* μαστίζειν. Φραγέλλη, φραγέλλιον (Jo. ii. 15), φλαγέλλιον are cited in the lexicons from late Greek writers; of φραγέλλον no example seems to have been found excepting in this context and in Christian writings (e.g.

§ syr<sup>hier</sup> 16

16§ Oἱ δὲ στρατιῶται ἀπήγαγον αὐτὸν ἔσω τῆς

16 εσω...πραιτωριο] in praetorium k | εσω της αυλης ΝΑΒC\*ΝΧΓΔΠΣΨ min<sup>p1</sup> syrr  
the go aeth] εσω εις την αυλην DP 1 13 69 346 556 604 al<sup>paue</sup> arm εις την αυλην (του  
Καιαφα) C<sup>3</sup>(M) al<sup>satmu</sup> εξω της αυλης Δ 1071

*Ev. Nic.* 9, 16, *Test. xii. patr.*, *Ben.* 2). The punishment of scourging usually preceded crucifixion; cf. *Jos. B. J.* ii. 14. 9 μάστιξ προαικούμενος ἀνεσταύρωσεν: *ib. infra*, μαστιγώσαι τε πρὸ τοῦ βήματος καὶ σταυρῷ προσηλώσαι: *ib. v. II. 1*; *Lucian, reviv.* ad init.: ἐμοὶ μὲν ἀνεσκολοπίσθαι δοκεῖ αὐτὸν νὴ Δία μαστιγωθέντα γε πρότερον, and for an earlier instance of this Roman barbarity see *Livy*, xxxiii. 36, “alios verberatos crucibus adfixit.” It was inflicted with the *horribile flagellum*, reserved for slaves and condemned provincials (*Cic. pro Rabir.* 4 “Porcia lex virgas ab omnium civium corpore amovit; hic misericors flagella retulit”), a lash usually composed of leather thongs (contrast *Jo. ii. 15*) loaded at intervals with bone or metal (see the Class. Dictionaries *s.v. flagrum*, and cf. *Lipsius de cruce c. 3*). The sufferer was sometimes lashed to a column; see *Lipsius*, c. 4, and *Westcott* on *Jo. xix. 1*.

παρέδωκεν...ἴνα σταυρωθῆ] The last stage in the παράδοσις, cf. xiv. 10, 44, xv. 1, 10. The Lord is now delivered to the soldiers, whose business it is to execute the sentence (cf. *οἱ στρατιῶται...παραλαβόντες*, Mt.), or from another point of view to the Priests and people (*Jo. xix. 16, 17, Ev. Petr.* 3), to whose will the soldiers readily gave effect. Cf. *Thph.*: τὸ στρατιωτικὸν φῦλον ἀεὶ ἀταξίαις χαῖρον καὶ ὑβρεσι τὰ οἰκεῖα ἐπεδείκνυτο.

16—20<sup>a</sup>. THE LORD IS MOCKED BY THE PROCURATOR'S SOLDIERS (Mt. xxvii. 27—31<sup>a</sup>, *Jo. xix. 2—3*).

16. *οἱ δὲ στρατιῶται κτλ.*] Mt. *οἱ στρ. τοῦ ἡγεμόνος*, a distinct body from the στρατεύματα Ἡρώδου (*Lc. xxiii. 11*). They were members of the σπεῖρα which was quartered in the Antonia (*Acts xxi. 31*; cf. *supra*

xiv. 43, note), and belonged to the *auxilia* (Marquardt, v. p. 388), who were of provincial birth—not Jews, since the Jews were exempt from the conscription, but other Palestinians and foreigners, serving under Roman orders and at the disposal of the Procurator (*Schürer I. ii. p. 49 ff.*). The soldiers in question were probably the centurion (*infra v. 39 ff.*) and the handful of men sent with him to carry out the sentence. After the scourging, which had been inflicted outside, they brought the Lord ‘within the court which is (known as) Praetorium’ (ἔσω τῆς αὐλῆς ὁ ἔστιν πρ.—on the gender of the relative see WM., p. 206—Mt. εἰς τὸ πρ.). A difficulty has been found in Mc.'s identification of the αὐλή with the *praetorium*, and Blass (*Exp. T. x. 186*) proposes τῆς αὐλῆς τοῦ πραιτωρίου, relying on Jerome's *atrium praetorii*; whilst others regard ὁ ἔστιν πρ. as a gloss from Mt. But the explanatory clause is quite in Mc.'s manner (iii. 17, vii. 11, 34, xii. 42, xv. 42), and the most public part of the *praetorium* may well have been known by the Latin name of the whole. The word *praetorium* (as Lightfoot has shewn, *Philippians*, p. 97) may mean (1) headquarters in a camp, or (2) the residence of a governor, or other mansion. In the Gospels and Acts it bears the second sense, cf. *Acts xxiii. 35 ἐν τῷ πραιτωρίῳ τοῦ Ἡρώδου*, i.e. the palace built by Herod the Great at Caesarea, which was used by the Procurators as their official residence. It has been inferred (*Schürer I. ii. p. 48*) that Herod's palace at Jerusalem, a fortified building on the Western hill, served as the *praetorium* when the Procurator visited the Holy City; certainly it was sometimes so used (cf. e.g. *Jos. B. J.* ii. 14. 8 Φλώρος

αὐλῆς, ὃ ἐστιν πραιτώριον, καὶ συνκαλοῦσιν ὅλην τὴν σπεῖραν. <sup>17</sup> καὶ ἐνδιδύσκουσιν αὐτὸν πορφύραν, καὶ <sup>17</sup> περιτιθέασιν αὐτῷ πλέξαντες ἀκάνθινον στέφανον·

16 ο εστιν] ubi erat arm<sup>odd pl</sup> | συνκαλουσιν] καλουσιν D 17 ενδιδυσκουσιν  
 NBCDFΔΨ 1 13 69 al<sup>pauc</sup>] ενδυουσιν ANPΧΓΠΙΣ min<sup>pl</sup> | πορφυραν] χλαμυδα κοκκινην  
 min<sup>perpauc</sup> the χλ. κοκκ. και πορφ. 13 69 124 346 604 1071 2<sup>pe</sup> al<sup>pauc</sup> syr<sup>hier</sup> arm | περι-  
 τιθεασιν] επιτιθεασιν D imponunt vel imposuerunt c ff vg superponunt k | αυτω] capit  
 eius arm | om πλεξαντες D (cf. c d ff)

δὲ τότε μὲν ἐν τοῖς βασιλείοις αὐλίζεται, *iib.* 15. 5 Φλώρος... ἔξηγε τῆς βασιλικῆς αὐλῆς τοὺς σὺν αὐτῷ), and apparently by Pilate himself (*Philo, leg. ad Cai.* 38 ἐν τοῖς κατὰ τὴν ἱερόπολιν Ἡράδου βασιλείοις). But Westcott (on *Jo. xviii. 28, xix. 13*) regards the Antonia as the scene of the trial, and there is much to be said in favour of his view; the proximity of this great fortress to the Temple and its means of communication with the Precinct (*Acts xxi. 35*, cf. *supra*, v. 8, note) accord with the picture presented by the Gospels, while on the other hand it is difficult to reconcile their account with the other hypothesis; a procession of the Sanhedrists across the city would have been at once indecorous and dangerous. Moreover, the citadel was the natural headquarters of the σπεῖρα, and on the occasion of the Passover would have served the purpose of the Procurator's visit better than Herod's palace. For an account of the Antonia see *Jos. ant. xv. 11. 4, B.J. i. 5. 4, v. 5. 8*; and for a summary of the traditional evidence which connects it with the Praetorium, see Sir C. Wilson's art. *Jerusalem* in Smith's *B.D.*<sup>2</sup>, p. 1655.

συνκαλοῦσιν δλην τὴν σπεῖραν] The cohort had been concerned in the arrest (*Jo. xviii. 3, 12*), and were therefore interested in the trial and its issue. Σπεῖρα (1) a coil, (2) a band of men, is used in inscriptions for θίασος (Deissmann, *B. St.*, p. 186), and by Polybius and later writers for the Roman cohort (Polyb. xi. 21 τρεῖς σπεῖρας, τοῦτα δὲ καλεῖται τὸ σύνταγμα

τῶν πεζῶν παρὰ Ῥωμαίοις κόροτις), or perhaps (see Westcott on *Jo. l.c.*) for the maniple; in the N.T., however, the σπεῖρα seems to be the *cohors*, for it is commanded by a χιλιάρχος i.e. a *tribunus cohortis* (*Jo. xviii. 12, Acts xxi. 31*); cf. *Vg. convocant totam cohortem*. The strength of the cohort varied with that of the legion, but it would in any case reach several hundreds; δλην τ. σπ. must of course be taken loosely for all who were at hand or not on duty at the time. On the whole subject see Marquardt v.p.453ff.

17. ἐνδιδύσκουσιν αὐτὸν πορφύραν κτλ.] They had first stripped off His own clothing (Mt., cf. v. 10), except perhaps the χιτών (cf. *Jo. xix. 23*). Πορφύραν, *Jo. ἴματιν πορφυροῦν*, Mt., more precisely, χλαμύδα κοκκίνην (cf. *Hor. sat. ii. 6. 102, 106*); i.e. the garment was a scarlet (*Apoc. xvii. 4, xviii. 16*) *paludamentum* or *sagum* (see Trench, *syn. 4*)—the cloak of one of the soldiers, possibly a cast-off and faded rag, but with colour enough left in it to suggest the royal purple (cf. *Dan. v. 7 ff., 29, 1 Macc. x. 20, xi. 58, xiv. 43 f.*). The Romans of an earlier time οὐ περιεβάλοντο πορφύραν (*1 Macc. viii. 14*), but the Augustan age was not indifferent to such Eastern luxuries; the Lord, moreover, is regarded by His mockers as a pretender to an Oriental throne. Ἐνδιδύσκειν is a late form of ἐνδύειν which occurs in the LXX. (e.g. 2 *Regn. i. 24 τὸν ἐνδιδύσκοντα ὑμᾶς κόκκινα*); in the N.T. it appears again in *Lc. xvi. 19 ἐνεδιδύσκετο πορφύραν*.

περιτιθέασιν αὐτῷ πλέξαντες κτλ.]

18 <sup>καὶ ἤρξαντο ἀσπάζεσθαι αὐτόν Χαῖρε, βασιλεῦ τῶν</sup>

19 Ιουδαίων.

<sup>καὶ ἐτυπτον αὐτοῦ τὴν κεφαλὴν καλάμῳ</sup>

καὶ ἐνέπτυον § αὐτῷ, καὶ τιθέντες τὰ γόνατα προσ-

18 ασπάζεσθαι αυτον] + καὶ λεγειν (vel + λεγοντες) ΒC<sup>2</sup>(M)NUΣ 11 33 346 736  
alstat<sup>mu</sup> arm | βασιλεὺς ΒEΔMPSVXΨ al<sup>mu</sup>] ο βασιλεὺς AC<sup>2</sup>EFGHKNUΓΔΠΣ min<sup>mu</sup>  
19 αυτον την κεφ. καλαμῳ] αυτον καλ. εις την κεφ. D 2<sup>ρε</sup> c ffk | om καὶ ενεπτυον αυτω  
U | αυτω] faciei eius arm | om καὶ τιθεντες...προσεκυνουν αυτω D min<sup>pergrau</sup> k

Cf. 1 Macc. x. 20 ἀπέστειλαν αὐτῷ (i.e., to Jonathan)...στέφανον χρυσοῦν: 2 Macc. xiv. 4 ἥλθεν πρὸς τὸν βασιλέα Δημήτριον...προσάγων αὐτῷ στέφανον χρυσοῦν. The proper badge of Oriental royalty was the διάδημα: see Isa. lxii. 3, Esth. vi. 8 (Νε<sup>a</sup>), 1 Macc. i. 9, xi. 13, and cf. Apoc. xix. 12; the στέφανος was the victor's wreath, which was presented to royal personages as a tribute to military prowess, or as a festive decoration (see Trench, *syn.* xxiii.). If this distinction is to be maintained here the soldiers seem to have had in view the laurel wreath of the *Imperator*; see Westcott on Jo. xix. 2, who refers to Suetonius (*Tib.* 17 "triumphum ipse distulit...nihilominus urbem praetextatus et laurea coronatus intravit"). The wreath which they plaited (for πλέκειν στέφανον cf. Isa. xxviii. 5) was of thorns (ἀκάνθων, Vg. *spineam*, cf. Isa. xxxiv. 13, = ἔξ ἀκανθῶν Mt. Jo.), i.e. composed of twigs broken off from some thorny plant which grew on waste ground hard by (iv. 7), not improbably the *Zizyphus spina-Christi* or *nubk* tree, of which "the thorns are long, sharp and recurved, and often create a festering wound" (Tristram, *N.H.* p. 430, adding "I have noticed dwarf bushes of the *Z.* growing outside the walls of Jerusalem"). Twigs of *nubk* may have been used in callous thoughtlessness rather than out of sheer brutality—"there were thorns on the twigs, but that did not matter" (Bruce). On the other hand G. E. Post in Hastings *D. B.* iv. prefers the *Calycotome*

*villosa*, which is easily plaited into the shape of a crown.

18. <sup>ἤρξαντο ἀσπάζεσθαι αὐτόν κτλ.]</sup> According to *Ev. Petr.* the Lord was seated on an extemporised βῆμα, as a King sitting in judgment (ἐκάθισαν αὐτὸν ἐπὶ καθέδραν κρίσεως λέγοντες Δικαίως κρίνε βασιλεῦ τοῦ Ἰσραὴλ, cf. Justin, *apol.* I. 35 ἐκάθισαν ἐπὶ βήματος καὶ εἶπον Κρίνον ήμū); that He was placed on a seat to receive the mockery of homage is at least not improbable. A reed was placed in His right hand to represent a sceptre (Mt.). Cf. the remarkable parallel cited by Wetstein from Philo, in *Flacc.* § 6 βύβλον μὲν εὐρύναντες ἄντι διαδήματος ἐπιτιθέασιν αὐτοῦ τῇ κεφαλῇ ...ἄντι δὲ σκήπτρου βραχύ τι παπύρου τμῆμα τῆς ἐγχωρίου καθ' ὅδὸν ἐρριμένον ἰδόντες ἀναδίδοσιν· ἐπεὶ δὲ...διεκόσμητο εἰς βασιλέα...προσήσαν οἱ μὲν ὡς ἀσπασόμενοι οἱ δὲ ὡς δικασόμενοι. Another interesting illustration will be found in Field, *Notes*, p. 21 f. Χαῖρε, β. τ. 'L, *have rex Iudeorum*, in imitation of the well-known *have Caesar*. St John by using the imperf. (ἤρχοντο πρὸς αὐτὸν καὶ ἔλεγον, cf. Westcott *ad l.*) recalls the scene yet more vividly.

19. <sup>ἐτυπτον ... προσεκύνουν αὐτῷ]</sup> Mc. represents the mimic homage as mingled with brutal insult; in Mt. the brutality follows the mimicry. Pseudo-Peter adds some further details: ἐτεροι ἐστῶτες ἐνέπτυον αὐτοῦ ταῖς ὅψεσι, καὶ ἄλλοι τὰς σιαγόνας αὐτοῦ ἐράπισαν (cf. Jo. ἐδίδοσαν αὐτῷ ῥάπισμα, and Isa. l. 6): ἐτεροι καλάμῳ ἔνυσσον αὐτόν, καὶ τινες αὐτὸν ἐμάστιζον

εκύνουν αὐτῷ. <sup>20</sup> καὶ ὅτε ἐνέπαιξαν αὐτῷ, ἔξεδυσαν 20 αὐτὸν τὴν πορφύραν καὶ ἐνέδυσαν αὐτὸν τὰ ἱμάτια αὐτοῦ.

<sup>§ L</sup> **§ Kai ἐξάγουσιν αὐτὸν ἵνα σταυρώσωσιν αὐτόν.** <sup>21</sup> καὶ ἀγγαρεύουσιν παράγοντά τινα Σίμωνα Κυρη-

20 οἱ ενεπαιξαν αὐτῷ D | την πορφ.] την χλαμιδα al<sub>perpane</sub> τ. χλαμ. και τ. πορφ. 12 13 69 124 346 604 (1071) syrhier arm (the) | τα υματια αυτου ΒΔΨ] τα υματια D τα μι. τα ιδια ANPΧΓΠΣ min<sup>pl</sup> τα ιδια μι. αυτου Η oscr | εξαγουσιν] αγουσιν Α | αυτον] + εξω Ψ | ια σταυρωσουσιν ACDLNPΔΣ 33 69 al<sub>pane</sub> ωστε σταυρωσαι ι ια σταυρωη 28 131 21 εγγαρευουσιν Η\*Β\* ανγ. D | παραγοντα τινα Σιμ. Κυρ.] τον Σιμ. παραγοντα τον Κυρ. D Σιμ. τον Κυρ. παραγοντα 2<sup>ρd</sup> arm om παραγοντα Η

λέγοντες Ταύτη τῇ τιμῇ τιμίσωμεν τὸν νιὸν τοῦ θεοῦ. Τιθέντες... προσεκ. αὐτῷ: Mt., γονυπετήσαντες ἐμπροσθεν αὐτοῦ ἐνέπαιξαν αὐτῷ. For τιθέναι τὰ γόνατα, Vg. ponere genua = κάμπτειν τὰ γ., γονυπετεῖν, see Lc. xxii. 41, Acts vii. 60.

20. καὶ ὅτε ἐνέπαιξαν αὐτῷ κτλ.] Their humour spent itself, or the time allowed for their savage sport came to an end, or there was no insult left to add (Victor: ἔσχατος ὅπος ὕβρεως τὸ γενόμενον ἦν); accordingly, the *sagum* was taken off and the Lord's own outer clothing restored. Of the crown and the wreath there is no mention, but they were doubtless cast aside when they had served their purpose. The prophecy of x. 34 had now been fulfilled. For ἐκδιδύσκειν τινά τι see Blass, *Gr.* p. 92.

20<sup>b</sup>—22. THE WAY TO THE CROSS (Mt. xxvii. 31<sup>b</sup>—33, Lc. xxiii. 26—33<sup>a</sup>, Jo. xix. 16, 17).

20. καὶ ἐξάγουσιν αὐτὸν κτλ.] ‘They lead Him forth’; cf. Jo, ἐξῆλθεν: Mt., Lc., ἀπήγαγον αὐτόν, but Mt. continues ἐξερχόμενοι δέ. Ἐξάγειν (Αὐτὸν) is usually followed by a reference to the place which is left (cf. e.g. Gen. xi. 31 ἐκ τῆς χώρας τῶν Χαλδαίων, xx. 13 ἐκ τοῦ οἴκου, Num. xix. 3 ἐξω τῆς παρεμβολῆς, 3 Regn. x. (xxi.) 13 ἐξω τῆς πόλεως, Acts xii. 17 ἐκ τῆς φυλακῆς). Here we may supply either ἐξω τοῦ πραιτωρίου or ἐξω τῆς πόλεως,

the latter is supported by Heb. xiii. 12 ἔξω τῆς πύλης ἔπαθεν. No distinct tradition indicates the route: the name of *Via Dolorosa*, given to the lane which crosses the city and leads to the Church of the Holy Sepulchre, appears to be later than the 12th century (Robinson, *Later Researches*, p. 170).

The condemned carried their own crosses to the place of execution; cf. Plutarch, *de ser. Dei vind.*: τῶν κολαζούσενων ἔκαστος τῶν κακούργων ἐκφέρει τὸν αὐτὸν σταυρόν. The Lord accordingly started with this burden upon Him (Jo. βαστάζων αὐτῷ τὸν σταυρὸν ἐκῆλθεν); cf. viii. 34, note. As the ancient commentators point out, there is no inconsistency here between the Fourth Gospel and the Synoptists (Jerome: “intellegendum est quod egrediens de praetorio Iesus ipse portaverit, postea obvium habuerint Simonem cui portandam crucem imposuerint”).

21. καὶ ἀγγαρεύουσιν παράγοντά τινα κτλ.] Mt. ἐξερχόμενοι δὲ εὗρον ἄνθρωπόν τινα. The words suggest that the man came into sight as they issued from the gate. He was on his way from the country (ἀπ' ἀγροῦ, Mc., Lc., cf. εἰς ἀγρόν ‘Mc.’ xvi. 12; the Vg. *de villa* would better represent ἀπὸ τοῦ ἀγροῦ, cf. v. 14, vi. 36, xiii. 16), and was passing by (παράγοντα, cf. i. 16, ii. 14) when the soldiers seized (Lc.,

ναῖον ἐρχόμενον ἀπ' ἀγροῦ, τὸν πατέρα Ἀλεξάνδρου  
22 καὶ Ῥούφου, ἵνα ἄρῃ τὸν σταυρὸν αὐτοῦ. <sup>22</sup>καὶ

21 απ' ακρού Α | ομ και Ρουφου ff

ἐπιλαβόμενοι) and pressed him into their service. Ἄγγαρεύειν, *angariare* (cf. the Aramaic נְגָרָא, Dalman, *Gr.* p. 147), a word of Persian origin; see Herod. viii. 98 τὸν τὸ δράμημα τῶν ἵππων (the service of the royal couriers) καλέουσι Πέρσαι ἄγγαρήμον. Since the Persian ἄγγαροι were impressed, the verb ἄγγαρεύειν was used in reference to compulsory service of any kind. Hatch (*Essays*, p. 37) was able to quote an instance of ἄγγαρεύειν from an Egyptian inscription of A.D. 49; Deissmann (*B. St.* p. 87) has since discovered it in a papyrus of B.C. 252, so that the word had long been established in Egyptian Gk., though it has no place in the LXX.; even the remarkable form ἄγγαρεύειν (see *app. crit.*) finds a parallel in a papyrus of A.D. 340 which has ἄγγαρας (Deissmann, *B. St.* p. 182). Besides this context, in which it is common to Mt., Mc., the verb is used in Mt. v. 41, where compulsory service is clearly intended.

The man's name was Simon (cf. i. 16, note), and he was of Cyrene (Mt., Mc., Lc.). Cyrene received a Jewish settlement in the time of Ptolemy I. (*Jos. c. Ap.* ii. 4; cf. i *Macc.* xv. 23), and the Jews formed an influential section of the inhabitants (*Jos. ant.* xiv. 7, 2). At Jerusalem the name of Cyrene was associated with one of the synagogues (Acts vi. 9), and Jewish inhabitants of Cyrenaica were among the worshippers at the Feast of Pentecost in the year of the Crucifixion (Acts ii. 10), whilst a Lucius of Cyrene appears among the prophets and teachers of the Church of Antioch about A.D. 48 (*ib.* xiii. 1). Whether this Simon had become a resident at Jerusalem, or was a visitor at the Passover (cf. Lc. xxiv. 18), it is impossible to decide. Mc. alone further describes

him as "the father of Alexander and Rufus." An Alexander is mentioned in Acts xix. 33, 1 Tim. i. 20, 2 Tim. iv. 14, but in each case he is an antagonist of St Paul. Rufus has with some probability been identified with the person who is saluted in Rom. xvi. 13; see SH. *ad l.*, who point out that the epithet ἐκλεκτὸν ἐν Κυρίῳ bestowed on the Roman Rufus implies eminence in the Roman Church; to his mother also, who if the identification is correct was probably the wife or widow of Simon, St Paul bears high testimony (τὴν μητέρα αὐτοῦ καὶ ἔμον). If Mc. wrote for Roman Christians, and the sons of Simon were well known at Rome, his reference to Alexander and Rufus is natural enough. In any case it implies that the sons became disciples of repute whose identity would be recognised by the original readers of the Gospel. See further Zahn, *Einl.* ii. p. 251. Origen points out the practical teaching of the incident: "non autem solum Salvatorem conveniebat accipere crucem suam, sed et nos conveniebat portare eam, salutarem nobis angariam adimplentes." An early form of Docetism taught that Simon was crucified instead of Jesus (Iren. i. 24. 4).

ἵνα ἄρῃ τὸν σταυρὸν αὐτοῦ] So Mt.; the use of αἴρειν is perhaps intended to recall viii. 34 (Mt. xvi. 24); Lc. represents Simon as passive in the matter (ἐπέθηκαν αὐτῷ τὸν σταυρὸν φέρειν ὅπισθεν τοῦ Ἰησοῦ).

22. φέρουσιν αὐτὸν ἐπὶ τὸν Γολγοθάν κτλ.] Mt. εἰς τόπον λεγόμενον Γολγοθά, Lc. ἐπὶ τὸν τόπον τὸν καλούμενον Κρανίον, Jo. εἰς τὸν λεγ. Κρανίου τόπον ὃ λέγεται Ἐβραϊστὶ Γολγοθά. The transliteration represents the Aram. נְגָרָא, = Heb. נְגָרָא, translated by

φέρουσιν αὐτὸν ἐπὶ τὸν Γολγοθὰν τόπον, ὃ ἐστιν  
μεθερμηνευόμενον Κρανίου τόπος.

<sup>23</sup> Καὶ ἐδίδουν αὐτῷ ἐσμυρνισμένον οἶνον, ὃς δὲ 23 ΤΝ

22 φέρουσιν] αγουσιν D 13 69 846 2<sup>o</sup> latte<sup>exc</sup>k (perducunt, adducunt, duxerunt) | Γολγοθαν ΝBFGK(L)MNSUVΓΔ min<sup>satmu</sup>] Γολγοθα AC\*DEHPXII min<sup>satmu</sup> | om τοπον Α\* c | μεθερμηνευομενον ΑΒΝΣ 23 εδιδουν αυτω διδουσιν αυτω (Ψ) 2<sup>o</sup>+πιειν AC<sup>2</sup>D (πιειν) ΡΧΓΠΣ min<sup>omn</sup> c ff k vg syrr<sup>peshchel hier</sup> the go aeth | os δε ΝΒΓ\*vid Σ 33] ο δε ACLPXR<sup>2</sup>ΔΠΨ min<sup>fereomn</sup> και D i ff k n vg+γευσαμενος G i

κρανίου in Jud. ix. 53, 4 Regn. ix. 35; for the form Γολγοθάν (Mc. only), cf. Βηθσαδάν vi. 45, viii. 22 (W.H., Notes, p. 160, W.Schm., p. 63 f.). Κρανίου τόπος (Vg. *calvariae locus*, whence the ‘Calvary’ of the English versions in Lc.) answers precisely to Γολγοθάς, and enabled the Greek reader to picture to himself the low skull-shaped mound (see Meyer-Weiss on Mt. xxvii. 32) where crucifixions were wont to take place. A curious legend connected the *calvariae locus* with the burial place of Adam’s skull, and with the saying in Eph. v. 14; see Jerome on Mt. xxvii., who wisely remarks: “favorabilis interpretatio...neq; tamen vera.” The place seems to have been known in the fourth century (Eus. *onom.* ὃς καὶ δείκνυται ἐν Αἰδίᾳ πρὸς τοὺς Βορείους τοῦ Σιών ὄρους. Cyril. Hier. *cat.* xiii. ὁ Γολγοθᾶς...μέχρι σῆμερον φανόμενος. Silv. *peregr.* p. 54 “in ecclesia maiore quae appellatur Martyrio quae est in Golgotha”). From Jo. we learn that, though outside the walls (*v.* 20, note), it was near the city (Jo. xix. 20), apparently among the gardens or paradises of the wealthier inhabitants (*ib.* 41). It seems to have been ascertained that the present Church of the Holy Sepulchre is beyond the second of the ancient walls (*Encycl. Bibl.* ii. 1753, 2430). But a knoll near *Jeremiah’s Grotto* and the road to Damascus is by some recent investigators regarded as the true site, and the question as a whole is still *sub iudice*; for a brief discussion of the various theories see Smith

B. D.<sup>2</sup> p. 1655. On ὃ ἐστιν μεθ. see v. 41, note. Mc.’s φέρουσιν has been thought to imply that the Lord needed support; cf. i. 32, ii. 3, and contrast Heb. i. 3. But the word may mean simply to lead, as a prisoner to execution or a victim to the sacrifice: cf. Jo. xxi. 18, Acts xiv. 13.

23—32. THE CRUCIFIXION AND FIRST THREE HOURS ON THE CROSS (Mt. xxvii. 34—44, Lc. xxiii. 33<sup>b</sup>—43, Jo. xix. 18—26).

23. καὶ ἐδίδουν αὐτῷ κτλ.] The ‘conative imperfect’ (Burton, § 23) prepares the reader for the refusal by which the offer was met; Mt., less precisely, ἔδωκαν. A draught of *οἶνος ἐσμυρνισμένος* (Vg. *murratum vinum*), wine drugged with myrrh, was usually offered to condemned malefactors (J. Lightfoot on Mt. xxvii. 34, Wünsche, p. 354; cf. *Sanhedr.* 43. 1), through the charity, it is said, of the women of Jerusalem (cf. Lc. xxiii. 27 ff.), the intention being to deaden the sense of pain: cf. Prov. xxiv. 74 =xxxi. 6 δίδοτε μέθην τοῖς ἐν λύπαις, καὶ οἶνον πίνειν τοῖς ἐν ὀδύναις. Mt. describes the potion as *οἶνον μετὰ χολῆς μεμιγμένον*, perhaps with a mental reference to Ps. Ixviii. (lxix.) 22, Lam. iii. 15; as Cyril (*cat.* xiii. 29) points out, gall and myrrh possess a common property (*χολώδης δὲ καὶ κατάπικρος ἡ σμύρνα*), and Mt. with the prophecy in view may have described the myrrh as *χολή*. Ps. Peter (c. 5) confuses this draught of drugged wine which was refused with the *posca* (*infra*, *v.* 36) which was accepted,

24 οὐκ ἔλαβεν. <sup>24</sup>καὶ σταυροῦσιν αὐτὸν καὶ διαμερίζονται τὰ ἱμάτια αὐτοῦ, βάλλοντες κλῆρον ἐπ' αὐτὰ

24 σταυροῦσιν BLΨ c d ff h arm aegg aeth] σταυρωσαντες (om και 2<sup>o</sup>) ΣACDPX ΓΔΠΣ min<sup>nonn</sup> vid n vg syrr<sup>peshchel(txt)</sup> go | διεμεριζοντο (vel -σαντο) vel -σαν Σ 69 124 604 1071 al<sup>nonn</sup> (k) syrr arm | βαλοντες KLMV min<sup>nonn</sup>

and mistakes the purpose of both offers. On the other hand Burgon-Miller, *Traditional Text*, p. 253, with equal improbability regard the οἶνον (or ὅξος, as they read) μ. χ. as distinct from the οἶνον ἐσμ. The answer of Macarius Magnes (ii. 17) to a pagan objector indicates the true line of defence for the Christian apologist in such cases: ἄλλος ἄλλως εἰπόντες [οἱ εὐαγγελισταὶ] τὴν ἱστορίαν οὐκ ἔθειραν. Σμυρνίζειν, ‘to drug with myrrh,’ appears to be ἄπ. λεγ.; the verb occurs elsewhere as an intrans., ‘to resemble myrrh.’ On the use of aromatic wines see Pliny, *H. N.* xiv. 15, 19. The Lord tasted the mixture (Mt.), but declined to drink it; He had need of the full use of His human faculties, and the pain which was before Him belonged to the cup which the Father’s Will had appointed (xiv. 36 ff.), of which He would abate nothing. For ὃς δέ without a preceding ὃς μέν, cf. Jo. v. 11, and see *app. crit.*

24. καὶ σταυροῦσιν αὐτόν] Mc. keeps the realistic present through nearly the whole of this context (20 ἔξαγονσιν, 21 ἀγγαρεύονσιν, 22 φέρονσιν, 24 διαμερίζονται, 24, 27 σταυροῦσιν). The process of crucifixion is sufficiently described in the Bible Dictionaries *s. vv. cross, crucifixion*, which may also be consulted for the bibliography of the subject. The Lord’s Hands were nailed to the *patibulum* (Jo. xx. 20, 25, *Ev. Petr.* 6); whether the Feet were also nailed does not appear, though Christian writers from Justin (*dial.* 97) downwards have affirmed it, influenced perhaps by Ps. xxi. (xxii.) 17. The

work was done by the soldiers on duty (Jo. xix. 23), but the guilt lay at the door of the Jewish people (Acts ii. 23 διὰ χειρὸς ἀνόμων προσπήξαντες ἀνειλατε, *ib.* 36 ὃν ὑμεῖς ἐσταυρώσατε, cf. I Thess. ii. 15, Apoc. i. 7).

καὶ διαμερίζονται τὰ ἱμάτια αὐτοῦ κτλ.] The Lord’s clothing, which had been removed before crucifixion (cf. Col. ii. 15), is now divided by the quaternion of soldiers on duty (Jo. xix. 23 ἐποίησαν τέσσαρα μέρη, ἐκάστῳ στρατιώτῃ μέρος); for the woven seamless *χιτών* (ἄραφος...ὑφαντός) they cast lots. St John, who was an eyewitness, recollects the exact procedure, and, whether consciously or not, corrects the impression which the Synoptists convey, that the whole was distributed by lot; the Fourth Gospel also alone supplies the reference to Ps. xxi. (xxii.) 19, which must have been in the minds of all; the words received a striking fulfilment at the death of the Son of David, whatever may have been their primary meaning (cf. Cheyne, *Bk. of Psalms*, p. 64). Ps. Peter draws a remarkable picture of the scene: τεθεικότες τὰ ἐνδύματα ἐμπροσθεν αὐτοῦ διεμερίσαντο, καὶ λαχμὸν ἐβαλον ἐπ’ αὐτοῖς. The lot was perhaps cast with dice which they had brought to pass the time; the game known as *πλειστοβολίνδα* may be intended, cf. D. Heinsii *exerc. ad Nonn. paraphr.* p. 507. Ἐπ’ αὐτά, cf. ἐπὶ τὸν ἱματιόν, Ps. xxi. l.c.; the clothing was the object to which the lottery was directed (WM., p. 508; cf. v. 21, vi. 34, x. 11). *Tis τι ἄρη,* Vg. *quis quid tolleret*, a blending of two interrogative sentences (*tis* ἄρη; *τι* ἄρη;) familiar in class. Gk., but rare in the

τίς τί ἄρη. <sup>25</sup> ήν δὲ ὥρα τρίτη καὶ ἐσταύρωσαν 25  
αὐτόν. <sup>26</sup> καὶ ἦν ἡ ἐπιγραφὴ τῆς αἰτίας αὐτοῦ 26  
ἐπιγεγραμμένη 'Ο βασιλεὺς τῶν Ἰουδαίων. <sup>27</sup> καὶ 27

<sup>24</sup> om. τις τι αρη D min<sup>perpeanc</sup> k n syr<sup>sin</sup>  
AC<sup>\*</sup>KII<sup>\*</sup> min<sup>pauac</sup>] ωρα εκτη k<sup>scr2</sup> syr<sup>hcl(mng)</sup> aeth | και] οτε 13 69 124 346 556 1071  
syr<sup>pesh</sup> | εσταυρωσαν] εφυλασσον D ff kn r <sup>25</sup> ωρα τριτη (ωρα γ D τρ. ωρα  
ουτος εστιν D (33) syrr<sup>sin pesh</sup> go pr hic est Iesus c+ουτος 33 1071

N.T.; cf. Lc. xix. 15 in cod. A (*ἴνα γνῷ τίς τί διεπραγματεύσατο*) and see Blass, *Gr.* p. 173, Field, *Notes*, p. 43 f.

25. *ἥν δὲ ὥρα τρίτη καὶ κτλ.*] ‘Now it was the third hour when they crucified him’—a note of time in which *ἐσταύρωσαν* looks back to *σταυροῦσιν* (v. 24), and *καὶ* coordinates (Blass, *Gr.* p. 262; cf. *app. crit.*) the arrival of the hour with the act. This mention of the third hour is peculiar to Mc., and appears to be inconsistent with Jo. xix. 14. Attempts were early made to remove the difficulty either by changing *τρίτη* into *ἕκτη* (cf. *Acta Pil. ap.* Tisch. *Ev. apocr.* 283 f.: ἀνεβίβασαν αὐτὸν καὶ ἐκάρφωσαν ἐν τῷ σταυρῷ ὅρα ἕκτη: Ps. Hier. *brev. in Ps.* lxxvii., who suggests that *τρίτη* has arisen out of a confusion between *F* and *G*), or by less satisfactory methods (cf. e.g. Aug. *cons. ev.* iii. 42 “intellegitur ergo fuisse hora tertia cum clamaverunt Judaei ut Dominus crucifigeretur, et veracissime demonstratur tunc eos crucifixisse quando clamaverunt”). The problem cannot be said to have been solved yet; Bp. Westcott’s contention that St John followed the modern Western reckoning, so that his *ώρα ἕκτη*=6 a.m., has been considerably shaken by recent research (see Prof. Ramsay in *Exp.* iv. vii. p. 216, v. iii. p. 457, and cf. A. Wright, *N. T. problems*, p. 147 ff.). It may be noticed that while Jo. is perhaps intentionally vague (*ώς ἕκτη*), Mc. is precise. In Jerusalem there could be no uncertainty about the principal divisions of the day (cf. Acts ii. 15, iii. 1), even if the intermediate hours were not strictly noted.

26. *καὶ ἦν ἡ ἐπιγραφή κτλ.*] Another detail which Mc. stops to note. The cross bore an inscription (*ἐπιγραφή*, xii. 16), setting forth the charge on which the Crucified had been condemned (for *αἰτία*, Vg. *causa*, cf. Ar. *Ach.* 285 f. X.O. σὲ μὲν οὖν καταλέγομεν... ΔΙ. ἀντὶ ποιας αἰτίας; and *Acts* xiii. 28, xxv. 18). The technical name for this record was *titulus* (*τίτλος*, Jo.): the board (*σανίς*) on which it was written was carried before the criminal or affixed to him (*Suet. Calig.* 32 “praecedente titulo qui causam paenae indicaret”). Other examples of *tituli* remain; e.g. Suetonius (*Domit.* 10) mentions a sufferer who bore the inscription *IMPIE · LOCVTVS*, and the Viennese letter in Eus. *H. E.* v. 1 speaks of a martyr who was preceded in the amphitheatre by a board on which was apparently inscribed *HIC · EST · ATTALVS · CHRESTIANVS* (*πίνακος αὐτὸν προάγοντος ἐν φεγγέραπτο Ρωμαιστί Οὐτός ἐστιν* “*Ατταλος ὁ Χριστιανός*”). The title on the Lord’s cross was written by Pilate in Aramaic and Greek, as well as in the official Latin (Jo.), so as to be intelligible to all Jews—Hellenists from the provinces as well as any Palestinians who were not bilingual. The text of the inscription as given by the Evangelists varies remarkably (*ὁ βασιλεὺς τῶν Ἰουδαίων* (Mc.), *ὁ β. τ. Ι. οὐτός* (Lc.), *οὗτός ἐστιν Ἰησοῦς ὁ β. τ.* *Ι. (Mt.)*, *Ἰησοῦς ὁ Ναζωραῖος ὁ β. τ.* *Ι. (Jo.)*). The words *ὁ βασιλεὺς τῶν Ἰουδαίων*, on which all agree, form the *αἰτία*; it was usual to prefix the name, and we may accept the evidence of St John, who saw the *titulus*,

§ 7 σὺν αὐτῷ σταυροῦσιν δύο λῃστάς, § ἔνα ἐκ δεξιῶν καὶ  
29 ἔνα ἐξ εὐωνύμων αὐτοῦ. 29 καὶ οἱ παραπορευόμενοι  
έβλασφήμουν αὐτὸν κινοῦντες τὰς κεφαλὰς αὐτῶν καὶ

27 σὺν αὐτῷ σταυροῦσιν δύο λῃστας] συνσταυρουσιν δ. λ. Δ σὺν αὐτῷ εσταυρωσαν δ.  
λ. B c d ff k n syr<sup>pesh</sup> go σὺν αὐτῷ σταυρουνται β λῃσται D\* (λῃστας Deorr) | αυτου] om  
C3D 1 2<sup>ro</sup> 7<sup>ro</sup> alpau<sup>e</sup> cf k n + (28) και επληρωθη η γραφη η λεγονσα και μετα των ανομων  
ελογισθη EFG(H)KLMPsu(V)ΓΔΙΙΣΤ<sup>12</sup> 13 69 604 alp<sup>l</sup> ff n r vg syrr<sup>pesh</sup> hier arm (me)  
go aeth (om ΝΑΒC\*,<sup>3</sup>DXΨ min<sup>satmu</sup> k syr<sup>sin</sup> the) 29 παραπορευομενοι] παραγοντες  
E Eus

that the local designation was added. The Latin text therefore may probably have been—with or without a preliminary *hic est—IESVS • NAZARENVS • REX • IVDAEORVM*. In the last two words the grim irony of Pilate is apparent; Ps. Peter misses their point by representing the inscription as the work of the Jews, and reading Οὐτός ἐστιν ὁ βασιλεὺς τοῦ Ἰσραὴλ (see v. 2, note).

27. καὶ σὺν αὐτῷ σταυροῦσιν κτλ.] The two had been His companions on the way to Golgotha (Lc.), and were now hanging one on either side of Him (Jo. ἐσταύρωσαν...ἄλλους δύο, ἐντεῦθεν καὶ ἐντεῦθεν, μέσον δὲ τὸν Ἰησοῦν); to St John the spectacle may well have recalled words spoken by Jesus not many weeks before (Mc. x. 37 ff.). Viewed in the light of Luke's narrative (xxiii. 39 ff.) it reminds the reader also of Mt. xxv. 39; the Cross which divides the penitent from the obdurate anticipates the θρόνος δόξης. Λῃστάς, so Mt.; Lc., κακούργους. They were outlaws and doubtless desperate men (cf. xi. 17, xiv. 48, Lc. x. 30, Jo. x. 1, 2 Cor. xi. 26); possibly they had been members of the band led by Barabbas (Trench, *Studies*, p. 293). Yet the λῃστής might be of very different moral calibre from the κλέπτης—one who had been driven into crime by the circumstances of his life or of the times. It may be assumed that this was so in the case of the penitent. Nearness to Christ (ὁ ἐγγύς μου ἐγγύς

τοῦ πυρός) revealed his latent capacity for a nobler life as well as the malignity of his comrade. The secondary uncials (see *app. crit.*) add a reference to Isa. liii. 12, borrowed perhaps from Lc. xxii. 37, which Burges-Miller (*Causes of Corruption*, p. 75 ff.) vigorously defend; but see WH., *Notes*, p. 27. As Alford points out, it is not after Mc.'s manner to adduce prophetic testimony. A curious gloss in the O. L. ms. c supplies the names of the λῃσταί: "unum a dextris nomine Zoathan et alium a sinistris nomine Chammatha." In the Acts of Pilate (ed. Tisch.<sup>2</sup> pp. 245, 308) they are *Dysmas* and *Gestas*, in the Arabic Gospel of the Infancy (p. 184), *Titus* and *Dumachus* (*Θεομάχος*), while l gives *Ioathas* and *Maggatras*; see Thilo, *cod. apocr. N. T. i.* pp. 143, 580, Wordsworth and White *ad l.* and on Lc. xxiii. 32, and cf. Nestle, *T. C.* p. 266.

29. καὶ οἱ παραπορευόμενοι κτλ.] Either country folk on their way to the city (cf. v. 21), or citizens whose business called them into the country (Lc. xxiv. 13). Neither class would have much knowledge of Jesus beyond hearsay, and common report credited him with dangerous fanaticism. Οἱ παραπορευόμενοι, מִרְבָּעַת, cf. Isa. li. 23, Thren. ii. 15 πάντες οἱ παραπ. ὄδὸν...ἐκίνησαν τὴν κεφαλὴν αὐτῶν: the Evangelists seem to have specially in view Ps. xxi. (xxii.) 8 πάντες οἱ θεωροῦντες με ἐξεμυκτήρισάν με (cf. Lc.), ἐλάλησαν ἐν χείλεσιν, ἐκίνησαν κεφαλήν.

λέγοντες Οὐά ὁ καταλύων τὸν ναὸν καὶ οἰκοδομῶν ἐν τρισὶν ἡμέραις, <sup>30</sup> σῶσον σεαυτὸν καταβὰς ἀπὸ τοῦ 30 σταυροῦ. <sup>31</sup> ὄμοίως καὶ οἱ ἀρχιερεῖς ἐμπαίζοντες 31 πρὸς ἀλλήλους μετὰ τῶν γραμματέων ἔλεγον Ἀλλοις ἔσωσεν, ἑαυτὸν οὐ δύναται σῶσαι <sup>32</sup> ὁ χριστὸς ὁ 32 βασιλεὺς Ἰσραὴλ καταβάτω νῦν ἀπὸ τοῦ σταυροῦ,

<sup>29</sup> οὐαὶ (οὐαὶ min<sup>pau</sup> Eus)] om Νe.sL\*ΔΨ d k | om εὐ ADPV min<sup>permu</sup>, <sup>30</sup> καταβαὶ ΝBDLΔΨ k l n vg me] καὶ καταβα (-βηθι) AC(P)ΧΓΠΣ min<sup>pl</sup> <sup>31</sup> ομοίως] om D 238 c ff k n + δε C<sup>3</sup>M<sup>2</sup> almu the | πρὸς αλλῆλους (εἰς αλλ. D 2<sup>ρο</sup> Eus)] om 13 28 69 alpau c k <sup>32</sup> ο χριστος] pr ει 1071 | Ισραὴλ] pr του ACPΧΓΣ min<sup>pl</sup> aegg Eus + εστιν 1071 | καταβα L

\*Εβλασφήμουν...κινοῦντες τὰς κεφ.: they spared neither words nor gestures of derision; cf. (besides the passages cited above) 4 Regn. xix. 21, Job xvi. 5, Sir. xiii. 7.

οὐά ὁ καταλύων κτλ.] Οὐά, *ra*, *vah*, expresses admiration, real or ironical, not, as *οὐαί*, commiseration; e.g. οὐά Αὔγουστε (Dio Cass.), ἐπαίνεσόν με, εἴπε μοι Οὐά καὶ Θαυμαστώς (Arrian), ‘vah homo impudens’ (Plaut.). On ὁ καταλύων κτλ. see xiv. 58, note: with the construction cf. Lc. vi. 25 οὐαὶ ὑμῖν οἱ ἐμπειλησμένοι, Apoc. xviii. 10, 16 οὐαὶ οὐαὶ ἡ πόλις ἡ μεγάλη...ἡ περιβεβλημένη. Σῶσον σεαυτόν: in Mt. the ground of this raillery appears (*εἰ viōς εἰ τοῦ θεοῦ*); the Sanhedrists had spread the report of the Lord’s answer to the question of Caiaphas (xiv. 61 f.). The jest was the harder to endure since it appealed to a consciousness of power held back only by the self-restraint of a sacrificed will. Hilary: “non erat difficile de cruce descendere, sed sacramentum erat paternae voluntatis explendum.”

31. ὄμοίως καὶ οἱ ἀρχιερεῖς κτλ.] The Sanhedrists condescended to share the savage sport of the populace; members of the priestly aristocracy were seen in company with scribes and elders (Mt.) deriding the Sufferer, not indeed directly addressing Him, or mingling with the crowd, but remarking to one another (*πρὸς ἀλλῆλους*) on His in-

ability to save Himself. \*Ἐσωσεν...σῶσαι: the verb is used in two shades of meaning: ‘He saved others from disease, He cannot save Himself from dying’; or with Justin we may understand ἔσωσεν in reference to Lazarus (*ap. i. 38 ὁ νεκρὸς ἀνεγέρπας ρύσασθω ἑαυτόν*). Even in the act of mocking, they bear witness to the truth of His miraculous powers. The Lord had not claimed the character of a *σωτήρ*, as His frequent saying ἡ πλοτίσι σου σέσωκέν σε shews; but the fact that His touch or word gave new life to men was nevertheless notorious. It could not be denied, though it might be discredited or used against Him.

32. ὁ χριστὸς ὁ βασιλεὺς κτλ.] Mt. βασ. Ἰσραὴλ ἔστιν· καταβάτω κτλ., Lc. εἰ οὐτός ἔστιν ὁ χριστὸς τοῦ θεοῦ ὁ ἐκλεκτός. Unable to induce Pilate to remove or alter the *τίτλος*, they give their own complexion to it, substituting *Ισραὴλ* for *τῶν Ιουδαίων*, and explaining ὁ βασ. by ὁ χριστός, or ὁ ἐκλεκτός. If He will even now (*νῦν*) substantiate His claim of Messiahship by a miracle wrought in His own behalf, they profess themselves ready to believe (Mt. καὶ πιστεύσομεν ἐπ’ αὐτόν; with Mc.’s ἵνα ἴδ. καὶ πιστ. cf. Jo. iv. 48, vi. 30); to which Jerome well replies: “resurrexit et non credidistis; ergo si etiam de cruce descendederet, similiter non crederetis.”

¶ syr<sup>hier</sup>  
¶ r  
¶ the  
§ i 33      *ίνα ἴδωμεν καὶ πιστεύσωμεν. τὸν καὶ οἱ συνεσταυρωμένοι σὺν αὐτῷ ὥνείδιζον αὐτόν.*

33 *Καὶ γενομένης ὥρας ἔκτης ὁ σκότος ἐγένετο ἐφ'*

32 πιστευσωμεν] + αυτω C<sup>3</sup>DFGHM\*PV<sup>2</sup>ΓΠ<sup>2</sup>Σ min<sup>satmu</sup> c ff k l n syrpesh arm the aeth Eus | συν αυτω] om συν ACPXΓΔΠΣ min<sup>omnvid</sup> (hab ΝBL) μετ αυτου Ψ om D 33 και γεν.] γεν. δε ACEFHKUVXΓΠ min<sup>pl</sup> | εφ ολης της γης D min<sup>perpaue</sup> Eus om syrsin

In Mt. they proceed with strange obtuseness to quote Ps. xxii. 8 (cf. Edersheim, *Life*, ii. p. 718).

καὶ οἱ συνεσταυρωμένοι κτλ.] So Mt.; Lc. εἰς δὲ τῶν κρεμασθέντων κακούργων ἐβλασφήμει αὐτόν. The traditions are distinct but not inconsistent; the pl. in Mt. Mc. is used with sufficient accuracy if one of the two spoke, at least for the time, on behalf of both (cf. Mt. viii. 28 ff., xx. 30 ff., with the corresponding accounts in Mc., Lc.). Lc.'s fuller statement explains ὥνείδιζον: in the mouth of the ληστῆς the raillery which he had borrowed from the crowd became a reproach; the Lord professed to have power to save His fellow-sufferers as well as Himself (*σεαυτὸν καὶ ήμᾶς*), and would not use it.

It is interesting to note that συνεσταυροῦσθαι, used of the λησταί by Mt. Mc. Jo., is applied by St Paul (Rom. vi. 6, Gal. ii. 20) to the sharing of the Cross by the members of Christ in Baptism.

33—37. THE LAST THREE HOURS ON THE CROSS (Mt. xxvii. 45—50, Lc. xxiii. 44—45<sup>a</sup>, 46, Jo. xix. 28—30).

33. γενομένης ὥρας ἔκτης κτλ.] Lc. ἦν ἡδη ὥσει ὥρα ἔκτη, but the use of ὥσει with numerals is characteristic of the Third Gospel and the Acts (cf. Lc. iii. 23, ix. 14, 28, xxii. 59, Acts i. 15, ii. 41, x. 3, xix. 7). Mt., like Mc., speaks definitely (ἀπὸ ἔκτης ὥρας); cf. *Ev. Petr.* 5 ἦν δὲ μεσημβρία. Ps. Peter is doubtless right in interpreting ὅλην τὴν γῆν as Judaea (*σκότος κατέσχε πάσαν τὴν Γην*; cf. Origen,

"tantummodo super omnem terram Iudeam"). Though the phrase is usually employed in a wider sense (cf. e.g. Gen. i. 26, xi. 9, Ps. xxxii. (xxxiii.) 8, Lc. xxi. 35, Apoc. xiii. 3), the compilers of the original tradition had probably in view the limited darkness of Exod. x. 22 (ἐγένετο σκότος...ἐπὶ πᾶσαν γῆν Αἴγυπτον τρεῖς ἡμέρας), and in adopting the words thought only of the land of Israel. Lc. explains that the darkness which fell on the land at the Crucifixion was due to a failure of the sun's light (ἐκλείποντος τοῦ ἡλίου); in *Acta Pilati* (ed. Tisch., p. 234), the Jews, in defiance of astronomy, attribute it to an ordinary eclipse (ἐκλείψις τοῦ ἡλίου γέγονεν κατὰ τὸ εἰωθός)—an event which, as Origen points out, could not have occurred at the time of the Paschal full moon. On the obscuration of the sun's light mentioned by Phlegon see Orig. in *Mt.*, c. *Cels.* ii. 33. Irenaeus (iv. 33. 12) refers to Amos viii. 9 (δύσεται ὁ ἡλιος μεσημβρίας); acc. to Ps. Peter, men went about with lamps, supposing that the sun had set and it was already night. The original account (Mt. Mc.) seems to be satisfied by the hypothesis of an extraordinary gloom due to natural causes and coinciding with the last three hours of the Passion. The purpose of the darkness was variously explained by the Gk. and Latin fathers; cf. Cyril. Hier.: ἐξελιπεν ὁ ἡλιος διὰ τὸν τῆς δικαιοσύνης ἡλιον: Jerome: "videtur mihi clarissimum lumen mundi...retraxisse radios ne...pendentem videret Dominum"; Leo:

ὅλην την γῆν ἔως ὥρας ἑνάτη. Καὶ τῇ ἑνάτῃ ὥρᾳ 34<sup>ο</sup> οἱ βόστεν οἱ Ἰησοῦς φυνή μεγάλη Σλωί εἰσι λαμὰ σιβυχταῖς; οἱ εστίν μεθεπικηνόμουνον Ο θεός μου ο θεός μου. εἴ τι ἐγκατέλιπτό με; Καὶ τινες τῶν 35

In fine, Iudaei, cuncti et iusta sententiam tulit"; Victor: γέγονεν οὐτε προνομή τὸν Ἰησοῦν ἐξ οὐρανοῦ

34 τῇ ἑάρᾳ ὥρᾳ ἐβόησεν ὁ Λεωνίδης.  
The only word uttered on the Cross which finds a place in the earliest tradition as given by Mt. Mac. for the other six recorded words see  
Lc. xxiii. 34 (WH, Notes, p. 67 f.),  
43, 46; Jo. xix. 26, 28, 30. The present word shares with the final one (v. 37, Lc. xxiii. 46), the distinction of having been spoken in a loud voice—a cry or shout (*ἐβόησεν*) rather than like the Latin ordinary sayings of Mt. xxvii. 46, a calm and measured utterance. The cry is given by both Gospels in the traditional form εὐαγγελικῶς εἶπεν Ἰησοῦς οὐαὶ λαῷ (Mt. λεπτά, σαζανθεῖται = צְדִקָּתֶךָ אַלְכָה תְּלַבֵּד אַלְכָה) where the Hebrew vocalization of the first word has taken the place of the pure Aramaic צְדִיקָה. Diction. Gr. p. 123, n., Worte i. p. 42 f., Koester, p. 11, etc., according to the Head of Ps. xxii. 1 (צְדִיקָה לֹא תְּלַבֵּד תְּלַבֵּד): for the root צְדִיקָה, Syr. تَلَبِّد, see Dan. iv. 12, 20, 25, where it is rendered by ἀφένει (LXX), ἀφ (Th.). On the form

which cod. D substitutes for σα-  
βαχθανέι and the rendering ὥνειδοςάς  
με, see the next note. Both Mt.  
and Mc. append a version which is  
practically that of the LXX. (ὁ θεός  
μου ὁ θεός μου...ίνα τί ἐγκατέλιπτες με;),  
but omit the words πρόσχες μοι which  
have nothing corresponding to them  
in the M. T. and apparently were  
not represented in the Heb. text  
of our Lord's time (Jerome *ad l.*:  
“intende mihi in hebraeis codicibus  
non habetur et adpositum vox Domini  
declarat quae illud etiam in evangelio  
praetermisit”; in Hexaplaric MSS.  
the words are obelised, cf. Field,  
*Hexapla*, *ad l.*) The remarkable  
rendering in *Ez. Petr.* (ἡ δύναμις  
μου ἡ δύναμις κατέλειψάς με) seems  
to presuppose the ‘Western’ reading  
ἡλεί ἡλεί, and to treat נְאַס as נְעַנְן  
(‘BDB’, p. 43); cf. Aq. ἰσχυρέ μου ἰσχ.  
etc. with the remarks of Eusebius,  
d. e., p. 494.

35. καὶ τινὲς τῶν ἐστηκότων κτλ.] The remark was probably meant for banter, cf. n. 31 f. On the connexion in Jewish thought of Elijah with the Messiah see vi. 15, viii. 28, ix. 11 f., notes; Elijah was moreover regarded as a deliverer in time

¶ P ἐστηκότων ἀκούσαντες ἔλεγον Ἰδε Ἡλείαν φωνεῖ. ¶  
36 δραμῶν δέ τις γεμίσας σπόγγον ὅξους περιθεὶς

35 εστηκοτων B] εκει εστηκοτων A παρεστωτων NDV 33 2<sup>pe</sup> al<sup>nonn</sup> παρεστηκοτων CLNPΨ min<sup>pl</sup> | ιδε(ειδε) ΝΒFLUΔΨ 13 33 69 (1071) alpaue] ιδου AEGHMNPSVΓΣΤ min<sup>pl</sup> οτι ιδου ΚΠ minpaue οτι C 2<sup>pe</sup> minpaue syr<sup>sin</sup> arm<sup>zoh</sup> om D 60<sub>4</sub> c k syrbesh arm<sup>cod</sup> Eus | φωνει]+ουτος D c ff 36 δραμων δε...λεγων] και δραμοντες εγεμισαν σπ. οξ. και περιθεντες καλ. εποτιξον αυτ. λεγοντες 13 69 124 346 | τις ΝBLΔΨ] εις ACDNΠΓΣ min<sup>omnvid</sup> latt go+και ΝACDNΠΓΔΠΣ<sup>7</sup> min<sup>omnvid</sup> (om BLΨ c) | γεμισας] πλησας D 60<sub>4</sub> 2<sup>pe</sup> | περιθεις] επιθεις D+τε ACPXΓΔΠΣ min<sup>pl</sup> pr και i (69) alpaue (om ΝBDLΨ 33 67 1071 2<sup>pe</sup> me go)

of trouble, cf. Wünsche, p. 356. It would seem that the word which was taken for an invocation of Elijah (אֱלֹהִים, הַלְאָה) must have been לְאָה, not לְהַאָה or הַלְאָה, and this consideration has led Resch (*Paralleltexte*, p. 357 f.; but cf. Dalman, *Worte*, i. p. 43) to the conclusion that the Lord cited the words of the Psalm in Heb., and that the remarkable form ζαφθανεί in cod. D represents the Heb. נְחַפֵּעַ; cf. Chase, *Syro-Latin Text*, p. 106 f., who suggests נְחַפֵּעַ for which he thinks D's ωνείδισάς με may be an equivalent. The problem is discussed further by König and Nestle in *Exp. T.* xi. pp. 237 f., 287 f., 334 ff., but with no assured result. It is remarkable that in Macarius Magnes the objector knew both ωνείδισάς and ἐγκατέλιπτες and regarded them as distinct utterances: ὁ δέ...ἴνα τί με ἐγκατέλιπτες; ὁ δέ...εἰς τί ωνείδισάς με; In Mt. the T. R. reads ήλι while retaining σαβαθανί; cf. Epiph. haer. lxix. 68 cited by Resch: λέγων 'ήλι ήλι' Εβραικῇ τῇ λέξει...καὶ οὐκέτι Εβραικῇ ἀλλὰ Συριακῇ διαλέκτῳ 'λημὰ σαβαθανί.' On ἐστηκότων see ix. 1 note.

36. δραμῶν δέ κτλ.] The three accounts of this incident vary considerably; St John's, as we might expect, is the fullest and probably it is also the most exact. Near the Cross there lay a vessel full of sour wine (*σκεῦος ἔκειτο ὅξους μεστόν*, Jo.), the ὅξος ἔξ οἴνου of Num. vi. 1, which was the or-

dinary drink of labourers in the field (Ruth ii. 14), and of the lower class of soldiers (Plutarch, *Cato maior*, p. 336 ὅδωρ δ ἔπινεν ἐπὶ τῆς στρατείας, πλὴν εἴποτε διψήσας περιφλεγώς ὅξος γήτησεν), and known by them as *posca* (Plaut. *mil.* iii. 2. 25, *trucul.* ii. 7. 48); on this occasion it had probably been brought by the quaternion on guard, and acc. to Lc. (xxiii. 36) a drink of it had already been offered by them to Christ in derision. The Lord, who had refused the drugged wine at the beginning of His sufferings, now exclaimed 'I thirst'; upon which one of the by-standers (*τις*, Mc., εἰς ἔξ αὐτῶν, Mt.) ran to the wine jar, and gave Him drink. The sponge is mentioned here only in Biblical Gk., but it is mentioned by Gk. writers from Homer (*Od.* i. 111) downwards, and must have been familiar in countries bordering on the Mediterranean. The reed on which the sponge was raised (Mt., Mc.) is described by Jo. as 'hyssop,' a plant prescribed by the Law for use in certain ritual acts (Lev. xiv. 4 ff., Num. xix. 6 ff.; cf. Ps. l. (li). 9, Heb. ix. 19 ff.). Υσσωπος represents the Heb. בְּזָבֵן, a wall-plant, acc. to 1 Kings iv. 33, and therefore not of great size; but a stalk three or four feet in length would probably have sufficed to reach the lips of the Crucified. On the identification of the plant see the Bible Dictionaries s.v., and Tristram, *N. H.*, p. 457 f., who inclines to the caper (*Capparis spinosa*).

καλάμῳ ἐπότιζεν αὐτόν, λέγων Ἀφετε ἵδωμεν εἰ  
ἔρχεται § Ἡλείας καθελεῖν αὐτόν. 37 ὁ δὲ Ἰησοῦς ἀφεὶς 37 § q  
φωνὴν μεγάλην ἔξεπνευσεν. ¶

¶ P

36 ομ εποτιζεν αυτον λεγων D | αφετε] αφεις NDV 1 13 69 604 2<sup>pe</sup> al<sup>nonn</sup> cikn<sup>rid</sup>  
arm<sup>zoh</sup> go

*nosa*). The stem stripped of its thorns passed for a reed, but St John, who stood by the Cross and paid close attention to everything (Jo. xix. 25, 35), remembered that it belonged to the hyssop. For περιθεῖναι τινί τι, 'to put upon,' cf. Prov. vii. 3, 1 Cor. xii. 23, and *supra*, v. 17; the phrase is common here to Mt., Mc., Jo.; Vg. *circumponens calamo*. Δραμών...γεμίσας ...περιθεῖς, without an intervening conjunction (see *app. crit.*), is rough even for Mc.; yet see x. 30, xiv. 23, 67, xv. 21. Ἐπότιζεν is perhaps an allusion to Ps. Lxviii. (lxix.) 22 εἰς τὴν δίψαν μου ἐπότισάν με ὅξος: cf. Jo. xix. 28 ὡν τελειωθῆ ἡ γραφή.

λέγων Ἀφετε κτλ.] Mt. distinctly assigns this saying to the rest of the party, who desire the man to desist and wait for Elijah to intervene (*οἱ δὲ λοιποὶ εἶπαν Ἀφες κτλ.*). The independence of the two Evangelists at this point is significant. Archbishop Benson (*Apocalypse*, p. 146) would detach λέγων in this context from the subject of the verb, and render it "one saying." But there is no example of so loose a construction elsewhere in the Gospels, and it is impossible to admit it here. Aug.'s "unde intellegimus et illum et ceteros hoc dixisse" does not touch the heart of the difference; Mc.'s ἄφετε is a rebuke addressed by one of the company to the rest, whilst Mt.'s ἄφεις, if it is to be pressed, inverts the situation; if Mt.'s account is to be preferred, the mockery was kept up to the end. See however W.M. p. 356 n. for another explanation of ἄφεις. Εἰ  
ἔρχεται, Burton, § 251. Καθελεῖν αὐτόν sc. ἀπὸ τοῦ σταυροῦ, cf. v. 46, Lc. xxiii.

53, Acts xiii. 29; Mt., σώσων αὐτόν: ον καθελεῖν as a technical word see v. 46, note.

37. ὁ δὲ Ἰησοῦς ἀφεὶς κτλ.] Mt. πάλιν κράξας φωνῇ μεγάλῃ, with a reference to the cry at the ninth hour (v. 34). Ἀφίεναι φωνήν, *emittere vocem*; cf. Dem. *de cor.* p. 339 ὁ κήρυξ... φωνὴν ἀφίσιοι: for φωνὴν μεγ. cf. *ib.* c. *Eubul.* p. 537 ἐβλασφήμει κατ' ἐμοῦ καὶ πολλὰ καὶ μεγάλη τῇ φωνῇ. Two final utterances are recorded (Jo. ὅτε οὖν ἔλαβεν τὸ ὅξος ὁ Ἰ. εἰπεν Τετέλεσται: Lc., φωνήσας φωνῇ μ. ὁ Ἰ. εἰπεν Πάτερ, εἰς χεῖράς σου παρατίθεμαι τὸ πνεῦμά μου); the second seems to be especially intended by Mt., Mc.; it was uttered in a loud voice, and its contents connect it with the moment of departure. Like the other loud cry it is taken from the Psalms (Ps. xxx. (xxxii.) 6). Ἐξέπνευσεν, so Lc.; the aor. calls attention to the moment of departure, contrast ἐπότιζεν, v. 36. The word does not occur elsewhere in Biblical Gk.; in classical writers it is the opposite of ἐμπνεῖν, and used absolutely, 'to expire,' or followed by *βίον* or *ψυχήν*. Mt. (ἀφῆκεν τὸ πνεῦμα), Jo. (παρέδωκεν τὸ πν.) call attention to the fact that the Death of the Lord was a voluntary surrender, not a submission to physical necessity; see Westcott on Jo. xix. 30, and cf. Orig. *in Jo.* t. xix. 16 ὡς βασιλέως καταλείποντος τὸ σῶμα καὶ ἐνεργήσαντος μετὰ δυνάμεως καὶ ἔχουσις ὅπερ ἔκρινεν εὑλογον εἶναι πολεῖν. On Ps. Peter's ἀνελήμφθη see note *ad l.*

38—41. EVENTS WHICH IMMEDIATELY FOLLOWED THE DEATH OF JESUS (Mt. xxvii. 51—56, Lc. xxiii. 45<sup>b</sup>, 47—49, Jo. xix. 31—37).

38      <sup>38</sup> Καὶ τὸ καταπέτασμα τοῦ ναοῦ ἐσχίσθη εἰς δύο  
 ¶ F 39 ἀπ' ἄνωθεν ἕως κάτω.    <sup>39</sup> ἵδων δὲ ὁ κεντυρίων<sup>¶</sup> ὁ παρε-  
 τῶν στηκὼς ἐξ ἐναντίας αὐτοῦ ὅτι<sup>¶</sup> οὗτος ἐξέπνευσεν εἰπεν

38 το καταπ.] pr. ιδου N | eis δυο]+μερη D eff i k n (q)      39 ο παρεστ.] om o ¶ |  
 εξ εναντιας αυτου] ekei D 2<sup>pe</sup> i n q arm om min<sub>perpano</sub> | ουτως] + κραξας ΑΧΣΓΔΠΣ  
 min<sub>permu</sub> ff n q vg syrrpeshel go aeth κραξας 2<sup>pe</sup> (syr<sup>sin</sup>) arm ουτως αυτον κραξαντα και  
 D | εξεπνευσεν] εκραξεν kvid | om ειπεν D

38. καὶ τὸ καταπέτασμα κτλ.] There were two curtains in the ναός, the outer one, through which access was gained to the Holy Place, and the inner, which covered the entrance to the Holy of Holies (Edersheim, *Temple*, p. 35f.). See Heb. ix. 3, where the writer, who however has the Tabernacle and not the Temple in his thoughts, speaks of the latter as τὸ δεύτερον καταπέτασμα, and cf. Philo *gig.* 12 τὸ ἐσώτατον καταπέτασμα. In the LXX. the latter is called simply τὸ καταπέτασμα Exod. xxvi. 31 ff. (Heb. תְּכִלָּתָה), the other (Heb. עַמְּדָה) being properly but not uniformly distinguished as τὸ κάλυμμα (see Westcott on Heb. vi. 19). The rending of the inner curtain of the Temple is reported by Mt., Mc., Lc.; Mt. seems to connect it with an earthquake which followed the Lord's Death, Lc. places it before the end; cf. Ps. Peter: αὐτῆς [τῆς] ὥρας διεράγη τὸ καταπέτασμα. The Gospel according to the Hebrews, as represented by Jerome (*in Mt.*, cf. *ad Hesib.* 120), had another version of the incident: "superliminare (cf. ἀπ' ἄνωθεν) templi infinitae magnitudinis fractum esse atque divisum." The mystical import of the rent veil is pointed out in Heb. x. 19 ff.; cf. Victor: ἵνα λουπὸν εἴργοντος οὐδενὸς εἰς τὴν ἐσωτέραν τρέχωμεν σκηνὴν οἱ κατ' ἵχνος λόντες Χριστοῦ. With ἀπ' ἄνωθεν, ἕως κάτω, cf. ἀπὸ μακρόθεν, v. 6, note.

39. ἵδων δὲ ὁ κεντυρίων κτλ.] For centurio Mt. and Lc. use ἐκατόνταρχος (-χης), which was familiar through the LXX., where it answers to תַּנְאֲשָׂה רָשׁ; Mc. prefers a Latinism already employ-

ed by Polybius (vi. 24 τοὺς δὲ ἡγεμόνας κεντυρίωνας [ἐκάλεσαν]); the word is also freely used by Ps. Peter (*ev.* 8 ff.), who like Mc. does not employ ἐκατόνταρχος. On the centurions see Marquardt, p. 357 ff. The traditional name of this centurion was Longinus (*Acta Pilati*, ed. Tisch., p. 288); the same name is also given to the soldier who pierced the side of Christ and the prefect charged with the execution of St Paul (*D.C.B.*, s.v.). In the fourth century Longinus the centurion was already believed to have subsequently become a saint and a martyr (Chrys. *hom. in Mt. ad l.*); but the testimony which the Gospels attribute to him is merely that of a man who was able to rise above the prejudices of the crowd and the thoughtless brutality of the soldiers, and to recognise in Jesus an innocent man (Lc.), or possibly a supernatural person (Mt., Mc.). Υἱὸς θεοῦ is certainly more than δίκαιος, but the centurion, who borrowed the words from the Jewish Priests (Mt. xxvii. 41 ff.), could scarcely have understood them even in the Messianic sense; his idea is perhaps analogous to that ascribed to Nebuchadnezzar in Dan. iii. 25, where בָּרָא לְהָנִין is an extraordinary, superhuman being. This impression was produced on the centurion when he saw the Lord expire as He did (ἵδων ὅτι οὗτος ἐξέπνευσεν, cf. Origen: "miratus est in his quae dicta fuerant ab eo ad Deum cum clamore et magnitudine sensuum"), or (Mt.) when he saw the earthquake and other occurrences (τὰ γινόμενα), or (Lc.) reflected on the whole trans-

Ἄληθῶς οὗτος ὁ ἄνθρωπος νίὸς θεοῦ ἦν. <sup>40</sup> ἥσαν δὲ 40 καὶ γυναικες<sup>¶</sup> ἀπὸ μακρόθεν θεωροῦσαι, ἐν αἷς καὶ <sup>¶ i</sup> Μαρία ἡ Μαγδαληνὴ καὶ Μαρία ἡ Ἰακώβου τοῦ

39 νιὸς θεοῦ την ο ανθρ. ουτος 1071      40 ησαν δε] + εκει C | εν αις] + ην ΛCDN  
ΓΔΠΣΨ min<sup>pl</sup> arm om syrr<sup>sin</sup>pesh | om εν αις και syrr<sup>sin</sup>posh | om και 2<sup>o</sup> C<sup>3</sup>DGU<sup>F</sup> I 33  
1071 alsatmu c ff k n q vge<sup>ed</sup>,codd<sup>pl</sup> syrr arm me go | Μαρια 1<sup>o</sup>] Μαριαμ BC I alpaue

action (*τὸ γενόμενον*). The conduct and sayings of Jesus, so unique in his experience of crucifixions, culminating in the supernatural strength of the last cry, the phenomena which attended the Passion—the darkness, the earthquake, perhaps also the report of the event in the Temple, impressed the Roman officer with the sense of a presence of more than human greatness. The Roman in him felt the righteousness of the Sufferer, the Oriental (*v. 16*, note) recognised His Divinity. Mt. includes the other soldiers (*οἱ μετ' αὐτοῦ... ἐφοβήθησαν σφόδρα λέγοντες κτλ.*). *'Εξ ἐναντίας*, Vg. *ex adverso*, a phrase used in class. Gk. and frequent in LXX.; cf. *ὅ ἔξ ἐν*, Tit. ii. 8. Being on duty, he had stood facing the crosses, and nothing had escaped him.

40. *ἥσαν δὲ καὶ γυναικες κτλ.*] There were others besides the centurion who viewed the crucifixion seriously, and were present throughout. ‘There were also women’—many women (Mt.)—‘looking on at a long distance,’ where they could be safe from the ribaldry of the crowd, and yet watch the Figure on the Cross—not the “daughters of Jerusalem” who had bewailed Jesus on the way to Golgotha, but followers from Galilee. Mt., Mc., mention three by name (*ἐν αἷς καὶ... καὶ...καὶ*, both...and...and).

*Μαρία ἡ Μαγδαληνὴ*] Mary (on the forms *Μαρία*, *Μαριάμ*, see WSchm., p. 91 n.) the Magdalene had been the subject of a remarkable miracle (Lc. viii. 2 ἀφ' ἣς δαμόνια ἐπτὰ ἔξεληλύθει, cf. ‘Mc.’ xvi. 9), and had in consequence devoted her property and

time to the work of personal attendance on Jesus (Lc. l.c.). The epithet *Μαγδαληνὴ*, which everywhere distinguishes her from other women of the same name, is doubtless local (cf. Syr.<sup>sin</sup>. **ܚܕܠܝܻܺ**), like ‘Αδραμνηνός, Ναζαρηνός; she may have belonged to the Magdala now represented by *el-Mejdel*, at the south end of Gennesaret (vi. 53); cf. Neubauer, *géogr. du Talm.*, p. 216 f. A confused story in the Talmud represents this Mary as a woman’s hairdresser (**אִישׁ נָשָׁרֶת**); see *Chagigah*, ed. Streane, p. 18, and cf. Laible, *J. Chr. in the Talmud*, tr. by Streane, p. 16 f., and Wünsche p. 359; a graver error in western Christian tradition has identified her with the *γυνὴ ἀμαρτωλός* of Lc. vii. 37 ff. For other references to her in the N.T. and tradition see note on xvi. 9.

καὶ Μαρία ἡ Ἰακώβου τοῦ μικροῦ καὶ Ἰωσῆτος μῆτηρ] Mt. M. ἡ τοῦ Ἰακ. καὶ Ἰωσῆφ μ., Jo. M. ἡ τοῦ Κλωπᾶ. She is called *ἡ Ἰωσῆτος* (*infr. v. 47*), *ἡ [τοῦ] Ἰακώβου* (xvi. 1, Lc. xxiv. 10), *ἡ ἄλλη* M. (in contrast to the Magdalene) Mt. xxvii. 61, xxviii. 1. If by *ἡ Κλωπᾶ* is meant ‘the wife of Cl.’, and Κλωπᾶς=‘Αλφαῖος (**Ἀλφ**), this Mary was the mother of the second James in the Apostolic lists (cf. iii. 18, note); but it is against the identification that the extant Syriac versions render ‘Αλφ. by **ܐܠܦ**, **ܐܠܦ**, but Κλωπ. by **ܟܠܘܻܺ**, **ܟܠܻܺ** (Lightfoot, *Galatians*, p. 267; Syr.<sup>sin</sup>. and Syr.<sup>cu</sup> are unhappily wanting in Jo. xix. 25). A Clopas is mentioned by Hegesippus (cf. Eus. *H.E.* iii. 11,

§ 41 §μικροῦ καὶ Ἰωσῆτος μήτηρ καὶ Σαλώμη, <sup>41</sup> αἱ ὅτε ἦν ἐν τῇ Γαλειλαίᾳ ἡκολούθουν αὐτῷ καὶ διηκόνουν αὐτῷ, καὶ ἄλλαι πολλαὶ αἱ συναναβᾶσαι αὐτῷ εἰς Ἱεροσόλυμα.

¶ N 42 <sup>42</sup> Καὶ ἦδη ὁψίας γενομένης, ἐπεὶ ἦν Παρα-

40 Ιωσῆτος Ν<sup>c</sup>BDL(Δ) (1) 13 69 346 2<sup>nd</sup> k n me] Ιωση Ν<sup>\*ACEGHKMN</sup>SUVΓΠΣΨ  
min<sup>pl</sup> syrr<sup>posh</sup>hol arm go Ιωσηφ (ut vid) d ff i q vg syr<sup>sin</sup> Aug 41 ai i<sup>o</sup> ΚΒΨ 32 131 1071  
c d ff k q me syr<sup>hel</sup> arm aeth] καὶ ACLΔ min<sup>nonn</sup> vg go Aug ai καὶ DΝΧΓΗΣ min<sup>pl</sup>  
syr<sup>hel</sup> | ηκολούθησαν ΔΣ min<sup>pauc</sup> | om αυτω i<sup>o</sup> Ψ | om καὶ διηκόνουν αυτω CDΔ min<sup>nonn</sup>  
n | om αυτω 2<sup>o</sup> N | αλλαι] ετεραι Α (αιτ.) | ai συναναβ.] om ai ΛΨ | ΙΛημ 2<sup>nd</sup>  
42 καὶ ηδη...προσαββατον] et erat in sabbato syr<sup>sin</sup>

22, 32, iv. 22), who was brother of Joseph the husband of Mary the Virgin, and father of the Symeon who succeeded James the Just in the presidency of the Church of Jerusalem (cf. Mayor, *St. James*, p. xvi f.). Τοῦ μικροῦ, sc. τῇ ἡλικίᾳ (cf. Lc. xix. 3); Deissmann, however (*B. St.* p. 144 f.), offers some evidence of the word being used in reference to age (μικρός = *minor*). Whether from stature or age this James was thus distinguished in the Church of Jerusalem. Ἰωσῆτος: see vi. 3, note.

καὶ Σαλώμη] Mt. καὶ ἡ μήτηρ τῶν νιῶν Ζεβεδαίον, but according to the Gospel acc. to the Egyptians Salome was childless (καλῶς οὖν ἐποίησα μὴ τεκοῦσα); Jo. (apparently, see Westcott *ad l.*) καὶ ἡ ἀδελφὴ τῆς μητρὸς αὐτοῦ. See notes on i. 19, x. 35 ff. The name, which is given only by Mc. (here and xvi. 1), is left without identification, for it was well known in the Church, and among women connected with the Gospel narrative it was unique. It is the Heb. fem. name בִּנְיָה with a Gk. ending, like Μαριάμη (Dalman, *Gr.* p. 122, cf. Blass, *Gr.* p. 30). The name belonged to several members of the Herod family; see vi. 22, note, and cf. the indices to Josephus (ed. Niese).

41. αἱ ὅτε ἦν ἐν τῇ Γαλειλαίᾳ κτλ.] Cf. Lc. viii. 2, where besides

Mary of Magdala are mentioned Ἰωάννα γυνὴ Χουζᾶ ἐπιτρόπου Ἡρῳδου (xxiv. 10) καὶ Σουσάννα καὶ ἔτεραι πολλαὶ. These were doubtless among the ἄλλαι πολλαὶ αἱ συναναβᾶσαι. Their names had less significance than those which Mc. mentions; they probably returned to their homes in Galilee after the Passover, and thus faded out of the memory of the Christian community at Jerusalem. Διηκόνουν αὐτῷ: Lc. adds ἐκ τῶν ὑπαρχόντων αὐταῖς. Their ministry continued to the end (Mt. ηκολούθησαν...διακονοῦσαι αὐτῷ); Jerome: “ceteris re-linquentibus Dominum mulieres in officio perseverant...et ideo meruerunt primae videre resurgentem.” For ἀναβαίνειν εἰς Ἱεροσόλυμα see x. 32, note; for συναναβαίνειν cf. Gen. 1. 7, Exod. xii. 38, 1 Esdr. viii. 5, Acts xiii. 31.

42—47. THE BURIAL OF THE LORD (Mt. xxvii. 57—61, Lc. xxiii. 50—55, Jo. xix. 38—42).

42. ἦδη ὁψίας γενομένης] It was already 3 p.m. when the Lord expired, and some interval must be allowed for the subsequent interview of Joseph with Pilate (v. 43 ff.), so that sunset was not far off when all was ready for the burial. Ὁψία is a relative term (cf. i. 32, iv. 35, vi. 47, xiv. 17, notes), and an hour before sunset would be relatively late in view of the approaching Sabbath.

σκευή, ὁ ἐστιν προσάββατον,<sup>43§</sup> ἐλθὼν Ἰωσὴφ ὁ ἀπὸ 43 § <sup>syr<sup>hier</sup></sup> Ἀρειμαθαίας εἰ σχῆμαν βουλευτής, ὃς καὶ αὐτὸς ἦν

<sup>42 προσαββατον ΝΒ\*CKMΔΠ\*Ψ i 33 69 al<sup>m</sup>]</sup> προσ σαββατον (προσσ.) AB<sup>3</sup>EGH LSUVΓΠ<sup>2</sup> min<sup>sat</sup>mu arm προν σαββατον ΔΣ 604 ante sabbatum ff n q vg 43 ελθων]  
ηλθεν DEGHGV min<sup>m</sup> | Ιωσηφ] Ioses k | o απο Αρ.] om o D min<sup>pauc</sup> | Αρειμαθαίας  
ΝΒ\*] Αριμ. rell -μαθας Νc.avid D 69 γερ lat<sup>t</sup>v<sup>g</sup>eddpl

ἐπεὶ ἦν Παρασκευή κτλ.] Reason for immediate action on the part of Joseph: the day was the eve of a Sabbath. Παρασκευή, 'preparation,' had become a technical name for Friday, which is still so called in the Greek East; cf. Jos. *ant.* xvi. 6. 2 ἐν σάββασιν ἡ τῇ πρὸ αὐτῆς παρασκευῇ, *Did.* 8 τετράδα καὶ παρασκευήν. Mt. (xxvii. 62) uses it without explanation; Mc. for the benefit of his Western readers adds ὁ ἐστιν προσάββατον—a word already employed in Judith viii. 6 and in the titles of Psalms xci. (xcii.) Η, xcii. (xciii.) ΝΒ. Jo. (xix. 14) calls the day of the Crucifixion παρασκ. τοῦ πάσχα, but further on (xix. 31) he describes it as immediately preceding the Sabbath; on the problem raised by his account see Westcott, *Introduction to the Gospels*, p. 329 ff. The Jews had already taken steps to provide for the removal of the bodies before the Sabbath (Jo. v. 31 ff., cf. *Ev. Petr.* 2, 5, notes); had they not been anticipated, the Lord's Body would have been committed to the common grave provided for criminals who had been hanged (cf. Lightfoot on Mt. xxvii. 58: cf. *Ev. Petr.* 2), and acc. to Deut. xxi. 23, this would have happened before nightfall.

43. ἐλθὼν Ἰωσὴφ ὁ ἀπὸ Ἀρ. κτλ.] Eusebius *onom.s.v.*, followed by Jerome *de situ*, identifies Arimathaea with Ἀρμαθέμ (-θάμι), Σειφά, πόλις Ἐλκανά καὶ Σαμονῆλ (i Regn. i. 1, Σ' יְמִינֵם צַדְקָה: on the name see Driver *ad l.*), a Ramathaim or Ramah in Mt Ephraim which is possibly identical with *er-Ram* a few miles N. of Jerusalem. Eus., however, places it near Diospolis (Lydda), cf. I Macc. xi. 34 Λυδδὰ καὶ Ραθαείν

(v. 1. 'Ραμαθέμ). On the breathing ('Αρ.) see WH., *Intr.*, p. 313. Ἀπὸ Αρ., even if not preceded by the art., is probably to be connected with Ἰωσὴφ, not with ἐλθών, cf. Lc. Jo., and comp. Jos. *ant.* xvi. 10. Ι Εὐρυκλῆς ἀπὸ Λακεδαιμονος; for other instances of ἀπὸ in this sense cf. Jo. i. 45, Acts vi. 9 (Blass, *Gr.* p. 122). Joseph was a βουλευτής (Mc. Lc.); the word passed into Rabbinic, see Dalman, *Gr.* p. 148), a senator i.e. a member of the Sanhedrin, as appears from Lc.'s statement (v. 51) that he had not consented to the resolution which condemned Jesus. Mc.'s εὐσχήμων seems to answer to Mt.'s πλούσιος, cf. Acts xiii. 50, xvii. 12: this sense of the word is severely condemned by Phryn. (τοῦτο μὲν οἱ διαθέεις ἐπὶ τοῦ πλούσιον καὶ ἐν ἀξιώματι ὄντος τάπτουσιν), and Rutherford adds that it "seems confined to Christian writers," but he overlooks the exx. cited by Wetstein from Plutarch and Josephus; the latter (*vit. 9*) writing of the state of Tiberias says: στάσεις τρεῖς ἥσαν κατὰ τὴν πόλιν, μία μὲν ἀνδρῶν εὐσχημόνων... η δευτέρα δὲ στάσις ἐξ ἀσημοτάτων. Similarly *honesti homines* are contrasted by Pliny with the *plebs*.

ὅς καὶ αὐτὸς ἦν προσδεχόμενος κτλ.] So Lc.; Mt. ἐμαθητεύθη (v. 1. ἐμαθήτευσεν) τῷ Ἰησοῦ, Jo. ὁν μαθητὴς τοῦ Ἰησοῦ, κεκρυμμένος δέ. The three statements seem to describe successive stages in the man's religious history. Originally he had been in the position of Simeon (Lc. ii. 25); there were not a few such in Jerusalem at the beginning of the century (Lc. ii. 38). The preaching of Jesus, perhaps at the first passover, made him a secret disciple; after the Resurrection

προσδεχόμενος τὴν βασιλείαν τοῦ θεοῦ, τολμήσας εἰσῆλθεν πρὸς τὸν Πειλάτον καὶ ἤτήσατο τὸ σῶμα

<sup>¶ H 44</sup> τοῦ Ἰησοῦ.<sup>¶</sup> <sup>44</sup> ὁ δὲ Πειλάτος ἐθαύμασεν εἰς<sup>¶</sup> ἥδη τέθνηκεν, καὶ προσκαλεσάμενος τὸν κεντυρίωνα

<sup>45</sup> ἐπηρώτησεν αὐτὸν εἰ ἦδη ἀπέθανεν.<sup>45</sup> καὶ γνοὺς ἀπὸ τοῦ § 7 Σκεντυρίωνος ἐδωρήσατο τὸ πτῶμα τῷ Ἰωσῆφ.

<sup>43</sup> om τολμησας syrhier | εισηλθεν] ηλθεν D 26<sup>o</sup>v | σωμα] πτωμα D k 44 εθαν-  
μαξεν ND eff k q v g Aug | ei] pr και ειπεν Δ (arm) | ηδη BD arm<sup>vid</sup>] παλαι  
ACEGKLMUVX<sup>vid</sup>ΓΠΣΨ min<sup>fereomn</sup> om syrsin | τεθνηκει D 45 om και  
γνους...Ιωσηφ ff | om απο του κεντ. k syrpesh | απο] παρα D 124 2<sup>o</sup>e alpawo | πτωμα  
NBDL 2<sup>po</sup>] σωμα ACEGKMSUVXΓΔΠΣΨ<sup>12</sup> min<sup>fereomn</sup> k | Ιωσηφ] Ιωση B

he became a member of the Church (ἐμαθητεύθη, cf. Mt. xxviii. 19).

τολμήσας εἰσῆλθεν πρὸς τὸν Πειλάτον κτλ.] Acc. to Ps. Peter, Joseph is a friend of Pilate, and his petition is tendered immediately after the sentence has been pronounced; Pilate refers him to Herod, but the Body is ultimately given to Joseph by the Jews (*Ev. Petr.* 2, 6). Τολμήσας creates quite a different impression of Joseph's act. He summons up his courage to face the Procurator (on the phrase see Field, *Notes*, p. 44). The circumstances of the Passion, which wrecked the brave resolutions of the Apostles, made this secret disciple bold. The aor. part. has almost the force of an adv., cf. Vg. *audacter introiit*; see Field, *l. c.*

44, 45. ὁ δὲ Πειλάτος ἐθαύμασεν κτλ.] Peculiar to Mc. Pilate wondered whether Jesus was already dead, and was not satisfied until he had ascertained the fact from the responsible officer. Θαυμάζεω εἰ (cf. 1 Jo. iii. 13) leaves the fact slightly doubtful; contrast θ. ὅτι in Jo. iv. 27, Gal. i. 6. The perfect τέθνηκεν represents the Death as an existing state, whilst ἀπέθανεν in the indirect question which follows refers to it as momentary effect; 'is He dead?' Pilate asks himself, but to the centurion he says 'did you see Him

die?' (cf. WM., pp. 339, 679). Death seldom supervened so soon in the case of the crucified; they lived for two or three days, and in some cases died at last of starvation rather than of their wounds (Eus. *H. E.* viii. 8). Cf. Origen: "miraculum enim erat quoniam post tres horas receptus est qui forte biduum victurus erat in cruce." Our Lord died first of the three, cf. Jo. xix. 33.

45. καὶ γνοὺς ἀπὸ τοῦ κεντυρίωνος κτλ.] The centurion had returned to head-quarters, and was able to report the fact (cf. v. 39). Upon this Pilate granted the Body (*donavit corpus*), as Mc. says in language which savours of an official character (cf. Mt. ἐκέλευσεν ἀποδοθῆναι, Jo. ἐπέτρεψεν [ἴνα ἄρη]; δωρεῖσθαι is used especially of royal or Divine bounty, see Gen. xxx. 20, 1 Esdr. i. 7, viii. 55, Esth. viii. 1, 2 Pet. i. 3 f. (the only other example in the N.T.). Πτῶμα has the same ring; the Body which 'saw no corruption' is not elsewhere called 'a corpse' (cf. vi. 29, Apoc. xi. 8 f.), but to Pilate it would appear merely in that light; τὸ σῶμα (τοῦ Ἰησοῦ, αὐτοῦ) is substituted in Mt. Lc. Jo. Πτῶμα is used of the carcases of animals, e.g. Jud. xiv. 8 τὸ πτ. τοῦ λέοντος: when employed for the dead body of a human being it carries a tone of contempt (cf. e.g. Sap. iv. 19 πτῶμα ἄτιμον,

<sup>46</sup>καὶ ἀγοράσας σινδόνα καθελὼν αὐτὸν ἐνείλησεν τῇ 46  
σινδόνι καὶ ἔθηκεν αὐτὸν ἐν μνήματι ὃ ἦν λελατο-

46 καὶ τῷ ο δε Ιωσηφ ΔΣ 38 1ο6 435 2ρo latt syrr<sup>peshel</sup> arm Aug | καθελων]  
λαβων D (? syr<sup>sin</sup>) pr και ACEGKMSUVΓΔΠΙΣ min<sup>omnvid</sup> vg syrr arm go aeth | τῃ  
σινδονι εις την σινδονα D | εθηκεν NBC<sup>2</sup>DLΣΨ min<sup>nonn</sup>] κατεθηκεν AC\*EGKMSUVΧΓΠ  
min<sup>pl</sup> | αυτον] αυτο AM<sup>7</sup> 435 | μνηματι NB] μνημεια ACDLXΓΔΠΣΨ<sup>712</sup> min<sup>omnvid</sup>

Ezech. vi. 5, A). The majority of the uncial mss. avoid the word here, and borrow *σῶμα* from Mt. Lc. Jo.; and the Latin versions similarly prefer *corpus* to *cadaver*.

46. καὶ ἀγοράσας σινδόνα κτλ.] On his way back to Golgotha Joseph provides himself with linen; on *σινδών* see xiv. 51; the word is used here of linen in the piece, not of a garment; it was still, as Mt. says, *καθαρά*, fresh and unused (cf. xi. 2, note). His next task was to remove the Body from the Cross. *Καθελών*, cf. v. 36, Acts xiii. 29; the word is common in this sense, cf. e.g. Jos. x. 27 *καθεῖλεν αὐτοὺς ἀπὸ τῶν ἔνλων*, Phil. in Flacc. § 10 δὸς οὐ τετελευτηκότας ἐπὶ σταυρῶν καθαιρεῖν...προσέταττεν. Joseph. B. J. iv. 5. 2 τοὺς ἀνασταυρουμένους πρὸ δύντος ἥλιου καθελεῖν τε καὶ θάπτειν. Other examples will be found in Field, *Notes*, p. 44. The Romans used *detrahere* in a similar sense; cf. Petron. sat. iii. "miles...cruces servabat ne quis ad sepulturam corpora detraheret." In this work Joseph was probably not alone; though the little crowd of assistants with which the poetry of Rubens' great picture has surrounded him is imaginary, St John's account (v. 39 f.) leads us to suppose that his brother Sanhedrist Nicodemus was already on the spot. Nicodemus had brought a large supply of the spices used for embalming the dead (*ἔλιγμα σμύρνης καὶ ἀλόνης ὡς λίτρας ἑκατόν*, a hundred pounds of aromatics made up in a compact roll). The Body was then taken by the two men (*ἔλαβον*, Jo.), bathed perhaps (Ps. Peter, cf. Acts ix. 37), and wrapped

(*ἐνετύλιξεν*, Mt. Lc.) or swathed (*ἐνείλησεν*, Mc., *εἴλησε*, Ps. Pet.; cf. 1 Regn. xxi. 9) in the linen between the folds of which the spices were freely crumbled (*μετὰ τῶν ἄρωμάτων*, Jo.), and finally bound with strips of cloth (*ἔδησαν ὁθονίοις*, Jo.), after the Jewish manner of burying (Jo.). The picture may be completed by comparing what is said of Lazarus in Jo. xi. 44, and the account of the grave clothes in Jo. xx. 7: the Hands and Feet were bound with *ὅθονια* (= *κειρία*, xi. 44), and the Face was covered with a face-cloth (*σονδάριον*). All was now ready for the interment.

καὶ ἔθηκεν αὐτὸν ἐν μνήματι κτλ.] Mc. knows only that the tomb was artificially constructed, cut out of a rock, the resting-place of some rich citizen; cf. Isa. xxii. 16 *ἔλατόμησας σεαυτῷ ὡδε μνημείον*, καὶ ἐποίησας σεαυτῷ ἐν ὑψηλῷ μνημείον, καὶ ἔγραψας σεαυτῷ ἐν πέτρᾳ σκηνήν; Such rock-hewn chambers abound on the S., W., and N.W. of the city; see Robinson, *Researches*, i. p. 517 ff., and Mr Fergusson's art. *Tombs* in Smith's B.D. This tomb was a new one which had never been used (Mt. Lc. Jo.), and had been prepared by Joseph for his own burial (Mt.); it was in a garden adjacent to the place of crucifixion (Jo.). The garden was presumably the property of Joseph, a 'paradise'; according to *Ev. Petr.* 6 the spot bore the name *Κῆπος Ἰωσήφ*. On the custom of burying in gardens see 4 Regn. xxi. 18, 26, 2 Esdr. xiii. 16. For *ἔθηκεν* the more technical word *κατέθηκεν* has been substituted in most of the mss.

μημένον ἐκ πέτρας, καὶ προσεκύλισεν λίθον ἐπὶ τὴν  
47 θύραν τοῦ μνημείου. <sup>47</sup> ἦ δὲ Μαρία ἡ Μαγδαληνὴ καὶ  
Μαρία ἡ Ἰωσῆτος ἐθεώρουν ποῦ τέθειται.

XVI. I    <sup>1</sup>Καὶ διαγενομένου τοῦ σαββάτου<sup>¶</sup> Μαρία ἡ  
¶

46 πετρας] της π. D I 2<sup>po</sup> alperauc eν τη πετρα 13 69 346 | προσεκυλισεν] προσ-  
κυλισας D I | επι| eis Δ 1071 | μνημειου| + και απηλθεν (D)G I 59 157 209  
47 Ιωσητος ΝεBLΔΨ I k me] Ιωση CEGKMSUVΓII minpl syrr go Ιωσηφ ΛΣ 258 vg  
aeth Ιακωβου D ff n q syrsin Ιακ. και Ιωσητος 13 69 124 346 2<sup>po</sup> vid syrhier arm | εθεωρουν]  
εθεασαντο D 2<sup>po</sup> | πον] τον τοπον οπου D c ff q arm | τεθειται ΝεABCD(L)ΔΠΣΨ(¶12)  
33 69 131 229 alpauc k] τιθεται EGKMSUVΓ (604) minpl XVI I om διαγενομενον  
...Σαλωμη D n (q) | om Μαρια 1<sup>o</sup>...Σαλωμη k | Μαρια 1<sup>o</sup>] pr η B\*L min<sup>1</sup>

καὶ προσεκύλισεν λίθον κτλ.] Λίθον μέγαν, Mt., cf. xvi. 4 ἦν γὰρ μέγας σφόδρα: in Lc. cod. D adds ὃν μόγις ἔκοσι ἑκάλιον, while Ps. Peter represents the matter as requiring the services of all who were present (όμον πάντες οἱ ὄντες ἐκεῖ ἔθηκαν); the stone was afterwards, at the desire of the Jews, sealed and guarded (Mt.), cf. Ev. Petr. 6. The opening was usually closed with a stone, if any of the *loculi* were occupied; cf. Jo. xi. 38 ἔρχεται εἰς τὸ μνημεῖον· ἦν δὲ σπήλαιον καὶ λίθος ἐπέκειτο ἐπ' αὐτῷ. The stone was rolled to the opening (προσκυλίειν here only and in the corresponding context in Mt.; cf. Jos. x. 18 κυλίσατε λίθους ἐπὶ τὸ στόμα τοῦ σπηλαίου). Mr Latham (*Risen Master*, p. 33, and illustr. 1; cf. E. Pierotti, *Jerusalem Explored* (E. Tr., 1864), ii., plate lvi. fig. 3) imagines "a massive circular disc of stone, much like a grindstone of four feet diameter," rolled along "a furrow grooved out of the rocky soil"; but κυλίειν λίθον does not in itself suggest more than the rolling of a mass of stone along the ground: cf. I Regn. xiv. 33, Prov. xxvi. 27, Zech. ix. 16. Μνῆμα and μνημεῖον seem to be employed indiscriminately (cf. v. 2 ff.), unless μνῆμα is here a *loculus*; the Vg. uses *monumentum* for both words. According to Jo. (v. 42) the Body was placed in Joseph's tomb on account of its proximity to the Cross—till the

Sabbath was over, perhaps, and not with a view to a permanent interment; cf. Jo. xx. 13, 15.

47. ἦ δὲ Μαρία ἡ Μαγδ. κτλ.] The Magdalene and the other Mary (v. 40) had remained on the spot, and were watching the action of Joseph and Nicodemus; cf. Origen: "caritas duarum Mariarum colligavit eas ad monumentum novum, propter corpus Iesu quod fuerat ibi." Ambrose: "sexus nutat, devotio calet." They sat opposite to the place of sepulture (Mt., ἀπέναντι τοῦ τάφου), and saw the Body carried in, so that they knew where it lay. Τέθειται, Lc. ἐτέθη: for the perf. cf. τέθηκεν (v. 44). Their thought was, "He is there (contrast xvi. 6 οὐκ ἔστιν ὅδε), and there we shall find Him when the sabbath is past." Victor remarks: ἀναγκαία καὶ κατὰ θεὸν ἡ παραμονὴ τῶν γυναικῶν εἰς τὸ γνῶμαι ποῦ τίθεται, ἵνα ἀπαντήσωσι καὶ τῆς ἀναστάσεως τὴν ἐπαγγελίαν κομίσωσι τοῖς μαθηταῖς. Μαρία ἡ Ἰωσῆτος sc. μήτηρ (v. 40); the 'Western' text substitutes Ιακώβου (see app. crit.).

XVI. I—8. VISIT OF THE WOMEN TO THE TOMB ON THE THIRD DAY (Mt. xxviii. 1—8, Lc. xxiv. 1—10; cf. Jo. xx. 1 ff.).

I. διαγενομένου τοῦ σαββάτου κτλ.] When the Sabbath was over (i.e. after sunset on the day which followed the Crucifixion), the three women named in xv. 40 went forth to purchase aromatics for the anointing of the

*Μαγδαληνὴ καὶ Μαρία ἡ τοῦ Ἰακώβου καὶ Σαλώμη ἡγόρασαν ἀρώματα ἵνα ἐλθοῦσαι ἀλείψωσιν αὐτόν.  
καὶ λίαν προὶ τῇ μᾶτρᾳ τῶν σαββάτων ἔρχονται ἐπὶ τὸ μνημεῖον ἀνατείλαντος τοῦ ἥλιου.*

*1 τον Ιακ.] om τον Ν\*CGMSUVXΓΨ min<sup>non</sup> | ηγορασαν] ηγεκαν (ut vid) c k pr πορευθεισαι D (eff) k n (q) syr<sup>hier</sup> arm | αρωματα] pr unguentum et syr<sup>sin</sup> | om ελθουσαι D eff k n q | αυτον] τον Ιησουν K<sup>2</sup>MX 13 69 124 346 1071 al<sup>statm</sup> vg<sup>ed</sup> 2 om λιαν D c k n syr<sup>sin posh</sup> arm | om πρωι ερ | τη μα Ν(B)LΔΨ (1) 33 1071 2<sup>po</sup> alpau<sup>c</sup> me Eus] της μιας AC(D)EGKMSUVXΓΗΙΣ min<sup>pl</sup> | των σαββατων ΝΒΚΛΔ 33 69 2<sup>po</sup> alpau<sup>c</sup>] σαββατων ACEGMSUVX<sup>vid</sup>ΓΔ\*ΠΣ min<sup>pl</sup> τον σαββατον D 1071 alpau<sup>c</sup> k q | μνημειον Ν<sup>c</sup>ABC<sup>3</sup>DLXΓΔΠΣΨ min<sup>omni vid</sup>] μνημα Ν\*C\* 2<sup>po</sup> | ανατειλαντος] ανατειλλοντος D c n q Tyc Aug pr ετι ΚΠ\* 1 2<sup>po</sup> alpau<sup>c</sup> Aug*

Body (Mc. Lc.). According to D the purchase apparently took place on Friday (before the Sabbath began). They had probably seen Joseph and Nicodemus use spices freely in the process of wrapping it for burial (Jo. xix. 40, cf. xv. 46 f., notes), but they desired to add more externally, and to apply fragrant oils (Lc. καὶ μύρα, cf. Mc. ἴνα...ἀλείψωσιν αὐτόν); the incident at Bethany (xiv. 3 ff.) was perhaps fresh in their memory, and suggested this final ministry. For διαγίνεσθαι ‘to intervene’ in reference to intervals of time cf. Acts xxv. 13, xxvii. 9; the verb is used in this sense from Demosthenes downwards. For ἀρώματα, cf. 2 Chr. xvi. 14 ἔθαψαν αὐτὸν (sc. Ἀσά)...καὶ ἐπλήσαν ἀρωμάτων καὶ γένη μύρων μυρεψῶν, and the list of spices in Sir. xxiv. 15; and see xiv. 3, 8, notes.

2. λίαν προὶ τῇ μᾶτρᾳ τῶν σαββ. κτλ.] Mt. ὁψὲ δὲ σ. τῇ ἐπιφωσκούσῃ εἰς μίαν σ., Lc. τῇ δὲ μᾶτρᾳ τῶν σ. δρθρον βαθέως, Jo. τῇ δὲ μᾶτρᾳ τῶν σαββάτων... προὶ σκοτίας ἔτι οὖσης (cf. Ps. Pet. 9, 11 τῇ δὲ νυκτὶ ᾧ ἐπέφωσκεν ἡ κυριακή...δρθρον δὲ τῆς κυριακῆς). All the canonical accounts, notwithstanding a remarkable independence of expression, point one way. The last hours of Saturday night were already giving place to the first signs of dawn when the three women started

for Joseph’s garden; the morning watch had begun, but it was yet dark. Mc. adds ἀνατειλαντος τοῦ ἥλιου, words which are scarcely less inconsistent with his own λιαν πρωι than with Jo.’s σκοτίας ἔτι οὖσης. The harmonists have from the first been exercised by the apparent contradiction, as the reading of D and some other ‘Western’ authorities seems to shew: see note on i. 32, and cf. Aug. cons. ev. iii. 65 “orientē iam sole, id est, cum caelum ab orientis parte iam albesceret.” But the correction (for such it seems to be) gives little relief; the same moment of time can hardly be described as λιαν πρωι and as ‘sunrise.’ It is better to regard Mc.’s note as a compressed statement of two facts; the two women started just before daybreak and arrived just after sunrise (ἔρχονται = ἐξελθοῦσαι...ἥλθον). Τῇ μᾶτρᾳ τῶν σαββάτων (Acts xx. 7, 1 Cor. xvi. 2), on the first day after the Sabbath (Bede: “prima sabbatorum prima dies est a die sabbatorum”), εἰς being used by a common Hebraism for πρωτος (WM., p. 311, Blass, Gr. p. 140); cf. πρωτη σαββάτου, v. 9, where however σάββατον is probably used for ‘the week,’ as in Lc. xviii. 12.

3. ἐλεγον πρὸς ἑαυτάς κτλ.] Mc. only. On the way they remembered the stone which they had seen Joseph

πρὸς ἑαυτάς Τίς ἀποκυλίσει ἡμῖν τὸν λίθον ἐκ τῆς  
4 θύρας τοῦ μνημείου; <sup>4</sup>καὶ ἀναβλέψασαι θεωροῦσιν  
ὅτι ἀνακεκύλισται ὁ λίθος, ἦν γὰρ μέγας σφόδρα.  
5 <sup>5</sup>καὶ εἰσελθοῦσαι εἰς τὸ μνημεῖον εἴδον νεανίσκον  
καθήμενον ἐν τοῖς δεξιοῖς περιβεβλημένον στολὴν

<sup>3 προς εαυτούς D | εκ] απο CDΨ min<sup>pau</sup> latt (ab) Eus</sup>  
<sup>σφόδρα] ην γαρ μεγας σφοδρα και ερχυται και ευρισκουσιν αποκεκυλισμενον τον λιθον</sup>  
<sup>D 2<sup>pe</sup> c ff n syrr<sup>(sin) hier</sup> (Eus) subito autem ad horam tertiam tenebrae diei (leg. diei tenebrae) factae sunt per totum orbem terrae et descenderunt de caelis angeli et surgent (leg. surgentes, nisi forte surgente cf. F. C. Burkitt, Itala, p. 94) in claritate vivi dei simul ascenderunt cum eo et continuo lux facta est tunc illuc accesserunt ad monumentum et vident revolutum lapidem fuit enim magnus nimis k | ανακεκυλισται</sup>  
<sup>NBL] αποκεκ. AC(D)ΧΓΔΠΣ min<sup>omn vid</sup></sup>  
<sup>5 εισελθονσαι] ελθουσαι B 127 | om εν</sup>  
<sup>τοις δεξιοις syr<sup>bier</sup></sup>

roll to the entrance of the tomb and leave there, and they began to talk (*ἔλεγον*) about it. It would require more than the strength of three women to remove it. Ps. Peter (c. xi.) expands *τίς ἀποκυλίσει κτλ.* into a set speech which is at once feeble and confused. For *πρὸς ἑαυτάς* = *πρὸς ἀλλήλας*, cf. xi. 31, xiv. 4, notes. *'Αποκυλίειν*, the opposite of *προσκυλίειν* (xv. 46); the form *κυλίειν* begins in Aristophanes to take the place of the older *κυλίνδειν* or *κυλινδέν*, which is unknown to Bibl. Gk. The compound *ἀποκυλ.* occurs in Gen. xxix. 3 ff. in reference to the removal of a stone from the mouth of a well. *'Εκ τῆς θύρας*: Lc. less exactly, *ἀπὸ τοῦ μνημείου* (cf. WM., p. 454).

4. *καὶ ἀναβλέψασαι κτλ.*] By this time they are near the knoll out of the side of which the tomb had been cut; the sun has risen, and involuntarily looking up at the mention of the stone they see that it has been displaced. The change from *ἀποκυλίειν* to the rarer and more difficult *ἀνακυλίειν* is evidence of Mc.'s care for accuracy in detail; the stone was not rolled right away, but rolled back so as to leave the opening free; cf. *Ew. Petr.* 9 ὁ δὲ λίθος...ἀφ' ἑαυτοῦ κυλισθεὶς ἐπεχώρησε παρὰ μέρος, καὶ ὁ τάφος

*γένοιγη*. The perf., as in xv. 44, 47, adds to the vividness of the narrative: we hear the women exclaim *'Ανακεκύλισται*—their *τίς ἀποκυλίσει*; has been answered, and their wish, idle as it had seemed, is realised. *Ἡν γὰρ μέγας σφόδρα* either accounts for their being able to see what had occurred before they reached the spot, or it explains why the sight arrested their attention. Mt. attributes the removal of the stone to the descent of an Angel, accompanied by an earthquake; the Angel sits upon the stone which he has rolled away, and is there apparently when the women arrive. It is impossible to feel any confidence in Thph't.'s attempt to reconcile the two accounts: *ἐνδέχεται γὰρ ὃν εἴδον ἔξω καθήμενον...τοῦτον ιδεῖν πάλιν ἔσω, προλαβόντα τὰς γυνᾶκας καὶ εἰσελθόντα*. A remarkable gloss follows v. 3 in k (see *app. crit.*); cf. the story in *Ew. Petr.* 9.

5. *καὶ εἰσελθοῦσαι κτλ.*] Lc. *εἰσελθοῦσαι* δὲ οὐχ εὑρον τὸ σῶμα. Mt. does not mention the fact of their entering; see last note. In Jo. Mary Magdalene arrives at the tomb alone, and all the circumstances are different. The attempt to harmonise these independent narratives is beset with difficulty; see however Tatian's scheme (Hill, p. 252 ff.), and the provisional

λευκήν, καὶ ἐξεθαμβήθησαν. ὁ δὲ λέγει αὐταῖς Μὴ 6 Τῷ  
ἐκθαμβεῖσθε· Ἰησοῦν ζητεῖτε τὸν Ναζαρηνὸν τὸν  
ἔσταυρωμένον· ήγέρθη, οὐκ ἔστιν ὥδε· οὐδὲ ὁ τόπος SP 87

5 εξεθαμβηθησαν] εθαυβησαν D n syr<sup>pesh</sup> arm 6 ο δε λ. αυταις] και λ. αυταις o  
αγγελος (D) ff (cf. c p) | εκθαμβεισθε] φοβεισθαι D n syr<sup>pesh</sup> arm | τον Ναζαρηνου] τ.  
Ναζωραιον ΛΔ k om ΙΙ\* (hab ΙΙ<sup>a</sup>) D | ιδε ο τοπος] ειδετε εκει (+τον D<sup>2</sup>) τοπον αυτου  
D ιδε εκει ο τ. αυτου 2<sup>ρη</sup>: similiter cff k n q

arrangement proposed by Bp Westcott (*St John*, p. 288 f.). On the special appearance to Mary Magdalene, which characterises the Johannine tradition, see below, v. 9 f., notes.

According to Mc. the women on entering were startled and awestricken (ἐκθαμβεῖσθαι, cf. ix. 15, xiv. 33, notes) to see a young man sitting ἐν τοῖς δεξιοῖς (cf. τὰ δεξιὰ μέρη τοῦ πλοίου, Jo. xxi. 6), on the right hand side of the tomb, clad in a long robe (στολήν, cf. xii. 38, note) of dazzling whiteness (λευκήν, cf. ix. 3, note). Mt., who identifies the νεανίσκος as an Angel, has a fuller description: ἦν δὲ ἡ εἰδέα αὐτοῦ ως ἀστραπὴ καὶ τὸ ἔνδυμα αὐτοῦ λευκὸν ως χιών. In Lc. the women see two men standing over them in flashing raiment (ἐπέστησαν αὐταῖς ἐν ἐσθῆτι ἀστραπτούσῃ). The very diversity of the accounts strengthens the probability that the story rests upon a basis of truth; the impressions of the witnesses differed, but they were agreed upon the main facts. The conception of the Angel as a young man clad in bright attire finds an interesting parallel in 2 Macc. iii. 26, 33 δύο ἐφάνησαν αὐτῷ νεανία... διαπεπεῖς τὴν περιβολήν...οἱ αὐτοὶ νεανία πάλιν ἐφάνησαν τῷ Ἡλιοδώρῳ ἐν ταῖς αὐταῖς ἐσθήσεσι ἐστολισμένοι. Similarly Josephus (*ant.* v. 8. 2) describes the Angel who appeared to Manoah's wife as φάντασμα ...νεανίᾳ καλῷ παραπλήσιον μεγάλῳ. Cf. also *Ev. Petr.* 9, II. Ον καθῆμενον see WM, p. 434; περιβάλλεσθαι στολήν, Blass, *Gr.* pp. 92, 113, and cf. xiv. 51, *Apoc.* vii. 13, x. 1; on στολὴ

λευκή see ix. 3, and *Apoc.* vi. 11, vii. 9, 13.

6. ὁ δὲ λέγει αὐταῖς κτλ.] The Angel is not an apparition merely (vi. 50); he speaks to the women and answers (ἀποκριθείς Mt.) their unspoken fears. Lc. follows another tradition of the Angel's words, but Mt. is in substantial agreement with Mc.; Mc.'s account, however, derives peculiar life and freshness from the absence of conjunctions in the first five clauses. Μὴ ἐκθαμβεῖσθε: Mt. adds ὥμεις, for he has just mentioned the terror which struck the guards at the sight of the Angel; but the contrast would have no meaning for the women, and can scarcely have found a place in the original words. Τὸν Ναζαρηνόν (Mc. only) strikes a familiar note in the memories of these Galilean women (cf. i. 24, x. 47, xiv. 67, notes); τὸν ἔσταυρωμένον (Mt. Mc.) rather than τὸν σταυρωθέντα, for the event is recent, and the Person is still living; cf. 1 Cor. i. 23, Gal. iii. 1, and contrast Jo. xix. 20, 2 Cor. xiii. 4, *Apoc.* xi. 8, where the aor. suffices to express the historical circumstance. Ἦγέρθη, the Resurrection is an accomplished fact, the moment is already past; contrast ἐγήγερται in 1 Cor. xv. 4, 20, where the purpose is to emphasise the abiding truth of the Lord's risen life. "Ιδε ὁ τόπος κτλ. 'here is the loculus where the Body lay; you can see for yourselves that it is not there' (Jerome: "ut si meis verbis non creditis vacuo credatis sepulchro"). In Mt. the Angel reminds the women that the Lord had foretold the issue of the

¶ a\* 7 ὅπου ἔθηκαν αὐτόν. ἀλλὰ ὑπάγετε εἰπατε τοῖς μαθηταῖς αὐτοῦ καὶ τῷ Πέτρῳ ὅτι Προάγει ὑμᾶς εἰς τὴν Γαλειλαίαν ἐκεῖ αὐτὸν ὄψεσθε, καθὼς εἶπεν ὑμῖν. 8 καὶ ἔξελθοῦσαι ἔφυγον ἀπὸ τοῦ μνημείου, εἶχεν γὰρ

7 εἰπατε] pr καὶ C\*D 33 2<sup>po</sup> k | προαγεῖ] ιδον προαγω D k syr<sup>hier</sup> ιδον προαγει 2<sup>po</sup> syr<sup>sin posh</sup> arm ηγερθη απο των νεκρων και ιδον προαγει 1 59 118 209 604 | αυτον] με D k | ειπεν] ειρηκεν Δ ειρηκα D (ειπον 40 72) a<sup>3</sup> ff k q 8 εξελθονσαι...μνημειον] ακουσαντες εξηλθον απο του μνημειον και εφυγον P | εξελθονσαι] ακουσαντες 2<sup>po</sup> (sic) syr<sup>sin posh hel(mg)</sup> arm + ταχυ E min<sup>nonn</sup> 5 | om απο του μνημειον...εκστασις syr<sup>sin</sup> | γαρ] δε ACLΓΔΠ min<sup>omnvid</sup> go

Crucifixion (*καθὼς εἶπεν*); in Lc. this passing reference is expanded into a citation of the prophecy (*μνήσθητε ὡς ἐλάλησεν ὑμῖν κτλ.*), the Evangelist adding, *καὶ ἐμνήσθησαν τῶν ῥημάτων αὐτοῦ*. But the prophecy was addressed, so far as we know, to the Twelve only, and the reference to it, or at least the citation, probably formed no part of the earliest tradition.

7. ἀλλὰ ὑπάγετε κτλ.] Ἀλλά (WM., p. 551) recalls their thoughts from the wonder and awe of the announcement which they had just received to the duty which lay immediately before them; it "breaks off the discourse and turns to a new matter" (Alford). They must go with speed (*ταχύ*, Mt.) and deliver a message to the disciples. Mc. adds *καὶ τῷ Πέτρῳ*, 'and in particular to Peter'; cf. Acts i. 14 σὺν γυναιξίν καὶ Μαριάμ, and the less complete parallel in i. 5 ή Ἰουδαία χώρᾳ καὶ οἱ Ἱεροσολυμεῖται (cf. WM., p. 546). Peter is named, both as the first of the Eleven, and probably also to assure him that his denials are forgiven (Thph.: ὡς κορυφαῖος...ἢ...ἴνα μὴ σκανδαλισθῇ...ὡς αὐτὸς μὴ λόγου ἀξιωθεὶς οὐα ἀρνησάμενος—cf. Bede: "vocatur ex nomine ne desperaret ex negatione"); cf. i Cor. xv. 5 ὁ φθη Κηφᾶ, εἴτα τοῖς δώδεκα. The message would open of course with the tidings of the Resurrection (*εἴπατε ὅτι Ἡγέρθη*, Mt.), but its purpose was to turn the steps of the Apostles to Galilee whither

the Master would precede them. Προάγει ὑμᾶς εἰς τὴν Γαλειλαίαν (Mt. Mc.); cf. xiv. 28, note; the reminder is necessary, for the words of Christ would be forgotten for the while in the excitement of the great events which had occurred. It is more difficult to understand why the matter should have been so urgent if a week at least was to intervene before the Risen Christ left Jerusalem (Jo. xx. 26). Perhaps it was important to dispel at the outset any expectations of an immediate setting up of the Kingdom of God in a visible form at Jerusalem (cf. Acts i. 6). *Καθὼς εἶπεν ὑμῖν*: Mt., with a complete change of reference, ιδον εἶπον ὑμῖν.

8. καὶ ἔξελθοῦσαι ἔφυγον κτλ.] The picture is true to psychological probability. At first the Angel's words only increased their terror; they turned and fled from the tomb, trembling and unable for the moment to collect their thoughts or control themselves. On *ἔκστασις* see v. 42 note, and cf. Lc. v. 26, Acts iii. 10, x. 10; *εἶχεν = ἔλαβεν* (Lc. l.c., cf. Field, Notes, p. 44 f. and Deissmann, *B. St.* p. 293), *κατέχεν*, cf. Jos. ant. v. 1, 18 *κατάπληξις εἶχε τοὺς ἀκούοντας*: for other exx. see Field *ad l.* As they came to themselves and began to realise the truth, joy mingled with their fear and predominated (Mt. *μετὰ φόβου καὶ χαρᾶς μεγάλης*), and their flight was changed into an eager haste to de-

αὐτὰς τρόμος καὶ ἔκστασις· καὶ οὐδενὶ οὐδὲν εἶπαν,  
ἔφοβοῦντο γάρ <sup>¶</sup> \* \* \* \* \*

¶ NB syr<sup>sin</sup>

[<sup>9</sup>Αναστὰς δὲ πρωὶ πρώτῃ σαββάτου ἐφάνη 9

8 τρομος] φοβος DII<sup>\*vid</sup> arm<sup>vid</sup> | om καὶ εκστασις arm 9 δε C<sup>2</sup>] και C<sup>1</sup><sup>\*vid</sup> om δε  
13 69 124 604<sup>\*</sup> alnonn arm<sup>zoh</sup>+o Iησους Fw 13 28 69 124 604 1071 al<sup>nonm</sup> c ff vg<sup>sixt</sup>  
arm<sup>codzoh</sup> | om πρωὶ P | πρωτῃ] τη μα Eus syr<sup>hier</sup> | σαββατων KII i al<sup>satm</sup> Eus<sup>2</sup> |  
εφανη πρωτον] εφανερωσεν πρωτοι D εφανη πρωτη 2<sup>ro</sup> om πρωτον syr<sup>hier</sup> arm me Eus<sup>1</sup>

liver their message (ἔδραμον ἀπαγγεῖλαι κτλ.). But Mc.'s narrative comes to an abrupt end before this second stage of feeling has been reached; fear still prevails, and the shock has been too severe to permit them to say a word about what had occurred. Οὐδενὶ οὐδὲν εἶπαν is too general a statement to justify the limitation κατὰ τὴν ὥδον (cf. Lc. x. 4); until their terrors had subsided they had no thought for the Angel's message and no tongue to tell it. According to Lc. xxiv. 9 it was delivered by them afterwards; cf. vv. 10, 11, notes, and Jo. xx. 18. With the abrupt ending comp. ix. 6, ἔκφοβοι γάρ ἐγένοντο: the parallel however is not exact, and it is perhaps improbable that the Evangelist deliberately concluded a paragraph with ἔφοβοῦντο γάρ (cf. WH., Notes, p. 46). As Mr Burkitt suggests (*Two Lectures*, p. 28), some object may have followed the verb. For an instance of a broken sentence at the end of an imperfect document see 1 Esdr. ix. 55, compared with 2 Esdr. xviii. 13.

#### 9—11. THE APPEARANCE TO MARY MAGDALENE (JO. XX. 11—18).

9. ἀναστὰς δὲ πρωὶ κτλ.] The sequence is suddenly broken, and Mary Magdalene, who is one of the three women mentioned in xvi. 1, becomes, as in Jo. xx., the subject of a distinct narrative which in form at least is not consistent with the Marcan tradition. She is introduced to the reader, as if she had not been named before (παρ' ἦς κτλ.); alone of the three she sees the Lord, and announces the Resur-

rection to the Eleven, and no explanation is given of this unexpected turn in the events. Lastly, the paragraph has evidently been detached from some document in which the Lord has been the subject of the preceding sentence; in its present position ὁ Ἰησοῦς is imperatively required (cf. WH., Notes, p. 51). On the general question of the authorship of the fragment xvi. 9—20 and its relation to the Gospel, see the Introduction. Πρωὶ is doubtless to be taken with ἀναστὰς, not with ἐφάνη, and thus it determines the time when the Resurrection took place—on the third day, as the Lord had foretold, though before daybreak, perhaps in the earliest hour of the morning watch.

πρώτῃ σαββάτου] Cf. τῇ μᾶτρᾳ τῶν σαββάτων (v. 1, note); the use of πρώτος in this phrase is apparently unique, though we have πρώτῃ ἡμέρᾳ τῶν ἀξύμων in xiv. 12, Mt. xxvi. 17. The Gospels moreover seem to prefer σάββατα in this connexion, but cf. 1 Cor. xvi. 2 κατὰ μίαν σαββάτου. Ἐφάνη occurs here only in reference to an appearance of the risen Christ; see, however, Num. xxiii. 4 ἐφάνη ὁ θεὸς τῷ Βαλαάμ, Lc. ix. 8 Ἡλείας ἐφάνη. A more usual term is ὄφθη, Lc. xxiv. 34, 1 Cor. xv. 5 ff.; cf. ὅπτανόμενος Acts i. 3, and ὅψεσθε v. 7, *supra*. That the Lord appeared first to the Magdalene may have been inferred from the narrative of Jo. xx. 11 ff. St Paul's Κηφᾶ εἴτε τοῖς δώδεκα (1 Cor. xv. 5) determines only the relative order of the appearance to Peter and the other Apostles.

*πρωτον Μαρίᾳ τῇ Μαγδαληνῇ παρ' ἡς ἐκβεβλήκει ἐπτά  
τῷ ιο δαιμόνια. ὁ ἐκείνη πορευθεῖσα ἀπήγγειλεν τοῖς μετ' ἑ*

9 παρ C<sup>\*</sup>DLΨ<sup>12</sup> 33] αφ AC<sup>9</sup>EGKMSUVXΓΔΠΣΡ min<sup>fereomn</sup> 10 εκεινῃ]+δε  
C<sup>\*vid</sup> min<sup>pauc</sup> cflq sinpesh arm | πορευθεισα] απελθουσα KII min<sup>pauc</sup> videns 1 | τοις  
μετ αυτου] pr αυτοις D τοις μ. αυτης syrhier

*παρ' ἡς ἐκβεβλήκει ἔ. δ.]* The fact was known also to Lc. (viii. 2 ἀφ' ἡς δ. ἔ. ἐξεληλύθει). 'Εκβάλλειν παρά occurs here only: for παρά with the gen. indicating the quarter from which a movement proceeds see viii. 11, xii. 2, xiv. 43, and on its distinction from ἀπό cf. WM., p. 456f. 'Ἐπτὰ δαιμόνια ("septenarii spiritus," Tertullian, cited above p. 95) recalls Mt. xii. 45, ἐπτὰ ἔτερα πνεύματα πονηρότερα, and the striking contrast in Apoc iii. 1 τὰ ἔ. πνεύματα τοῦ θεοῦ. Cf. Thph.: ἐπτὰ δαιμ., τὰ ἐναντία τῶν ἐπτὰ τῆς ἀρετῆς πνεύματων. To Celsus it appeared to be a fatal objection to the Christian faith that the earliest witness of the Resurrection should have been, on the shewing of the Gospels themselves, a γυνὴ πάροιστρος. The objection repeats itself, though the tone is widely different, in the last words of Renan's chapter on *Jésus au tombeau*: "pouvoir divin de l'amour! moments sacrés où la passion d'une hallucinée donne au monde un Dieu ressuscité!" But the hallucination of the Magdalene belongs to the μωρὸν τοῦ θεοῦ, which is at once wiser and stronger than men. Renan, however, has ludicrously overestimated the place which Mary Magdalene holds among the witnesses of the Resurrection; cf. *Les Apôtres*, p. 13, "la gloire de la résurrection appartient donc à Marie de Magdala; après Jésus, c'est Marie qui a le plus fait pour la fondation du christianisme." So far was this from being recognised by the Apostolic age that St Paul does not even mention her in his summary of the evidence (1 Cor. xv. 5 ff.).

10. *ἐκείνη πορευθεῖσα ἀπήγγειλεν κτλ.]* Cf. Jo., ἔρχεται...ἀγγέλλουσα τοῖς μαθηταῖς. Both accounts are singularly devoid of the animation which such a moment would suggest; contrast ἔδραμον, Mt. xxviii. 8, and *praecurrents*, which some O.L. texts substitute here. 'Εκείνη, illa, cf. v. 13: the pronoun is neither emphatic nor antithetic, merely indicating the subject, as in Jo. v. 46, vii. 45—a non-Marcan use; cf. Blass, *Gr.* p. 168. Mc. seems also to have avoided the colourless πορεύεσθαι, which occurs abundantly in the other Gospels, and thrice in this context; in ix. 30, if genuine, it has the specific sense of taking a journey. *Tois μετ' αὐτοῦ γενομένοις*: 'to those who had been with Him,' cf. ii. 19, iii. 14, Jo. xiii. 33, xvii. 12, Acts iv. 13. In their strictest sense the words describe only the Apostolic body, yet see Acts i. 21; all the other μαθηταί who were in Jerusalem at the time were probably in the company (comp. v. 12, note, Acts i. 13 ff.). Though Jerusalem was keeping the Feast, the disciples were occupied in mourning and bewailing their loss; cf. Jo. xvi. 20 κλαύσετε καὶ θρηνήσετε ὑμεῖς. The combination πενθεῖν καὶ κλαίειν is frequent, cf. 2 Regn. xix. 1, 2 Esdr. xi. 4, xviii. 9, Lc. vi. 25, Jas. iv. 9, Apoc. xviii. 11, 15, 19; the present passage is apparently imitated by Ps. Pet. (ev. 7 ἐνηστεύομεν (Mc. ii. 20) καὶ ἐκαθεξόμεθα πενθούντες καὶ κλαίοντες νυκτὸς καὶ ἡμέρας ἕως τοῦ σαββάτου, cf. ib. 12 ἡμεῖς δὲ οἱ δώδεκα μαθηταὶ τοῦ κυρίου ἐκλαίομεν καὶ ἐλυπούμεθα).

αὐτοῦ γενομένοις, πενθοῦσι καὶ κλαίουσιν· <sup>11</sup> κάκεῖνοι ΙΙ  
ἀκούσαντες ὅτι ζῇ καὶ ἐθεάθη ὑπ' αὐτῆς ἡπίστησαν.

<sup>12</sup> Μετὰ δὲ ταῦτα <sup>¶</sup> δυσὶν ἐξ αὐτῶν περιπατοῦσιν Ι 2 <sup>¶ go</sup>

IO γινομενοις 69 | πενθουσιν AL

εκεινοι δε C\* c ff q me εκεινοι LUΨΡ 127 1071 εscr syr<sup>hcl</sup> arm [ηπιστησαν] και ουκ επιστευσαν αυτη (-tw D\*) D

II κακεινοι AC<sup>3</sup>D\*ΧΓΔΠΣ min<sup>pl</sup> n vg]

12 om περιπατουσιν i syr<sup>hier</sup> arm

II. κάκεῖνοι ἀκούσαντες ὅτι ζῇ κτλ.] According to Jo., Mary's report was conveyed in the words 'Εώρακα τὸν κύριον. This writer's account goes further; Mary can testify that the Master is alive (ζῇ); what she had seen was not a mere vision. This was the constant belief of the eye-witnesses: Lc. xxiv. 5, 23, Acts i. 3, xxv. 19, Rom. vi. 10, Apoc. i. 18, ii. 8. 'Εθεάθη: this word, which is not used in the genuine work of Mc. but occurs frequently in Jo., seems to point to the beauty and wonderfulness of what she saw; cf. Jo. i. 14, 32, Acts i. 11, xxii. 9, I Jo. i. 1, iv. 12, 14. For the aor. pass. see Mt. vi. 1, xxiii. 5. Our writer uses θεᾶσθαι again in v. 14, but in the middle.

ἡπίστησαν] Of this result Jo. says nothing; Lc. connects it with the message of the women (xxiv. II ἐφάγησαν...λῆπος τὰ ρύματα ταῦτα καὶ ἡπίστοντον αὐταῖς)—the occasion is possibly the same, for no Evangelist mentions both visits; cf. v. 8, note. 'Απιστεῖν, which is common in class. Gk., occurs but seldom in the N. T. (Lc. ev. 2 act. 1, Paul<sup>2</sup>, I Pet.<sup>1</sup>, and twice in this fragment, vv. 11, 16); the stronger ἀπιστεῖν is more frequent in Biblical Gk. (LXX.<sup>48</sup>, N.T.<sup>14</sup>); the relative meanings of the two may be studied in Heb. iii. 12, 18 f., iv. 11, where ἀπιστία is seen to pass readily into ἀπειθεῖα. The disciples had reached only the first stage; see v. 14, note.

12—13. APPEARANCE TO TWO DISCIPLES ON THEIR WAY INTO THE COUNTRY (Lc. xxiv. 13—32).

12. μετὰ δὲ ταῦτα δυσὶν κτλ.] The

writer knows only that this manifestation was subsequent to that which was vouchsafed to the Magdalene (cf. πρῶτον, v. 9); from Lc. we learn that it took place on the same day (ἐν αὐτῇ τῇ ἡμέρᾳ, xxiv. 13). Μετὰ ταῦτα (τοῦτο) is not a Marcan phrase, but occurs frequently in Lc. and Jo. (Lc. ev. 5, act. 4, Jo.<sup>12</sup>). The two belonged to the company of the Eleven, for ἐξ αὐτῶν apparently looks back to ἔκεινοι in the preceding verse; in Lc., where the same phrase occurs, the reference is less distinct, but the Apostolic party are probably intended (cf. v. 10). They were walking when they met Him, on their way to the country (*εἰς ἄγρον*, cf. ἀπ' ἄγροῦ, xv. 21), i.e., as Lc. explains, *εἰς κώμην ἀπέχουσαν σταδίους ἐξήκοντα ἀπὸ Ἱερουσαλήμ*, ἥ ὄνομα Ἐμμαούς. A walk of about seven English miles brought them to this place, which cannot therefore have been Emmaus Nicopolis, now *Amwâs*, 22 miles from Jerusalem on the Jaffa road (I Macc. iii. 40, 57, iv. 3, Jos. ant. xiii. I. 3, etc.; cf. Eus. onom. αὕτη ἐστὶν ἡ νῦν Νικόπολις, and see Neubauer, géogr. du T., p. 100 f.). Josephus (B. J. vii. 6. 6) mentions a *χωρίον* of the same name, distant from Jerusalem *σταδίους τριάκοντα* (v.l. ἐξήκοντα) which may be identical with Lc.'s *κώμη*. Caspari suggests Mozah (Josh. xviii. 26), which in some mss. of the LXX. appears as 'Αμωσά or 'Αμμουσά (ΑΜΩΣΑ). The site is necessarily undetermined, but *el-Kubeibeh*, *Kulonieh*, and *el-Khamasa* have been proposed, places which lie respectively N.W., W., and S.W. of

ἐφανερώθη ἐν ἑτέρᾳ μορφῇ, πορευομένοις εἰς ἀγρόν·

13 <sup>13</sup> κάκεῖνοι ἀπελθόντες ἀπήγγειλαν τοῖς λοιποῖς· οὐδὲ

¶ n ἔκείνοις ἐπίστευσαν.<sup>¶</sup>

§ o 14 <sup>14</sup> <sup>§</sup> <sup>14</sup> *Υστερον* [δὲ] ἀνακειμένοις αὐτοῖς τοῖς ἔνδεκα

13 εκείνοις L ff arm

14 υστερον δε ADΣ 2<sup>pe</sup> al[pauc] syrr<sup>pesh hel\*</sup> me aeth] om δε CEGKLMSUVXΓΔΠΨΡ min<sup>pl</sup> ff vg syr<sup>hel\*</sup> arm | om αυτοῖς L 13 syrr<sup>pesh hel</sup> arm

the city. Of these *Kulonieh*, or rather the adjacent *Beit Mizza* (Mozah), seems to have the best claim.

Lc. gives the name of one of the two disciples as *Κλεόπας*, i.e. *Κλεόπατρος* (cf. *'Αντίπας = Ἀντίπατρος*, Apoc. ii. 13, and see Lightfoot, *Galatians*, p. 267).

'Ἐν ἑτέρᾳ μορφῇ suggests a transformation analogous to that described in ix. 2, but the account in Lc. forbids this; there was clearly nothing in the Lord's appearance to distinguish Him from any other wayfaring man. The words must be explained as contrasting the Magdalene's impression (*v. 9*) with that received by the two; to her He had seemed to be a *κηπουρός* (Jo. xx. 15), to them He appeared in the light of a *συνοδοιπόρος*. Lc. explains that their inability to recognise Him was due to their own infatuation (xxiv. 16); when that was removed, they knew Him at once (*ib. v. 31*). 'Ἐν ἑτέρῳ σχήματι might have been expected in this connexion, but σχῆμα, as Lightfoot suggests, may have been "avoided instinctively, as it might imply an illusion or an imposture" (*Philippians*, p. 129). For the Gnostic notion that the Lord's humanity possessed the power of assuming different forms see *Acta Johannis*, 1 ff. (ed. James, p. 3). A similar property is ascribed to St Thomas (*Acta Thomae*, 34, ed. Tisch., p. 219, *ἄνθρωπος γὰρ εἴ δύο μορφὰς ἔχων, καὶ ὅπου ἀνθέλγει ἔκει εὑρίσκῃ*).

13. κάκεῖνοι...ἀπήγγειλαν τοῖς λοιποῖς κτλ.] Vg. et illi euntes nuntiaverunt ceteris (cf. ἔκείνη, v. 10, note; on the crasis κάκ. see Gregory, *prolegg.* i.

p. 96). The circumstances are given by Lc. (xxiv. 33 f.). Οὐδὲ ἔκείνοις ἐπίστευσαν. The writer of the fragment is evidently not indebted to Lc. for his knowledge of the facts, for according to Lc. the two were met by their brethren at Jerusalem with the cry ἡγέρθη ὁ κύριος καὶ ὥφθη Σίμων. Those who shared this conviction would certainly not have been unwilling to find a confirmation of their hopes in the tidings from Emmaus. At the same time there may have been and probably was (cf. Mt. xxviii. 16, Jo. xx. 24 ff.) another current of feeling which was adverse to the testimony of Simon, and those who were under its influence would have rejected the story of the two. Aug. is possibly right in his view of this apparent discrepancy: "quid intelligendum est nisi aliquos ibi fuisse qui hoc nollent credere?" Οὐδέ takes up and accentuates the negative implied in ἡγίστησαν (*v. 11*). The two men did not fare better than the solitary woman who had been the first to announce the Resurrection.

14—18. APPEARANCES TO THE ELEVEN (Lc. xxiv. 36—43, Jo. xx. 19—23, Mt. xxviii. 16—20; cf. 1 Cor. xv. 5 ff.).

14. *ὑστερον δέ κτλ.*] At length, after manifestations vouchsafed to an individual and to two disciples not of Apostolic rank, the Lord revealed Himself to the Apostolic college. The paragraph which follows seems to be a summary of the various narratives within the writer's knowledge which spoke of appearances to that body. It is without note of time or

έφανερώθη, καὶ ὠνείδισεν τὴν ἀπιστίαν αὐτῶν<sup>¶</sup> καὶ      ¶ Σ  
§ σκληροκαρδίαν ὅτι τοῖς θεασαμένοις αὐτὸν ἐγηγερ-      § Η

14 εγηγερμενον] om X+ (et) nuntiantibus (illis) o q

place, and v. 19 suggests that it is intended to cover the whole period between the evening of the Resurrection-day and the Ascension. "Υστερον δέ, another non-Markan phrase, completes the series started by πρῶτον (v. 9) and continued by μετὰ δὲ ταῦτα (v. 12); cf. Mt. xxi. 34 ff. ἀπέστειλεν...πάλιν ἀπέστειλεν...ὑστερον δέ (Mc. ἔσχατον) ἀπέστειλεν: xxii. 25 ff. ὁ πρῶτος...ὁ δεύτερος...ὑστερον δέ (Mc. ἔσχατον) πάντων. 'Ανακειμένοις αὐτοῖς τοῖς ἔνδεκα ἐφ.: the first visit of the risen Christ to the Eleven themselves was paid when they were at table. This circumstance agrees with the time of day (Lc. xxiv. 29, 33, Jo. xx. 19), and moreover seems to be implied in Lc. xxiv. 41, where they answer the Lord's question ἔχετε τι βρώσιμον by producing some cooked fish (ἰχθύος ὄπτον μέρος). Αὐτοῖς τοῖς ἔνδεκα, *ipso* (not *illis*, Vg.) *undecim*: *αὐτοῖς* contrasts the Eleven as a body with the isolated witnesses who had brought reports of the earlier manifestations. The use of *οἱ ἔνδ.* (cf. Lc.) does not decide the question whether the writer was aware of the absence of Thomas: 'the Eleven' are the Apostolic body regarded as an unit, cf. the use of *οἱ δώδεκα* in Jo. xx. 24, 1 Cor. xv. 5, *Ev. Petr.* 12. 'Εφανερώθη: a favourite word with St John, especially in reference to the self-manifestations of Christ (Jo. i. 31, ii. 11, vii. 4, xxi. 1 bis, 14, 1 Jo. i. 2 bis, ii. 28, iii. 5, 8).

καὶ ὠνείδισεν τὴν ἀπιστίαν αὐτῶν κτλ.] The writer is still upon the note which he struck in vv. 11, 13. He shews himself independent both of Jo., whose account seems to leave no place for this rebuke, and Lc., who represents the Eleven as disbelieving their own senses (vv. 37, 41); in our

fragment a middle course is taken which agrees with the previous context (*τοῖς θεασαμένοις αὐτον...οὐκ ἐπίστενσαν*). 'Ωνείδισεν is not used elsewhere of a censure pronounced by the Lord on the Apostles. He 'reproached' Bethsaida, Chorazin and Capernaum for their impenitence (Mt. xi. 20), but His unfavourable judgements on His disciples are expressed in rebukes (viii. 33), not in reproaches. It may have been that something sharper than rebuke (cf. xiv. 41, note) was necessary to rouse them from the faithless despondency into which they had been plunged by the Crucifixion; but the use of the word is more probably one sign among many of a handling less delicate and psychologically exact than that to which we are accustomed in the canonical gospels. Τὴν ἀπιστίαν αὐτῶν καὶ σκληροκαρδία laid to the charge of the Apostles (cf. x. 5), or even ἀπιστία: they are διληπότοι (Mt. vi. 30, viii. 26, xiv. 31, xvi. 8); their faith is immature, wanting in promptness, and sometimes on the point of collapse (Mc. iv. 40, xi. 22, Lc. xxii. 32); there is a real danger lest they should drift into final unbelief (Jo. xx. 27 μὴ γίνονται πιστοί), but ἀπιστοι in the strict sense they are not. Similarly the Lord complains of the callousness (viii. 17), rather than of the hardness of their hearts; the latter state goes along with impenitence (Rom. ii. 5), and implies the absence or failure of love. The words are harsher than any which the Lord is elsewhere reported to have used towards His disciples, although it is possible, as has been suggested, that a peculiarly drastic treatment was necessary at this moment. "Οτι, for that; cf. WM., p. 551. 'Εγηγερμένον, not ἐγερθέντα:

15 μένον [ἐκ νεκρῶν] οὐκ ἐπίστευσαν. <sup>15</sup>καὶ εἶπεν αὐτοῖς  
Πορευθέντες εἰς τὸν κόσμον ἄπαντα κηρύξατε τὸ

<sup>14</sup> om. εκ νεκρῶν C<sup>3</sup>DEFGHKLMSUVΓΠΨɒ min<sup>pl</sup> latt syrr<sup>pesh hier</sup> me aeth (hab AC\*ΧΔ min<sup>nonn</sup> syr<sup>hcl</sup> arm) <sup>15</sup> αὐτοῖς] προς αὐτοὺς D | om απαντά D syr<sup>hier</sup> me | το εναγγελιον] + μου syrr<sup>pesh hier</sup> (cf. Act. Pil. A cod. E ap. Tisch. p. 259)

they had seen Him in His risen state; cf. 2 Tim. ii. 8 μνημόνευε...έγηγερμένον, 'have Him in remembrance as (not raised merely but) risen.' See note on v. 6.

Jerome (*c. Pelag.* ii. 15) found here in some copies of the Gospel, chiefly Greek, the remarkable addition: "Et illi satisfaciebant dicentes, Saeculum istud iniquitatis et incredulitatis sub Satana est qui (cod. quae) non sinit per immundos spiritus ueram dei apprehendi uirtutem. idcirco iam nunc reuela iustitiam tuam." The Greek text of this passage with its context has now come to light in the Freer ms. of the Gospels (W), which after οὐκ ἐπίστευσαν proceeds: κάκεῖνοι ἀπελογοῦντο (cod. -ντε) λέγοντες ὅτι 'Ο αἰών οὗτος τῆς ἀνομίας καὶ τῆς ἀπιστίας ὑπὸ τὸν σατανᾶν ἔστιν τὸν μὴ ἔωντα πὸ πνευμάτων ἀκαθάρτων (cod. ὁ μὴ ἔων τὰ ὑπὸ τῶν πν. ἀκάθαρτα) τὴν ἀλήθειαν τοῦ θεοῦ καταλαβέσθαι καὶ δύναμιν. διὰ τοῦτο ἀποκάλυψθόν σου τὴν δικαιοσύνην ἥδη. ἔκεινοι ἔλεγον [?ταῦτα] τῷ χριστῷ. καὶ ὁ χριστὸς ἔκεινοις προσέλεγον ὅτι Πεπλήρωται ὁ ὥρος τῶν ἐτῶν τῆς ἔξουσίας τοῦ σατανᾶ. ἀλλὰ ἔγγιζε ἄλλα δεινὰ καὶ [?ἔκεινοις] ὑπὲρ ὧν ἀμαρτησάντων ἔγὼ παρεδόθην εἰς θάνατον ὡν ὑποστρέψωσιν εἰς τὴν ἀλήθειαν καὶ μηκέτι ἀμαρτήσωσιν, ὡν τὴν ἐν οὐρανῷ πνευματικὴν καὶ ἄφθαρτον τῆς δικαιοσύνης δόξαν κληρονομήσωσιν. ἀλλὰ πορευθέντες εἰς τὸν κόσμον ἄπαντα κτλ.

On the text and interpretation of this fragment and its relation to the Marcan Appendix see *Two new Gospel fragments* in Lietzmann's *Kleine Texte* (E. tr., Cambridge, 1908), pp. 9-12.

15. καὶ εἶπεν αὐτοῖς Πορευθέντες κτλ.] The words are in strange contrast to

the stern reproof of the previous verse; the extreme compression which the writer of the fragment practises has led him to connect two occasions which were separated by more than a week. At the first interview the Eleven were entrusted with a new mission (πέμπω ὑμᾶς, Jo.), but the particulars were reserved for the meeting in Galilee (Mt.). On the whole the present passage follows the lines of the Galilean charge; πορευθέντες κτλ. corresponds to Mt.'s ποροῦν μαθητεύσατε πάντα τὰ ἔθνη, and in each account there is a reference to baptism as connected with the worldwide teaching. Yet there is no indication of dependence on Mt.; our writer pursues his own course (vv. 17 f.), and probably fuses later instructions with those which belong to the interview among the Galilean hills.

In *Act. Pil. A* (*c. xiv.*) these verses (15-18) are quoted with the preface εἴδομεν τὸν Ἰησοῦν καὶ τοὺς μαθητὰς αὐτοῦ καθιζόμενον εἰς τὸ ὅρος τὸ καλούμενον Μαμίλχ (al. Μαμβήχ); see the note on this in Thilo, p. 617 ff.

That the Eleven were to be the heralds of the Gospel to the world, as the Master had been its herald in Galilee (i. 14), was a revelation reserved for the days after the Resurrection; but the catholic mission of the Gospel had been foretold before the Passion, in nearly the same words that are used here (Mt. xxvi. 13, Mc. xiv. 9, notes). Πάσῃ τῇ κτίσει has, however, a Pauline ring: in Mc. κτίσις is used only in the phrase ἀπ' ἀρχῆς κτίσεως (x. 6, xiii. 19, notes); in St Paul we find it in its present connexion (Col. i. 23 τοῦ εὐαγγελίου οὕτούσατε τοῦ κηρυχθέντος ἐν πάσῃ

εὐαγγέλιον<sup>¶</sup> πάση τῇ κτίσει. <sup>16</sup> ὁ πιστεύσας καὶ <sup>16 Π. D.\*</sup>  
 βαπτισθεὶς σωθήσεται, ὁ δὲ ἀπιστήσας κατακριθή-  
 σεται. <sup>17</sup> σημεῖα δὲ <sup>§</sup>τοῖς πιστεύσασιν ἀκολουθήσει <sup>17 § syr<sup>ea</sup></sup>  
 ταῦτα· ἐν τῷ ὄνόματί μου δαιμόνια ἐκβαλοῦσιν,

<sup>16 ο πιστεύσας]</sup> ο πιστευων 1071 pr oti D 1071 2<sup>ρη</sup> 6<sup>η</sup> βαπτισθεὶς pr o ΛΔ  
 17 ακολουθησι C<sup>2</sup>LΨ παρακολουθησι AC<sup>2</sup>D<sup>2</sup>P 33 | εν] επι Λ | εκβαλλονσιν D

κτίσει, where see Lightfoot's note). Πᾶσα ἡ κτίσις is 'the whole creation' (R.V.), as in Rom. viii. 22: cf. Judith ix. 12 βασιλεὺν πάσης κτίσεώς σου, xvi. 14 σοὶ δούλευσάτω πᾶσα ἡ κτίσις σου, 3 Macc. ii. 2, 7, vi. 2. Here probably the phrase = πάσῃ τῇ οἰκουμένῃ (Euth.) sc. to all men, cf. πάντα τὰ ἔθνη, Mt.; not however without an outlook upon the inanimate world, to which the Gospel offers the hope of an ἀποκατάστασις πάντων (Rom. l.c., 2 Pet. iii. 13).

16. ὁ πιστεύσας καὶ βαπτισθεὶς κτλ.] Vg. *qui crediderit et baptizatus fu-erit*: the aor. participles describe acts which are past in relation to the time of the principal verb, for both the acceptance of the Gospel and the ministration of baptism precede salvation (cf. Burton § 134 f.). *Βαπτισθεὶς*, pass., corresponds to *βαπτίζοντες* in Mt.; converts were to receive baptism at the hands of the Eleven or of other disciples; the middle is used (Acts xxii. 16) where the voluntary submission of the recipient is chiefly in view. For *σώζεσθαι* in the deeper sense of gaining restoration to spiritual health see viii. 35 (2<sup>o</sup>), x. 26, xiii. 13, notes. The connexion between *πίστις* and *σωτηρία* is illustrated in the Gospels by the miracles of healing, and in the Epistles takes its place as an axiom of Christian soteriology; baptism is less commonly but as distinctly associated with 'salvation' in the Apostolic writings (1 Pet. iii. 21 ὑμᾶς...νῦν σώζει βάπτισμα, Tit. iii. 5 ἔσωσεν ὑμᾶς διὰ λουτροῦ παλιγγενεσίας: cf. Lc.'s use of οἱ σωζόμενοι in Acts ii. 47). *Σωθήσεται* is of course not an unconditional promise of final restoration; cf. Euth.;

σωθήσεται εἴγε τὰ τῆς πίστεως καὶ τὰ τοῦ βαπτίσματος ἐπιδείξεται.

ό δὲ ἀπιστήσας κατακριθήσεται] There is no need to repeat the reference to baptism: *ἀπιστήσας* carries with it the neglect of the sacrament of faith, but in itself it is sufficient to secure condemnation. Throughout the fragment this writer lays the greatest emphasis on the primary obligation of belief and the sinfulness of unbelief. The present words are strongly Johannine in tone (cf. Jo. iii. 18), though *κατακρίνει* does not belong to the vocabulary of the Fourth Gospel. Neither the nature nor the ground of the sentence on unbelief appears here; the latter comes into sight in Jo. iii. 19 f.

17. σημεῖα δὲ τοῖς πιστ. ἀκολουθήσει ταῦτα] Cf. Jo. xiv. 12 ὁ πιστεύων εἰς ἐμὲ τὰ ἔργα ἃ ἔγω ποιῶ κάκείνος ποιήσει. The promise is not limited to the Apostles; *τοῖς πιστεύσασιν* includes their converts, and indeed seems specially to point to them (Vg. *eos qui crediderint*, cf. v. 16). That it was fulfilled is evident from casual references in the Epp. of St Paul, e.g. 1 Cor. xii. 28, Gal. iii. 5, though the former passage shews that the *σημεῖα* did not, even in the Apostles' age, attend every believer (*τοῖς π.*, not *τῷ πιστεύσαντι*). Their purpose was to be 'signs' of the Divine mission of the Church, not to accredit the faith of the individual. On *σημεῖον* see xiii. 22, note; standing by itself as it does here, the word is characteristic of St John (Jo.<sup>16</sup>). In *σημεῖα...ταῦτα* the pronoun is *quasi-predicative*: 'these are the signs which shall follow.'

ἐν τῷ ὄνόματί μου κτλ.] The first

¶ 18 γλώσσαις λαλήσουσιν [καιναῖς],<sup>18</sup> [καὶ ἐν ταῖς χερσὶν]  
 ὅφεις ἀροῦσιν, κανὸν θανάτιμόν τι πίωσιν<sup>¶</sup> οὐ μὴ  
 αὐτοὺς βλάψῃ· ἐπὶ ἀρρώστους χεῖρας ἐπιθήσουσιν  
 ¶ II\* καὶ καλῶς<sup>¶</sup> ἔξουσιν.

17 om γλωσσαις λαλ. καιναις δ | om καιναις C\*ΔΨ arm me (hab AC<sup>2</sup>DX rell syrhier) 18 om και εν ταις χερσιν AD syrr<sup>peshier</sup> (hab C\*<sup>2</sup>LM<sup>ms</sup>XΔ i 22 33 604 2<sup>pe</sup> 6<sup>pe</sup> 6<sup>ev</sup> syrr<sup>evhel\*</sup> arm) | πιωσιν D\* | ου μη AC<sup>3</sup>L] ουδεν C\* arm [βλαψει min<sup>mu</sup>

'sign' had already 'followed' the Apostles in their Galilean mission (vi. 13), and the Seventy also (Lc. x. 17 ff.); indeed, the Name had been occasionally used in this way by believers who were not even formally disciples (ix. 38). The post-Apostolic Church believed itself to retain this power: cf. e.g. Justin, *dial.* 30 σῆμερον καὶ ἔξορκίζομενα κατὰ τοῦ ὄντος Ἰησοῦ Χριστοῦ... ἐποτάσσεται: *ib.* 76 καὶ νῦν ἡμεῖς οἱ πιστεύοντες... τὰ δαιμόνια πάντα καὶ πνεύματα πονηρὰ ἔξορκίζοντες ὑποτασσόμενα ἡμῖν ἔχομεν.

[γλώσσαις λαλήσουσι] Cf. Acts ii. 3 f. ὥφθησαν αὐτοῖς διαμεριζόμεναι γλώσσαι... καὶ ἥρξαντο λαλεῖν ἐτέραις γλώσσαις, x. 46 ἥκουν γὰρ αὐτῶν λαλούντων γλώσσαις, *ib.* xix. 6, 1 Cor. xii. 28 ἔθετο ὁ θεὸς ἐν τῇ ἐκκλησίᾳ... γένη γλωσσῶν, and the full treatment of the subject *ib.* c. xiv. Late in the second century Irenaeus (cf. Eus. *H. E.* v. 7) bears witness: πολλῶν ἀκούομεν ἀδελφῶν ἐν τῇ ἐκκλησίᾳ παντοδαπῶς λαλούντων διὰ τοῦ πνεύματος γλώσσαις. For various opinions as to the γλωσσολαλία of the primitive Church see Stanley, *Corinthians*, p. 243 ff., Plumptre's art. *Gift of Tongues* in Smith's *B. D.* (iii. 1555 ff.) and A. Robertson's art. in Hastings (iv. p. 793 ff.), M<sup>o</sup>Giffert, *Hist. of Christianity*, pp. 50 ff., 521 ff., A. Wright, *Some N.T. problems*, p. 277 ff. Καιναῖς may have been suggested by the analogy of καινὴ διαθήκη, καινὸς ἄνθρωπος, or the O. T. καινὸν ἄσμα.

18. ἐν ταῖς χερσὶν ὅφεις κτλ.] Cf. Lc. x. 19 ἰδοὺ δέδωκα ύμῖν τὴν ἔξουσίαν τοῦ πατέριν ἐπάνω ὅφεων... καὶ οὐδὲν

νῦμας οὐ μὴ ἀδικήσει. The incident in Acts xxviii. 3 f., though not a direct illustration, belongs to this class of σημεῖα. More exact fulfilments are described by non-canonical writers, e.g. Papias according to Eus. *H.E.* iii. 39 tells of Barsabbas ὡς δηλητήριον φάρμακον ἐμπιόντος καὶ μηδὲν ἀηδὲς... ὑπομείναντος. The legend of St John and the cup of poison in *Act. Joh.* (Tisch. p. 270) may owe its origin to the saying which our fragment embodies: such stories abounded at a later time, cf. Thph.: πολλοὶ γὰρ καὶ φάρμακα πιόντες διὰ τῆς τοῦ σταυροῦ σφραγίδος ἀβλαβεῖς διετηρήθησαν. For the use made of this passage by pagan objectors in the fourth century see Macar. *Magn.* iii. 16 ὁ πιστεύων καὶ ποιῶν ταῦτα ἡ γνησίας οὐ πεπίστευκεν, ἡ πιστεύων γνησίας οὐ δυνατὸν ἀλλ' ἀσθενὲς ἔχει τὸ πιστεύομενον. St Paul's doctrine of Love (1 Cor. xiii. 8 ff.) suggests an answer to the dilemma. The classical θανάτιμος occurs here only in Biblical Gk., which elsewhere uses the poetical θανατηφόρος (LXX,<sup>5</sup> Jas. iii. 8).

ἐπὶ ἀρρώστους χεῖρας ἐπιθήσουσιν κτλ.] The Twelve had been commissioned to heal the sick, but while the Lord was with them they seem to have used unction, leaving to Him the imposition of hands (vi. 13, note). After the Ascension both signs were employed (see Acts ix. 12, xxviii. 8, Jas. v. 14), and the latter still lingers in the *unctio extrema* of the West and the *εὐχέλαιον* of the Eastern Church; an office for the anointing of the sick was provided in the first

19§<sup>c</sup> Ο μὲν [οὖν] κύριος [Ἰησοῦς] μετὰ τὸ λαλῆσαι 19 § F  
αὐτοῖς ἀνελίφθη εἰς τὸν οὐρανὸν καὶ ἐκάθισεν ἐκ

19 μεν ουν] om ουν C\*L go arm (hab AC<sup>2</sup>D) δε syrr | om κυριος H min<sup>paue</sup> | om Ιησους AC<sup>3</sup>DEGMSUVXGPIΨ min<sup>pl</sup> (hab C\*KLΔ 1 22 33 124 107 1 2<sup>pe</sup> al<sup>paue</sup> c ff o vg  
syrr arm me aeth Ir<sup>int</sup>) ανελημφθη] ανεφερετο 36 40 ανελ. και ανεφ. 68 | τον  
ουρανον] τους ουρανους 13 69 124 346 | εκ δεξιων] εν δεξια ΣΔ min<sup>paue</sup> εν δεξιων Δ

English Prayerbook, but disappeared in 1552. It is interesting to note the concurrence of the same two signs in the ceremonial which followed Baptism (cf. Mason, *Confirmation*, p. 12 f.). The classical καλῶς ἔχειν occurs here only in the N. T.: cf. 1 Esdr. ii. 18; for ἄρρωστος see vi. 5, 13.

19—20. THE ASCENSION, AND ITS SEQUEL (Lc. xxiv. 50 ff., Acts i. 9; cf. 1 Pet. iii. 22, Rom. viii. 34, Heb. viii. 1).

19. ὁ μὲν οὖν κύριος Ἰησοῦς κτλ.] On μὲν οὖν followed by δέ see WM., p. 556, n.; while οὖν looks back to the preceding narrative with its usual consequential force, μὲν...δέ (v. 20) contrasts the new life into which the Lord passed by the Ascension with the work of those whom He left on earth. Mc. very seldom uses either οὖν (x. 9, xi. 31, xiii. 25, xv. 12), or μὲν...δέ (xii. 5, xiv. 21, 28); ὁ κύριος Ἰησοῦς is without example in the Gospels, with the possible exception of Lc. xxiv. 3, though common in the Acts and occurring occasionally in St Paul (1 Cor. xi. 23, xvi. 23). Μετὰ τὸ λαλῆσαι αὐτοῖς: the phrase seems to connect the preceding verses (15—18) with the Ascension, as though they were an outline of the farewell discourse; cf. Lc. xxiv. 51 ἐν τῷ εὐλογεῖν αὐτὸν αὐτὸν διέστη ἀπ' αὐτῶν, Acts i. 9 ταῦτα εἰπὼν...ἐπήρθη. But, regard being had to the general character of the fragment, μετὰ τὸ λ. may be interpreted, ‘after the series of interviews with the Eleven of which a specimen has been given’; cf. Euth.: μετὰ τὸ λαλῆσαι οὐ μόνον τοὺς λόγους τούτους, ἀλλὰ πάντας ὅσους ἐλάλησεν αὐτοῖς ἀπὸ τῆς ἡμέρας τῆς ἀναστάσεως

μέχρι συμπληρώσεως τῶν τεσσαράκοντα ἡμερῶν. This verse is cited by Irenaeus (iii. 10. 6) with the preamble “in fine autem evangelii ait Marcus”; see Introduction.

ἀνελήμφθη εἰς τὸν οὐρανὸν κτλ.] Cf. Acts i. 2, 11, 22, 1 Tim. iii. 16. The use of ἀνελημφθῆναι for the Ascension was perhaps suggested by 4 Regn. ii. 11 ἀνελήμφθη Ἡλειον...ώς εἰς τὸν οὐρανόν, comp. Sir. xlvi. 9, 1 Macc. ii. 58. Other N.T. terms are ἀναβῆναι (Jo. vi. 62, xx. 17 bis, perhaps from Ps. xxiii. (xxiv.) 3), ἐπαρθῆναι (Acts i. 9), πορευθῆναι εἰς οὐρανόν (1 Pet. iii. 22), διεληλύθεναι τοὺς οὐρανούς (Heb. iv. 14), ἀρπασθῆναι πρὸς τὸν θεόν (Apoc. xii. 5). The Creeds generally employ ἀναβαίνειν (*ascendere*) or ἀνέρχεσθαι, possibly because ἀνελήμφθη (*adsumptus est*) would have admitted a Docetic interpretation (*Apostles' Creed*, p. 71 f.); but the festival of the Ascension was known in the East as the Assumption (ἡ ἀνάληψις, ἡ ἐορτὴ τῆς ἀναλήψεως).

When the author of the fragment adds καὶ ἐκάθισεν κτλ. he passes beyond the field of history into that of Christian theology. The belief that the risen and ascended Christ stands or sits at the Right Hand of God is one of the earliest and most cherished of Christian ideas (Acts vii. 55 f., Rom. viii. 34, Eph. i. 20, Col. iii. 1, Heb. i. 3, viii. 1, x. 12, xii. 2, 1 Pet. iii. 22, Apoc. iii. 21), based on the Lord's own use of Ps. cx. 1 (xii. 36, xiv. 62), and it is not unlikely that the writer has adopted here a primitive formula, or echoes a creed-like hymn; cf. 1 Tim. iii. 16 ἀνελήμφθη ἐν δόξῃ. Ἐκ δεξιῶν: so xii. 36, xiv. 62;

20 δεξιῶν τοῦ θεοῦ. <sup>20</sup> ἐκεῖνοι δὲ ἔξελθόντες ἐκῆρυξαν πανταχοῦ, τοῦ κυρίου συνεργοῦντος καὶ τὸν λόγον βεβαιοῦντος διὰ τῶν ἐπακολουθούντων σημείων.]

19 θεοῦ] + πατρος i\* c<sup>scr</sup> me arm<sup>cod</sup> 20 om δια L | σημειων] + αμην C\*EF\*GKL  
MSUVXTΓΔΨ c o me aeth (om AC<sup>2</sup> i 33 al<sup>mu</sup> a<sup>3</sup> q vg syrr arm)

Subscr κατα Μαρκον Β εναγγελιον κατα Μ. ΝΑΣΕΗΚΛΙΓΔΨ k syr<sup>cu</sup> τελος του  
κατα Μ. (αγιον) εναγγελιον min<sup>mu</sup> om MSX

the Epistles use ἐν δεξιᾷ in this connexion. The Creeds show the same variation (Hahn<sup>3</sup>, p. 384).

20 ἐκεῖνοι δὲ ἔξελθόντες κτλ.] Another rapid summary. The writer passes over without mention the return to Jerusalem, and the founding of the Palestinian Churches, and hurries on to the fulfilment of the Catholic mission confided to the Eleven after the Resurrection (v. 15); the contrast to Lc. xxiv. 52 f. is instructive. Ἐκεῖνοι are here clearly the Eleven (v. 14), but the Eleven reinforced by accessions to the Apostolate and by the self-propagating life of the Ecclesia. Ἐξελθόντες, from Jerusalem in the first instance (Acts i. 8); but the word may include all the fresh departures by which the Gospel was carried from one region to another (cf. Acts xv. 40, xvi. 3, 10, 40, xx. 1, 2 Cor. ii. 13, Phil. iv. 15), till the Kingdom of God seemed to have been proclaimed everywhere. Ἐκήρυξαν πανταχοῦ clearly does not belong to the earliest form of Gospel-tradition, but it might have been written as early as the period of St Paul's Roman imprisonment (Col. i. 23). Cf. Clem. R. i Cor. 42 οἱ ἀπόστολοι...ἔξηλθον εὐαγγελιζόμενοι, Herm. sim. ix. 25 ἀπόστολοι καὶ διδάσκαλοι οἱ κηρύξαντες εἰς ὅλον τὸν κόσμον: Justin, apol. i. 45 ἀπὸ Ἱερουσαλήμ οἱ ἀπόστολοι αὐτοῦ ἔξελθόντες πανταχοῦ ἐκήρυξαν.

τοῦ κυρίου συνεργοῦντος κτλ.] Συνεργεῖν, συνεργός are used by St Paul of

human cooperation (e.g. Rom. xvi. 3, 9, 21, 1 Cor. iii. 9, xvi. 16), but not of the cooperation of the ascended Lord,—a thought which is expressed in other ways. Βεβαιοῦν is another Pauline word (Rom. xv. 8, 1 Cor. i. 6, 8), and the phrase βεβαιώσις τοῦ εὐαγγελίου (Phil. i. 7) comes very near to our author's βεβαιοῦν τὸν λόγον: on the technical meaning of βεβαιώσις cf. Deissmann, B. St., p. 104 ff. The whole context has also a striking affinity to Heb. ii. 3, 4 ἀρχὴν λαβόντα λαλεῖσθαι διὰ τοῦ κυρίου ὑπὸ τῶν ἀκουσάντων εἰς ἡμᾶς ἐβεβαιώθη, συνεπιμαρτυροῦντος τοῦ θεοῦ σημείοις. An instance of the combination of βεβαιοῦν and συνεργεῖν is cited by Wetstein from Plutarch: τοῦ βεβαιοῦντος καὶ συνεργοῦντος πρὸς νόησιν καὶ πίστιν. On the participles see Burton, § 449. Ἐπακολουθεῖν occurs again in 1 Tim. v. 10, 24, 1 Pet. ii. 21.

In the Apostolic age, probably within the experience of the writer, the cooperation of the ascended Christ was manifested 'by the accompanying signs' which had been promised to it. Other ages need and receive in other ways indications no less fruitful or sure of His continual Presence with the workers of His Church (Mt. xxviii. 20). Cf. Bede: "numquid quia ista signa non facimus minime credimus?...sancta quippe ecclesia quotidie spiritualiter facit quod tunc per apostolos corporaliter faciebat.....miracula tanto maiora sunt quanto magis spiritualia."

## INDEX OF GREEK WORDS USED IN THE GOSPEL ACCORDING TO ST MARK.

An asterisk denotes that the word is not used elsewhere in the N.T.

ἀββά xiv. 36  
 \*Ἀβιαθάρ ii. 26  
 Ἀβραάμ xii. 26 (LXX.)  
 ἀγαθοτοιεν iii. 4  
 ἀγαθός x. 17, 18 bis  
 ἀγανακτειν x. 14, 41, xiv. 4  
 ἀγαπᾶν x. 21, xii. 30—31 bis (LXX.),  
     33 bis  
 ἀγαπητός i. 11, ix. 7, xii. 6  
 ἀγγαρέυεν xv. 21  
 ἀγγελος i. 2 (LXX.), 13, viii. 38, xii. 25,  
     xiii. 27, 32  
 ἀγεν i. 38, xiii. 11, xiv. 42  
 ἀγέλη v. 11, 13  
 ἀγιος i. 8, 24, iii. 29, vi. 20, viii. 38,  
     xii. 36, xiii. 11  
 ἀγναφος ii. 21  
 ἀγνοειν ix. 32  
 ἀγορά vi. 56, vii. 4, xii. 38  
 ἀγοράζειν vi. 36, 37, xi. 15, xv. 46, xvi. 1  
 \*ἄγρενειν xii. 13  
 ἀγριος i. 6  
 ἀγρός v. 14, vi. 36, 56, x. 29, 30, xi. 8,  
     xiii. 16, xv. 21, xvi. 12  
 ἀγρυπνενειν xiii. 33  
 ἀδελφή iii. 35, vi. 3, x. 29, 30  
 ἀδελφός i. 16, 19, iii. 17, 31, 32, 33,  
     34, 35, v. 37, vi. 3, 17, 18, x. 29,  
     30, xii. 19 ter, 20, xiii. 12 bis  
 ἀδημονειν xiv. 33  
 ἀδύνατος x. 27  
 ἀζυμος xiv. 1, 12  
 ἀθετειν vi. 20, vii. 9  
 αιμα v. 25, 29, xiv. 24  
 αἰρειν ii. 3, 9, ii., 12, 21, iv. 15, 25,  
     vi. 8, 29, 43, viii. 8, 19, 20, 34, xi.  
     23, xiii. 15, 16, xv. 21, 24, xvi. 18  
 αἰτειν vi. 22, 23, 24, 25, x. 35, 38, xi.  
     24, xv. 8, 43  
 αἰτία xv. 26  
 αἰών iii. 29, iv. 19, x. 30, xi. 14  
 αἰώνιος iii. 29, x. 17, 30  
 ἀκάθαρτος i. 23, 26, 27, iii. 11, 30, v.  
     2, 8, 13, vi. 7, vii. 25, ix. 25  
 ἀκανθα iv. 7 bis, 18  
 ἀκάνθινος xv. 17

ἄκαρπος iv. 19  
 ἄκοη i. 28, vii. 35, xiii. 7  
 ἀκολουθειν i. 18, ii. 14 bis, 15, iii. 7,  
     v. 24, vi. 1, viii. 34 bis, ix. 38, x. 21,  
     28, 32, 52, xi. 9, xiv. 13, 54, xv.  
     41, xvi. 17  
 ἀκούειν ii. 1, 17, iii. 8, 21, iv. 3, 9, 12,  
     15, 16, 18, 20, 23, 24, 33, v. 27, vi.  
     2, ii., 14, 16, 20 bis, 29, 55, vii. 14,  
     25, 37, viii. 18, ix. 7, x. 41, 47, xi.  
     14, xii. 28, 29 (LXX.), 37, xiii. 7,  
     xiv. 11, 58, 64, xv. 35, xvi. 11  
 ἀκρίς i. 6  
 ἀκρον xiii. 27  
 ἀκροῦν vii. 13  
 ἀλαβαστρος, ή xiv. 3 bis  
 ἀλαλάζειν v. 38  
 \*ἄλαλος vii. 37, ix. 17, 25  
 ἀλας ix. 50 ter  
 ἀλεύειν i. 16, 17  
 ἀλείφειν vi. 13, xvi. 1  
 \*ἄλεκτοροφωνία xiii. 35  
 ἀλέκτωρ xiv. 30, 72 bis  
 Ἀλέξανδρος xv. 21  
 ἀλήθεια v. 33, xii. 14, 32  
 ἀληθής xii. 14  
 ἀληθώς xiv. 70, xv. 39  
 ἀλίζεσθαι ix. 49  
 ἀλλά i. 44, 45, ii. 17 bis, 22, iii. 26,  
     27, 29, iv. 17, 22, v. 19, 26, 39, vi. 9,  
     52, vii. 5, 15, 19, 25, viii. 33, ix. 13,  
     22, 37, x. 8, 27, 40, 43, 45, xi. 23,  
     32, xii. 14, 25, 27, xiii. 7, ii bis, 20,  
     24, xiv. 28, 29, 36, 49, xvi. 7  
 \*ἄλλαχθι i. 38  
 ἀλλήλων iv. 41, viii. 16, ix. 34, 50, xv.  
     31  
 ἀλλος iv. 5, 7, 8, 18, 36, vi. 15, vii. 4,  
     viii. 28, x. 11, 12, xi. 8, xii. 4, 5, 9,  
     31, 32, xiv. 58, xv. 31, 41  
 ἀλνοις v. 3, 4 bis  
 Ἀλφαῖος ii. 14, iii. 18  
 ἀμάρτημα iii. 28, 29  
 ἀμαρτία i. 4, 5, ii. 5, 7, 9, 10  
 ἀμαρτωλός ii. 15, 16 bis, 17, viii. 38,  
     xiv. 41

- ἀμήν iii. 28, viii. 12, ix. 1, 41, x. 15,  
29, xi. 23, xii. 43, xiii. 30, xiv. 9, 18,  
25, 30  
ἀμπελος xiv. 25  
ἀμπελών xii. 1, 2, 8, 9 *bis*  
\* ἀμφιβάλλειν i. 16  
\* ἀμφοδον xi. 4  
ἄν iii. 29, 35, v. 28, vi. 10, ii. 56 *bis*,  
viii. 35, ix. 1, 37 *bis*, 41, 42, x. 11,  
15, 43, 44, xi. 23, xii. 36 (LXX.), xiii.  
20, xiv. 44, xvi. 18  
δνδ (μέσον) vii. 31  
ἀναβαίνειν i. 10, iii. 13, iv. 7, 8, 32,  
vi. 51, x. 32, 33, xv. 8  
ἀναβλέπειν vi. 41, vii. 34, viii. 24, x.  
51, 52, xvi. 4  
ἀνάγαιον xiv. 15  
ἀναγινώσκειν ii. 25, xii. 10, 26, xiii. 14  
ἀναγκάζειν vi. 45  
ἀναθεματίζειν xiv. 71  
ἀνακείσθαι vi. 26, xiv. 18, xvi. 14  
ἀνακλίνειν vi. 39  
ἀνακράζειν i. 23, vi. 49  
\* ἀνακυλίειν xvi. 4  
ἀναλαμβάνεσθαι xvi. 19  
\* ἀναλος ix. 50  
ἀναμιμησκειν xi. 21, xiv. 72  
ἀναπαύειν vi. 31, xiv. 41  
\* ἀναπηδᾶν x. 50  
ἀναπίπτειν vi. 40, viii. 6  
ἀναστείν xv. 11  
ἀνάστασις xii. 18, 23  
\* ἀναστενάζειν viii. 12  
δναστῆναι i. 35, ii. 14, iii. 26, v. 42,  
vii. 24, viii. 31, ix. 9, 10, 27, 31,  
x. 1, 34, xii. 23, 25, xiv. 57, 60,  
xvi. 9  
ἀνατέλλειν iv. 6, xvi. 2  
ἀναφέρειν ix. 2  
ἀναχωρεῖν iii. 7  
Ἄνδρεας i. 26, 29, iii. 18, xiii. 3  
ἀνερος iv. 37, 39 *bis*, 41, vi. 48, 51,  
xiii. 27  
ἀνέχεσθαι ix. 19  
ἀνήρ vi. 20, 44, x. 2, 12  
ἀνέρωπος i. 17, 23, ii. 10, 27 *bis*, 28,  
iii. 1, 3, 5, 28, iv. 26, v. 2, 8, vii.  
7, 8, 11, 15 *bis*, 18, 20, 21, 23, viii.  
24, 27, 31, 33, 36, 37, 38, ix. 9, 12,  
31 *bis*, x. 7, 9, 27, 33, 45, xi. 2, 30,  
32, xii. 1, 14, xiii. 26, 34, xiv. 13,  
21 *quater*, 41, 62, 71, xv. 39  
ἀνιπτος vii. 2  
δνούγεσθαι vii. 35  
ἀντάλλαγμα viii. 37  
ἀντί x. 45  
ἀνωθεν xv. 38  
ἀπαγγελειν v. 14, 19, vi. 30, xvi. 10,  
13  
ἀπάγειν xiv. 44, 53, xv. 16  
ἀπαρεσθαι ii. 29  
ἀπαλός xiii. 28  
ἀπαντάν xiv. 13  
ἀπαρνείσθαι viii. 34, xiv. 30, 31, 72  
ἀπας i. 27, viii. 25, xi. 32, xvi. 15  
ἀπάτη iv. 19  
ἀπέρχεσθαι i. 20, 35, 42, iii. 13, v. 17,  
20, 24, vi. 28, 32, 36, 37, 46, vii. 24,  
30, viii. 13, ix. 43, x. 22, xi. 4, xii.  
12, xiv. 10, 12, 39, xvi. 13  
ἀπέχειν vii. 6, xiv. 41  
ἀπιστεν xvi. 11, 16  
ἀπιστία vi. 6, ix. 24, xvi. 14  
ἀπιστος ix. 19  
ἀπό i. 9, 42, ii. 20, 21, iii. 7 *bis*, 8 *bis*,  
22, iv. 25, v. 6, 17, 29, 34, 35, vi. 33,  
43, vii. 1, 4, 6, 17, 28, 33, viii. 3, 11,  
15, x. 6, 46, xi. 12, 13, xii. 2, 34, 38,  
xiii. 19, 27, 28, xiv. 35, 36, 54, xv.  
21, 30, 32, 38, 40, 43, 45, xvi. 8  
ἀποβάλλειν x. 50  
ἀποδημεν xii. 1  
\* ἀπόδημος xiii. 34  
ἀποδιδόναι xii. 17  
ἀποδοκιμάζειν viii. 31, xii. 10  
ἀποθνήσκειν v. 35, 39, ix. 26, xii. 19,  
20, 21, 22, xv. 44  
ἀποκαθιστάνειν iii. 5, viii. 25, ix. 12  
ἀποκεφαλίζειν vi. 16, 28  
ἀποκόπτειν ix. 43, 45  
ἀποκρίνεσθαι iii. 33, vi. 37, vii. 28, viii.  
4, 29, ix. 5, 6, 17, 19, x. 3, 24, 51,  
xi. 14, 22, 29, 30, 33, xii. 28, 29, 34,  
35, xiv. 40, 48, 60, 61, xv. 2, 4, 5, 9,  
12  
ἀπόκρυφος iv. 22  
ἀποκτείνειν iii. 4, vi. 19, viii. 31,  
ix. 31 *bis*, x. 34, xii. 5 (1°), 7, 8,  
xiv. 1  
ἀποκτενύναι xii. 5 (2°)  
ἀποκυλίειν xvi. 3  
ἀπολαμβάνειν vii. 33  
ἀπολλύναι i. 24, ii. 22, iii. 6, iv. 38,  
viii. 35 *bis*, ix. 22, 41, xi. 18, xii. 9  
ἀπολύειν vi. 36, 45, viii. 3, 9, x. 2, 4,  
11, 12, xv. 6, 9, ii. 11, 15  
ἀποπλανῆν xiii. 22  
ἀπορεῖν vi. 20  
ἀποστάσιον x. 4 (LXX.)  
\* ἀποστεγάζειν ii. 4  
ἀποστέλλειν i. 2, iii. 14, 31, iv. 29, v.  
10, vi. 7, 17, 27, viii. 26, ix. 37, xi.  
1, 3, xii. 2, 3, 4, 5, 6, 13, xiii. 27,  
xiv. 13  
ἀποστερεῖν x. 19  
ἀπόστολος iii. 14, vi. 30  
ἀποτάσσεσθαι vi. 46  
ἀποφέρειν xv. 1  
ἀπτεσθαι i. 41, iii. 10, v. 27, 28, 30, 31,  
vi. 56 *bis*, vii. 33, viii. 22, x. 13  
ἀπώλεια xiv. 4  
ἀρα iv. 41, xi. 13

ἀργύριον xiv. 11  
 Ἀρειμαθαῖα xv. 43  
 ἀρέσκειν vi. 22  
 ἀριστερός x. 37  
 ἀρνεῖσθαι xiv. 68, 70  
 ἀρρωστος vi. 5, 13, xv. 18  
 ἀρσην x. 6 (LXX.)  
 ἄρτος ii. 26, iii. 20, vi. 8, 37, 38, 41,  
     44, 52, vii. 2, 5, 27, viii. 4, 5, 6,  
     14 bis, 16, 17, 19, xv. 22  
 ἀρτύειν ix. 50  
 ἀρχειν x. 42  
 ἀρχεσθαι i. 45, ii. 23, iv. 1, v. 17, 20,  
     vi. 2, 7, 34, 55, viii. 11, 31, 32, x.  
     28, 32, 41, 47, xi. 15, xii. 1, xiii. 5,  
     xiv. 19, 33, 65, 69, 71, xv. 8, 18  
 ἀρχή i. 1, x. 6, xiii. 9, 19.  
 ἀρχιερεύς ii. 26, viii. 31, x. 33, xi. 18,  
     27, xiv. 1, 10, 43, 47, 53, 54, 55, 60,  
     61, 63, 66, xv. 1, 3, 10, 11, 31  
 ἀρχισυνάγωγος v. 22, 35, 36, 38  
 ἀρχων iii. 22  
 ἀρώμα xvi. 1  
 ἀσβεστος ix. 43  
 ἀσληγεια vii. 22  
 ἀσθενειν vi. 56  
 ἀσθενής xiv. 38  
 ἀσκός ii. 22 quater  
 ἀσπάζεσθαι ix. 15, xv. 18  
 ἀστράσμος xii. 38  
 ἀστήρ xiii. 25  
 ἀσύνετος vii. 18  
 ἀσφαλῶς xiv. 44  
 ἀτιμάζειν xii. 4  
 ἀτιμος vi. 4  
 αὐλή xiv. 54, 66, xv. 16  
 αὐξάνεσθαι iv. 8  
 αὐτόματος iv. 28  
 αὐτός *passim*; *nom.*, i. 8, ii. 25, iii. 13,  
     iv. 27, 38, v. 40, vi. 17, 45, 47, viii. 29,  
     x. 12, xii. 36, 37, xiv. 15, 44, xv. 43  
 ἀφαιρείν xiv. 47  
 ἀφεδρών vii. 19  
 ἀφεστις i. 4, iii. 29  
 ἀφίειν i. 34, xi. 16  
 ἀφίέναι i. 18, 20, 31, ii. 5, 7, 9, 10 bis,  
     iii. 28, iv. 12 (LXX.), 36, v. 19, 37,  
     vii. 8, 12, viii. 13, x. 14, 28, 29,  
     xi. 6, 25 bis, xii. 12, 19, 20, 22, xiii.  
     2, 34, xiv. 6, 50, xv. 36, 37  
 \* ἀφρίζειν ix. 18, 20  
 ἀφροσύνη vii. 22  
 ἀχειροποίητος xiv. 58

βάπτισμός vii. 4  
 βαπτιστής vi. 25, viii. 28  
 Βαραββᾶς xv. 7, II, 15  
 Βαρθολομαῖος iii. 18  
 \* Βαρτιμαῖος x. 46  
 βασανίζειν v. 7, vi. 48  
 βασιλεία i. 15, iii. 24 bis, iv. II, 26,  
     30, vi. 23, ix. 1, 47, x. 14, 15, 23,  
     24, 25, xi. 10, xii. 34, xiii. 8, xiv.  
     25, xv. 43  
 βασιλεύς vi. 14, 22, 25, 26, 27, xiii. 9,  
     xv. 2, 9, 12, 18, 26, 32  
 βαστάζειν xiv. 13  
 βάτος (ό) xii. 26  
 βδέλυγμα xiii. 14 (LXX., Th.)  
 βεβαιοῦν xvi. 20  
 Βεεζεβούλ iii. 22  
 Βηθανία xi. 1, II, 12, xiv. 3  
 Βηθσαΐδ[ν] vi. 45, viii. 22  
 Βηθφαγῆ xi. I  
 βιβλίον x. 4 (LXX.)  
 βίβλος xii. 26  
 βίος xii. 44  
 βλάπτειν xv. 18  
 βλαστάνειν iv. 27  
 βλαστφημεν ii. 7, iii. 28, 29, xv. 29  
 βλαστφημα iii. 28, vii. 22, xiv. 64  
 βλέπειν iv. 12 bis (LXX.), 24, v. 31, viii.  
     15, 18, 23, 24, xii. 14, 38, xiii. 2, 5,  
     9, 23, 33  
 βοῶν i. 3, xv. 34  
 \* Βοανηργές iii. 17  
 βοηθείν ix. 22, 24  
 βόσκειν v. II, 14  
 βούλεσθαι xv. 15  
 βουλευτής xv. 43  
 βροντή iii. 17  
 βρώμα vii. 19

γαζοφιλάκιον xii. 41 bis, 43  
 Γαλειλαῖα i. 9, 14, 16, 28, 39, iii. 7,  
     vi. 21, vii. 31, ix. 30, xiv. 28, xv.  
     41, xvi. 7  
 Γαλειλαῖος xiv. 70  
 γαλήνη iv. 39  
 γαμεῖν vi. 17, x. II, 12, xii. 25  
 γαμίζεσθαι xii. 25  
 γάρ i. 16, 22, 38, ii. 15, iii. 10, 21, iv.  
     22, 25, v. 8, 28, 42, vi. 14, 17, 18,  
     20, 31, 48, 50, 52, vii. 3, 10, 21, 27,  
     viii. 35, 36, 37, 38, ix. 6 bis, 31, 34,  
     39, 40, 41, 49, x. 14, 22, 27, 45, xi.  
     13, 18 bis, 32, xii. 12, 14, 23, 25, 44,  
     xiii. 8, 11, 19, 22, 33, 35, xiv. 2, 5, 7,  
     40, 56, 70, xv. 10, 14, xvi. 4, 8 bis

γαστήρ xiii. 17  
 γέεννα ix. 43, 45, 47  
 Γέθημανεί xiv. 32  
 γεμίζειν iv. 37, xv. 36  
 γενεά viii. 12 bis, 38, ix. 19, xiii. 30  
 γενέσια vi. 21

- γένημα xiv. 25  
 γεννᾶσθαι xiv. 21  
 Γεννησαρέτ vi. 53  
 γένος vii. 26, ix. 29  
 Γερασηνός v. 1  
 γενέσθαι ix. 1  
 γεωργός xii. 1, 2 bis, 7, 9  
 γῆ ii. 10, iv. 1, 5 bis, 8, 20, 26, 28, 31 bis,  
     vi. 47, 53, viii. 6, ix. 3, 20, xiii. 27,  
     31, xiv. 35, xv. 33  
 γίνεσθαι i. 4, 9, 11, 17, 32, ii. 15, 21,  
     23, 27, iv. 4, 10, 11, 17, 19, 22, 32,  
     35, 37, 39, v. 14, 16, 33, vi. 2 bis,  
     14, 21, 26, 35, 47, ix. 3, 6, 7, 21,  
     26, 33, 50, x. 43, xi. 19, 23, xii.  
     10 (LXX.), ii (LXX.), xiii. 7, 18, 19 bis,  
     28, 29, 30, xiv. 4, 17, xv. 33, 42,  
     xvi. 10  
 γινώσκειν iv. 13, v. 29, 43, vi. 33, 38,  
     vii. 24, viii. 17, ix. 30, xii. 12, xiii.  
     28, 29, xv. 10, 45  
 γλώσσα vii. 33, 35, xvi. 17  
 \* γναφεύς ix. 3  
 Γολγοθά[v] xv. 22  
 γονεῖς xiii. 12  
 γόνου xv. 19  
 γονυπετεῖν i. 40, x. 17  
 γραμματεύς i. 22, ii. 6, 16, iii. 22, vii.  
     1, 5, viii. 31, ix. 11, 14, x. 33, xi.  
     18, 27, xii. 28, 32, 35, 38, xiv. 1, 43,  
     53, xv. 1, 31  
 γράφειν i. 2, vii. 6, ix. 12, 13, x. 4, 5,  
     xi. 17, xii. 19, xiv. 21, 27  
 γραφή xii. 10, 24, xiv. 49  
 γρηγορεῖν xiii. 34, 35, 37, xiv. 34, 37, 38  
 γυμνός xiv. 51, 52  
 γυνή v. 25, 33, vi. 17, 18, vii. 25, 26, x.  
     2, xi. 19 bis (LXX.), 20, 22, 23 bis,  
     xiv. 3, xv. 40  
 γωνία xii. 10  
 δαιμονίζεσθαι i. 32, v. 15, 16, 18  
 δαιμόνιον i. 34 bis, 39, iii. 15, 22 bis, vi.  
     13, vii. 26, 29, 30, ix. 38, xvi. 9, 17  
 δάκτυλος vii. 33  
 \* Δαλμανουθά viii. 10  
 δαμάζειν v. 4  
 δαπανᾶν v. 26  
 Δανειδ ii. 25, x. 47, 48, xi. 10, xii. 35,  
     36, 37  
 δέ i. 32, ii. 10, 20, 21, 22, iii. 4, 29,  
     vii. 7, 36, ix. 25, 50, x. 31, xi. 8,  
     17, xii. 26, xiii. 7, 14, 18, xiv. 1, 4,  
     9, 38, 52, 55, 62, xv. 6, 7, 14 bis, 15,  
     36, 39, 40, 44, xvi. 9, 13, 14, 17, 20  
 δέει viii. 31, ix. 11, xiii. 7, 10, 14, xiv.  
     31  
 δεικνύαι i. 44, xiv. 15  
 δειλός iv. 40  
 δεῖν trans., iii. 27, v. 3, 4, vi. 17, xi.  
     2, 4, xv. 1, 7
- δεῖπνον vi. 21, xii. 39  
 δέκα x. 41  
 Δεκάπολις v. 20 (ἢ Δ.), vii. 31  
 δένδρον viii. 24  
 δεξιός x. 37, 40, xii. 36, xiv. 62, xv. 27,  
     xvi. 5, 19  
 δέρειν xii. 3, 5, xiii. 9  
 δερμάτινος i. 6  
 δέσμιος xv. 6  
 δεσμός vii. 35  
 δεῦρο, δεῦτε i. 17, vi. 31, x. 21, xii. 7  
 δεύτερος xii. 21, 31, xiv. 72  
 δέχεσθαι vi. 11, ix. 37 quater, x. 15  
 δηγάριον vi. 37, xii. 15, xiv. 5  
 διά w. gen., ii. 1, 23, v. 5, vi. 2, vii. 31,  
     ix. 30, x. 25, xi. 16, xiv. 21, 58, xvii.  
     20; w. acc., ii. 4, 18, 27 bis, iii. 9,  
     iv. 5, 6, 17, v. 4, vi. 6, 14, 17, 26,  
     vii. 5, 29, xi. 24, 31, xii. 24, xiii. 13,  
     20, xv. 10  
 διαβλέπειν viii. 25  
 διαγίνεσθαι xvi. 1  
 διαθήκη xiv. 24  
 διακονεῖν i. 13, 31, x. 45 bis, xv. 41  
 διακόνος ix. 35, x. 43  
 διακόσιοι vi. 37  
 διακρίνεσθαι xi. 23  
 διαλέγεσθαι ix. 34  
 διαλογίζεσθαι ii. 6, 8 bis, viii. 16, 17,  
     ix. 33, xi. 31  
 διαλογισμός vii. 21  
 διαμερίζεσθαι xv. 24 (LXX.)  
 διάνοια xii. 30 (LXX.)  
 διανοίγεσθαι vii. 34  
 διαπερᾶν v. 21, vi. 53  
 διαπορεύεσθαι ii. 23  
 διαρήσσειν xiv. 63  
 διαρπάζειν iii. 27 bis  
 διασκορπίζειν xiv. 27 (LXX.)  
 διασπάσθαι v. 4  
 διαστέλλεσθαι v. 43, vii. 36 bis, viii. 15,  
     ix. 9  
 διαφέρειν xi. 16  
 διαφημίζειν i. 45  
 διδασκαλία vii. 7 (LXX.)  
 διδάσκαλος iv. 38, v. 35, ix. 17, 38, x.  
     17, 20, 35, xii. 14, 19, 32, xiii. 1,  
     xiv. 14  
 διδάσκειν i. 21, 22, ii. 13, iv. 1, 2,  
     vi. 2, 6, 30, 34, vii. 7 (LXX.), viii.  
     31, ix. 31, x. 1, xi. 17, xii. 14, 35,  
     xiv. 49  
 διδαχή i. 22, 27, iv. 2, xi. 18, xii. 38  
 διδόναι ii. 26, iii. 6, iv. 7, 8, ii. 25,  
     v. 43, vi. 2, 7, 22, 23, 25, 28 bis,  
     37 bis, 41, viii. 6, 12, 37, x. 21, 37,  
     40, 45, xi. 28, xii. 9, 14 ter, xiii. 11,  
     22, 24, 34, xiv. 5, ii. 22, 23, 44,  
     xv. 23  
 διεγέρεσθαι iv. 39  
 διέρχεσθαι iv. 35, x. 25

- διηγεῖσθαι** v. 16, ix. 9  
**δίκαιος** ii. 17, vi. 20  
**δίκτυον** i. 18, 19  
**δίς** xiv. 30, 72  
 \***διστχύλιοι** v. 13  
**διωγμός** iv. 17, x. 30  
**δοκεῖν** vi. 49, x. 42  
**δόλος** vii. 22, xiv. 1  
**δόξα** viii. 38, x. 37, xiii. 26  
**δοξάζειν** ii. 12  
**δούλος** x. 44, xi. 2, 4, xiii. 34, xiv. 47  
**δρέπανον** iv. 29 (LXX.)  
**δύναμις** v. 30, vi. 2, 5, 14, ix. 1, 39,  
 xii. 24, xiii. 25, 26, xiv. 62  
**δύνασθαι** i. 40, 45, ii. 4, 7, 19 *bis*, iii.  
 20, 23, 24, 25, 26, 27, iv. 32, 33,  
 v. 3, vi. 5, 19, vii. 15, 18, 24, viii. 4,  
 ix. 3, 22, 23, 28, 29, 39, x. 26, 38,  
 39, xiv. 5, 7, xv. 31  
**δυνατός** ix. 23, x. 27, xiii. 22, xiv. 35, 36  
**δύνειν** i. 32  
**δύο** vi. 7 *bis*, 9, 38, 41 *bis*, ix. 43, 45,  
 47, x. 8, 35, xi. 1, xii. 42, xiv. 1, 13,  
 xv. 27, 38, xvi. 12  
 \***δύστκολος** x. 24  
**δυντκόλως** x. 23  
**δώδεκα** iii. 14, 16, iv. 10, v. 25, 42, vi.  
 7, 43, viii. 19, ix. 35, x. 32, xi. 11,  
 xii. 10, 17, 20, 43  
**δῶμα** xiii. 15  
**δωρεῖσθαι** xv. 45  
**δῶρον** vii. 11  
  
**ἔαν** i. 40, iii. 24, 25, 27, 28, iv. 22, v.  
 28, vi. 10, 22, 23, 56, vii. 3, 4, 11, viii.  
 3, 35, 38, ix. 18, 43, 45, 47, 50, x. 12,  
 30, 35, xi. 3, 31, xii. 19, xiii. 11, 21,  
 xiv. 9, 14, 31, xvi. 18  
**ἔαυτον** ii. 8, iii. 24, 25, 26, iv. 17, v. 5,  
 26, 30, vi. 36, 51, viii. 14, 34, ix. 8,  
 10, 50, xi. 31, xii. 7, 33, xiii. 9, xiv. 4,  
 7, xv. 31, xvi. 3  
**ἔγγιζειν** i. 15, xi. 1, xiv. 42  
**ἔγγύς** xiii. 28, 29  
**ἔγειρειν** i. 31, ii. 9, 11, 12, iii. 3, iv. 27,  
 38, v. 41, vi. 14, 16, ix. 27, x. 49,  
 xii. 26, xiii. 8, 22, xiv. 28, 42, xvi. 6,  
 14  
**ἔγκαταλείπειν** xv. 34 (LXX.)  
**ἔγώ, ήμεις** *passim*  
**ἔθνος** x. 33, 42, xi. 17 (LXX.), xiii. 8 *bis*,  
 10  
**ἔλ** ii. 7, 21, 22, 26, iii. 2, 26, iv. 23,  
 v. 37, vi. 4, 5, 8, viii. 12, 14, 23, 34,  
 ix. 8, 9, 22, 23, 29, 35, 42, x. 2, 18,  
 xi. 13 *bis*, 25, xiii. 20, 22, 32, xiv.  
 21, 29, 35, xv. 36, 44 *bis*  
**ἔλδεναι** i. 24, 34, ii. 10, iv. 13, 27, v. 33,  
 vi. 20, ix. 6, x. 19, 38, 42, xi. 33,  
 xii. 14, 15, 24, 28, xiii. 32, 33, 35,  
 xiv. 40, 68, 71
- εἰκών** xii. 16  
**εἰμί** *passim*  
**εἰπεῖν** i. 17, 44, ii. 9 *bis*, 19, iii. 9,  
 iv. 39, 40, v. 33, 34, 43, vi. 22,  
 24 *bis*, 37, vii. 6, 10, II, 29, viii. 5,  
 7, 28, 34, ix. 18, 21, 23, 29, 36, 39,  
 x. 3, 4, 5, 14, 18, 21, 36, 37, 38, 39,  
 49, 51 *bis*, 52, xi. 3, 6, 14, 23, 29,  
 31, 32, xii. 7, 12, 15, 16, 17, 26, 32,  
 34, 36, 43, xiii. 2, 4, 21, xiv. 6, 14,  
 16, 18, 20, 22, 24, 39, 48, 62, 72, xv.  
 39, xvi. 7 *bis*, 8, 15  
**εἰρηνεύειν** ix. 50  
**εἰρήνη** v. 34  
**εἰς** *passim*  
**εἰς** ii. 7, v. 22, vi. 15, viii. 14, 28, ix. 5,  
 17, 37, 42, x. 8, 17, 18, 21, 37, xi. 29,  
 xii. 6, 28, 29 (LXX.), 32, 42, xiii. I,  
 xiv. 10, 18, 19, 20, 37, 43, 47, 66,  
 xv. 6, 27, xvi. 2  
**εἰσέρχεσθαι** i. 21, 45, ii. 1, 26, iii. 1,  
 27, v. 12, 13, 39, vi. 10, 22, 25, vii.  
 17, 24, 25, viii. 26, ix. 25, 28, 43, 45,  
 47, x. 15, 23, 24, 25, xi. II, 15, xiii.  
 15, xiv. 14, xv. 43, xvi. 5  
**εἰστορεύεσθαι** i. 21, iv. 19, v. 40, vi. 56,  
 vii. 15, 18, 19, xi. 2  
**εἴτα** iv. 17, vii. 25  
 \***εἴτεν** iv. 28 *bis*  
**ἐκ**, **ἐξ** i. 10, II, 25, 26, 29, v. 2 *bis*, 8,  
 30, vi. 14, 54, vii. II, 15, 20, 21, 26,  
 29, 31, ix. 7, 9 *bis*, 10, 17, 21, 25,  
 x. 20, 37 *bis*, 40 *bis*, xi. 8, 14, 20,  
 30 *bis*, 31, 32, xii. 25, 30 *quater*,  
 33 *ter*, 36, 44 *bis*, xiii. I, 15, 25, 27,  
 xiv. 18, 23, 25, 62, 69, 70, 72, xv.  
 27 *bis*, 39, 46, xvi. 3, 12, 14, 19  
**ἔκαστος** xiii. 34  
**ἔκατον** iv. 8, 20, vi. 40  
**ἔκατονταπλασίων** x. 30  
**ἔκβάλλειν** i. 12, 34, 39, 43, iii. 15, 22,  
 23, v. 40, vi. 13, vii. 26, ix. 18, 28,  
 38, 47, xi. 15, xii. 8, xvi. 9, 17  
**ἔκδιδοσθαι** xii. 1  
**ἔκδύνειν** xv. 20  
**ἔκεει** i. 35, 38, ii. 6, iii. 1, v. II, vi. 5,  
 10, 33, xi. 5, xiii. 21, xiv. 15, xvi. 7  
**ἔκειθεν** vi. 1, 10, II, vii. 24, ix. 30, x. I  
**ἔκεινος** i. 9, ii. 20, iii. 24, 25, iv. II,  
 20, 35, vi. 55, vii. 20, viii. I, xii. 4, 5,  
 7, xiii. II, 17, 19, 24, 32, xiv. 21 *bis*,  
 25, xvi. 10, II, 13 *bis*, 20  
 \***ἔκθαμψείσθαι** ix. 15, xiv. 33, xvi. 5, 6  
 \***ἔκθαυμάζειν** xii. 17  
**ἔκλεγεσθαι** xiii. 20  
**ἔκλεκτός** xiii. 20, 22, 27  
**ἔκλύεσθαι** viii. 3  
 \***ἔκπεριτσώς** xiv. 31  
**ἔκπληγσείσθαι** i. 22, vi. 2, vii. 37, x.  
 26, xi. 18  
**ἔκπνειν** xv. 37, 39

- ἐκπορεύεσθαι i. 5, vi. 11, vii. 15, 19, 20,  
21, 23, x. 17, 46, xi. 19, xiii. 1
- ἐκστασις v. 42, xvi. 8
- ἐκτείνειν i. 41, iii. 5 *bis*
- ἐκτινάσσειν vi. 11
- ἐκτος xv. 33
- ἐκφέρειν viii. 23
- ἐκφόβος ix. 6
- ἐκφύειν xiii. 28
- ἐκχύννεσθαι xiv. 24
- Ἐλαία xi. 1, xiii. 3, xiv. 26
- Ἐλαιον vi. 13
- Ἐλαύνειν vi. 48
- Ἐλειν v. 19, x. 47, 48
- Ἐλληνίς vii. 26
- Ἐλώ x. 34 *bis*
- ἐμβαίνειν iv. 1, v. 18, vi. 45, viii. 10, 13
- ἐμβάπτεσθαι xiv. 20
- ἐμβλέπειν viii. 25, x. 21, 27, xiv. 67
- ἐμβρυμάσθαι i. 43, xiv. 5
- ἐμδός viii. 38, x. 40
- ἐμπαζειν x. 34, xv. 20, 31
- ἐμπροσθειν ii. 12, ix. 2
- ἐμπτύειν x. 34, xiv. 65, xv. 19
- ἐν i. 2, 3, 4, 5, 9, 11, 13, 15, 16, 19,  
20, 23 *bis*, ii. 1, 6, 8 *bis*, 19, 20, 23,  
iii. 22, 23, iv. 1, 2 *bis*, 4, 11, 17,  
20 *ter*, 24, 28, 30, 35, 36, 38, v. 2,  
3, 5 *bis*, 13, 20, 21, 25, 27, 30 *bis*,  
vi. 2, 3, 4 *ter*, 14, 17, 28, 29, 32, 47,  
48, 51, 56, viii. 1, 3, 14, 27, 38 *bis*,  
ix. 1, 29 *bis*, 33 *bis*, 34, 36, 38, 41,  
50 *ter*, x. 21, 30 *bis*, 32, 37, 43 *bis*,  
44, 52, xi. 9, 10, 13, 15, 23, 25, 27,  
28, 29, 33, xii. 1, 11, 23, 25, 26, 35,  
36, 38 *ter*, 39 *bis*, xiii. 11, 14, 17,  
24, 25, 26, 32, xiv. 1, 2, 3, 6, 25,  
49, 66, xv. 7, 29, 40, 41, 46, xvi. 5,  
12, 17, 18
- \* ἐναγκαλίζεσθαι ix. 36, x. 16
- ἐναντίος vi. 48, xv. 39
- ἐνατος xv. 33, 34
- ἐνδεκα xvi. 14
- ἐνδιδύσκειν xv. 17
- ἐνδύνειν i. 6, vi. 9, xv. 20
- \* ἐνειλεῖν xv. 46
- ἐνεκεν viii. 35, x. 7 (*LXX.*), 29, xiii. 9
- ἐνεργεῖν vi. 14
- ἐνέχειν vi. 19
- \* ἐννυχα i. 35
- ἐνοχος iii. 29, xiv. 64
- ἐνταλμα vii. 7 (*LXX.*)
- ἐνταφιασμός xiv. 8
- ἐντέλλεσθαι x. 3, xiii. 34
- ἐντολή vii. 8, 9, x. 5, 19, xii. 28, 31
- ἐντρέπεσθαι xii. 6
- ἔξι ix. 2 (for ἔξ see ἐκ)
- ἔξαγειν xv. 20
- ἔξαίφνης xiii. 36
- ἔξανατέλλειν iv. 5
- ἔξανιστάναι xii. 19
- \* ἔξαπινα ix. 8
- ἔξαυτῆς vi. 25
- ἔξέρχεσθαι i. 25, 26, 28, 29, 35, 38, 45,  
ii. 12, 13, iii. 6, 21, iv. 3, v. 2, 8,  
13, 30, vi. 1, 10, 12, 24, 34, 54, vii.  
29, 30, 31, viii. 11, 27, ix. 25, 26,  
29, 30, xi. 11, 12, xiv. 16, 26, 48,  
68, xvi. 8, 20
- ἔξεστιν ii. 24, 26, iii. 4, vi. 18, x. 2,  
xii. 14
- ἔξήκοντα iv. 8, 20
- ἔξιστασθαι ii. 12, iii. 21, v. 42, vi. 51
- ἔξομολογεύεσθαι i. 5
- ἔξορύνσσειν ii. 4
- \* ἔξουδενεῖσθαι ix. 12
- ἔξουσία i. 22, 27, ii. 10, iii. 15, vi. 7,  
xi. 28, 29, 33, xiii. 34
- ἔξω i. 45, iii. 31, 32, iv. 11, v. 10, viii.  
23, xi. 4, 19, xii. 8, xiv. 68
- ἔξωθεν vii. 15, 18
- ἔօρτη xiv. 2, xv. 6
- ἔπαγγελλεσθαι xiv. 11
- ἔπαισχύνεσθαι viii. 38 *bis*
- ἔπακολούθειν xvi. 20
- ἔπανιστασθαι xiii. 12
- ἔπάνω xiv. 5
- ἔπαύριον xi. 12
- ἔπει xv. 42
- ἔπερωψην v. 9, vii. 5, 17, viii. 23, 27, 29,  
ix. 11, 16, 21, 28, 32, 33, x. 2, 10, 17,  
xi. 29, xii. 18, 28, 34, xiii. 3, xiv. 60,  
61, xv. 2, 4, 44
- ἔπι (1) *w. gen.*, ii. 10, 26, iv. 1, 26,  
31 *bis*, vi. 47, 48, 49, viii. 4, 6, ix.  
3, 20, xi. 4, xii. 14, 26, 32, xiii. 9,  
15, xiv. 35, 51; (2) *w. dat.*, i. 22, 45,  
iii. 5, vi. 25, 28, 39, 52, 55, ix. 37,  
39, x. 22, 24, xi. 18, xii. 17, xiii. 6,  
29; (3) *w. acc.*, ii. 14, 21, iii. 24, 25,  
26, iv. 5, 16, 18, 20, 21, 38, v. 21,  
vi. 34, 53, vii. 30, viii. 2, 25, ix. 12,  
13, 22, x. 11, 16, xi. 2, 7, 13, xiii. 2,  
8, 12, xiv. 48, xv. 22, 24, 33, 46,  
xvi. 2, 18
- ἔπιβάλλειν iv. 37, xi. 7, xiv. 46, 72
- ἔπιβλημα ii. 21
- ἔπιγινωσκειν ii. 8, v. 30, vi. 54
- ἔπιγράφειν xv. 26
- ἔπιγραφή xii. 16, xv. 26
- ἔπιθυμία iv. 19
- ἔπιλαμβάνεσθαι viii. 23
- ἔπιλανθάνεσθαι viii. 14
- ἔπιλένειν iv. 34
- ἔπιπιπτειν iii. 10
- \* ἔπιπράτειν ii. 21
- ἔπισκιάζειν ix. 7
- ἔπιστασθαι xiv. 68
- ἔπιστρέφειν iv. 12 (*LXX.*), v. 30, viii. 33,  
xiii. 16
- ἔπισυνάγειν i. 33, xiii. 27
- \* ἔπισυντρέχειν ix. 25

- ἐπιτάσσειν i. 27, vi. 27, 39, ix. 25  
 ἐπιτιθέναι iii. 16, 17, v. 23, vi. 5, vii.  
 32, viii. 23, 25, xvi. 18  
 ἐπιτημᾶν i. 25, iii. 12, iv. 39, viii. 30, 32,  
 33, ix. 25, x. 13, 48  
 ἐπιτρέπειν v. 13, x. 4  
 ἐπτὰ viii. 5, 6, 8, 20 *bis*, xii. 20, 22, 23,  
 xvi. 9  
 ἐργάζεσθαι xiv. 6  
 ἔργον xiii. 34, xiv. 6  
 ἔρειν xi. 29, 31  
 ἔρημία viii. 4  
 ἔρημος i. 3 (LXX.), 4, 12, 13, 35, 45, vi.  
 31, 32, 35  
 ἔρημωσις xiii. 14 (LXX., Th.)  
 ἔρχεσθαι i. 7, 9, 14, 24, 29, 39, 40, 45,  
 ii. 3, 13, 17, 18, 20, iii. 8, 20, 31, iv.  
 4, 15, 21, 22, v. 1, 14, 15, 22, 23, 26,  
 27, 33, 35, 38, vi. 1, 29, 31, 48, 53,  
 vii. 1, 25, 31, viii. 10, 22, 34, 38, ix.  
 1, 11, 12, 13, 14, 33, x. 1, 14, 30,  
 45, 46, 50, xi. 9, 10, 13, 15, 27 *bis*,  
 xii. 9, 14, 18, 42, xiii. 6, 26, 35,  
 36, xiv. 3, 10, 17, 32, 37, 38, 40,  
 41 *bis*, 45, 62, 66, xv. 21, 36, 43,  
 xvi. 1, 2, 5  
 ἔρωτᾶν iv. 10, vii. 26, viii. 5  
 ἔσθιεν, ἔσθειν i. 6, ii. 16 *bis*, 26 *bis*,  
 iii. 20, v. 43, vi. 31, 36, 37 *bis*, 42,  
 44, vii. 2, 3, 4, 5, 28, viii. 1, 2, 8, xi.  
 14, xiv. 12, 14, 18 *bis*, 22  
 ἔσχατος ix. 35, x. 31, xii. 6, 22  
 \* ἔσχάτως v. 23  
 ἔσω xiv. 54, xv. 16  
 ἔσωθεν vii. 21, 23  
 ἔτερος xvi. 12  
 ἔτι v. 35 *bis*, xii. 6, xiv. 43, 63  
 ἔτοιμάζειν i. 3, x. 40, xiv. 12, 15, 16  
 ἔτοιμος xiv. 15  
 ἔτος v. 25, 42  
 εὖ xiv. 7  
 εὐαγγέλιον i. 1, 14, 15, viii. 35, x. 29,  
 xiii. 10, xiv. 9, xvi. 15  
 εὐδοκεῖν i. 11  
 εὐθύς i. 3 (adj.), 10, 12, 18, 20, 21, 23,  
 28, 29, 30, 42, 43, ii. 8, 12, iii. 6, iv.  
 5, 15, 16, 17, 29, v. 2, 29, 30, 42 *bis*,  
 vi. 25, 27, 45, 50, 54, vii. 25, viii. 10,  
 ix. 15, 20, 24, x. 52, xi. 2, 3, xiv. 43,  
 45, 72, xv. 1  
 εὐκαρπεῖν vi. 31  
 εἴκαρπος vi. 21  
 εὐκάρπως xiv. 11  
 εὐκοπώτερον ii. 9, x. 25  
 εὐλογεῖν vi. 41, viii. 7, xi. 9 (LXX.), 10,  
 xiv. 22  
 εὐλογητός xiv. 61  
 εύρισκειν i. 37, vii. 30, xi. 2, 4, 13 *bis*,  
 xiii. 36, xiv. 16, 37, 40, 55  
 εὐσχήμων xv. 43  
 εὐχαριστεῖν viii. 6, xiv. 23
- εὐώνυμος x. 40, xv. 27  
 \* ἐφαβάθι vii. 34  
 ἐχθρός xii. 36 (LXX.)  
 ἐχθρώ i. 22, 32, 34, 38 (m.), ii. 10, 17,  
 19, 25, iii. 1, 3, 10, 15, 22, 26, 29,  
 30, iv. 5, 6, 9, 17, 23, 25 *bis*, 40, v.  
 3, 15, 23, vi. 18, 34, 38, 55, vii.  
 25, viii. 1, 2, 5, 7, 14, 16, 17 *bis*,  
 18 *bis*, ix. 17, 43, 45, 47, 50, x. 21,  
 22, xii. 23, xi. 3, 13, 22, 25, 32, xii. 6,  
 23, 44, xiii. 17, xiv. 3, 7 *bis*, 8, 63,  
 xvi. 8, 18  
 ἐως conj. vi. 10, 45, ix. 1, xii. 36, xiv.  
 32; prep., vi. 23, ix. 19 *bis*, xiii. 19,  
 27, xiv. 25, 34, 54, xv. 33, 38
- Ζεβεδαῖος i. 19, 20, iii. 17, x. 35  
 ζῆμιον viii. 36  
 ζῆν x. 23, xii. 27, xvi. 11  
 ζητεῖν i. 37, iii. 32, viii. 11, 12, xi. 18,  
 xii. 12, xiv. 1, 11, 55, xvi. 6  
 ζύμη viii. 15  
 ζωή ix. 43, 45, x. 17, 30  
 ζώνη i. 6, vi. 8
- ἢ (1<sup>o</sup>) aut. ii. 9, iii. 4 *bis*, iv. 17, 21, 30,  
 vi. 56 *bis*, vii. 10, 11, 12, x. 29 *sexies*,  
 38, 40, xi. 28, 30, xii. 14 *bis*, xiii.  
 32, 35 *quater*; (2<sup>o</sup>) quam, ix. 43, 45,  
 47, x. 25, xiv. 30  
 ἢγεμῶν xiii. 9  
 ἢδεως vi. 20, xii. 37  
 ἢδη iv. 37, vi. 35 *bis*, viii. 2, xi. 11,  
 xiii. 28, xv. 42, 44  
 ἢκειν viii. 3  
 Ἡλέας vi. 15, viii. 28, ix. 4, 5, ii. 12,  
 13, xv. 35, 36  
 ἥλος i. 32, iv. 6, xiii. 24, xvi. 2  
 ἥμέρα i. 9, 13, ii. 1, 20 *bis*, iv. 27, 35,  
 v. 5, vi. 21, viii. 1, 2, 31, ix. 2, 31,  
 x. 34, xiii. 17, 19, 20 *bis*, 24, 32, xiv.  
 1, 12, 25, 49, 58, xv. 29  
 ἥμισυν vi. 23  
 Ἡρόδης vi. 14, 16, 17, 18, 20, 21, 22,  
 viii. 15  
 Ἡρῳδιανὸς iii. 6, xii. 13  
 Ἡρῳδιάς vi. 17, 19, 22  
 Ἡσαλᾶς i. 2, vii. 6
- Θαδδαῖος iii. 18  
 θάλασσα i. 16 *bis*, ii. 13, iii. 7, iv. 1 *ter*,  
 39, 41, v. 1, 13 *bis*, 21, vi. 47, 48,  
 49, vii. 31, ix. 42, xi. 23  
 \* θαρβεῖσθαι i. 27, x. 24, 32  
 \* θανάσιμος xvi. 18  
 θάνατος vii. 10 (LXX.), ix. 1, x. 33, xiii.  
 12, xiv. 34, 64  
 θανατοῦν xiii. 12, xiv. 55  
 θαρσεῖν vi. 50, x. 49  
 θαυμάζειν v. 20, vi. 6, xv. 5, 44  
 θαυμαστός xii. 11

- θεᾶσθαι xvii. ii. 14  
 θέλειν i. 40, 41, iii. 13, vi. 19, 22, 25,  
 26, 48, vii. 24, viii. 34, 35, ix. 13,  
 30, 35, x. 35, 36, 43, 44, 51, xii. 38,  
 xiv. 7, 12, 36, xv. 9  
 θέλημα iii. 35  
 θέος i. 1, 14, 15, 24, ii. 7, 12, 26,  
 iii. 11, 35, iv. 11, 26, 30, v. 7 bis,  
 vii. 8, 9, 13, viii. 33, ix. 1, 47, x. 9,  
 14, 15, 18, 23, 24, 25, 27 bis, xi. 22,  
 xii. 14, 17, 24, 26, 27, 29 (LXX.), 30,  
 34, xiii. 19, xiv. 25, xv. 34 bis (LXX.),  
 39, 43, xvi. 19  
 θεραπεύειν i. 34, iii. 2, 10, vi. 5, 13  
 θερισμός iv. 29  
 θερμαίνεσθαι xiv. 54, 67  
 θέρος xiii. 28  
 θεωρεῖν iii. 11, v. 15, 38, xii. 41, xv. 40,  
 47, xvi. 4  
 θηλάζειν xiii. 17  
 θῆλυς x. 6 (LXX.)  
 θηρόν i. 13  
 θηταυρός x. 21  
 θλίβειν iii. 9  
 θλίψις iv. 17, xiii. 19, 24  
 θνήσκειν xv. 44  
 θορυβεῖσθαι v. 39  
 θόρυβος v. 38  
 θρέξ i. 6  
 θροεῖσθαι xiii. 7  
 θυγάτηρ v. 34, 35, vi. 22, vii. 26, 29  
 \* θυγάτριον v. 23, vii. 25  
 θύειν xiv. 12  
 θύρα i. 33, ii. 2, xi. 4, xiii. 29, xv. 46,  
 xvi. 3  
 θυρωρός xiii. 34  
 θυτόνα ix. 49, xii. 33  
 θωμάς iii. 18
- \* Ιάειρος v. 22  
 Ιακώβ xii. 26 (LXX.)  
 \* Ιακώβος (1) ὁ τοῦ Ζεβεδαίου i. 19, 29,  
 iii. 17 bis, v. 37 bis, ix. 2, x. 35, 41,  
 xiii. 3, xiv. 33; (2) ὁ ἀδελφὸς τοῦ  
 κυρίου vi. 3; (3) ὁ τοῦ Ἀλφαίου iii.  
 18; (4) ὁ μικρός xv. 40, xvi. 1  
 λάσθαι v. 29  
 λατρός ii. 17, v. 26  
 λέδε ii. 24, iii. 34, xi. 21, xiii. 1, 21, xv.  
 4, 35, xvi. 6  
 λέδειν i. 10, 16, 19, ii. 5, 12, 14, 16,  
 iv. 12 (LXX.), v. 6, 14, 16, 22, 32,  
 vi. 33, 34, 38, 48, 49, 50, vii. 2, viii.  
 33, ix. 1, 8, 9, 14, 15, 20, 25, 38,  
 x. 14, xi. 13, 20, xii. 15, 34, xiii. 14,  
 29, xiv. 67, 69, xv. 32, 36, 39, xvi. 5  
 λέδος iv. 34, vi. 31, 32, vii. 33, ix. 2,  
 28, xiii. 3, xv. 20  
 λέδος i. 2, iii. 32, iv. 3, x. 28, 33, xiv.  
 41, 42  
 \* Ιδουμαῖα iii. 8
- \* Ιερειχώ x. 46 bis  
 ιερεύς i. 44, ii. 26  
 ιερόν, τό x. 11, 15 bis, 16, 27, xii. 35,  
 xiii. 1, 3, xiv. 49  
 \* Ιεροσόλυμα iii. 8, 22, vii. 1, x. 32, 33,  
 xi. 1, 11, 15, 27, xv. 41  
 \* Ιεροσολυμέται i. 5  
 \* Ιησοῦς i. 1, 9, 14, 17, 24, 25, ii. 5, 8,  
 15, 17, 19, iii. 7, v. 6, 7, 15, 20, 21,  
 27, 30, 36, vi. 4, 30, viii. 27, ix.  
 2, 4, 5, 8, 23, 25, 27, 39, x. 5, 14,  
 18, 21, 23, 24, 27, 29, 32, 38, 39,  
 42, 47 bis, 49, 50, 51, 52, xi. 6, 7,  
 22, 29, 33 bis, xii. 17, 24, 29, 34, 35,  
 xiii. 2, 5, xiv. 6, 18, 27, 30, 48, 53,  
 55, 60, 62, 67, 72, xv. 1, 5, 15, 34,  
 37, 43, xvi. 6, 19  
 ίκανός i. 7, x. 46, xv. 15  
 ίμάς i. 7  
 ίματίζεσθαι v. 15  
 ίμάτιον ii. 21, v. 27, 28, 30, vi. 56,  
 ix. 3, x. 50, xi. 7, 8, xiii. 16, xv. 20, 24  
 ίνα i. 38, ii. 10, iii. 2, 9 bis, 10, 12,  
 14 bis, iv. 12 (LXX.), 21 bis, 22 bis,  
 v. 10, 12, 18, 23 bis, 43, vi. 8, 12, 25,  
 36, 41, 56, vii. 9, 26, 32, 36, viii. 6,  
 22, 30, ix. 9, 12, 18, 22, 30, x. 13,  
 17, 35, 37, 48, 51, xi. 16, 25, 28, xii.  
 2, 13, 15, 19, xiii. 18, 34, xiv. 10,  
 12, 35, 38, 49, xv. 11, 15, 20, 21, 32,  
 xvi. 1  
 \* Ιορδάνης i. 5, 9, iii. 8, x. 1  
 \* Ιουδαία i. 5 (ἡ Ι. χώρα); iii. 7, x. 1,  
 xiii. 14 (ἡ Ι.)  
 \* Ιουδαῖος vi. 3, xv. 2, 9, 12, 18, 26  
 \* Ιούδας (1) ὁ ἀδελφὸς τοῦ κυρίου vi. 3;  
 (2) \*Ισκαριώθ iii. 19, xiv. 10, 43  
 \* Ισαάκ xii. 26 (LXX.)  
 \* Ισκαριώθ iii. 19, xiv. 10  
 ίσος xiv. 56, 59  
 \* Ιστρήλ xli. 29 (LXX.), xv. 32  
 ίσταγατι iii. 24, 25, 26, ix. 1, 36, x. 49,  
 xi. 5, xiii. 9, 14, xv. 35  
 ίσχύειν ii. 17, v. 4, ix. 18, xiv. 37  
 ίσχυρός i. 7, iii. 27 bis  
 ίσχύς xii. 30 (LXX.), 33 (ib.)  
 ίχθυδιον viii. 7  
 ίχθύς vi. 38, 41 bis, 43  
 \* Ιωάνης (1) ὁ βαπτίζων i. 4, 6, 9, 14,  
 ii. 18 bis, vi. 14, 16, 17, 18, 20, 24,  
 25, viii. 28, xi. 30, 32; (2) ὁ τοῦ  
 Ζεβεδαίου i. 19, 29, iii. 17, v. 37,  
 ix. 2, 38, x. 35, 41, xiii. 3, xiv. 33  
 \* Ιωσῆς (1) ὁ ἀδελφὸς τοῦ κυρίου vi. 5;  
 (2) ὁ ἀδελφὸς Ιακώβου τοῦ μικροῦ xv.  
 40, 47  
 \* Ιωσῆφ (ὁ ἀπὸ Ἀρειμαθαλας) xv. 43, 45
- καθαρεῖν xv. 36, 46  
 καθαρίζειν i. 40, 41, 42, vii. 19  
 καθαρισμός i. 44

- καθέδρα x. 15  
 καθεύδειν iv. 27, 38, v. 39, xiii. 36, xiv.  
 37, 40, 41  
 καθησθαι ii. 6, 14, iii. 32, 34, iv. 1,  
 v. 15, x. 46, xii. 36, xiii. 3, xiv. 62,  
 xvi. 5  
 καθίζειν ix. 35, x. 37, 40, xi. 2, 7, xii.  
 41, xiv. 32, xvi. 19  
 καθώς i. 2, iv. 33, ix. 13, xi. 6, xiv. 16,  
 21, xv. 8, xvi. 7  
 καλ *passim*  
 καινός i. 27, ii. 21, 22, xiv. 25, xvi. 17  
 καιρός i. 15, x. 30, xi. 13, xii. 2, xiii.  
 33  
 Καῖσαρ xii. 14, 16, 17  
 Καισαρά, ἡ Φιλίππου viii. 27  
 κακολογεῖν vii. 10 (LXX.), ix. 39  
 κακοποιεῖν iii. 4  
 κακός vii. 21, xv. 14  
 κακώς i. 32, 34, ii. 17, vi. 55  
 κάλαμος xv. 19, 36  
 καλεῖν i. 20, ii. 17, iii. 31, xi. 17  
 καλός iv. 8, 20, vii. 27, ix. 5, 42, 43,  
 45, 47, 50, xiv. 6, 21  
 καλώς vii. 6, 9, 37, xii. 28, 32, xvi. 18  
 κάμηλος i. 6, x. 25  
 Καναάτος iii. 18  
 καρδία ii. 6, 8, iii. 5, vi. 52, vii. 6  
 (LXX.), 19, 21, viii. 17, xi. 23, xii.  
 30 (LXX.), 33  
 καρπός iv. 7, 8, 29, xi. 14, xii. 2  
 καρποφορεῖν iv. 20, 28  
 κατά (1) *with gen.*, iii. 6, v. 13, ix. 40,  
 xi. 25, xiv. 55, 56, 57; (2) *with acc.*,  
 i. 27, iv. 10, 34, vi. 31, 32, 40, vii. 5,  
 33, ix. 2, 28, xii. 3, 8, xiv. 19, 49,  
 xv. 6  
 καταβαίνειν i. 10, iii. 22, ix. 9, xiii. 15,  
 xv. 30, 32  
 \* καταβάρυνεσθαι xiv. 40  
 καταγέλαν v. 40  
 \* καταδιώκειν i. 36  
 κατακείσθαι i. 30, ii. 4, 15, xiv. 3  
 κατακλάν vi. 41  
 \* κατακόπτειν v. 5  
 κατακρίνειν x. 33, xiv. 64, xvi. 16  
 κατακυριεύειν x. 42  
 καταλαμβάνειν ix. 18  
 καταλείπειν x. 7 (LXX.), xii. 19 (LXX.),  
 21, xiv. 52  
 καταλύειν xiii. 2, xiv. 58, xv. 29  
 καταλύμα xiv. 14  
 καταμαρτυρεῖν xiv. 60  
 καταπέτασμα xv. 38  
 καταράσθαι xi. 21  
 καταρτίζειν i. 19  
 κατασκευάζειν i. 2 (LXX.)  
 κατασκηνοῦν iv. 32  
 καταστρέφειν xi. 15  
 κατατύθειν xv. 46  
 καταφίλειν xiv. 45
- καταχεῖν xiv. 3  
 κατέναντι x. 2, xii. 41, xiii. 3  
 κατεξουσιάζειν x. 42  
 κατεσθίειν iv. 4, xii. 40  
 \* κατευλογεῖν x. 16  
 κατηγορεῖν iii. 2, xv. 3, 4  
 \* κατοίκησις v. 3  
 κάτω xiv. 66, xv. 38  
 καυματίζεσθαι iv. 6  
 Καφαραούμ i. 21, ii. 1, ix. 33  
 κενός xii. 3  
 \* κεντυρίων xv. 39, 44, 45  
 κεράμιον xiv. 13  
 κερδάνειν viii. 36  
 κεφαλή vi. 24, 25, 27, 28, xii. 10 (LXX.),  
 xiv. 3, xv. 19, 29  
 \* κεφαλοιδῶν xii. 4  
 κῆνσος xii. 14  
 κηρύστειν i. 4, 7, 14, 38, 39, 45, iii. 14,  
 v. 20, vi. 12, vii. 36, xiii. 10, xiv. 9,  
 xvi. 15, 20  
 κινέν xv. 29  
 κλάδος iv. 32, xiii. 28  
 κλαίειν v. 38, 39, xiv. 72, xvi. 10  
 κλάγη viii. 6, 19, xiv. 22  
 κλάσμα vi. 43, viii. 8, 19, 20  
 κλέπτειν x. 19 (LXX.)  
 κληρονομεῖν x. 17  
 κληρονομία xii. 7  
 κληρονόμος xii. 7  
 κλήρος xv. 24 (LXX.)  
 κλίνη iv. 21, vii. 4, 30  
 κλοπή vii. 22  
 κοδράντης xii. 42  
 κοιλία vii. 19  
 κοινός vii. 2, 5  
 κοινοῦν vii. 15 bis, 18, 20, 23  
 κόκκος iv. 31  
 κολαφίζειν xiv. 65  
 κολλυβιστής xi. 15  
 κολοβοῦν xiii. 20 bis  
 κοπάζειν iv. 39, vi. 51  
 κόπος xiv. 6  
 κόπτειν xi. 8  
 κοράστιον v. 41, 42, vi. 22, 28 bis  
 \* κορβάν vii. 11  
 κόσμος viii. 36, xiv. 9, xvi. 15  
 \* κούμ v. 41  
 κόφινος vi. 43, viii. 19  
 κρίβαττος ii. 4, 9, 11, 12, vi. 55  
 κρίζειν iii. 11, v. 5, 7, ix. 24, 26, x. 47,  
 48, xi. 9, xv. 13, 14  
 κρανίον xv. 22  
 κράστεδον vi. 56  
 κρατεῖν i. 31, iii. 21, v. 41, vi. 17, vii.  
 3, 4, 8, ix. 10, 27, xii. 12, xiv. 1, 44,  
 46, 49, 51  
 κρημνός v. 13  
 κρόμα xii. 40  
 κρυπτός iv. 22  
 κτῆμα x. 22

- κτίζειν xiii. 19  
 κτίσις x. 6, xiii. 19, xvi. 15  
 κυκλω̄ iii. 34, vi. 6, 36  
 \* κυλλέσθαι ix. 20  
 κυλλός ix. 43  
 κύμα iv. 37  
 κυνάριον vii. 27, 28  
 κύπτειν i. 7  
 Κυρηναῖος xv. 21  
 κύριος i. 3 (LXX.), ii. 28, v. 19, vii. 28,  
     xi. 3, 9 (LXX.), xii. 9, 11 (LXX.), 29  
     (LXX.), 30 (LXX.), 36 (LXX.), 37 (LXX.),  
     xiii. 20, 35, xvi. 19, 20  
 κωλύειν ix. 38, 39, x. 14  
 κώμη vi. 6, 36, 56, viii. 23, 26, 27, xi. 2  
 \* κωμόπολις i. 38  
 κωφός vii. 32, 37, ix. 25
- λαδαψ iv. 37  
 λαλεῖν i. 34, ii. 2, 7, iv. 33, 34, v. 35,  
     36, vi. 50, vii. 35, 37, viii. 32, xi. 23,  
     xii. 1, xiii. 11 *ter*, xiv. 9, 31, 43, xvi.  
     17, 19  
 λαρά xv. 34  
 λαρβάνειν iv. 16, vi. 41, vii. 27, viii. 6,  
     14, ix. 36, x. 30, xi. 24, xii. 2, 3,  
     8, 19, 20, 21, 40, xiv. 22 *bis*, 23, 65,  
     xv. 23  
 λανθάνειν vii. 24  
 λαός vii. 6, xiv. 2  
 λατομεῖν xv. 46  
 λάχανον iv. 32  
 λέγειν *passim*  
 λεγών v. 9, 15  
 λέπτρα i. 42  
 λεπτός i. 40, xiv. 3  
 λεπτόν xii. 42  
 Λευεὶς ii. 14  
 λευκαλνεῖν ix. 3  
 λευκός ix. 3, xvi. 5  
 ληστῆς xi. 17, xiv. 48, xv. 27  
 λίαν i. 35, vi. 51, ix. 3, xvi. 2  
 λίθος v. 5, xii. 10 (LXX.), xiii. 1, 2, xv.  
     46, xvi. 3, 4  
 λυμός xiii. 8  
 λόγος i. 45, ii. 2, iv. 14, 15 *bis*, 16, 17,  
     18, 19, 20, 33, v. 36, vii. 13, 29,  
     viii. 32, 38, ix. 10, x. 22, 24, xi. 29,  
     xii. 13, xiii. 31, xiv. 39, xvi. 20  
 λοιπός iv. 19, xiv. 41, xvi. 13  
 λύειν i. 7, vii. 35, xi. 2, 4, 5  
 λυπεῖσθαι x. 22, xiv. 19  
 λύτρον x. 45  
 λυχνία iv. 21  
 λύχνος iv. 21
- Μαγδαληνή, ἡ xv. 40, 47, xvi. 1, 9  
 μαθητής ii. 15, 16, 18 *quater*, 23, iii. 7, 9,  
     iv. 34, v. 31, vi. 1, 29, 35, 41, 45,  
     vii. 2, 5, 17, viii. 1, 4, 6, 10, 27 *bis*,  
     33, 34, ix. 14, 18, 28, 31, x. 10, 13,  
     23, 24, 46, xi. 1, 14, xii. 43, xiii. 1,  
     xiv. 12, 13, 14, 16, 32, xvi. 7  
 Μαθθαῖος iii. 18  
 μακράν xii. 34  
 μακρόθεν, ἀπό, v. 6, viii. 3, xi. 13, xiv.  
     54, xv. 40  
 μακρός xii. 40  
 μᾶλλον v. 26, vii. 36, ix. 42, x. 48, xv. II  
 μανθάνειν xiii. 28  
 Μαρία, Μαριάμ, (1) ἡ ματήρ τοῦ Ἰησοῦ  
     vi. 3; (2) ἡ Μαγδαληνή xv. 40, 47,  
     xvi. 1, 9; (3) ἡ Ιακώβου, ἡ Ιωσῆτος  
     xv. 40, 47, xvi. 1  
 μαρτυρία xiv. 55, 56, 59  
 μαρτυρίον i. 44, vi. 11, xiii. 9  
 μάρτυς xiv. 63  
 μαστιγοῦν x. 34  
 μάστιξ iii. 10, v. 29, 34  
 μάτην vii. 7 (LXX.)  
 μάχαιρα xiv. 43, 47, 48  
 μέγας i. 26, iv. 32, 37, 39, 41, v. 7, II,  
     42, x. 42, 43, xiii. 2, xiv. 15, xv. 34,  
     37, xvi. 4  
 μεγιστάν vi. 21  
 μεθερμηνεύεσθαι v. 41, xv. 22, 34  
 μείζων iv. 32, ix. 34, xii. 31  
 μέλει iv. 38, xii. 14  
 μέλι i. 6  
 μέλλειν x. 32, xiii. 4  
 μέν iv. 4, ix. 12, xii. 5, xiv. 21, 38,  
     xvi. 19  
 μένειν vi. 10, xiv. 34  
 μερίζειν iii. 24, 25, 26, vi. 41  
 μέριμνα iv. 19  
 μέρος viii. 10  
 μεσονύκτον xiii. 35  
 μέστος iii. 3, vi. 47, vii. 31, ix. 36, xiv.  
     60  
 μετά (1) *w. gen.*, i. 13, 20, 29, 36, ii.  
     16 *bis*, 19 *bis*, 25, iii. 5, 6, 7, 14,  
     iv. 16, 36, v. 18, 24, 37, 40, vi. 25,  
     50, viii. 10, 14, 38, ix. 8, x. 30,  
     xi. 11, xiii. 26, xiv. 7, 14, 17, 18, 20,  
     33, 43, 48, 54, 62, 67, xv. 1, 7, 31,  
     xvi. 10; (2) *w. acc.*, i. 14, viii. 31,  
     ix. 2, 31, x. 34, xiii. 24, xiv. 1, 28,  
     70, xvi. 12, 19  
 μεταμορφοῦσθαι ix. 2  
 μετανοεῖν i. 15, vi. 12  
 μετάνοια i. 4  
 μετρεῖν iv. 24  
 μέτρον iv. 24  
 μέχρις xiii. 30  
 μῆ ii. 4, 7, 19, 21, 22, 26, iii. 20, iv. 5,  
     6, v. 7, 36, 37, vi. 4, 5, 8 *quater*,  
     9, 11, 34, 50, viii. 1, 14, ix. 1, 8,  
     9, 39, 41, x. 9, 14, 15 *bis*, 18, 19  
 (*quinquies*: LXX.), xi. 13, 23, xii. 14,  
     18, 19, 21, 24, xiii. 2, 5, 7, 11, 15,  
     16, 19, 20, 21, 30, 32, 36, xiv. 2, 25,  
     31, xvi. 6, 18

- μηδέ ii. 2, iii. 20, vi. 11, viii. 26, xii. 24, xiii. 15  
 μηδεις i. 44, v. 26, 43, vi. 8, vii. 36, viii. 30, ix. 9, xi. 14  
 μηκέτι i. 45, ii. 2, ix. 25, xi. 14  
 \* μηκύνεσθαι iv. 27  
 μή ποτε iv. 12 (LXX.), xiv. 2  
 μῆτηρ iii. 31, 32, 33, 34, 35, v. 40, vi. 24, 28, vii. 10 *bis* (LXX.), ii. 12, x. 7 (LXX.), 19 (LXX.), 29, 30, xv. 40  
 μῆτι iv. 21, xiv. 19  
 μικρός iv. 31, ix. 42, xiv. 35, 70, xv. 40  
 μισεῖσθαι xiii. 13  
 μισθός ix. 41  
 μισθωτός i. 20  
 μινήμα v. 3, 5, xv. 46  
 μνημεῖον v. 2, vi. 29, xv. 46, xvi. 2, 3, 5, 8  
 μνημονεύειν viii. 18  
 μνημόσυνον xiv. 9  
 \* μογύλας vii. 32  
 μόδιος iv. 21  
 μοιχαλίς viii. 38  
 μοιχάσθαι x. 11, 12  
 μοιχεία vii. 21  
 μοιχεύειν x. 19 (LXX.)  
 μόνον *adv.* v. 36, vi. 8  
 μόνος iv. 10, vi. 47, ix. 2, 8  
 μονόφθαλμος ix. 47  
 μύλος ix. 42  
 \* μυρίζειν xiv. 8  
 μύρον xiv. 3, 4, 5  
 μυστήριον iv. 11  
 Μωσῆς i. 44, vii. 10, ix. 4, 5, x. 3, 4, xii. 19, 26
- Ναζαρέτ i. 9  
 Ναζαρηνός i. 24, x. 47, xiv. 67, xvi. 6  
 ναῦ vii. 28  
 ναός xiv. 58, xv. 29, 38  
 νάρδος xiv. 3  
 νεανίσκος xiv. 51, xvi. 5  
 νεκρός vi. 14, ix. 9, 10, 26, xii. 25, 26, 27, xvi. 14  
 νέος ii. 22 *bis*  
 νεότης x. 20  
 νεφέλη ix. 7, xiii. 26, xiv. 62  
 νηστεύειν ii. 18 *ter*, 19 *bis*, 20  
 νηστις viii. 3  
 νίπτεσθαι vii. 3  
 νοεῖν vii. 18, viii. 17, xiii. 14  
 νόσος i. 34  
 \* νονυεχώς xii. 34  
 νυμφίος ii. 19 *bis*, 20  
 νυμφών ii. 19  
 νῦν x. 30, xiii. 19, xv. 32  
 νύξ iv. 27, v. 5, vi. 48, xiv. 30
- \* ξέστης vii. 4  
 ξηραίνεσθαι iii. 1, iv. 6, v. 29, ix. 18, xi. 20, 21
- ξηρός iii. 3  
 ξύλον xiv. 43, 48
- ό *passim*  
 ὄδος i. 2 (LXX.), 3 (LXX.), ii. 23, iv. 4, 15, vi. 8, viii. 3, 27, ix. 33, 34, x. 17, 32, 46, 52, xi. 8, xii. 14  
 ὄδοις ix. 18  
 οἰκία i. 29, ii. 15, iii. 25, 27 *bis*, vi. 4, 10, vii. 24, ix. 33, x. 10, 29, 30, xii. 40, xiii. 15, 34, 35, xiv. 3  
 οἰκοδεσπότης xiv. 14  
 οἰκοδομεῖν xii. 1, 10 (LXX.), xiv. 58, xv. 29  
 οἰκοδομή xiii. 1, 2  
 οἶκος ii. 1, 11, 26, iii. 20, v. 19, 38, vii. 17, 30, viii. 3, 26, ix. 28, xi. 17  
 οἶνος ii. 22 *quater*, xv. 23  
 οἶος ix. 3, xiii. 19  
 οἴλιγος i. 19, vi. 5, 31, viii. 7  
 οἴλοκατωμα xii. 33  
 οἴλος i. 28, 33, 39, vi. 55, viii. 36, xii. 30 *quater* (LXX.), 33 *ter* (LXX.), 44, xiv. 9, 55, xv. 1, 16, 33  
 οἴμμα viii. 23  
 οἴμνυειν vi. 23, xiv. 71  
 οἴμοισθν iv. 30  
 οἴμως iv. 16, xv. 31  
 οἴνειδίζειν xv. 32, xvi. 14  
 οἴνικός ix. 42  
 οἴνομα iii. 16, 17, v. 9 *bis*, 22, vi. 14, ix. 37, 38, 39, 41, xi. 9, xiii. 6, 13, xiv. 32, xvi. 17  
 οἴνομάζειν iii. 14  
 οἴντως xi. 32  
 οἴξος xv. 36  
 οἴπισθεν v. 27  
 οἴπιστα i. 7, 17, 20, viii. 33, 34, xiii. 16  
 οἴπου ii. 4 *bis*, iv. 5, 15, v. 40, vi. 10, 55, 56, ix. 18, 48, xiii. 14, xiv. 9, 14 *bis*, xvi. 6  
 οἴπως iii. 6  
 οἱράν i. 44, viii. 15, 24, ix. 4, xiii. 26, xiv. 62, xvi. 7  
 οἱργή iii. 5  
 οἱρθώς vii. 35  
 οἱριον v. 17, vii. 24, 31 *bis*, x. 1  
 οἱρκίζειν v. 7  
 οἱρκος vi. 26  
 οἱρμάν v. 13  
 οἱρος iii. 13, v. 5, 11, vi. 46, ix. 2, 9, xi. 1, 23, xiii. 3, 14, xiv. 26  
 οἱρύστειν xii. 1  
 οἱρχεῖσθαι vi. 22  
 οἴς *passim*  
 οἴσος ii. 19, iii. 8, 10, 28, v. 19, 20, vi. 30, 56, vii. 36, ix. 13, x. 21, xi. 24, xii. 44  
 οἴστις iv. 20, vi. 23, viii. 34, ix. 1, xii. 18, xv. 7  
 οἴσφύς i. 6

- ὅταν ii. 20, iii. 11, iv. 15, 16, 29, 31, 32, viii. 38, ix. 9, xi. 19, 25, xii. 25, xiii. 4, 7, 11, 14, 28, 29, xiv. 7, 25  
 ὅτε i. 32, ii. 25, iv. 6, 10, vi. 21, vii. 17, viii. 19, 20, xi. 1, xiv. 12, xv. 20, 41  
 ὅτι *passim*  
 οὐ (οὐκ, οὐχ) *passim*  
 \* οὐά xv. 29  
 οὐαί xiii. 17, xiv. 21  
 οὐδέ iv. 22, v. 3, vi. 31, viii. 17, xi. 33, xii. 10, xiii. 32, xiv. 59, xvi. 13  
 οὐδέσις ii. 21, 22, iii. 27, v. 3, 4, 37, vi. 5, vii. 12, 15, 24, ix. 8, 29, 39, x. 18, 29, xi. 2, 13, xii. 14, 34, xiii. 32, xiv. 60, 61, xv. 4, 5, xvi. 8  
 οὐδέποτε ii. 12, 25  
 οὐκέτι v. 3, vii. 12, ix. 8, x. 8, xii. 34, xiv. 25, xv. 5  
 οὖν x. 9, xi. 31, xiii. 35, xv. 12, xvi. 19  
 οὕπτω iv. 40, viii. 17, 21, xi. 2, xiii. 7  
 οὐρανός i. 10, 11, iv. 32, vi. 41, vii. 34, viii. 11, x. 21, xi. 25, 30, 31, xii. 25, xiii. 25 *bis*, 27, 31, 32, xiv. 62, xvi. 19  
 οὐς iv. 9, 23, vii. 33, viii. 18  
 οὔτε xii. 25 *bis*, xiv. 68 *bis*  
 οὔτως *passim*  
 οὔτως ii. 7, 8, 12, iv. 26, vii. 18, ix. 3, x. 43, xiii. 29, xiv. 59, xv. 39  
 ὁφθαλμός vii. 22, viii. 18, 25, ix. 47 *bis*, xii. 11, xiv. 40  
 ὄφη xvi. 18  
 ὄχλος ii. 4, 13, iii. 9, 20, 32, iv. 1 *bis*, 36, v. 21, 24, 27, 30, 31, vi. 34, 45, vii. 14, 17, 33, viii. 1, 2, 6 *bis*, 34, ix. 14, 15, 17, 25, x. 1, 46, xi. 18, 32, xii. 12, 37, 41, xiv. 43, xv. 8, II, 15  
 ὄψις xi. 11, 19, xiii. 35  
 ὄψις i. 32, iv. 35, vi. 47, xiv. 17, xv. 42  
 \* παιδιόθεν ix. 21  
 παιδίον v. 39, 40 *bis*, 41, vii. 28, 30, ix. 24, 36, 37, x. 13, 14, 15  
 παιδίσκη xiv. 66, 69  
 παίειν xiv. 47  
 παλαιός ii. 21 *bis*, 22  
 πάλιν ii. 1, 13, iii. 1, 20, iv. 1, v. 21, vii. 14, 31, viii. 1, 13, 25, x. 1 *bis*, 10, 24, 32, xi. 3, 27, xii. 4, xiv. 39, 40, 61, 69, 70 *bis*, xv. 4, 12, 13  
 πανταχοῦ i. 28, xvi. 20  
 πάντοθεν i. 45  
 πάντοτε xiv. 7 *bis*  
 παρά (1) *w. gen.*, iii. 21, v. 26, viii. 11, xii. 2, 11, xiv. 43, xvi. 9; (2) *w. dat.*, x. 27; (3) *w. acc.*, i. 16, ii. 13, iv. 1, 4, 15, v. 21, x. 46  
 παραβολή iii. 23, iv. 2, 10, 11, 13, 30, 33, 34, vii. 17, xii. 1, 12, xiii. 28  
 παραγγέλλειν vi. 8, viii. 6  
 παράγειν i. 16, ii. 14, xv. 21  
 παραγύνεσθαι xiv. 43  
 παραδέχεσθαι iv. 20  
 παραδιδόναι i. 14, iii. 19, iv. 29, vii. 13, ix. 31, x. 33 *bis*, xiii. 9, 11, 12, xiv. 10, 11, 18, 21, 41, 42, 44, xv. 1, 10, 15  
 παράδοσις vii. 3, 5, 8, 9, 13  
 παρατείσθαι xv. 6  
 παρακαλεῖν i. 40, v. 10, 12, 17, 18, 23, vi. 56, vii. 32, viii. 22  
 παρακούνειν v. 36  
 παραλαμβάνειν iv. 36, v. 40, vii. 4, ix. 2, x. 32, xiv. 33  
 παραλυτικός ii. 3, 4, 5, 9, 10  
 παραπορεύεσθαι xi. 20, xv. 29  
 παράπτωμα xi. 25  
 παρασκευή xv. 42  
 παρατηρεῖν iii. 2  
 παρατίθεναι vi. 41, viii. 6, 7  
 παραφέρειν xiv. 36  
 παρέρχεσθαι vi. 48, xiii. 30, 31 *bis*, xiv. 35  
 παρέχειν xiv. 6  
 παρίστασθαι iv. 29, xiv. 47, 69, 70, xv. 39  
 \* παρόμοιος vii. 13  
 παρηστάνει viii. 32  
 πᾶς *passim*  
 πάσχα xiv. 1, 12 *bis*, 14, 16  
 πάσχειν v. 26, viii. 31, ix. 12  
 πατάσσειν xiv. 27 (LXX.)  
 πατήρ i. 20, v. 40, vii. 10 *bis* (LXX.), 11, 12, viii. 38, ix. 21, 24, x. 7 (LXX.), 19 (LXX.), 29, xi. 10, 25, xiii. 12, 32, xiv. 36, xv. 21  
 πατρὸς vi. 1, 4  
 πέδη v. 4 *bis*  
 πεζὴ vi. 33  
 Πειλάτος xv. 1, 2, 4, 5, 9, 12, 14, 15, 43, 44  
 πεινάντι ii. 25, xi. 12  
 πειράζειν i. 13, viii. 11, x. 2, xii. 15  
 πειρασμός xiv. 38  
 πέμπτεν v. 12  
 πενθεῖν xvi. 10  
 πενθερά i. 30  
 πεντακισχλίοι vi. 44, viii. 19  
 πέντε vi. 38, 41, viii. 19  
 πεντήκοντα vi. 40  
 πέραν iii. 8, iv. 35, v. 1, 21, vi. 45, viii. 13, x. 1  
 περὶ (1) *w. gen.*, i. 30, 44, v. 16, 27, vii. 6, 25, viii. 30, x. 10, 41, xii. 14, 26, xiii. 32, xiv. 21; (2) *w. acc.*, i. 6, iii. 8, 32, 34, iv. 10, 19, vi. 48, vii. 17, ix. 14, 42  
 περιάγειν vi. 6  
 περιβάλλεσθαι xiv. 51, xvi. 5  
 περιβλέπεσθαι iii. 5, 34, v. 32, ix. 8, x. 23, xi. 11

- περικαλύπτειν xiv. 65  
 περικείσθαι ix. 42  
 περίλυτος vi. 26, xiv. 34  
 περιπατέν ii. 9, v. 42, vi. 48, 49, vii. 5,  
   viii. 24, xi. 27, xii. 38, xvi. 12  
 περιστέμεν xii. 44  
 περίστευμα viii. 8  
 περιστός vii. 36, xii. 33, 40  
 περιστώς x. 26, xv. 14  
 περιστερά i. 10, xi. 15  
 περιτιθέναι xii. 1, xv. 17, 36  
<sup>\*</sup> περιτρέχειν vi. 55  
 περιφέρειν vi. 55  
 περίχωρος i. 28  
 πετεῖνόν iv. 4, 32  
 πέτρα xv. 46  
 Πέτρος iii. 16, v. 37, viii. 29, 32, 33,  
   ix. 2, 5, x. 28, xi. 21, xiii. 3, xiv. 29,  
   33, 37, 54, 66, 67, 70, 71, xvi. 7  
 πετρώδης iv. 5, 16  
 πηγή v. 29  
 πήρα vi. 8  
 πίναξ vi. 25, 28  
 πίνειν ii. 16, x. 38, 39, xiv. 23, 25, xvi.  
   18  
 πιπράσκειν xiv. 5  
 πίπτειν iv. 4, 5, 7, 8, v. 22, ix. 20,  
   xiii. 25, xiv. 35  
 πιστεύειν i. 15, v. 36, ix. 23, 24, 42,  
   xi. 23, 24, 31, xiii. 21, xv. 32, xvi.  
   13, 14, 16, 17  
 πιστικός xiv. 3  
 πιστος ii. 5, iv. 40, v. 34, x. 52, xi. 22  
 πλανῶν xii. 24, 27, xiii. 5, 6  
 πλατεία vi. 56  
 πλεῖστος iv. 1  
 πλείων xii. 43  
 πλέκειν xv. 17  
 πλεονεξία vii. 22  
 πλῆθος iii. 7, 8  
 πλήη xii. 32  
 πλήρης iv. 28, viii. 19  
 πληροῦσθαι i. 15, xiv. 49, xv. 28  
 πλήρωμα ii. 21, vi. 43, viii. 20  
 πληστὸν xii. 31 (LXX.), 33  
 πλοιάριον iii. 9  
 πλοῖον i. 19, 20, iv. 1, 36 bis, 37 bis,  
   v. 2, 18, 21, vi. 32, 45, 47, 51, 54,  
   viii. 10, 14  
 πλούσιος x. 25, xii. 41  
 πλοῦτος iv. 19  
 πνεῦμα i. 8, 10, 12, 23, 26, 27, ii. 8,  
   iii. 11, 29, 30, v. 2, 8, 13, vi. 7, vii.  
   25, viii. 12, ix. 17, 20, 25 bis, xii. 36,  
   xiii. 11, xiv. 38  
 πνγεσθαι v. 13  
 πόθεν vi. 2, viii. 4, xii. 37  
 ποιεῖν i. 3 (LXX.), 17, ii. 23, 24, 25, iii.  
   8, 12, 14, 16, 35, iv. 32, v. 19, 20,  
   32, vi. 5, 21, 30, vii. 12, 13, '37  
   bis, ix. 5, 13, 39, x. 6, 17, 35, 36,
- 51, xi. 3, 5, 17, 28 bis, 29, 33, xii.  
   9, xiii. 22, xiv. 7, 8, 9, xv. 1, 7, 8, 12,  
   14, 15  
 πουκλός i. 34  
 ποιμήν vi. 34, xiv. 27  
 ποῖος xi. 28, 29, 33, xii. 28  
 πόλεμος xiii. 7 bis  
 πόλις i. 33, 45, v. 14, vi. 33, 56, xi. 19,  
   xiv. 13, 16  
 πολλάκις v. 4, ix. 22  
 πολύς i. 34 bis, 45, ii. 2, 15 bis, iii. 7, 8,  
   10, 12, iv. 2, 5, 33, v. 9, 10, 21, 23,  
   24, 26, 38, 43, vi. 2, 13, 20, 31, 33,  
   34 bis, 35 bis, vii. 4, 13, viii. 1, 31,  
   ix. 12, 14, 26 bis, x. 22, 31, 45, 48,  
   xi. 8, xii. 5, 27, 37, 41 bis, xiii. 6 bis,  
   26, xiv. 24, 56, xv. 3, 41  
 πολυτελής xiv. 3  
 πονηρία vii. 22  
 πονηρός vii. 22, 23  
 πορεύεσθαι ix. 30, xvi. 10, 12, 15  
 πορνεία vii. 21  
 πορνεύειν x. 19 (LXX.)  
 πόρρω vii. 6 (LXX.)  
 πορφύρα xv. 17, 20  
 πόσος vi. 38, viii. 5, 19, 20, ix. 21, xv. 4  
 ποταμός i. 5  
 ποταπός xiii. 1  
 πότε ix. 19 bis, xiii. 4, 33, 35  
 ποτήριον vii. 4, ix. 41, x. 38, 39, xiv.  
   23, 36  
 ποτέζειν ix. 41, xv. 36  
 πού xiv. 12, 14, xv. 47  
 πούς v. 22, vi. 11, vii. 25, ix. 45 bis,  
   xii. 36  
 πραιτώριον xv. 16  
<sup>\*</sup> πραστά vi. 40 bis  
 πρεσβύτερος vii. 3, 5, viii. 31, xi. 27,  
   xiv. 43, 53, xv. 1  
 πρέγ xiv. 30, 72  
 πρό i. 2 (LXX.)  
 προάγειν vi. 45, x. 32, xi. 9, xiv. 28,  
   xvi. 7  
<sup>\*</sup> προαύλιον xiv. 68  
 προβαίνειν i. 19  
 πρόβατον vi. 34, xiv. 27  
 προερηκέναι xiii. 23  
 προέρχεσθαι vi. 33, xiv. 35  
 πρόθετις ii. 26 (LXX.)  
 πρόθυμος xiv. 38  
 προλαμβάνειν xiv. 8  
<sup>\*</sup> προμεριμνᾶν xiii. 11  
 πρός (1) *w. dat.*, v. 11; (2) *w. acc., passim*  
<sup>\*</sup> προσάρβιαν xv. 42  
 προσαίτης x. 46  
 προσδέχεσθαι xv. 43  
 προσέρχεσθαι i. 31, vi. 35, x. 2, xii. 28,  
   xiv. 45  
 προσεύχεσθαι i. 35, vi. 46, xi. 24, 25,  
   xii. 40, xiii. 18, xiv. 32, 35, 38, 39  
 προσευχὴ ix. 29, xi. 17 (LXX.)

- πρόσκαιρος iv. 17  
 προσκαλεῖσθαι iii. 13, 23, vi. 7, vii. 14,  
 viii. 1, 34, x. 42, xii. 43, xv. 44  
 προσκαρτερεῖν iii. 9  
 \* προσκεφάλαιον iv. 38  
 προσκυλίειν xv. 46  
 προσκυνεῖν v. 6  
 προσλαμβάνεσθαι viii. 32  
 προσμένειν viii. 2  
 \* προσορμίζεσθαι vi. 53  
 προσπίπτειν iii. 11, v. 33, vii. 25  
 \* προσπορεύεσθαι x. 35  
 προστάσσειν i. 44  
 προστιθέναι iv. 24  
 προστρέχειν ix. 15, x. 17  
 προσφέρειν i. 44, ii. 4, x. 13 bis  
 πρόσωπον i. 2 (LXX.), xii. 14, xiv. 65  
 πρόφασις xii. 40  
 προφητεύειν vii. 6, xiv. 65  
 προφήτης i. 2, vi. 4, 15, viii. 28, xi. 32  
 πρύμνα iv. 38  
 πρωΐ i. 35, xi. 20, xiii. 35, xv. 1, xvi.  
 2, 9  
 πρωτοκαθεδρία xii. 39  
 πρωτοκλιστία xii. 39  
 πρώτων *adv.* iii. 27, iv. 28, vii. 27, ix.  
 11, 12, xiii. 10, xvi. 9  
 πρώτος vi. 21, ix. 35, x. 31, 44, xii. 20,  
 28, 29, xiv. 12, xvi. 9  
 πτίνειν vii. 33, viii. 23  
 πτώμα vi. 29, xv. 45  
 πτωχός x. 21, xii. 42, 43, xiv. 5, 7  
 \* πυγμῆ vii. 3  
 πῦρ ix. 22, 43, 48 (LXX.), 49  
 πύργος xii. 1  
 πυρέσσειν i. 30  
 πυρετός i. 31  
 πωλεῖν x. 21, xi. 15 bis  
 πῶλος xi. 2, 4, 5, 7  
 πωρούσθαι vi. 52, viii. 17  
 πώρωσις iii. 5  
 πῶς iii. 23, iv. 13, 30, 40, v. 16, ix. 12,  
 x. 23, 24, xi. 18, xii. 26, 35, 41,  
 xiv. 1, 11  
 ῥαββεῖ ix. 5, xi. 21, xiv. 45  
 ῥαββουνέ x. 51  
 ῥάβδος vi. 8  
 ῥάκος ii. 21  
 ῥαντίζεσθαι vii. 4  
 ῥάπτισμα xiv. 65  
 ῥῆμα ix. 32, xiv. 72  
 ῥήσσειν ii. 22, ix. 18  
 ῥίζα iv. 6, 17  
 ῥούφος xv. 21  
 ῥύσις v. 25  
 σαβαχθανεῖ xv. 34  
 σάββατον, σάββατα i. 21, ii. 23, 24, 27  
 bis, 28, iii. 2, 4, vi. 2, xvi. 1, 2, 9  
 Σαδδουκαῖος xii. 18  
 σαλεύειν xiii. 25  
 \* Σαλάμη xv. 40, xvi. 1  
 σανδάλιον vi. 9  
 σάρξ x. 8, xiii. 20, xiv. 38  
 Σατανᾶς, δ σατανᾶς i. 13, iii. 23, 26,  
 iv. 15, viii. 33  
 σβέννυσθαι ix. 48 (LXX.)  
 σεαντοῦ i. 44, xii. 31, xv. 30  
 σέβεσθαι vii. 7 (LXX.)  
 σεισμός xiii. 8  
 σελήνη xiii. 24  
 σημεῖον viii. 11, 12 bis, xiii. 4, 22, xvi.  
 17, 20  
 σήμερον xiv. 30  
 Σιδῶν iii. 8, vii. 24, 31  
 Σίμων (1) Πέτρος i. 16, 29, 30, 36, iii.  
 16, xiv. 37; (2) δ Καναναῖος iii. 18;  
 (3) δ ἀδελφὸς τοῦ κυρίου vi. 3; (4) δ  
 λαπρός xiv. 3; (5) δ Κυρηναῖος xv. 21  
 σίναπι iv. 31  
 σινδῶν xiv. 51, 52, xv. 46  
 σῖτος iv. 28  
 σιωπᾶν iii. 4, iv. 39, ix. 34, x. 48, xiv. 61  
 σκανδαλίζεσθαι iv. 17, vi. 3, ix. 42, 43,  
 45, 47, xiv. 27, 29  
 σκεύος iii. 27, xi. 16  
 σκηνὴ ix. 5  
 σκιά iv. 32  
 σκληροκαρδία x. 5, xvi. 14  
 σκοτίζεσθαι xiii. 24  
 σκότος xv. 33  
 σκύλλειν v. 35  
 \* σκώληξ ix. 48 (LXX.)  
 \* σμυρνίζεσθαι xv. 23  
 σός ii. 18, v. 19  
 σοφία vi. 2  
 σπάσθαι xiv. 47  
 σπεῖρα xv. 16  
 σπείρειν iv. 3, 4, 14, 15 bis, 16, 18, 20,  
 31, 32  
 \* σπεκουλάτωρ vi. 27  
 σπέρμα iv. 31, xii. 19, 20, 21, 22  
 σπῆλαιον xi. 17 (LXX.)  
 σπλαγχνίζεσθαι i. 41, vi. 34, viii. 2,  
 ix. 22  
 σπόγγος xv. 36  
 σπόριμα, τὰ ii. 23  
 σπόρος iv. 26, 27  
 σπουδή vi. 25  
 \* στασιαστῆς xv. 7  
 στάσις xv. 7  
 σταυρός viii. 34, xv. 21, 30, 32  
 σταυροῦν xv. 13, 14, 15, 20, 24, 25, 27,  
 xvi. 6  
 στάχυς ii. 23, iv. 28 bis  
 στέγη ii. 4  
 στενάζειν vii. 34  
 στέφανος xv. 17  
 στήκειν iii. 31, xi. 25  
 \* στιβάς xi. 8  
 \* στιλβεῖν ix. 3

- στολή xii. 38, xvi. 5  
 στρατιώτης xv. 16  
 στρωννέειν xi. 8, xiv. 15  
 στυγγάζειν x. 22  
 σύ, ὑμεῖς *passim*  
 συγγενής vi. 4  
 συκῆ xi. 13, 20, 21, xiii. 28  
 σύκοι xi. 13  
 συλλαμβάνειν xiv. 48  
 συμβαίνειν x. 32  
 συμβούλιον iii. 6, xv. 1  
 \* συμπόσιον vi. 39 *bis*  
 σύν ii. 26, iv. 10, viii. 34, ix. 4, xv.  
     27, 32  
 συνάγειν ii. 2, iv. 1, v. 21, vi. 30, vii. 1  
 συναγωγή i. 21, 23, 29, 39, iii. 1, vi. 2,  
     xii. 39, xiii. 9  
 συνακολουθεῖν v. 37, xiv. 51  
 συναναβάίνειν xv. 41  
 συνανακεῖσθαι ii. 15, vi. 22  
 συνέδριον xiii. 9, xiv. 55, xv. 1  
 συνεργεῖν xvii. 20  
 συνέρχεσθαι iii. 20, xiv. 53  
 σύνεστις xii. 33 (LXX.)  
 συνζευγνύναι x. 9  
 συνζητεῖν i. 27, viii. 11, ix. 10, 14, 16,  
     xii. 28  
 \* συνθλίβειν v. 24, 31  
 συνίειν, συνιέναι iv. 12 (LXX.), vi. 52, vii.  
     14, viii. 17, 21  
 συνκαθήσθαι xiv. 54  
 συνκαλεῖν xv. 16  
 συνλαλεῖν ix. 4  
 \* συνλυπεῖσθαι iii. 5  
 συνπνίγειν iv. 7, 19  
 συνπορεύεσθαι x. 1  
 συνσπαράσσειν ix. 20  
 συνσταυροῦσθαι xv. 32  
 συντελεῖσθαι xiii. 4  
 συντηρεῖν vi. 20  
 συντρέχειν vi. 33  
 συντρίβειν v. 4, xiv. 3  
 Σύρος vii. 26  
 \* σύστημον xiv. 44  
 σφόδρα xvi. 4  
 σφυρίς viii. 8, 20  
 σχίζεσθαι i. 10, xv. 38  
 σχίζμα ii. 21  
 σφέζειν iii. 4, v. 23, 28, 34, vi. 56, viii.  
     35 *bis*, x. 26, 52, xiii. 13, 20, xv. 30,  
     31, xvi. 16  
 σῶμα v. 29, xiv. 8, 22, xv. 43  
 σωφρονεῖν v. 15  
 \* ταλειθά v. 41  
 ταράσσεσθαι vi. 50  
 ταχύ ix. 39  
 τέκνον ii. 5, vii. 27, x. 24, 29, 30, xii.  
     19, xiii. 12 *bis*  
 τέκτων vi. 3  
 τελευτᾶν vii. 10 (LXX.), ix. 48 (LXX.)  
 τέλος iii. 26, xiii. 7, 13  
 τελώνης ii. 15, 16 *bis*  
 τελώνιον ii. 14  
 τέρας xiii. 22  
 τέσταρες ii. 3, xiii. 27  
 τεστεράκοντα i. 13  
 τέταρτος vi. 48  
 τετρακισχίλιοι viii. 9, 20  
 \* τηλαυγώς viii. 25  
 τηρεῖν vii. 9  
 τιθέναι iv. 21 *bis*, 30, vi. 29, 56, viii.  
     25, x. 16, xii. 36 (LXX.), xv. 19, 46,  
     47, xvi. 6  
 τίλλειν ii. 23  
 \* Τίμαλος x. 46  
 τιμᾶν vii. 6 (LXX.), 10 (LXX.), x. 19  
     (LXX.)  
 τίς, τις *passim*  
 τοιοῦτος iv. 33, vi. 2, vii. 13, ix. 37,  
     x. 14, xiii. 19  
 τολμᾶν xii. 34, xv. 43  
 τόπος i. 35, 45, vi. 11, 31, 32, 35, xiii.  
     8, xv. 22, xvi. 6  
 τότε ii. 20, iii. 27, xiii. 14, 21, 26, 27  
 τράπεζα vii. 28, xi. 15  
 τράχηλος ix. 42  
 τρέις viii. 2, 31, ix. 5, 31, x. 34, xiv. 58,  
     xxv. 29  
 τρέμειν v. 33  
 τρέχειν v. 6, xv. 36  
 τριάκοντα iv. 8, 20  
 τριακόσιοι xiv. 5  
 τρίβος i. 3 (LXX.)  
 \* τρίζειν ix. 18  
 τρὶς xiv. 30, 72  
 τρίτον *adv.* xiv. 41  
 τρίτος xii. 21, xv. 25  
 τρόμος xvi. 8  
 τρύβλιον xiv. 20  
 \* τρυμαλία x. 25  
 τύπτειν xv. 19  
 Τύρος iii. 8, vii. 24, 31  
 τυφλός viii. 22, 23, x. 46, 49, 51  
 ήγιής v. 34  
 ίδωρ i. 8, 10, ix. 22, 41, xiv. 13  
 νίός i. 1, 11, ii. 10, 19, 28, iii. 11, 17,  
     28, v. 7, vi. 3, viii. 31, 38, ix. 7, 9,  
     12, 17, 31, x. 33, 35, 45, 46, 47, 48,  
     xii. 6 *bis*, 35, 37, xiii. 26 (LXX.), 32,  
     xiv. 21 *bis*, 41, 61, 62 (LXX.), xv. 39  
 ήμειν xiv. 26  
 ήπαγειν i. 44, ii. 11, v. 19, 34, vi. 31,  
     33, 38, vii. 29, viii. 33, x. 21, 52,  
     xi. 2, xiv. 13, 21, xvi. 7  
 ήπακούειν i. 27, iv. 41  
 ήπαντάν v. 2  
 ήπέρ w. *gen.* ix. 40, xiv. 24  
 \* ήπερφανία vii. 22  
 \* ήπερπεριστώς vii. 37  
 ήπηρέτης xiv. 54, 65

- ὑπόδι (1) *w. gen.*, i. 5, 9, 13, ii. 3, v. 4,  
26, viii. 31, xiii. 13, xv. 11; (2) *w.*  
*acc.*, iv. 21 *bis*, 32
- ὑποδεισθαι vi. 9
- ὑπόδημα i. 7
- ὑποκάτω vi. 11, vii. 28
- ὑπόκρισις xii. 15
- ὑποκριτής vii. 6
- \* ὑπολήνιον xii. 1
- ὑπομένειν xiii. 13
- ὑποπόδιον xii. 36 (LXX.)
- ὑστερεῖν x. 21
- ὑστέρησις xii. 44
- ὕστερον xvii. 14
- ὕψηλός ix. 2
- ὕψιστος v. 7, xi. 10
- φαίνεσθαι xiv. 64, xvii. 9
- φανερός iii. 12, iv. 22, vi. 14
- φανεροῦσθαι iv. 22, xvii. 12, 14
- φανερώς i. 45
- φάντασμα vi. 49
- Φαρισαῖος ii. 16, 18 *bis*, 24, iii. 6, vii.  
1, 3, 5, viii. 11, 15, ix. 11, x. 2,  
xii. 13
- φέγγος xiii. 24
- φέρειν i. 32, ii. 3, iv. 8, vi. 27, 28,  
vii. 32, viii. 22, ix. 17, 19, 20, xi. 2,  
7, xii. 15, 16, xv. 22
- φεύγειν v. 14, xiii. 14, x.v. 50, 52, xvi. 8
- ἔφη ix. 12, 38, x. 20, 29, xii. 24, xiv.  
29
- φθόνος xv. 10
- φιλεῖν xiv. 44
- Φίλιππος (1) ὁ ἀπόστολος, iii. 18; (2) ὁ  
ἀδελφὸς Ἡρόδου, vi. 17; (3) ὁ τετρα-  
άρχης, viii. 27
- φιλοῦσθαι i. 25, iv. 39
- φοβεῖσθαι iv. 41, v. 15, 33, 36, vi. 20,  
50, ix. 32, x. 32, xi. 18, 32, xii. 12,  
xvi. 8
- φόβος iv. 41
- \* Φοινίκιστα vii. 26
- φονεύειν x. 19 (LXX.)
- φόνος vii. 21, xv. 7
- φραγελλοῦν xv. 15
- φραγμός xii. 1 (LXX.)
- φρονεῖν viii. 33
- φυλακή vi. 17, 28, 48
- φυλάσσεσθαι x. 20
- φύλλον xi. 13 *bis*, xiii. 28
- φυτεύειν xii. 1
- φωνεῖν i. 26, ix. 35, x. 49 *ter*, xiv. 30,  
72 *bis*, xv. 35
- φωνή i. 3 (LXX.), ii. 26, v. 7, ix. 7, xv.  
34, 37
- φῶς xiv. 54
- χαίρειν xiv. 11, xv. 18
- χαλᾶν ii. 4
- \* χαλκίον vii. 4
- χαλκός vi. 8, xii. 41
- χαρά iv. 16
- χεῖλος vii. 6 (LXX.)
- χειμῶν xiii. 18
- χείρ i. 31, 41, iii. 1, 3, 5 *bis*, v. 23, 41,  
vi. 2, 5, vii. 2, 3, 5, 32, viii. 23 *bis*,  
25, ix. 27, 31, 43 *bis*, x. 16, xiv. 41,  
46, xvi. 18 *bis*
- χειροποίητος xiv. 58
- χειρων ii. 21, v. 26
- χήρα xii. 40, 42, 43
- χιλιαρχος vi. 21
- χιτών vi. 9, xiv. 63
- χλωρός vi. 39
- χοῖρος v. 11, 12, 13, 16
- χορτάζειν vi. 2, vii. 27, viii. 4, 8
- χόρτος iv. 28, vi. 39
- χούς vi. 11
- χρεῖα ii. 17, 25, xi. 3, xiv. 63
- χρῆμα x. 23
- Χριστός, ὁ Χριστός i. 1, 34, viii. 29, ix.  
41, xii. 35, xiii. 21, xiv. 61, xv. 32
- χρόνος ii. 19, ix. 21
- χωλός ix. 45
- χώρα i. 5, v. 1, 10, vi. 55
- χωρεῖν ii. 2
- χωρίζειν x. 9
- χωρίον xiv. 32
- χωρὶς iv. 34
- ψευδομαρτυρεῖν x. 19 (LXX.), xiv. 56, 57
- ψευδοπροφῆτης xiii. 22
- ψευδόχριστος xiii. 22
- ψυχὴn vii. 28
- ψυχή iii. 4, viii. 35 *bis*, 36, 37, x. 45,  
xii. 30 (LXX.), xiv. 34
- ῶ ix. 19
- ῶδε vi. 3, viii. 4, ix. 1, 5, xi. 3, xiii. 2,  
21, xiv. 32, 34, xvi. 6
- ῶδίν xiii. 8
- ῶρα vi. 35 *bis*, xi. 11, xiii. 11, 32, xiv.  
35, 37, 41, xv. 25, 33 *bis*, 34
- ῶς (1) *adv.* i. 10, 22, iv. 26, 27, 31, 36, v.  
13, vi. 15, 34, vii. 6, viii. 9, 24, x. 1,  
15, xii. 25, 31 (LXX.), 33 (LXX.), xiii.  
34, xiv. 48; (2) *conj.* ix. 21, xiv. 72
- ῶσαννά xi. 9, 10
- ῶσαύτως xii. 21, xiv. 31
- ῶσει ix. 26
- ῶστε i. 27, 45, ii. 2, 12, 28, iii. 10, 20,  
iv. 1, 32, 37, ix. 26, x. 8, xv. 5
- ῶτάριον xiv. 47
- ῶφελεῖν v. 26, vii. 11, viii. 36

## INDEX TO THE INTRODUCTION AND NOTES.

- Abiathar and Ahimelech, 48  
*abomination of desolation*, 304  
absolution, 37 f.  
'Ain-et-Tabighah, 17; 'Ain-et-Tin, *ib.*, 140  
Alexander, 378  
Alphaeus, 39, 61, 389  
anacoluthon, 32  
Andrew, St, 14 f., 60  
angels, their appearance, 397; Jewish conception of, 281; our Lord's teaching in reference to, *ib.*  
Annas, 355  
Antipas, Herod, 12, 119 ff., 170  
Antonia, the, 375  
aorist, see *tenses*  
Apocalypse of c. xiii., 297  
apodosis wanting, 2  
Apostles, number of the, 58; Greek names among the, 60  
apparitions, belief in, 138  
Aramaic words, xlvi, xvii, 109, 161; Aramaic, not the original language of this Gospel, xli ff.  
Arimathaea, 391  
Ariston, Aristion, cxi  
Ascension, Greek terms for the, 407  
attitude in prayer, 261, 343; in teaching, 296 f.  
aurium apertio, 161  
authority, note of, in teaching and actions of our Lord and His disciples, 18, 22, 37, 58 f., 116, 317
- ἀββᾶ ὁ πατήρ 344  
ἀγαθοποιεῦν 51  
ἀγαθός, καλός 74, 324  
ἀγαπᾶν, φιλέν 225, 285  
ἀγαπητός 10, 191, 269  
ἀγγαρένειν 377  
ἀγορά 141; ἀπ' ἀγορᾶς 144  
ἀγρεύειν λόγῳ 273  
ἀγρός 97, 131, 250, 306, 377  
ἀγρυπτεῖν, γρηγορεῦν 317 f.  
ἀδημονεῦν 342
- ἀξυμα, τά 319; ἡ πρώτη ἡμέρα τῶν ἀξύμων 328  
ἀθετεῖν, ἀκυροῦν 127, 149  
αἰτεῖν, αἰτεῖσθαι, προσεύχεσθαι 236, 260  
αἰών, αἰώνιος 68  
ἀκαθαρσία, ἀκάθαρτος 19  
ἀκοή 22, 162  
ἀκούειν ἀκοάς 298  
ἀκούετε 71 f.  
ἀκρίς 5 f.  
ἀλάβαστρος, ἡ 321  
ἀλαλάζειν 107 f.  
ἄλας, ἀναλον 213  
ἀλέκτωρ 340  
ἀληθῆς 274  
ἀλλά 238, 339  
ἀλλασχοῦ 27  
ἄλυσις 93  
ἀμάρτημα, ἀμαρτία 67  
ἀμαρτωλός 40 f.  
ἀμὴν λέγω ὑμῖν 67  
ἀμφόδον 248 f.  
ἀναβαίνειν 73 f. (of vegetation), 234 (of a journey)  
ἀνα-, δια-, ἐμ-, βλέπειν 174, 225, 295, 298  
ἀνάγαλον 330  
ἀναγνώσκων, δ 305  
ἀναθεματίζειν 365  
ἀνακράζειν 19  
ἀνα-, ἀπο-, κυλεῖν 396  
ἀναλαμβάνεσθαι 407  
ἀναπαύεσθαι 129  
ἀναστείειν 372  
ἀνάστασις, ἡ 280  
ἀναφέρειν 187  
ἀναχωρεῦν 54  
ἀντάλλαγμα 184  
ἀντί, ὑπέρ, περὶ 241  
ἀπάγειν 351  
ἀπαλός 313 f.  
ἀπαρνεῖσθαι 182  
ἀπεκριθην, ἀπεκρινάμην 69, 189, 358  
ἀπέχει 348  
ἀπιστεῖν, ἀπειθεῖν 401

426 INDEX TO THE INTRODUCTION AND NOTES.

- ἀπιστία 403  
 ἀπὸ μακρόθεν 94  
 ἀποδημεῖν, ἀπόδημος 266 f., 317  
 ἀποδοκιμάζειν 178 f.  
 ἀποκτεννύντες 269  
 ἀπολύειν (of the wife) 219  
 Ἀπομνημονεύματα Πέτρου xxx, lxvi  
 ἀποστάσιον 216  
 ἀποστεγάζειν 33  
 ἀποστέλλειν, ἀπόστολος 58, 206  
 ἀποστέλλειν 247  
 ἀποστερεῖν 224 f.  
 ἀποτάσσεσθαι 136  
 ἀπτεσθαι 173  
 ἀπώλεια, 'waste,' 323  
 ἄρα 91  
 ἄρτοι τῆς προθέσεως 49  
 ἄρτον φαγεῖν 63  
 ἀρχή I  
 ἀρχιερεῖς, οἱ lxxxv ff., 179, 257  
 ἀρχισυνάγωγος lxxxv, 101, 222  
 ἀστέγεια 154  
 ἀστήρ, ἀστρον 311  
 ἀσύνετος 151  
 ἀσφαλῶς 351  
 αὐλή 355  
 αὐτοάγαθον, τό, 224  
 αὐτόματος 84  
 αὐτὸς ἐστιν 350  
 ἀφεδρών 152  
 ἀφέσις 4, 34 f.  
 ἀφίειν 25  
 ἀφίέναι, καταλείπειν 279; ἀφ. φωνήν 387  
 ἀφρίζειν 198  
 ἀφροσύνη, ἀφρων 155  
 ἀχειροποίητος 357
- 'Babylon,' xxi  
 baptism, of John, 263; of the Spirit, 7;  
     of blood, 237 f.; Christian b., connected with salvation, 405; infant b., 222  
 Baptist, the, food and clothing of, 5 f.;  
     head of, 128  
 Barabbas, 370  
 Barnabas, his connexion with St Mark, xv ff.  
 Bartimaeus, 242 f.  
 Bede, his commentary on St Mark, cxv f.  
 Beelzebub, Beelzebul, 64  
 Bethphage and Bethany, 246  
 Bethsaida, 136, 172  
 blasphemy, 35, 154, 360  
 blessing, form of, 134; cup of, 335  
 broken sentence at end of book, 399  
 brothers of our Lord, 69 ff., 112 f.  
 burial, manner of, 325, 393  
 'bush, the,' 282
- βαπτισμός 4, 145.  
 βαρθολομαῖος 60  
 βαρτυμᾶος 242 f.  
 βασανίζειν 94 f., 137  
 βασιλεῖα, ἡ τοῦ θεοῦ 13  
 βασιλεὺς (of the tetrarch) lxxxiv, 119  
 βάτος, ὁ 282  
 βεβαιῶν 408  
 Βεελζεβούλ 64  
 βιβλίον ἀποστασίου 216  
 βίος 294  
 βλαστᾶν 84  
 βλασφημεῖν constr. 35  
 βλέπειν, ἰδεῖν 77, 83, 300, 310, 317  
 Βοανηργές xxx, 60  
 βοηθεῖν 199  
 βούλεσθαι, θέλειν 373  
 βουλευτής 391
- Caesarea Philippi, 175 f.; C. by the sea, 175, 374  
 Caiaphas, 355  
 'Calvary,' 379  
 camel, the, proverb in reference to, 229  
 Capernaum, lxxxii, lxxxiii, 17, 204  
 catholic mission of the Church, 301,  
     325, 404  
 centurion at the Cross, the, 388  
 chagigah, 334  
 charoseth, 333  
 chief priests, their attitude towards our Lord, lxxxv, 257  
 'children,' 219 f.  
 Christ, anger, sorrow, surprise, indignation, awe, ascribed to, 52, 115, 220,  
     342; His human spirit, 36, 168; His soul, 343; the seat of His personality, 345; His limitations, 104, 114 f., 316; His supernatural knowledge, 36, 248; tone of authority, 18, 22, 37; awe inspired by Him, 195; hostility towards Him, 98, 114, 257 f., 273, 371 f.; St Mark's conception of His person and office, xc ff.; see *Son, the*  
 civil power, our Lord's attitude and teaching in reference to the, 276  
 cloud, symbol of the Divine Presence, 190 f.  
 commentaries on this Gospel, cxiv ff.  
 comparative for superlative, 86, 204  
 conjunctive, deliberative, 85 f., 126;  
     pres. and aor., 84  
 constructio ad sensum, xlviii, 67, 198,  
     305; c. *praegnans*, 51, 100  
 'corner stone,' the, 271 f.  
 covenant, the new, 336  
 covering the head of a condemned person, Roman custom of, 361  
 cross, carried by the condemned, 377  
 crucifixion, manner of, 380; hour of the, 381; wholesale crucifixions, 182
- βαπτίζειν ἐν, εἰς 7 f.; βαπτίζων, ὁ 3

- cup, metaphor of the, 236 f., 344; cups of the Paschal supper, 335  
 Cyrene, 378
- χαλκός 293  
 χειροθεσία 220, 406 f.  
 χειροποίητος 357  
 χιλιάρχος 125, 350  
 χολή 379 f.  
 χορτάσεσθαι 135  
 χόρτος 85; χ. χλωρός 133  
 Χριστοῦ εἶναι 208  
 χωρέων 33  
 χωρίου 341
- Dalmanutha, 166 f.  
 darkness at the Crucifixion, 384 f.  
 dative of instrument, 7, 150  
 David and Christ, 48, 243 f., 251, 288 f.  
 Decapolis, the, 100, 166 ff.  
 demonology, Jewish, 25  
 denarius, the, 132, 275, 323  
 display, doom of barren, 254 f.  
 disturbances in Palestine, 298 f.  
 dogs, house, 157 f.  
 doves sold in the Precinct, 256  
 drowsiness under tension of spirit, 347  
 Dumachus, 382  
 dust, symbol of throwing off, 118  
 Dysmas, 382
- δαιμονίζεσθαι, δαιμόνιον 24 f.  
 δεῖ 178  
 δειλός 90  
 δέρειν 268, 300  
 δεῦρο, δεῦτε 15, 129  
 δέχεσθαι 118, 221  
 δηνάριον 132, 275, 323  
 διαβλέπειν 174  
 διαγίνεσθαι 394  
 διαθήκη 336  
 διακονεῖν, -γένθαι, διάκονος 24, 205, 240  
 διακρίνεσθαι 260  
 διαλογισμός 153  
 διασπάσθαι 93  
 διαστέλλεσθαι 110  
 διαφημίζειν 31  
 διδασκαλία, διδαχή 147  
 διέρχεσθαι, διαπερᾶν, διαπορεύεσθαι 47, 88  
 διηγεῖσθαι 98  
 δι' ἡμερῶν 32  
 δίκαιος 42 f., 123  
 δίκτυον 15 f.  
 δοκεῖν 138, 239  
 δόλος 154  
 δόξα, ἡ τοῦ πατρός 185  
 δοῦλος 267 f., 317  
 δύναμις 111, 114, 120, 359  
 δύνασθαι 199, 237  
 δόσο δόνο 115
- δύσκολος, δυσκόλως 228  
 δώδεκα, οἱ 115  
 δωρεῖσθαι 392
- ed-Delhemiyah*, 167  
*el-Batihah*, 129  
*el-Ghuweir*, 140  
 elders, the, 144, 179  
 elect, the, 308 f., 313  
 Elijah and the Baptist, 5; E. expected, 121, 193, 385 f.  
 ellipsis before *Iwa*, 101 f.  
*Eloi*, *Eloī*, &c., 385  
 Emmaus, 401  
 endings, alternative, of St Mark, ciii ff.;  
     the longer, cix f.; the shorter, civ ff.;  
     abrupt end of the original work, 399  
 entertaining, times for, 291  
 enthusiasm, popular, danger to our  
     Lord's work from, 136  
*Ephphatha*, 161  
 Eucharist, doctrine of the, 336  
 Euthymius Zigabenus, his commentary  
     on St Mark, cxvi  
 excommunication, Jewish, 270  
 exorcism, 405 f.
- ἔγειρε, -ραι, ἔγειρον 38  
 ἔγώ εἰμι 139, 359  
 εἰ (in imprecations) 168; εἰ ἄρα 253; εἰ  
     καὶ, καὶ εἰ 339  
 εἰρηνεύειν 213 f.  
 εἰς 17, 28; εἰς μαρτύριον αὐτοῦς 31, 118,  
     301; εἰς τὸν αἰῶνα 68; εἰς τέλος 303 f.;  
     εἰς τὰ διτίσια 306; εἰς, ἐν, 'at the rate  
     of,' 74  
 εἰς, ὁ 327; εἰς κατὰ εἰς 332; εἰς τις 352  
 εἰσέρχεσθαι, ἐξέρχεσθαι, 96 f., 202  
 εἰτεν 85  
 εἰχαν 165  
 ἐκ δεξιῶν 238; τοῦ θεοῦ 407  
 ἐκβάλλειν 10, 25  
 ἐκδίδοσθαι 266  
 ἐκεῖνος ille 400  
 ἐκθαμβεῖσθαι 342  
 ἐκθαυμάζειν 277  
 ἐκπνεῦν 387  
 ἐκτελεῖν τὴν χεῖρα 29, 70  
 ἐκφύειν 314  
 ἐκχύννεσθαι 336  
 Ἐλαών, ὁ 246 f.  
 Ἐλληνίς 156  
 ἐλώι 385  
 ἐμβλέπειν 174, 225  
 ἐμβρυμάσθαι 30  
 ἐμπτύειν 234 f., 360 f.  
 ἐν πνεύματι 19; ἐν ρύσει 102; ἐν παρα-  
     βολαῖς 265  
 ἐναγκαλίζεσθαι 205, 221  
 ἐνδέκα, οἱ 403  
 ἐνδιδύσκειν 375

- ἐνειλεῖν 393  
 ἐνεργεῖν, -γεῖσθαι 120  
 ἐνέχειν 120  
 ἐννυχα 26  
 ἐνοχος ἀμαρτῆματος 68; θανάτου 360  
 ἐνταλμα, ἐντολή 147  
 ἐνταφιασμός 325  
 ἐντρέπεσθαι 269  
 ἐξαλφης 318; ἐξάπινα 192  
 ἐξανατέλλειν constr. 73  
 ἐξαυτῆς 126  
 ἐξέρχεσθαι (of Divine mission) 27  
 ἐξομολογεῖσθαι 5  
 ἐξορύσσειν 33  
 ἔξω, οἱ 76  
 ἑορτή anarthr. 369  
 ἐπαισχύνεσθαι 185  
 ἐπακολουθεῖν 408  
 ἐπανίστασθαι 303  
 ἐπέβαλαν 351  
 ἐπελάθευτο 169  
 ἐπιβάλλειν intr. 89, 366; τὰς χεῖρας 351  
 ἐπιγιγνώσκειν 36  
 ἐπιλύειν 88  
 ἐπιπλέπτειν (constr.) 56  
 ἐπισυνάγειν 24, 313  
 ἐπισυντρέχειν 200  
 ἐπιτιμᾶν 20  
 ἕρημος, ἡ, ἔρημια, ἕρημος τόπος 3, 26, 129, 164  
 ἔρμηνευτής xxiv  
 ἔρχεσθαι (of Divine visitations) 271; ἔρχο-  
     μενος, ὁ 251  
 ἔσθειν 6  
 ἔσχατον adv. 279  
 ἔσχάτως ἔχειν 101  
 ἔτοιμάζειν 330 f.; of Divine preparations,  
     2 f., 238  
 εν ποιεῖν 324  
 εναγγέλιον 1 f., 13, 183, 325, 404  
 ενδοκείν 10  
 ενθύς xlviii, 8  
 ενκαρέιν 129  
 ενκοπώτερον ἐστιν 36  
 ενλογεῖν, ενχαριστεῖν 134, 165, 334 f.  
 ενλογητός, ὁ 358  
 ενσχήμων 391  
 ἐφαθά 161  
 ἐχόμενος, ὁ 27  
 ἐως donec 341  
  
 ἥγεμών 301  
 ἥκούσθη impers. 32  
 ἥμέρα ἐκείνη, ἡ 316
- faith connected with salvation, 404 f.;  
     its work for others, 34; dependence  
         of miracles upon, 114  
 fasts, Jewish, 43; fasting, 45, 202  
 Fayūm fragment, the, 338 ff.
- forgiveness of sins, 4, 37 f., 67 f.,  
     261 f.  
 forty days, 11  
 four winds, the, 313
- Galilee, 8; sea of, 14; roads of, lxxxiii,  
     39, 55; evangelisation of, 27 f., 115 ff.  
 Galilean opinion in reference to our  
     Lord, 119 ff., 176 f.; dialect, 364;  
     women, 389 ff.
- garments, rending of the, 359 f.
- Gaulanitis, 160
- Gehenna, 210 f.
- Gennesaret, 140 f.
- genitive, of time, 93, 307; of price, 323;  
     of object, 116, 259; double, 171
- geographical notes in this Gospel, lxxxii—  
     lxxxiv
- Geresa (Gergesa, Gadara), 91 f.
- Gnostic use of St Mark, xxxi, xxxii
- Golgotha, 378 f.
- goodness, the standard of, 223 f.
- greatness, the standard of, 239
- Γαλειλαία, ἡ lxxxii, 8  
 γαμεῖν, -μεῖσθαι, -μίζεσθαι, -μίσκεσθαι 122,  
     280 f.
- γέγονεν 308  
 γέεννα 210 f.
- Γεθσημανὲ, Γησαμανὲ 341
- γενεὰ 315  
 γενέσια 124  
 γένημα 337  
 Γευνησαρέτ 140 f.
- γένος 202  
 γενεσθαι θανάτου 186  
 γυνώσκω, ἐπίσταμαι, οἶδα 20, 77, 363
- Γολγοθά 379  
 γονυπετεῖν 28  
 γραμματεῖς, οἱ lxxxv, 18 f.  
 γραφή, ἡ 271; γραφαῖ, αἱ 280, 353  
 γρηγορεῖν 317
- hatred excited by Christians, 303  
 head-line of the Gospel, lxv, xc, i  
 Hermas, xxx, cix  
 Hermon, 187  
 Herodians, the, 53 f., 273 f.  
 Herodias, 125 f.  
 Holy Spirit, the, blasphemy against,  
     67 f.; promise of, 302  
 hosanna, 250 f.
- housetop, uses of the, 306  
 hymn after the Eucharist, 337 f.
- Jairus, 101  
 James the son of Zebedee, 15 f., 59 f.;  
     the son of Alphaeus, 61; the brother  
         of the Lord, 113; the Little, 390  
 Idumaea, 54 f.

- Jebel Kuruntul*, 11  
*Jeremiah* expected by the Jews, 177  
*Jericho*, 241 f.  
*Jerusalem*, climate of, 355; attitude of towards our Lord, lxxxvii, xcii f., 371 f.  
*Jistr benât Yakûb*, 175  
impostors, religious, 298  
infinitive of object, 272  
infinitive of purpose, 72, 105; pres. and aor., 72 f.  
*John*, St, 15 f., 59 f.; remark by, 206; his account of the Feeding of the 5000, 129 ff.  
*John*, St, the Baptist, see *Baptist*  
*Joseph*, St, not mentioned by St Mark, 112  
*Joses*, 113  
journeyings of our Lord, lxxxii ff.  
*Irenaeus*, xxxii f., xxxv ff.  
irony, use of, 148, 347 f.  
*Judea*, 4, 367  
*Judas Iscariot*, his origin, 62; his bargain, 327 f.; his responsibility, 333 f.  
*Jude*, St, 113  
*Julian*, sneer of, 232  
*Justa* and *Bernice*, 157  
*Justin*, xxx f., cix, 59, 112, 376
- 'Ιάειρος 101  
'Ιάκωβος 15 f., 59 f., 61, 113, 390  
'Ιαμαι perf. pass. 104  
'Ιδε, ίδού 70  
'Ιερόν, ναός 252  
'Ιεροσόλυμα 233  
'Ιεροσολυμεῖται 4  
'Ιησοῦ dat. 41  
ικανός 242; τὸ ικανὸν ποιέιν 373  
ιμάτιον, τὸ 306; ιμάτια, τὰ 103, 380  
ιματίζεσθαι 98  
'Ινα, telic 76, 194  
'Ιουδαῖοι, ol 143  
'Ισκαριώθ 62  
'Ισος 357  
ισχυρός, ὁ 66  
'Ιωάνης 16  
'Ιωσῆς, 'Ιωσήφ 113, 389
- Kerioth, 62  
*Kersa*, *Kursi*, 92  
*Khan Minyeh*, 17  
Kingdom of God, 13  
kinship, our Lord's teaching in reference to, 69 f.  
*Kyrie eleison*, 244
- καθαρίζειν, ἐκαθερίσθη 29 f.  
καθελεῖν 393  
καθεύδειν 108  
κάθον 289  
καθὼς γέγραπται 2
- καὶ ἐγένετο... (καὶ) 7; καὶ τίς; 229  
κανός, νέος 22, 46  
καρός, χρόνος 13, 317; ὁ κ. οὐτος 231 f.; καρός σύκων 254  
κακολογεῖν 148  
καλός, ἀγαθός 74, 324; καλῶς 146, 148, 286  
καλὸν εἰ 209, 334; κ. ἡ 210  
Καναᾶνος 61 f.  
καρδία, διάνοια, σύνεσις 35, 140, 286  
κατὰ μόνας 75  
καταγελᾶν 108  
καταδώκειν 26  
κατακεῖσθαι 23, 40  
κατακόπτειν 93  
κατακυριεύειν 239  
καταλαμβάνειν 197  
καταλείψῃ 279  
κατάλυμα 330  
καταμαρτυρεῖν 358  
καταρτίζειν 16  
καταφίλειν 351  
κατέγαντι 247, 292  
κατεξουσιάζειν 239  
κατεσθίειν, κατέσθειν, 72, 291  
κατευλογεῖν 221 f.  
κατοίκησις 92  
καυματίζεσθαι 73  
Καφαρναούμ 17  
κεντυρόω 388  
κεράμιον ὕδατος 329  
κεφαλιοῦν 268  
κήνσος 274 f.  
κῆπος 'Ιωσήφ 393  
κηρύσσειν 3 f.  
κήπηρονομεῖν 223  
κληρονόμος, ὁ, κληρονομία, ἡ 269 f.  
κοδράντης 293 f.  
κοινός, κοινῷν 143 f., 150 f.  
κόκκος 86  
κολαφίζειν, φατίζειν 361  
κολλυβιστής 255  
κολοβοῦν 308; κολοβοδάκτυλος xxvi f.  
κοπάζειν 90  
κοράστον 109  
κορβάν 148 f.  
κόσμος 184, 325, 404  
κόφινος, σφυρίς 135, 165 f., 172  
κράβαττος 34  
κράζειν 56  
κράσπεδον 103  
κρατεῖν λόγον 192; κρ. παράδοσιν 144  
κρίμα 292  
κτήμα, χρῆμα 227 f.  
κτίσις 216 f., 404 f.  
κυλίεσθαι 198  
κυλλός 210  
κυνάριον 157 f.  
Κυρηνᾶνος 378  
Κύριος, ὁ κύριος 288  
κωμόπολις 27

- Latinisms in St Mark, xvii, 1, 95, 127,  
145, 373 f., 388  
Law, Christ's attitude towards the, 30 f.;  
the oral, 148 ff.  
laying on of hands upon the sick, 102,  
406; in blessing, 220  
leases for rent in kind, 266  
leaven as a symbol, 169 f.  
legion, the Roman, 95  
leprosy, 28  
Levi, 39, 61  
longer ending of St Mark, see *endings*  
'looking up to heaven,' liturgical use  
of the phrase, 134  
lots, manner of casting, 380
- λαβεῖν δαπίσμασιν 362  
λαΐλαψ 89  
λαλεῖν μετά τυρος 139  
λανθάνειν 156  
λεγιών 95  
λεπτόν 293  
Λευεὶς 39  
ληρός, ὑπο- προ- λήνιον 266  
ληστής 257, 382  
λιμοὶ καὶ λοιμοὶ 299  
λόγος, ὁ 33, 77  
λουπόν, τὸ 348  
λύτρον 240 f.  
λύχνος, λυχνία 81 f.
- Machaerus 122, 124, 126  
madness, charge of, xci, 64  
Malchus, 352  
*Marcus*, xiii f.  
Mark, St, in the Acts, xiv—xix; in the  
Pauline Epistles, xix f.; in 1 Peter,  
xx—xxiii; in early tradition, xxiii—  
xxvii; father of, 330; mother of, xiv f.,  
354; his connexion with Alexandria,  
Aquileia and Venice, xviii f., xxviii  
Gospel according to, the, traces of  
in the Apostolic fathers, xxix f.;  
in other writings of the second  
century, xxx—xxxiii; comparative  
neglect of, xxxiv; its order  
among the Gospels, xxxv f.; its  
symbol, xxxvi—xxxviii; its place  
of origin, xxxix; date of composition,  
xxxix f.; original language,  
xl—xliii; vocabulary, xliv—lxvii;  
style, lxvii—l; contents, li—lvii;  
plan, lvii—lxii; sources, lxi—lxv;  
relation to the other Synoptists,  
lxvi—lxxv; alternative endings  
of, ciii—cxiii; new fragment, 404  
Use of the O.T. by, lxxvi—lxxx;  
external conditions of our Lord's  
life as drawn by, lxxxi—lxxxix;  
conception of His Person and  
office in, xc—xcv
- Text of, authorities for the, mss.,  
xcvi—xcix; versions, xcix—cii  
Commentaries upon, cxiv—cxviii  
market, the Temple, 255 f.  
marriage, law of, 218 f.; levirate, 278  
Mary, of Magdala, 389, 399 f.; mother  
of James, 367  
Matthew, St, 61  
measure of spiritual profit, 83  
el Mejdel, 140, 167  
Messiah, Jewish conception of the, 177,  
358 f.  
ministry in Galilee, terminus a quo of  
the, 12  
'Moses,' 30 f., 148, 281 f.; M. at the  
Transfiguration, 189 f.  
mountains, removing, 259 f.  
mss. of this Gospel, xcvi—xcix; 404  
mustard plant, the, 86
- μαθητής 41  
Μαθθαῖος 61  
μάστιξ 56, 104 f.  
μάτην 147  
μάχαιρα 349  
μεγιστάν 124 f.  
μεθερμηνέσθαι 109  
μὲν οὖν 407  
μετὰ δύο (τρεῖς) ἡμέρας 179, 319  
μεταμορφοῦσθαι 187 f.  
μετάνοια 4  
μή elliptical 320; interrogative 44  
μηδέ ne quidem 175  
μῆτη 81  
μικρός 390  
μισθωτός 16  
μνήμα, μνημεῖον 92, 128, 393 ff.  
μνημόσυνον 326  
μογιλάλος 160, 163  
μόδιος 82  
μοιχάσθαι, -χεύειν, -χεύεσθαι 218  
μονόθεαλμος 212  
μορφή 402  
μύλος δύνικός 209 f.  
μυρίζειν 325  
μυστήριον 75 f.  
Μωσῆς, Μωσῆς decl. 189
- Nazareth, 7 f., 110  
negative repeated, xviii, 30, 33, 357  
nominative absolute, 199  
non-Marcan words and phrases in the  
last twelve verses, cx, 399, 401, 403
- Ναζαρέτ 7  
Ναζαρηνός 7, 19, 362 f.  
νάρδος πιστική 321  
νεκροὶ anarthr. 280  
νέος, κανός 22, 46  
νίπτεσθαι, λούεσθαι 144  
νοεῖν, συνιέναι 170 f.

*νουνεχῶς* 287  
*νυμφός*, *νυμφών* 45

oil used in healing, 119, 406 f.  
 Olives, Mt of, 346 f.  
*oratio variata*, 117, 290  
 order of this Gospel generally chronological, lviii—lxii  
*Oxyrhynchian logia*, the, 45, 52, 114, 330

ὁδὸν ποιεῖν 47  
 ὁδός, ἡ τοῦ θεοῦ 274  
 οἰδα, see γινώσκω  
 οἰκία 291  
 οἰκοδομή 295  
 δλγον 129  
 δνειδίζεων 385 f., 403  
 δνομα, τό 206; ἐν δνόματι δτι 208  
 ὅξος 386  
 δρια 99, 155, 214  
 ὄρκιεων constr. 95  
 δρμάν 97  
 δσον...μᾶλλον 162  
 δσπερ 370  
 δταν with *ind.* 56, 238  
 δτι interrogative 42, 193, 202; *recitative* 13, *passim*  
 οὐδ 383  
 οὐδε 306 f., 333  
 οὐδέ ne quidem 316  
 ούκ...ἀλλά 206  
 ούτως sic, siccine? 151  
 δφθαλμὸς πονηρὸς 154  
 ὅχλος, δ lxxxvi, 39, 258, 371 f.; δ πολὺς δ. 289  
 δψὲ, δψια 88, 137, 253, 258, 390

ὅδηνες 300  
 ὥρα πολλή 131; ὥ. τρίτη 381  
 ὥς ήν 88  
 ώσαύτως καὶ 279  
 ώτάριον 352

Palestine, political and religious state of, lxxxiv ff.; wild animals of, 11  
 parable, the, 65; reasons for parabolic teaching, 75 ff.  
 paragraphing of this Gospel, li ff.  
 participle, the timeless, 3, 98, 120  
 Passion, stages of the, foretold, 234  
 passover, ceremonial of the, 330 ff.  
 Paul, St, his connexion with St Mark, xv ff., xix f.; Pauline words used by St Mark, xlvi  
 Pella, 305 f.  
 Peraea, 55, 214  
 perfect, see *tenses*  
 personification of nature, 90  
 Peter, St, his faults of natural character, 180, 189, 362 ff.; his connexion with St Mark, xiv f., xx ff., lxii ff.

Pharisees, the, their devices, 42, 47 f., 53, 142, 167, 273; their rapacity, 291  
 phenomena, apocalyptic use of, 311, 315  
 Philip the Apostle, 60; the tetrarch, 136, 176; the first husband of Herodias, 122  
 Phoenicia, lxxxiv, 55, 155 f.  
 physician, Jewish estimate of the, 102 f.  
 plan of this Gospel, lvii ff.  
 poison, drinking with impunity, 406  
 police, the Temple, 349 f.  
 pollution, canons in reference to, 150 f.  
 Pontius Pilate, 367 f.  
 poverty, in Judaea, lxxxviii; voluntary, 226  
 praetorium at Jerusalem, site of the, 374 f.  
 precinct of the Temple, 252  
 present, see *tenses*  
 procurator, the office of, 367

παιδιόθεν, ἐκ 199  
 παιδίον 219 f.  
 παιδίσκη 362  
 παλαιός 46  
 πάλιν 39  
 πάντοθεν 32  
 παρά τνος, οἱ 63  
 παραβολή 65  
 παραγγέλλειν constr. 116  
 παράγειν 14  
 παραγίνεσθαι 349  
 παραδίδονται 62, 85 (*intrans.*), 203, 327  
 παραιτέονται 370  
 παρακούειν 106 f.  
 παραλαμβάνειν 88  
 παραπορεύεσθαι 203  
 παράπτωμα, ἀμαρτία 261 f.  
 παρασκευή 391  
 παρατηρεῖν 50 f.  
 παρελθεῖν, παρενεγκεῖν 343 f.  
 παρέστηκα 85  
 παρθμοιος 150  
 παρρησίᾳ 179 f.  
 πᾶς 4  
 πάσχα 319  
 πατρίς 110 f.  
 πέδη, ἄλυσις 93  
 πεζὴ 130  
 πειράζειν 11, 168, 215, 275  
 πειρασμὸς 346  
 πενθεῖν καὶ κλαίειν 401  
 πέραν, τό 55, 88, 100, 136, 214  
 περι quod attinet ad 381  
 περιβλέπεσθαι 52, 105, 253  
 περιπατεῖν 146  
 περίσσευμα 165  
 περιτρέχειν 141  
 περίχωρος 22  
 Πέτρος 59  
 πετρώδης 72 f.

*πήρα* 116  
*πιστεύειν constr.* 13 f., 264  
*πίστις constr.* 259  
*πλανᾶν* 283, 298; ἀπο- 310  
*πλεονέξια* 154  
*πλήρωμα* 46, 135, 171  
*πλοιάριον* 55  
*πνεῦμα ἄγιον* 7; τὸ πν. (τὸ ἄγ.) 9, 68; πν., σάρξ 346 f.  
*πνίγειν, συν-*, ἀπο- 73, 80, 97  
*ποεῖν* 'appoint' 59  
*ποῖος, τις* 283 f.  
*πολλοὶ, οἱ* 201  
*πολυτελής* 322  
*πονηρὰ* 154, 275  
*πορεία, μοιχεία* 218  
*πορφύρα* 375  
*πόσος...ώς* 198  
*ποταπός* 295  
*ποτήριον* 145, 208, 236 f., 344  
*πραιτώριον* 374  
*πρασιά* 133  
*πρεσβύτεροι, οἱ* 144, 179  
*προάγειν constr.* 233  
*προαύλιον* 363  
*προειπεῖν* 310  
*προέρχεσθαι constr.* 130  
*πρόθυμος* 346  
*προλαμβάνειν constr.* 325  
*προμερμῆν* 302  
*προσάρβατον* 391  
*προσάιτης* 243  
*προσεύχεσθαι ἵνα* 343  
*πρόσκαιρος* 79  
*προσκαλεῖσθαι* 58  
*προσκαρτερεῖν* 55 f.  
*προσκεφάλαιον* 89  
*προσλαμβάνεσθαι* 180  
*προσορμίζεσθαι* 141  
*προσφέρειν* 219  
*πρόσωπον, βλέπειν εἰς* 274  
*προφάσιει* 291 f.  
*πρωὶ* 35; εὐθὺς πρ. 366; λαν πρ. 395  
*πρώτη πάντων* 284; πρῶτοι τῆς Γαλ., οἱ 125  
*πρωτοκαθεδρία, -κλισία* 291  
*πρώτος, ἔσχατος* 205  
*πτῶμα* 128, 392 f.  
*πτωχός* 293  
*πνυγμῆ* 143 f.  
*πῶλος* 247  
*πωροῦσθαι, πώρωσις* 52, 171  
*φάντασμα* 138  
*φέγγος* 311  
*φιμοῦσθαι* 20  
*φοβεῖσθαι φόβον* 91  
*Φοινίκισσα* 156 f.  
*φραγελλοῦν* 373 f.  
*φρονεῖν τὰ τυπούς* 181  
*ψευδοπροφήτης, ψευδόχριστος* 309 f.  
*ψυχὴ* 182 ff., 342 f.

## Quarantania, 11

Rabbi, a title of our Lord, 189; renderings into Greek, 89  
 release of a prisoner at the Passover, 369  
 repetitions in prayer, 347  
 responsibility of hearers, 81 ff.  
 resurrection of the body, our Lord's teaching upon the, 280 ff.  
 rewards, eternal, 236 ff.; temporal, 231 f.  
 roads, see *Galilee, Sidon*  
 robbers in Judaea, lxxxviii; robbers crucified with our Lord, legendary names of, 382  
 rock-tombs near Jerusalem, 393 f.  
 Rufus, 378  
  
 ḥaββουνει 245  
 ḥákos ἀγναφον 45  
 ḥapízēin, ḥápitisma 361 f.  
 ḥáphls 229  
 ḥíhsseuin, σπαράσσειν, συνσπ. 197 f.  
  
 Sabbath, law of the, 47 ff.; flight on the, 307  
 Sabbatic zone, 246  
 sacrifice, rewards of, 230 ff.  
 Sadducees, the, lxxxv, 170, 277 ff.  
 saliva, use of, in healing, 161, 173  
 Salome, 16, 125 f., 390  
 salt, sacrificial use of, 213  
 salutation, forms of, 196  
 Satan, 11, 65 f.; the name applied to St Peter, 180 f.  
 'scandals,' 208 ff.  
 scourging, 300 f., 373 f.  
 Scribes, the, lxxxv, 18 f., 35, 64, 283, 290 ff.  
 sections in the Law, system of, 281 f.  
 Septuagint, St Mark's use of the, lxxvii ff.  
 service the condition of greatness, 240  
 Session at the Right Hand of God, 359, 407 f.  
 shewbread, the, 49  
 Sidon, road from, to Decapolis, lxxxiv, 159  
 signs which follow believers, 405 f.  
 Simon Peter, 14, 59; his house, 23, 32; his wife, 23; S. the leper, 321; S. of Cyrene, 378  
 sin, an eternal, 68; lists of sins, 153  
 sinlessness of our Lord, 223 f.  
 'sinners,' 40 f.  
 sisters of our Lord, 69, 113  
 slavery, 352  
 soldiers, Roman, in Palestine, 374  
 Son, the, 316; of God, xc, xciii f., 2, 389; of Man, xc f., xciv, 37, 312; of David, 243, 251, 289  
 sonship, Messianic, 177, 358 f.  
 soteriology of this Gospel, xc  
 sources of this Gospel, lxii ff.

sowing, parables relating to, 87  
 Spirit, the Holy, see *Holy Spirit*  
 spirit, human, of Christ, see *Christ*  
 spirits, unclean, 19 ff., 25, 92 ff.  
 stone, the, at the door of the tomb,  
     394 ff.  
 style of St Mark, xlvi ff.  
 subscriptions to this Gospel, xxvi  
 synagogue, the, 17 f., 28, 111, 300  
 Synoptic Gospels, comparison of St Mark  
     with the other, lxvi ff.  
 synthetical apposition, 5

*σαβαχθανεῖ* 385  
*σάρβατον, σάρβατα* 17, 47 f.; ἡ μία τῶν  
     σαρβάτων 395, πρώτη σαρβάτων 399  
*σαλεύειν* 311 f.  
*σανδάλιον, ὑπόδημα* 117  
*Σατανᾶς, ὁ σατανᾶς* 11  
*σινδών* 354, 393  
*σκανδαλίζειν* 79, 113, 208 ff.  
*σκεύος* 256  
*σκηνή* 190  
*σκληροκαρδία* 216, 403  
*σκύλλειν* 106  
*σμυρνίζεσθαι* 379  
*σπαράσσειν* 21, 197 f.  
*σπέιρα* 375  
*σπεκουλάτωρ* 127  
*σπέρμα, σπόρος* 84  
*σπλαγχνίζεσθαι* 29, 130  
*σπέργος* 386  
*σπόριμα* 47  
*σταθῆται, στήναι* 65  
*στασιαστής, στάσις* 370  
*σταυροῦν* 372 f.  
*στέφανος* 375  
*στιβάς* 250  
*στίλβειν* 188  
*στολή* 290  
*στυγνάζειν* 227  
*σὺ λέγεις* 359, 368  
*συγγενεῦσιν* 114  
*συμβούλιον διδύναι* 53; σ. ποιεῖν 366 f.  
*συμπόσιον* 133  
*συνακολουθεῖν* 107  
*συναναβάλνειν* 360  
*συνέδριον, τό, συνέδρια, συναγωγή* 300, 356  
*συνεργεῖν* 408  
*συνζητεῖν constr.* 21  
*συνσταυροῦσθαι* 384  
*συντελεῖσθαι, συντέλεια* 297  
*συντρίβεσθαι* 93  
*σύσσημον* 350  
*σφυρίς, κόφινος* 135, 165 f., 171  
*σχίζεσθαι* 8 f.  
*σφύζειν* 102, 105, 245, 383, 405  
*σωφρονεῖν* 98

Tabor, 187  
 Taricheae, trade of, 132

taxes, 39 ff., 255, 275  
*Tell Hûm*, 17  
 Temple market, 255 ff.; police, 349 f.;  
     veils, 388  
 tenses, use of the: present, 34, 57, 203,  
     241, 281, 333, 336; imperfect, 53, 56,  
     169, 207, 379; aorist, 7, 10, 84, 100,  
     120, 196, 260, 373, 392, 397; perfect,  
     90, 93, 98, 120, 392, 397; interchanged,  
     xlix f., 293  
*testimonia*, 2, 338  
 tetrarch, office of the, 119 f.  
 Thaddaeus, 61  
 Theophylact, his commentary on St  
     Mark, cxvi  
 Thomas, St, 61  
 thorns of the *nubk* tree, 376  
 three witnesses, the, 107, 187, 341 f.  
 title on the Cross, 381 f.  
 tongues, gift of, 406  
 tradition, Jewish, 144 ff.  
 Transfiguration, locality of the, 187  
*triclinium*, order of the, 331 f.

*τέκνα* 228  
*τέκτων* 112  
*τέλος ἔχειν* 66  
*τελώνης, τελώνιον* 39 ff.  
*τηλανγῶς* 174 f.  
*τί* remonstrative 275  
*τι...ἢ* 36; *τί ἡμῖν καὶ σοὶ* 19  
*Τίμαος* 242  
*τίτλοι* in St Mark liv f.  
*τοῦτ̄ ἐστίν, τουτέστιν* 143  
*τρίξειν* 197  
*τρύβλιον* 333  
*τρυμαλία, τρήμα, τρύπημα* 229  
*Θαβώριον, τὸ* 187  
*Θαδδαῖος* 61  
*θαυμβεῖσθαι, ἐκθαμβεῖσθαι* 21, 195  
*θανάσιμος* 406  
*θαρσεῖν* 244  
*θαυμάζειν constr.* 115  
*θεάσθαι* 401  
*θέλειν, θέλημα* 70, 126, 235 f., 344 f.,  
     373  
*θηλάζειν* 307  
*θιλίβειν, θιλίψις* 56, 79, 307  
*θύροβος* 107 f., 320  
*θροεῖσθαι* 299  
*θυγάτηρ as voc.* 105  
*θυγάτριον* 101  
*θύρα* 32 f., 248; *ἐπὶ θύραις* 314 f.  
*θυντα, δλοκαντώμα* 286; *θύειν τὸ πάσχα*  
     328  
*θωμᾶς* 61

veils of the Temple, 388  
 Veronica, 106  
 versions of this Gospel, xcix ff.  
*Via Dolorosa*, 337

- Victor of Antioch, his commentary on St Mark, cxiv f.
- vineyard, symbol of the, 265
- unction of the sick, 110, 406 f.
- vocabulary of this Gospel, xliv ff., lxxxviii, 409 ff.
- Voice, the Divine, 9, 191
- ὑδωρ, πνεῦμα 7
- νῖός, ὁ 316, ὁ τοῦ θεοῦ 2, 389, ὁ τοῦ ἀνθρώπου 37; νῖός Δαυεὶδ 288; οἱ νιόι τοῦ νυμφῶνος 44; νῖός, τέκνουν xx f.
- ὑπαγε 30
- ὑπάγειν, ἐλθεῖν, δπίσω 180 f.
- ὑπερηφανία 154 f.
- ὑπερπερισσῶς 162
- ὑπηρέτης xvii f., 350
- ὑπόδημα, σανδάλιον 117
- ὑποκριτής 146
- ὑπολήνιον 266
- ὑσσωπος 386 f.
- ὑστερεῖν constr. 226; ὑστέρησις 294
- ὕψιστος, ὁ 94; ὕψιστα, τά 252
- Wady Kelt, 246
- walking on the sea, in the O.T., 138
- watches of the night, 137 f., 318
- ‘Western’ text, 5, 8, 29, 69, 105, 109, 131, 145, 148, 158, 199, 228, 230, 335, 348, 385 f., 395
- Wilderness of Judaea, 3
- ξέστης 145
- ξηρανεσθαι 50, 197, 258 f.
- ξύλον 349
- ξαφθανεί 386
- Ζεβεδαῖος 16
- ξημοῦν 184
- ξύμη 169 f.
- ξωῆ, ἡ 210; αἰώνιος 232
- ξώνη 116

BY PROF. H. B. SWETE, D.D.

THE HOLY SPIRIT IN THE NEW TESTAMENT. A  
Study of Primitive Christian Teaching. 8vo. 12s. net.

*Guardian*.—“All English students of the New Testament have reason to be deeply grateful to Dr. Swete for this masterly and, we might almost venture to say, exhaustive book on a profoundly important subject.”

THE HOLY SPIRIT IN THE ANCIENT CHURCH. A  
Study of Christian Teaching in the Age of the Fathers. 8vo. 8s. 6d.  
net.

*Expository Times*.—“It is needless to praise the book. In all his tasks, whatever he undertakes to do, Professor Swete does better than anyone has done before him.”

THE APPEARANCES OF OUR LORD AFTER THE PASSION.  
A Study in the Earliest Christian Tradition. Crown 8vo. 4s. net.

*Guardian*.—“We rejoice that a book of such importance as this, upon a subject of the deepest interest to every Christian, should have come at the present moment from such competent hands.”

THE ASCENDED CHRIST. A Study in the Earliest Christian  
Teaching. Crown 8vo. 3s. net.

*Guardian*.—“This volume is a sequel and companion to *The Appearances of our Lord after the Passion*. It exhibits the same thoroughness in criticism and the same sobriety of judgment.”

THE LAST DISCOURSE AND PRAYER OF OUR LORD.  
A Study of St. John xiv.—xvii. Crown 8vo. 4s. 6d. net.

*Guardian*.—“It would be difficult to speak too highly of the deep reverence, the true scholarship, the earnest charity of this book.”

THE HOLY CATHOLIC CHURCH: THE COMMUNION OF  
SAINTS. A Study in the Apostles’ Creed. Crown 8vo. 4s. 6d. net.

*Oxford Magazine*.—“An ideal example of the temper in which Christian doctrine should be both studied and taught.”

LONDON: MACMILLAN AND CO., LTD.

*BY PROF. H. B. SWETE, D.D.*

THE PARABLES OF THE KINGDOM. Crown 8vo. 7s. 6d.  
net.

*Church Times*.—“It would have been a real loss if these quite beautiful lectures had not been put into print. To many they will bring back the memory of Professor Swete at his best.”

THE APOCALYPSE OF ST. JOHN. The Greek Text with  
Introduction, Notes, and Indices. Third edition. 8vo. 15s. net.

*Guardian*.—“We find it all that the high reputation of the writer had led us to expect. . . . A commentary on the Book of Revelation which is of the first rank.”

THE AKHMÎM FRAGMENT OF THE APOCRYPHAL GOSPEL  
OF ST. PETER. 8vo. 5s. net.

*Critical Review*.—“The text of the Petrine fragment is accompanied by admirable notes which give light on many passages. A Translation is also furnished, and an Introduction of forty-seven pages deals in an interesting and instructive way with a variety of matters connected with the find. . . . The book is most scholarly, most useful, and worthy of the scholarship of Cambridge.”

*Edited by Prof. H. B. SWETE, D.D.*

ESSAYS ON THE EARLY HISTORY OF THE CHURCH  
AND THE MINISTRY. By Various Writers. Edited by H. B.  
Swete, D.D. Second Edition. 8vo. 15s. net.

*Guardian*.—“The book must receive the fullest and most careful consideration from all students and from the Church at large. It deserves to have enormous—it may even perhaps achieve decisive—influence on religious and intellectual progress in the direction of Christian reunion, of historical study, and the knowledge of the origins of the modern world.”

ESSAYS ON SOME BIBLICAL QUESTIONS OF THE DAY.  
By Members of the University of Cambridge. 8vo. 12s. net.

*Athenaeum*.—“This is a remarkable book, and ought to attract the attention of all who are interested in the Bible. . . . It reflects the highest credit on the University’s school of theology, and places that school in the foremost rank of the theologians of the day.”

LONDON : MACMILLAN AND CO., LTD.







4691

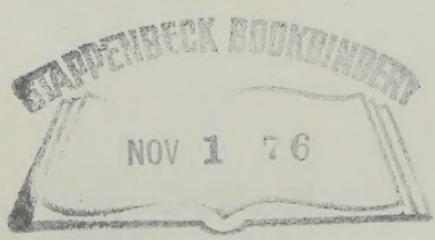
226.307

5975

1927

LINCOLN CHRISTIAN COLLEGE

3 4711 00162 2440



LINCOLN CHRISTIAN COLLEGE & SEMINARY



3 4711 00162 2440